

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 01270364 1

The first Three
English books
on America.

Richard Eden.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
University of Toronto

<http://www.archive.org/details/firstthreeenglis00cabo>

The first Three English books on America.

[? 1511]-1555 A.D.

The first
Three English books
on
America.

[? 1511] — 1555 A.D.

Being chiefly Translations, Compilations, &c., by

RICHARD EDEN,

From the Writings, Maps, &c., of

PIETRO MARTIRE, of Anghiera (1455-1526),
Apostolical Protonotary, and Councillor to the Emperor CHARLES V.;

SEBASTIAN MÜNSTER, the Cosmographer (1489-1552),
Professor of Hebrew, &c., at the University of Basle;

SEBASTIAN CABOT, of Bristol (1474-1557),
Grand Pilot of England:

With Extracts, &c., from the Works of other Spanish,
Italian, and German Writers of the Time.

EDITED BY

EDWARD ARBER, F.S.A

Fellow of King's College, London; Hon. Member of the Virginia and Wisconsin Historical Societies;
Examiner in English Language and Literature, Victoria University, Manchester;
Professor of English Language and Literature,
Sir Josiah Mason's College, Birmingham.

Editor of *English Reprints, English Garner, English Scholar's Library,*
A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1640; &c.

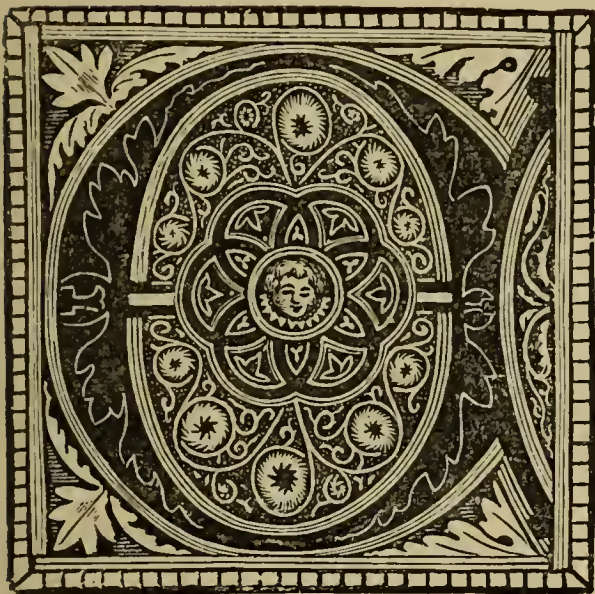
BIRMINGHAM.
1 MONTAGUE ROAD.

22 June 1885.

(All rights reserved.)



TO THE READER.



Each of the three Texts in this Volume is of great rarity; the first two are extraordinarily scarce.

The present impression of them was begun so far back as 1870, and was nearly finished by 1872; when it came to a stand still through the great pressure of other work on all concerned, but more especially on myself.

For then, there came to me the overpowering vocation, for the sake of the Literature of our Golden Age, of attempting (single-handed though it might be, and when every one else forsook it and fled) the printing of *A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1646 A.D.* Through the toil and anxiety of the years 1873 to 1877, that great piece of work was religiously and accurately accomplished, in four Demy 4to volumes, containing in all some 2,800 *pp.*: and thus the Bibliography of Sidney, Spenser, Shakespeare, Bacon, Ben Jonson, and their contemporaries, was safely secured from destruction or oblivion, to the end of time.

Other circumstances then intervened; so that it was not till January 1885, on the occasion of my first visit to Edinburgh (where the book was in hand), that I was able to resume it. Once, however, the reproduction was again taken up, it was resolutely pushed through to its completion.

This Volume cannot fail to interest the cultivated reader. One is able therein to look out on the New World as its Discoverers and first Explorers looked upon it. Now-a-days, this Globe has but few geographical mysteries; and it is losing its romance as fast as it is losing its wild beasts. In the following Texts, however, the Wonderment of its Discovery in all its freshness, is preserved, as in amber, for all time: and they also contain notices of not a few barbaric civilizations which have long since passed away from off the face of the earth.

But this book has also some very special points of interest :

It is in many respects, an English Cyclopædia of the geographical and scientific knowledge of its Age.

No one can read the portion of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire given herein, without wishing to know a great deal more about him and his writings.

A large portion of what little we do know about Sebastian Cabot, will be found in the notices of him scattered through this volume.

It may also be regarded as a fitting Literary Monument of one of the Private Secretaries of Lord Burleigh, and a very worthy Englishman, Richard Eden : of whom some account will be found at *pp.* xxxvii.-xlvi. ; and who was certainly one of the principal Authors of the reign of Mary Tudor.

It is also clear, that from the third Text in this book (Eden's translation of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire), which was published in 1555, Francis Drake must have obtained all the knowledge that English books could give him respecting the West Indies and the Spanish Main, before he first went out there, under Captain John Lovell, in 1565.

Lastly, William Shakespeare read this third Text also, and created the character of *Caliban* in the *Tempest* out of the description of the Patagonian giants given at *pp.* 251-2.

But for us Moderns, the chief interest in these three Works may be, that they are the very beginning of a mighty Literature. The future of Mankind lies with the Anglo-Saxon race : and of all English books relating to the American portion of that race, the three reprinted in this volume are the *very first*.

The large initial letters are in the style of the Spanish designs of the Biscayan, Juan de Yciar (b. 1523), as they are found in the two editions of his *Orthographia practica*, Saragossa, 1548 and 1550, 4to. Yciar, who evidently looked upon them as the gems of his Work, calls them *Letras de Compas para illuminadores*.

In conclusion I desire most gratefully to acknowledge and record the very kind and cordial help rendered to me in the reproduction of this volume at Edinburgh, by the late Mr William Burnes and the late Mr John Stevenson, with whom it was commenced : and also by Mr James Skinner, of the firm of Messrs Burnes & Co., and Mr James Turnbull, of the firm of Messrs Turnbull & Spears, by whom it has been brought to a successful conclusion.

EDWARD ARBER.

Contents.

To the Reader	v.-vi.
Contents	vii.-x.
PREFACE	xi.-xxii.

The First English book on America.

This Text is the first English book containing the word America (Armenica).

U *Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kynge of portyngale named Emanuel.*
Of the. x. dyuers nacyons crystened.
Of pope Iohn and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molodyes that in that lande is. } xxiii-xxxvi.
 [Antwerp, ? 1511,] 4to.

[<i>The voyage round Africa to India</i>	xxvii-xxix.]	The fourth nacyon [<i>The Jacobites (? Abyssinians)</i>]	xxx.
Of the blacke Mores [of Guinea]	xxviii.	The fyfth nacyon [<i>The Nestorians</i>]	xxxi.
[Of the lande of Allago]	xxviii.	The syxte nacyon [<i>The Maronites</i>]	xxxi.
Arabia	xxviii.	The seuenth nacyon [<i>The Armenians</i>]	xxxi.
Of greate Indyen	xxviii.	The eyght nacyon [<i>The Georgians</i>]	xxxi.
Of Gutchin [<i>Cochin</i>] that Kyngedome	xxix.	The nynthe nacyon [<i>The Syrians and Samaritans</i>]	xxxi.
		The tenthe nacyon [<i>The Morabites</i>]	xxxi.
<i>Of the. x. dyverce cristened nacions</i>	xxx-xxxii.		
The fyrst nacion [<i>The Latins and Germans</i>]	xxx.	[<i>An abridgement of the mediæval Legend of Prester John</i>	xxxii-xxxvi.]
The seconde nacyon [<i>The Greeks</i>]	xxx.	Of the people named Pynies	xxxiii.
The thyrde nacyon [<i>They of India under Pope Iohn</i>]	xxx.		

The Life and Labours of Richard Eden xxxvii-xlvi.

Richard Eden's Contributions to our Literature, during the reigns of Edward VI. and Mary, 1553-1555, A.D.

The Second English book on America.

U *A treatyse of the newe India, with other new founde landes and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as westwarde, as they are knowen and found in these oure dayes, after the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in his boke of vniversall Cosmographie: wherein the diligent reader may see the good successe and rewarde of noble and honeste enterpryses, by the which not only wordly ryches are obtayned, but also God is glorified, and the Christian fayth enlarged. Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By Rycharde Eden.* } 3-42
 [London. 1553.] 8vo.

(Richard) Eden. [Dedication] To . . . the Duke of Northumberlande, hys Grace	5-6
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	7-11
THE TABLE	12
Of the newe India, as it is knowen and found in these our dayes	13-27
[The description of the Navigations from Spain to the new India, Eastward	13]
Of the Diamande stone, called in Latin <i>Adamas</i>	14
Of the kingdoms and cities of Narsinga and Canonor	14
How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre	15-16
Of the beaste called <i>Rhinoceros</i>	16
Of <i>Calicut</i> , the most famous market towne of India	16-17
Of the maners of the Indians in <i>Calicut</i>	17-18
Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of <i>Calicut</i>	18
Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of <i>Calicut</i> : and of the wyne of the merueylous tree	19
Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in <i>Calicut</i> , and from whence they are brought thither	20
Of the Iland of <i>Zaylon</i> , and of <i>Cinomome</i> found there	20

Of the cytie of <i>Tarnasseri</i> , and the maner of the cytezens there	20-21	Of the greate Empyre of <i>Cathay</i> , being vnder the dominion of the greate Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of <i>Tartaria</i> , in olde tyme called <i>Scythia</i>	24-25
Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella	21	Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of <i>Cathay</i>	25-26
Of the greate and ryche Ilande of <i>Sumatra</i> , or <i>Samotra</i> , sometyme called <i>Taprobana</i>	22	Of the Prouince of <i>Mangi</i> , and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same	26
Of the Ilande of Bornei	22	Of the region of <i>Tangut</i> , and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylls heard in the same, and of the <i>Salamandra</i>	26-27
Of the Iland of Giaua	23		
Of the Iland of Iaua	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Madagascar</i>	23		
Of the Iland of Zanzibar	23		
Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women	24		
¶ Of the newe India, and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea, how, when, and by whom they were found,	28-42		
[Of the new Islands and India found in the West Ocean sea, from Spain Westward and South-west	28-31, 33-39]	How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> , and of the people with great hanging eares	34-55
Of the two Ilandes <i>Iohanna</i> and <i>Hispana</i>	28	The thyrd nauigacion of <i>Christophorus Columbus</i>	35-36
Of the people called <i>Canibales</i> or <i>Anthropophagi</i> , which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe	29	Howe <i>Petrus Alonsus</i> soughte newe Ilandes	36
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of <i>Hispana</i> and of suche thynges as are found there	29	Howe <i>Pinzonius</i> , companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes	36
How <i>Columbus</i> , after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye <i>Canibales</i>	29-30	Of the foure nauigacions of <i>Americus Vesputius</i> to the newe Ilandes	37
How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage	30-31	The fyrste viage of <i>Americus Vesputius</i>	37-38
How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendshippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes	31	The seconde viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	38
How the Portugals sought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to <i>Calicut</i>	32-33	The thyrd viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
How <i>Magellanus</i> by a strayght or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne	33-34	The fourth viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
		How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India: and of the ryche Cytie of <i>Malacha</i>	40
		Of the Iland of <i>Madera</i> , and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse called the Ilandes of <i>Canaria</i>	40-41
		Whether vnder the <i>Æquinoctial</i> circle or burninge lyne (called <i>Torrida zona</i>) be habitable Regions	41-42
(Richard) Eden. To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses			42

The Third English book on America.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, conteynyng the nauigations and conquestes of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche and large landes and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean perteynyng to the inheritaunce of the kinges of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in tyme to come, but also learne many secretes touchyng the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to be knowen to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderfull woorkes of God and nature. Wrytten in the Latine tounge by Peter Martyr of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by Rycharde Eden.

Londini, In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell. Anno. 1555.

THE TABLE OF THE CONTENTS OF THIS BOOKE (BESYDE THE <i>DECADES</i>)	45
(Richard) Eden. Latin Epistle to King Philip and Queen Mary	46-48
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	49-60

[Section I. 61-204.]

(Pietro) Martire's Epistle to the Emperor Charles V., 30 September 1516	63-64
---	-------

The First Decade (or Ten Books)		65-105
Book I.	65-68	Book VI. 87-90
Book II.	68-72	Book VII. 90-93
Book III.	(For contents, see pp. 391-3) 73-79	Book VIII. 94-96
Book IV.	79-82	Book IX. 96-102
Book V.	82-87	Book X. 103-105
The Second Decade		106-136
Book I.	106-111	Book VI. 122-125
Book II.	111-114	Book VII. 126-129
Book III.	(For contents, see pp. 393-4) 114-118	Book VIII. 129-130
Book IV.	118-120	Book IX. 130-134
Book V.	120-122	Book X. 134-136
The Third Decade		137-185
Book I.	137-142	Book VI. 161-165
Book II.	142-145	Book VII. 165-169
Book III.	(For contents, see pp. 395-7) 146-150	Book VIII. 170-174
Book IV.	150-156	Book IX. 175-178
Book V.	156-160	Book X. 178-185
Of the Landes and Ilandes lately founde		186-200
Pope Alexander VI. Bull dividing the New World between the Spaniards and the Portugese, 4 May 1593 In Latin and English.		201-204
[Section II. 205-242.]		
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader		207
(Gonzalo) Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.		208-209
The [Natural] Hystorie of the weste Indies		210-242
Of the ordinary nauyagation from Spayne to the Weste Indies	210	Of Reedes or Canes 227-229
Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies : And of the great rychesse brought from thense into Spayne	211	Of venemous apples wherwith they poyson their arrowes 229-230
Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in them	211-213	Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge 230-233
Of the maner of fyshynge for perles	213-215	Of th[e]increase and decrease, (that is) rysynge and faullynge of our Ocean sea and Southe sea caulled the sea of <i>Sur</i> 233-234
Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answeere of hym of thynges to coome	215-216	Of the strayght or narowe passage of the landelyng betweene the North and South sea, by the whiche spycies may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India 234-236
Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled <i>Torrida zona</i> or the Equinoctiall : and of the dyuers seasons of the yeaere	217-218	Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande, and of theyr women 237-238
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees. etc.	219-225	Of the chiefe Ilandes <i>Hispaniola</i> and <i>Cuba</i> 239-241
Of trees, fruites, and plantes	225-227	Of the Ilande of Cuba and other 241
		Of the lande of <i>Bacaleos</i> cauled <i>Terra Baccalearum</i> , situate on the North syde of the firme lande. 242
[Section III. 243-280.]		
Of the Universal Carde and Newe Worlde	245	(Antonio) Pigafetta. A briefe Declaration of the Vyage or Navigation made abowte the Worlde 249-262
(Richard) Eden. A Discourse of the Vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde abowte the Worlde	246-247	Of the prices of Precious Stones and Spices 263-269
Maximilian Transilvanus. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.	247-248	Cadamosto of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera 270
(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. The Debate and Stryfe betweene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices [at the Conference at Badajos, in 1524]		Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas under the Equinoctiall line 270
(Amerigo) Vespucci. } (Andreas) de Corsali. } Of the Pole Antartike and the Starres about the same, &c.		277-280
[Section IV. 281-334.]		
Of Moscouie and Cathay		283-294
(Galeazzo) Butrigarius	283	(Sebastian) Münster. (Jacopo) Gastaldo. A briefe description of Moscouia 291-293
(Sebastian) Cabot	283	

(Jacobus) Ziglerus.	Of the North Regions	295-306
Of the North Regions and of the moderate and continuall heate in coulde regions aswell in the nyght as in the day in the soommer season	295-298	Laponia 301-303 Norwegia or Norway 303-304 Succia or Svethlande 305 Bothnia 305 Gothia or Gothlande 306 Finland and Eningia 306
Schondia	298-299	
Gronlande	299	
Islande	300	
(Girolamo) Cardano. Of the difference of Regions, and causes of great cities		307
(Paolo) Giovio, Bishop of Nocera. The Historie of the Legation or Ambassade of the greate Basilius Prince of Moscouia to Pope Clement VII. of that name		308-317
(Sigismund) Liber. Other notable Things concerning Moscovia		318-321
The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and East from Moscouia	322-324	More directly from Moscouia to Cathay 325-326 Of the Tartars 327-330 The nauigation by the frosen sea 330-332
Of the famous ryuer of Tanais	324-325	
Edward VI. The Copy of the Letters Missive sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytynge the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathaye. 1553 In Latin and English.		333-334
[Section V. 335-352.]		
(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. } (Sebastian) Cabot. }	Other notable thynges as touchinge the Indies 337-350	
Of the foreknowlege that the Poet Seneca had of the fyndyng of this new Worlde and other Regions not then knowen	337	Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera 344 Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lying west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies 344-345 The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda 345-346 An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes : and of certeyne nauigations about the same 346-347 That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiete to fiete ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e]oppinion of the owlde writers 347-348 Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof 348-349 The Situacion and byggenes of the earth 349 What degrees are 349-350
Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide	337-338	
Of the colour of the Indians	338	
Why they were cauled Indians	339	
The fyrste discouerynge of the Weste Indies	339	
What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies	340	
What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies	340-342	
Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico	342	
Of Peru	343	
Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer	343-344	
(Richard) Eden. A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth		350
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . What credit ought to bee gyuen to Wryters as touchyng the workes of nature		351
[Section VI. 353-369.]		
(Richard) Eden. The preface to <i>The Booke of Metals</i>		355
(Vannuccio) Biringuccio. Of the generation of Metalles, and their mynes; with the maner of fyndyng the same		356-362
Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular	362-366	Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof 366-368
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . The maner of workyng in golde mynes in Egipt in owld tyme		369
[Section VII. 371-390.]		
(Richard) Eden. The Description of the two Viages made owt of England into Guinea		373
(Richard) Eden. A breefe Description of Affrike		374
The fyrst Vyage to Guinea		375-378
The Second Vyage to Guinea		379-388
Gemma Phrysius. The maner of fyndyng the Longitude of Regions by dyuers wayes		389-390
A BRYEFE REHERSAL OF THE CÔNTENTES OF THE <i>DECADES</i>		391-398
(Richard) Eden. Th[e] Interpretours excuse		398
INDEX		399-408

P R E F A C E.



TILL labouring in the diffusion of English Literature : we here, with heart-felt pleasure, present the reader with reprints of three exceedingly rare, curious, and costly Cosmographical Works ; which are also the very earliest printed documents in our language, relating to South, Central, and North America.

It rarely falls to the lot of man to be able to put one's hand on the very earliest beginnings of a mighty literature. Yet it is not too much to say, that of all the vast multitude of English books that have been, or ever will be, produced, either in, or relating to, what we call our New World ; the three Works reprinted in this Volume are the very first and earliest. However mighty and majestic, however subtle and eloquent, however deep and far-reaching, the American-English literature may become ; here are its first fruits ! Whatever period of mental florescence and splendour may yet be in store for the English-speaking races on that vast Continent ; with these three Works begins the printed English Story of their Action, their Mind, and their Progress.

Almost all nations light their lamp with fire borrowed from their predecessors. They commence with translations ; progress to imitations ; and then, often by distinctly marked steps, the Literature mounts up to the height to which

the united wit and genius of the nation (through all the vicissitudes of earthly empire) can raise it. It rests not long at the summit ; but first declines, and then decays. In its full ripeness, it oftentimes lights up the mind of younger and succeeding races ; and so, at length, its life and vitality pass away. Thus has the now blazing, now dim, torch of human knowledge and mind-craft been handed down to us over the heads of the nations, through all the successive Ages of Time.

Human literature is also, like human nature, in many essentials evermore the same in all Ages. As is the life of a Man ; so is the mind, that is, the higher life, which is the glory of a Nation. Both alike pass through Inception, Growth, Florescence, Decay, and Death : both alike but minister to the purposes of a Power greater than they, until the cycle of His plans shall be completed. Then cometh the end, when the World shall crack at the fiat of the Almighty Trinity.

Instances of this Law of successive Literary Cycles inter-ringing one with the other, readily suggest themselves. Such was the Literature of Greece in its earlier relations to Egypt and Phœnicia ; and in its later to Rome. Such also that of the *Renaissance* in Italy, in respect to the Greek literature of Byzantium ; and to its subsequent influence (which, either as to fulness or extent, has hardly yet been measured) on the rawer nations of Spain, Germany, France, and England.

Such was that of Spain (which now we consider so dead), with reference to the anterior civilisation and letters of the Moorish kingdom there. Such undoubtedly has been, and will be the literature of England ; now, it may be, in the early afternoon of its glory. And such has been, and will be that of English-America ; now in the morning of its strength and power. In the words of the great and wise Preacher, "To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven."

Under any circumstances, therefore, the present Texts would excite great interest ; whatever might be the nature of their contents. It is pleasant, however, to find that each of them has for us modern readers, a distinct interest and a strong charm : while all three do afford us a most vivid picture of those early days of oceanic discovery ; of the terrible real dangers, and the still more terrible imaginary ones, undergone and dared by the many noble-hearted Portuguese and Spaniards for themselves and for us ; when they wan, in their little cockboats, for the succeeding Human Race, a truer knowledge of the Globe in which, by the Divine Providence, it has been placed.

But the first impression—the most salient and significant interest of this volume—is that it contains reprints of *The first Three English books on America.*

II.



Our next consideration respects their *contemporary* standpoint; their relation to the story of the nation, for whom the three Texts were printed: and especially to supply Eden's omissions, as regards the very early oceanic voyages of the English, both East and West.

These publications are of great and perpetual interest, inasmuch as they photograph for all time, the fragmentary and imperfectly attained knowledge, and the vast and credulous wonderment, prevailing in England in respect to far-distant countries, during the reigns of Henry VIII. and his two immediate successors. The Texts of this volume embrace, in fact, all that the gentry and merchants of England could, down to the year 1555, A.D., read in the tongue in which they were born, of the wonderful discoveries, and still more marvellous conquests, of the Portuguese and Spaniards in the two Indies.

Neither was this amount of printed information much added to, in Eden's lifetime. His greatest literary feat—the Compilation of 1555—found no immediate imitators: so that it was left to himself (after twenty years more, of great vicissitude, had passed over his head) to undertake its repetition, in the form of a Second and much revised Edition of this labour of love; in the preparation of which he died. This revised Compilation finally appeared in 1577, “set in order, augmented, and finished” by Richard Willes, under the fresh title of *The History of Trauayle in the VWest and East Indies, and other countreys lying either way, &c.* It was five years later (1582), that R[ichard] H[akluyt] published his first Collection, under the title of *Diuers voyages, &c.*

An enquiry into the printed naval literature of Queen Elizabeth's reign, has also elicited the fact, that it was not until about that same year (1577), that our Oceanic Literature fairly began to constitute a distinct section of English books. It soon, however, greatly increased in bulk, variety, and interest; until now, it has no compeer in any other language.

Eden is therefore, in very deed, the Pioneer of British geographic research, the very First of our Naval Chroniclers, and the Herald and Forerunner of all our subsequent discoveries and victories at sea. So that in English literary history, Richard Eden stands in the same relation to Richard Hakluyt, that Richard Hakluyt does to Samuel Purchas; and Samuel Purchas, to our present Hakluyt and Royal Geographical Societies.

This multifarious volume should be studied in conjunction with the inland Chronicles of Halle, Grafton, Stow, and others; together with the more modern histories of the Reformation Age. These are chiefly, if not exclusively, occupied with home and continental affairs; and but rarely travel further abroad. In this direction, this Work will help, in a very important manner, to complete for us, the external history of England, during the period 1511–1555, A.D.

2. It will soon, however, be seen that it does this rather by way of narrating the deeds of other nations, and thereby teaching and guiding our forefathers to do the like; than by describing

the English navigations of its own time. Indeed, there are only two English voyages described in it with any detail, and those are rather late ones, viz., the voyages to Guinea in 1553 and 1554. Yet these accounts (the very earliest of their kind ever *printed* in our language) were not, as it is quite evident from page 388, included in the original conception and plan of the Work: but were added, just as the book was being completed, by way of a postscript; the extra expense of which, was borne by Master Toy, the London printer and publisher.

It is also to be especially noted, that this omission did not arise because there were no English Voyages to relate; but because the custom of narrating them in print had not yet arisen in our language. Sea-Histories had not, as yet, become an section of our Literature.

Inasmuch, therefore, as so large a portion of this Volume is occupied with the famous deeds of other nations, and particularly of those of the Spaniards; it may be well (as it is indeed but just to our own race) to place in the forefront of them all, a very slight account, by way of a rescue from oblivion, of the sea-doings and sea-daring of our forefathers in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., and Mary:—narrating the Oceanic voyages with fuller detail than those to the Continent and the Levant, as they were the more adventurous and difficult.

3. From the capture of Constantinople in 1454, till after the battle of Lepanto in 1572; there was an almost ceaseless fight between the Christians and the Turks along the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, after they had been driven from Rhodes in 1522, finally settled at Malta in 1530; where by their heroic valour in the frightful siege in 1565, they materially contributed, with the great naval victory of Don John of Austria, to stem the flow of Turkish invasion, which else threatened to swallow up all Christian States.

Recollecting that the formidable, ruthless, and barbaric power of the Turkish empire was at this time ever surging onward and westward in those eastern seas; it will interest most of us to know that there was a regular organised and direct commerce by sea between England and the Levant so early as 1511, A.D.; and for many years afterwards. For our knowledge of this we are indebted to our great English Worthy and famous Cosmographer Richard Hakluyt, Preacher; sometime a Student of Christ Church in Oxford: who, in the second edition of his great work entitled *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoveries of the English Nation, &c. &c.*, London, 1599–1600 fol., has preserved for us the following important note on—

The antiquitie of the trade with English ships into the Leuant.

IN the veeres of oure Lord, 1511, 1512, &c., till the yeere 1534. diuers tall ships of London, namely, *The Christopher Campion*, wherein was Factor one *Roger Whitcome*; the *Mary George*, wherein was Factor *William Gresham*; the great *Mary Grace*, the Owner whereof, was *William Gunson*, and the master one *John Hely*; the *Trinitie Fitz-williams*, whereof was master *Laurence Arkey*; the *Matthew* of London, whereof was master *William Capling*, with certaine other ships of *Southampton* and *Bristow*, had an ordinarie and vsuall trade to *Sicilia*, *Candie*, *Chio*, and somewhiles to *Cyprus*, as also to *Tripolis* and *Barutti* [*Beyrouit*] in *Syria*. The com-

modities which they caried thither were fine Kerfies of diuers colours, courfe Kerfies, white Westerne dozens, Cottons, certaine clothes called Satutes, and others called Cardinal-whites, and Calueskins which were well fold in *Sicilie*, &c. The commodities which they returned backe were Silks, Chamlets, Rubarbe, Malmesies, Muskadels and other wines, sweete oyles, cotten wooll, Turkie carpets, Galles, Pepper, Cinanom, and some other spices, &c. Besides, the naturall inhabitants of the foresayd places, they had, euen in those dayes, traffique with Iewes, Turkes, and other forreiners. Neither did our merchants onely employ their owne English shipping before mentioned, but fundry strangers also: as namely, *Cardiots*, *Raguseans*, *Sicilians*, *Genouczes*, *Venetian* galliasses, *Spanish* and *Portugale* ships. All which particulars doe most evidently appeare out of certaine auncient Ligier bookes [*i.e.* *Ledgers*] of the R[ight]. W[orshipful]. Sir *William Locke* Mercer of *London*, of Sir *William Bowyer* Alderman of *London*, of master *John Gresham*, and of others; which I *Richard Hakluyt* haue diligently perused and copied out.—*Vol. II., Part I., p. 96, Ed. 1599.*

4. Next in the order of time comes the mythical voyage of 1517 of Sebastian Cabot and Sir Thomas Pert from England towards Cathay; the sole authority for which is Eden's statement at page 6 of this Volume: in which, so far as we have been able to inquire, we believe him to have been utterly mistaken, and that the voyage had no existence; and the more especially because Sebastian Cabot was at that date in Spain, where he remained until after the Conference of Badajos in 1524, which (as Gomara tells us at *p. 272*) he attended as an expert on behalf of the Emperor Charles V.

5. Important and authentic as is that early Levant traffic; it was a very different thing from a voyage across the then but half discovered Atlantic. As Pietro Martire vaunts, few or none but Spaniards were licensed to go from Spain to the New World. It is, therefore, very striking to find, ere Cortes had consolidated his marvellous conquest of Mexico, or Pizarro had finally set forth to imitate him in Peru; and while at home, the great Cardinal was in serene prosperity and unruffled power, our first printed New Testaments were being secretly read in the principal English towns, and our nation's Reformation was just beginning to bud forth: it is indeed surprising to trace one Englishman at least in the West Indies; to learn, of a certainty, that one, if not two English expeditions had reached the American coast; and, most startling of all, to know that one of these squadrons found in the harbour of St John's, Newfoundland, not another royal fleet of discovery, but a fleet of fourteen *fishing-boats* (and, if Spanish reports be correct, thirty or forty more in the neighbourhood), that had ventured (at a time when, to us, so little appears to have been known of the north-eastern seaboard of America; and so much to have been dreaded in a voyage thither) across the wide Atlantic, simply for the sake of codfish.

6. Hakluyt gives the following account of Thomas Tyson or Tison, the first Englishman known to have reached the West Indies:—

A briefe note concerning an ancient trade of the English Marchants to the Canarie-lands, gathered out of an olde ligier booke [ledger] of M. Nicolas Thorne the elder a worshipfull marchant of the city of Bristol.

T appeareth evidently out of a certaine note or letter of remembrance, in the custody of me *Richard Hakluyt*, written by *M. Nicolas Thorne* the elder a principall marchant of *Bristol*, to his friend and factour *Thomas Midnall* and his owne seruant *William Ballard* at that time resident in *S. Lucar* in *Andeluzia*; that in the yeere of our Lord 1526 (and by all circumstances

and probabilities long before) certaine English marchants, and among the rest himselfe with one *Thomas Spacheford* exercised vsuall and ordinary trade of marchandise vnto the *Canarie* Ilands. For by the sayd letter notice was giuen to *Thomas Midnall* and *William Ballard* aforesayd, that a certaine ship called *The Christopher* of *Cadiz* bound for the *West Indies* had taken in certaine fardels of cloth both courfe and fine, broad and narrow of diuers forts and colours, some *arouas* [*arobas*] of packthreed, fixe *cerons* or bagges of sope, with other goods of *M. Nicolas Thorne*, to be deliuered at *Santa Cruz*, the chiefe towne in *Tenerifa*, one of the seuen *Canary-lands*. All which commodities the sayd *Thomas* and *William* were authorized by the owner in the letter before mentioned to barter and sell away at *Santa Cruz*. And in lieu of such mony as should arise of the sale of those goods, they were appointed to returne backe into *England* good store of Orchell (which is a certaine kinde of mosse growing vpon high rocks, in those dayes much vsed to die withall), some quantity of sugarcane, and certaine hundreds of kid-skinnes. For the procuring of which and of other commodities, at the best and first hand, the said *Thomas* and *William* were to make their abode at *Santa Cruz*, and to remaine there as factours for the abouesaid M[after] *Nicolas Thorne*.

And here also I thought good to signifie, that in the sayd letters mention is made of one *Thomas Tison*, an English man, who before the foresayd yere 1526 had found the way to the *West Indies*, and was there resident, vnto whom the sayd M[after] *Nicolas Thorne* sent certaine armour and other commodities specified in the letter aforesayd.—*Principall Navigations, &c. &c. of the English Nation, Vol. II., Part II., p. 3, Ed. 1599.*

Hakluyt, referring again to this note, hazards the following surmise:—

This *Thomas Tison* (so farre as I can coniecture) may seeme to haue bene some secret factour for *M. Thorne* and other English marchants in those remote partes, whereby it is probable that some of our marchants had a kind of trade to the *West Indies*, euen in those ancient times and before also.—*Idem, Vol. III., p. 500, Ed. 1600.*

This conjecture is confirmed by the fact that *Nicolas Thorne*, at his death in 1527, owed this *Thomas Tyson* the sum of £12:5s. (probably on account of business).—See *Letters and Papers on the Reign of Henry VIII.*, Edited by the Rev. J. S. Brewer, M.A., *IV. (2), p. 1256.*

7. Imbedded in Halle's Chronicle is the following note, quite unconnected with anything going before or after, and to which also he makes no subsequent allusion whatever:—

This same moueth [May 1527, 19 Hen. VIII.], the kyng sent two fayre shippes, well manned and vaited, hauing in them diuers conning men, to feke strange regions; and so furth thei fet, out of the *Thamis*, the twentie day of May, if thei sped well you shall here at their retorne. *fol. 158, b.*

This note *Richard Grafton*, who had printed Halle's Chronicles in 1548, transferred (with but variations of spelling) to *p. 1149* of his own Chronicle, printed by *Henry Denham* in 1569.

Richard Hakluyt, in his *Principall Navigations, Voyages, and Discoveries*, thus records his researches as to this expedition:—



AND whereas master Hall and master Grafton say, that in those ships there were diuers cunning men, I haue made great inquirie of such as, by their yeeres and delight in nauigation, might giue me any light to know who those cunning men should be, which were the directers in the aforesayd voyage.

And it hath bene told mee by Sir *Martin Frobisher*, and master *Richard Allen* a Knight of the Sepulchre, that a Canon of *S. Paul* in *London*, which was a great Mathematician, and a man indued with wealth, did much aduance the action, and went therein himselfe in person, but what his name was, I can not learne of any. And further they told mee that one of the ships was called the *Dominus vobiscum*, which is a name likely to bee giuen by a religious man of those daies. and that failing very farre Northwestward, one of the ships was cast away as it entred into a dangerous gulphe, about the great opening, betweene the North partes of *New found land*, and the countrey lately called by her maiestie *Meta Incognita* [*i.e.* *Labrador*].

Whereupon the other ship shaping her course towards *Cape Britton*, and the coast of *Norumbega* [Hakluyt substitutes *Arambec* in his 1600 Edition], and oftentimes putting their men on land to search the state of those unknown regions, returned home about the beginning of October, of the yeere aforesaid. And thus much (by reason of the great negligence of the writers of those times, who should have used more care in preferring the memories of the worthy actes of our nation) is all that hitherto I can learne, or find out of this voyage.—p. 517, *Ed.* 1589; also, iii 129, *Ed.* 1600.

Of this enterprise, Purchas some thirty-five years later has preserved for us, at pp. 808-91 of the Third volume of his *Pilgrimes*, 1625, the following more authentic testimony:—

WEE will recreate you with a plaine Mariners Letter endorsed in homely phraze, To the Honourable Kings Grace of *England*, here (as I thinke) giuen you from the Originall. I haue also another written to Cardinal *Wolfey* touching the same voyage in Latin, by *Albertus de Prato*; for the antiquitie rather than any remarkable raritie, worthy here to be mentioned.¹

² I mentioned before Master *Thornes* fathers finding out *New-found Land*, with Master *Eliot*. These animated King *Henric* the eight to set forth two ships for discovery, one of which perished in the North parts of *New-found Land*. The Master of the other, *John Rut*, writ this Letter to King *Henric*, in bad *English* and worfe Writing. Ouer it was this superscription.³

Master *Grubes* two ships departed from *Plymouth* the 10. day of Iune, and arriued in the *New-found-Land* in a good Harbour, called *Cape de Bas*, the 21. day of Iuly: and after we had left the sight of *Selle* [? *Scilly*], we had neuer sight of any Land, till we had sight of *Cape de Bas*.

Reasing your Honorable Grace to heare of your seruant *John Rut*, with all his Company here, in good health, thanks be to God, and your Graces ship, *The Mary of G[u]il[d]ford* with all her thanks be to God: And if it please your honorable Grace, we ranne in our course to the Northward, till we came into 53. degrees, and there we found many great Ilands of Ice and deepe water, we found no sounding, and then we durst not goe no further to the Northward for feare of more Ice, and then we cast about to the Southward, and within foure dayes after we had one hundred and sixtie fathom, and then we came into 52. degrees, and fell with the mayne Land, and within ten leagues of the mayne Land we met with a great Iland of Ice, and came hard by her, for it was standing in deepe water, and so went in with *Cape de Bas*, a good Harbor, and many small Ilands, and a great fresh Riuer going vp farre into the mayne Land, and the mayne Land all wildernesse and mountaines and woods, and no naturall ground but all mosse, and no inhabitation nor no people in these parts: and in the woods we found footing of diuers great beasts, but we saw none not in ten leagues. And please your Grace, the *Samson* and wee kept company all the way till within two dayes before wee met with all the Ilands of Ice. That was the first day of Iuly at night, and there rose a great and a maruailous great storme, and much foule weather; I trust in Almighty Iesu to heare good newes of her. And please your Grace, we were considering and a writing of all our order, how we would wash [? watch] vs, and what course wee would draw, and when God doe send foule weather, that with *Cape de Sper she* [i.e. each ship] should goe, and he that came first should tarry the space of sixe weeks one for another, and watered at *Cape de Bas* ten dayes, ordering of your Graces ship, and fishing, and so departed toward the Southward to seeke our fellow: the third day of August we entered into a good Hauen, called *Saint Iohn*, and there we found eleuen saile of Normans, and one Brittain, and two Portugall Barkes, and all a fishing, and so we are readie to depart toward *Cape de Bas*,⁴ and that is twentie fve leagues, as

¹ The very high antiquity of these letters—which are the earliest ever known to have been sent home by Englishmen from America—constitutes their great modern value.

² The next two sentences are a jumble of error. It is clear from the text that the expedition consisted of three ships: Master *Grube's* or *Grub's* two ships, one of which was called the *Samson*, the name of the other does not transpire (if it could be ascertained to be the *Dominus Vobiscum*, the chain of testimony would be complete): together with the King's ship, the *Mary of Guildford*, commanded by *John Rut*.

³ Purchas evidently intends us to understand that the endorsement is contemporary with the letter.

⁴ This is evidently a mistake through the hurry in writing. It should be *Cape de Sper* [*Cabo de Spera*, "the Cape of the Spear"]. For the two ships, after having stayed

shortly as we haue fished, and so along the coast till we may meete with our fellow, and so with all diligence that lyes in me towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded by the grace of God, as we were commanded at our departing. And thus Iesu saue and keepe your honorable Grace, and all your honourable Reuer., in the Hauen of *Saint Iohn*, the third day of August, written in haste. 1527.

By your seruant *John Rut*, to his vttermoost of his power.

I haue by me also *Albert de Prato's*¹ originall Letter, in Latin stille, almost as harsh as the former *English*, and bearing the same date, and was indorsed, *Reuerend in Christo Patri Domino Domino Cardinali et Domino Legato Anglia:* and began, *Reuerendissime in Christo Pater salutem. Reuerendissime Pater, placeat Reuerendissime paternitati vestre scire Deo fauente postquam exiimus à Plenuit quæ fuit x. Iunij &c.* (The substance is the same with the former, and therefore omitted.) *Datum apud le Baya Saint Iohan in Terris Nouis, die x. Augusti 1527. Reuer. Patr. vest. humilis seruus, Albertus de Prato* (the name written in the lowest corner of the sheet).

We are fortunately able to trace this expedition still further. By "towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded," *John Rut* meant the West Indies; and we have accounts by two Spanish historians of his arrival there, which will demand of us some further attention.

Gonzales Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés—b. at Madrid 1478, d. at Valladolid 1557, and who resided for many years in the West Indies—wrote, in addition to the *Natural hystoria de las Indias* printed at Toledo on 15th February 1526, from which *Eden* has translated large extracts at pp. 208-242 of this Volume; another and his most important work, entitled *La historia general de las Indias*, the printing of which was completed at Seville on 30th September 1535 (or about eight years after *Rut's* expedition); every copy of which is attested with *Oviedo's* written signature. It does not appear that *Eden* had met with this important work, or he would have assuredly have made the following extract from it.

On folio clxj. of this work, being the Thirteenth chapter of the Nineteenth book, is the following passage, for the literal translation of which we are much indebted to the courtesy and kindness of the celebrated Spanish scholar, *Don Pasqual de Gayangos*.

Before we come to the extract; an error as to its date (which misled *Hakluyt*, and may mislead others) must be noted for avoidance, in the Third Volume of *J. B. Ramusio's Navigacione e Viaggi*. Each Volume of this celebrated Collection was printed in a different year by *L. A. Giunti* at Venice. Vol. I., of which a First Edition had been printed in 1550, appeared corrected and enlarged in March 1554. Of Vol. II., the Preface of which is dated 7th July 1554, the earliest known is that of 1559; while Vol. III., the Preface of which is dated 20th June 1553, appears to have been first printed in 1556; that is to say, in the year after *Eden's* Compilation was published in London.

Now, at p. 204 of this Third Volume, of 1556, occurs this important typographical error. *Oviedo* in 1535 begins *Elanno*

ten days, 21-31 July 1527, at *Cape de Bas*, sailing southward, had reached *St. John's* harbour on the 3d of August, and then purposed to go 75 miles more, evidently to the southward, to *Cape de Sper*, the appointed rendezvous, where they hoped to meet the *Samson*. From the date of the priest's letter, however, it is evident that the two English ships stayed a week longer at *St. John's*. These letters were probably sent to England in one of the Norman or Breton fishing boats.

¹ I have quite failed to find any notice of this *Albertus de Prato*. Might that be a latinised form of *Albert Prat*? or was the bearer of the name a foreigner? I can trace no such name in *Le Neve's Fasti* or *Newcourt's Repertorium*. It would be interesting if he could be identified with *Hakluyt's* mathematical Canon of *St. Paul's*.

de M.d.xxvij. annos, &c.; which Ramusio in 1556 translates *Nel 1517* instead of *Nel 1527*. Hakluyt in 1589, not suspecting any falsification, thereupon adduces the following extract in support of fabulous English voyage of 1517, hereafter asserted by Eden at p. 6: but the date being wrong, his argument, of course, falls to pieces.

It would also seem that Oviedo was residing in the city of Santo Domingo, when he wrote this portion of his history.

CHAPTER 13. *Of certain foreign corsairs which passed to these parts and Indies, and what has been the cause and origin of their bad thoughts.*

IN the year Mdxvii. an English corsair, under colour or pretence that he was going to discover land, came with a large ship to the Brazil on the coast of Tierra Firme, and from thence crossed to this Island Hispanola, and arrived close to the mouth of the harbour of this city [Santo Domingo]. He sent his boat properly manned, and asked for permission to come into port, saying that he came with merchandise and to barter [with the inhabitants]. At the same moment the Governor, Francisco de Tapia, ordered a gun to be fired against the said [English] ship, which was coming straight into the harbour; which being observed by the English, they went away, after taking on board the said boat's crew. And, to tell the truth, the Governor [Tapia] was wrong in what he did, for had the English vessel entered the harbour, armed though she was, she could not have left without the consent of this city and castle.

So that the English, seeing the reception that was made to them, sailed in the direction of the Island of San Juan, and having entered the Bay of San German, spoke to the inhabitants of that town, and asked for provisions: uttering complaints against the people of this island [Hispaniola], and saying that they had not come to annoy the people, but to traffic with them, if they consented, for money or merchandise. Provisions were given to them, and they gave pewter vessels and other goods in return. After which the ship sailed for Europe; but it is supposed that she never reached her destination, for nothing more was heard of her.

Considering that Oviedo *printed* the above less than eight years after the event, there can hardly be any mistake as to the year being 1527. Yet in a later Spanish historian we find these circumstances, in much fuller detail, narrated as occurring in 1519. So that of the three dates 1517, 1519, and 1527; the last is the true one.

Antonio de Herrera Tordesillas, [*b.* 1559 at Cuella de Segovia; *d.* 29th March 1625 at Madrid], was born two years after the death of Oviedo. The first four *Decades* of his *Historia General de los Hechos de los Castellanos en las Islas i tierra firme* were printed in 1601, the last four in 1615; both at Madrid. In the second *Decas*, which was published seventy-four years after Rut's voyage, we have an account of him and his doings, evidently derived from a written deposition; as Oviedo's had been either from hearsay or from personal observation. It consists of the narrative (for the translation of which I am indebted to my friend, the late H. Pyne, Esq., Assistant Tithe Commissioner) of Ginès Navarro, master of a Spanish caravel, who apparently piloted Rut's ship from Porto Rico by the island of Mona to Santo Domingo, and then back again to San Germano in the island of Porto Rico.

THE ARRIVAL OF AN ENGLISH SHIP IN THE INDIES, AND THE STATE OF AFFAIRS IN THE ISLANDS.

AFTER the departure of the ships which carried [? to Spain] the gold pearls and ordinary merchandise; a caravel of Saint Domingo being in the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico], loading with casava; there arrived [at Porto Rico] a ship of three masts, and of the burden of 150 tons. The

master of the caravel, [who] went out in his boat to this ship, supposing it to be a Spanish vessel, discovered [coming towards him] a pinnace containing twenty-five men armed with corslets and cross-bows, and having two pieces of artillery in its prow.

They said that they were Englishmen, and that their ship was from England; that, in company with another armed ship, they had sailed to seek the country of the Great Khan, but that the ships had been separated in a tempest: and that theirs, proceeding on its voyage, came to a frozen sea, where they found large islands of ice; that they had then altered their course, and came to a hot sea [? *the Gulf Stream*], which seethed like water in a caldron; and in order that the caulking of the ship might not be melted, they went in search of the Baccalaos,¹ where they found fifty² Spanish, French, and Portuguese ships, and that they wishing to land there in order to obtain an Indian interpreter, they [the Indians] killed the pilot, who was a Piedmontese. From thence, they had coasted as far as the *Rio de Chicora* [*the River of Chicora*, i.e. *River in Carolina*], and had crossed over from that river to the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico].

Upon being asked, What they were searching for in those islands? they said that they were desirous of seeing them, for the purpose of giving an account of them to the King of England, and to take a cargo from Brazil.

They invited the master of the caravel, who was called Ginès Navarro, to come on board their ship, and to show them the course to Saint Domingo. He saw in the ship a quantity of wine, flour, and other provisions; as well as much cloth, linen, and other articles of merchandise. They carried much artillery and a forge, and carpenters for ship-building, and an oven for baking bread; and there were [in the ship] threescore men.

Ginès Navarro further stated that, if he could have read them, the captain of the ship wished to show him the instructions which he brought from the King of England; that they had sent a company ashore at the Island of Mona,³ and that they had bartered some pewter in the Island of San Juan.

This ship went to the port of Santo Domingo, and sent the bark ashore, saying That they were desirous of trading; and [it] tarried there two days, The governor of the Castle, upon the arrival of the ship, sent to inform the Magistrates [? *the Royal Audience*], for the purpose of their giving him orders what to do; and as they returned no answer, he discharged a gun at the ship, in consequence of which, she forthwith recalled the bark, and by and by set sail.

The ship then returned to the back of the island of San Juan, and tarried a short time there, trading with the inhabitants of the town of Saint Germans; and did not appear again.

The magistrates [of Saint Domingo] arrested the governor, saying that he ought to have waited for their answer; and sent information of this affair to the King [of Spain], as well as of the bad condition of the fortress, so that orders might be given for the fortification of it, and [that] there should be directions [given] for the providing it with men, artillery, and military stores.—*Decades*, ii., *Book v.*, *Chapter 3.*, *Ed.* 1601.

Thus from four perfectly distinct and independent sources, comes to us the certainty of this English voyage across the Atlantic in 1527; for a further discussion of which see that masterpiece in its way, and rare book (in the Eastern hemisphere at least), Mr. J. G. Kohl's *History of the Discovery of Maine*, published by the Maine Historical Society at Portland, in 1869; and Mr. Biddle's *Memoir of Sebastian Cabot*, London 1832. Both these writers think that the Piedmontese pilot was the celebrated Verazzano.

It is interesting to know that John Rut got back safely to England. For in Sept.-Dec. 1528, while still in the command

¹ The Indian word for codfish, applied by S. Cabot to the land he first discovered, and afterwards loosely and vaguely applied to the American coast from Labrador far to the southward. Here it evidently includes Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and the northern seaboard States of the United States.

² This number may be an exaggeration. If it be correct, the English squadron must have met thirty or forty other fishing-boats on the Newfoundland 'banks,' beside the fourteen they saw in St. John's harbour.

³ Mona is a small island in the track from Porto Rico to Santo Domingo.

of the *Mary of Guildford*, he was employed in freighting home, on the King's behalf, wine from Bourdeaux. See *Royal M.S.* 14. B. xxix., in the British Museum.

8. We have seen by the above that the King's ships left the Thames on 20th May 1527. Whatever else may be doubtful, that is certain: and therefore it is equally certain that the 'Book' which Robert Thorne, the Bristol merchant, wrote at Seville in that year, and sent to Doctor Leigh, the King's almoner, and the English ambassador in Spain, had nothing to do with the fitting out of that London expedition.

This far-seeing discourse, with its preliminary exhortation to the King, was first printed by R[ichard] H[akluyt] in his *Diuers Voyages, &c.* in 1582. Its only date is 1527, which occurs twice; each time after the author's signature—'Robert Thorne. 1527.' As Hakluyt reproduced Thorne's curious 'Carde' or map, it is quite evident that he had before him, in 1582, the original and autographic book penned by the author; and therefore the date 1527 must be accepted by us without a doubt.

Now it was the English custom at that time, to reckon the year from the 25th March, the Feast of the Annunciation of the Virgin. The 'Book' was therefore written at the earliest after the 25th March 1527.

The two following passages in it, taken together, would seem to show that it was not *written* till the summer was far advanced, probably while Rut's expedition was skirting the American coast.

In a flote of three shippes and a carauell that went from this citie, armed by the merchautes of it, which departed in Aprill last past, I and my partner haue 1400. Ducates that we employed in the sayd fleete, principally for that two Englishmen friends of mine [*see p. xiii.*] whiche are somewhat learned in Cosmographie, shoulde go in the same shippes, to bring mee certaine relation of the situation of the countrey, and to bee experte in the Nauigation of those seas, and there to haue informations of many other things, and aduise that I desire to know especially. Seeing in these quarters are ships, and marriners of that countrey, and cardes [*charts*] by which they fayle, though much vnlike ours, that they should procure to haue the said cards, and learne howe they vnderstande them, and especially to know what Nauigation they haue for these Ilandes Northwardes and Northeastwarde. B. 4.

But if it please God that into Englande I may come with your Lordship, I will shewe some coniectures of reason though against the generall opinion of Cosmographers, by which shall appeare this that I say not to lacke some foundation. And tyll that time I beseeche your Lordship let it bee put to silence: and in the meane season, it may please God to sende our two Englishmen, that are gone to the spicerie, which may also bring more plaine declaration of yat which in this case might be required. . . D. 3.

It would seem that Thorne by 'April last paste' means April 1527; for if he had intended April 1526, and wrote this 'Book' in the seven days of 25-31 March, then by English custom reckoned as the first days of 1527, he would assuredly have said 'April last year.' It is also evident from the allusion that a considerable time had elapsed since the two Englishmen had left for the West Indies; and that, at the time of writing, Thorne was looking forward to their return. The earliest approximate date that can therefore be assigned to its composition is the summer of 1527. Dr. Leigh did not return to England till January 1530.

We must therefore assign the occasion and preparation of this English voyage of Oceanic discovery of 1527 to other

persons than Robert Thorne. Such an important effort, as this expedition most certainly was, could not have been suddenly determined upon, and probably originated in the previous year.

Thorne's 'Book' is also interesting for another reference to a very early English voyage across the Atlantic.

So that as afore is sayde, if betweene our Newe founde landes or *Norway*, or Ilande the Seas towarde the north be Nauigable, wee shoulde goe to these Ilandes a shorter way by more then 2000. leagues. And though wee went not in the faide Ilandes, for that they are the Emperours or Kinges of Portingale, wee shoulde by the way, and comming once to the line Equinoctiall, finde landes no lesse riche in Golde and spicerie, as all other landes are vnder the faide line Equinoctiall: and also shoulde, if wee may passe vnder the North, enioye the Nauigation of all Tartarie.

Which shoulde bee no lesse profitable to our commodities of clothe, then these spicerie to the Emperour, and King of Portugale.

But it is a generall opinion of all Cosmographers that passing the seuenth clyme, the sea is all ice, the colde so much that none can suffer it. And hitherto they had all the like opinion that vnder the line Equinoctiall for muche heate the lande was inhabitable.

Yet since by experience is proued no lande so much habitable nor more temperate. And to conclude, I thinke the same shoulde bee founde vnder the North, if it were experimented. For as all iudge, *Nihil fit vacuum in rerum natura*, so I iudge there is no lande inhabitable [*i.e. uninhabitable*], nor Sea innaugable. If I should write the reason that presenteth this vnto me, I shoulde be too prolix, and it seemeth not requisite for this present matter. God knoweth that though by it I shoulde haue no great interest, yet I haue had and still haue no little minde of this businesse: So that if I had facultie to my will, it shoulde bee ye first thing that I woulde vnderstande, euen to attempt, if our Seas Northwarde be nauigable to the Pole or no. I reason, that as some sickeneses are hereditarious, and come from the father to the sonne, so this inclination or desire of this discouerie I inherited of my father, which with another merchant of Bristowe named Hugh Eliot were the discouersers of newe found lands, of the which there is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had bene ours. For all is one coaste, as by the carde appeareth, and [*as*] is aforefaide. . . . D. 2.

A most excellent account of the merchant family of the Thornes of Bristol will be found in *English Merchants*, 1869, written by my fellow-student at King's College, Mr. H. R. Fox Bourne.

9. The next English Voyage on our record introduces us to a very famous name. It is thus preserved to us by Hakluyt.

A VOYAGE TO BRASILL, MADE BY THE WORSHIPFULL M[ASTER] WILLIAM HAUKINS OF PLIMMOUTH, FATHER TO SIR IOHN HAUKINS, KNIGHT, NOW LIVING,¹ IN THE YEERE 1530.



W^hereof M. William Haukins of Plimmouth, a man for his wisdome, valure, experience, and skill in sea caufes, much esteemed and beloued of King *Henry* the eight, and being one of the principall Sea Captaines in the West partes in his time, not contented with the short voyages commonly then made onely to the knowen coastes of *Europe*, armed out a tall and goodly ship of his owne of the burthen of 250 tunnes, called the Pole [*Paule*, Ed. 1600] of *Plimmouth*, wherewith hee made three long and famous voyages vnto the coast of *Brasill*, a thing in those dayes very rare, especially to our Nation. In the course of which voyages he touched at the Riuer of *Sestos* vpon the coast of *Guinea*, where hee trafiqued with the *Negroes*, and tooke of them Oliphants [*Elephants*, Ed. 1600] teeth, and other commodities which that

¹ As this was printed in 1589, old William Hawkins lived to see the overthrow of the Spanish Armada, and so is very properly introduced by the Rev. Canon Kingsley, with his usual truthfulness in details, in his celebrated Elizabethan romance of *Westward Ho!* as a very old man, present at Plymouth with the Captains who were waiting the arrival of the great Spanish Fleet.

place yeeldeth: and so arriuing on the coast of *Brazil*, vsed there such discretion, and behaved himself so wisely with those sauage people, that he grew into great familiaritie and friendship with them. Infomuch that in his 2. voyage, one of the sauage kings of the countrey of *Brafill*, was contented to take shippe with him, and to bee transported hither into England, whereunto *M[after] Haukins* agreed, leauing behinde in the Countrey as a pledge for his safetie and returne againe, one *Martin Cockeram* of *Plimmouth*. This *Brazilian* king being arriued [*i.e.* in 1531], was brought vp to London, and presented to King *Henry* the 8. lying as then at *Whitchall*: at the sight of whome, the King and all the Nobilitie did not a little marueile, and not without cause: for in his cheekes were holes made according to their sauage maner, and therein small bones were planted, standing an inche out from the said holes, which in his owne Countrey was reputed for a great brauerie. He had also another hole in his nether lippe, wherein was set a precious stone about the bignesse of a pease. All his apparell, behaiour, and gesture were very strange to the beholders.

Hauing remained here the space almost of a whole yere, and the king with his sight fully satisfied, *M[after] Haukins* according to his promise and appointment, purposed to conuey him againe into his Countrey: but it fell out in the way that, by change of ayre and alteration of diet, the said sauage king died at Sea, which was feared would turne to the losse of the life of *Martin Cockeram* his pledge. Neuerthelesse, the Sauages being fully perswaded of the honest dealing of our men with their Prince, restored againe the saide pledge, without any harme to him, or any man of the companie: which pledge of theirs they brought home againe into England, with their shippe freighted and furnished with the commodities of the Countrey. Which *Martine Cockeram*, by the witnesse of Sir *John Haukins*, being an officer in the towne of *Plimmouth*, was liuing within these fewe yeares.—*p.* 520, *Ed.* 1589.

10. Let us now look eastward. In 1592, (three years after the appearance of the First edition of his *Voyages*, &c.), Hakluyt became acquainted with a very old man, a Londoner named *John Williamson*, then apparently the sole survivor of our first traffic in the Levant; which dying out, had been revived in 1580.

These early Levant voyages were very important; inasmuch as they were the school in which some of the principal Agents and Captains of the Moscovy Company, like *Richard Gray* and *Richard Chancellor*, received their chief training.

A voyage made with the shippes called the Holy Crosse, and the Matthew Gonson, to the Iles of Candia and Chio, about the yere 1534, according to a relation made to Master Richard Hackluyt by John Williamson, Cooper and citizen of London, who liued in the yere 1592, and went as cooper in the Mathew Gonson the next voyage after.

The shippes, called the *Holy Crosse* and the *Matthew Gonson*, made a voyage to the Ilandes of *Candia* and *Chio* in *Turkie*, about the yeere 1534. And in the *Mathew* went as Captaine *M[after] Richard Gonson*, sonne of old Master *William Gonson*, paymaster of the kings Nauie. In this first voyage [*i.e.* of the two described by *Williamson*] went *William Holstocke* (who afterwards was Controuler of her Maiesties [*i.e.* Queen Elizabeth's] Nauie, lately deceased) as page to *M[after] Richard Gonson* afore said, which *M[after] Gonson* died in *Chio* in this his first voyage. The ship called the *Holy Crosse* was a short shippe, and of burden 160 tunnes. And hauing beene a full yeere at the sea in performance of this voyage, with great danger she returned home, where, vpon her arriual at *Blackwall*, in the riuer of *Thames*, her wine and oyle caske was found so weake that they were not able to hoysse them out of the ship, but were constrained to draw them as they lay, and put their wine and oyle into new vessels, and so to vnlade the shippe. Their chiefe freight was very excellent Muscatels and red Malmesie, the like whereof were seeldome seene before in *England*. They brought home also good quantitie of sweete oyles, cotton woolles, *Turkie* Carpets, Galles, Cynamon, and some other spices. The saide shippe called the *Holy Crosse* was so shaken in this voyage, and so weakened, that she was layd vp in the docke, and neuer made voyage after.—*Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 98, *Ed.* 1599.

EDEN.

Another voyage to the Iles of Candia and Chio made by the shippe, the Mathew Gonson, about the yeere 1535, according to the relation of John Williamson, then Cooper in the same ship, made to M[after] Richard Hackluyt, in the yeere 1592.

The good shippe called the *Mathew Gonson*, of burthen 300 tunnes, whereof was owner old *M[after] William Gonson*, pay-master of the Kings Nauie, made her voyage in the yere 1535. In this ship went as Captaine, *Richard Gray*, who long after died in *Russia*. Master *William Holstocke*, afterward Controuler of the Queenes Nauie, went then as purser in the same voyage. The Master was one *John Pichet*, seruant to old *M[after] William Gonson*. *James Runnie* was Masters mate. The master cooper was *John Williamson*, citizen of *London*, liuing in the yeere 1592, and dwelling in *Sa[im]t Dunstons* parish, in the East. The *M[after] Gunner* was *John Godfrey* of *Bristol*. In this ship were 6 gunners and 4 trumpeters, all which foure trumpeters at our returne homewards went on land at *Messina* in the Island of *Sicilia*, as our ship road there at anker, and gat them into the Gallies that lay neere vnto vs, and in them went to *Rome*. The whole number of our companie in this ship were about 100. men, we were also furnished with a great bote, which was able to carry 10 tunnes of water, which at our returne homewards we towed all the way from *Chio* vntil we came through the fraight of *Gib[r]altar* into the maine Ocean. We had also a great long boat and a skiff. We were out vpon this voyage eleuen months, yet in all this time there died of sicknesse but one man, whose name was *George Forrest*, being seruant to our Carpenter called *Thomas Plummer*.—*Idem*.

The Island of *Scio*, the extreme point of the above two voyages, had long been the property of a Genoese family, the *Justiana*, under the sovereignty of the Senate of that city. How the Turks first put it to tribute, and finally took possession of it in 1568, is thus narrated in two letters, written on the 14th of February 1569 by an Englishman, *Gaspar Campion*, who had "traded in this countrey [*i.e.* the island and its vicinity] about this 30. yeres [*i.e.* 1539-1569], and haue beenc married in the towne of *Chio* full 24. yeres [*i.e.* 1544-1569]."

If, you shall vnderstand that the Island of *Chio* in time past hath bene a *Signiorie* or lordship of it selfe, and did belong to the *Genowaies*. There were 24. of them that gouerned the island which were called *Maunses*. But in continuance of time the Turke waxed so strong and mightie, that they, considering they were not able to keepe it, unlesse they should become his tributaries, because the Island had no corne, nor any kind of vitales to sustaine themselues, but onely that which must of necessitie come out of the Turkes dominions, and the sayd island being inclosed with the Turks round about, and but 12. miles from the Turks Continent, therefore the said *Genowaies* did compound and agree to be the Turkes tributaries, and to pay him 14000. thousand ducates yeerely, Alwayes prouided that they should keep their lawes both spiritual and temporall, as they did when the Island was in their owne hands. Thus he granted them their priuledge, which they inioyed for many yeeres, so that all strangers and also many English men did trade thither of long continuance, and went and came in safety. In this meane time, the prince *Pedro Doria* (being a Genouois) became a captaine to serue the Emperour with 30. or 40. gallies against the Turke. And since that time diuers other captaines belonging to *Genoua* haue beene in the seruice of king *Philip* against the Turke. Moreouer, whensoever the Turke made out any army, he perceiued that no nation did him more hurt then those Genouois, who were his tributaries. Likewise at the Turkes siege of *Malta*, before which place he lay a great while, with losse of his men, and also of his gallies, he found none so troublesome vnto his force as one *Iuanette Doria*, a Genouois, and diuers others of the Island of *Chio*, who were his tributaries. At which sight, he tooke such displeasure against them of *Chio*, that he sent certaine of his gallies to the Island, for to seise vpon all the goods of the 24. *Maunses*, and to turne them with their wiues and children out of the Island; but they would let none other depart, because the Island should not be vnpeopled. So that now the Turke hath sent one of his chiefe men to rule there.—*Hakluyt*, *Vol.* II., *Part* I., *p.* 114, *Ed.* 1599.

C

xvii

Another letter of Campion's, begins thus :

TH may please your worship to vnderstand, that as concerning the voyage to *Chio*, what great profit would be gotten, both for merchants and also for owners of shippes (as it was well known in those dayes when the *Matthew Gonson*, the *Trinitie Fitzwilliams*, and the *Saujour of Bristol*, with diuers other ships, which traded thither yerely, and made their voyage in ten or twelue moneths, and the longest in a yeere), M[after] *Francis Lambert*, M[after] *John Brooke*, and M[after] *Drauer* can truly inform you hereof at large. And by reason that wee haue not traded into those parts these many yeeres [*i.e.* previous to 1569], and the Turke is growen mighty, whereby our ships doe not trade as they were woont . . . —*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part I., p. 116, Ed. 1599.*

Finally we may take leave on this occasion of the interesting subject of the early English trade in the Mediterranean, with the following note of Hakluyt's.

His trade into the Leuant. . . . was very vsuall and much frequented from the yeere of our Lord 1511 till the yeere 1534, and afterwards also, though not so commonly, vntil the yeere 1550, when the barke *Aucher* under the conduct of M[after] *Roger Bodenham* made a prosperous voyage into *Sicilia*, *Candia*, *Sio*, and other places within the Leuant. Since which time the foresaid trade (notwithstanding the grand *Signiors* ample priuilege granted to M[after] *Anthony Ienkenson* 1553, and the strong and weighty reasons of *Gaspard Campion* for that purpose) was vtterly discontinued, and in maner quite forgotten, as if it had neuer bene, for the space of 20. yeeres or more [*i.e.* from the date of Jenkinson's priuilege of 1553 until 1575; when the preliminary steps which resulted in the formation of the Turkey Company, were taken]. *Voyages, Vol. II., Part I., p. 136, Ed. 1599.*

11. We now come to the tragical English voyage to Newfoundland, in 1536; as narrated by Master Oliver Daubeney, a London merchant, to Hakluyt's cousin and namesake, Richard Hakluyt of the Inner Temple; and by Master Thomas Butts of Norfolk, to himself. It will ever be thought one of the worthiest acts of our younger Hakluyt's worthy life, that, for the simple assurance, with further details, of this voyage, he travelled 200 miles on horseback, probably into Norfolk and back.

The voyage of master Hore and diuers other Gentlemen, to Newfoundland and Cape Breton, in the yeere 1536. and in the 28. yeere of King Henry the eight.

One master Hore of London, a man of goodly stature and of great courage, and giuen to the studie of Cosmographie, in the 28. yeere of King Henry the 8. and in the yeere of our Lord 1536. encouraged diuers gentlemen and others, being assisted by the kings fauour and good countenance. to accompany him in a voyage of discouerie vpon the Northwest partes of America: wherein his perswasions tooke such effect, that within short space many gentlemen of the innes of court, and of Chauncerie, and diuers other of good worship desirous to see the strange things of the world, very willingly entered into the action with him, some of whose names were as followeth: M[after] *Wickes*, a gentleman of the West cuntry of five hundred markes [*equivalent to an income of £2500 of the present day*] by the yeere liuing. Master *Tucke*, a gentleman of Kent. Master *Tuckfield*. M[after] *Thomas Butts*, the sonne of Sir William Butts, Knight of Norfolk, which is yet aliue, and from whose mouth I wrote most of this relation. Master *Hardie*, Master *Biron*, Master *Carter*, Master *Wright*, Master *Rastall* Saricant *Rastals* brother, Master *Ridley*, and diuers other, which all were in the admirall called the *Trinitie*, a ship of feuen score tunnes, wherein M[after]. *Hore* himselfe was imbarked. In the other shippe, whose name was the *Minion*, went a very learned and vertuous gentlemen, one master *Armigil Wade*, father to the worshipfull master *William Wade*, now clerke of the priuie counsell, Master *Oliuer Daubeney* merchant of London, M[after] *Ioy* afterward gentleman of the kings chappell, with diuers other of good account. The whole number that went in the two tall ships aforefayd, to wit, the

Trinitie and the *Minion*, were about six score persons, whereof 30. were gentlemen, which all were mustered in warlike maner at *Grauesend*, and after the receiuing of the sacrament, they embarked themselues at the end of Aprill, 1536.

From the time of their setting out from *Grauesende*, they were very long at sea, to witte, aboue two moneths, and neuer touched any lande vntill they came to part of the West *Indies* about *Cape Breton*, shaping their course thence Northeastwards, vntill they came to the Island of *Penguin*, which is very full of rockes and stones, whereon they went and founde it full of great foules white and gray, as bigge as geese, and they sawe infinite numbers of their egges. They draue a great number of the foules into their boates vpon their failes, and tooke vp many of their egges, the foule they slead and their skinnes were like hony combes full of holes being slead off: they dressed and eate them, and found them to be very good and nourishing meate. They sawe also store of beares both blacke and white, of whome they killed some, and tooke them for no badde foode.

M[after] *Oliuer Daubeney*, which (as it is before mentioned) was in this voyage, and in the *Minion*, tolde M[after] *Richard Hakluyt* of the middle Temple these things following: to wit, That after their arriual in *Newfoundland*, and hauing bene there certaine dayes at ancre, and not hauing yet seene any of the naturall people of the Countrey, the same *Daubeney* walking one day on the hatches spied a boate with Sauages of those partes, rowing downe the bay towarde them, to gafe vpon the shippe and our people, and taking viewe of their comming aloofe, hee called to such as were vnder hatches, and willed them to come vp if they would see the naturall people of the Countrey, that they had so long and so much desired to see: Whereupon they came vp and tooke viewe of the Sauages rowing toward them and their shippe, and vpon the viewe they manned out a shipboote to meete them and to take them. But they spying our shipboote making towards them, returned with maine force, and fled into an Island that laye vp in the bay or riuer there, and our men pursued them into the Island, and the Sauages fledde and escaped: but our men founde a fire, and the side of a beare on a wodden spit left at the same by the Sauages that were fledde.

There in the same place they founde a boot of leather garnished on the vtter side of the calfe in certain braue trailes, as it were of rawe filke, and also founde a certaine great warme mitten: And these carried with them, they returned to their shippe, not finding the Sauages, nor seeing any thing else besides the foyle, and the things growing in the same, which chiefly were store of fire and pine trees.

And further, the said *M. Daubeney* told him, that lying there they grewe into great want of victuals, and that there they found small reliefe, more then that they had from the nest of an *Osprey*, that brought hourelly to her yong great plentie of diuers forts of fishes. But such was the famine that increased amongst them from day to day, that they were forced to seeke to relieue themselues of rawe herbes and rootes that they sought on the maine: but the famine increasing and the reliefe of herbes being to little purpose to satisfie their insatiable hunger, in the fieldes and desertes here and there, the fellowe killed his mate while hee stouped to take vp a roote for his reliefe, and cutting out pieces of his body whome hee had murdered, broyled the same on the coles, and greedily deuoured them.

By this meane the company decreased, and the officers knewe not what was become of them; and it fortuneth that one of the company driuen with hunger to seeke abroade for reliefe, founde out in the fields the fauour of broyled flesh, and fell out with one that hee would suffer him and his fellowes to sterue, enjoying plentie as he thought: And this matter growing to cruel speeches, he that had the broyled meate, burst out into these wordes, If thou wouldest needs knowe, the broyled meate that I had, was a piece of such a mans buttocke. The report of this brought to the ship, the Captaine found what became of those that were missing, and was perswaded that some of them were neither deuoured with wilde beastes, nor yet destroyed with the Sauages: And hereupon he stood vp and made a notable Oration, containing, How much these dealings offended the Almighty, and vouched the Scriptures from first to last what God had in cases of distresse done for them that called vpon him, and told them that the power of the Almighty was then no lesse, then in al former time it had bene. And added, that if it had not pleased God to haue holpen them in that distresse, that yet it had been better to be punished in body, and to haue liued euerlastingly, then to haue relieved for a poore time their mortal bodies, and to bee condemned euerlastingly both body and soule to the vnquenchable fire of hel.

And thus hauing ended to that effect, he began to exhort to repentance, and befought all the company to pray, that it might please God to looke vpon their miserable present state, and for his owne mercie to relieue the same. And such was the mercie of God, that the same night there arriued a French shippe in that port, well furnished with vittaille, and such was the policie of the English, that they become masters of the same; and changing ships and vitayling them, they fet faile to come into England.

In their iourney they were so farre Northwards, that they sawe mightie Islands of yce in the summer season, on which were haukes and other foules to rest themselues, being wearie of flying ouer farre from the maine. They sawe also certaine great white foules with redde bills and redde legs, somewhat bigger then Herons, which they supposed to be storkes. They arriued at *Saint Ives* in Cornwall about the ende of October. From thence they departed to a certaine Castle belonging to sir *Iohn Luttrell*, where *M[after] Thomas Butts* and *M[after] Raftall* and other gentlemen of the voyage were very friendly intertained: after that they came to the Earle of Bathe at *Bathe*, and thence to *Bristol*, and so to London. *M[after] Butts* was so changed in the voyage with hunger and miserie, that sir *William* his father and my Lady his mother knewe him not to be their sonne, vntill they found a certaine secrete marke which was a wart vpon one of his knees, as he tolde me *Richard Hakluyt of Oxforde* himselfe, to whome I rode 200. miles onely to learne the whole trueth of this voyage from his owne mouth, as being the onely man now aliue [*i.e.* in or about 1589] that was in this discouerie.

Certaine moneths after, those Frenchmen came into England, and made complaint to king *Henry* the 8: the King causing the matter to be examined, and finding the great distresse of his subiects, and the causes of the dealing so with the French, was so moued with pitie, that hee punished not his subiects, but of his owne purfe made full and royal recompense vnto the French.

In this distresse of famine, the English somewhat relieue their vitall spirits by drinking at the springs the fresh water out of certaine wooden cups, out of which they had drunke their *Aqua composita* before.—*Hakluyt, Voyages, pp. 517-519, Ed. 1589.*

12. These are all the oceanic voyages performed by the English in the reign of *Henry VIII.* which we have been able to trace. It was under *Edward*, that our sailors first began to creep down the African coast. The special significance of these voyages lay in the then accredited proprietorship (through the Papal Bull, reprinted at *pp. 201-204*) of the Portugese to the entire continent of Africa; and in the intentional and studied ignorance of its coast line, in which the World was kept by that nation. Every English voyage to its west coast was therefore at once an act of revolt against the Papacy, and a challenge to the pretensions of Portugal.

The Levant trade was open to all who would dare to run the gauntlet of the Turks. The Spaniards recognised the claim of the English discovery, by the Cabots, of *Baccalaos*; and had not yet worked up northward to it. But the African sea coast, so honourably and so patiently discovered, was (by all laws, human and divine, hitherto accepted) the possession of its brave discoverers. It was therefore a new impulse, that made our English ships, passing the familiar Straits of Gibraltar on their left hand, to go forward southward, first to Barbary, and then to Guinea; cost what it might.

Discoveries are made by successive steps, one after another; and the passage of English ships around the world and to the Eastern seas was but the succession and development of these first attempts to Marocco. All that we know of these Barbary voyages is preserved to us by *Hakluyt*, who collected his information forty to fifty years after the event, and has thus transmitted it to us.

THE FIRST VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1551, DESCRIBED BY JAMES ALDAY, SERVANT TO SEBASTIAN CABOT.

The originall of the first voyage for traffique into the kingdom of *Marocco* in *Barbarie*, begun in the yeere 1551, with a tall ship called the *Lion* of *London*, whercof went as captaine Master *Thomas Windham*, as appeareth by this extract of a letter of *James Aldaie*, to the worshipfull master *Michael Locke*, which *Aldaie* professeth himselfe to haue bene the first inuenter of this trade.



Worshipfull Sir, hauing lately bene acquainted with your intent to profecute the olde intermitted discouerie for *Catai*, if therein with my knowledge, trauell or industrie I may doe you seruice, I am readie to doe it, and therein to aduventure my life to the vttermost point. Trueth it is, that I haue bene by some men (not my friends) euill spoken of at *London*, saying that although I be a man of knowledge in the Arte of Nauigation and Cosmographie, and that I haue bene the inuenter of some voyages that be now growen to great effect; yet say they maliciously and without iust cause, that I haue not bene willing at any season to proceed in those voyages that I haue taken in hand, taking example especially of two voyages. The one was when I was master in the great Barke *Aucher* [which left *Gravesend* on 13th *November* 1550] for the *Leuant*, in which voyage I went not, but the causes they did not know of my let from the same, nor of the other. But first the very trueth is, that I was from the same voyage letted by the Princes letters, which my Master *Sebastian Gabota* had obtained for that purpose, to my great grieffe.

And as touching the second voyage which I inuented for the trade of *Barbarie*, the liuing God knoweth that I say most true, that when the great sweate was [The sweating sickness began in *London* on 9th *July* 1551, and continued till the following *September*] (whereon the chiefe of those with whom I ioyned in that voyage died, that is to say, Sir *Iohn Lutterell*, *Iohn Fletcher*, *Henry Ostrich* and others), I my selfe was also taken with the same sweate in *London*, and after it, whether with euill diet in keeping, or how I know not, I was cast into such an extreame feuer, as I was neither able to ride nor goe; and the shippe being at *Portsmouth*, *Thomas Windham* had her away from thence before I was able to stand vpon my legges, by whom I lost at that instant fourescore pound [= £800 of the present day]. Besides I was appointed by them that died (if they had liued) to haue had the whole gouernment both of shippe and goods, because I was to them the sole inuenter of that trade.

In the first voyage to *Barbary* there were two *Moores*, being noble men, whereof one was of the Kings blood, conueyed by the said Master *Thomas Windham* into their countrey out of *England*.

Yours humble at your commandement, JAMES ALDAY.

THE SECOND VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1552, DESCRIBED BY MASTER JAMES THOMAS.

The second voyage to *Barbary* in the yeere 1552. Set forth by the right worshipfull Sir *Iohn Yorke*, Sir *William Ger[r]ard*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, Master *Frances Lambert*, Master *Cole*, and others. Written by the relation of Master *James Thomas*, then Page to Master *Thomas Windham*, chiefe Captaine of this voyage.



He shippes that went on this voyage were three, whereof two were of the Riuer of *Thames*, That is to say, the *Lyon* of *London*, whercof Master *Thomas Windham* was Captaine and part owner, of about an hundred and fiftie tunnes: The other was the *Buttolfe* [*Botolph*] about fourescore tunnes, and a *Portugall Carauel*, bought of certaine *Portugals* in *Newport* in *Wales*, and freighted for this voyage, of summe sixtie tunnes. The number of men in the Fleete were an hundred and twentie. The Master of the *Lyon* was one *Iohn Kerry* of *Mynhe*[a]d in *Somersetshire*, his Mate was *Dauid Landman*. The chiefe Captaine of this small Fleete was Master *Thomas Windham* a *Norfolke* gentleman borne, but dwelling at *Marshfield-parke* in *Somersetshire*.

This Fleete departed out of *King[s]-rode* neere *Bristol* about the beginning of *May* 1552. being on a *Monday* in the morning [The 2d and 9th of

May 1552, were Mondays], and the Monday fortnight next ensuing in the evening came to an anker at their first part in the roade *Zafia* or *Asafi* on the coast of *Barbarie*, standing in 32. degrees of latitude, and there put on land part of our marchandise to be conueid by land to the citie of *Marocco*: which being done, and haue refreshed our felues with victuals and water, we went to the second port called *Santa Cruz*, where we discharged the rest of our goods, being good quantitie of linnen and woollen cloth, corall, amber, Iet, and diuers other things well accepted of the *Moors*. In which road we found a French ship, which not knowing whether it were warre or peace between *England* and *France*, drewe her selfe as neere vnder the towne wals as she could possible, crauing aide of the towne for her defence, if need were, which in deed feeling vs drawe neere, shot at us a piece from the wals, which came ouer the *Lion* our Admirall, between the maine maste and foremast. Whereupon we comming to an anker, presently came a pinnes aboard vs to know what we were, who vnderstanding that we had bene there the yere before [*This confirms Alday's statement*], and came with good leaue of their king in merchant wife, were fully fattified, and gaue vs good leaue to bring our goods peaceably on shore, where the Viceroy, whose name was *Sibill Manache*, within short time after came to visite vs, and vsed vs with all curtesie. By diuers occasions we spent here very neere three moneths before we could get in our lading, which was Sugar, Dates, Almonds, and Malassos or fugar Syrope. And for all our being here in the heate of the Sommer, yet none of our company perished by sicknesse.

Our ships being laden, wee drew into the Sea for a Westerne wind for *England*. But being at sea, a great leake fell vpon the *Lion*, so that we were driuen to *Lancerota* and *Forteuentura*, where, betweene the two Ilands, we came to a road, whence we put on land out of our sayd ship 70. chestes of Sugar vpon *Lancerota* with some dozen or sixteene of our company, where the inhabitants supposing we had made a wrongfull prize of our carauell, suddenly came with force vpon our people, among whom I my selfe was one, tooke vs prifoners, and spoiled the fugar: which thing being perceiued from our ships, they manned out three boates, thinking to rescue vs, and draue the Spaniards to flight, whereof they slewe eighteene, and took their gouernour of the Iland prifoner, who was a very aged gentle-

man about 70. yeeres of age. But chafing the enemie so farre for our recouerie, as powder and arrowes wanted, the Spaniards perceiuing this, returned, and in our mens retire [*retreat*] they flewe six of them. Then a Parle[y] grew, in the which it was agreed, that we the prifoners should be by them restored, and they receiue their old gouernour, giuing vs a testimonie vnder his and their hands what damages wee had there receiued; the which damages were there restored, and made good by the King of Spaine his marchantes on our returne into England.

After we had searched and mended our eake, being returned aboard, we came vnder faile, and as wee were going to the sea on the one side of the Iland, the *Cacafuego* and other ships of the King of *Portugals* Armada entered at the other, and came to anker in the road from whence we were but newly departed, and shot off their great ordinance in our hearing. And here by the way it is to bee vnderstood that the *Portugals* were much offended with this our new trade into *Barbarie*, and both in our voiage the yeere before, as also in this they gaue out in *England* by their marchants, that if they tooke vs in those partes, they would vse vs as their mortall enemies, with great threats and menaces. But by God and good prouidence wee escaped their handes.

From this Iland shaping our course for *England*, we were feuen or eight weekes before we could reach the coast of *England*. The first port wee entered into was the hauen of *Plimmouth*, from whence within short time wee came into the Thames, and landed our marchandise at *London*, about the ende of the moneth of October 1552.—*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part II., pp. 7-9, Ed. 1599.*

13. All these English Voyages, therefore, had been planned and carried out before either of the two following Works, translated &c. by Eden, had come from the press. As he has given no account of them; it has been all the more necessary to say thus much here, in order to shew that in these *very* early days of oceanic discovery, our forefathers were not altogether idle.

III.



Unique, imperfect, copy of *A new interlude and a mery of the nature of the .iiij. elementes, &c.*, written in the reign of Henry VIII., and probably printed [? by John Rastel] about 1519, is in the Garrick Collection of Plays, in the British Museum (Press mark, C. 39, b. 17).

This interlude contains [at C i.] the following reference to the New World, in a dialogue between *Experyence* and *Studyous desire*:—

Ex. ¶ Syr this ys ynglande lyenge here
And this is skotlande yat Ioyneth him nere
Compassyd a boutte euery where
With the occian see rownde
¶ And next from them westwardly
Here by hym selfe alone doth ly.
Irelande that holsome grounde
¶ Here than is the narowe seey
To Calyce and Boleyne the next wey
And flaunders in this parte
Here lyeth fraunce next hym ioynynge
And spayn southwarde from thens standynge
And portyngale in this quart
This contrey is called Italye
Beholde where Rome in ye myddes doth ly
And Naples here be yonde
And this lytell See that here is

xx

Is callyd the Gulfe of Venys
And here venys doth stande
¶ As for almayne lyeth this way
Here lyeth denmarke and norway
And northwarde on this syde
There lyeth Iselonde when men do fyshe
But be yonde that so colde it is
No man may there abyde
¶ This See is called the great Occyan
So great it is that never man
Coude tell it sith the worlde began
Tyll nowe within this. xx. yere
Westwarde be founde new landes
That we neuer harde tell of before this
By wrytynge nor other meanys
Yet many nowe haue ben there
¶ And that contrey is so large of rome
Muche lenger than all cristendome
Without fable or gyle
For dyuers maryners haue it tryed
And sayled streyght by the coste syde
Aboue. v. thousand myle
¶ But what commodytes be within
No man can tell nor well Imagin
But yet not longe a go
Some men of this contrey went
By the kynges noble consent
It for to serche to that entent
And coude not be brought therto
¶ But they that were the ventere[r]s

Haue cause to curse their maryners
 Fals of promys and dissemblers
 That falsly them betrayed
 Which wold take no paine to saile farther
 Than their owne lyst and pleasure
 Wherfore that vyage and dyuers other
 Suche kaytyffes haue distroyed
 ¶ O what thyng a had be than
 Yf that they that be englyshe men
 Myght haue ben the furst of all
 That there shulde haue take possessyon
 And made furst buyldynge and habytacion
 A memory perpetuall
 And also what an honorable thyng
 Bothe to the realme and to the kynge
 To haue had his domynyon extendynge
 There into so farre a grounde
 Whiche the noble kynge of late memory
 The most wyse prynce the. vij. He[n]r[ry]
 Causyd furst for to be founde
 ¶ And what a great meritoryouse dede
 It were to haue the people instructed
 To lyue more vertuously
 And to lerne to knowe of men the maner
 And also to knowe god theyr maker
 Whiche as yet lyue all be[a]stly
 For they nother knowe god nor the deuell
 Nor neuer harde tell of heuyn nor hell
 Wrytynge nor other scripture
 But yet in the stede of god almyght
 The[y] honour the sone for his great lygg[h]t
 For that doth them great pleasure
 ¶ Buyldynge nor house they haue non[e] at all
 But wodes / cotes / and causy small
 No merueyle though it be so
 For they vse no maner of yron
 Nother in to[o]le nor other wepon
 That shulde helpe them therto
 ¶ Copper they haue which is founde
 In dyuers places aboue the grounde
 Yet they dyg not therfore
 For as I sayd they haue non[e] yryn
 Wherby they shuld in the yerth myne
 To serche for any wore
 ¶ Great haboundaunce of woddes ther be
 Moste parte vyr and pyne aple tre
 Great ryches myght come therby
 Both py[t]che and tarre and sope asslys
 As they make in the eest landes
 By brynnynge therof only
 ¶ Fyshe they haue so great plente
 That in hauyns take and slayne they be
 With stauns withouten fayle
 Nowe frenchemen and other haue founden the trade
 That yerely of fyshe there they lade
 A boue an. C. [hundred] sayle
 ¶ But in the south parte of that contrey
 The people there go nakyd alway
 The lande is of so great hete
 And in the north parte all the clothes
 That they were / is but be[a]stes skynnes
 They haue no nother fete [feat]
 But howe the people furst began
 In that contrey or whens they cam
 For clerkes it is a questyon[.]
 Other thynges mo I haue in store
 That I coude tel therof but now no more
 Tyll a nother season

Stu. ¶ Than at your pleasure shew some other thinge
 Yt lyketh me so wel your commynge
 Ye can not talke a mys

Ex. ¶ Than wyl I torne a gayne to my matter
 Of Cosmogryfy where I was err [err]
 Beholde take hede to this
 ¶ Loo estwarde beyonde ye great occyan
 Here entereth the see callyd mediterran
 Of. ii. M. [two thousand] myle of lengthe
 The Soudans contrey lyeth here by
 The great Turke on ye north syde doth ly
 A man of merueylous strengthe
 ¶ This sayde north parte is callyd europa
 And this south parte callyd affrica
 This eest parte is callyd ynde
 But this newe landes founde lately
 Ben callyd america by cause only
 Americus dyd furst them fynde
 ¶ Loo Iherusalem lyeth in this contrey
 And this be yonde is the red see
 That moyses maketh of mencyon
 This quarter is India minor
 And this quarter India maior
 The lande of prester Iohn
 ¶ But northwarde this way as ye see.
 Many other straunge regions ther be
 And people that we not knowe
 But estwarde on the see syde
 A prynce there is that ruleth wyde
 Called the Cane of catowe ¹
 ¶ And this is called the great eest see
 Which goth all a longe this wey
 Towardes the new landis agayne
 But whether that see go thither dyrectly
 Or if any wyldernes bytwene them do ly
 No man knoweth for certeyne
 But these newe landes by all cosmografye
 Frome the cane of catous lande can not lye
 Lytell paste a thousand myle
 But from those new landes men may sayle playne
 Estwarde and cum to englande againe
 Where we began ere whyle
 ¶ Lo all this parte of the yerth which I
 Haue here discryuyd openly
 The north parte we do it call
 But the south parte on the other syde
 Ys as large as this full and as wyde
 Whiche we knowe nothyng at all
 ¶ Nor whether ye most parte be lande or see
 Nor whether the people that there be
 Be be[a]styall or connyng
 Nor whether they knowe good or no
 Nor howe they beleue nor what they do
 Of this we knowe nothyng

The Voyage referred to, clearly took place in Henry VIII.'s reign. It was probably the Bristol expedition sent out by N. Thorne's father and Hugh Eliot, which discovered Newfoundland; of which Thorne tells us, at *p.* xvi, "There is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had beene ours."

¹ *Khan of Cathay.*

IV.



THE special purpose of this Preface has now been carried out. It has been to shew what our forefathers actually accomplished, ere Eden set about the following Translations, or during the time he was actually engaged upon them: and so to supplement the other accounts of Oceanic Discovery contained in the volume.

We have, in conclusion, only space briefly to touch upon one other point, and that is but a simple act of justice.

Most notable is Eden's position as a Man of Science in the Tudor Age. He had the true modest scientific spirit; as when he wrote in 1562, to Sir W. Cecil, "Syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hath pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire)," *p.* xliii.; and likewise when, in 1574, he thus dwelt at large upon what he did *not* know, a list of disqualifications that must not be pressed too literally, "For yf there be any thing in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of

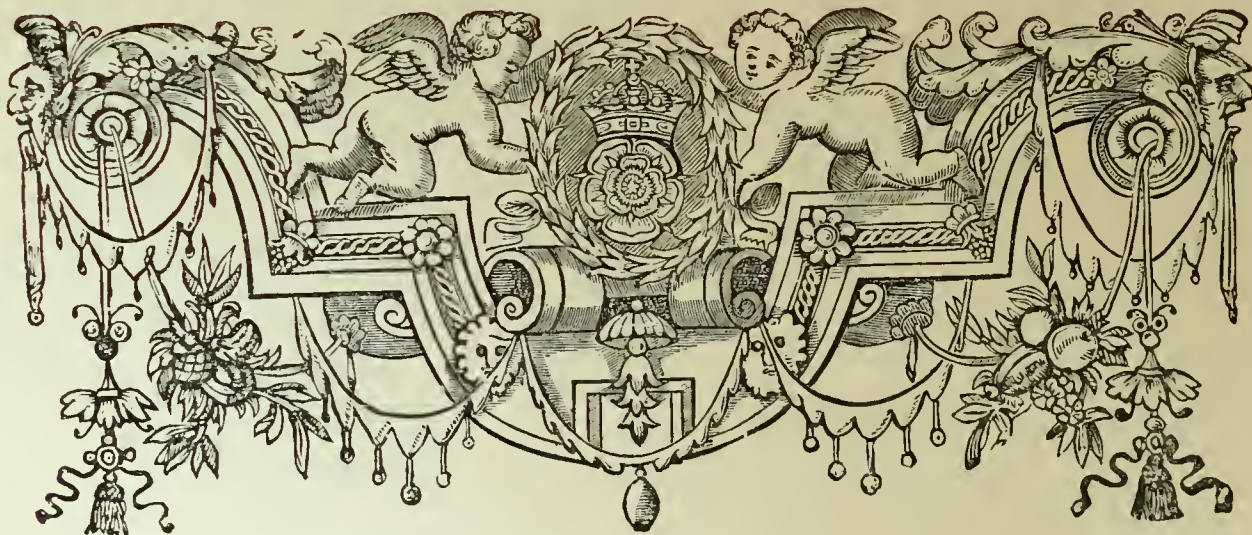
singular vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof mee selfe have litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke," *p.* xlvi.

But whatever may have been his knowledge or his ignorance, actual or relative; Eden had already grasped the Inductive Method. His life overlapped that of Lord Bacon. May he not be regarded as a near Herald and Forerunner of the Father of Scientific Enquiry, when he uses such language as this; of which his whole life was but the fuller expression?

"Experience, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errors, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practise of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the discourse of reason. . . .

"Nought els to say, but that experience to be most certayn which is ioyned with reason or speculacion, and that reason to be most sure which is confirmed with experience." *p.* 9.

And thus, from henceforth will the reputation of Richard Eden continue to increase, both as a Scholar and a Scientist.



[The First English book on America.

¶ Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the .x. dyuers nacyons crystened.

Of pope Rohn and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders molo
dyes that in that lande is.]

[A Note on
Jan van Doesborch,
a printer at Antwerp, between 1508-1530 A.D.]



Nothing that concerns the printer of the first English Work relating to America, must henceforth be of increasing interest.

There does not appear to be in existence, any typographical history of Antwerp for the period during which the first Text in this volume was produced.

The learned and most courteous Librarian of the Royal Library at the Hague, Dr M. F. A. G. Campbell, the author of the well-known *Annales de la Typographie néerlandaise au XVe siècle*, La Haye, 1874-8, 8vo, thus writes, on the 21st April 1885.

How glad should I have been if I had been able to give you full information about Jan van Doesborch, the Antwerp printer in the first half of the sixteenth century. But, alas, the History of Printing in that century has been, without any sound reason, neglected to that point that even sixteenth-century books are now-a-days more rare than their predecessors of the fifteenth. If Jan van Doesborch had had only one foot in the fifteenth century, I should have been able to give you matter enough to compose his history: because I, and my predecessor as Librarian of this Library (Mr Holtrop), have devoted the better part of our lives to the study of the typography and typographers before the year 1500. Now John of Doesborch did not print till after 1508, because in that year, he entered the Guild of St Lucas at Antwerp, as *verlichtere*, "miniature painter."

When such an authority as Dr Campbell writes thus, the present Editor may be excused of his ignorance on this subject. Nevertheless the following is offered as a mere beginning of this study.

2. Doesburg is a Dutch town, about ten miles to the east of Arnheim.

Jan van Doesborch, Doesborcke, Doesburgh, or as he styles himself in (*f*) the *xv. tokens*, Iohan fro doesborch, may have succeeded to the printing business of Roeland van der Dorpe, at Antwerp. He was contemporary with our Wynkyn de Worde and Richard Pynson; and occupies a similar position in Antwerp typography, to that filled by those two English printers at Westminster and London.

He seems to have printed in three different houses. His earliest books were printed at the sign of *Aen dijsere wage*, "the Iron balance." Those produced about 1518, are printed "besides the *Camer porte*." His latest books, finished about 1530, are at *die Lombaerde veste*, "the Lombard fortress."

It is very remarkable that Doesborch should, at such an early date, have printed the English books that he did;

especially such an important work as Arnold's *Chronicle*. He was probably employed in this work by some of the merchants of the English House at Antwerp. He stands in the same relation to our Literature at this time, that Hans Luft of Marburg did fifteen or twenty years later. No books are so scarce as the early English books printed by foreign printers on the Continent; of which the following Text is one of the earliest.

3. The first book attributed to this printer, by P. C. van der Meersch, in his *Recherches sur la vie et les travaux des imprimeurs Belges et Néerlandais établis à l'étranger*, i. 131, Gand 1856, is—

(a) *Die destructie van Troyen*, "the destruction of Troy." Antwerp, folio, no date.

The late eminent bookseller of Amsterdam, Mr Frederick Muller, issued, in 1872, a *Catalogue of Books, Maps, Plates on America; and of a remarkable Collection of Early Voyages*, offered by him for sale. At p. 6, he states that he acquired, in 1871, at the sale of an insignificant library at Antwerp, a volume containing four pieces, "all printed there in the first ten years of the 16th century."

One of these was—

(b) *Van der nieuwer werelt oft landtschap nieuwelijer ghenoden waden doorluch tighen conn. van Portugael door den alderbeste pyloet ofte zeekender d'werelt*, "Of the new world or landscape, newly found for the illustrious King of Portugal by the best pilot or mariner in the world." This is a translation from the Italian (through the Latin) into Dutch, of the Third Letter of Amerigo Vespucci. The colophon runs, *Gheprent Thantwerpen aen Dyseren waghe. Bi Jan van Doesborch*, "Printed at Antwerp, at the iron-balance, by Jan van Doesborch."

It consists of eight unnumbered leaves, [with] 6 woodcuts. The verso of the last leaf is filled up by a wood engraving. On the recto of the first leaf [is the identical cornerwise engraving that is described hereafter at p. xxix., col. 2]; on the verso of leaf 1, Jonas thrown into the mouth of the whale; recto of leaf 3, four female aborigines [see p. xxviii.]; verso of leaf 4, fighting Indians [see p. xxix.]; verso of leaf 6, repeated from the recto of leaf 1; and verso of the last leaf, repeated from the recto of leaf 3.

Mr Muller states—

The book bears no date, but it is out of question, that it has been printed in the period 1506-9, the time when all the separate editions of Vespuccius were published. It is one of the first productions of the famous printer, Jan van Doesborch, at Antwerp; whose publications (principally romances of chivalry with woodcuts, curious popular books, &c.) rank among the rarest of the Antwerp printers. Just the kind of publications that makes it easy to understand that they have disappeared, as it were, under the hands of the reading public.

Another text in this precious volume is thus described, at p. 277, by Mr Muller—

(c) *Van de wonderliche en costelichen van Pape Ians landendes*, "Of the wonders and precious things of Pope John's lands."

The remainder of the first page filled with four curious woodcuts, representing 1°, a wild man with a beast's head bearing a fish [see p. xxxv.]; 2°, an elephant [see p. xxxii.]; 3°, a griffon with a man in his paws [see p. xxxiv.]; and 4°, three men fighting against three birds [see p. xxxiii.]

Recto of the last leaf, *Gheprint Thantwerpen. Aen dijser wage by my Jan. van Doesborch.* "Printed at Antwerp at the iron balance by me, Jan van Doesborch."

Eleven different woodcuts in the text, four of them repeated from the recto of leaf 1. On the 5th leaf, a woodcut of the bird Phoenix in flames [see p. xxxiv.] The verso of the last leaf filled with two wood engravings, one representing the Virgin with the Child, the other the printer's mark of Roeland van der Dorpe, used in 1497, &c. [a herald with his attributes, holding a trumpet].

It is therefore perfectly clear that the First English book on America is mainly a translated compilation from these two early Dutch tracts; and that most of the woodcuts of the English text had already appeared in its Dutch originals.

We therefore place next—

(d) *Of the new landes, &c.*

Clearly, the latest date that can be assigned to this tract is 1511. Had it been written later, the information contained in it would not have been so crude. See the progress of knowledge as shewn in the English Interlude of 1519, quoted at p. xx. It would seem to have been translated by a priest in the Low Countries, who had but an imperfect acquaintance with English; for he uses *hemls* for heavens; *drycantlyche*, for three-cornered, *ferswynmygnes*, *ketters*, &c.

The *Catalogue of the Grenville Collection*, in describing the unique copy here reprinted (Press mark, G. 7106), states—

"From mentioning Emanuei, King of Portugal, and exclaiming against Luther, the present tract may be about 1521 or 1522, when King Emmanuel died, and Luther was burned in effigy."

There is not a word about Luther in the tract; and it is typographically evident from the above, that the tract can hardly be later than 1511.

4. It is quite impossible, at present, to give a chronological list of books produced by Jan van Doesborch. A few only can be cited.

(e) [The compilation by R. Arnold, known as *Arnold's Chronicle*.] In this booke is conteyned the names of ye bayliffs of the cite of London from the tyme of king richard the first, and also th[e] artycles of the Chartur and libarties of the same Cyte, &c. No date or place of printing. British Museum (Press mark, 21, a. 10).

This is attributed to Doesborch's press, and was a very large work to be undertaken by him, in what was probably a foreign language to him. It contains the original text of the poem of *The Nut-brown Maid*.

In the British Museum (Press mark, C. 25, e. 29) there is an imperfect copy of a tract on the Fifteen tokens of the Day of Doom. It wants the title page. The colophon is as follows:—

(f) "A lytill treatyse that whiche is called *the xv. tokens* which beene ate translated out of frenshe in to Englishe.

¶ Emprynted by me Iohan fro doesborch dwellinge at Anwerpe by the Iron ballaunce, &c.

These six texts are probably among the earliest productions of Doesborch's press.

5. We now come to the middle period of his life's work.

In the British Museum (Press mark, 1073, b. 32) there is a Dutch life of the fabulous necromancer of the Middle Ages, Virgilius.

(g) *Virgilius* ¶ *Van zijn leuen doot | ende vanten, &c.* No date or place of printing.

This tract is probably the original of the rare English *Virgilius* among the Douce books at the Bodleian, which has been reprinted by Mr Utterson, and also by Mr Thoms, in his *Early English Prose Romances, Vol. 2, Ed. 1858*.

(h) The title runs thus:

The lyfe of Virgilius and of his deth and many marvayles that he dyd in his lyfe tyme by whycheraste and nygramancye thorough the helpe of the devyls of hell.

The colophon is

Thus endethe the lyfe of Virgilius with many dyuers con- saytes that he dyd. Emprynted in the cytie of Anwarpe By me Iohn Doesborcke dwellynge at the camer porte.

Mr W. C. Hazlitt, in his *Handbook of Popular Literature, &c., p. 381, Ed. 1867*, quotes the following title of a Work apparently at present in an English private library.

(i) Here begynneth a lytell story that was of a trewth done in the land of Gelders, of a mayde that was named Mary of Nemegen that was the dyuils paramoure by the space of vij yere longe.

Imprynted at Anwarpe by me Iohn Duisbrowghe dwellynge besyde the camer porte.

Dr Campbell states that in the Royal Library at the Hague, is a copy of the following Work, printed by Doesborch.

(j) *Den oostpronck onser Solicheyt.* Printed at Antwerp on 31 May 1517. With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Also, a Work, sometimes erroneously attributed to Jan van Naeldwyck,

(k) *Die alder excellentste Cronyke va Brabant 1518.* With woodcuts and printer's mark.

Of this work, there is a copy of an earlier edition printed in October 1512 in the British Museum (Press mark, G. 405, f.) This may also have been printed by Doesborch.

The next Work that we can quote is, for the time it was produced, a wonderful book. It is a pictorial representation of all the birds, beasts, and fishes, real and imaginary, of the time. It is in three Parts.

(l) *Der dieren palleys en die vgaderinge vanden beesten.* The colophon is *Gheprent bi my Jan van doesborch Thantwerpen Int iaer ons heeren m.ccccc. ende. xx. den vijften dach in Meye. [5 May 1520.]*

Copies are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

Mr Hazlitt, *Handbook, &c., p. 8*, gives the following account of Lawrence Andrew's translation of this work.

(m) The noble lyfe and natures of man, of beestes, serpentys, fowles, and fysshes, that be made known.

Andwarpe by John of Doesborowe, n.d. fol.

In the prologue, Andrew, the translator, says, "In the name of oure Saviour criste Iesu maker and redemour of al mankynd, I Laurens andrew of the towne of Calis haue translated for Iohnes doesborowe booke prenter in the cite of Andwarpe this present volume denyded in thre partes which was neuer before in no maternall langage prentyd till now."

6. One other Work will complete our present provisional list of this printer's productions.

(n) *Van Brabant die excellent Cronike.* Of which the colophon runs, *Gheprent tot Antwerpen op die Lombaerde veste, bi mi Jan van Doesborch, int iaer ons heren m.ccccc.xxx, in Iuino.*

Copies of this work are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

7. This is all we have been able to learn, so far, of the printer of the First English book on America. Much more, no doubt, remains to reward the researches of the bibliographer.]

Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the .x. dyuers nacjons crystened.

Of pope Holm and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders molo
dyes that in that lande is.



Ere aforetymes in the yere of our Lorde god. M.CCCC.xcvi. [1496] and so be/ we
with shyppes of Luffeboene sayled oute of Portyngale thorough the commaunde-
ment of the Kynge Emanuel So haue we had our vyage/ For by fortune
ylandes ouer the great see with great charge and daunger so haue we at the laste
founde oon lordshyp where we sayled well. ix. C. [900] mylee[s] by the cooste of
Selandes there we at ye laste went a lande but that lande is not nowe knowne
for there haue no masters wryten therof nor it knowethe and it is named
Armenica/ there we fawe meny wonders of beestes and fowles yat we haue neuer
seen before/ the people of this lande haue no kynge nor lorde nor theyr god
But all thinges is comune/ this people goeth all naked But the men and women
haue on theyr heed/ necke/ Armes/ Knees/ and fete all with feders bounden for
there bewtynes and fayrenes. These folke lyuen lyke bestes without any reson-
ablenes and the wymen be also as comon. And the men hath conuersacyon
with the wymen/ who that they ben or who they fyrst mete/ is she his syster/
his mother/ his daughter/ or any other kyndred. And the wymen be very
hote and dyposed to lecherdnes. And they ete also on[e] a nother The man
etethe his wyfe his chylderne/ as we also haue seen and they hange also the bodyes or persons fleshe in the smoke/ as men
do with vs swynes fleshe. And that lande is ryght full of folke/ for they lyue commonly. iii. C. [300] yere and more as with
fykenesse they dye nat/ they take much fyssh for they can goen vnder the water and fe[t]che so the fysshes out of the water.
and they werre also on[e] vpon a nother/ for the olde men brynge the yonge men therto/ that they gather a great company therto
of towe partyes/ and come the on[e] ayene the other to the selde or bateyll/ and slee on[e] the other with great hepes. And nowe
holdeth the fylde/ they take the other prysoners And they brynge them to deth and ete them/ and as the deed is eten then
fley they the rest And they been than eten also/ or otherwyfe lyue they longer tymes and many yeres more than other people for
they haue costely spyces and rotes/ where they them selte recouer with/ and hele them as they be feke.

[[Here follows a woodcut of the Natives of] GENNEA]

Of the blacke Mores.



At the fyrste cam we in the lande of Canarien/ whyche is. C. and. l. [150] myles from Lyffebone. And ther betwyn been. ij. ylandes. In yat one is well made people and men make there moche cheefe of great wylde gootes. also is ther fishe and suykere good cheep. That other yland is not enhabite ther be lytell people therin/ and they be all a frayde and wylde/ also ther ayen lyeth the lande of Barbera/ and is from them in to ye Gennea. CC.l. [250] myles. and that is the blackes mores land. and ayen ye begynnyng of this lande is oon aforesontayen and hooth caput viride/ and thereby is ye towne Bitfagitfch. v. C. [500] myles from Luffebonen there by be many w[h]alefyshe and flyinge fyshe on the on fyde of Bifagitfche. ij. C. and l. [250] myles fayle men vnder yat sone fo ferre/ that men the northe fayle sterre or pollumarticum/ or the waghens called/ no more may be seen/ but pollum ante articum or yat fowth layd sterre fawe we fourth with[.] the forfayde Morelande is M. iiij. C. [1400] myles great/ there ye people goeth all naked with golden rynges on handes and fete.

[[Here comes a woodcut of Natives] IN · ALLAGO]



That lande of Allago is. v. C. [500] myles greater And gothe ayenste the begynnyng of Arabien and there is that kyngdom Safale[.] in this lande Allago is the people clothed as aboue is marked/ the[y] were and bere for there clothes skynnes of wylde bestes. The men bere clokes made of barkes of trees and ledder to kyuer theyr members with. And the women kyuer theym with skynnes of bestes. and take vpon there heddes for kerchers skynnes of oxen or other bestes[.] also py[t]che the[y] theyr menses forhed lyke as men pytche the shypes/ and there dwellynge is vnder the erthe. There is many coves. oxen/ great shepe and other fayre bestes. This is on fayre and lusty lande of good water and swete herbes. This people hathe a swyfte hasty speche. There is no money but of yrou [? iron] and that euery body take it for there ware they bere whyte staues there wepyns is lange pykes and stons ther they caste myghtly with. That Lande is so full of fande yat they muste goo vpon brode trenchers that they falle not and fynke. After that cometh men into the lande of arabyen.

[[Here is another woodcut representing Natives] IN: ARABIA]

Arabia.



Omyng in Arabia fawe we ye people clothed lyke as here is figured stande. and out [of] this kyngdome hath be oon of the three holy kyngys. Item ther bynde they ther oxe fon with Arabie gold about ther hornes/ and crys. And also goldyn rynges aboute th[e]yr legges. And for gold take they of marchaundes fylkyng kerchers and lynen clothe. Item ther after fe we now. v. ylandes. the fyrst yland named Momfabith. sixty myles from Safalen. is lecid ye towne Quiola that was founde of the kynges folke of portyngal And they slewe there moche people and robbed the towne. And there without had there kyngedyfyed on castell that is named feynt Iacobis castell there in lyeth a. C. [100] bolde and hardy men that lyeth and kepeth it.

[Here is a striking woodcut representing, with great life and action, a spirited attack on the gate of some European town; which has evidently been borrowed by John of Desborough from some other printed book, chronicle, or other work, printed by himself or other printer.]



He[n] feunte myles from Quiola lyeth the towne Bombassa that they also byrned and robbed that also there they gatte moche goodes. From thens nowe. xxiiij. myle[s] lyeth the great towne Meli[n]da and they be frendes/ and there be many floueynes and fell people out of Geneen From Melinda it is. iiij. score and. x. myles to on Persia there gowe they ouer the see. For by the towne Megha into the ylande. Auxendia There is also one that hath be of ye three holy kynges of the eest. C. [100] myles into the Kyngdome of Canenor and there begyn the spyces to growe and from thens fare they forthe in to the great lande of great Indyen.

¶ *Of great Indyen.*

[[Here follows a woodcut of the Inhabitants of] MAIOR: INDIA]



Hey gowe from Cananor into great Indyen there the people goo all naked but yat the[y] kyuer there members with lynen cloth and they be brounde blacke/ with longe here and of the women is not wryten but on kaute the see fawe men manye meruelouse people of manereren the women bere there chylidren and theyr householde stufte. Here fynde men gynger/ peper/ comeyn/ and all manere of spyces/ and

cottely stoncs for lytell moneye. There be also many maner of frute fygges of good fauyour. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode. There be bulfeldes and coyces but the coyces slepe they not/ there groweth good wyne/ mucche honeye/ ryfe/ costely corne whyte as wete mele/ Ther by standeth the towne of Banderana and it is. vij. myles into Callienten from thens is. xl. myles there men goo for all maner of spyces that men were wonte to caray and conuey ouer the redde see thorough Alexander but nowe is there one newe way founden ouer the the see[.] in Calacuten is many folke out of feynt thomas lande yat also be crystened/ and folke of other landes and nacyons they goo ouer into that kyngdome Kyngryche Gutfchyn as hereafter standes wryten.

¶ Of Gutfchin that Kyngedome.

[Here is a woodcut representing two Natives fighting, see p. xxv.]



And than cam we in the kyngdome of Gutfchyn and ther hath the kyng of portyngale do make. ij. Castyles from here was the thre holy kynges. there groeth much peper and the propereft flapell therof. That kyngdom Colen is. xxiiij. myles from there/ and there been many krystened men/ we fynde also great Olyfantes and many dyuers maner and wonders bestes and other thynges that men cannot wryghte all. gardeynes frutes is there mucche gretter than in our landes of Europa. That ylande Melaqua is from thens. viij. C. [800] myles/ There also is moche costely spyces. [There is nowe. ij. ylandes the on is Bandan and therin groweth the cloues. That other Tanagora or Narnaria and there groeth not no other wodde than whyte and red sandelen wodde/ This is fortunad that for a bell of a glasse men may haue one handfull of peerles. In Gutfchin bere some tymes there kyng but that do the people of his courte and holde obedyance vnder theym one with a nother They doo all there thynges all sleightly For as as they be affembled in one gatherynge/ than cryeth the capitayne I will fowe/ and as the subiectes here theyr capitayne crye fowe than take they parte of/ the fede and no man sayth the contrary and letteth the other iye and that takethe the lorde with out any body contrary faynge/ and so do they in all merchaundyse. Forthe by that kyngdome Gutfchyn/ Colum/ Bandan/ and Nagaria. xxx. [thirty] myles[.] in Arsinia there hath the kyng. xij. kynges vnder hym/ and there lyeth buried feynt Thomas apottell.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree apparently intended to represent a fig-tree. It might do equally well for many other kinds of trees.]



In some of these aforfayde wrytten landes ben great and fayre frutes and they be greater than in these our landes of Europa In Isla mandra be great hygh trees for the people of yat contrey hewe great stappes aboute to clyme vp in to the tree to gather the frutes that groweth there on for whan they be a thrust to take there of. In Arsinia is great brode fygge Trees with great fygges well. vij. ynches longe and. iij. ynches brode and the Fygge tre is so brode of braunche and leues that. xl. [forty] men may be hydde vnder the foresayd braunches and leues for the hete of the sonne/ and there for to reste all to gather at theyr one pleasure.

[Here are two woodcuts cornerwise, one representing two Indians, the other two men and a woman of Europe, see p. xxv.]



They haue in this vyage sayled aboute the forth parte of the worlde for to reken from Luffsyngboren whiche is ferre equinoccyall scher linien. xxxix. [thirty-nine] grades and on halfe so haue we sayled ouer ye linie equinocciall. l. [fifty] grades that maketh xc. [ninety] grades therfore they of Luffbone is vnder yat forfayde linie. xxxix. grade and one halfe in the hygh hed of the hemels is the breyde of westes/ so is them of Luffbone to these folke to fene the. l. [fifty] grades is ouer the selfe lyne soth cornerwyse. v. grades in perpendiculer linia whiche linie as we stande ryght of yat poynt the hemls hange vpon our hed and these folke in theyr fydes or rybbes and woort fet in the maner of on tryangel or on drycantlyche cornard. therfore it must nedes be yat the fowth landes be tempered with swete erthe for the northe wyndes can nat there blowe.

[Here, across the middle leaf of the tract, is an excellent representation of the King of Cochin seated on a kind of tressel, carried by four men, surrounded with armed attendants: and with an umbrella borne by one man, and not a canopy borne by four men, as stated below in the text. The woodcut extends across about two-thirds of the folio, in the margin of which occurs the following note.]



After this maner of fourme is the Kyng of Gutfchym borne with the nobleste of his lande/ And before hym is borne many instrumentes of musyke as trompettes and other and. iij. of the nobleste bereth the canapie ouer his hed lest that the soon shuld burne hym/ and this kyng is beloued of all his estates and common people.

[This fresh tract is headed by a woodcut representing angels bearing the pyx.]

¶ OF THE. X. DYVERCE CRISTENED NACIONS.



It is to knowe that ye people of crystindom is deuided and ben in. x. Nacyons. That is to vnderstand the Latyne/ Grekes/ Indien/ Iacobites/ nestorijnes/ moronites/ Armenes/ georgianes/ Surianes/ mororabes/ wherof ye moost deyle is ketters and kyt of/ of the holy Romes chyrche.

¶ The fyrste nacyon.

[Two woodcuts, evidently taken from some Martyrology, come in here. One represents an angel standing by the cross, the other a female saint with a sword sticking in her breast.]



Fyrste nacyon is the Latynes and they haue to theyr lorde the Emperour of Almayne and many Kynges/ as the kyng of castlyan of Aragon/ of portyngale/ of nauaryen/ and these kynges is for spaynnes nacyon. In yat nacion of the frenche lande is one kyng of Fraunce and many dukes and Erles. In the nacion of Italian is the kyng of Cicylian/ the kyng of Naples and many dukes and Erles and there is also many lordshyppes as Veneyse Florence seuen Ienuen [? *Sienna*, *Genoa*].



In the nacyon of Germanien is nowe many kynges with out the emperoure/ as the Kyng of Englande/ of Scotlande/ of Vngerien/ of Bohemen/ of Polen/ of Denmarke/ of sweden/ of Northwegen/ of Dalmacyen/ and there is many Dukes and Erles &c. In that ylande of Sypers [? *Cyprus*] is the kyng of Sypers/ All these a fore wryten is vnder the obeyifaunce or [? *of*] the chyrche of Rome.

¶ The seconde nacyon.



The Grekes haue spyrytually the Patriarcke of Constantynnoplen/ and many Archebysshops/ bysshops/ and abbottes. And in ye temperalte haue they one Emperour and many dukes and erles/ and there is but fewe of them that be crystened/ For the Agarenen and Turkes hath nowe the moost parte of Grekes/ and is not obedient to the chyrch of Rome. And they haue a great erre for they faye that the holy ghost cam not of the sone but alone of the fader. And they fay also that there is no purgatory/ that is all a yenste our belefe.

¶ The thyrde nacyon.

[Here follows a woodcut representing St. Thomas kneeling to our Saviour.]



Hey of Indyen hath one prynce and that is pope Iohn whose myghtynes and rychedome amounteth aboue all prynces of the world for he hath vnder hym. lxxij. [seuenty-two] kynges and as pope Iohn dayely rydeth he bere a fore hym one crosse of wode for to thynke on at all tymes and remember vpon the passion of I[es]hu and to the batayle doth he bere. xij. crosses of golde made and set with precyouse stonnes for his baners/ in this lande is the body of feynt Thomas.

¶ The fourth nacyon.



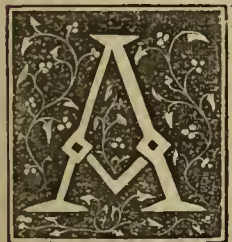
Iacobytyn named also of on ketter Iacob and was be one dyffyle of the Patryarcke of Alexandryne/ and this helde the one great land in Orynten and Afyen and is named that lande of Mambrone and it is by Egyp- ten and gothe to Ethyopen and into Indien to/ and hathe vnder hym well. xl. [forty] kynges rychedom/ these be kytte and chrystened with a byrnyng yren for they branne the token of the holy crosse in theyr forehed/ vpon the breste/ vpon the arme/ they confesse them to God alone and none prestes/ and they fay that in christo is alone the godhed without the manhod/ and some of them spekethe Caldesche some Arabier/ some other spe[*e*]ches after theyr langage of the lande/ and these been condemned of the holy chyrche in that counfayll of Ceden.

¶ *The fyth nacion.*

Here be also Nestorijnen named of the ketter Nestorinus that was one bysshope of the bysshops of Constantynenoplen and they fett ij. persones in christo that is the Godhed and ye persones/ and they forsake that maria is the moder of god/ but they beleue well of I[es]hu. and theyr wrytynge is in caldenssher speche and they make the sacrament in broune brede and there be great multytude of theym and they dwell in Tartarien and in great Indyen/ and theyr lande is as great as a thousande of Italy/ and these ketters be condemned in that thyrde counsayll of Ephesyn and is departed of the holy Romes chyrche and abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The syxte nacion.*

By the ketter Moren they be named Moroniten they say alone in christo is one vnderstande and one wyll and those dwell by Lybien in the lande of Phenicen and there be great multitude and they be bolde and hardey men. and great warryars with the bowe/ And they haue theyr bysshops clothed as the Latynes with the bissshops myter on his hed/ and with the croysers staffe and rynges/ These hath ben some tyme vnder the obeyssaunce of the chyrche of Rome whan Innocentius was pope/ but afterwarde came they ayen in theyr opynion and there abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ *The seuenth nacion.*

Armenyten is also named for that they dwell in the lande of Armeneten nere vnto Anthiochyen and there is whrythyn seruyce of the masses. and theyr other tydes is all in theyr one comon speche so that they all mey vnderstande it what they synge or rede/ and they haue theyr hed or fader to whome they do reuerence as we do the pope. And they faste the lenton with greater deuocyon than we doo/ for they ete in the lenton no fysshe/ nor they drynke no wyne/ but they ete flesshe vpon frydays.

[Here is a woodcut representing a squadron of English knights, with St. George's flag, armed *cap à pie*, and galloping in battle. It has nothing whatever to do with the text.]

¶ *The eyght nacion.*

This nacion is named Georgidni of feynt George for they haue hym in theyr batelles for theyr patrone/ and they dwell in the lande of Oryenten/ and they be fayer/ lusty/ and stronge pepyll/ and they be fore a drad of the Medon perssen Assiryen there they aboute dwelle And they haue theyr scryp-

ture in ye Greekes speche and they haue theyr sacramentes as the Grekes/ and the clarkes haue rounde crownes/ and they seke the holy graue to Iherusalem with open or spred baners. And they gyue the sarafons no trybute for the sarafons fereth those folke very fore/ there women bere harneyse lyke the men and they haue also beardes as ye men and they bere vpon theyr heddes and vpon hie cubettes hie hattes and as the[y] wryte to the Sodan than gyueth he them that they dyffyre.

¶ *The Nynthe nacion.*

He Surianen is named after theyr towne Surie that is the grettest in all Suryen or Assiryen theyr scrypture and seruyce of god in ye Greekes speche but they speke sarafons speche and they holde the manere of ye grekes/ and haue bysshoppes that in all thynges be obedyent and they make theym sacrament of browne brede and they haue the opynion of the Grekes ayen the Latynes there be some crystened that in the holy lande is namyd Samerytanes that were conuerted in the tyme that the apostels preched but they vnderstande them not well in the crysten beleue.

¶ *The tenth nacion.*

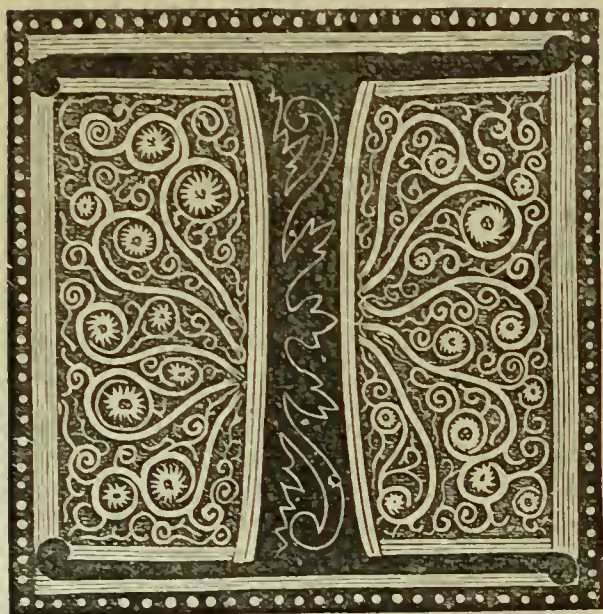
Mororaben so called after the laten for they holde and vse the maner of the crysten of Ar[a]bien/ and of these were wonte to be manye people in Afrijken and in Spaengnien but nowe is there lytell in the tellyng/ They haue in theyr seruyce of god lateyne as we do/ And they be vnder the obeyssaunce of the chyrche of Rome. And the latynes prelates but in many thynges ben they dyuerse departed for also the day hath xxiiij. houres/ Also many tymes hymnes and psalmes and other orafouns haue they and very longe/ And that that ye Latyns rede in the begynnyng of theyr seruyce that rede they in the mydle or in the laste ende. And that sacrament of the auter breketh some of them in. vij. partes and some in. x. partyes/ and these people be very deuoute and they mareye but ones in theyr lyfe and as the women hath losse theyr fyrst husbond so dothe they meddle no more with no man/ but abyde fro thenffourth in chastyte.



Or. ij. causes cometh the departynge of ye crysten nacyns. The fyrste cause is that men in olde tyme myght the crysten haue only haue generall consilium/ Therefore as the ketters stode vp ayen the crysten belese so was there no body turned nor sought counsayll there ayen. The other cause was the ferfwynmyngnes of ye opprest pope of ye schole of Rome that no messengere nor lerned shulde to the krysten thow that were come in seche lodyng/ for had they do that they shulde haue be conuerted to the ryght belese. Thorowith whiche ryght belese brynge vs to the hyghest glorye the fader the sone the holy ghooste thre persones and one god. Amen.

[AN ABRIDGMENT OF THE MEDIÆVAL LEGEND OF PRESTER JOHN].

[This third Tract has a very large initial letter I, containing what appears to be a representation of Prester John, and of a Roman Catholic monk or pilgrim kneeling beneath him.]



Pope Iohn by ye grace of god the mooste myghtyfte kyng a boue all kyngys of ye worlde gyue fallyte the Emperour of Rome. and also thekinge of France.

Oure wel belouyd frynde We late you vnderstande and knowe of our lande And

the maner of oure lyuinge and of our people beestes and fowles.

¶ And you faye that we beleue not in god and praye not to hym as you do. So late we you vnderstande that we beleue in god the father. in god the sonne. and in god the holy gooste. The whyche be vnpartible and one very god. and is all thyng myghty.

And also certefye yow with oure lettres sealed and doo you knowelege of oure folke or people and of our lande. And yf there be ony thyng yat we kan doo for you. sende vs worde and we shall it doo with good herte and wyll. And yf it please ony of you to come in oure lande we shall gyue them gold and syluer to th[e]yr necessitie/ and make them great lordis. and gyue to them also lande and good[s] to lyue on. and do to [t]hem worship and honor. For the goodnes that we haue herde fay of you. And we do you knowledge that we haue the richeste crowne of the worlde as of golde and syluer and of precyous stones in great multitude And we haue also vnder vs mighty. xliij. kingdomes and al good cristen people. and we kepe also the poure people with our almes alle that cometh be it strenger or of oure owne people thorough the loue of almyghty god oure lorde Ihesu Criste.

¶ Item Oure lande is parted in. iiij. For the landes of Indien/ there be two. and in that grettest Indien is the body of feynt Thomas. And this fame Indien is partiner of ye coste

of orient for it lyeth befyde a toure ye whych is caalled babel/ and it id [? is] not ferre fro Babilonyen. And also that other parte of Indien is aboute Septentryon. and there is great plenty of wyne/ brédde and all maner of vytayle.

¶ Item also in our lande be gryffons/ and it is a great byrde and a myghty. for he wyll well cary in his neste an oxen/ or an horse for his yonge byrdes to ete. Also in Saxen is a towne whych is called Grounzwyk ther is one of the clawes yat which is well as great as an horn of an oxen.

[Here comes, in the original, at the side of the page, a woodcut of an elephant with a castle on its back.]

¶ In our lande be olyphantes/ dromedarics/ wylde oxes the whyche haue. vij. hornes. also Beeres and Lyons of dyuers colours/ as ye redd/ grene/ blacke/ and whitte

¶ Item and also be wylde asses the whych haue longe eeres/ and haue two fmale hornes. &c.



¶ In our lande be also fowles ye whyche that haue the maystery of all birdes of the worlde/ and haue a colour lyke ye fyer/ and his wingis kyt [? cut] lyke a rafour. and this byrdes ben called Ilerion. and in alle the worlde is no more than two. and they lyuen. iiij. skore yere and thenne they laye eggis and fyttte vpon them. xl. dayes and as sone as they haue yonges they flee awaye/ fader and moder to the zee and ther they drowne them self. and alle tho byrdes yat come ayenst them do them company to the zee. and as sone as the[y] be drowned all the other byrdes tourne ayen to the neste there they yonge byrdes ben leste/ and gyue them mete and drinke to the tyme that the[y] can flee and nurter them selfe. &c.

¶ Yet ben there other byrdes the whyche ben called Tygris/ and they be so stronge that they wyll bere or cary in theyr neste a man fyting vpon an horse all armyd fro the hede to ye fote.

[Here, at the side of the page, is the representation of a naked man with one eye in his forehead, and bearing a club.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a grete deferte or forest therein dwelleth people bothe men and wymmen the whyche haue nomore than one eye afore. and behinde they haue. iij. or. iiij. eyen

¶ Yet is in oure lande an other maner of people the whiche ete none other than rawe fleshe. and they care not yf it were of man or woman or of beestis and also the[y] care not of ther owne deth. and as sone as there one of them dyeth the[y] ete theym all rawe/ both there one [*own*] fader or moeder. And they saye yat mans fleshe is good and natur[*a*]ly to ete rawe/ for they saye that they doe it for parte of penaunce for there synnes. And they be also curfed of god/ and they be called Gog and Magog And of them be no more than one maner of people of this worlde and they shall be dytributed or parted thorough all the world whan Antechryst shall come. and these fame were the people or folke the whych they hadde put in pryfone or in holde the great kynge Alexander of Macedonien. But for all that he wente his way And of this people shall be no iugement at the dredefull day of dome lyke the prophete fayeth. ¶ *Nescio quis. &c.*

But neuertheles thonder and lytenynge shall come fro heuen and bourne theym all in po[w]der And whan that we haue any enemyes thanne gyue we theym lycence to put them downe and ete them that be ayenffe vs and then make we them to tourne ageyne into there owne lande. For if they sholde abyde longe with vs they shuld vndo vs all and ete vs lyke as they do there owne propre folke.

[Here, also at the side, is the pictorial representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And yet is there another manere of people/ the whyche hath rownde fete lyke an horse/ and also they haue. iiij. sharpe clawes behynde/ at there Heles. Wherewith they strongly fyght that there is no manere thyng can stonde ayenffe them/ nether harnayfe/ yrone/ nor stele they passe all thorowth/ and this people gyue vnto vs great trybute. and they be also without dowte great labourers.

¶ Yet is there a nother smale lande in a parte of that fame forest aforefayde/ and it is. xliij. [forty-two] dayes Iourneyes longe. And it is called Feminie the great. And in that fame lande there be thre Quenes without all other landes/ thowe that holden there been of these quenes forefayde And whan these quenes shall goo to felde/ then eche of them hath. iiij. hondered. M. [300,000] wymmen and all in harneyfe/ with out all the other women the whych that caray vytayle with carte horse and also with olyfauntes. And these women be very manly in fytyng and hardy. ¶ And in this fame lande may come

no men but. ix. dayes in the yere and no lenger/ and than they haue conuerfacion and felysshyp with the men and nomore of the hole yere. For if the men there wolde abyde the women shulde them flee all.

¶ And this fame lande is closed all aboute with a water called Cyphon comynge out of paradyse And in this fame lande may come no man without a great shyp or a great barke.

¶ Of the people named Pynies.

[Here is a woodcut representing the battle of the Pigmies and the storks.]



¶ And yet is there a nother smale lande and also another Ryuer called Pyconye that is. x. dayes iourneye longe/ and. vij. brode and this people of this forfayde lande be not great/ but they be lyke chyldren of. vij. yere of age and they haue horseys as great as a great dogge and they be good crystened folke and they haue no warre ayenffe noman/ But they haue warre ayenffe the fowles euery yere/ whan they shall haue in there frute and come And than the kynge putteth on his harneyse. and than they fyght ayenffe the byrdes. And than there be slayn on bothe partyes many on/ and also they be great labourers/ and whan the fylde is don than the byrdes flee a waye fro them.

[Here, at the side, is a circular woodcut of Sagittarius, evidently one of the signs of the Zodiac taken from some illustrated almanac.]

¶ Also in our lande been ye Sagittary. the whyche ben fro the myddel vppward lyke men/ and fro ye myddell donwarde ben they lyke the halfe neder parte of an horse. and they bere bowes and arowes. And the[y] shute stronger than any other nacyon of people.

¶ And in our lande be also vnicornes and they been of the manere with blacke and grene/ and these vnicornes flee many Lyons. and the Lyon sleeth the vnicorne with subtylnes. Whan the Vnicorne hath put hym to rest at a tree/ and than cometh the Lyon and ronnyth aboute the tree and after hym than ronnyth the vnicorne and wolde fayne sleigh hym/ and than he ronnyth hym selfe into the tree with his horne so harde that he cannot pull it out a geyne. than commeth the Lyon and hath the mastery vpon the vnicorne.

¶ Item there is a nother parte of a forest therein dwelleth another maner of folke and this people ben. xx. Cubettes of heythe. But they were in tyme paste to be of the heyth of. xl. Cubettes. And they haue nat the pore to come out of that deferte or foreste and all is thorowe the myghte of almyghty god. For if they sholde come out by there strenght and hardynesse the[y] wolde conquere all the worlde.

[Here, at the side, is a curious cut representing the Phoenix burning.]

¶ Here begynnith of ye birde the whyche is called Fenix.

¶ In oure lande is also a byrde ye whyche is called Phenix and is ye fayrest byrde of all ye world and there is nomore than one in all ye cours of nature. and he lyueth C. [100] yere. and thenne flyeth he so hyghe that the sonne fett the fyre in his wynges/ and thenne cometh he don ayen to his nest and there he burneth to p[o]udre and of the ashes comyth a worme/ and within. C [100] dayes after growyth there out another byrde as fayre as euer that other was.

¶ Item Also in our lande is plenty of wyne bredde/ fleshe. All that is necessary for mannys body

¶ Item In our lande maye come none venyn beeste on that one fyde

¶ Item Betwene oure lande and the Turkes lande is a ryuer ronnyng and is called Sydon it commeth out of paradyse of the erthe/ and is full of precyous stonnes.

¶ And also in oure lande ben ronnyng many smale riuers the whyche that come out of this forfayde riuers. and they also ben fulle of precyous stonnes. As Ysmaraddus Iaspis Saphyrus Scobassus Dyamant Topasius/ Carbonkel. Rubin. and yet more other they whyche I not all can reherce.

¶ Also in oure lande groweth on herbe and is called Parmanabel/ and that same herbe is so myghty euer foo who that same herbe beryth a bouthe hym he may coniuere the deuyll of helle and do hym faye what so euer he wyl axe of hym and therefore the deuyll dare not come in to our lande.

Item also in our lande growith pepper in forestis full of snakes and other venym beestes. and whan it is ripe than fende we for our folke and they put that fyre ther in/ and than they venym beestys flee awaye. than we gadder it and caryed to oure houfes and wasshed in two or. iij. waters/ and than we drey it ayen/ and also it waxed black and good

¶ Item aboute this passage is a fonteyne or a conduyte/ so who of this watere drincked. iij. tymes he shall waxe yonge/ and also yf a man haue had a fykenes. xxx. yere and dryncked of thys same water he shall therof be hole and fonde. And also as a man therof drincked hym semeth that he had occupied the beste mete and drinke of the worlde. and this same fonteyne is full of the grace of the holy goost. and who so we in this same water wasshed his body he shall become yonge of. xxx. yere.

And ye shall knowe that I am haloweth in my moder wombe/ and I am old. v.C.lxij. [562] yere. and I haue me wesshed. vi. tymes in that same water.

[Here, at the side, is a woodcut of a flying griffon carrying a man.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a zee very peruuluous/ and there can we haue noo passage with noo maner of shypping and than do we vs cary there ouer with our gryffons.

¶ Item at that one fyde of this zee ronnyth a smale ryuere and therin be many precyous stonnes. and also ther growyth a certen herbe that is good to all maner of medycyne.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstande that betwene vs and the Iewes ronnyth a great ryuer that is full of precyous stonnes and it is so stronge in here ronnyng yat noman ther ouer can passe/ excepte ye faterdaye/ and than parted shehere and toke with here all that she fyndeth in here waye. And this same lande mooste we strongely kepe for oure ennemyes. an[d] vp these costes haue we. xliij. [42] stronge castels none stronger in ye world. and ben well kepte of people. To vnderstande. x.M. [10,000] knyghtes on horsbacke. vi.M. [6000] Crosse bowes. xv.M. [15,000] longe bowes. and. xl.M. [40,000] othere men on horsbacke well armed. ye whyche these Castels haue in kyping by cause that the great kyng of Ifrabel shall not therpasse with his people. For he is twyes as stronge as I am. And his lande is twyes as grete as all Crystente and turkey. For he hath in his keypyng the seconde parte of the worlde. And the great kyng of Ifrabel hath vnder hym iij.C. [300] kynges. iij.M. [4000] princes. dukes. erles. barons knyghtes/ squyers without nombre. and all these be subgette to the great kyng of Ifrabel. But yf he myght passe ouer this forfayde ryuer with his people they sholde flee both crysten and turkes. And ye shall knowe that we all faterdaye late passe. viij.C. or. M. [800 or a 1000] men for beye suche manere good[s] or marchaundyse as they wyl haue. but we late them not come with in ye wallis of thys castels. for they bye it without ye walles of thys fortresses. and they paye ther marchaundyfes with platis of fyluer or of gold for they haue none other money. and whan they haue don ther besynes they tourne home ayen in theyr owne lande. and these forfayde castels be fete to gyder within a bowe shotte. And ye shall vnderstande that within a myle of these castels is a great Cite and a fayre and it is the strongest of all the worlde. the whyche cite is in our keypyng of one of our kyngis. and he receyueth tribute of the great kyng of Ifrabel. And also gyueth vs euery yere. ij.C. [200] horses laden with golde/ fyluer/ and precyous stonnes. Except alle charges and costes that men doth in the cyte and in thys forefayde castels. And whan that we haue warre ayenst them/ than flee we them alle and late noman alyue. and therefore they wyl kepe no warre ayenst vs. and the wymmen of the Iewes be very fayre none fayrer in erth nowe a dayes lyuinge. And by this forfayde ryuer is a zee ther noman may passe/ but

whan the wynde blowythe fro benethe strongly than parted she here/ and thanne the[y] passe with great hast. and than they take with hym all maner of precious stones. but they may felle none therof [be]for[e] that wee haue taken therof our chose.

¶ In a parte of our lande is an hylle there noman may dwelle for hete of the sonne/ and there bee wormes many on without fyre can not lyue. And by this fame hylle we kepe. xl. M. [40,000] people that no thyngeells but make fyre/ and whan this wormes feele the fyre than thei come oute of the erthe and goo in too that fyre. and there they spynne lyke the wormes yat the fylke spynneth And of that fame spynnyng we make our clot[h]ynge that we were on feste dayes. and whan they be foule/ than they be cast in to ye fyer and they becom as fayre as euer they were afore

And ye shall vnderstande that faint Thomas doeth more myracles/ than ony feynt in heuen For he comyth bod[i]ly euery yere in his chirche and doth a sermon/ and also in a palays there ye here after of hym shall here.

[Here, at the side, is the representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And ye shall also knowe that there be dyuers of people of fason in our lande/ also there be people that haue the body of a man and the hede lyke a dogge and they be good takers of fyssh. and they be good to vnderstande of theyre speche. and they wyll goo in to the zee a hole daye longe to the tyme that they haue taken fuche as they wolde haue/ and than ye [they] come ayen charged with fyssh. and bere them in to ye houfes for they haue there dwellinge places vnder erthe. and thenne take we part of there fysshes that vs beste lyketh. and they do great harme among our bee thow yat be wylde. and they fyghte also ayenste our archers. &c.

¶ In oure londe is also one manere of byrdes and laye ther eggis in the zee. xxi. and ther out growen yonge byrdes. and than the[y] flee away and we take somtyme of theym for they bee good for to ete whan they be yonge For yf theyr were ony man that hathe lost his nature and ete of this fame byrde he sholl it gete ayen and becom as stronge as euer he was afore.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree dropping oil, guarded by a dragon, as described in the next paragraph.]

¶ Also in our lande is that fame tree/ ther yat holy creften- dom or olye [? oyle] out ronnyth. and this tree is dreyc/ and ther is a great serpent which yat tree hath in keypyng all the hole yere nyght and daye but alone vp[on] seynt Iohns daye and night and than slepyth the serpent or dragon. and than goo we to the tree and take yat crisma. and of this fame is nomore than iij. po[u]nd. and than tourne we ayen secretly

with great drede and fere yat he vs not see/ for ells he wyll flee vs. and this fame tree is a dayes iourney fro ye paradys of ye erthe. but whan this serpent is a waked than maked he great mone and forow. and this dragon hath. ix. hedes and. ij. wynges. and is as great as twoo horses. But for all yat it followeth vs styll tyl we ben come to the zee ayen. and than tourned it ayen. and thenne bere we that crisma. to ye patriarch of feynt thomas and he haloweth it/ and ther with they make vs al crysten. and ye remenaunt sende we to ye patriarche of Iherusalem. and he sende it forth to the Pope of rome. and he puth therto olye tof lyfe [? oyle of lyfe] and than halowyth it/ and then he sendeth all crystente through

¶ Also ye shall vnderstande whan we shall goo to warre than doo we afore vs bere with. xiiij. [14] kynges. xiiij. [14] cofers with golde and syluer really wrought with precious stones. and the other kynges come after vs with grete streamers and baners of fylke and fyndale very rychely wrought. Ye shall knowe also that afore vs gone. xl. M [40,000] clerkis and also many knyghtis. and men afote there be ij. C. M. [200,000] without cariers and cariers that go with the olyphantes and cary our harneys and vitales.

¶ Ye shall vnderstande also as we goo to fylde than put we oure lande in the keypyng of the Patriarche of feynt thomas. And whan we pecefably ryde than do we bere afore vs a crosse of wodde in worthyp of oure lorde Ihesu Cryste. Also in the incomynge of euery cyte stande. iij. crosses made of wodde/ for to remembre ye passion of oure lord Ihesu cryste. And whan we ryde pecefably than do we also bere afor vs a basyn full of erthe to remembre yat we be come of erthe and that we shall waxe erth ayen. and we do also bere for vs another basyn full of fyne gold to a token that we be the nobleste and myghtyest kyngis of all the worlde.

¶ There is also in our lande noman so hardy that dare breke his wedloke. but yf he dyde he sholde be incontynent be burnyd. For our lorde hym felse hath ordeyned wedlok therfore it shold be kept by reason yf that we louyd oure lorde Ihesu Cryste. For it is one of the sacramentes of the holy chyrche.

¶ Also there dare noman make a lye in oure lande. for of he dyde he sholde incontynent bee sleyn and we be feythful in oure faying and doying.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstand that we euery yere goo vyfite the holy body of the prophete danyel in oure forest/ and we take with vs. x M. [10,000] clerkis and as many knyghtys. and. CC. [200] castels. made vpon Olyphantes fore to kepe vs from ye dragons ye whyche haue. vij. hedes. the whych that haue theyr dwellynge in that forest.

¶ And there bee also in that fame place dates ye winter and somer hange on the trees fayr and grene. And ye foreste is great a. C. and xxx. [130] dayes journey. and ye. ij.

patriarches ben before vs at table for they haue the myght of the pope of rome. And we haue twyes as many abbotes in oure lande as there be dayes in the yere. [and] xv. more And euerich one of them cometh ones in ye yere and saythe masse vpon faint Thomas auter. And I my self feye also masse in the grete festis of ye yere. and ther for I am called pope Iohn. For I [am] priite after the outshewing of sacrificie of the auters. and kinge after outshewing of Iustice. ¶ And I pope Iohn was halowid afore I was borne. for oure lorde sende his angell to my fader and sayde to hym make a pallays the whyche shall be of the grace of god and a chamber of that paradyse for your sonne comynge For hi shall be the grettest kyng of the worlde. and he shall a longe tyme lyue. So who that in this pallays comyth he shall haue no hongre or thyrste. and he shall not deye and as fone as my fader was a wakyd he was very mery/ and incontynent he began to make thys pallays lyke ye shall here. At fyrst of ye incomynge of thys pallays is made of cristall and the couerynge of it is of precious stonnes and with in realy wrought with sterres lyke yf it were ye heuen. and that paung is also of cristall and within this fame pallays be none wyndowes. and within this fame pallays be. xxiiij. [24] pyllers of fyne gold and of precyous stonnes of all maner fortes. and ther am I at great feste dayes of the yere and seynt Thomas prechyth in middell of this pallays to the

people. And whithin this fame pallays is a conduyte or a fonteyne is lyke wyne in drynkynge/ so who thereof drincketh he defyred none other mete nor drinke and noman can telle fro whens it cometh or whyther it gothe. Also ther is another great merueyll in this fame pallays whan we shall goo to our dyner/ so is there no maner of mete made redy for vs/ nor there is no manner of instrumentes to make mete redy with all. but there comith before vs all maner of delycious mete that comyth there thoroughe the holy goost. And it is not wel possyble to wrytte all maner of goodnes they [haue] whiche yat be in oure lande. And ye shall vnderstande that we wrytte nothynge to you but trewe is. For if we sholde wrytte lyes to you/ god and seynt thomas sholde punyssh vs/ for we sholde lese all our dignyte and oure worshyp.

And we praye you that ye wyl wrytte vs ayen with the berer of this lettre. and sende to vs ayen a good knyght of ye generacyon of fraunce.

And we praye the kyng of Fraunce that he wyl vs recomaunde to the myghty kyng of Englande. and also to all other kynges the whyche yat dwelle be yonde the zee thow that ben crystened and we praye god that he you wyl gyue the grace of the holy goost Amen.

Written in oure holy pallays in the byrth of my selfe. v. [five] hondred. and feuen.

Emprenteth by me Iohn of Doesborowe:



The
Life and Labours
of
Richard Eden,
Scholar, and Man of Science.

[? 1521]—1576.

* Probable or approximate dates.

The best Life of our Author hitherto, is in Cooper's *Athenæ Cantabrigienses*, ii., 2, Ed. 1861.

1509. Apr. 22. Henry VIII. comes to the throne.
- 1521.* The year of our Author's birth has not yet been ascertained, but it cannot be much later than 1521. He would therefore be of nearly the same age as Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, who was born on 13th September 1520. He stated in 1573 (*see under that year*) that 'he was of a respectable family in Hertfordshire; where he, in that year, had a sister still living.'
- 1526*-1534.* He is well educated as a boy. 'When I was a yonge scolar, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus*.'—*p. xli. col. 2.*
1526. Pietro Martire of Anghiera dies.
1526. Feb. The printing of the *Sumario de la natural y general istoria de las Indias*, written by Gonçalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, is finished at Toledo.
1530. Jan. 25. Sir Thomas Smith [*b.* 28th March 1514 at Saffron Walden], being then B.A., is elected Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge.
1533. Aug. 31. The printing of the Third edition of Pietro Martire's Latin *Decades* is finished at Basle. It is undoubtedly the text from which Eden translated *pp. 63-200* of this present work.
- 1533-1539. Sir T. Smith is resident at Cambridge.
1540. Vaunuccio Biringuccio's *Pyrotechnia* is first printed; at Venice.
- 1535-1544. Eden studies at Cambridge for ten years (*see under 1573*). What he states there, he confirms elsewhere, see *p. l. col. 1*, 'that the ryght worshypfull and of singlar learnynge in all sciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and sometyme my tutor.' He does not, however, seem to have taken any degree, while up at the University.
- 1539-1541. Sir T. Smith is travelling abroad.
1542. A folio edition of Chaucer's works is published, remarkable for being an early instance of joint enterprise among English printers, 'each having his own name alone as printer, in the colophon of so many copies as were his proper share.'—Herbert's *Typographical Antiquities*, *p. 557, Ed. 1785-90*. The joint partners in this edition were W. Bonham, F. Petit, R. Kele, and R. Toy.
- 1542-1547. Sir T. Smith is again resident at Cambridge. It was probably during this period, that he taught Eden: who had, for his fellow pupils under Sir T. Smith, Edward Vere, afterwards the Earl of Oxford and a most exquisite poet; and John Ponet, afterwards Bishop of Winchester.
- 1544-1546. Eden comes to Court, and holds a position in the Treasury, for about two years; which is his first appointment in the Civil Service.
1545. Oct. The First edition of Thomas Geminus' important 'Epitome of *The Fabric of the Human Body*, by A. Vesalius,' is published in Latin in London, in folio size; illustrated with remarkable engravings, 'all drawn out, and graven in brasse, and so imprinted by my own labour.' The dedication to Henry VIII. is dated London, 4 Kal. Oct. [28th September] 1545. Geminus, in his next edition of 1553, states that King Henry very much wished that this anatomical work should be widely published abroad: and that he himself had subsequently heard that it had been 'notably well

accepted, and hath doen muche good in Italye, Fraunce, Spaine, and Germaine, and other foren parties.'

1547. Eden is destined to the office of the Distillery; when the King dies: see *p.* xlv.

1547. Jan. 28. Edward VI. succeeds to the Crown.

1547. The Lord Protector, however, gives the Distillery to one, who held it down to, at least, so late as 1573.

1547.* Eden marries; and has by his wife twelve children in the next fourteen years: who all apparently grow up to manhood; else the argument and appeal then used by him in 1573, would seem to be faulty.

1548. Sept. Master William Cecil, æt. 28, is appointed Secretary to the Lord Protector Somerset.

1549. Oct. 10. In the political revolution, occasioned by the advent to power of the Earl of Warwick, afterwards the Duke of Northumberland—to whom Eden, in 1553, dedicated his *Treatyse of the newe India*—Master W. Cecil is

Nov. confined to his house (Oct. 10); and in November is sent to the Tower; from whence he is set free on the 25th

1550. Jan. 25. January following.

The First edition of Girolamo Cardano's work, *De Subtilitate*, is printed at Nuremberg in folio. It was written in eight months; but under constant correction for three years before it appeared. Eden thought very highly of it.

1550. May. The First edition, of the First Volume only, of *Navigazioni e Viaggi* [collected by J. B. Ramusio] is printed at Venice. It was probably this First impression; and not the Second edition of the same Volume printed in March 1554, that Eden made use of in his Compilation.

Sept. 5. Master W. Cecil is appointed one of the Secretaries of State and a Privy Councillor.

1551. July 3. The sweating sickness, which had begun on 15th April at Shrewsbury, begins in London; where 500 persons die in the first week. At this time, the first English ship that ever went to Barbary, leaves Portsmouth; under the command of T. Windham (see *p.* xix).

Oct. 11. Sir W. Cecil is knighted.

1552. Spring. Eden writes thus, at *p.* 355, about the middle of 1555, 'And wheras as concernynge the knowlege of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hoole worke of Pyrotechnia, wherof I fynnyshed. xxii. chapitres now more then three yeares fence, and lefte the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttinge to speake of other ingrattitudes) I was therby discouraged to proceade any further in that worke.' From this, it is evident that, by this time, Eden was a good Italian scholar. His translation of the first three chapters will be found at *pp.* 356-368.

1552. About this date, Eden was, I believe, acting as private secretary to Sir W. Cecil. I have, however, lost the reference to the authority for this.

1552. April 22. Sir W. Cecil is made Chancellor of the Order of the Garter.

May 2 or 9. The second English voyage sets out for Barbary, *p.* xix.

June 3. Girolamo Cardano, on his way from Italy, reaches London; and after a rest of three days, travels in twenty-three days to Edinburgh: where he somewhat successfully prescribes for Cardinal Beaton. After a stay of seventy-five days there; he leaves Edinburgh on

Sept. 12. 12th September, on his return towards Italy.

See further respecting this famous Italian magician or physician—this considerable genius—this prolific author (he wrote in all 222 treatises, large and small)—this most impudent liar and profligate liver, in Professor Morley's *Life of Jerome Cardan*, 1856. It is quite possible that Eden saw Cardano—whose works, he quotes as of the highest authority—while he was staying in London.

1552. July 20. Geminus, in the Dedication prefixed to the Second edition of his "Epitome of Vesalius' *Anatomy &c.*"

(with the explanations to the plates, greatly augmented and in *English*), which is dated "At Windfore, the. xx. July 1552," (the engraved title is, however, dated 1553) goes on to state, after what we have already quoted above, under 1545, as follows:—'And now of late by the information of fundrye frendes and also of diuerse furgeons, I haue ben borne in hande, that the fame worke beeyng fet foorth in the English tounge might greatly auaille to ye knowledge of the vnlained Surgeons, and by meane of them, shoulde bee muche more beneficiall, then in latin it is to an infinite nombre of people in thys your Maiesties Royallme of Englande. Wherefore myndyng to rendre vnto this Countrey, in which by your graces proteccion and bounteous liberalitie I liue, as muche fruite as my poore industrie and continuall trauaile may possibly bee hable to yelde, I haue earnestly applyed my felse to make common and familiar to all Englishe people that which hath ben found profitable among so many foren nacions. Whereunto forasmuch as I am not my felse so perfect and experte in the Englishe tonge that I dare warraunt or trust myne owne dooynges, I haue vsed the studious peines of Nicholas Vdall [the author of *Roister Doister*, our earliest known English comedy] and certain other learned men whose exercise in translacions and pennyng in this tounge hath ben (as I vnderstande) not without some fruite to the common weale.' Eden edited the next edition in 1559.

1552. Dec. 2. The printing of the first edition of Francisco Lopez de Gomara's *Istoria de las Indias y conquista de Mexico*, is finished at Saragossa.

1553. May 9. The date of the Ordinances &c. for the English fleet going for the discovery of Cathay by the North-East; given by Sebastian Cabot, as 'Gouernour of the mysterie and companie of the Marchants aduenturers for the discouerie of Regions, Dominions, Ilands, and places vnkown; who were not, however, incorporated by royal charter, until 6th February 1555 (1 and 2 Philip and Mary). For these Ordinances, see Hakluyt's *Voyages, &c.*, *p.* 259, *ed.* 1589.

1553. May 20. The first English fleet, consisting of the *Bona Esperanza*, 120 tons, Captain Sir Hugh Willoughby, General of the whole fleet; the *Edward Bonaventure*, 160 tons, Captain Richard Chancellor, Pilot Major, with Stephen Burrough (or as Eden calls him at *p.* xli. *col.* 2, *Steuena Burrough*), for Master; and the *Bona Confidentia*, 90 tons, Cornelius Deerfoorth, Master: leave Ratcliff on their voyage, and get as far as Deptford.

May 21. About 2 P.M. they leave Deptford. Then occurred the scene thus vividly described to us by Clement Adams: of which it is almost certain that Eden was an eye-witness.

'The greater shippes were towed downe with boates, and oares, and the mariners being all apparelled in watchet or skie coloured clothe, rowed a maine, and made way with diligence. And being come neere to *Greenwich* (where the Court then laye) presently vpon the newes thereof the Courtiers came running out, and the common people flockt together, standing very thicke vpon the shoare: the priuie Counsell, they lookt out at the windowes of the Court, and the rest ranne vp to the toppes of the towers: the shippes hereupon discharge the Ordinance, and shoote off their pieces after the maner of warre, and of the fea, infomuch that the tops of the hilles founded therewith, the valleys, and the waters gaue an Echo, and the mariners they shouted in such fort, that the skie rang againe with the noyse thereof. One stode in the poepe of the shippe, and by this gesture biddes farewell to his friends in the best manner he coulde. Another walkes vpon the hatches, another climbs the shrow[d]es, another flandes vpon the maine yarde, and another in the toppe of the shippe. To bee short, it was a very triumphe (after a fort) in all respects to the beholders. But (alas) the good King Edwarde (in respect of whome principally all this was prepared) hee only by reason of his sicknesse was absent from this shewe, and not long after the departure of these ships, the lamentable and most forowfull accident of his death followed.'—Hakluyt, *Voyages*, *p.* 282, *Ed.* 1589.

May This voyage seems to have aroused a general interest in cosmography. People began to think of the great unknown world outside and beyond England. Some one printed a tract or single sheet, entitled *Of the new found lands*, which Eden derides at *p.* 5. This publication stirred him up to a rapid translation of a part of the Fifth book of Muenster's colossal *Cosmography*.

June.* Thus appeared Richard Eden's first literary work, (see title at p. 3), printed by Edward Sutton. He dedicates it to John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, the then all-powerful Protector. The Dedication is important in relation to the controverted life of Sebastian Cabot. It is to be noticed that in it Eden *boasts* of having already read the *Decades*. To this month and year is therefore also to be assigned the composition of his address 'To the Reader' at pp. 7-11; in which he so manfully strives to uproot the general ignorance and timidity of his time.

1553. July 6. *Mary's reign commences.*

1553. Aug. 12. The first English voyage to Guinea leaves Portsmouth, see p. 375.

Aug. 20. The printing of the second edition of Lopez de Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Medina del Campo.

Aug. 22. John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland (to whom, Eden had dedicated, within less than three months before, his first work), is beheaded at the Tower; with Sir T. Gates, and Sir T. Palmer.

1554. Summer.* Richard Chancellor's ship, the *Edward Bonaventure*, returns to England; but is robbed on the way home, by some Flemings. The crews of the other two ships,

Spring.* under Sir Hugh Willoughby, to the number of seventy persons, are frozen to death; while wintering at Arzina fiord, for 'want of experience to have made caues or stoues.' It appears from a will found in one of the ships, that Sir Hugh Willoughby and most of his company, were alive in January 1554.

1554. July 25. Queen Mary is married to Philip, Prince of Spain, at Winchester. 'Shortly after King *Philip* and Queene *Mary* remooued from Winchester to Basing, [and] from

Aug. 5. thence to Windsor, where, on the fifth of August, the King was staled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the Earle of Sussex was made knight of the garter.'—*Stow*, p. 1057, *Ed.* 1600.

Aug. 17. 'The King and Quene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the King in one barge, the Queen in another, and landed at the Bishop of Winchester's staires neere to S. Maries Oueries church, and so passed through that place and park into Suffolke place, where they rested that night.'—*Stow*, *idem*.

Aug. 18. 'And the next day, being the 18 of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision received of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c., and passing through *Paules* churchyard, a man came sliding, as it were flying upon a rope, from *Paules* steeple down to the deans wall.'—*Stow*, *idem*.

As Eden tells us, at p. 46, intoxicated by the shows, the triumphs, and universal acclamations that greeted the gorgeous royal procession through the City, he was led first to debate within himself as to whether he could by any original publication perpetuate to future Ages, not so much the glorious reception, as its worthiness and significance: but thinking of nothing sufficiently worthy, he was led to consider the marvellous discoveries, conquests, and empire of the Spaniards; all of which bade fair to become (should the royal pair have issue) the joint heritage of England. Hence his great Compilation is distinctly the result of the Marriage Procession of this day.

Within the following twelve months (working incessantly, and for nothing), Eden translated or wrote all that is *reprinted* in this volume, between pp. 43 and 398. Inasmuch as the work was one of great bulk (though, at the time, of national importance), several printers combined together for its risk of its publication: while the printing of it was wholly intrusted to William Powell. There are copies extant with the colophons of Robert Toy, Richard Jugge, Edward Sutton, and also, as Herbert states at p. 738, William Seres, and perhaps others. These are the "parteners" to whom Eden refers at p. 330.—See 1542 above.

Leonhardus Gorecius, a Polish knight, writes a congratulatory Latin Oration to the people and nobles of England on the royal marriage, which was printed by William Powell, who was also, at the same time, busily engaged on Eden's Compilation. Eden refers to this Oration at p. 47.

1554. Oct. 2. 'There came to the Tower in twenty carts made for the show, accompanied with certain Spaniards of the King's Guard, ninety-seven little chests, of a yard long and four inches broad, of silver, which will make by estimation fifty thousand pounde' [equivalent to £750,000 of the present day]: *Hart. MS.* 194 [which is a 'Pocket Diary of a resident in the Tower between July 1553 and October 1554'] reprinted by the Camden Society under the title of *The Chronicle of Queen Jane*, 1850. John Foxe, in his *Actes and Monumentes*, &c., *Ed.* 1563, states that the silver was 'matted about with mats, and mayled in little handles, about two feet long and almost half a foot thick, and in euery cart fixe of those bundles.' I presume this is what Eden refers to at p. 56, as the 18,000 pounds 'weyght of fyluer which was coyned to the Kynges vse in the towre of London where neuer so much hath byn feene at once as fuche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme.' It was brought there from Peru and Rio de la Plata, by the celebrated Spanish historian Augustin de Zarate; whose *Historia del descubrimiento y conquista del Peru* was published at Antwerp in the next year.

It was probably after the formation of this acquaintanceship with Zarate, and while his great Collection, here reprinted, (itself an honour to the Spanish nation) was in the press; that by the favour of certain Spanish nobles, Eden obtained a place in the English Treasury of the Prince of Spain.

1554. Oct. 11. The second expedition to Guinea leaves the River Thames, see p. 379.

Oct. 12. The third edition of Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Saragossa.

1554. Nov. 28. The Council of State announce by letter, at Dr. Chedsey's sermon at Paul's Cross, that the Queen is *enccinte*.

1554. Nov. 11. } Parliament sits at Westminster.

1555. Jan. 16. } Among other Acts passed by it, was the following short one, now known as 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, c. 6—entitled *An Acte for renueng of three Estatutes made for the punishment of Heresies*:—"For th[e]xchuing and avoiding of Errours and Heresies which of late haue ryfen growen and much encreafed within this Realme, for that th[e]ordinaries haue wanted auctoritee to procede agaynste thos that were infected therwith: BE IT therefore ordeined and enacted by th[e]auctorite of this presente Parliament, That the Statute made in the fifthe yere of the Reigne of King Richarde the Seconde, concerning th[e]arresting and apprehencion of erroneous and hereticall Preachers, And one other Statute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fourthe concerning the repreffing of Heresies and punishment of Heretikes, And also one other Estatute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henrye the Fishe, concerning the suppression of Heresie and Lollarlye, and euery Article, Branche and Sentence contained in the same three feuerall Actes and every of them, shall from the xxth day of Ianuarye next coming [1555] be revived and be in full force strengthe and effecte to all Intentens construccions and purpofes for euer."—*Statutes of the Realm*, iv. 244, *ed.* 1819.

1555. Jan. 1. The date of John Elder's letter describing the marriage of the King and Queen in the previous July; which letter was immediately printed.

Jan. 20. The burning of Protestants becomes lawful on and after this day, by the above Act of Parliament.

Feb. 4. John Rogers, the first of the Marian martyrs, is burnt at Smithfield.

Feb. 6. The Moscovy Company is incorporated by Royal Charter: having for its Executive; Sebastian Cabot, Governor; four Consuls; and twenty-four Assistants.

Eden must have watched the proceedings of this Company with the deepest interest. Indeed, it is probable that the entire section, *Of Moscovie and Cathay* (which has nothing whatever to do with the title-page or original plan of his Compilation; at which he must have been working hard, all through this winter) was suggested by the return of Richard Chancellor and the subsequent Incorporation of this Company; and put forth by him, as a goodwill offering towards their success and information.

1555. Feb. 8. Laurence Saunders is burnt at Coventry; and so the legalized religious massacre goes on.

- May 21. Is the latest actual date in Eden's Compilation, and therefore in the three Works here reprinted. It will be found towards the bottom of p. 382. On this day the English ships, returning on their way home from Guinea, were in 39° 30' N. At their rate of progress they could hardly have reached England before the end of July.
- July.*
Aug.* Therefore Section VII. of Eden's Compilation was written and printed in August; and, at the earliest, his newly printed Compilation and the printing of the entire book could hardly have been finished before September.
- Sept.* Immediately after which; Thomas Watson, Bishop of Lincoln,—the fellow-student of Roger Ascham; by whom his Latin play of *Absalom* [if the MS. is now at Wilton House] is exceedingly praised in his *Schoolmaster*, 1570—accuses Eden before Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, for heresy; of which his newly printed Compilation would afford ample evidence.
- Oct. 24. Bishop Gardiner, however, dies; and Eden somehow escapes punishment, with simply the loss of his office: and then seems, for the next three years to be living in retirement; his family steadily increasing all the while.
1556. Jan. 10. The printing of Martin Cortes' *Breve compendio de la sphaera y de la arte de nauegar* is finished at Seville.
- Nov. 7. Richard Chancellor, in the wreck of his ship the *Philip and Mary* in Pettislego Bay, Scotland, is drowned—while endeavouring in a boat to save the Russian Ambassador's life; in accomplishing which, he loses his own.
1557. Feb. 27-28. Eden probably witnessed the splendid reception by the Moscovy Company, of Osep Gregorevitch Napea, the first Russian Ambassador, on his arrival in London, for the *procès verbal* of which, see Hakluyt, *Voyages, &c.*, p. 321, Ed. 1589. From the omission in this notarial document of all allusion to Sebastian Cabot; it is evident that he was but recently dead. For Eden's account of his death—the only one extant—see p. xlvi., col. 2. It probably occurred about this date: for when Eden, about the Summer of 1555, wrote the heading at p. 283, 'that woorthy owlde man Sebastian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englande,' was still 'Gouernour of the company of the marchantes of Cathay.'
1558. Nov. 17. Elizabeth succeeds to the throne.
- We now come to the two earliest printed notices of Eden. His reputation had travelled over the Continent to the English Protestant exiles in Switzerland; and two of them thus vaguely and incorrectly refer to his literary labours, but give him the wrong Christian name.
1558. Lawrence Humphrey (who died Dean of Winchester, on 1 Feb. 1590), in his three books of *Interpretatio linguarum*, the Dedication of which is dated, Basilæ, Feb. 3, 1559, thus refers to our Editor-Author, at p. 520. 'Petrum quoque Martyrem Argleriensem Joannes Eden, Cosmographus et Alchumista uertit *De insulis nuper inventis*.'
1558. Bp. Bale, at p. 110 of his Supplement (written in 1558), to his *Scriptorium illustrium, &c.* the printing of which was finished in Feb. 1559, is a little more explicit; but still follows Humphrey closely. "Johannes Eden, Cosmographus et alchumista ut à quibusdam [*i.e.* L. Humphrey] narratur, ingeniosus ac peritissimus, inter alia scripsit *De nauigationibus Portugalensium*, Lib. 1. [This is evidently Eden's first publication, *Of the newe India*.] Transtulit Petrum Martyrem Angleriensem. *De insulis nuper inuentis*. Lib. 1. [or rather the *Decades*]. Aliaque fecit multa. Clariut anno Domini. 1556."
1559. Sept. The printing of the Third edition of Geminus' *Anatomy, &c.*, 'enlarged, amplified, and so corrected and diligently perused, that it maye seeme a newe worke, and rather an other than it was before,' is finished. Richard Eden is, this time, the English reviser; and the fresh Dedication to the new Queen is evidently written by him for Geminus, as its smooth connected style abundantly demonstrates.
1561. Eden's next literary work seems to have been the translation (and probably also, in part, the devising of the numerous, and, for that time, difficult woodcuts of

this work of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Naviar*, at the expense of certain members of the Moscovy Company: towards which, Eden appears, at this time, to have stood in the same relation as Hakluyt did, fifty years later, to our East India Company. This work is remarkable not only for the number of the wood engravings (some of them moveable) of different mathematical instruments; but also for a small outline map of *The Newe Worlde*, or more properly of the North Atlantic basin. This is probably the earliest printed map of America ever produced in England: and is evidently copied from the original in Cortes' *Compendio*.

To this translation, Eden prefixed the following excellent Preface: in respect to which, it is significant to notice that Sebastian Cabot's name is omitted from the inscription.

To the ryght worshypfull syr VVyllyam Garrerd Knyght, and Master Thomas Lodge, Aldermen of the Citie of London, and Gouernours of the honorable felowshyp or societie, aswell of certeine of the Nobilitie, as of Marchauntes aduenturers, for the discouery of Landes, Territories, Ilandes, and Seignories vnknowen, and not before their first aduenture or enterpryse by Seas or Navigations commonly frequented:

And to the right worshypfull the Consulles, Assistentes, and comminaltie of the same societie, Richarde Eden wyssheth health and prosperitie.



That foeuer he was (ryght honorable and worshypfull) that fyrste beleued that the frame and coaptacion of the bodye of man, with the functions, offices, and duities of the partes and members of the same, knytte together in a certen vnitie to a common ministracion, dyd represent a lyuely Image and similitude of a perfecte common wealth: I thynke that he was a man of no vulgare iudgement or abiecte mynde, but rather of singuler wyfdome and prudence in the contemplacion of Diuine and humane thynges. For he sawe, that as in the small natie feede of all growyng or lyuing thynges, is conteyned the fourme that bryngeth them to theyr perfection: so in certeyne small and obscure members of the common wealth, consisteth no small increase to the perfection of the whole. He sawe lykewyse that herein, as in the bodye of man representyng the partes and members of the worlde (as I haue fayde) are dyuers partes of dyuers and fundrye actions and motions, greatly dyfferyng in fourme, number, and quantitie, yet all the same to be so knytte together, and so to consent in one vniformitie to the common profyte of the whole, that a greater concorde and harmonye can not be imagined, then is proportioned by the frendly vnitie of dyuers and contrarye. He sawe lykewyse in the same, such a mutuall compassion of parte to parte, and member to member, by one common fence existent in them all, that no one part or member can feele eyther ioye or payne, but that in maner all the other are parttakers therof more or lesse, yf they be lyuely members, and not wythered or otherwyse vnsefate by reason of dead fleshe, which onely by cuttyng and burning ought to be deuyded from the founde and whole. But as in man (whom Plato calleth the lesse world) the vigour and agilitie of the immortall soule and mynde, neuer ceasseth from continuall mouyng, but is euer exercyfed in excogitacions and inuentions of great thynges (herein resemyng God, whose caracte it beareth) by prouidence foreseeing, and by intelligence vnderstandyng and deuyfyng what is to be done, and what to be eschewed, doth immediatly moue and rayfe vp the faculties, powres, and members of the body to execute the same: Euen so in the greater worlde, the prouidence of God, and vniuersall counfayle and consent of men, hath elected and appoynted certen principall men, to beare lyke rule and auctoritie in the bodye of the common wealth, as hath the intellectuie soule in the members of our bodye to moue and commaunde the same. To Princes therefore counfaylours, rulers, gouernours and magistrates, as to the most intellectuie and sensitiue partes of the focietie of men, hath God and nature geuen preeminence and gouernaunce of the common wealth, that by theyr prouidence, wyfdome, and ayde, it may vniuersally stourish, not onely by iuste administration of good lawes, with due correction of malefactours, but also by lyberall rewardyng of suche as haue well deserued: and especially by maintenaunce of suche artes and sciences, as the common wealth can not well be without. And to draw nearer to the applyng of my similitude: I saye, that whatfoener vertue, whatfoener arte, or the ingenious industry of men hath to this day inuented, all the fame is to be imputed to the beneuolence and liberalitie

of fuche as haue honourablye maintayned and freelye rewarded the traualles, paynes, and charges of them that haue spent their lyues, goodes, and wyttes (as many haue done) in the inuentions of necessarye and profytable artes and sciences. For euen as holsome and temperate ayre with feasonable wether and fauorable influence of the heauens and planettes, causeth fruitfulness on the earth, and contrarywyse, barrenesse by the contrarye: Euen so the fauour of Princes and Magistrates norysheth, augmenteth, and amplyfyeth all artes and sciences by liberalitie, and extynguysheth the fame by miserable couetousnes and parcimonie. And although in some men of rare and noble nature, the desyre of honour and fame onely for vertues sake, and study toward their countrye and common wealth, hath moued them in maner to their owne vndoing through their greate losse and hynderaunce, to sette forth and inuent diuers thynges for the commoditie of the common wealth and other, rather then for their owne: yet vndoubtedly, who so wel considereth and indifferently wayeth that I haue fayde, shal fynde and see by daylye experience, that in maner onely munificence, liberalitie, and rewarde, or the hope thereof, geueth spurres to them that attempte great and vertuous enterprises, as I coulde more largely proue by so many testimonies of Hystories, both holy and prophane, that the rehearsall therof shoulde be but tedious and not greatlye necessarye for my purpose, especially wrytyng vnto your honoures and worshyp, of whose munificence and liberalitie, I haue had great experience, bothe in my selfe and others, who by your ayde and mainteynaunce haue attempted and performed many goodly inuentions, viages, nauigations and discoueries of landes and Seas heretofore vnknewen. Wherein, what great charges you haue susteyned, and howe lyberall and constant you haue ben in furtherynge the fame, doth well declare that hyther to you are rather losers than gayners therby. The whiche thyng doubtlesse is the more to your commendation, in that it maye hereby appeare that you haue attempted the fame rather for knowledge and vertues sake, then for couetousnes of gaynes: as is furthermore well knowen by your fyrste viages of discouerye attempted to Cathaye by the Northeast seas, vpon certen losse and detriment, for vncerteyne hope eyther of gaynes, or of any such way to be founde, otherwyse then by certen lykely coniectures: not much vnylike to the shynnyng flowres of Marchantes, which outwardly appearyng in minerall mountaynes, are signes and token wherby is coniectured what metal is conteyned therein, and whether the same is to be folowed or not. And although it sometyme so chaunce that such signes are fayleable, shewyng more in apperaunce then they conteyne in substauce: yet are not such signes tokens, or shewes to be contemned, but rather earnestly to be folowed, forasmuch as it hath ben often proued and founde by experience, that by folowynge the fame, haue ben founde great and riche mynes of metalles: as *Georgius Agricola* in his booke *De rebus metallicis*, doth largely declare and proue by manye examples. But to wryte at large what greates thynges haue proceeded of small and obscure begynnynges, and in maner mere coniectures: it woulde so farre excede the measure of an Epistle or Preface, that it woulde rather increase to the iust quantitie of a booke. For in maner all the late discoueries both of the Spanyardes and Portugales, had their begynnyng of such small coniectures, with vncerteyne hope (as it were *preter spem sub spe*) vntyll God and good happe, by the constant traualle and valiaunt mynde of such as fyrst attempted the fame, gaue them to enioye that they hoped for. But whatsoeuer they haue obteyned and do enioy, this may I boldly say in your behalf (right honorable and worshipfull) that there hath not lacked in you eyther the lyke or greater promptnesse of mynde, forwardnes in attemptyng, magnificence in expences, and liberall in rewardes. For besyde the great charges and losses that you haue ben at otherwyse, what should I speake of the great gyftes that you haue sente to the Emperour of Russia? What of your last chargeable vyage of discouerye among the innumerable Rockes, Ilandes, and moueable mountaynes of Ice in the frosen sea, by innumerable landes and Ilandes vnknewen to the Antiques, euen vnder and farre within and beyonde the circle Artike, where they thought that no luyng creature coulde drawe breath or liue for extreme colde: wheras neuerthelesse the same hath ben by you discouered euen vnto the myghtye ryuer of Ob, that falleth into the Scithian Ocean, or *Oceanus Hyperboreus*, not farr from the mountaynes called *Hyperborci*, so named because they are situate almost vnder the North pole, and thought therefore to be inaccessible. A vyage doubtlesse of such difficultie and in maner impossibilitie, that consyderyng the infinite daungours therof (as I haue learned by th[e] information of Steuen a Burrough, that was then the chiefe

Pilote of the same vyage) it may seme impossible that they shoulde euer haue escaped, excepte the myghtye hande of God, by the experte skylfulness of so excellent a Pilot, had delyuered them from those daungers. And although in dede (as religion byndeth vs) it is conuenient in all thynges to geue all honour, glorye and thanks to God, yet are we not thereby restrayned to be thankfull to such men, as by their arte, ingeniousnes, traualle, and diligence, haue deserued both iuste commendation and large rewarde. And therefore referringe the rewarde to you (ryght honorable and worshypfull, to whom it apperteyneth) yf I should not here geue hym at the leaste fuche commendation, as in my iudgement he hath well deserued, I myght seme both to defraude hym of his worthy desertes, and also to forgette the frendshyp and good wyll I beare hym, onely for his vertues and excellencie in his profession. For certeynly when I consider how indigent and destitute this Realm is of excellent and expert Pilottes, I can do no lesse of conscience, then in respect of your owne commoditie, yea rather for the commoditie of the Queenes Maiestie and the whole Realme, to exhort you and put you in remembraunce (although I may herein seme to put the spurres to a runnyng horse, as faith the Prouerbe) so to regard hym and esteeme hym and his faythfull, true, and painefull seruice toward you, that he maye thereby be further encouraged, and not discouraged, eyther for lacke of mainteynaunce, or other wyse by the iniurious assaultes of such his enemies, as onely his vertues and excellencie haue moued to beare hym displeasure, as enuye doth euer folowe vertue, as faith the Latine Prouerbe, *Virtuti comes inuidia*. And howe true a sentence this is, is well verified by the saying of a certayne Philosopher (whose name I do not remember) who hearynge one vaynely reioyce that he had no enemies, aunswered that that was a token he hadde done lyttle good: Meanyng thereby (as dayly experience proueth) that yf he had excelled in any vertue, he coulde not haue lacked some enemies. And hauyng here touched to speake of enuye, I remember that when I was a yonge scoler, I haue read in the Poet *Hesodus* of two kyndes of enuye, whereof the one is called *Inuidia*, and the other *Aemulatio*, which is more tollerable then the fyrste, for that it is ioyned with some vertue, and enuyeth that anye shoulde excell hym in any excellent qualitie that he professeth. But forasmuch as this enuy of emulation proceadeth of some singuler vertue of them that are fo maliced, they maye herein reioyce, that they shall euer haue a hundreth frendes for one enemy: yea and although they hadde none, yet is vertue a rewarde to it selfe, and to be embrased for it selfe onelye, as the Philosophers affirme. What then shall we say to such, as forgettyng this rewarde of vertue, do not onely [not] fauour, but rather hynder the preferment and maynteynaunce of such experte men, more esteemyng certayne Fysher men that go a trawlyng for fyshe in Catches or mongers, and dradgies for Oysters about the sandes, betwene the South surlande and Wynterton nesse, and the sandes about Temmes mouth, then they do fuche excellent Pylotes as are able without any Rutter or Carde of Nauigation, not onely to attempte longe and farre viages, but also to discouer vnknewen landes and Ilandes, as haue doone of late yeares many excellent men, to the great honour and enrychyng of their Prynce and countrye. But as touching Steuen A Burrough, the chiefe Pylote of your viages of discouery, it may hereby well appeare yat he is neyther malicious nor enuious of his arte and science, in that he desireth ye fame for the common profite to be commen to al men: And for the same intent was the fyrst that moued certen worshypfull of your company, as Syr William Garrerd, Maister William Mericke, Maister Blafe Sanders, and Maister Edwarde Castlen, to haue this worke translated into the English tongue. Who of their own good nature fauouryng al vertuous studies and the professours of the same, did sone incline to his honest request herein: and therewith not only desired me, but also with liberall rewarde entertained me, to take in haude the translation. Whiche being nowe finished as well as my poore learnyng may performe, I desyre your honours and worshyppes, to accepte in as good parte as I haue ment herein to gratifie you, and doe fuche seruice as my abilitie may suffice. Nowe therefore this worke of the art of Nauigation, beyng publyshed in our vulgar tongue, you may be assured to haue more store of skylful Pilottes. Pilottes (I faie) not Pirottes, Rulers, not Rouers, but fuche as by their honest behauour and conditions ioyned with arte and experience, may doe you honest and true seruice: whiche is not to be looked for of fuche as beyng destitute as well of the feare of God as of all moral vertues, superbounde in all notorious vyces, accountyng desperatnesse for boldnesse, rashnesse for hardinesse, impudencie for stoutnesse, and crueltie for manhod. What other

thyng (I saye) is to bee looked for of fuche, then of fuche trees such fruites, *Et mali corui malum ouum*. But for as muche as these haue no place appointed them in the bodie of our common wealth, whiche we haue here before compared to the members of the bodie of man: therefore are they no otherwyse to be esteemed then as excrementes of the bodye, to whom nature hath appointed no place in the same, but laboureth continuallye to cast them forth dyuers wayes, leaste by theyr slythynesse they should infecte the other members, euen as the pompe of the shyppe if it be not auoyded, is noyous to the shippe and all that are therein. But the wyfe and honest Pylot, fyrst hauyng before his eyes the feare of God, and puttyng his chief trust in hym, shall secundarely trust to his arte and science, without any fuche vayne obseruations as the superstitious Horoscopers (Astrologiers I meane, and not Astronomers) are accustomed to vse in the elections of houres, tymes, and dayes, by constellations and aspectes of the Starres and Planetes, as many fonde menne haue doone, thynkyng thereby to haue escaped fuche daungers, as they haue thereby the rather fallen into, throughe contempte of arte and science by folysh confidence in superstitious Astrologie: which for the vanitie and vncertaintie thereof, the ryght worshypfull and of singular learnyng in all sciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and sometyme my Tutor, was accustomed to call *Ingeniosissimam artem mentiendi*. (That is) the moste ingenious arte of lyeing. Omitting therefore the superstitious and phantasticall obseruations of the iudicials of Astrologie, it shalbe better and more necessary for all Pylotes that desyre to excelle in theyr profession, to learne and obserue the principles of thys booke, whereby they may haue fuche knowledge of the Sphere, as may instructe them the makynge and vse of dyuers goodly Astronomicall instrumentes perteynyng to the arte of Nauigation, by knowledge of the mouynges of the Sunne and Moone in their Spheres, and the other Planetes and fixe Starres: thereby to attayne to the true knowledge of houres, tymes and tydes, with the variation of the Compasse, and many other goodly naturall obseruations of weathers, tempestes, and calmes, by certain infaileable fynges and tokens of the same, very necessary to be obserued. And this by the true principles of Astronomie and not of Astrologie. And this is the true Astronomie wherof the Diuine Philosopher *Plato* hathe wrytten so diuine a sentence, that I haue thoughte the same here worthy to be alleaged, that by the auctoritie of so famous an aucthour, we maye knowe what is true Astronomie, with the vse and commoditie therof. Therefore in his booke intituled *Timæus vel De Natura*, these are his wordes. *Rerum autem optimarum cognitionem, nobis oculi attulerunt. Nam hæc quæ de mundo disputantur, nunquam inuenta fuissent, si neque sydera, neque Sol, neque Cælum suspici potuisset. Cognitionis vero diei ac noctis, ab oculis orta, fecit ut dimensione quadam, mensuram annorumque ambitus metiremur, tempus cognosceremus, ac vniuersæ naturæ ordinem scrutaremur. Quibus ex rebus, philosophiam adepti sumus.* That is to saye. Our eyes haue brought vnto vs the knowledge of moste excellent thinges. For what so euer is disputed of the worlde, had neuer bene inuented, yf neither the Starres, neither the Sunne, neither heauen, coulde haue bene seene. For the knowledge of the daye and nyght, takyng beginning at ye eyes, caused vs as it were by certen limites and boundes to measure the circuites of monethes and yeares, wherby we came to the knowledge of tymes and the order of vniuersall nature. And hereby also we obteyned the knowledge of Philosophie. &c. And thus by the auctoritie of Diuine *Plato* (whome for hys excellencie *Cicero* called *Deum Philosophorum* (that is) the God of Philosophers) we maye vnderstande that the true Astronomie, is the perfecte knowledge of the miraculous mouynges of ye Planetes, Starres, and heauens (and especially of the Sunne and Moone) whereby is caused the varietie of times and dyuersitie of all naturall thynges, by naturall causes: as by the qualities of Elementes, as hoate, colde, moyste and drye, whyche are augmented or dymynyshed by the more or lesse influence of these twoo Luminaries, as they comme nearer vnto vs at some tymes, or depart further from vs at other tymes, with diuers motions in diuers climates whiche causeth not onely varietie of tymes in fundry climates, but also the varietie of diuers complexions, formes, and dispositions of all creatures vnder the face of heauen, none other accidentall contyngent, voluntarie or violent cause to the contrarie notwithstandinge. And this is it that *Plato* meaneth by those wordes. *Vt tempus cognosceremus ac vniuersæ naturæ ordinem, &c.* That is, to knowe the tymes and vniuersall order of nature. And doubtlesse, who so well considereth the marueilous effectes that are caused, especially by the variable mouing of the Sunne

in the Zodiac, must needs acknowledge it to be the chiefe instrument and meane that God vseth in the generation, perferuation, and alteration of all creatures that are conteyned in the worlde of generation and corruption. And for this consideration, certen of the auncient Philosophers called it the soule of the worlde: Other the eye, and other also the heart of the worlde. *Plato* also affirmeth that the soule of the worlde is in the Sunne: And that all other liuing thynges, receyue lyfe from hence. And hereof commeth the sayyng of the Philosopher, *Sol et homo generant hominem*: (that is) the Sunne and man, begette man. And therefore (as wryteth *Marcilius Ficinus*) of all Idolaters they are most tollerable that honour the Sunne for God. The whiche although it bee not, yet vndoubtedlye are his effectes so greate and wonderfull in this inferiour worlde, that it may seme in maner to be Gods Viceregent, Lieftenant and Viceroi in al the woorkes of nature, excepte where and when it pleaseth hym in any thyng myraculouflye, otherwyse then by the common order and course of nature, to commaunde the contrarie.

And yf it may not be tedious vnto you (ryght honorable and worshypfull) it shalbe a pleasure vnto me, for the better declaracion hereof, to make a brieue discourse of thé marueilous and straunge effectes that are caused by the Sunne: whiche perhappes fewe haue done, otherwyse then disappearedly here and there, as occasion hath serued. Fyrst therfore let vs consider what it hath done ouer the Equinoctiall line, and vnder both the poles at one instant, yet diuersely and contrarely the one to the other. For so hath the infinite wyfedome of the greate God of nature, the supreme Architecture of the vniuersall worlde, disposed all thynges in such perfecte order, that to them that are vnder the Equinoctiall, and haue theyr Horizon passyng by the two Poles, the daye is of xii. houres and the nyght as much, and theyr yeare also is deuyded into. xii. monethes: But they that dwell iust and perpendicularly vnder our pole, and that haue theyr Horizon passyng ouer the sayde line, haue the daye of fyxe monethes. That is to saye: begynnyng from the tenth daye of Marche, when the Sunne commeth ouer the sayde Horizon, whyle it returne to passe vnder the same at the tenth of September. And contrarywyse one nyght of fyxe monethes haue th[e] inhabitautes vnder the Pole Antartyke: whose yeare (that is to saye, all the course that the Sunne maketh by the. xii. signes of the Zodiac) is accomplyshed in one daye and one nyght. A thyng doubtlesse moste wonderfull and marueylous. Lykewyse, when we haue Sommer, they that are vnder our Pole haue the daye of fyxe monethes, and they of the opposite or contrary Pole, haue theyr nyght of the same length. Agayne, when it is wynter with vs, then vnder our Pole is the nyght of the sayde fyxe monethes: and vnder the opposite Pole, is the day of the same length. So that as it were course by course, when we haue the night, they haue the day: And contrarywyse, when we haue the day, they haue the night. The which although it be so longe and of so great space of tyme, yet is it not continuallye obscured with darkenesse. For the Sunne maketh his course in such order, that th[e] inhabitautes of that parte, lyue not duryng that tyme altogether in darkenesse, as Moles lyue vnder the grounde, but as other creatures that lyue vpon the globe and face of the earth, they haue fuche lyght as maye suffice to sustayne and mayntayne theyr lyfe. For the bodye of the Sunne declineth no more eyther beneath the Equinoctiall line, eyther aboue the same line (which is the Horizon to both the Poles) than. 23. degrees: That is to saye, no lower or hygher then the Tropikes, whiche are no more then 23. degrees or there about from the sayde Equinoctiall that is theyr Horizon, as is aforesayde. And yet in these 23. degrees he maketh not his course by the opposite Diameter, but goeth continuallye rounde about in circuite: so that his beames reuerberatyng heauen, represente fuche a maner of lyght, as we haue in Sommer two houres before the Sunne ryse. And this example which we haue taken of the diuersitie of the Horizons or the Equinoctiall and vnder the two Poles, is to demonstrate the marueylous effecte that the Sunne maketh departyng from the. xii. houres of the Equinoctiall (that is to say, from Aries to Libra) and commyng by lyttle and lyttle, illuminatyng the globe of the earth, and so reduceyng the yere of. xii. monethes, into one onely day and one nyght, as is sayde before. Vnder the infinite varietie of the which course, sometyme with long dayes and sometyme with shorte, all the inhabitautes of the worlde are fourmed and disposed of fuche complexion and strength of body, that euery of them are proportionate to the Climate assigned vnto them, be it hotte or colde: And may dwel and abyde there, as in theyr natural place and temperament, not lamentyng or defyryng to dwell elsewhere, so grete a loue resteth in

them to their native situation. But not to departe from the vyage whiche the Sunne maketh in one whole yeare, as sometye approchyng neare vnto vs, and sometye departyng from vs. I saye that at one selfe same tyme in dyuers partes vpon the rounde globe of the earth, it causeth the Spryng, Sommer, Autumne, and Wynter. And neuerthelesse at the same instant and punct of time it maketh day and high noone in one place, and nyght and mydnyght on the opposite part. The which varietie although it appeare incomprehensible to the slenderesse of our wyttes, yet beholdyng the same with the eyes of vnderstandyng, and therewith consideryng the vnestimable mouyng that the Sunne maketh continually, we shall fynde it to be true, hauyng respecte to the dyuers situations of the earth, as it is continually illuminate more or lesse by the Sunne. And this varietie is made with such a Harmonye and consonancie, and such a lawe perpetuall and immutable, that yf any poynt or pricke therof shoulde sayle, it is to be doubted least the elementes should be confounded together, and returne to their fyrst Chaos.

And to haue sayde thus muche of the wonderfull effectes of the course of the Sunne, it maye suffice for an example to proue howe necessary a thyng it is, not onely for all Pilottes and Sea men to haue the knowledge hereof, but also for all other such as shall attempt great and farre viages in vnknown landes and straunge countryes, as dyd of late master Jenkynson a worthy gentleman, sette fourth by you and mainteyned at your charges, more lyke an Ambassatoure sente from anye Prince or Emperour, then from a companye of marchaunt men. Wherein, what commendation you haue deserued, to the encrease of your perpetual fame and honour, I referre it to that I haue sayde before. And as touching master Jenkynson, what trauayles, paynes, and daungers he hath susteyned, and hardely escaped, and what diligence and arte he hath vsed in the searching of straunge countryes, and in the description of those his viages, it were but in vayne for me to wryte much vnto you, vnto whom the fame is better knowen then to me. And therefore to conclude, with rendring iust commendations both vnto you and him, I can say no more, but as Plato wryteth in his booke *De Legibus*. *Decens est eos ciues laudibus ornare, qui corporis vel animi viribus, res arduas preclarasque gesserunt, et legibus libenter paruerunt.* That is to say: It is decent to commend those Citifens that by theyr industry of bodye or mynde, haue done greate affayres, and haue willingly obeyed good lawes.

And thus estones desyryng your Honours and Worshyppes to accept in good parte whatsoeuer I haue saide of good wyll and affection towarde you and your proceadynges, and with your shielde of Iustice and auctoritie, to defende me agaynste the assaultes of such as are enemies to vertue, and captious of other mens doinges: I reeste at your commaundement to the vttermoost of my powre, to do you what seruice I maye.

1562. March 1. John Taisnier, Doctor of Laws [b. at Ath, in Brabant], a writer in astrology and chiromancy, publishes at Cologne a tract, *De natura magnetis et ejus effectibus*. Graesse, in his *Trésor*, states that it is a gross plagiary from Pellegrine de Maricourt's *De Magnete*, printed in August 1558.

1562. The Civil Wars in France begin by the unpremeditated massacre of Huguenots at Vassy by the Duke of Guise.

1562. Eden's wife is apparently dead, and he himself residing in the house of a friend; when the following Aug. 1. letter was written. It is manifestly addressed to Sir W. Cecil, who was brother-in-law to Sir John Cheke. Both

the writer and the Secretary of State were now about forty-two years of age. Apparently Eden was to receive £20 [=£150 now] as an earnest penny for a translation of Pliny into English.



HE only searcher of mens hartes the eternall god I take to wytnesse (right Honorable) that neuer the greefes of aduerse fortune (wherof I haue had my parte), dyd so muche prostrate my mynde and pearce my harte with sorowes, as the vnderstanding of your honours fauour and goodnesse towarde me in your lately earnest travaile in my behalfe (as I was informed by the Master of Savie) hathe reioiced me and revived my Discouraged spirites, heretofore no lesse languysshed for lacke of suche a Patrone, then nowe encouragied by the fauoure of suche a *Maccenas*, as I haue iust cause to name your honoure, fyth only the respecte of suche vertues as it hathe pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for

me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire) but also to be more earnest in folowing the same, then I might without presumption demaunde, and muche lesse without desertes dequire. As touchyng the which matter (right Honorable) as it was no parte of my diuise, but suche as the Master of Savoy had then in hande as I suppose no lesse to pleasure hym selfe and his frende then for xxli therof to be lotted to me for an earnest peny to begynne the booke (as he faith), Even so am I right forie that for so smaule a matter, and not so favorable a sute as I wolde haue wysshed, not only your Honour hathe taken suche paynes, but that also suche contention is ryfen therof betwene the Master of Sauoy and Master Baptist of the priue chamber, that by reason therof the pardon being steyed by your Honour, the younge gentleman his kynsman (as he hathe informed me) is in Daungyng of his lyfe. But vnder your honours fauour to speake playnelye as I thinke, I suppose that here *Aliquid latet quod non apparet.* For as this sute for dyuers consyderations at the first dyd not greatly like me, yet perceauyng his earnestnesse therin for the safe-garde of his kinsmans life and gratifyng his frendes, I no lesse willing therin to do hym pleasure also, was well contented to assent to his request, and to stande to his appoyntment, not suspectyng his frendshippe, but rather commending his wysdome, so to doo for his frende as therewith not to forget hym selfe, *quia nihil sapit qui sibi non sapit.* But if at that tyme, I might so boldelye haue presumed vppon your honours fauour, as by your earnestnesse in my behalfe I nowe perceauie I might haue doonne, I wolde haue moued your Honour of an honeste sute (for a lease to be had at the queenes handes) wherof I made hym priuie, and was longe sence so mynded to haue doonne, but that he Deterred me frome the same, alleaging certen commissiouners to haue the Doinges therof, and that therefore no suche thing might be had at her Maiesties handes: Albeit, I haue sythens hard of Dyvers that haue obteyned the like. Notwithstondyng (as in my former letters I wrotte to your Honour) my meaning is, so to move your Honour hereof, as neyther to be an importunate suter; or otherwyse to thinke the same to be folowed, then shall seeme good vnto your Honour, vnto whos[e] will I submitte my selfe in all thynges: Only putting your Honour in remembraunce of the commodious place and tyme that I nowe enjoye for that purpose: for the contynuaunce wherof, I was a suter vnto your Honour for your letters vnto the gentleman my frende in whose house I yet remayne, Who also being one that fauoureth learninge, and my greate frende, and no lesse gladde to further so good a purpose, is well willing the rather to my vse, to departe frome a piece of his commoditie, in suche sorte as appeareth by the byll herein inclosed. Wherof, further to aduertise your Honour if you shall so thinke it convenient, he will hym selfe repayre vnto your Honour to giue you perfecte informacon of all thynges as touchyng the same.

And wheras the Master of Savoye tolde me that your Honour somewhat Doubted that the booke coulde not be translated into the Englysshe toonge, I assure you Honour that this I Dare saye without arrogancie, that to translate the variable historie of Plinie into our toonge, I wolde be ashamed to borowe so muche of the Latine as he Dothe of the Greke, although the Latine toonge be accompted ryche, and the Englysshe indigent and barbarous, as it hathe byn in tyme past, muche more then it nowe is, before it was enriched and amplyfied by sundry bookes in maner of all artes translated owt of Latine and other toonges into Englysshe. And it is not vnknown vnto your Honour that the Latins receaving bothe the science of philosophie and phisike of the Grekes, Do still for the most parte in all ther translacions vse the Greke names, in so muche that for the better vnderstondyng of them, one *Otto Brunsfelsius*, a learned man, hathe writen a large booke Intitiled *Onomasticon medicinae*, where he hathe these woordes. *Res ipsas, atque artium vocabula, scite, apposite, designataque efferre, atque ad Polyleti regulam (quod aiunt) exprimere, res est non minus difficilis quam gloriosa. Quo, nullum studii genus, maiori constat molestia. Id quod in causa esse reor, quod hodie tam pauci in ea palestra sese exercent etc.* Agen, it is not vnknown vnto your Honour that ons all toonges were barbarous and needie, before the knowlege of thynges brought in plentie of woordes and names. Wherby it maye well appeare that men in the first age of the worlde, had a shorte language, consistyng of fewe woordes: which euer after increased by the knowlege and inuention of thynges. Exercise also maketh suche woordes familier, which at the first were Difficulte to be vnderstode. For children at the first (as faith Aristotle) caule all men fathers. But shortly after by exercise, caule them by there names. And I haue learned by experience, that the maryners vse manye

Englyſhe woordes which were as vnknown vnto me as the Chaldean tooſe before I was conuerſant with them. It maye therefore ſuffice that the woordes and termes of artes and ſciences be knowne to the profeſſours therof, as partely by experience, and partely by the helpe of dictionaries deſcribing them. *Per proprium, genus, et differentiam*, as the logicians teache, and as *Georgius Agricola* ſeth to do in the Germanye tooſe: which as well in that parte of philoſophie as in all other, was barbarous and indigent before it was by longe experience browght to perfection. But not to trouble your Honour any longer with this matter, one thinge remaineth wherof I wolde gladlye haue certified your Honour at my laſt being at the courte at Grenewich, if I might haue had conuenient acceſſe vnto you. And this is. That perceauinge your Honour to take pleaſure in the wonderful woorkes of arte and nature (wherin doubtleſſe ſhyneth the ſparke of the diuine Spirite that god hath gyuen you) I was then mynded to haue] delyuered vnto your Honour this philoſophicall booke, wher]in is deſcribed (as appeareth in folio. ii.) ſo excellent and precious an experiment, wrought by arte to the ſimilitude of the vniuerſall frame of the worlde made by the omnipotent and greate God of nature, that I beleue the like was neuer doonne ſynſe the creacion of the worlde. And maye therefore in my iudgement, more woorthely be cauled *Microſmos*, then eyther man or any other creature that euer was made of corporall ſubſtance. *Angelus Politianus* in his epiſtells, deſcribeth an instrument cauled *Automaton* made in his tyme in the cite of Florence, obſeruing the exacte mouing of *Primum Mobile* and *Octaua Sphæra*, with alſo the mouinges of the 7 planetes in there ſpheres, in all poyntes agreeable to there mouing in the heauen. Of the like instrument alſo, our Roger Bacon wrotte longe before in his booke *De Mirabili poteſtate artis et naturæ*, where he writeth in this maner. *Maius omnium figurarum et rerum figuratarum eſt ut Cæleſtia deſcriberentur ſecundum ſuas longitudines et latitudines in figura corporali, qua mouentur corporaliter motu diurno. Et hæc valeret Regnum homini ſapienti etc.* The which instrumente doubtleſſe, although it be of a diuine inuention: yet dothe this *Microſmos* ſo far furmount it, as nature paſſeth arte, and as *Motus animalis* paſſeth *Motus violentus*, for as the other is moued only by waight or wynde incloſed (as is ſeene in clockes and organs) ſo is this moued by the ſame Spirite of life wherby not only the heauen, but alſo all nature is moued: whoſe mover is god hym ſelſe as ſaith S. Paule: *Ipfus eſt in quo vivimus, mouemur, et ſumus.* As alſo Aristotle, Plato, and Philo, in there bookes *De Mundo*, do affirme. And eſpecially *Marcus Manilius in Aſtronomicis ad Auguſtum Caſarem*, writing thus:

*Hoc opus immenſi constructum corpore Mundi,
Membraque naturæ diuerſa condita forma,
Æris atque ignis, Terræ, pelagique iacentis,
Vis animæ diuina regit: Sacroque meatu
Conſpirat Deus, et tacita ratione gubernat, etc.
Ære libratum vacuo, qui ſuſtinet orbem, Item Lucanus
Totius pars magnus Iouis.*

And wheras the autoure that deſcribeth this *Microſmos* affirmeth that the *Chaos* therof, is *Materia Lapidis Philoſophorum* (which is alſo *Chaos, vel Ouum, vel prima Materia Mundi maioris*) it ſeemeth to agree with that *Cornelius Agrippa* hath written in his ſeconde booke *De Occulta philoſophia, in Scala Vnitatis*, where he wryteth thus: *Lapis philoſophorum eſt vnum ſubiectum et instrumentum omnium virtutum naturalium et tranſnaturalium etc.* And that this greate and diuine ſecreate of this *Microſmos* maye not ſeeme incredible vnto your Honour, I aſſure you that I that am *Minimus Philoſophorum*, dyd long ſenſe (as I haue to wytnesse Mr Thomas Whalley, th[e]elder ſonne of Mr Richard Whalley) woorke a ſecreate practiſe ſumwhat like vnto this, in maner as ſoloweth. I diſſolued two ſubſtances in two waters. Then I put the waters togyther in a glaſſe, ſuffering them ſo to remayne for a tyme. Then I ſtilled off[ſ] the water frome the maſſe or *Chaos* leſte of them bothe. And put it on ageyn. And ſo dyd dyuers tymes. In fine, the maſſe being diſſolued in the water, I let it reſt all night in a coulde place. In the morning, I founde ſwymming on the water and in the myddeſt therof, a little rounde Iland as brode as [a] riall or ſumwhat more, with at the leaſt a hundreth ſyluer trees abowt an ynche high, ſo perfectly formed with trunkes, ſtalkeſ, and leaves, all of moſt pure and glyſtering ſyluer, that I ſuppoſe no lymne[r] or paynter is able to conterfecte the like. Then ſhaking the glaſſe, all fell in pieces into the water, and fille[d] it with glyſtering ſparkes, as the firmament ſhyneth w[ith] ſtarres in a cleare wynter nyght. Then putting the glaſſe to a ſoſte

fyre vppon warme aſhes, all turned agen into cleare water, which agen being put in a colde place all night, made an Iland with the like t ees as before. What this wolde haue byn in fine, god knoweth, and not I. But of this I am ſure, that if the floure of learning of our tyme and ſumtyme Tutor and brother in lawe vnto your Honour Mr [*i.e.*, *Sir John*] Cheeke, had ſeene any of theſe two ſecreates, he wolde greatly haue reioyſed: As I knowe the diuine ſparke of knowlege that is in your Honour partely receaved of hym, will move you to doo the like, fythe to a philoſophicall and vertuous man, there is nothing ſo delectable as to beholde the infinite poure and wyſdome of God in his creatures, in the which, his deitie is not only viſible, but in maner palpable, as ſum philoſophers haue written. And as touching theſe matters, I haue red a maruelous ſentence in an olde written booke where theſe woordes are written: *Qui poteſt facere Mediam naturam, poteſt creare Mundos novos.* But to diſcourſe of this oracle, or to interprete the ſame, it were to muche to moleſt your Honour therewith: and an argument muche meeter for a ſeconde Socrates then for me. And of theſe ſecreates, writeth Roger Bacon in his booke before alleaged, where he hath theſe woordes: *Multa ſunt archana admiranda in operibus artis et naturæ: Quæ licet multam vtilitatem non habeant (habent vero maxim[am] vt ſapientibus cognitum eſt) tamen ſpectaculum ineffabile ſapientiæ præbent et poſſunt applicari ad probationem omnium occultorum quibus vulgus inexpertum contradicit, et indicat fieri per opera Demoniorum, etc.*

And thus moſt humbly deſyring your Honour to pardon my boldneſſe in writing vnto you, and according vnto your accuſtomed clemencie to accept in good parte this my preſumptuous attempte which only the loue I beare to your vertues hath moued me vnto, my truſt is that theſe thinges ſhall not be all togyther vnpleaſant vnto your Honour otherwyſe occupied in greate aſſayres bothe in the courte and common wealthe, as was Plato with King *Dyonisus*, Aristotle with greate Alexander, and Cicero Senator and Conſul of Rome. The eternall God and immortall mover of the greate worlde and the leſſe, preferue your Honour in healthe and proſperitie.

Ffrome the ſholde byfyde Barnet. The firſt of Auguſt. 1562.

Moſt bownde to your Honour.

RICHARDE EDEN.

Tua Dominationi addictus, alios non quero penates.

Sententia Hippocratis.—*In ſecretis et occultis, ſecretus et occultus eſto.*

ENDORSED—Primo Auguſti. 1562. Richard Eden.

Lands. MS. 101, art. 5.

The advancement which Eden ſought, came almoſt immediately after he wrote this letter: but it is ſad to know, that it ultimately ruined him both in health and fortune, and brought him to a premature grave.

We muſt now introduce a celebrated historical perſonage, with whoſe wanderings and trials Eden's life was for the next ten years indiſſolubly identified; and in the narration of which, we ſhall be telling the ſtory of our Author's life during the period he was on the Continent. In doing which, we thankfully acknowledge our obligations to the *Vie de Jean de Ferrières, Vidame de Chartres, Seigneur de Maligny*, by a Member [Count L. de Baſtard] of the Historical and Natural Science Society of the Yonne. 170 copies only of which, were printed at Auxerre in 1858.

A *Vidamé* was originally the principal lay officer of a biſhop. In France, however, only five biſhops had ſuch an officer, viz., thoſe of Rheims, Amiens, Mans, Laon, and Chartres; together with certain Abbeys. In proceſſe of time, however, it became a mere hereditary title; dependent for its renown on the perſon who held it and the wealth whereof he was poſſeſſed.

JEAN DE FERRIÈRES, diſinherited by his father, François de Ferrières, in 1540; became Seigneur de Maligny in 1544; went to Rome in the embaſſy of M. de Urſe in 1549; accompanied the then Vidame, François de Vendome, to the relief of the Siege of Metz in 1553; and went to Piedmont in 1557. François de Vendome having died on 22d December 1560: the Seigneur of Maligny then became Vidame of Chartres; and thereby immenſely rich, if he could have enjoyed his own in peace. But not daring to adminiſter to his vaſt eſtate in perſon, for fear of attracting the attention of his enemies to it: his ſiſter Beraude, by ſecret agreement with him, preſented herſelf as the ſole heir to François de Vendome.

On the breaking out of the Civil Wars, Condé ſent the new Vidame (whoſe riches gave him great influence among the Proteſtant party) over to England, with the Seigneur de Saint Aubin, to induce Elizabeth to join

in so holy and just a quarrel. Being joined by La Haye, they finally arrived in England about 15th August 1562; and after many secret conferences, the Treaty of Hampton Court was signed by them, on 20th September following. *Co't. MS. Cal. E. v. f. 113*, is a copy of this Treaty bearing the signature of the Vidame.

At this moment, Eden, who was an excellent linguist, entered the service of the Vidame. Time pressed. 3000 men under Sir Adrian Poynings, and with them the Vidame and Eden, left Portsmouth on 2d October, and wore in Havre on the 4th: the majority of them to be killed, or die of the plague by the 29th of July following, when Havre was surrendered to the French. Such as survived brought with them to England, the plague which they had there caught.

In the meantime, the Civil Wars had been stopped by the Edict of the Pacification of Ambois on 19th March 1563.

All the goods of the Vidame were pronounced confiscated, under pretence that he had brought the English into Havre. The French Court, while in progress after the Pacification, reached Troyes on the 23d March 1564; when the Vidame [and Eden] joined on the 8th April the Prince de Condé there, and received a simulated welcome from Charles IX. and Catherine de Medecis. Leaving the Court at Vitry on 27th April, he rejoined Condé, at Paris; where he appears to have chiefly resided for the next two or three years.

Eden states below, and at *p. xlvi.*, that he had been in Germany, and, among other places, at Strasburg. He probably accompanied the Vidame there.

A fresh rising of the Protestants occurred on 27th September 1567, when they nearly captured by a *coup de main* the entire French Court. Then came the Battle of St. Denis on 10th November, and the Pacification of Longjumeau on the 23d March 1568.

The Vidame and his newly married wife (Francoise Joubert, widow of Ch. Chabot) and suite [including, it is presumed, Eden] arrived on the Cornish coast, on 28th April 1569; and after some delay, were allowed to come to London. The Vidame was received by the Queen, on 18th July, at Greenwich. On the 23d September 1569, he was burnt in effigy, for the second time within a year, on the *Place de Grève*, at Paris, by an arrêt of the French Parliament.

In consequence of the Peace of St. Germain; the Vidame, after about a year's stay in England, returned in October 1570, by Dieppe, to Paris: where some of his servants being attacked in the street, he retires to Boubige, in Poitou. In February 1572, he was at La Ferté, on private affairs.

Soon afterwards he returned to Paris; where he found all the chiefs of the Huguenot party lulled into a belief of perfect safety, through their trust in the King's word. He, however, did not trust the Court, and would not reside in the city, but in the Faubourg of St. Germain. When questioned for the reason of this; he replied 'that the air of the Faubourgs was better than that of the City, and that of the fields better than that of the Faubourgs.'

Maurevert, the assassin of the Count de Mouy, attempted the assassination of Admiral Coligny; but fails to kill him. Charles IX. had hardly left the wounded Huguenot chief; when the Vidame called on him, and let loose his indignation at the dastard cowardice of the act.

On the next day, Saturday, 23d August, at a meeting of the Protestant chiefs at Coligny's house, the Vidame urged that the Admiral should be conveyed out of Paris; and that the Protestants should quit the city: but he was overruled.

That night, occurred the MASSACRE OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW, commencing on the right bank of the Seine. The Vidame, his brother-in-law Jean de la Fin, and ten others [including probably Eden], who were living on the left bank of the river—warned by the firing—escaped for their lives, riding first to La Ferté. Hearing, however, that the Duke de Guise had sent the Sieur de St. Leger to take them: they hurriedly left the Chateau, and—after some wandering up and down the country—managed to reach the coast; where they found a ship, which carried them safely to England. The Vidame arrived in London on 7th September 1573.

1573. Sept. The Vidame, in a very flowery letter, solicits of the Queen, that Richard Eden, who had given him good and faithful companionship for the space of ten years, may be admitted one of the poor knights of Windsor. He also refers to his erudition, and the experience he had acquired in the secrets of Nature. He further encloses the three following *autographic* memoranda; by the side of which, we have put an English translation:—

I.

Si placeat suæ Maiestati concedere Richardo Eden proximam vocationem Militum illorum, qui Winsori Milites Oratorij vocantur, à Rege Henrico 8^o fundati.

If it may please Her Majesty to grant to Richard Eden the next vacant place among the Knights, who are called the Knights of the Oratory of Windsor, founded by King Henry VIII.

II.

Richardus Eden natione Anglus, ex honesta familia natus in agro Herfordensi, ubi adhuc sororem habet viventem, suæ Maiestati bene cognitam, nempe uxorem equestris ordinis viri Iohannis Butleri de Lamer: A pueritia educatus in bonis literis, studuit in Achademia Cantabrigiensi decem annis sub tutore doctissimo viro, domino Thoma Smyth, nunc Secretario suæ Maiestati, qui de eius eruditione et morum integritate satis testari potest.

Richard Eden, an Englishman, born of a respectable family in Herefordshire,—where he still has a sister living, well known to Her Majesty, being the wife of a knight, John Butler of Lamer,—was well educated as a boy, studied at Cambridge for ten years under that most learned man, Sir Thomas Smyth, now Her Majesty's Secretary [of State], who can testify to his erudition and blameless character.

Deinde a serenissimo Rege Henrico Octavo ab achademia vocatus, ipsius Regis mandato, in Ærario officium obtinuit, ubi usque ad mortem Regis, hoc est duobus annis, permansit; qui etiam moriens illius non immemor assignavit illi domus distillatorii officium. Quod tamen Rege mortuo Sumerseti Dux illi concessit qui nunc fruitur.

Afterwards, being summoned from the University by the most serene King Henry VIII., he held, by his order, an office in the Treasury, where he remained for two years until the King's death; who, when dying, did not forget him, but assigned to him the office of the distillery. After the King's death, the Duke of Somerset granted the office to the present holder.

Postea uxorem duxit, ex qua in xiiij. annis xij. infantes generavit, ut vel hac ratione videatur de patria bene meritus.

Afterwards he married, and in fourteen years begot twelve children, so that for this reason also he seems to deserve well of his country.

Qui etiam tempore aliquot Reipublicæ utiles libros ex sermone Latino Italico Hispanico traduxit, qui typis impressi extant, ut *Decades de Novo Orbe*, liber iusti voluminus, vizt. 600 foliorum; ac deinde librum de Arte Navigandi a Martino Cortesio in lingua Hispanica ad Carolum V. scriptum; insuper ex Pyrotechnia Italica multa de rebus metallicis, quæ antea in nostra lingua extitere.

At this time he translated from the Latin, Italian, and Spanish several books useful to the State, which are still in print, as *Decades de Novo Orbe*, a book of good size, viz. six hundred folios; and a book *De Arte Navigandi*, written by Martin Cortes to Charles V. in Spanish; and in addition many pertions of *Pyrotechnia Italica* concerning metals; which did not exist before in our language.

Tempore vero Mariæ Reginae Hispanorum quorundam nobilium fauore, denuo in Regis Philippi Ærarium electus: hereseos apud Wintoniense Episcopum accusatus a Watstone Lincolnensi Episcopo, officio privatus est.

In the time of Queen Mary, he was again placed in the Treasury of King Phillip, through the favour of certain Spanish nobles: but being accused of heresy before [Gardiner] the Bishop of Winchester by Watson, Bishop of Lincoln; he was deprived of his office.

Mortua vero uxore, illius fama ad illustrissimi Domini Vidami aures pervenit. Cum quo, quomodo his x. annis et amplius in Germania et Gallia vixerit in utraque fortuna, nec mercenarius nec desertor, et semper illi charissimus, ipsemet Dominus Vidamus pro sua humanitate, veritate testimonium feret. A quo etiam multis amplissimis muneribus donatus, si tamen non ditatus nulla profecto illustrissimi Domini incuria vel

After the death of his wife, his repute came to the ears of the most illustrious Lord the Vidame. How he lived [with him] for ten years and more in Germany and France, with varying fortune, neither a mercenary nor a deserter, and always most dear to him; the Lord Vidame himself will kindly bear witness. From whom also he received many large gifts. And assuredly it is not through carelessness or oblivion on

oblivio in causa fuit, sed sola volubilis et nouerca fortuna culpa.

Nunc vero, senio affectus, et corporis infirmitate, cogitur peregrinandi finem facere; nihil magis habens in votis quam ut suae Maiestatis gratia et favore, possit tandem in patria honestis studiis et Reipublicae utilibus vitam finire. Nulla vero magnarum divitiarum, aut honoris ambitione flagrans solam vitam tranquillam et studiis commodam exoptat.

Deus optimus maximus suam Celsitudinem semper seruet incolumen.

the part of his illustrious Lord, but only in consequence of changeful and adverse fortune; that he was not enriched.

Now affected by age and bodily infirmity, he is obliged to make an end of wandering; desiring nothing more than, by Her Majesty's favour, to end his life in his own country, in honourable studies, and useful to the State. He has no ambition for great riches or honour; but only desires a quiet life, suitable for study.

May God ever preserve Her Majesty.

III.

Quandoquidem maxima pars hominum non est semper melior pars, sed reperiuntur quamplures Ardeliones quibus nihil est magis gratum quam ex quavis leuissima occasione bonos viros calumniari. Ideoque ut agni a luporum faucibus in tuto vivant, necessum erit ut leonis animalium regis, hoc est, Regia autoritate tueantur.

Quis enim nunc in Anglia potest Paracelsi admiranda medicamenta ex metallis et mineralibus componere (quæ cum Alchimia aliquo modo symbolizantur) nisi statim ab ignaris et calumniatoribus Alchimie legibus prohibita infamiam et periculum incurrat. Cui malo obuiando Principis diplomata opus erit. Nec dubito quin quum Brocardo multisque aliis peregrinis libere permittitur exercere. Idem mihi æquiori iudicio Principis autoritate concedatur.

There were thirteen poor knights of Windsor, whose annual allowance was paid by the Dean of Windsor. It consisted of £18:5s. in money; a gown or coat of red cloth; and a blue or purple cloth mantle with the badge of St. George embroidered on the left sleeve. Eden's application does not appear to have been successful.—See Tighe and Davis, *Annals of Windsor*, i. 223. Ed. 1858.

1573. Sir W. Winter is knighted this year.—See Sylvanus Morgan's *Sphere of Gentry*, Book 3, p. 14, Ed. 1661.

1574. Win-teride. Eden writes the following dedication to Sir W. Winter of his translation of John Taisner's book *De natura magnæ, &c.*, which he designed as a complement to a new edition of his previous translation of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Navigar*. Though written at this time, it did not appear in print for four or five years afterwards, in consequence of the successive deaths of Eden, Richard Jugge the printer, and his son John Jugge.

The most important allusion in it is the account of Sebastian Cabot's death, the only one on record.

A very necessarie and profitable Booke concerninge Nauigation, compiled in Latin by *Ioannes Taisnerus*, a publike professer in Rome, Ferrara, and other Vniuersities in Italie of the Mathematicales, named a treatise *Of continuall motions*. Translated into English, by Richarde Eden.

Imprinted at London by Richarde Jugge.

To the ryght woorshipfull Syr Wylliam Wynter, Knyght, Maister of the Ordinaunce of the Queenes Maiesties Shippes, and Surveyor of the sayd Shippes, Richarde Eden wyssheth health and prosperitie.



It is nowe about twelue yeeres paste (gentle Maister Wynter) since the curtesie and fauour which long before I founde at your hande, moued me no lesse for the good wyll that I haue euer borne you and your vertues, to excogitate or deuise somethyng, within the compasse of my poore abilitie, that myght be a witnesse, and as it were a seale, to testifie both that I haue not forgotten your gentleness, and also how desyrous I am to pay the debtes of frendshyp which then I promised you, and also attempted to performe: But beyng at that tyme preuented, by meanes of my fodayne departyng out of Englande, with my good Lorde the *Vidame*, with whom I remayned for the space of ten yeeres, vntyll the calamities of that miserable cuntry, with losse of goods, and danger of lyfe, hath dryuen me home agayne into my natiue cuntry: Where syndyng my selfe at some leysure, and desyrous to passe forth parte of my tyme in some honest exercise, which myght be profytable to many, domagable to none, and a meanes to geat me newe frendes, the olde in my so long absence, in maner vtterly wasted: I chaunced in the meane tyme, to meete with my olde acquayntance and freend, Richard Iugge, Printer to the Queenes Maieftie, who had many yeeres before, printed the Booke of *Marten Curtes*, of the Art of Nauigation, by me translated out of Spanyshe tongue. Whercof, hauyng with him some conference, he declared that he woulde prynt that booke agayne, yf I woulde take the paynes to deuise some addition touchyng the same matter, that myght be ioyned thereto. At whiche tyme, hauyng with me in the Latine tongue, these books here folowyng printed, whiche I brought with me out of Fraunce, I foone agreed to his honest request, to translate them into Englyshe: Whiche beyng accomplyshed, this onely remayned, accordyng to the common custome, to consecrate and dedicate the same to some worthie personage, whose fame, aucthoritie, and dignitie, myght defende them from the euyll tongues of such as are more redie rather to reprooue other mens dooynges, then to doo any good them selues. And therefore (gentle Maister Wynter) knowing your auctoritie and fame in well deseruyng, and honorable seruice vnto your Prince and Countrey, to be fuche as all men thynke so well of, and so greatlye esteeme, to whom (rather then to you) may I dedicate this booke of Nauigation? In conyderation whereof, and the hope that I haue in your approoued curtesie, fauourably to accept this dedication, as proceed[ing] from one that desyreth nothyng more then to doo you seruice, and remayne in your grace, I shall thynke my trauayle wel bestowed, and sufficiently recompenced, yf it shall please you to accept the same as thankfully, as I wyllingly offer it vnto you.

For yf there be any thyng in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of singuler vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof I mee selfe haue litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and fuche lyke: Of the whiche, this our age maye seeme not onely to contende with the Auncientes, but also in many goodly inuentions of Art and wyt, farre to exceede them. For (not to speake agaynst all the marueylous inuentions of our tyme) what of theirs is to be compared to the Artes of Printyng, makyng of Gunnes, Fyre woorkes, of fundry kyndes of artificial Fyres, of fuche marueylous force, that mountaynes of moste harde rockes and stonnes, are not able to refyst their violence, but are by them broken in peeces, and throwen into the ayre with fuche violence, that neyther the spirite of *Demogorgon*, or the thunderboltes of infernal *Pluto* can doo the lyke. What shoulde I here speake of the woonderfull inuentions of *Fartalio*, in his booke *De Arte maiori*? or of many other, whereof *Vannucius Beringocius* wryteth in his booke, entituled, *Pyrotechnia*. As touchyng which terrible inuentions, and the lyke, although some men be of opinion that they were inuented by the instigation of the deuyll, for the destruction of mankynde: yet other weyghyng the matter more indifferently thynke that the inuention of Gunnes hath ben the fauyng of many mens lynes, becaufe before the vse of them, men were not woont so long tyme to lye batteryng in the besiegyng of Townes or Fortresses, but in short space to come to hande strokes, and to foughten feeldes, to the great slaughter of great multitudes. And feeyng that nowe our enimies the Turkes, and

other Infidels, haue the vse of these deuilythe inuentions (as they name them) it may be thought requisite for vs, agaynst suche deuylles to vse also the lyke deuilythe inuentions, lest refusing the same, and geuyng place to euyl, we shoulde wyllyngly suffer the kyngdome of the deuyl to triumphe ouer vs, not otherwyse able to resyst, and much lesse to ouercome so puissant and horrible enimies (except besyde al hope) myght aryse in our defence some newe Moyfes, or Elias, or the Priestes of Iericho, whiche onely with the noyse and founde of Hornes or Trumpettes ouerthrewe the walles of the towne. Neyther wyl the example of Daud and Goliath, or of Samson and the Philistines, serue our turne at this tyme, although I beleue that the arme of the Lorde is not weakened, yf there lacked not a Moyfes with his rodde, and woorthie Assistentes, which myght helpe to holde vp his weerye arme.

But to returne to speake of ingens, and ingenious inuentions, whiche inuented and vsed to the glorie of God, and defence of his people, against the furie and tyrannie of Infidelles, they may as woorthly be called the gyftes of God, as were the inuentions and Art of them that buylded eyther the Temple of Hierusalem, or the Arke of God: And

Exod. xxxv. yet is it there wrytten of those Artificers, that God gaue Bezaleel and them the spirite of knowledge and cunning in suche Artes. Ahaliab.

And therefore I thynke it may also be fayde without offence, that the knowledge of *Archimedes*, and other men in suche commendable inuentions, are the gyftes of God, for as muche as the gyftes of God are free, and not bounde to any nation or person.

And yf it may be graunted that the spirites of men, or the spirite of God in men, may be diuided (as was the spirite of Moyfes to twelue other) or otherwyse that the spirites of dead men may reuiue in other (after the opinion and transanimation of *Pythagoras*) we may thynke that the soule of *Archimedes* was reuiued in *Besson*, that excellent Geometer of our tyme, whom I knewe in Fraunce the Maister of the engins to the Frenche kyng, Charles the nienth, vnder whom that lamentable slaughter at Paris was committed, in the whiche were slayne so many noble men. Whiche crueltie the fayde *Besson* abhorryng, fled hyther into England, and here dyed, in the yeere. 1573. and left in witnesse of his excellencie in that Art, a booke in prynt, conteynyng the fourmes or portractes of fyxtie engins of marueylous strange and profytable deuce, for diuers commodious and necessary vses. Of the whiche, for as muche as three of them, that is to meane, the 54. 57. and 60. be engines cheefely parteynyng vnto Shyppes, it shall not be from my purpose here to make a breefe rehearal of them.

The. 54. therefore (as he wryteth) is an engin not vnylike vnto that whiche in auncient tyme *Archimedes* inuented for the *Syracusians*, wherewith a man with the strength of onely one hande, by helpe of the instrument called *Trispaston* (which in our tongue some cal an endless Scree), brought a Shyp of marueylous greatnesse from the lande into the sea, in the fyght of kyng *Hieron*, and an infinite multitude, whiche with all their force coulde not doo the same. &c. Of the which also, our countrey man, Roger Bacon, a great Philosopher (and no Nicromancer, as that ignorant age flandered him) seemed to haue had some knowledge: For in his booke of the marueylous power of Art and Nature, he maketh

mention of an Instrument (as farre as I remember) no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith one man myght drawe to hym the strength of three hundred men. And I well remember, that at my beyng in Fraunce, I hearde credible

reporte, that the Earle of *Rocumdoise*, an Almaine, made an engin, wherewith the fayde kyng Charles when he was but. xvi. yeeres of age, lysted from the grounde a weyght, whiche the strongest man in the courte was not able to remooue. Almoste the lyke deuce we vse in the bendyng of a Crossebowe. Also at my being in Germanie in the cite of *Strofburge*, a woorthy and learned Gentleman, *Monsieur de Saleno*, tolde me that in that cite one had inuented an engin of iron, no bygger then a mans hande, wherewith to fastenyng a rope, with a hooke of iron, and castyng the hooke vpon a wal, tree, or other place, where it myght take holde, he coulde with that engin lyft hym selfe vp to the wal, or other place. But to returne to the other two engines of *Besson*, parteynyng to our purpose. Therefore the. 60. figure (as he there wryteth) is the inuention of an engin, scarily credible, wherewith by ballance and easie motion, beyond the order of nature, a Shyp may be so framed and gouerned, that in the calme sea it shall moue forward, and in litle wynde hasten the course, and in too much

wynde temper and moderate the same: A thyng woorth the knowledge to a kyng, as he sayeth. Of the thyrd engin, which is the. 57. figure of his booke, he wryteth thus. An Artifice not yet diuulgate or set forth, whiche placed in the pompe of a Shyp, whyther the water hath recourse, and moued by the motion of the Shyp, with wheelles and weyghtes, dooth exactly shewe what space the Shyp hath gone. &c. By whiche description, some doo vnderstand that the knowledge of the longitude myght so be founde, a thyng doubtlesse greatly to be desyred, and hytherto not certaynly knowen, although *Sebastian Cabot* on his death bed told me that he had the knowledge thereof by diuine reuelation, yet so, that he myght not teache any man. But I thinke that the good olde man, in that extreme age, somewhat doted, and had not yet euen in the article of death, vterly shaken of all worldlye vayne glorie.

As touchyng whiche knowledge of the longitude, to rehearse the saying of that excellent learned man, *Iohannes Fernelius*, in his incomparable booke *De abditis rerum causis*, where in the Preface to King Henrie of Fraunce, he writeth in this maner. We haue put our helpyng hande to the Arte of Nauigation and Geographic: forby obseruation of the houres of the Equinoctialles, we haue inuented howe, in what so euer region or place of the worlde a man shalbe, he may knowe in what longitude it is: which certaynly we haue not taken of the fountaynes of the auncientes, but fyrste, of all other (as I thynke) haue drawn it of our ryuers, as our owne inuention. &c. So that (saith he) whiche way so euer you turne your eyes, you may se that the posteritie hath not ryotously wasted the inheritance of Artes and sciences, lest them by their predecessors, but haue greatly encreased the same, and inuented other: For certaynly, the multitude of thynges incomprehensible, is infinite, and so therefore inuentions must needes also be infinite, and without ende. And therefore, as touchyng this thing (saith he) to speake freely what I thynke, they seeme to me to offende as muche, whiche contende that the auncientes haue inuented and comprehended al thynges, as doo they whiche attribute not vnto them the fyrst inuentions, so depyruyng them of theyr right possession. For whereas now by the benefite of almighty God (who hath geuen vs his Christe, and with hym all good thynges) the lyght of trueth shyneth in our vnderstandyng by godly inspiration, there is no iust cause why we shoulde in suche thynges thinke vs inferior to the auncientes. Of which Argument, who lysteth may reade more in the fayde Epistle of *Fernelius*.

And for as much as I haue made mention of such inuentions, it shal not be from the purpose, to describe the goodly instrument wherof *Angelus Policianus* in the fourth booke of Epistles to *Fran-*
ciscus Casa, wryteth in this manner, I haue receyued your
 Epistle, wherein you signifie vnto me, that you haue hearde
 of the strange engine or instrument *Automaton* inuented, and
 made of late by one Laurence a Florentine: in the which is

An instrument
 in motion agree-
 yng with the
 motion of
 heauen.
 Anno Domo.
 1584.

expressed the course and motions of the Planettes, conformable and agreeyng with the motions of heauen: And that (for as muche as the reporte thereof is hardly beleueed) you greatly desyre that I should wryte vnto you, what certayne knowledge I haue of that thing, wherein I am redie to obey your request. And although nowe it be long since I sawe it, yet as farre as I beare in memorie, I wyll breiefely declare the fourme, reason, and vse thereof. And yf the description of it shal seeme vnto you somewhat obscure, you shall not ascribe it altogether to my declaration, but partly to the subtiltie and noultie of the thyng. It is in fourme of a square pyller, sharpe toward the top, in maner of a *Pyramis*, of the height of almost three cubites: ouer and aboue it, in maner of a couer, is a flat or playne rounde plate of gylted copper, garnished with fundry colours, on whose other part is expressed the whole course of the Planets, and whose dimation or measure is somewhat shorter then a cubite, and is within turned or moued with certayne litle denticle wheelles, an immouable circle comprehendyng the hyghest border or margent, and diuided with the spaces of xxiiii. houres within it, in the hyghest turnyng rundel, the twelue signes are discerned by three degrees. Further, within are feene eyght rundels, in maner all of one greatnesse. Of these, two obteyne the myddle poynt, the one fastened in the other, so that the lowest beyng somewhat bygger, representeth the Sunne, and the hygher the Moone. From the Sunne a beame comyng to the circle, sheweth in it the houres: and in the Zodiacke, the monethes, dayes and number of degrees, and also the true and halfe motion of the Sunne. From the Moone also procedeth a pynne, or wyre, whiche beneathe or downward in the border or margent of the

greatest rundell, sheweth the houres : and passing by the center of the Epicycle of the Moone, and extending to the Zodiacke, sheweth the halfe motion of his Planet. Another also ryfing from thence, and cutting the border of the center of the Moone (that is of the Epicycle) sheweth her true place, whereby are scene the slownesse, swyftnesse, al motions and courses, coniunctions also, and ful Moones. About these are fyxe other rundels : of the whiche, one, whom they calle the head and tayle of the Dragon, sheweth the Eclipses both of the Sunne and Moone. The other are attributed to the Planets : from euery of whiche, proceede two poyntes, assignyng the motions (as we haue sayd) of the Moone : but they also goe backwarde, whiche chaunceth not in the Moone, whose Eclypse is moued contrarywyse. And thus the reason of coniunctions, departynges, and latitudes, is manifest in all. There is also an other border lyke vnto a Zodiacke, cutting or diuidyng vpwarde or aboue, those fyxe litle rundels (whereof we haue spoken) being the rundels of the Planettes : whereby appeareth the degrees of the East signes, and the spaces of the dayes (that is to say) at what houre the Sunne riseth, by the whiche, euery of the Planettes are carried in their rundels or circles by course, in the day tyme to the East, and in the nyght to the West. Agayne contrarywyse, the greatest rundel of al, draweth with it al the Planettes, in the nyght to the East, and in the day to the West, in the space of. 24. houres. Az which, to agree with the motions of heauen, both reason and experience doo confyrme. And therefore ought ye not to marueyle, yf these thynges seeme incredible to many. For (as sayth the wyse Prouerbe) sayth is slowlye geuen to great thynges, for euen we scarcely beleue our owne eyes, when we see suche thynges. And therefore, whereas in tyme past I read, that suche a lyke instrument was made by *Archimedes*, my faith yet sayled me to geue credite to so great an Authour, which thyng neuerthelesse this our Florentine hath performed. The worke doubtlesse beyng of such excellence, that all prayse is inferior to it, and can not therefore for the woorthynesse thereof be otherwyse praised, then to say that it passeth all prayse. The Artificer him selfe also being a man of such integritie of maners, that the funne is nothing inferior to the excellencie of his wyt : in so much that he may seeme a man sent from heauen, where he learned the making of this heauen, by the example of the other. Hytherto *Policianus*. Of the lyke instrument, Roger Bacon also maketh mention in his fayde booke, of the maruellous power of Art and Nature, affyrmyng the fame to be woorth a kyngdome to a wyse man.

But for as muche as the subiect whiche I haue nowe in hande, is cheefely touchyng inuentions parteinyng to Shyppes, and the Art of Nauigation, I thynke good to speake somewhat of the inuention of a certayne Italian wyter, named *Leonardo Fiorauanti*, who in his booke, entitled Lib. 3. Ca. 18. *Specchio de seientia vniuersale*, doeth greatly glory in the inuention of Shyppes, whiche can not peryshe eyther on the sea, or the lande, affyrmyng that the lyke was neuer inuented since the creation of the worlde. But I feare me, lest vayne glorie of discourfyng in the Italian tongue, hath caused him more then needes, to commende his owne inuention, as for the moeste parte is the maner of the Italian writers. Therefore committing the iudgement hereof to men of greater experience and knowledge in these thynges, I wyl onely translate his woordes, whereby in the booke before named, he describeth the fayde Shyppe in this maner. Take beames of Fyre, or Pyne tree, which of their owne nature can neuer goe downe, or syncke, or abyde vnder the water, and with these beames forme an engine (*Machina*, yf I may so call it) of the length of three score foote, and of the breadth of twentie foote, and of the heygth of fyxe foote, laying the fyrste ranke in length, and the other trauerse, or ouerthwarte, and the thyrde againe in length, fashionyng the fore parte lyke vnto other Shyppes, and in lyke manner, bryngyng the poupe or hynder parte to good forme : then with such irons as apparteyne, bynde it, and strengthen it in suche maner that it can not breake. And vpon this frame or fundation buylde your Shyppe, of suche fashon as you thynke best. &c. It were here too long to rehearse with what proude woordes and ostentation he magnifieth this inuention. But whether this frame or engine shoulde be bylden vpon the keele or bottome of the Shyp, or otherwyse, I commit it to them of better iudgement, as I haue fayde.

But wheras it may for this tyme suffise to haue wrytten thus muche of these thynges, I wyl make an ende with onely a breefe rehearse of the inuention and encrease of the Art of Nauigation. After that the Art of Nauigation was founde, euery man began to chalenge vnto hym the

dominion of the sea, and there to dwel and kepe warre euen as on the land. *Minos* (as wryteth *Strabo*) was the fyrst that ruled on the sea, whiche neuerthelesse, other ascribe to *Neptunus*, who fyrst founde the Art of Nauigation, and was therefore (as wryteth *Diodorus*) appoynted by *Saturnus* to be Admiral of the fyrste Nauie : and thereby the posteritie afterwarde ascribed to him the gouernaunce of the sea, and named him the God thereof. After whom the *Cretenfes* euer were esteemed most expert in the Art of Nauigation. But (as wryteth *Plinie*) boates were fyrst inuented, and with them was the fyrste faylyng in the Ilandes of the redde sea, vnder kyng *Erythra*, as also witnesseth *Quintilian*, saying, If none had proceeded further then the inuentions of our predeceffors, we had had nothyng in the Poets aboute *Andronicus*, and nothing in histories aboute the *Annales* or Cronicles of Byffhoppes, and had yet haue sayled in troughes or in boates. Other haue ascribed this inuention to diuers other nations and persons, as to the Troians and Mysians in *Hellefponto*, and also that the ancient Britanes made boates of leather or hydes, and sayled with them in the Ocean sea. *Plinie* wryteth, that *Danaus* was the fyrst that brought a Shyppe out of Grece into Egypt. Some also geue the fame to *Minerua*. But most ryghtfully, the inuention both of the Shyp, and Art of Nauigation, is ascribed to Noe, who (as wryteth *Eusebus*) was longe before *Neptune* or *Danaus*. For doubtlesse (sayth he) the Arke of Noe was none other then a Shyp, and the fyrste and onely exemplar of the buyldyng of all other Shyppes or vesselles of faylyng. Also the moeste ancient wyter *Berosus* the Chaldean (as wryteth *Iosephus*) calleth the Arke of Noe, a Shyp. The fame *Iosephus* also sayth, that the Nephues of Noe, departyng to inhabite diuers partes of the worlde, vsed many Shyppes. &c. Long after Noe, the *Tyrians* were counted most expert in the Arte of Nauigation : and after them, diuers other nations. For whereas no Art is so perfect, but may receaue encrease, hereof doth it folowe, that this Art also hath been greatly augmented, and brought to further perfection by witty inuentions of the posteritie, euen vnto our age : whereof, who so lysteth to know further more particularly who inuented all other partes and instrumentes parteinyng to al fortes of Shyppes, and Art of Nauigation, may read ye thyrde booke of *Polidor Virgil*, Cap. xv. *De Inuentorib. Rer.* and *Baysius, de re nauali*.

Thus gentle Maister Wynter, beseechyng your woorthynesse to take in good part this testimonie of my thankfull hart (suche as it is) I beseeche the immortall God to prosper all your doo-inges to his honor, and the benefite of your Countrey.

1576. The last work which it was permitted to Eden to undertake, was an English translation from a Latin version of Ludovico Barthe'ma's *Travels in the East in 1503*, which was posthumously printed by R. Willes, the next year. He was also endeavouring to collect the Reports of the Agents of the Moscovy Company, which form so important a part of Hakluyt's Collection ; when death exchanged his earthly life of troubles and labours, for, we can but think, the blessed peace of heavenly rest.

I am indebted to my friend the late Mr. C. Bridger, Hon. Mem. of the Soc. of Ant. of Newcastle, for the following note :

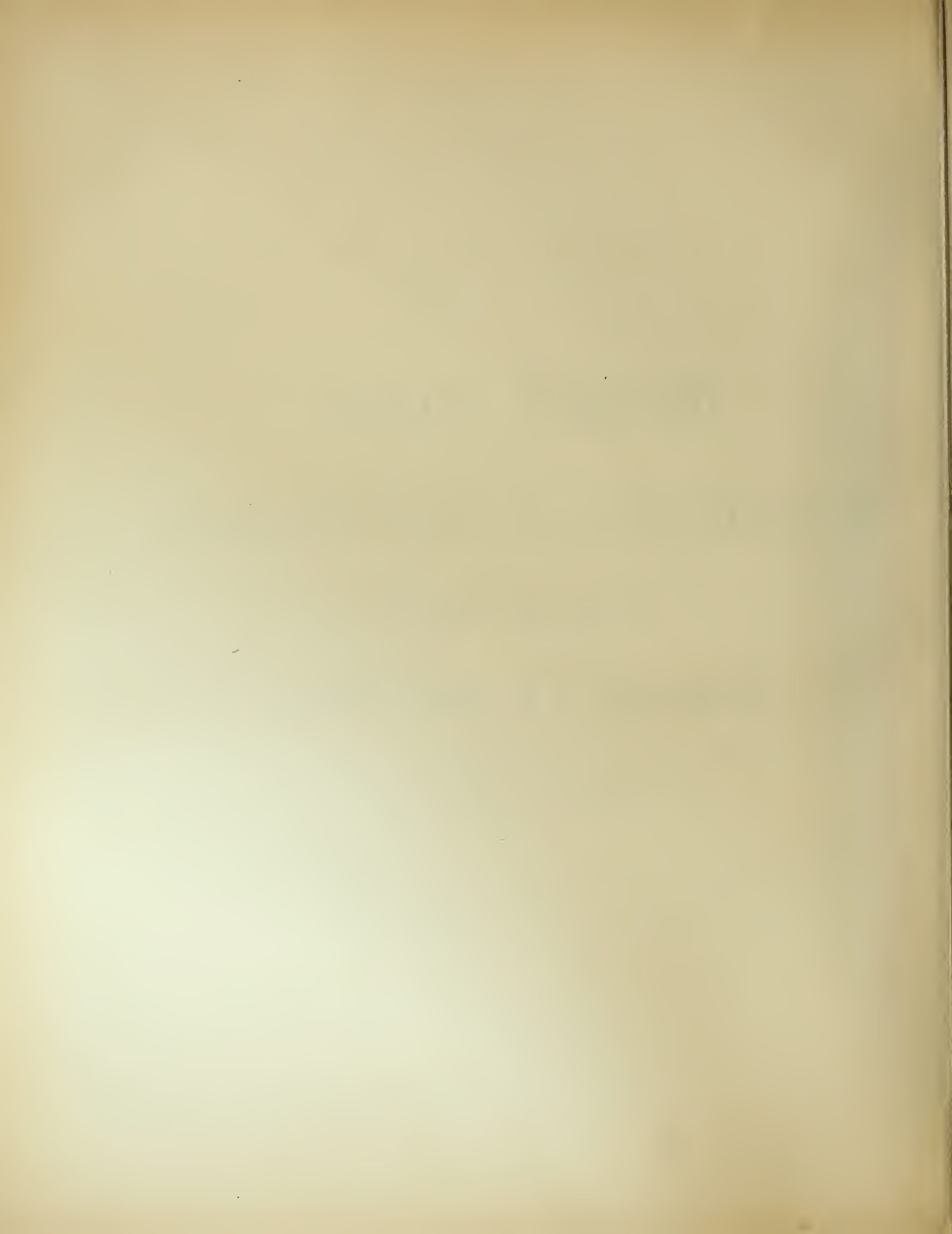
1576. July 20. Letters of Administration were granted, in the Pre-rogative Court of Canterbury, to the estate of Richard Eden, of the parish of St Dunstan's in the East, (the same parish in which Sir John Hawkins lived), in favour of Alban Eden, his son.

1577. Summer. R. Willis published a second and altered edition of the Third Work here reprinted, under the title of *The History of Trauayle in the West and East Indies, &c.*

1586. April. It would appear from T. A. D'Aubigné's *Histoire Universelle*, iii. book i. c. 3, p. 15, Ed. 1620, that the Vidame, after many wanderings, was captured by one Captain Carles : who (not crediting that a member of so good a family was unable to pay his ransom) suffered this distinguished Nobleman, whom the King of Navarre had called his Uncle, and who was now about sixty-six years ; to die like a dog, while bound to the magazine at the bottom of the hold of his galley. A prisoner so placed would be situated immediately below the planking of the passage which extended between the two rows of galley slaves from the prow to the stern of the galley : and therefore, when the galley was in motion, would ceaselessly suffer from all the noise of the sixty or eighty rowers ; from whom he would be separated, only by the thickness of the planking above his head.

Richard Eden's
Contributions to our Literature,
during the reigns of
Edward VI. and Mary.

1553-1555 A. D.




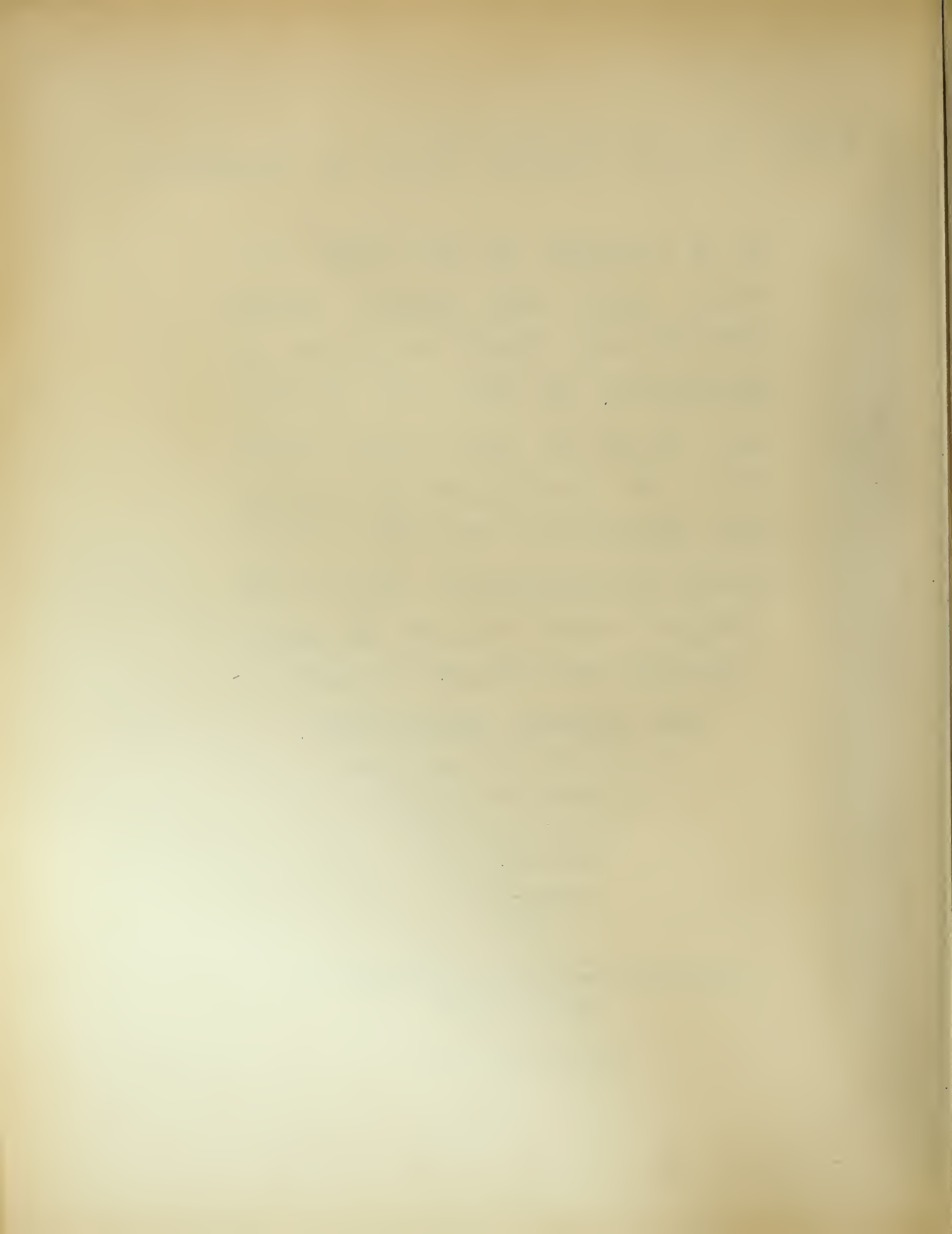
[The Second English book on America.]

A treatyse of the newe *India*,
with other new founde landes
and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as
westwarde, as they are knowen
and found in these oure dayes, ...
after the descripcion of Sebas-
tian Munster in his booke of Uni-
uersall Cosmographie: wherin the
diligent reader may see the good
successe and rewarde of noble
and honeste enterpryses,

by the which not only world-
ly ryches are obtayned,
but also God is glor-
ified, and the Chri-
stian fayth en-
larged.

Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By
Rycharde Eden.

 *Præter spem sub spe.*



¶ TO THE RIGHT HYGHE AND MIGHTY PRINCE,
THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLANDE,
HYS GRACE.



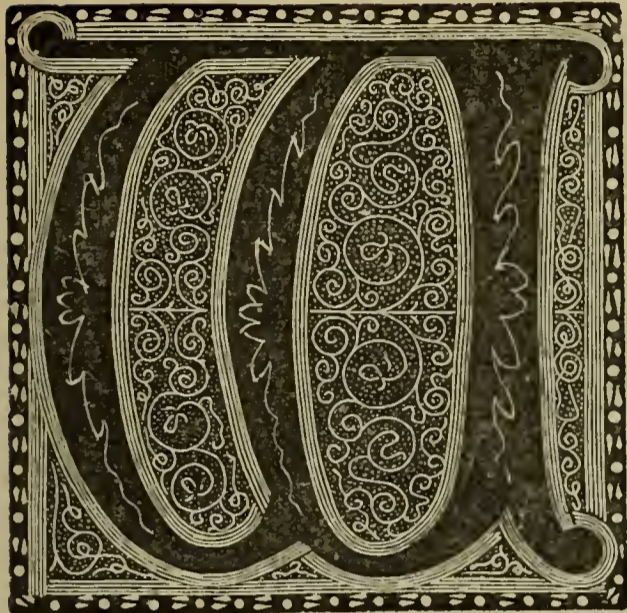
Reade in auncient writers (most noble prince) how that mightie kyng and conquerour of the world, Alexander the great, at such tyme as he beheld ye tombe of fearse Achilles, and therewith called to his remembraunce howe excellently the Poet Homere had set forth his heroical factes, which notwithstanding he thoughte to be muche inferiour vnto his, he sighed and sayde: Oh the most fortunate, which haste founde suche a trompe to magnifi thi doinges, meaning hereby, that the fame of Achilles was no lesse notable to hys posteritie by homers writing, then it was in hys lyfe tyme by hys owne marciall affayres. Wherby we maye perceue such magnanimitie to haue ben in our predicessours, men of

noble and stout courage, yat they thought it not sufficiente in their life time to deserue prayse and honour, except the same might also redounde to theyr posteritie, yat they mighte therby bee encouraged to do the like. Whyche thing truely hath ben ye cause, yat in al ages noble enterprises haue ben commended, and such as haue attempted ye same, haue bene honoured. Wherfore if honest commendacions be a iust reward dew to noble enterprises, so much do they robbe and spoyle from ye dignitie therof, which in any poynt diminishe the fame: no lesse confoundinge the order of thinges, than he whiche cloteth an ape in purple, and a king in sackcloth. This I speake ye rather, beecause there chaunfed of late to come to my handes, a shiete of printed paper, (more worthy so to bee called then a boke) entytuled of the newe founde landes. The whyche tittle when I readde, as one not vtterlye ignoraunt hereof, hauynge before in my tyme readde *Decades*, and also the nauigations *de nouo orbe*, there seemed too me no lesse inequalitye betwene the tittle and the booke, then if a man woulde professe to wryte of Englande, and entreated onelye of Trumpington a vyllage wythin a myle of Cambrydge. Wherfore partelye moued [by] the good affeccion, whyche I haue euer borne to the science of Cosmographie, whyche entreately of the description of the worlde, whereof the newe founde landes are no smal part, and much more by ye good wyll, whych of duetie I beare to my natyue countrey and countreyemen, which haue of late to their great praise (whatsoeuer succede) attempted with new viages to ferche ye seas and newe found landes, I thought it worthy my trauayle, to their better comfort, (as one not otherwise able to further theyr enterpryse) to translate this boke oute of latin into Englishe. The which, albeit it do not so largely or particulerlye entreate of euery part, region or commoditie of ye sayd new found landes, as the worthines of the thing might requyre: yet sure I am that aswel they which set forth or take vpon them this viage, as also they which shal hereafter attempt ye lyke, may in this smal boke as in a little glasse, see some cleare light, not only how to learne by the example, dammage, good successe,

and aduentures of other, how to behaue them felues and direct theyr viage to their most commoditie, but also if dew successe herein shoulde not chaunce according vnto theyr hope and expectation (as oftentimes chanceth in great affaires,) yet not for one foyle or fal, so to be dismayd as with shame and dishonor to leaue wyth losse, but rather to the death to persist in a godly, honeste, and lawful purpose, knowing that whereas one death is dewe to nature, the same is more honourably spent in such attemptes as may be to the glorye of God and commoditie of our countrey, then in soft beddes at home, among the teares and weping of women. Which manlye courage (like vnto that which hath ben seen and proued in your grace, aswell in forene realmes, as also in this oure countrey) yf it had not been wanting in other in these our dayes, at suche time as our souereigne Lord of noble memorie Kinge Henry the. viij. about the same yere of his raygne, furnished and sent forth certen shippes vnder the gouernaunce of Sebastian Cabot yet liuing, and one fyr Thomas Perte, whose faynt heart was the cause that that viage toke none effect, yf (I say) such manlye courage whereof we haue spoken, had not at that tyme bene wanting, it myghte happelye haue comen to passe, that that riche treasurye called *Perularia*, (which is now in Spayne in the cite of Ciuile, and so named, for that in it is kepte the infinite ryches brought thither from the newe found land of *Peru*,) myght longe since haue bene in the towre of London, to the kinges great honoure and welth of this his realme. What riches the Emperoure hath gotten oute of all the newe founde landes, it may wel appeare, wheras onlye in the Ilandes of *Hispana* or *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and other Ilandes there aboute, were gathered in two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of gold as youre grace maye reade in this boke, in the descripcion of the Ilandes. Yet speake I here nothyng of perles, precious stones, and spices. Neyther yet of the greate aboundaunce of golde, whiche is engendred almost in al regions neare vnto the *Equinoctial* line. And whereas I am aduertised yat youre grace haue bene a greate fortherer of thys viage, (as you haue bene euer studious for the commoditie of your countrey,) I thought my trauayl herein coulde no wayes be more worthely bestowed, then to dedicate the same vnto your grace: Most humbly desiringe youre honoure so to accepte mine intente herein, as one whose good will hath not wanted to gratifie your grace with a better thing if mine abilitie were greater. Thus Almighty God preferue your grace in health and honour long to continue.

¶ Your graces poore orator Rychard Eden.

¶ RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



Hereas in this Booke (welbeloued Reader) thou mayest reade many straunge thinges, and in maner incredible, except the fame were proued most certayn by dayly experience, and approued auctoritie, (as shall hereafter appeare) I thought it good for thy better instruction to make this Preface, wherby thou mightest more playnly and sensibly comprehend the reasons and causes, yf not of al, yet of some of the chiefeft thinges, which are conteyned in the fame. Therefore wheras thou shalt reade of the great abundaunce of gold, precious stones and spices, which the Spaniardes and Portugales haue brought from the South partes of the worlde, as from the newe founde landes and Ilandes, the fodeyn straungenes or greatnes of the thing shal not so much amase thy wittes, and gender in thee incrudelitie, yf thou consider the saying of wyse Salomon, who affyrmeth yat there is no new thing vnder the Sunne, and that the thing that hath been, cometh to passe again: which saying doeth greatly confyrme the trueth, of such thinges as are spoken

of in this Boke, wheras the fame perhappes to some men might otherwyse seme in maner incredible, yf the lyke had not been sene in tyme paste, and approued by auctoritie of mooste holy scripture, which declaring the great wysdom, ryches, and noble viages of King Salomon, sayth that God gaue him wysdom and vnderstanding exceding muche, and a large heart, and that he prepared a nauie of shippes, in the porte of *Azion Gaber*, by the brinke of the redde sea, which sayled to *Ophir*, and brought from thence. xxi. score hundreth (which is. xlii.M. [forty-two thousand]) weyght of golde. Agayne, that the weyghte of golde which was broughte to Salomon in one yere, was. vi. hundreth, thre score and. vi. talentes of gold, wheras the Hebrue talente, called *Talente Hebraicum sanctuarij*, was of our sterling money 500. ponde, and *Talent Hebraicum uulgare*, was halfe so much. Lykewyse yat siluer was nothing worth in the dayes of Salomon, and yat he made siluer and gold in Hierusalem as plentious as stones Agayn, that he ouerlayd the house of the Lord with precious stones beautifully, and the gold wherwith he couered it, was golde of *Paruaim*. Also that the kinges nauie of shippes went once in thre yere to *Tharsis*, and brought Gold, Siluer, Apes, Peacockes, and Elephantes teeth. Which wordes surely seme so to confirme such thinges as are spoken of in the nauigacions wherof this boke entreateth, that nothings can make more for the truth of the fame: and briefly to speake of the places whether Salomons shippes sayled for Gold, as *Tharsis* and *Ophir*. This ought to be confydered for a general rule, that nearest vnto the south partes of the world betwene the two Tropikes vnder ye *Equinoctial* or burning lyne, where the sunne is of greatest forse, is the chiefeft place where gold is engendred, although it be sometymes founde in colde regions as in Scotland, in Crayford more, likewyse in Hungary, yet nether pure of it self, nor in great quantitie: the reason whereof is largely declared in the Bookes of George Agric, and Albertus Magnus. And wheras it is written in ye Boke of Kinges in the Actes of Salomon that he prepared his shippes in *Azion Gaber*, beyng by the brinke of the readde sea, and sayled from thence to *Ophir* for Golde, it is apparaunt, that (howfoeuer the names of thinges haue altered and periffhed in tyme) he sayled from thence southwarde towarde the Equinoctial lyne, for asmuche as there is none other passage oute of the narownesse of the readde sea, but onely into the mayne South sea, by the which the Portugales euen at this daye make theyr viage to *Calicut*, *Samotra*, *Madagascar*, and such other Ilandes in the South east partes of the worlde, where Golde, Spyces, Apes, and Elephantes are nowe founde in lyke manner. But as for *Tharsis* beyng a cytye of *Cilicia* in Asia the lesse and the natiue countreye of S. Paule the Apostle, and situate muche more toward the North, then is Iudea, and in maner directlye ouer againste Iudea on the otherfyde of the sea called Mare Mediteraneum, and in the fame clime, in the which standeth the Ilande of Sicilia, and the cytie of Ciuile in Spayne, it hardely agreeth with the principles of Philosophie and common experience, that golde should be there engendred in lyke abundaunce as in Regions more towarde the south, much lesse Elephantes and Apes, which are no where engendred farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne, or beyonde the two Tropikes, nor yet wil engendre yf they be

Nothing new
vnder the Sunne.

3. Reg. 4
3. Reg. 9
3. Re. 10.

2. Par. 1
1 Par. 3.
Tharsis.
Golde Apes
Elephantes.
Salomons
shippes.
Ophir.

Where Gold is
engendred.
Scotland.
Hungary

3. Reg. 9
Azion Gaber.

The *Equinoctial*
line.

Calicut.

Tharsis in
Cilicia.

Sicilia.
Ciuile in Spayne.

Spyces.
 Pepper.
 Orange tree.
 East India.
 Solomon boughte golde of marchauntes.
 The south and southeast.
 Mat. 12.
 3 Reg. x
 1. Par. 9
 The quene of Saba, the quene of the south.
 2 par. 9
 3 Reg. x
 Saba in Ethiopia vnder Egipt.
 Saba in Arabia.
 The quene of Saba came from the Iland of Meroe.
 From Rome to England.
 The viage of our men to cathay Norway, Lappia, Finmarchia.
 Globes and mappes.
 Ptolomeus.
 America.
 The strayghtes of Magellanus.
 The Ilandes of Molucca.
 Passage by the north sea into the East.
 Pius secundus. lib. i. Capit. ii.
 Note wel the passage by ye North sea.
 Augustus th[e]mperour Cimbria.
 Caspia.
 The warres of ye Macedonians

broughte into those partes of the world. The lyke is to be vnderstande of Poppingiayes and spyces, and dyuers other beastes, frutes, and trees, which are engendered in certayne climes of the worlde, and wyll not prospere in other places: the reason wherof were here to longe [to] declare. For lyke as pepper wyll not growe in Spayne, no more wyll the Orange tree bringe fourth fruite in Englande. Wherefore, it may seme by good reason, that the Golde, Apes, and Elephantes teeth which were broughte from *Tharsis* (yf it were *Tharsis of Cilicia*) were not engendered there, but rather brought thether by merchauntes from the fourth partes of the world, out of Mauritania, Marmarica, Ethiopia, Libia, and Arabia, or otherwise by lande, from the East India, lyke as at this daye, the greate multitude of Spyces, Golde, Precious stones, Sylke, and Iuerye, whyche is at Calicut and Cambaia, growe not al in the regions there about, but are brought thether from dyuers other countreys, as doeth more largely appeare in this Boke. And that Salomons factours for exchange of other marchaundyfe, bought the same in *Tharsis*, beyng brought thether from other countreyes, as it is written in the thyrde Boke of the Kinges, that Salomon had great plentie of Gold of Marchauntes and Apothecaries. So that to conclude, I would rather thinke (sauing reformacion of other better learned) that this *Tharsis* (and not *Tharsis of Cilicia*), from whence Salomon had so great plentie of Gold and Iuerie, were rather some other countrey in the fourth partes of the world, then this *Tharsis of Cilicia*. For, not onely olde and newe Histories, dayly experience, and the principles of natural Philofophie doe agree, yat the places most apte to bring forth gold, spices, and precious stones, are the South and Southeast partes of the world, but also our Sauour Christ approueth the same, declaring that the Quene of the South (meaning the Quene of Saba) came from the vtmoste partes of the worlde to heare the wysdom of Salomon. And lyke as by the auctoritie of these woordes it is playne from what partes of the world she came, the same to a philosophical head is apparent by suche ryches and presentes as she broughte with her. For albeit that in the Chronacles of Salomon it is not written by expressed wordes that she came from the Southe, yet is it wrytten that she came to Hierusalem with a very great trayne, with camels laden with spyces, swete odours, and exceading much gold and precious stones, which descripcion doeth well agree, both with the situacion of the cytie of Saba in *Ethiopia* vnder Egrypt: and also with the countrey of Saba, being in the middel of Arabia, inuironned about with great rockes wherein is a great wood of Precious trees, some of Cinomome and Caffia, and some bringing forth frankencense and myrre, as writeth *Plinius lib. 12.* and *Theophrastus li. 9. de Hist. Plant.* Wherefore the Quene of Saba myghte worthely be called the quene of the South, forasmuch as bothe Saba (or rather Sabat) in *Ethiopia*, whiche Iosephus thinketh to be the Iland of *Meroe*, now called *Elfaba*, beinge in the ryuer of *Nilus*, and that the quene came from thence, and also Saba in Arabia, are situate farre Southwarde from Hierusalem, euen in maner in the middest of the lyne, called *Tropicus Cancræ*, and the *Equinoctial* lyne, where the Pole Artike is eleuate not passing. 13. degrees or thereabout (as in *Meroe*) where as the same pole is eleuate at Hierusalem. 32. degrees: whereby it may appeare yat the quene of Saba (whom Christe calleth the quene of ye south,) came from the south partes about. xi. hundreth and. xl. miles from Hierusalem for the same distaunce is from Saba in *Meroe* to Hierusalem, as betwene Rome and England. But as touching this matter, it shall suffyse to haue sayde thus muche. Nowe therefore to returne home from these farre countreys, and to speake somewhat of this viage which oure countreyemene, haue attempted to fayle into the Easte partes, by the coastes of Norway, Lappia, and Finmarchia, and so by the narrowe tracte of the Sea by the coastes of Grouelande, into the frofen sea, called *Mare Congelatum*, and so forth to Cathay (yf any suche passage may be found) whiche onely doubt doeth at this daye discourage many faynte hearted men, speciallye becaufe in the moste parte of Globes and Mappes they see the continente or fyrme land, extended euen to the North Pole without any such passage. Which thing ought to moue no man greatly, forasmuch as the most parte of Globes and mappes are made after Ptolomeus Tables: Who, albeit he was an excellent man, yet were there many thinges hyd from his knowledge, as not sufficientelye tryed or searched at those daies, as manifestly appeareth in that he knew nothing of *America* with the hole fyrme lande adherent thereunto, which is nowe found to be the fourth parte of the earth. Neyther yet knew he any thinge of the passage by the Weste into the Easte, by the strayghtes of *Magellanus* as you shal reade in this Boke. Neyther of the Ilandes in the Weste Ocean Sea, nor of the Ilandes of *Molucca* situate in the mayne Easte Indian Sea. And as touchinge this passage, albeit, it were not knowen in Ptolomeus dayes yct other auctors of later time, who perhappes haue hadde further experience of the thing (as good reason is) doe wryte not onely that there is a passage by the Northe Sea into the mayne Easte Sea, but doe also further declare, howe certayne shippes haue safely sayled throughe the same, as *Pius secundus* (otherwyse called *Aeneas Silvius*) an excellent auctour descrybeth in his Boke of Cosmographie, where he hath these woordes folowing. Of the North Ocean Sea, whether it may be sayled aboute or not, the contencion is greater, yet is it apparaunte that the greateste parte thereof aboute Germanie, hath been searched by the commaundemente of Augustus th[e]mperour, euen vnto the promontorie or landes ende of the people, called *Cimbri*. The seas also and coastes of *Caspia* were so searched during the warres of the *Macedonians* vnder the dominion of *Selucus* and *Anthiocus*, that al

most all the North on euery fyde was fayled about. Plinie rehearfeth the testimonie of Cornelius Nepos, who wryteth that the King of Sueuia (or Swethelande) gaue to *Metellus celer*, proconfull or leauctenaunte of Fraunce, certayne Indians or menne of Inde, whiche faylinge out of India for marchaundyse, were by tempest driuen into Germanie. We also reade in Otho, that vnder th[e]mpyre of the Germaines, there was a shippe of Indians taken in the North sea of Germanie, and driuen thether by contrary wynd from the East partes: which thing coulde by no meanes haue comen to passe, yf (as many menne thinke) the North sea were not nauigable by reason of extreme cold and Ice. And these be the very wordes of *Pius Secundus*, whereunto I adde, that thys, notwithstandinge, yf it should so chaunce, that ether there can no such passage be found, or the same so daungerous, or otherwyse that the very cutte thereof by which onely perhappes any shippes might passe, could not be founde, yea, or to caste the worste, yf they shoulde perishe in this viage, yet I woulde wishe all men to be of such corage and constancie in these affayres, as are valiaunt capitaynes in the warres: who, yf by misfortune they take a foyle, doe rather studie how by some other wayes to recouer theyr honour and reputacion diminished by the same, then with shame, losse, and dishonour, euer afterwarde to geue place to theyr enemyes, or forswear the warres. Wherefore, to conclude, yf no good can be done this way, it were worthy the aduenture to attempt, yf the same viage may bee broughte to passe, another waye, as by the strayght called *Fretum trium fratrum*, westward and by North from England, whiche viage is sufficiently knowen to suche as haue any skyll in Geographie. As for other landes and Ilandes in the west sea, where the Eagle (yet not in euery place) hath so spred his winges, that other poore byrdes may not without offence feke theyr praye within the compasse of the same, I wyll speake nothing hereof, bycause I wold be loth to lay an egge, wherof other men might hatche a serpent. Wherefore to let this passe, and to entre into another matter. Forasmuch as in these our daies hath chaunced so great a secret to be found, as the like hath neuer been knowen or heard before, (what foeuer God meant to kepe this mistery hyd so long) I thoughte it good to speake somewhat hereof: trusting yat the pleasaunt contemplacion of the thing it selfe, shal make the length of this preface lesse tedious, especially yf it find a reader whose soule delyteth to prayse God in his workes. The thing therefore is this, how the hole globe of the world (of the earth and water I meane) hath been fayled aboute, by the West into the East, as doth more largely appeare in this boke in the nauigacions of *Magellanus*, who from Spayne fayled Westward to the Ilandes of *Molucca* being in the East sea, farre beyond ye furthest partes of East India: and the portugales came to the same Ilandes from Spayne sayling Eastward by the coastes of Aphrica, Arabia, and the vttermost India beyond the ryuer of *Ganges* where, in yat Indian sea the fayd Ilandes of *Molucca* are situate. A thing surely most wonderful, and in maner incredible, but that the same is proued most certayne by experience, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errorrs, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practife of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardely be comprehended by the discourse of reason. Which thing or other lyke, I suppose was the cause why the noble Philosopher Aristoteles sayde: *Quod nihil est in intellectu quod non fuit prius in sensu*, that is, that nothinge is in vnderstandinge, but the same was fyrst in sence, that is to saye subiect to ye senses. Yet would I not that any rashe witte shoulde hereby take holde, as thoughe eyther Aristotle or I, meant that sence were more excellent then reason, but rather that reason vsing sence, taketh his principles and fyrst sedes of thinges sensyble, and afterwarde by his owne discourse and searching of causes, encreaseth the same from a feede to a tree, as from an acorne to an oke. Nought els to say, but that experience to be most certayn which is ioyned with reason or speculation, and that reason to be most sure which is confirmed with experience, accordinge as the Phisicians determen in theyr science, that neyther practyse is safe without speculation, nor speculation without practyse. Wherefore, whereas men of great knowledge and experience, are to great affaires, theyr attemptes haue for the moste parte good successe, as doeth moste playnly appeare in all histories: notwithstanding that some ignoraunt men wyl alledge that certayn rashe aduentures haue prospered well: which fayinge proueth no more then yf a man should say, that twise or thrise a man vnarmed slew a man armed (as dyd sometyme the wyld Irishmen at bullen) Ergo, it were better to fight vnarmed then armed. And wheras I haue here spoken of knowledge ioyned with experience, I meane by knowledge yat which we commonly call learning, whether it be gotten out of bokes (which are the writinges of wyse and expert men) or otherwyse by conference and educacion with such as are lerned: meaning nought els by learning, but ye gathering of many mens wittes into one mans head, and the experience of many yeres, and many mens lyues, to the lyfe of one, whom we call a learned, wyse, and expert man. The which defynicion and effect of learning, the noble and learned cortier Baltassar Castaglione (the auctour of the boke called in the Italian tongue *il cortegiono*,) diligently consideringe, doeth greatlye blame and reprove the frenshmen in that they thinke yat the knowledge of letters doeth hinder the affayres of warre, ye which perswasion he proueth by many reasons and examples to be most false. But as concerninge the matter whereof this boke entreateth the greate Philosopher Albertus Magnus, onelye by learninge, wythoute

Plinius.
Cornelius Nepos.
Sueuia, called also
Suecia nere vnto
gothland and
norway.

A ship of Indians
driuen from the
East into the North
seas.

The viage to
Cathay
Westwarde and
by north.

The earth
compassed about

The viage of
Magellanus.
The Ilandes of
Molucca.

Experience, ye
teacher of al
sciences.

Sense and
vnderstandinge.

A sentence of
Aristotell.

Experience ioined
with speculation

A perticuler
proueth no
vniuersall.

What is
knowledge and
learning

Baltassar
Castaglione.
A false
perswasion of ye
Frenshmen.

Albertus Magnus

Temperat regions
vnder ye
Equinoctial line.

An error of S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.
Antipodes.
Apianus.

Lactantius.

The roundnes of
ye earth.
S. augustyne.

Apianus.

The apostles,
Antipodes the
one againste
th[e]other.

The Spanyardes
and the Indians
are *Antipodes*.

S. augustine of
the heresie of
Manicheus.
S. augustines
boke of retractes.

Mountaynes, let
not ye roundnes
of the earth.
A galle.

A Sentence of S.
augustines.

Commendacion of
s. augustin

Lactantius.

experyence, affirmed that habitable or temperate Regions myghte be vnder the Equinoctial or burninge lyne, as appeareth in hys Boke *de Natura locorum*, contrarye to the opinion of other wryters whyche were before hys tyme, and yet is nowe proued by experience to bee moſte true, albeit not in all places vnder the fayde lyne, the caufe whereof were here to longe to declare. And lyke as Albertus Magnus by knowledge of Astronomye (wherein he excelled) came to the vnderſtandinge hereof, euen ſo that greate Clerke (but better dyuyne then Phyloſopher) Sayncte Auguſtynne and alſo Lactantius, for lacke of lyke knowledge in that ſcience, fell into a chyldiſhe erreure, denyinge that there is anye people, called Antipodes, of whom the greate Aſtronomer of our tyme, Apianus wryteth in thys maner. Antipodes are they, whyche walke wyth theyr fete dyrectelye contrarye agaynſte oures, and haue the heauen dyrectelye ouer theyr heades as we haue. Yet haue we nothinge common wyth them, but all thinges contrarye: for when the Sunne cauſeth Sommer wyth vs, then is it Myddewynter wyth them: and when it is day wyth vs, it is nyghte wyth them: And when the daye is longeſte wyth vs, then is the longeſte nyghte wyth them, and the ſhorteſte daye. Whiche, Lactantius, a manne otherwyfe well learned, in his thyrde Booke, Capittulo foure and twentye, childiſfhelye erringe, wyth hys lyghte and opinionate argumentes, denyeth that there is anye fuche, and mocketh the Aſtronomers, becauſe they affyrme the earth to bee rounde, whiche neuertheleſſe they proue wyth moſte certayne and apparenſe demonſtracions of Geometrye, and vnfayleable experymentes. Whome, Sayncte Auguſtynne folowing, in his ſixtenth Booke. *de Ciuitat. Dei. Capittu. ix.* wryteth after thys forte. Suche as fable that there is Antipodes, that is to faye, menne of the contrarye parte, where the funne ryfeth when it falleth to vs, and to haue theyr feete agaynſte oures, we oughte by no reaſon to beeleue. Thoſe bee the woordes of Sayncte Auguſtynne. Nothwithſtandinge (ſayeth Apianus) putte thou no doubtte Gentle Reader, that the Apoſtles of Chriſte were Antipodes the one to the other, and ſode feete to feete the one agaynſte the other, when Iames th[e]elder and brother to Iohn the Euangelifte, the ſonne of Zebedeus, was in Spayne in Galitia, and Thomas the Apoſtle in the hygher India, they were moſte certaynelye Antipodes, walking feete to feete one agaynſte the other, almoſt as directly as a diametrical lyne. For the Spanyardes are Antipodes to the Indians, and the Indians in lyke maner to the Spanyardes. Which thinge alſo the excellente and aunciente Auctour Strabo confyrmeth to bee true, and likewiſe Plinius *Nat. Hiſt. lib. 2. Cap. 67.* Dolateranus alſo, and all other Coſmographers and Aſtronomers. Hetherto Apianus: and to declare my opinion in fewe woordes, I thinke it no greate marueyle that Saincte Auguſtynne ſhoude fall into an erreure in the ſcience of Astronomye in whiche he trauayled but as a ſtraunger, forasmuche as he erred in many thinges in diuinitie which was his chief profeffion: and was longe of the hereſye of *Manicheus* beefore he was conuerted by Saincte Ambroſe: and wrytte alſo at the lengthe a Booke of retractes, in whych he correcteth hys owne errorres. And I beleue playnely that, that excellent witte of hys, could not haue remayned in yat error yf he had been wel exercyfed in Astronomy, or had knowen any fuche experyence as is ſpoken of here beefore, howe the Spanyardes by the Weſte and the Portugales by the Eaſte compaffed aboute the earth, whiche coulde neuer haue come to paſſe yf the earthe were not rounde (*Quantum ad maximas fui partes*) as they call it. For, as for hylles and Mountaynes, though they be neuer ſo greate, yet in reſpecte to the byggenes of the earth, they doe no more lette the roundneſſe hereof, then doe the lyttle knobbes of the berrye, which we call a galle, lette the roundneſſe of the ſame. Wherefore I am certaynelye perſwaded, that yf Sayncte Auguſtynne had continued hys ſtudye in Astronomye (as it hadde been pytye he ſhoude) or were alyue at thys daye, he woulde alſo haue retracted this erreure. But yf here anye ſuperſticious head ſhall thinke it a heynous matter in any poynte to contrary Sainct Auguſtynne, lette hym hearken howe Auguſtine hym ſelfe ſayeth: that he wyll neyther hys wrytynges or other mennes, of howe greate name or fame foeuer they be, otherwiſe to be beleued then the ſame ſhall, by reaſon bee approued to be true: *Neque quorumlibet diſputaciones, &c.* And lyke as the greate Philoſopher Ariſtotel, when he wryte agaynſte hys mayſter Plato of the queſtion *de Idais*, and agaynſte Socrates who by the oracle of Apollo was proued to be moſt wyſe, and certayne of hys frendes asked hym why he durſte be ſo boude, he aunſwered that Plato was hys frende, and ſo was Socrates: but trueth hys frende more then they bothe, euen ſo I thinke it no iniurye nor contumelye to Saynct Auguſtynne, yf the ſame were fayde of hym alſo geuyng hym otherwyfe hys dewe commendacions, as he was ſurelye an excellente man, of dyuyne witte, and knowledge, and ſo trauayled in fettyng foorth Chriſtes true Relygion in thoſe turmoylous dayes, in perpetual combatte, agaynſte learned heretykes and Prynces of the worlde, that he is worthelye called a Doctour and Pyller of Chriſtes Church. And as for Lactantius, the intente of whoſe wrytynges was chieflye to thys ende, to dyminiſhe th[e]eſtimacion of Philoſophye, (as at thoſe dayes it was neceſſarie to doe amonge the Gentyles) and to aduaunce Goddes woorde, (whyche they contemned for the ſimplicite of the ſame,) albeit, he attempted as farre as hys learninge woulde ferue hym, to make all thynges in Philo[ſo]phie vncertayne, yet are hys argumentes ſo ſlender, that vnleſſe G O D by the ſecrete working of hys ſpyryte, hadde called the Gentyles to the true Faythe, I feare me leaſte fewe or none of them, (ſpecyallye of the greate wyttes) woulde haue been conuerted by Lactantius

argumentes. Howe he dalyeth in denyinge the yearth to bee rounde, and that it is possyble that it myghte bee longe and rounde, (lyke an Egge,) or otherwyse longe and holowe lyke a bote, (meanyng I suppose that the Sea myghte bee conteyned in the holownesse of the fame, wyth fuche other opinyons grounded of no reason, it were to longe to rehearse. Yet, forasmuche as he was a learned manne, and for the better satisfyinge of fuche wyttes as are desyreous to know some apperaunce of truth by naturall reason and demonstracions, lette vs admytte that the earth were rounde after anye of those fasshions whiche he descrybeth: yet can it not bee denied, but that it is conteyned wythin the holowenesse (yf I maye so call it) of the ayre, hauynge the heauen in euerye place dyrectelye ouer euery parte of the fame, as fayeth the Poete and Philosopher *Virgill*, *Cælum undique fursum*: Excepte perhappes Lactantius shoulde thinke that it honged by some thyng, or were otherwyse borne vppe wyth pyllers as the Poetes Fable, that the Gyãunte *Atlas* beareth the worlde on hys shoulders, whereby they meane that a manne of valiente mynde must stoutelye beare the chaunces of the worlde. Of whyche hangeinge or bearynge of the earth, I reade a better and more true fayinge in the holye Scripture, where it is written, *Fert omnia uerbo oris fui*, that is, that God sustayneth and beareth all thinges with the woorde of hys mouth.

Holye Iob also fayeth, that the LORD stretcheth oute the Northe ouer the emptye, and hangeth the earth vpon nothyng: Meaninge by nothyng, the ayre, because to oure senses it appeareth in maner as nothyng: Or otherwyse that it is not dependyng of anye other substauce, but to bee sustayned onelye by the power of GOD who hath appoynted the Elementes theyr places and lymittes, and causeth the heuye to stande faste: as wytnesseth Moyses in hys songe, sayinge: By the wynde of thy nostrils the waters gathered together, the flouddes floode styll as an heape, and the deepe water congeled togeather in the heart of the Sea. Wherefore yf the heauen be rounde (whiche no manne can reasonably denye that euer sawe the Sunne and sterres moue.) And yf the earth bee the center of the worlde dependyng as we haue sayde beefore, then muste it needes folowe, that they whiche inhabiting the Northweste partes of the earth, haue the Pole Artike eleuate thyrtye degrees, must needes bee Antipodes to them whiche inhabitinge the Southeaste partes of the earth, haue the Pole Antartike eleuate in the same degree, and so the lyke to bee vnderstand of all other eleuacions and degrees. And yf here anye wyll object, that eyther the earth or firme land is not so large, or so farre extended, or other wyse not inhabited although it were so large, or that the sea is greater then the lande, to thys I aunswere, that no man knoweth further hereof then is tryed and founde by experience, as we haue sayde beefore. And albeit that the sea were larger then the firme lande, yet forasmuche as there are Ilandes founde in all places of the mayne Sea, and in maner all inhabited, there is no reason to the contrarye, but that the people of those Ilandes maye be Antipodes to such as dwel on the firme lande, on the contrary parte, whether the earth bee round and longe, yea or square, (yf you wyll) notwithstandyng. But wyth what certayne demonstracions the Astronomers and Geometricians, proue the earth to bee rounde, and the Sphericall or rounde forme to bee mooste perfecte, it were to longe to declare. I wyll therefore make an ende of thys matter wyth the fayinge of Sayncte Paule in hys Oracion, to the menne of Athens. That GOD made of one bloudde, all nacions of menne, to dwell vpon the hole face of the earth.

¶ I hadde entended here (well beeloued Reader) to haue spoken somewhat of fuche straunge thynges and Monsters, whereof mencion is made in thys Booke, to th[e]nde that fuche as by the narrownes of theyr vnderstandinge are not of capacitie to conceaue the causes and natures of thynges, myghte partelye haue been satisfyed wyth some sensyble reasons. But beyng at thys tyme otherwyse hindered, it shall suffise al good and honest wittes, that whatfoeuer the Lorde hath pleased, that hath he done in heauen and in earth, and in the Sea, and in all depe places.

¶ Ecclesiasticus. Capit. i.

¶ *The eye is not satisfyed with syght, and the eare is not fylled with hearinge.*

Of the roundenes
of ye earth.

The earth hangeth
in ye aire

The fable of
Atlas.

The word of God
beareth vppe the
worlde.

Iob. 26.

The elementes.

Exo. xv.

The eleuation of
the pole.

The largenes of
the earth.

Ilandes

Astronomers and
Geometricians.

Act. xvij

Psa. 135

¶ *The Table.*

¶ Of the Ilande of Iaua.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of Madagafcar.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of zanzibar.	[p. 23.]
Of the two Ilandes in the which men and women dwell a funder.	[p. 24.]
Of the mightie Empyre of Cathay, fubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham or Cane, Emperour of Tartaria.	[p. 24.]
Of certayn Prouinces fubiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham.	[p. 25.]
Of the Prouince of Mangi.	[p. 26.]
Of the Region of Tangut.	[p. 26.]
Of the newe Ilandes, howe, when, and by whom they were founde.	[p. 28.]
Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hispana.	[p. 28.]
Of the Canibales, which eate mens fleshe.	[p. 29.]
Of the maners of the inhabitantes of Hispana.	[p. 29.]
Howe Christophorus Columbus, after that he had founde the newe Ilandes, returned to Spayne : and preparing a new nauie, failed agayn to ye Canibales.	[p. 29.]
Howe Columbus the Admiral, paffed many Ilandes and what chaunced to hym and his in that viage.	[p. 30.]
Of the newe India, as it is founde and knowen in thefe oure dayes.	[p. 13.]
Of the Adamant ftone, otherwife called the Diamant.	[p. 14.]
Of the Kingdoms and cities of Narfinga and Canonor	[p. 14.]
Howe the Elephantes in India are prepared to the warres.	[p. 15.]
Of the beafte called Rhinoceros.	[p. 16.]
Of Calicut, the moft famous markette towne of India.	[p. 16.]
Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.	[p. 17.]
Of Pepper and other fpyces which growe in the Region of Calicut.	[p. 18.]
Of the byrdes and beaftes which are found in the Region of Calicut : and of the wyne of the tree.	[p. 19.]
From whence all kyndes of fpyces are brought to the cytie of Calicut.	[p. 20.]
Of the Iland of zaylon, and of the cinomome tree.	[p. 20.]
Of the cytie of Tarnafferri, and of the maners of the cytezyns.	[p. 20.]
Of the excellent cytie and Kingdom of Pego.	[p. 21.]
Of the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Bornei.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Giaua.	[p. 23.]
Howe the Spanyardes abufed the fubmiffion and frendfhip of the inhabitauntes of the Ilandes.	[p. 31.]
Howe the Portugales foughte newe Ilandes in the Eaft partes, and howe they came to Calicut.	[p. 32.]
Howe Magellanus by a ftrayght or narrow arme of the Sea, fayled by the Weft into the Eaft to dyuers Ilandes, where alfo he was flayne.	[p. 33.]
Howe the Spanyardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.	[p. 34.]
The third nauigacion of Christophorus Columbus.	[p. 35.]
[Howe Petrus Alonfus foughte newe Ilandes.	p. 36.]
Howe Pinzonus companion to the Admiral, fought newe Ilandes.	[p. 36.]
The foure nauigacions of Americus Vefputius to the newe Ilandes.	[p. 37.]
The fyrfte viage of Vefputius.	[p. 37.]
The fecond viage of Vefputius.	[p. 38.]
The thyrde viage of Vefputius.	[p. 39.]
The fourth viage of Vefputius.	[p. 39.]
Howe the Kyng of Portugale fubdued certayne places in India, and of the ryche cytie of Malacha.	[p. 40.]
Of the Ilande of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyfe called the Ilandes of Canaria.	[p. 40.]
[Whether vnder the Æquinocial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida Zona) be habitable Regions.	p. 41.]

¶ *Finis.*

¶ Of the newe India,

as it is knowen and found in these our dayes.

In the yeare of oure Lorde. M.D.LIII.

After the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in
his Booke of the vniuerfall Cosmographie.

Libr. v. De terris Asiæ Maioris.

And tranflated into Englishe
by Richard Eden.



Here are two viages or nauigacions made oute of Europa into India. The one southeast from spayne, by the coastes of Aphrica and Ethiopia, euen vnto Arabia to the citie called Aden. And from thence to the Ilande of Ormus, and from Ormus to the citie of Cambaia, and from thence euen vnto the citie of Calicut. Cambaia is situate nere vnto the floudde *Indus*. This citie is of great powre, riche, and abundaunt in al kyndes of grayne and corne. The soyle hereof bringeth forth sondry kyndes of fwete oyntmentes, and cotten which groweth on certain trees called *Gofsampini*, this cotton, is otherwyse called *Bombage* or fylke of the trees. The Kynge of Portugall subdued this cytie, and bylded hard by the same a strong fortresse: with which thing the Turke beeing fore greued, commaunded a greate nauie of shippes with greate sumptuousnes to bee furnished in the goulfe called *Simus Arabicus*: to the ende that he might dryue the Portugalles out of India, and the better to accomplishe this his purpose, he appointed one Soliman a noble man of

warre (beyng also the Captayne of Alcayre,) to be the admiral general, or gouernour of his nauie, hauing in his retenue. xx. thousand souldiers beesyde mariners and gonners, whiche were in nombre foure thousand. This nauie was appointed in the hauen Suezio, beeing a port of the redde sea, in the yeare of Christ. 1538. And arryued fyrste at the citie Aden: where laying anker, the gouernour of the nauie sent letters to the king of Aden, certifying him that he woulde take his viage into India, from thence to expell the King of Portugall. The Kinge of Aden whiche was then tributarye to the King of Portugall, receyued the Turkes letters thankfully, offering him selfe and all that he might make, to so mightie an Emperoure, desyringe the gouernoure to come forth of the ship, and to beholde the cytie obedient and readye at his commaundeniente, in the which also accordinge vnto his dignitie and office, he should be worthely interteyned: but the gouernour agayne allured and entysed hym to come out of his citie, and so by crafte circumuented him, that he toke him priesoner, and commaunded him to be hanged on the fayle yarde of the shyp, and with hym foure other of the rulers of the citie of Aden, affyrming that he was commaunded of the Turke so to handel them, because the cytiezins of Aden had not only made a leage with the Portugales, but had also payde them tribute: whiche nacion the Turke playnely entended to drieue out of India. And thus after the Kynge's death, that most riche and beautiful cytie, was euer a praye to theues, spoylers, and murtherers without resystaunce. Then the gouernoure departing from thence, lefte there behynde him a garrison of two thousand men of warre, and saylyng forwarde on hys viage, he came to the citie called *Dium*, whiche the Portugales held: and his armie was greatly encreased by the waye, as wel by land as by sea, by reason of the great confluence of the Turkes which on euery side resorted to him, so that in a short space they rowled before them a bulwarke or countremure of earth, in maner as bigge as a mountayne, which by little and litle they moued neare vnto the trenche or ditche of the castell, so that they might safely stand behynde the bulwarke, (thus rayfing a mount,) they besieged the castell on euery fyde, and battered the walles and towres thereof very fore: yet that notwithstanding, were at the length, enforced to departe, not withoute greate losse and slaughter of theyr souldiers: for this *Dium*, is the strongest citie that is vnder the dominion of

The —
ther is
Southweste.

The citie of
Cambaia

Calicut.

Gossipium.
Bombage or
cotton of the trees.

The turkes nauie
agaynste the
king of Portugale.

The cytie of Aden.

The kinge of
Aden is hanged.

The destruction
of the citie of
Aden.

The turke
besiegeth the
cytie of *Dium*.

The turke is
repulsed.

The excellencie
of the citie of
Cambaia.

Lacha is gumme
of a tree, and is
vsed in dying of
silke.

The Kyngdom of
Ioga.

The Kyngdom of
Dechan.

The diamonde
stone.

The stone
Siderites.

The hardnes of
the diamond.

How the diamand
is made softe.

The mountayne of
diamantes.

The citie of
Narsinga.

The kinge of
Narsinga.

Cambaia: but the cytie of *Cambaia*, is situate in the goulfe called *Guzerat*, and is well inhabited, and in maner most excellent of all the cities of *India*, and is therefore called *Cayrus*, or *Alcayr*, or *Babilon* of *India*. It is enuironned with a walle, and hath in it very fayre byldinges. Ye Soldan or chefe ruler hereof, is of Mahumets secte as are ye Turkes. *Lacha* groweth there more plentifully then in any other countre. The inhabitauntes, for the moste parte goe naked, couering only theyr priuie partes: they bynd theyr heades about with a clothe of purple color. The Soldan or prince of this citie, hath in a redines for the warres. xx. thousand horfemen, he hath also a mightye and magnifical court. When he waketh in ye morning there is heard a great noyse of cimbals, drumslades, timbrelles, shames, pipes, flutes, trumpettes, and diuerse other musical instrumentes, hereby signifying that the king lyueth and is in health and merye: in lyke maner doe they whyle he is at dyner. To the kyngdom of *Cambaia*, is the Kingdom of *Ioga* nexte adioyning, which reacheth farre on euerye side. In this kingdom, by reason of the greate heate of the sonne, the bodyes of men begin to waxe blacke and to be scorched: the people of thys countreye haue ringes hanging at their eares and colers aboute theyr neckes of fundry fortes, al befet and shyninge with precious stones. The foyle hereof is not very fruitful, this region is rough with mountaynes, the byldinge[s] are despicable, and cuyl to dwel in: there is beyonde this, another Kingdom called *Dechan*: this cytie is very beautiful to behold, and fruitful in maner of al thinges: the king hereof vseth great pride, and solemnitie: his pompes and triumphes are in maner incredible, they that wayt vpon the kinge, weare on the vpper partes of theyr shoes certayne shyninge precious stones, as *Piropi* (whiche are a kind of Rubies or Carbuncles) with Diamandes and such other. But what maner of Iewelles they vse in ye stede of collers, earerings, and ringes, you may well confyder, whereas they geue suche honour to theyr fete. In this kingdom is said to be a mountayne, out of the which Diamandes are digged.

¶ Of the Diamande stone, called in Latine Adamas.



The Diamande is engendred in the mynes of *India*, *Ethiopia*, *Arabia*, *Macedonia*, and *Cyprus*, and in the golde mynes of the same countries. That of *India* excelleth all other in beautie and clearenes: that which is of the coloure of yron, is called *Siderites*, it is often tymes found in colour like vnto cristal, and though it be sometimes lyke thereto in whytnes, yet doth it differ from cristall in hardnes, in so much that if it be layd vpon an anuil and strongly striken with a hammer, the anuyl and hammer shall soner be wounded and leape away, then the stone perished or diminished: it doth not onelye refuse the forse of Iron, but also resisteth the power of fyre, whose heate is so farre vnable to melte it, that it can not so muche as heate it, if we geue credit to Plinie, and is also rather made purer therby, then anye wayes defyled or corrupted: neuertheles, the singuler and excellent hardnes of this stone, is made so softe with ye hoate blood of a Goate or a Lyon, that it may be broken: and if it be put with molten lead in hoate fornaces, it waxeth so hoate that it wylbe dissolued: yet are not all Diamandes of such hardnesse, for that of *Cyprus*, and also that of the coloure of Iron: called *Siderites*, may be broken with hammers and perced with another Diamand: his vertue is to bewray poisons, and to frustrate th[e]opperacion therof, and beeing therefore greatly esteemed of Kinges and Princes, it hath euer been of great price. The mountaine of *India* out of the which the Diamandes are digged, is compassed with a walle on euery fyde, and kepte with a strong defence.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of *Narsinga* and *Canonor*.



The King of *Narsinga*, in riches and dominion excelleth all other Kinges in those partes. The chiefe cytie where the King is resident, is in situacion and fynenes, much lyke vnto the cytie of *Milayne*, but that it standeth in a place somewhat declyning and leffe equall. This king hath euer in a redines manye thousandes of men of armes, as one that is euer at warre with other countreys, borderers nere aboute him. He is geuen to moste vile Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll, euen as doth the king of *Calicut*. The maners and fashions of the inhabitantes, are after this forte. The gentlemen or such as are of greatest reuenewes, vse to weare an inward cote or peticote, not very long: hauing theyr heades bounde aboute with listes and rowles of fundry coloures after the maner of the Turkes. The common people, couer onli their priuie parts and are beyde all together naked. The Kyng weareth on his head a stately cap made of the riche cloth of *Asia*, beyng two handfulls in length. When he goeth to ye warres, he weareth a vesture of ye filke called *Goffampine*, which he couereth with a cloke adorned with plates of gold: ye hemme or edge of his cloke is befet with all maner of ouches and Iewelles. Hys horse is iudged to be of such valure if you respect ye price, as is one of

our cities. And this is by the meanes of ye innumerable multitude and fundrie kindes of precious stones, and perles wherewith ye trappers, barbes, and other furnitures of his horse are couered, with an incredible pompe and glori. The foyle of Narfinga, beareth nether wheate nor grapes, and is in maner without al kinde of fruites, except citrons and gourdes: the inhabitantes eate no bread, but ryce, fishe and fleshe, and also walnutttes, which that countrey beareth, there begin spyces to be found, as ginger, pepper, mirabolanes, Cardamome, Cassia, and dyuers other kyndes of spyces.

Canan. is a very excellent cytie, fayre and beautifull in all thinges, fauing that the Kinge thereof is an Idolater. This citie hath a hauen whether the horses of Persia are brought, but theyr tribute or custome, is excedinge great: the inhabitantes lyue with ryce, fleshe, and fyshe as do they of Narfinga: in the warres they vse the sweorde, the round target, speares and bowes, and haue nowe also the vse of gones, they are all naked fauing their priuie partes, and go beare headed, except when they goe to the warres, for then they couer theyr heades with a redde hatte which thei folde double, and bind it fast with a lyst or bande. In the warres they vse neither horse, mule, or asse, neither that kynde of camels which we commonly call dromedaries: but vse onely Elephantes. There is also in the kingdom of Narfinga another godly citie called *Bisinagar*: it is compassed aboute with a walle, and situate on the side of a hyll, beeyng. viij. myles in circuite hauinge also in it a famous market place. The foyle is very fruitful, there are all delicate thinges to be found that may encrease the pleafures of this lyfe. There maye no where be found more pleasaunt felde and woddes for hauking and huntinge, a man woulde thinke it were a very Paradyse of pleasure. The king of this citie is of great power, he keepeth dayly many thousandes of men at armes, vsinge Elephantes in the stede of horses. And hath euer foure hundreth Elephantes prepared for the warres.

¶ How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre.



The Elephant is a beast very docible and apte to be taught, and little inferiour from humaine sence, excellenge all other beastes in fortitude and strength. Therefore ye Indians, when they prepare them to the warres, put great packfaddels vpon them, which they bind fast with two chaines of Iron, comming vnder theyr belyes. Vpon the packfaddels, they haue on euery side a little house or towre, or cage (if you list so to call it) made of wood. These towres ar made fast to the necke of the beaste with certayne sawed bordes of the thickenes of halfe a hande breath. Euery towre receyueth thre men. And betwene both the towres, vpon the back of the beast fytteth an Indian, a man of that countrey which speaketh vnto the beaste. For this beaste hath marueylous vnderstanding of the language of hys natyue countrey, and doth wonderfulli beare in memorie benefytes shewed vnto him. It is also mooste certayne that none other beast draweth so nere to the excellence of humayne sence or reason as doeth this beast, as maye most playnly appeare, yf we confidre, how he is geuen to loue and glory, to a certeyn frendly gentlenes and honest maners, ioyned with a marueylous discrecion, to know good from euil, more redy to recompence benefites then reuenge iniuries, which excellent properties are not to be found in other brute beastes. Therefore when the Elephantes go forward to ye warres, seuen armed men are appoynted to be caried vpon one Elephant, bearing with them, bowes, iauelins, sweordes and targettes: also the longe snout of the Elephant (which thei cal his hand) is armed with a sweorde of two cubites in length, and in bredth and thickenes a handfull, standinge righte forth, tyed faste to the snowte of the beast, and thus beeing furnished, they procede to the battaile: and whereas occasion requyeth to go forward or backwarde, the ruler of the beast geueth him warninge, whose voyce he vnderstandeth and obeyeth: stryke hym, sayth the ruler, forbear hym, be fearse agaynst these, abstayne from these, the beaste obeyeth hym in all thinges, as though he had humayn reason, but yf it so chaunce that being made afrayd with fire (which thinge they feare aboute all other) they beginne to flye, they can by no meanes bee allured to stoppe theyr course, or retourne agayne, for the people of that nacion, can with many subtyl deuises as often as them listeth, raise vp fires to make those beastes afrayde. There be some men which thincke that Elephantes haue no ioyntes in theyr legges, which opinion other affirme to be vntrue, for they haue ioyntes as haue other beastes, but that they are very low and almost at their fete. The females are of greater fiercenesse then the males, and of much greater strength to beare burdens: they are sometime taken with madnes, declaring the same by theyr furious running. An Elephant excedeth in greatnes thre wilde oxen called *Bubali*, and is much lyke of heare, and eyed lyke a swine, hauing a long snout, hanging downward, with the which he putteth into his mouth whatfoeuer he eateth or drinketh, for his mouth is vnder his throte, not muche vnlyke the mouth of a swyne: his snowte hath holes in it, and is holowe within, with this they ouerthrow ye stumpes of trees: and that of fuche bignes, that the forfe of xxiiij. men is not able to do the same. The two great tuskes which they haue comming farre oute of theyr

The riche trapping
of the kinges
horse.

Spices of
Narsinga.

The cytie of
Cananor.

The vse of
Elephantes in the
warres.

The cytie
Bisinagar.

Hauking and
huntinge.

The kinge of
bisinagar.

The Elephantes
towre.

Elephantes
vnderstandeth the
language of theyr
countrei.

Seuen armed
men vpon one
Elephant

The ruler
speaketh to the
Elephant.

The Elephantes
ioyntes.

The bignes and
shape of the
Elephant.

The painters erre
herein.

Vnderstande the
handbreadth with
the thumbe
stretched forth.
The Elephantes
pase.

The Elephante is
vexed with flies.

How the Elephant
kylleth flies.

Ennitie betwene
the Elephant and
Rhinoceros.

The *Rhinoceros*
ii. hornes

The fight betwene
Rhinoceros and
the Elephant

Rhinoceros
naturally armed.

Rhinoceros sene
in Portugale.

Rhinoceros
ouercometh the
Elephant.

Lowe and simple
houses.

mouth, or placed in the vpper iawe, hauinge on euery fyde lappes hanging downe of the bignes of two hand brea[d]th. Theyr fete are round like vnto a flat trene dishe, hauing fyue toes like hocues vndeuided, of the bignes of great oystershelles. Theyr tayles are lyke vnto the tayles of wilde oxen, thre handfull in length, hauing but few heares. The males are hygher then the females. They are of fundry bignes: some are of. xiiij. handfulls hye, some of xiiij. and some. xvi. Their pase in goyng, is somewhat slowe and walowinge, by reason whercof, some whiche ryde on them and haue not been accustomed thereto, are prouoked to vomitte, euen as they were tossed on the sea. Yet it is great plesure to ride on the yong Elephantes, for they goe as softely as ambeling moiles. When you attempt to geat vp, to ryde on them, they bow downe toward you, as though they would ease you with a sterope, that you may the easelier geat vp, which neuertheles cannot wel be done without helpe. They are all vnbrideled hauinge neither withe nor coller aboute theyr neckes, but goe with theyr heades al together lose. And because they are not couered with bristels or bigge heares, they haue not so muche as in theyr tayle anye helpe to dryue away flies. For euen this greate beaste also (sayeth Plinie) is troubled with this lyttle vermyne. Theyr skinne is very rowghe, and full of chappes, and riftes, like the barke of a tree, being somewhat filthye and full of swette, whiche by heate resolued into vapoure, by fauour draweth flies vnto it: therefore when any flies or other creeping vermen are entered into the sayde riftes of theyr skinnes, sodeynly bending and drawing together their skinne, they hold them fast and kyl them, and this is to them in the stede of a tayle, a mane, or rough and bristeled heare.

¶ Of the beaste called *Rhinoceros*.



Hinoceros is comonly found in the same countrey, where Elephantes are engendred, and is borne an enemy to the Elephant (as faith Plinie) no lesse feking his destruction then doth the dragon: wherfore the Romaynes considering the natures of these beastes, were wont to put them together vpon the theater or stage, for a spectacle, therby to declare the natures of enemies. This *Rhinoceros* hath two hornes, whereof the one is of notable bignes, growing oute of his nosethrilles, and is of flatte forme, and as harde as Iron. The other groweth aboue in his necke, and is but a little one, but wonderful strong: when this beast attempteth to inuade the Elephant, he fyleth and whetteth his horne on a stone and stryketh at the belly of the Elephant, which place he knoweth to be most open to his stripes, and easyest to receaue hurt, because of the softenes thereof, which he cutteth with his horne as with a sweord. Some auctours write that *Rhinoceros* is vnequall in bignes to the Elephante: but *Iulius Solinus* faith, that he is as long as the Elephante, but hath shorter legges: when *Rhinoceros* therefore and the Elephant ioyne together in fighte, they vse theyr naturall weapons: the *Rhinoceros* his horne, and the Elephante his tuskes, wherewith he so violentlye beateth and teareth the skinne of *Rhinoceros* being as harde as horne or shell, and scarcelye able to be pearfed with a dart, that he neuertheles enforseth him to fall downe. *Rhinoceros* agayne on the other partie so woundeth the belye of the Elephante with the horne of hys nosethrilles, yf he doe not preuente hys strokes, yat he fainteth with bleding. In the yere of Christ. 1513. the first day of Maye, was broughte oute of India to Emanuel the king of Portugale *Rhinoceros* alyue, of the coloure of boxe, somewhat variable and as it wer chekered, couered with shelles lyke scales, or rather lyke shieldes. This beast was in bignes equall to an Elephante, but had shorter legges, and was armed on euery parte. He had a stronge and sharpe horne in his nosethrilles, the whiche (as I haue sayde) he fyleth, when he prepareth him to fight. All this great hatred betwene these two beastes, is for ye best pastures which one striueth to take from the other as some wryters faye. In the yere of Christe. 1515. King Emanuel set forth a spectacle in the citie of *Lisbona*, in which was a combat betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros*. A fight doubtlesse worthy great admiracion. But in this fight, the Elephant had the ouerthrowe.

¶ Of Calicut, the most famous market towne of India.



The cytie of *Calicut* is in the continente or mayne lande. And the houses therof adioyning to the sea. It is not walled about, but conteyneth in circuite. vi. thousand houses, not adherent together as the maner of bylding is with vs, but one being distant from another, a further space. It is extended in length a thousand pases. The houses thereof, are but simple and very lowe, not passinge the heygth of a manne on horsebacke from the grounde. In the stede of a rooffe, they are couered with bowes of trees, harde and thicke couched together, the cause hereof is, that yf the earth there be in anye place digged fyue handfull depth, the water

springeth forth, by reason wherof they can lay no depe foundacions for theyr houfes, fufficiente to beare anye heauye rooffe. The Kinge of thys citie is geuen to Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll himfelf. Yet he denieth not but that there is a God which made heauen and earth. And the fame to be the chiefe auctour and fyrfte caufe of all thinges. But fayth that he hath committed the rule and iudgemente of the world, to the deuill, to whom he hath geuen power to rewarde men with good or bad according to their defertes. This deuill they cal *Deumo*, but the mightie God and maker of the world, they cal *Iamerani*. The king hath in his Chappell the Image of this deuyll *Deumi*, fytting with a diademe or crowne on his head, much lyke vnto the myter which the Romaine Bifhoppes weare, faue that this deuills myter hath foure notable hornes. He fytteyth gaping and hath a greate wyde mouthe, with foure teeth and a deformed nofe, lowringe eyes, a grimme, terrible, and threatening countenance, with hooked handes lyke flefhehookes, and feete not much vnlyke the feete of a cocke. Al fuch as behold this horrible monfter, are fodeynly aftonied. For it is furely a thing moft vyle to beholde, and no leffe terrible. The chappel is on euery fyde ful of painted deuyls: and in euery corner thereof fytteyth a deuyl made of copper, and that fo workemanly handeled, that he femeth like flaming fire, miserably confuming the foules of men. This deuyl with his righte hande, putteth a foule to his mouth, and with his lefte hand, he taketh another from a place beneth. Euery morning their Priestes (called *Bramini*) washe the Image of the deuyl with rofe water, or fuch other fwete liquoure, and perfume hym with dyuerfe fwete fauours, kneeling on theyr knees and praying vnto him. Euerye feuenth day, thei take the bloud of a cocke and put it in a filuer veffel, ful of burning coales: addinge thereunto innumerable odoriferous gummes and pouders to make a fwete fmoke or fumigacion. Then the Prieste taketh his fenser with burning coles, putting therto frankencense, and thus maketh his oblacion to Sathan, during which tyme of facrifice, a lyttle fyluer bell, is ronge continuallye. The king fytteyth not downe to his meate, vntyll foure of his chapleins haue offred parte of the fame meate to the deuyl. And when the Kyng goeth to dyner, he fytteyth on the grounde withoute eyther carpet or table cloth. And as he fytteyth at diner, foure of the priestes wayte vpon him ftanding: not approchinge nere vnto hym by the diftaunce of foure pafes, geuing reuerent attendaunce vnto the kinges talke. When he hath dyned, the Priestes take the meate that is left, and geue it to the crows to eate: which byrdes they haue in fuch eftimacion, yat it is not lawful to hurt them. When the king fhall marie a wife, he goeth not to bed with her, vntil ſhe be defloured of ye high Priest, whom the king for his paines rewardeth with. v. C. [five hundred] pieces of golde.

The king honoureth the deuill.

The Image of the deuill.
The biſshop of Romes vicar at *Calicut*.

The deuill eateth foules.

The deuilles chaplins.

Sacrifice to the deuyl.

The chapleins offer to the deuyl.

The priestes wait on the kyng.

Crows had in eftimacion
The priestes defloure ye queene.

¶ Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.



Ext after the King, ye priestes which ferue ye Idols, are had in chiefe reuerence. Nexte vnto them, the Magistrates, called *Nerl*, are no leffe esteemed then amonge vs Senatoures or Lordes of the counsayl. When these goe abroade, they cary with them swordes, targettes, bowes and iauelins. Such as are counted of the thyrde order, are in like place with them, as are Artificers with vs. They of the fourth order, lyue by fishing. And to them of the fyfthe order, perteyneth the gathering of pepper, wyne, and walnuttes. The basest and poorest fort, are they which sowe and gather ryce, beyng contemned both of the priestes and Senatours. The Kinge, the Quene, and the inhabitantes of the cytie, haue almost no apparel, couering onely theyr fylthy partes with cotton of the tree called *Goffampine*, and not with filke: and are beside altogether naked. They goe barefoted and bareheaded. When the King is dead, yf there remayne alyue any heyres, males, either children or brethren, or brethers children, they succede not in the kingdome: for by custome of the countrey, the fysters sonnes are inheritours to ye crown: but yf there bee no fuche luyng, he succedeth in the kingdom which is nearest of bloud to ye king, of whiche costume, the reason is (as they faye) because the Priestes defloure the Quenes. When the King taketh any farre iourney, or rydeth a hunting, the Priestes wayte vpon the Quene at home, and kepe her company: for nothinge can be more thankfull to the kyng, then to haue the Quene thus accustomed in adulterye with the Priestes, by whiche common prostitucion of the quene, he maye well iudge that the chyldren borne of her, are not to be esteemed as his owne: and therefore assigneth the right of his inheritance to his fysters children, as to the nereft of his bloude, because his brothers children (as is sayd before) may not succede him in the kingdome by the custome of the countrey. The noble men and marchauntes vse this fashion among themfelues. Such as haue wyues, do often tymes chaunge theyr wyues, one frende with an other for th[e]ncrease of further frendship. At which exchaunging of wyues, one of them speaketh to another after this manner. Forasmuch as you are my veri frend, let vs chaunge wyues: on fuch condicion, that I maye haue yours and you myne. The other asketh him yf he speake in earnest. He sweareth yea: let vs goe then (fayth his felow) to my house: when they are come thether, the good man calleth forth his wife, faying vnto her:

Priestes.
Magistrates.Artificers.
Labourers.

The succession of the kingdom.

As are ye priestes, such is ye people.
The priestes kepe the quene.

Exchaunging of wyues.

Obedience in
cuyll.

One woman
married to seuen
men.

The punishment
of murther.

Sinne redemed
for money.

Superstition.

Outward
clenlynes.

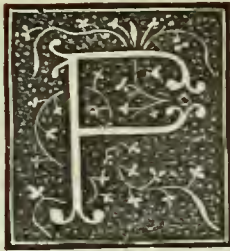
Deuylish
gestures.

Woman, come hether and folow this man: for he shall from henceforth be thy husband. She asketh him yf he speake in earnest: he answereth, in good earnest. Then sayth the woman: I wil folowe him gladly. He taketh her away with him, and in lyke maner sendeth his wyfe to his frende. And this is the custome which thei vse in chaunging of wyues. But the children remaine with theyr fyrste father. Other of these Idolaters vse dyuerse other customes. For among some of them, one woman is married to seuen husbandes, which lie with her by course one after another. And when she hath broughte forth a child, she sendeth it to whiche of her seuen husbandes she list: who maye in no case refuse it. When they eate, they lye along on the grounde, and haue theyr meate in great disshes, or treys of copper. In the stede of spones, they vse leaues of trees. Their meate, is ryce, fishe, spyces, and frutes of the common forte. Yf any man committe murther, and bee apprehended, he is punished after this maner.

They haue a kynde of gallows made, with a poste of the lengthe of foure pases: On the whyche, not farre from the toppe, are fastened two staues with sharpe endes, ye one lying ouer the other after the maner of a crosse: then the body of ye offender is thrust through vpon one of ye staues. And so the miserable wretche hangeth vntyll he haue geuen vppe the ghost. But yf any man wound another, or beate hym with a staffe, he redemeth th[e] offence, payinge to the king a certayn of golde. When they pray, they go fyrst before the ryng of the sunne, to some ryuer or standinge water, wherein they plunche themselues, to th[e] intent to washe them cleane: And so beeing washed, they touche nothing vntyll they haue at home at theyr houses, poured forth theyr prayers before theyr Idols. When they laye them selues down on the grounde, secretelly to praye, they make certayne deuylish gestures lyke vnto madde men, staring with theyr eyes, and turning them inward after a straunge forte, wyth no lesse deforminge their countenaunce, very monstrous to beholde. When the king prepareth him to ye warres he hath in a readynesse a hundreth thousand fotemen. For of horsemen they haue no vse, but only of such as fyght on Elephanes. Al that are of the Kinges bande, haue a filken fyllet of scarlet colour, tied about their heades. When thei go to the warres they vse round sweordes, targets, iauelins, and bowes.

¶ Of Pepper and other spices which growe in the region of Calicut.

Howe pepper
groweth



Pepper groweth in ye suburbes of the citie of *Calicut*. There is some also gathered within the citie. The stalke of pepper is veri weake: so that it can not stande vpryghte, without a stake or proppe to sustein it, as haue ye vines. It is not much vnlike vnto Iuie: and in like maner crepeth and stretcheth forth it self embrasing and ouerspreading such trees as grow nere vnto it. This tree (or rather shrubbe) is deuided into many braunches, of the lengthe of two or thre hand bredth. The leaues are lyke the leaues of an Orange tree: sauinge that these are somewhat groffer and fatter, with small vaynes running betwene on the contrarye side. On

euery twigge ther hangeth fixe thicke clusters of beries, a hand breadth in length, and of the colour of wild grapes. They are gathered in the monethes of October and Nouember: Inclininge yet to a grene colour, and so laying them on mattes or couerlettes, they fet them in the sunne to be dried: where, within the space of thre dayes, it waxeth black, euen as it is brought hether. They vse neyther cutting nor digging, or other tillage, but onely the simple and pure fruitfulness and encrease of the earth. Plinie sayth that the trees of pepper are lyke vnto oure iuniper trees. And that in his time, some affyrmed yat they were brought forth only in the front of ye mount *Caucasus* on the southfyde toward the sonne. But the Portugals, whiche in this our daies sayle into the East partes, haue found it otherwise. The region of *Calicut*, beareth also Ginger: which doubtles is a roote, and is often tymes founde of the weighte of. xii. vnces: but al are not of lyke bignes. This roote entreth no deper into ye ground, then. iii. or. iiii. handbredth, like vnto the rede. When ginger is digged out of ye ground, they leaue the knotte or ioynte of the roote, in the pytte out of which they digged the ginger: couering ye fame with earth as a fede, agaynst the next yeare to encrease and bring forth more ginger. It is found in playn ground of a redde erth, as ar *Mirabalanes*. Ther groweth also diuers other frutes and shrubbes vnknownen to vs, as *Iaceri*, *graccara*, *amba*, *Carocapel*, *Comolanga*, and such other of which some haue the taste and faouere of quinces, some of peaches, some of damaske prunes, some of melones, and some of figges, etc. *Aloe* groweth also in that region: and is a certayn gumme, gathered from a litle tree, which is fastened in the earth, onely with one roote after ye maner of a staffe, pytched in the grounde. The bodie of the tree, is tender and redde, of strong faouere and bitter tast. It fomtyme putteth forth droppes of gumme withoute anye cuttinge. And this of India, is muche better then that which groweth in *Iudea*.

Fruitful grounde
without tillage

Ginger.

A roote for a sede.

Fruytes vnknownen
to us.

Aloe.

¶ Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of Calicut: and of the wyne of the merueylous tree.



Here is found in *Calicut*, diuers and fundry kyndes of foure footed beastes and foules. As lions, wilde boores, hartes, hyndes, wolues, kyne, wylde oxen, goates, and Elephantes: whych neuertheles are not engendred there, but brought thether. There bee also grene poppingiays, and some [of] white fethers of variable colours, lying like scoutchins. Some also of purple colour. Of these there is such plentie, that they are fayne to appoint men to kepe them from the rice which groweth there in the feldes. They are merueilous chatteringe and of small price. There are also birdes called *Sarau*, fomwhat lesse then poppingiayes, but make a much sweter noyfe. There are also manye other kyndes of byrdes vnylyke vnto oures: Of which, euerye morning and euening is hearde fuche a harmonie and so fwete a noyfe, that nothing can be more delectable: In so little mouthes consisteth in maner al musicke, and therfore the inhabitauntes lyue in greate pleafure, as though they were in an earthly paradise, where floures are euer springing, and trees continue grene al the hole year. The heauen is beneficiall vnto them, and the ayre most temperate continually. So that thei are nether bytten with colde in winter nor burnt with heate in fomer, but lyue as it were in continual springe tyme. The same region bringeth forth also Marmafets and Munkeys, whiche are great hinderaunce to ye men of the countrey: and specially to the poore forte, beecause they clyme the walnut trees, and spyllle the sweete liquoure of the fruyte thereof, of which the Indians make most pleasaunt wyne. For these Indians haue a tree most excellent aboue all other trees of the world, which bringeth fourth dates lyke vnto the Palme tree. This tree serueth them for firewood: and beareth a kynde of walnuttis most delicate to be eaten: Also a kind of cordes, softe cloth, wine, oyle, and fuger. But chiefly it bringeth fourth this excellent kynde of nuttes like vnto dates. From these they take awaye the fyrste rynde or barke and cast it in the fire. The other fruite is not muche vnylyke *Goffampine* cotton, or fylke. Of the floures they make cloth lyke filke: the flaxe whiche is leste, they spinne agayne, and make therof smal roopes or cordes. The last barke or rinde, containeth the nutte, whose thickenesse is no more then the lyttle fynger of a mans hande. Furthermore the sweete liquoure or wyne, is engendered with the nutte, so that as the nutte groweth, the liquoure also encreaseth: In so much that when the nut is full growen, the lyquoure fyllethe the inne warde partes of the fame. And thys liquoure or wyne, is most clare, not muche vnylyke vnto rose-water: Of which neuertheles is made a very fatte oile. They cut also the trunke or stocke of the tree in ye morning and euening: by whiche meanes they gather a most excellent liquour, which they seeth on the fyre, and make thereof so merueylous a drinke, that if a man drinke thereof beyond meafure, he is driuen into furie and madnes. This liquour is vsed there in the stede of wyne. But let vs nowe returne to the beastes which are found in *Calicut*. Serpentes growe there vnto such hodge greatnesse, that they are in maner as bigge as swyne. They haue heades muche larger then bores heades. Thei are foure foted, foure cubites in length, engendered and conuerfaunte in fennie and marrishe groundes. The men of that countrei faye that these beastes are without poyson. There are also found other kyndes of serpentes: of the whiche one kynde hath so mortall venime, that yf they drawe neuer so lyttle blud, it causeth present death. There are other serpentes which in quantite represent the serpent called *Aspis*. Again, otherfome are much higher of whiche there are greate plentie. The men of the countrey thinke yat they are spirites fallen from heauen: and therfore haue them in great reuerence. Thei haue conceaued this opinion of them, because that in maner with touching, they bringe present death. And this is the cause whi there is so great abundaunc[e] of serpentes, that by the kinges commaundement it is not lawful to hurt them: and therfore they wander safelye where them listeth, and are esteemed of them as thinges that bring good fortune. For whereas the men of yat countrey, goe abroade aboute anye busines, thei take it for good luck to mete any of them by the waye. The poppingiayes of *India* are for the most part, of grene colour beyde ye head, which is ether redde or yelow like golde. They haue a great and large tounge, and are therfore of a louder voyce, and speake more plainly. They learne the fyrst and second yeare such thinges as are taughte them. And beare them longer in memory. They drinke wyne, and vse theyr fete in the stede of handes when they feede.

Papingiayes of
dyuers kyndes.

Sweete singinge
of birdes

Earthly paradise
Temperate ayre.
Continual spring.
Munkeys.

A tree of sundrye
commodities.

Silke of trees.

Ropes of trees.
Wyne of trees

Oyle of water

Serpents as bigge
as swine

Serpents without
poyson.

Serpentes counted
for heauenly
spirites.

Grene
poppingiayes

¶ Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in Calicut, and from whence they are brought thither.

Canonor.

Zaylon.

Corimucol.

Melusa.

Molucha.

Pego.

Ormus

Cambaia.

Arabia.

Chiua.

Samotor.

Darnasseri.



Inger groweth in *Calicut*, yet is there much broughte thether from the cytie of *Canonor*.

Cinamome commeth from the Ilande of *Zaylon*, whyche is fyfye leages beeyonde *Calicut* Eastwarde.

Pepper groweth in *Calicut*: but muche more is broughte thether from *Corimucol*, whiche is. xij. leages beyonde *Calicut*.

Cloues are gathered in a place, called *Melusa*, certayn leages distant from *Calicut*.

Nutmegges and Mace, growe in *Molucha*, beyng distante from *Calicut* hundreth and thre score leages, and fomewhat more.

Muske and Castoreum, is brought from the region of *Pego*, whiche is from *Calicut*, almoste hundreth and fyfye leages.

Pearles of the biggest forte, are gathered neare vnto the Iland and cytie of *Ormus*, situate in the goulfe called *Sinus Perficus*: And are fente from thence to *Calicut*, as to the generall market towne of all the East partes.

Spikenarde, and Mirabalanes, are brought from *Cambaia* to *Calicut*.

Frankencense, and Myrre, come from *Arabia*.

Aloe, and *Camphyre*, are brought from *Kyui*, or *Chiua*. l. [fifty] leages from *Calicut*.

Long pepper cometh from *Samotor*. Cardamome ye greater, is brought from *Canonor*.

Preslium, or brafyll, cometh from *Darnasseri*, otherwyse called *Tarnasseri*, almost. CC. [two hundred] leages from *Calicut*.

¶ Of the Iland of Zaylon, and of Cinomome found there.

Elephantes.

Precious stones.

Cinomome.



Zaylon is a very large region, and bringeth forth cheselye Elephantes in greate plentie. It hath also Mountaynes of merueylous length: at the rootes wherof are found Rubines, Hiacinthes, Saphyres, Topases, and fuche other precious stones. In this Iland groweth the Cinomome tree, not much vnlyke ye bayetree, specially in the leaues. It bringeth forth graynes much lyke vnto baye berries, but fomewhat lesse and whytishe. That which we commonly call Cinomome, is nothings els but the barke or rynde of a tree, which is gathered after this maner. Euery thyrd yeare they cut of the braunches of the trees, and take of the barke or rynde thereof,

which is our Cinomome. They cut not the body of the tree, but only the branches. When it is first gathered, it is grene, and not perfectly swete vntyll it be kept a moneth. This Iland is situate vnder the Equinoctial line, where is continuall springe all the yeare. The inhabitauntes weare clokes, with one arme oute vncouered, and haue clothe made of *Goffampine* cotton, or of filke. A rede is to them in the stede of sworde, rapyre, and iaelyne. And are therefore feldome flayne in the warres.

The Equinoctial
lyne

Weapons of redes

¶ Of the cytie of Tarnasseri, and the maner of the cytezins there.

Narsinga.



The cytie of *Tarnasseri*, is distaunte from the Kingdome of *Narsinga*. xiiij. dayes sayling Eastward, and hath a king of great puyssaunce and marueylous riche. The foyle of this cytie, bringeth forth wheate, cotton of *Goffampine* trees, and plentie of filke. The fieldes bringe foorthe all kindes of fruites; quinces also and oranges. It is replenished with manye and fundrye kyndes of beastes aswell wyld as tame, as kyne, shepe, gotes, fwyne, hartes, hyndes, wolues and lyons. There are also feene those kyndes of cattes which beare the riche fures called *Zibellini*, which we call Sables. In all the fieldes and woodes of this region are founde

many Peacockes, Faulcons, and most fayre Poppingiayes of white colour intermingled with feuen variable coloures. There is also maruelous plentye of hares and partryches. There are manye of other straunge kyndes of foules: and specially such as lyue by praye, whiche are muche higher then Eagles: whose vpper beakes are of fuche bignes and hardnes, that handles for sweordes are made thereof. Also the cockes and hennes of thys region are

The beast whiche
beareth the furre
called Sables.

Foules of
meruelous bignes.

muche hygher and bigger then ours. When the people of the countrey goe to theyr meate, they lye downe on the grounde withoute carpet or cloth: Yet vse they wooden vesselles, workemanlye made. Theyr drinke is water myxte with fuger: but the poorer forte, drinke onelye water. Their beddes are made of Goffampine cotton, wyth couerlettes also of cotton or fylke. They goe all in generall barefooted excepte the Priestes. The Kyng of this cytye, doeth not commytte his wife to the Priestes to bee defloured, as doth the king of *Calicut*, but to whyte men, as are the christians and Turkes. For this office is not committed to the Idoloters. But after that the new married quene hath been thus defloured the fyrst night, yf euer after she doe dishonour the Kyng her husband, by violating the faith made to him, from thencefoorth neuer to knowe any other man carnally, her punishment is death incontynently. When the Kynges or the Priestes dye, their bodies are laid on a great fyre, and the ashes thereof referued in erthen pottes, putting thereto a porcion of false petre, and buryinge the same in theyr owne houses. While the bodies are burning, they cast into the fyre al kyndes of swete fauouring gummes, and spices: as Aloe, Frankencense, Myrre, Storax, Coralle, sandalles, and suche other innumerable: In the meane tyme blowing trumpets and shawmes, after the maner of them which amonge the gentiles were canonized into ye nombre of the goddesses. And within xv. dayes after ye husbandes death, the wyfe calleth to her all her kynffolkes, bidding them to a banquet: and so being decked with al her iewels, she procedeth with them to the place where her husbande was buried, where a graue is redye digged for her, inclosed about with filken cloth, hauinge in it a fyre made of swete wood. When the woman hath thus feasted her kynffolkes, she eateth much of the herbe called *Betola*, wherby she is driuen into a madnes. In thys meane whyle, innumerable trumpetters (wearing such vestures as they vse in the deuyls seruice) go as it were on proceffion aboute the graue, while the woman runneth vp and down, daunsing continually like a frantike bodie. And thus when the ceremonies are fynished, she casteth her selfe headlong into the fyre and graue: and that with no lesse cherefulness then yf she should be receaued into heauen. And vnlesse the woman should performe thys custome, she should incurre most vyle infamie, and be a mocking stocke to all her nacion, as one that loued not her husband. But the common people vse not thys custome: but only the rulers and princes. And therefore the king him selfe is often tymes presente at these solemnitie.

Beddes of silke.
Priestes.

The quene
defloured of white
menne.

Adulteri punished
with death
Howe the kinge
is buried.

Ministrels.

The quene dyeth
willingly.

The herbe *Betola*.

What credulitie
maye doe in false
religion.

Honour dere
boughte.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangella.



From the cytie of *Tarnafferi*, to the cytie of *Bangalla*, is. xi. dayes saylinge. This cytie hath a kyng: and the countrey is very fruyteful with great plentie of wheat, fleshe, fuger, ginger, and goffampine cotton: and hath therefore very rich marchantes. There yearly passeth from this citie fyftie shippes frayghted wyth goffampine cotton, and filke clothes: which are caried from thence to the Turkes, Syrians, Arabians, Persians, Ethiopians, and Indians. Here are also founde certayne Christian merchaunt men, which come out of Th[e] empire of the great *Cham* of *Cathay*: bringing with them Aloe, Castoreum and the swete gumme called *Laserpitium*, with other swete fauours. In this cytie, the men spinne and carde and make clothe, and not the womenne. From this cytie Eastwarde, is another great citie called Pego, beyng situate by a verye fayre ryuer. The Kinge of thys cytie, is an Idolater, and hathe innumerable menne of warre, both horsemenne and footemenne. The foyle beareth wheate plentifullye: and bringeth forth in maner all kyndes of beastes, and hath therefore great abundaunce of fleshe, yet are there but fewe Elephants: But of other beastes and foules, great plentie as is at *Calicut*: and speciallye of poppingiayes, whiche are of louder voice then in any other place. There is little trafficque or marchaundise in this region, except iewels and precious stones, and speciallye Rubies, called *Pyropi*, whiche are broughte thether from the cytie of *Capelan*. These precious stones shyne so brighte in the darke nyghte, as thoughe it were the sonne beames. The countrey adioyning, bringeth forth *Lacha*, *Sandalum*, called faunders: Also brafile, goffampine cotton and fylke. From *Pego* to the cytie of *Malaccha* (whiche some call *Melaqua*) is eygh[t]e dayes saylinge: where on the other fyde is sene a great Iland called *Sumatra*, otherwise *Samotra*, and was in time paste called *Taprobana*. This *Malaccha*, hath a goodly and commodious haue: by reason wherof, moe shippes arriue there then in any other place: bringinge with them spyces and other marchaundise in great abundance. The region is not generally fruytful, yet hath it wheat and fleshe: but greate scarcenesse of wood. The foules wander in the felde as they doe in the region of *Calicut*. But the poppingiayes are here much fayrer. It bringeth forth also spices, faunders, tinne, elephantes, horses, shepe, wilde oxen, pecokes, and such other kyndes of beastes. It is not lawfull there to bye and sell, except you bye spices and fylke. It is also there very dangerous to walke in the citie in the nyghte seafon, because of the theft and cruelnes of the inhabitantes, which kil one another like dogges. And therefore the marchaund straungers lodge not out of their shippes. How the Portugales subdued *Malaccha*, shalbe said hereafter in the description of the newe Ilandes.

The king and
citie of *Bangella*

Silke.

Christian men of
Cathay.

The citie of Pego.

Rubies shyning by
nyght.
Lacha, *Lacca*, or
Lacta, is ye
gumme of a tree
wherewith silke is
colored.
Malaccha.
Sumatra.
Taprobana.

¶ Of the greate and ryche Ilande of Sumatra, or Samotra, sometyme called Taprobana.

The Iland of
Taprobana.

Men of a hundreth
yeres of age.

Shelles of fishes
for houses.

Great pearles.
Coyned golde and
siluer for moneye.

Fishes of
monstrous
bignesse.

Lacha.

Pepper solde by
measure.
Cathay.
The Iland of
banda.

The nutmeg tree.

Mace.

The Iland of
Monoch.

Cloues.

Charles Waine.
Pole Antartike.



Some thinke this Sumatra, to be that Iland which of the old writers is called *Taprobana*. It is verye great and riche: and hath in it foure Kinges crowned with Diademes. They are Idolaters: in religion, maner of luyng, and apparell, not muche vnlyke the Kinge of *Tarnafseri*. They exceede all other men in bignesse of bodie. They haue greye or blewe eyes, and are of cruell countenance, and terrible voyce. They are long lyued and lyue euen vntyl an hundreth yeres of age. The sea in certayne chanelis is of such heighth and depth, that no anker may come to the bottome therof. The inhabitantes are great fyshers on the sea, and haue great pleasure to take the shelle fysh, called the Tortoyse of the sea: of whiche, some are of suche hodge bignes, that the shelle of one of them may suffice to make a house well able to receaue a hole famelie. For some of them beare shelles of xv. cubites in length: and are therefore apt for that purpose. The most part of this Ilande is burnt with heate, and hath in it many desolate places and wildernes. There are founde many and greate Pearles. For theyr money, they vse coyned golde, syluer and tynne. The golden coyne, hath on the one fyde a deuils head grauen, and on the other fyde a chariot which Elephantes draw. This region bringeth fourth more plentie of Elephantes, of greater stature, and a better broede, then are found in any other place. In the sea about this Ilande, are often tymes sene the great monstrous fyshes, and kynde of Whales, called Balene, which bring many incommodities to the inhabitantes. They are of such monstrous bignes, that when they approche to the Sea bankes, they seeme lyke vnto hylles: they haue rough backes full of sharpe prickes. And except men walke very warely by the sea bankes, they are in daunger to be sodeynly swalowed vp of these monstres. Some of them haue so greate and wyde mouthes, that they sometymes swallowe whole shippes with the men. This countrey bringeth fourth the *Lacha*, *Lacca*, or *Lacta*, which steyneth filke and cloth in high redde or crimison coloure. It is engendred in a tree, not much vnlyke vnto our walnut trees. Ther is also great plenty of pepper, higher then is founde in other places. In their mother tonge pepper is called *Molaga*. It is solde there by measure, as wheat is with vs, and not by weight. There is so great plentie hereof, that there are yearly certayne shippes laden therewith to *Cathay*, where ye aire is colder. From Sumetra to the Iland of Banda, which is but rude and barren, and of playne and lowe grounde, whose inhabitantes are barbarous, and little differinge from beastes, hauing lowe houses, and no apparell but shertes, barefoted and bareheaded, with long heare, of despicable stature, dulle witted, of no strength, and Idolaters. The foyle of this countrey, bringeth forth nothing but nutmegges, and a few other fruites. The stalke or bodi of ye nutmeg-tree, is not much vnlike ye stalke of a peache tree, bringing forth lyke braunches and leaues, but somewhat narrower. Before these nutts be ripe, ye mace crepeth on the tree, lyke a flourishing rose. And when the nutte waxeth ripe, the mace embraseth it round about. And so they gather both together in commune, at a tyme appointed: for they vse no distribucion thereof, but he that gathereth most, hath most. This tree bringeth forth his fruyte plentifully without any arte of husbandrye or tyllage. They are gathered at such time as we gather chestnuttes. From this Iland within fixe dayes sayling, is the Iland of *Monoch*, in the which cloues are founde, as also in other Ilandes, therto adioyninge. The tree whiche beareth cloues, hath his stalke not much vnlike vnto the boxe tree, with leaues lyke the Cinomome tree, but somewhat rounder. And when the cloues beginne to waxe ripe, they beate the trees with redes, spreding fyrst couerlettes or mattes vnder ye same. The grounde where these trees grow, is of ye colour of cleye or sand. This region is situate so low, that ye feuen starres called *Septentriones* (being not farre from *Vrsa maior*, called charles wayne) can not there be sene, because ye fourth pole (called pole Antartike) appeareth aboute the earth.

¶ Of the Ilande of Bornei.

Idoloters.

Camphire.



The Iland of Bornei (which some call Porne) is distant from *Monoch* fiftie leages. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, very quick witted, and of maner of liuing not greatly to be discommended. They vse not al one kynde of apparell. Some weare shertes of goffampine cotton, some beastes skinnes, and some high cappes lyke myters, of redde colour. This Iland bringeth forth yearly great plentie of *Camphora*, called camphyre, whiche they affirme to be the gumme of a certayn tree. Of this Ilande I wil speake more hereafter in the nauigacions toward the East partes.

¶ Of the Iland of Giaua.



The Iland of *Gyaua*, is distant from *Bornei*. v. dayes sayling towarde the south. This Iland is so great, yat it conteineth in it many kingdoms: ye inhabitantes ar geuen to idolatri. It bringeth forth filke, which of it felse groweth there plentifullye in the wooddes. The precyous stone called *Smaragdus* (which is ye true *Emerode*) is found there more excellent, then in any other place of the worlde. It hath abundaunce of golde and copper of the best kynd. The foyle beareth wheat and other corne, with al kindes of fruites in great plentie. When the men of this cuntrye goe to the sea, theyr weapons are bowes, and arrowes of redes. They vse also to infect theyr arrowes with venime, and to blowe them oute of a trunkes as we doe pellets of claye: with the which yf they drawe neuer so little bloud, presente death foloweth immedia[t]lye. They haue also this custome, that when they see theyr parentes by reason of age to be vnprofitable, they bring them to the market towne, and there sell them to the people called *Anthropophagi*, which eat mens fleshe, of whom they are incontinently slayne, and eaten. The same doe they with the yonger sorte also, yf they fall into any desperate difeafe.

Silke groweth in woodes.
The smaragde or emerode.
Go'de and copper
Arrowes of redes
Arrowes infected with venime.
A strange custome.
Anthropophagi.

¶ Of the Iland of Iaua.



Here are two Ilandes of thys name, as *Iaua* the more and *Iaua* the lesse. The biggest reacheth forth toward the South, and is sayd to haue in it many kingdoms. The inhabitantes are Idolaters and haue a peculier language. In this Iland is greate plentie of pepper, Nuttemegges, Spikenarde, Galangale, and other spices. Mani marchauntes of other countreies are wont to reforte thether, and geat great riches by ye spices which they carie from thense. In this Iland also are people called *Anthropophagi*, which are wont to eate mens fleshe.

Spices.

¶ Of the Iland of Madagafcar.



This Iland is counted to be one of the greatest and rycheffe Ilandes of the worlde. The inhabitantes are of Mahumets secte as are the Turkes. It bringeth forth many Elephanthes, by reason wherof there is greate plentie of Iuerie which is the Elephanthes tothe. For it is thought that there is no greater plentie of Iuerie, then in this Iland and in the Iland of *Cuzibet*. They eate the fleshe of none other beastes, but onely of Camels, because the Ilande is full thereof, and also that it is founde to be more holesome for the people of that countrey then any other fleshe. There are also in this Iland many woddes that bringe forth redde sanders, for the which many marchauntes resort thether. In the sea about this Iland, great whales are taken, out of the which amber is gathered. There are lions, leopardes, hartes, hyndes, goates, and many other beastes and foules, by reason whereof, they vse muche haukinge and huntinge.

Mahumetistes
Elephanthes.
Iuerie

The Iland of *Cuzibet*.
Camels fleshe eaten.
Woddes of redde Sanders.
Whales
Amber.
Lions, and Leopardes.

¶ Of the Iland of Zanzibar.



The Ilande of *Zanzibar*, hath a peculier Kinge and language. The inhabitantes are idolaters, and are of grosse and shorte stature: but yf theyr heygth dydde aunswere to theyr thickenesse and breadth, they mighte seme to be giauntes. They are all blacke, and goe naked, onely couering theyr pryue partes. The heare of theyr heades, is merueylouslye corlde. They haue greate mouthes, nosethrilles flyrtting vpwarde and wyde, with great eares and cruell eyes. Theyr women are deformed by reason of theyr greate eyes, greate mouthes, and greate nosethrilles. They liue with milke, fleshe, ryce, and dates. They lacke wyne: yet they make a pleasaunt drinke of ryce, fuger, and other spices. Many marchauntes resort thether for yuerie and Amber, for there is greate plentye of Elephanthes and greate whales.

✓
Bigge men of low stature.

People deformed

Ryce and Dates.
Drinke of spices
Amber.

¶ *Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women.*



IN the mayne fea, there are two Ilandes, distante the one from the other aboute. viiiij. or. ix. leagues toward the fouth, situate betwene the cytie of *Aden* and *Calicut*. In one of the which dwell onely men without the company of women, and is called the Ilande of men. And in the other dwell onely women, without men, and is called the Ilande of women. They are Christians and contract matrimonie. The women neuer come to the Ilande of men, but the men are accustomed to vyfite the women once in the yeare, and tarye with them thre monethes continually, euery man with his owne wife in his owne houle: after which time they returne agayn to [t]her owne Ilande, where they remayne all the yere after. The women kepe the men children with them vntyll they bee xv. yeares of age, and then fend them to theyr fathers. The women haue nought els to do, but to take charge of their children, and to gather certayne fruites. But the men labour and haue care how they may fynde theyr wyfe and chyl dren. They are exercyfed in fyfhing, and fell fyfhes both newe taken and olde dryed, to marchaunte ftraungers, whereby they receaue great commodities.

The Iland of men.

The Iland of women.
Christians

Fyfhing.

¶ *Of the greate Emphyre of Cathay, being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of Tartaria, in olde tyme called Scythia.*



THe fuperiour or high *India*, whiche is nowe called *Cathay*, is a region excedinge large and of greate power, whose Emperour is ye great Cham of *Tartaria*, hauinge vnder him many Prouinces, people and Princes, and innumerable Ilandes in the great East fea, called the greate Ocean. He hath vnder his dominion great and famous cities, as are thefe: *Cambalu*, *Quenquinafu*, *Mien*, *Cacaufu*, *Canglu*, *Tadinfu*, *Tingui*, and dyuers other. Among the people of this countrey, one man hath manye wyues, whiche declare theyr loue to their husbandes after this fort. When the husband is dead, euery one of his wiues pleade their caufe before a iudge, to proue which of them was most louing to her husband and beste beloued of him: fo yat fhe which by the fentence of the iudges is found to haue been most faythful and diligente, decketh her felfe moſte gorgiouſly in all her ſumptuous araye, and procedeth like a *Virago* ſtoutly and cherefully to the fire, where the corps of her husbande was burnt, caſtinge her felfe into the fame fyre, embracing and kiſſing the dead bodi of her husband, vntyll ſhe alſo be confumed by the fyre, whiche ſhe reputeth for an honourable ſepulture: whereas his other wyues are eſtmed to lyue in ſhame and infamie. They ioyne in mariage, neyther in reſpect of riches or nobilite, but onely for loue and beautie: and rather for ye encrease of poſteritie, then for pleaſure. There is alſo another ſtraunge cuſtome among theſe Indians: and yat is, that whereas the poorer fort are not able to geue any dowry with theyr doughters to mariage, they bringe them forth, euen in ye floure of their age to ye market place, with trumpettes and ſuch other instrumentes as they vſe in the warres. Where, the multitude beyng called together, the maydes fyrſte of all, diſcouere theyr backe partes, euen vp to the ſhoulders, and afterward theyr forepartes in lyke maners. And vpon this declaring their pouertie and nakednes, are married to ſuch as lyke them beſt. This people of *Cathay*, are of the nacion of them which in tyme paſt were called *Scythians*, a kind of men (as faith *Haitho*) of ſubtil wyt: affyrming that onely they ſee with two eies, and that all other men befyde them are blind of the one eye. Theyr quickenes or witte is great, but their boaiſting is more. The hole nacion is perſwaded that they greatly excel all other men in ſubtelte of wit and knowledge. The inhabitantes are whyte men, with ſmall eyes, withoute beardes, and vtterly voyde of all godly knowledge. For ſome of them pray to the funne, ſome to the mone, ſome to Images, ſome to an oxe, and ſome to other monſters of theyr phantaſticall ſuperſticion. They haue no law written, and are of no faith. And albeit that in workemanſhip and artes they are marueylous wyttie, yet haue they no knowledge of dyuine or godly thinges. It is a timorous kynde of men, and greatly fearinge death. And are therefore in theyr warres, more politike then valient. In the warres, they vſe arrowes, and certayne other kyndes of weapons vnknown to men of other countreis. The monie which they vſe, is made of a certayne paper, beeinge foure ſquare, with ye Kinges ymage printed thereon. Theyr houſholde ſtuſſe is

The great Cham
of Tartari

Famous cities
vnder the greate
Cham.

Manye wyues.
What naturall
affection may doe

A ſtraunge
cuſtome

The people of
Cathay.

Ido. otours.

Money of paper

of golde and fyluer and other metals. They haue greate scarcenes of oyle. The great Emperour of *Cathay*, keepeth his courte in the riche and mightie cytie called *Cambalu*, being the chefest citie of all the Empyre, and of fuch greatnesse that it conteyneth in circuite fixe leages. This citie is foure square, so that euery quadrature or fyde of the wall, hath in it thre principal portes or gates. Also in all the corners of the walles, are veri faire palaces, in which the artillery or armure of the cytie is referued. The stretes are made very streyght and right forth: so that from any one gate to the other beinge directly ouer against the fame, a man may se plainly through the cytie, hauing ye houfes on euery fyde lyke palaces, placed in goodly ordre, most beautifull to behold. Without the cytie, there are twelue great fuburbes, adherent to the. xii. gates of ye cytie, whether the marchauntes and fraungers, haue their continual recourse as to ye burse or strete. It can not be spoken what great abundaunce of marchaundife and riches is brought to [t]his citie: a man wold thinke that it were sufficient to ferue all the worlde. Precious stonnes, pearles, filke, and spices of dyuers kindes are brought thether, from *India* and *Mangi*, and other regions. There passeth not a daye in the yeare in which there are not about a thousand waynes laden with filke which are brought to this citie by straunge marchauntes. What greate pompe, glory, and furniture of all thinges, is obserued in the Emperours courte, it can not be spoken. He hath in his courte twelue thousand horfemen, whiche haue the custodie of his body: and distribute their waytinge dayes after this order, yat whereas one of ye captaynes of this garison with his thre thousand fouldiers hath wayted vpon the kinges perfonne, three dayes, another captayne in lyke order wyth as manye menne succedeth in hys rowme for other three dayes, and lykewyse an other after hym, executethe the fame offyce. When the Emperoure maketh anye bankette, it cannot be faid what greate pompe is obserued. He hath fytting at his lefte hand his chefest quene whom he most estemeth: and at his right hand hys fonnes, and fuche as are of the kinges bloud: but thei fyt fomewhat lower and further of. The other noble men which wayte not, fytte in a place yet somewhat lower. All fuch as ir the court fyt at meat, vse none other drinking cuppes then of gold. The Princes whiche wayte on the Emperoure at hys meate, haue all theyr mouthes couered with fyne filken clothes, leaft in any case they should blow or breath on the kinges meate or drinke. And when the Emperour lifteth vp his cup to drinke, al the musiciens and minstrels that stand about him, playe on theyr instrumentes, while in the meane time all fuche as wayte on hym, stoupe downe and make lowe curtesie. How great honoure is exhibited to this Emperour, and howe manye precious and riche presentes are offred vnto him by his Princes, Dukes, Leauetenauntes and presydenes of prouinces, and rulers of cities, no man is able to expresse, forasmuche as he hath vnder him in maner innumerable Kingdomes, Prouinces, Nacions and Dominions, which are on euery fyde about *Cathay*, and acknowledge him to be theyr onelye Lorde and King, whom they honoure and reuerence as a great God and mighti Mahumet. In what pompe and triumphant magnificence he sheweth him self when he goeth to hauke or hunt, and how manye tentes he pitcheth in the felde, which beinge fene a farre of, a man would thinke to be a greate cytie, he that desyreth to knowe, let him reade *Paulus Venetus*, in the second boke of hys nauigacions into *India*, where he shal find thinges to marueyl at. In *Cathay* they make a pleasaunt drinke of ryce and certayne spyces, which in drinking excelleth the swetenes of wine. In many places they haue great lacke of wood: In the stede wherof, they digge out of the mountaynes a certayn kinde of blacke stone whiche burne in the fyre like coles, and continue so long, that yf they be kyndled ouer night, they kepe fyre vnto the morning.

Golde and Syluer.

The cytie of
Cambalu.

Marchandyse.

Precious stonnes
and spyces.
Note.The king of
Cathay his court

The Quene.

Golden plate.
Worldly glory.

A liuing Idol.

Paulus Venetus.

Drinke of rice and
spyces.

Digged cole.

¶ Of certayne Prouinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of Cathay.



Here passeth through the kingdom of *Cathay*, a certayne greate ryuer called *Pulifachnites*, which emptieth it selfe in the great Ocean Sea, by the whiche ryuer, shippes haue their passage into that lande. Ouer this ryuer is a very fayre bridge of marble, beyng in length three hundred pases, and in breadth, eyght pases, with. xxiii. arches, and grauen Lions on euery fyde, adorning the rayles or highest margentes of the same. From hence it is not farre to the fayre and greate kingdom of *Tainfu*, in the which are many goodli vynes. For in the kingdom of *Cathay* there groweth no wyne, but is brought thether from this region. In this kingdome is greate vse of marchaundyse, and hath plentie of conning artificers, so that al the armure which the great Cham vfeth in his warres, is made there. Toward the region of *Mangi*, is situate the ryuer *Caromoram*, whiche for the greate breadth and depth, hath no bridge. In this region is greate abundaunce of Ginger, filke, byrdes, and speciallye Phefantes. Somewhat beyonde this, is the great cytie of *Quenquinafu*, beyng the chief cytie of the same kingdome. In this region are founde many muskecattes. This beast in this countreye, is

A greate bridge of
marble.The kingdome of
Tainfu.

Connyng artificers

Ginger.

Quenquinafu.

The muske catte.

Suet or muske.

but lyttle and fayre, aboute the bignesse of a meane catte, with grosse heare lyke a harte, hauinge blunte clawes on his fete, with two longe teeth in the vpper iawe, and two in the nether iawe: and hath nere vnto the nauell a bladder full of a certayne matter like vnto bloud, being of wonderful fragrant faouere, and is the true muske.

¶ Of the Prouince of Mangi, and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same.

Marchandyse.

Salte.

Sylke.

Cloth of golde.

Ryce.

vi. M [six thousand] bridges of stone.

The great citie of Quinsai.

xij. M. [twelve thousand] bridges of stone.

Artificers.

Marchauntes.

Common banketinge houses.

A good prouision againste fyre.

Flesh of horses eaten.

A prouision against rebellion.

Anthropophagi.

Hennes hauinge heare in the stede of fethers.



The Prouince of *Mangi*, hath in it many notable and great cities, in the whiche is great exercyse of marchaundyse: and specially in the citie of *Conigangui*, is folde great plentie of falt. In the cytie of *Panchi*, there is great fale of filke. In the cytie of *Sianfu*, is made great plentie of clothes of golde and filke. In the cytie *Singui* is a famous market. where great abundance of marchaundise is brought by the ryuer. Nere vnto the citie of *Caigui*, groweth plentie of blade and ryce, that it is caried from thence to the court of the greate Cham. In ye citie of *Singui*, are numbred to be about fixe thoufande bridges of stone, hauinge so highe arches, that greate shippes maye passe vnder the same without bowing down of the mast. There is another citie called *Quinsai*, which is so fayre and great, that there is thought to be no bigger in al the worlde. It conteyneth in circuite, a hundreth Italien miles, which make. xxv. leages. It hath twelue thoufande bridges of stone, and those so highe that greate shippes with the maste standing vp right, maye passe vnder. This cytie is situate in a mariffhe ground, mucche lyke vnto venes. Therefore if they should lack bridges, they could not passe ouer from the one fyde of the streete to the other. It hath innumerable artificers and many marchauntes. The cytezins lyue pleafantly, and specially the women, which are fayrer then in other partes of *India*. Toward the South fyde of the cytye, there is a great lake or poole within ye walles of the cytie, whiche conteyneth in circuite about. viii. leages, hauinge about the bankes therof many noble mens houfes, very fayre both without and within. In the middeste of this lake, there are two litle Ilandes and in euery of them a goodly palace, in ye which are referued al fuche ornamentes and veffels as they vse for theyr mariages and solemne feastes, for whereas any of the cytezins entende to make any great banquet, or feast, they bring theyr gastes to one of these palaces, where they are honorably entertained. In the stretes of ye citie, are certaine comon towres, into ye which, al such as dwell neare therto, carie theyr goodes and stufte, yf it so chaunce, yat fyre be in the citie. The inhabitantes are Idoloters: and eate the fleshe of horses and camels, and of other vnclene beastes. The great Cham hath in this cytie a myghtie garison to the intente to auoyde rebellion, thefte and murther. For on euery bridge there wayteth dayly and nightlye. x. watchmen for the same purpose: and because the Prouince of *Mangi* is exceding large, the great Cham hath deuyded it into nyne Kingdomes, affinginge vnto euery one a peculier Kyngde: whiche are al of greate powre, and yet subiecte to the greate Cham. One of them dwelleth in the citie of *Quinsai*. In thys Prouince of *Mangi*, is an other Kyngdomme, called *Fugui*, in whiche the people eate mannes flesshe, so that they dye not of any disefase. They drinke the bloud and eate the fleshe of such as are flayne in ye warres. There are hennes found in this region, which in the stede of fethers, haue heare much lyke cattes heare of blacke colour: And laye very goode egges.

¶ Of the region of Tangut, and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuylles hearde in the same, and of the Salamandra.

The way from Persia to *Cathay*.The cytie of *Lop*.The iorney by y^e desertes.

Bitter waters.



From the Kingdome of Persia, there are two iorneyes to the region of *Cathay*. For either the south side must be obserued towarde *India*, or elles to passe by the prouinces of *Carcham*, *Cotam*, and *Peim*, Northeastwarde to the citie of *Lop*, beyng the greatest and most notable cytie in all that region, lying betwene the East and the North at the entraunce at the great desert. In this cytie, al fuche marchauntes, as entende to passe the desertes, make preparacion for all thinges necessarye for their iorneye: And rest in the same, vntill they are well prouided of strong asses and camels to carye there vitayles. And when in ye desert their vitayles begin to fayle them, they kyl their asses or leaue them there in the wyldernes, because they can no longer prouide them of pasture, vntyll they haue passed ouer the deserte. But they preferue theyr camelles, beecause they are susteyned wyth lesse meate, and beare greater burthens. In this deserte are often tymes founde bytter waters: but more often fresshe and sweete waters: so that in maner euerye daye for the space of thyrtye dayes, a man maye fynde fresshe water, but that in so lyttle quantitie that it doeth not suffice al the marchauntes whiche passe that waye together. That

deferte is verye full of mountaynes. And when you are come to the lowe and playn ground, the residue of the iourney is all together by the sandes : it is throughout baren and saluage, so that it is not able to nourishe any beastes for lacke of pasture. In this wildernes are often tymes heard and sene, as well by daye as by night, fundrie illusions of euyl spirites. And therefore fuche as trauayle throughe the same, haue nede to take great hede leaft they disseuer or depart farre in fundre, or leaste any linger behynde his companie, aswel for that he may hereby lose the sight of them by reason of mountaynes or hilles, lyinge beetwene, as also because there are heard voyces of deuyls, calling them that wander alone, by theyr proper names, conterfeyting the voyces of theyr companie that goeth beefore, by this meanes withdrawing them from the right waye, and bringinge them to destruccion. There is often tymes heard in the ayre, as it were a noyse of musicall instrumentes : but more often like the founde of drumslades or timbrels. This great desert being passed ouer, they come to the cytie called *Sachion*, which is situate in the enteraunce of the greate Prouince of *Tangut*, where amonge certayne Mahumetistes, are found a fewe Christian men called *Nestoriani* of the secte of *Nestorius*. There are also manye Idoloters, hauinge theyr monasteries consecrated to dyuers Idols, to which they offre manye sacrifices and attribute greate honor to deuyls. And when a man hath a sonne borne, he forthwith commendeth him to some Idol, in whose honoure he nourissheth a ramme al that yeare, which after that his sonne be twelue monethes olde, at the nexte feaste of the same Idoll, he and his sonne offre with many ceremonies. When this oblacion is finished, thei bringe the sacrificed fleshe to a place appoynted, where al his kinffolkes being gathered together, they eate that fleshe with great religion, and kepe the bones reuerently in a certayn vessell : but in the funeralles of the dead they vse these ceremonies and supersticions. Al the neighbors of the dead, prouyde that the dead corps be burned : which custome all the people of the East partes do obserue. Yet some of them kepe ye dead bodye by them certayne dayes beefore they burne it : As some, seuen daies : some for the space of a moneth and some fixe monethes, preparing for the same a close cheste, so inuoluinge with cereclothe, and pouderinge with spyces the bodye therein inclosed, that no euyl fauoure maye passe foorth. Thys done, they paynte the cheste very curiouslye, and couer it with a precious clothe, placinge theyr dnyng table harde by the same, where they dyne continually as long as the dead bodie is thus referued at home. And in the dyner tyme for the space of one hole houre, they sette wyne and meat vpon the cheste, supposyng the soule of the dead bodye to be partaker of the same. The Region of *Tangut*, is verye large, and conteyneth in it many priuate Prouinces, as the Prouince of *Camul*, of *Cinchital*, and *Suchur*, wyth dyuerse fayre Cyties, whiche are all Subiecte and obeye to the great Cham of *Cathay*. Some of the inhabitantes beleue in Mahumet : some acknowledge Chrifte after the heresye of *Nestorius*. In the land of *Chinchital*, is a Mountayne oute of the whyche is dygged the myne of stele and Audanici. There is also founde the Serpente called *Salamandra*, which lyueth in the fyre wythoute any hurte. Of the heare of this serpent, is made a certayne cloth, which being cast in the fyre when it is foule, is thereby made cleane and very white if it remaine there for ye space of an houre. Such other innumerable and marueilous thinges, writeth *Paulus uenetus* that he hath sene and founde in his nauigacions into these partes : of whom also I haue gathered thus muche, lettynge passe manye other thinges whereof he speaketh more at large.

Illusions of euyl spirites

Voices of deuyls

Straunge noises in the ayre

The citie of *Sachion*.Christians of the heresie of *Nestorius*.

Monasteries of Idoloters.

A strange custome

Ceremonies in funeralles

A grosse and vayne perswasion

The region of *Tangut*.

Mahumetistes.

Stele. *Salamandra*.*Paulus Venetus*

¶ Here endeth the descripcion of the Nauigacions
from Spayne to the newe India Eastward,
and foloweth

Of the newe Ilandes and India found in the West Ocean sea,
from Spayne Westward and Southweste.

¶ Of the newe India,
and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea,
how, when, and by whom they
were found.

*Christophorus
Columbus.*

Great enterprises
have euer ben
counted
phantasticall.

The fyrst viage
of *Christophorus
Columbus.*

The Ilandes
called *Gades.*
The Ilandes of
Canaria,

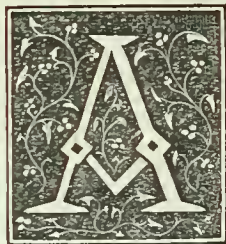


Christophorus Columbus, a Gentleman of Italie, and borne in the cite of *Genua*, when he had been longe conuerfaunt in the Kyng of Spaynes courte, he applyed hys mynde to fearch vnknewen partes of the worlde. And for his better furtheraunce herein, made humble petition to the kinge, to ayde him in this his enterpryse, which doubtlesse shoulde redownde to his great honour, and no little commoditie to all the hole countreye of Spayne, yf by his helpe and charges, he might fynde new regions. But the Kinge and Quene laughed him to scorne, saying: that his ymaginacion was but vayne and phantasticall. At the length, eyght yeares beyng passed ouer, and *Columbus* styll persistinge in his purpose and fute, the Kyng began to geue eare to his talke, and after muche reafoning and debating of the matter, determined to trie the witte of the manne. And there vpon commaunded a foyst and two brigantines to be furnished with all kynde of ordinaunce and vitalyes: which being pre-

pared, the fyrst of September, in the yere of Christ 1492, *Columbus* departed from the coastes of Spayne, and wente forwarde in his viage longe desyred. And when he had passed the Ilandes called *Gades*, he diuerted toward the fortunate Ilandes called *Insula Fortunata*, which are now called *Canaria*, because they are full of dogges. They were in time past called Fortunate, for the excellent temperatenes of the ayre, and greate fruytefulness. *Columbus* departinge from hense, sayled towarde the Weste, and at the length founde certayne Ilandes, of the whiche two were very greate, wherof the one he called *Hispana*, and the other *Iohanna*.

¶ Of the two Ilandes *Iohanna* and *Hispana*.

Iohanna.



Hispana or
Hispaniola.

Gold for earth
and glasse.

The king of the
Iland.
Bylding without
the vse of Iron.

Columbus came to the Ilande whiche he called *Iohanna*, he hearde a merueylous sweete noyse of innumerable byrdes, and especiallye of Nightingales whiche wandred in the thicke wooddes in the Moneth of Nouembre. He founde also mooste fayre Ryuers, swete to drinke, and many goodly hauens. And as he sayled by the costes of the Ilande Southweste warde, and coulde fynd no ende, he thought it had been the mayne land, and therefore determyned to drawe backe, being partly enforced by roughnes of the sea: and thus returninge some what Eastward, he came to an Iland whiche heafterwarde called *Hispana*, where arriuing to the land, he and his companie was fene of the Inhabitantes of the Iland, which sodeinly fled into the thicke woodes: whom the Spanyardes pursewing, toke a womanne whome they brought to theyr shippe, entreatinge her verye gentillye, fyllinge her with delicate meates and wyne, and clothing her in fayre apparel, and so let her depart: for thei goe naked, and are not vsed to delicates. And as this womanne returned to her companie, some beyng moued by the lyberalitie declared vnto her, came by greate multitudes to the sea bankes, bringinge golde with them, which they chaunged for earthen pottes, and drinkinge glasses. Thus a further frendship by this meanes contracted, the Spanyardes begonne more diligently to fearch thei maner of luyng and maners, and so vnderstode that they had a king. And therefore enteringe further into the Iland, they were honorably receyued of the king. Thei vewyde their houfes, and merueyled to see them so bylded without the vse of Iron, which they are vtterly without: in the stede whereof they vse a certeyn stone, wherwith the cut and sawe theyr timbre.

¶ *Of the people called Canibales or Anthropophagi, which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe.*



Heras the people of the forenamed Ilandes, fled at the fight of our menne, the cause thereof was, that they suspected them to haue been *Canibals*, that cruel and farse people which eate mans fleshe, which nacion our men had ouerpasse, leauinge them on the southsyde. But after they had knowledge of the contrary, they made greuous complaynt to our men, of the beastly and farse maners of these *Canibales*, which were no lesse cruel agaynst them, then the Tyger or the Lyon agaynst tame beastes. Declaring furthermore, yat when foeuer they take any of them vnder the age of. xiiij. yeares, they vse to gelde them, and francke them vntyll they be very fat, as we are wont to doe with capons or hennes: and as for fuche as drawe towarde. xx. yeare olde, to kyll them forthwith and pull out theyr guttes, and eate the same freshe and newe, wyth other extreme partes of the bodye, poudering the residue with falte, or keping it in a certayne pickle as we do iegottes or fanfages. Yet eate they not the women, but referue them to encrease, as we doe hennes to lay egges. And if thei take any old women, they kepe them for drudges. And therefore when the *Canibales* make incurfion, the people of these Ilandes flye with all spede. For albeit they vse arrowes, yet are they not able to resyfte theyr fearfenes.

*Canibales
Anthropophagi.*

The fearsenes of
the *Canibales*.

Mans fleshe
poudered.

¶ *Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of Hispana and of fuche thynges as are found there.*



The inhabitantes of this Ilande, vse in ye stede of bread, certayne rotes like vnto nauie rotes, hauing the tast of soft and grene chestnuttes. Gold with them is in estimacion, for they hange certayne peces therof at their eares: they go not out of ye limities of their own contrie, nor exercise any marchandise with strangers: thei gather gold in ye sandes of a certen riuier which springeth out of veri high montaines. They gather it with great laboure and melte it and caste it, fyrste into masses or wedges, and afterwarde into brode plates. They haue no foure foted beastes, except connies: they haue serpentes of monstrous greatnes, but without hurte or venime. They haue also wylde turtle doues and duckes, muche greater then ours, and gefe whyter then swannes, fauing yat they haue redde heades. Thei haue also many poppingiayes: some grene, some yelowe, and some not muche vnylyke them of India, with redde circles about their neckes. This Iland bringeth forth also *Mastix*, *Aloe*, and fuche other gummes: and especially certayne redde graynes, which are sharper then pepper.

Rootes in ye
stede of bread
Gold in estimacion.

Howe golde is
gathred.

Serpents wythout
venime.

Poppingiayes.

Spices and
Gummes.

¶ *How Columbus, after he had found newe Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye Canibales.*



Columbus, not a little ioyeful of the landes newly found, the spring tyme drawing nere, he determined to returne to his countrey: leauing with the king of the Iland. 38. men which should diligently searche the situacion of the Ilande, the maners of the people, and the natures of trees and fruites. But he, hoyfeninge vp his sayles, directed hys viage towarde Spayne, bringing with him tenne menne of the sayd Ilande, to th[e]ende that they mighte learne the Spanishe tonge, which they might easely doe, because al the wordes of theyr language may well be written with our letters. *Columbus*, after thys his returne, and fortunate successe in his fyrste viage, was honorablye receyued of the Kynge and Quene, and greatlye magnified with innumerable glorious tittles: willinge that he should no more thenceforth be called *Columbus*, but the Admiral of the great Ocean Sea: and prepared for him towarde his second viage. xvij. foistes and. xij. brigantines, wel furnished with al kynd of artillerye and plentie of vitayles, and in them twelue hundreth men wel appoynted:

The Indian tong
Columbus, at his
returne. is made
Admiral of the
Ocean sea.

The second viage
of *Columbus*

Gades.
The Ilandes of
Canaria.

The Iland of
Dominica.

Insula Crucis.
Lisertes.

Houses of trees.

Young men stalled
to be made fatte.

Fine cokerye.

Canibales allured
wyth lyberalite.

Matinina An
Iland of women
onelye.

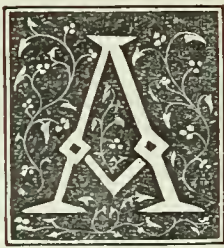
The names of
sundrye Ilandes.

Arrowes infected
with venime.

Archipelagus.
Buchema

Corne also to fowe, and al kindes of feedes and plantes. For, excepte pine apple trees and date trees, there growe none in these Ilandes that are knowne to vs. The Admirall toke also with him al fortes of Iron tooles to th[e]intent to byld townes and fortresses where his men might lye in safegarde. Therefore the first day of September departing from the Ilandes called *Gades*, with a prosperous wind he arryued at the Iland of *Canaria* the fyrst daye of October: from whenfe directing his viage towarde the lefte hande, he sayled toward ye South, and at ye length came to the Ilandes of the *Canibals*. And becaufe he came thether on the Sundaye called the Dominical day, he called the Iland where he arryued, *Dominica*: which when he perceyued to be but saluage and rude, he sayled on further: and in twentie dayes sayling, came to another Iland replenished with al kindes of trees, from which came a marueylous fragrant fauour: By reason whereof, some being allured by the pleasantnes of the place, went aland, where they sawe no kynde of luyng beasts, fauinge lyfertes of wonderful houdge greatnes. This Ilande he called *Insula Crucis*, whiche was also an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as afterward they proued in dede. For as they sayled about the Iland, they founde certayne lowe cotages made of trees, lyke vnto stables. For they fet trees vpright in order round about, fastening postes in them croffe ouer, where vnto the trees cleaue faste, so that by this meanes they cannot fall. They frame the roofes of these cotages, with sharpe toppes after the maner of rownde tentes. And last of al, they inclose and couer these trees thus set in order, wyth the leaues of date trees, and certen other trees, to th[e]intent to make them a stronger defence agaynst wynd and wether. And within the cotage, they tye the postes together with ropes of bombage cotton, and a certayne longe roote. They haue couches made, one aboue another, the flowres whereof they flawe wyth heye and cotton. And as soone as they hadde spied our men, they fled incontinente. And when oure men came into theyr houfes, they found in theym certayne young men bound to postes, and kept to be made fatte, and lykewyse many olde womenne whiche these *Canibales* kepte to be their drudges. They founde there also earthen vesselles of all fortes, in which they fodde mens fleshe with poppingiayes, geese, and duckes fleshe, al together in one vessell. They roasted also mans fleshe vpon spyttes, reseruing the bones of the armes and legges, whiche they vse in the stede of Iron, to piece and tpype theyr arrowes. For they are vtterlye without Iron. The[y] found also the head of a yong man, yet bleding and fastened to a poste. But certayne womenne whiche had fledde from the *Canibales* to oure menne, the Admirall commaunded to be gorgiously decked after the maner of our women, and with manye rewardes to be sent agayne to theyr owne companye. By meanes whereof, the *Canibales* beyng allured by the lyberalitie and gyftes of our men, hoping that they also shoulde be lykewyse rewarded, came running toward our men: but when they drew somewhat nere vnto them, they fled immediatly into the nexte wooddes. And thus our men departing from thence, returned to the Ilande of *Hispana*.

¶ *How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage.*



AS the Admirall departed from the Iland of the *Canibales*, and went foreward on his viage, he passed by many Ilandes: among the whiche was one called *Matinina*, in whyche dwell only women, after the maner of them, called *Amazones*, as he learned of the men of the Ilandes which he brought with him into Spayne at his fyrste viage, and saued them from the fearfenes of the *Canibales*. He passed also innumerable other Ilandes of which to some he gaue names, as *Mons Farratus*, *Sancta Maria rotunda*, *Sancta Martinus*, *Sancta Maria antiqua*, and *Sancta Cruix*. Into the which oure men entering to th[e]intent to fetche freshe water, found foure *Canibales*, which had taken foure yonge women: who, as soone as they had spied our men, wringed theyr handes, seming therby to desyre ayde of oure men: at whose coming to delyuer them, the men fled into the woodes and left the women. Shortly after, our men saw a bote coming on the sea with. viij. men and as many women: with whom oure men bickeringe lost one of theyr companions, by reason that these barbariens are accustomed to infecte theyr arrowes with venime: yet oure men preuayled and slewe parte of them, and broughte the refydue by forse to the Admyrall. As they departed from hence, they found many other Ilandes, but such as they could not come to for the roughnes of the sea and multitude of rockes. But some of the smallest brigantines which drewe no great depth, went somewhat nearer, and noumbred aboue seuen and fortie Ilandes, and called the place *Archipelagus*. Sayling from hence, they found another Iland called *Buchema*, into the whiche ye *Canibales* make fundry incurfions, by reason wherof the inhabitantes are at continual warre with them. Thus at the length, the Admirall with his hole nauie returned to the Iland of *Hispana*: but in an euyl tyme. For they which he hadde lefte there for a

garrison, were all dead: as were also they whiche he toke with him from the same Ilande into Spayne to vse them for intrepretours. Of whiche feuen dyed by chaunge of the ayre. One of them was permitted of the Admirall to departe, when the nauie came neare to hys countrey. The residue stole awaye priuelye, and swamme to lande: but the Admirall doubting whether all his men were dead or no, whiche he left in the Iland, commaunded certayne ordinaunce to be shot of, that by the noyse thereof they myghte haue warning to come forth, yf any laye lurking in corners: but none appeared, whose fatall dayes had fynished theyr lyfe. At the length, the kyng of the Ilande beyng therto enforced, declared the hole matter to the Admyrall as well as he coude by intrepretours: affirming that there were in the Iland other Kynges beynde him: and of greater power then he, which were fore offended that the Spaniardes hadde subdued the Ilandes: and in reuenge therof, came to the town where the Spaniardes lay, which they ouercame and burnt, and slew al the men therin: and that he also at the same conflicte, taking part with our men, was fore wounded with an arrow on the arme, for the better tryall whereof he bore hys arme in a towell, because it was not yet hole of that wounde. But shortelye after they had knowledge, that the King fayned this tale: so that he hardely escaped the handes of the Admiral, who was determyned wyth some kynd of punishment to haue examined him further. But he suspecting the matter, fled into ye inner partes of the Iland, declaring therby, that he was the destruction of our men: whom, certayn of our companie, purfuinge, founde manye marueylous thinges: and especiallye ryuers in whiche is founde muche golde, and a mountayne, whose fande is sparkeled with gold. In this place, the Admiral bylded a citie, which he compassed about with a walle. And departing from hence, he searched almost all the Iland: in ye inner partes wherof he bylded a towre, and named it S. Thomas towre, whiche he made to th[e]intent that he might the more safely searche out the secretes of so plentifull a region, and especiallye the gold mines of the same: and thus leauinge a garrison there, he departed, takinge with him three foystes, wherwith he sayled to feke newe Ilandes, and came first to the Ilande of *Cuba*, and from thence to *Jamaica*, being greater then *Sicilia*, very fruytfull and wel inhabited. Which, when he had vewed, he departed from thence, and fayled about the sea costes where he sawe innumerable other small Ilandes, standinge so thicke, that the ship was in maner borne a lande: and was therefore enforced to returne home, the same way which he came.

Change of ayre
is daungerous.

The king
dissembleth with
the Admyrall.

Goldefound in
riuers and
mountaines.

The Ilandes
of *Cuba* and
Jamaica.

A multitude of
Ilandes

¶ *How the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendshippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes.*



IN this meane tyme, the Spaniardes which the admiral had left in the Iland of *Hispana*, had euill entreated the inhabitauntes: so that for wante of vitayles and foode, they begonne to famyne: imputinge the fault hereof vnto the Christian men, which had digged vp al the rootes wherwith they were accustomed to make theyr bread. And whereas they yet perceaued, that ye Christian men entended to continue there, they sent an ambassadour to the admiral to defyre him to restrayne the outragiousnes and crueltie of his men, at whose handes they iustained such iniuries and violence, as they scarcely looked for at the handes of mortal enemies. Declaringe further, that vnder the pretence of seking for gold they committed innumerable wronges and mischieuous actes, spoyling in maner all the hole region: and that for the auoyding of such enormities and oppreSSIONS, they hadde rather paye tribute, then to be thus dayly vexed with incurSIONS, and neuer to be at quiete. Vpon this complaynte it was agreed, that they shoulde paye yearely tribute to the Christian king and that they should applie them selues to gather and encrease theyr rotes, whiche were to them in the fiede of flowre and wheat, and so consumed that with great labour they coude scarcely fynde any in the wooddes. They payde therefore for their tribute, euery thre monethes, certayn pound weyghtes of gold: but suche as had no gold, payde spyces, and goffampine cotton. In the meane time the Spaniardes, who should haue been occupied in digging for golde, gaue them selues to play, wantonnes and idlenes, contemning, and falling into hatered with their gouernour, by which theyr licentiousnes, the people of the Iland beyng prouoked, became more difobedient and wyld, degeneratinge from al kind of honestie and faithfulness: yea ye spaniardes also became so negligent in seking for gold, yat sometyme the charges exceded the gaynes. Neuerthelesse in the yere of Christ, 1501. they gathered within ye space of two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of golde. But the Admirall appoyntinge his brother *Bartholomeus Columbus*, to be gouernour of the Iland, he in the yere. 1495. determined to returne to Spayne, to certifie the kyng of al these matters. In which viage, he manfullye defended him self in battayl against the rebelles of certayne other Ilandes which had conspyred agaynst the Spaniardes.

The crueltie of the
Christian men

Crueltie of
couctousnes.

Bread of rotes.

The tribute of
the barbarians

Disobedience
foloweth Idlenes

Note.

*Bartholomeus
Columbus.*

¶ *How the Portugals fought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to Calicut.*



IN this meane tyme that ye Spanyardes foughte newe and vnknowne landes in the West partes, the Portugales attempted to doe the same in the Easte partes. And least one of them should be a lette or hinderance to the other, they deuyded the world betwene them by the auctoritie of the Bishop of Rome, Alexander the. vi. of that name. And that on this condicion, that from the Ilandes called *Hesperides* (whiche are now called *Caput ueride*) the one should fayle Westwarde, and the other towarde the South pole, thus deuyding the world betwene them in two equal partes. So that whatfoeuer vnknowne landes shoulde be discouered in the Easte partes, the same to be dewe to the Portugales: And all fuche as shoulde be founde in the Weste partes, to appertayne to the Spanyardes. Whereby it came to passe, that the Spaniardes, euer by the South, sayled into the Weste, where they founde a large mayne land, with Ilandes great and litle innumerable, hauing in them great plentie of golde and pearles, and other great riches. But the Portugales, by the Southe, and costes of the Ilandes called *Hesperides*, and *Equinoctial* lyne, and *Tropicus Capricorni*, came into ye East, by the goulfe called *Sinus Persicus*, euen vnto the costes of India, within the riuer of *Ganges*, whereas is now the great market towne, and kingedome of *Calicut*. And from thence to the Iland of *Taprobana*, (now called *Sumetra*, *Zamara* or *Samotra*) and so forth to *Aurea Chersonesus*, whereas is nowe the great cytie of *Malaccha*, beyng one of ye most famous market townes of al ye East partes. From *Malaccha*, they entered into a great goulfe, by which they came to the region of *Sinarum*. Not farre from *Malaccha*, are the Ilandes called *Molucca*, in which al kyndes of spyces growe and are brought to the cytie of *Malaccha*. But the Spanyardes hauing knowledge what greate commoditie the Portugales had receyued by the Ilandes of *Molucca* attem[p]ted to proue yf they also might find the same Ilandes in sayling so farre Westward that they mighte at the length by West and southwest come into the East, as by good reason they presuppoted the roundnesse of the earth would permitte, if they were not otherwyse lette by the fyrme or mayne land lyinge in the waye and stoppinge theyr passage, whereof as yet was no certeyntie knowen. And this dydde they to th[e] intent that by this meanes they myghte more easelye and wyth lesse charge bringe spyces from thence into Spayne. Therefore, the maner of this viage was, that they should fayle from the Weste, vnder the lowest hemispherye or halfe compasse of the earth, and so to come into the East. A thinge surelye that myghte seeme verye harde to attempte, because it was vncertaine whether that, most prudente and beneficiall nature, (who worketh al thinges with most high prouidence) had not so deuided and seperated the East from the West, partely by sea, and partely by land, that there might by this way haue been no passage into the East. For it was not yet knowen, whether that great region of *America*, (whiche they call the fyrme or mayne lande) dyd seperate the Weste sea from the East: But it was founde that that fyrme lande extended from the West to the South. And that also towarde the North partes were found two other regions, whereof the one is called *Regio Baccalarum*, and the other *Terra Florida*: which, if they were adherent to the sayde fyrme land, there could be no passage by the Weste seas into the East India, forasmuch as ther was not yet founde any strayghte of the sea, wherby any enteraunce mighte be open into the East. In this meane while, the kyng of Spayne beyng elected Emperoure, prepared a nauie of fyue shippes, ouer the whiche he appointed one *Magellanus* to be captayne, commaunding him that he should fayle towarde the coastes of the sayd fyrme land, dyrectinge his viage by the south partes thereof, untyl he had eyther found the ende of the same, or elles some streyghte wherby he mighte passe to those odoriferous Ilandes of *Molucca*, so famously spoken of for the great abundaunce of fwete fauours and spices founde therein. The shippes therefore, beyng well furnished with all thinges necessarie, *Magellanus* departinge from Ciuile in Spayne, the tenth day of August, in the yeare of Christ. 1519. came fyrst to ye Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to ye Ilandes called *Hesperides*: from whiche dyrectinge hys course betwene the West and the East toward the sayd fyrme land, in few dayes with prosperous sayling, he discouered a corner or poynt of the sayd mayne land, called *Promontorium S. Mariae*, where the people dwell, called *Canibales*, whiche are accustomed to eate mans fleshe. From hence he sayled on southwarde by the long tracte of this firme land, which reacheth so farre into ye south and extendeth so many degrees beyond ye circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, yat the south pole (called pole Antartike) is there eleuated fortie and fyxe degrees. And thus beyng brought into the East, they saw certayn Indians gatheringe shel fyshes by the sea bankes: beyng men of very high stature, clothed with beastes skinnes. To whom, whereas certayne of the Spaniardes went a land, and shewed them belles and paynted papers, they begon to daunce and leape aboute the Spaniardes, with a rude and murmuring songe. At the length there came three other, as thoughte they

The bishop of rome deuideth ye world.

Hesperides or *Caput ueride*.

How the Spanyardes and ye Portugales deuided the world betwene them.

Gold and Pearles

The *Equinoctial* lyne.

The ryuer of *Ganges*.

Calicut.

Taprobana.

Samotra.

The great cytie of *Malaccha*.

The region of *Sinarum*

The Ilandes of *Molucca*.

Sayling into the East by the west

The roundnes of the erth.

The firme land

Spices

The viage from the West vnto the Easte.

America.

The firme land.

Regio

Baccalarum

Terra Florida.

The king of spayne sendeth fourth shippes.

The viage of *Magellanus* by the west into ye east.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*

The Ilandes of *canaria*.

Promontorium S. Mariae.
Canibales

The eleuacion of the south pole. 46 degrees

The Region of giannes.

were ambassadours, whiche by certayn signes defyred ye Spaniardes to go with them further into the land, making a countenance as though they wold intertayn them wel, where vpon, ye captayne *Magellanus* sent with them. vii. men well instructed, to th[e] intent to searche ye region and maners of the people. And thus they went with them into ye desertes, wher they came to a low cotage couered with wylde beastes skinned, hauing in it two mansions, in one of ye which were women and children and in the other only men. They interteined their gestes after a barbaros and beasty maner, whiche neuertheles femed to them princelike: for they killed a beast, not much vnlike a wylde affe, whose fleffhe (but halfe rosted) they set before our men, without any other kind of meate or drinke. Here were our men of necessitie constrained to lye al night vnder these skinned, by reason of the great abundaunce of snowe and wynde. And when it was day, our men were very earnest with them, and would in maner haue enforced them to goe with them to the shippe: which thing they perceauing, couered them selues from the head to the foote with certayn horrible beastes skinned, and paynted theyr faces with fundrye colours. Thus taking their bowes and arrowes, and bringing with them other of theyr companie, of much greater stature and terrible aspect, then they were, they shewed them selues to oure men in araye, as though they were ready to fight. But the Spaniardes, whiche thoughte that the matter would haue comen to hand strokes, commaunded a piece of ordinaunce to be shotte of. The which although it dyd no hurte, yet these hardy giauntes, which a little before femed to be as bold as though they durst haue made warre against Iupiter, were by the noyse thereof put in fuche feare, that they forthwith beganne to entreate for peace. Our men entended to haue brought some of these Gyauntes wyth them into Spayne for the straungenes of the thinge: but they all escaped oute of theyr handes. *Magellanus* therfore vnderstandinge that it were vnprofytable to tarie there any longer, and that also the sea was very rough, and the wether stormie and boyste[r]ous, and that furthermore the firme lande extended further toward the south, in so muche, that the further they sayled that waye, they should fynde it so much ye colder, he deferred hys proceding vnto [in?] the moneth of may, at whiche tyme, ye sharpenes of winter, exceedeth with them, when as with vs, sommer is begon. He found there greate plentie of wood. The sea also ministred vnto them great abundaunce of shelifshe, befyde other fyshes of fundrie kyndes. He found lykewyse many springes of freshe and holesome waters: and vsed huntinge and taking of foules. Only bread and wyne, was lackinge in the shippe. The south pole was there eleuated fortie degrees.

Cotages couered with beastes skinned.

Onager.

Abundaunce of snowe and wynde

The Giauntes are putte to flyght.

Extreme winter in maye.

The south pole eleuate .xl. degrees

¶ How *Magellanus* by a strayght or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne.



He wynter now being past, the. xxiiij. day of Auguste, *Magellanus* departed from the place aforefayde, and styll folowed the tracte of the firme land toward the south, vntyl at the length, the. xxvi. day of Nouember, he found in that firme land, certayn open places lyke vnto strayghtes or narrow seas. Into the which entring with his nauie, he commaunded that certayn shippes should searche the goulfes on euerye fyde, yf anye way or passage might be found into the East. At the length, they found a certayn depe straight, by the which they were perswaded yat there was enteraunce into some other mayne sea, infomuch that *Magellanus* attempted to searche ye same. This straight was found to be somtime of ye bredth of thre Italian myles, sometyme two, and sometyme of tenne, and reached somewhat toward the West. The altitude or eleuacion of the south pole in this place, was founde to be. lii. degrees. They coulde see no people stering in the costes of this entraunce. Therefore *Magellanus* feing thys lande to be rough and saluage, and vnpleasaunt to abide in, by reason of extreme cold, he thought it not worthye the trauayle, to spend any time in serching the same. Therefore failing forward in his viage thus attempted by ye said strayghte, (which is now called the strayght of *Magellanus*) he was therby brought into another mayn sea, verye greate and large. The length of this strayght or narrow sea, is estemed to be a hundreth spanishe miles. The land which he had on his right hande, he doubted not to be mayne lande: and that on the left hand, he supposed to bee Ilandes. *Magellanus* sawe lykewyse the fyrme lande to be extended directly toward ye North: wherefore letting passe that great lande, he sayled by that greate and large sea betwene the West and the North: and that for this intente, that at the length he might by the West come into the East, and agayne vnder the burning lyne called *Zona Torrida*, beyng well assured that the Ilandes of *Molucca* (which he foughte) were in the Easte, and not farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne. When they hadde thus sayled fortie dayes, and came now agayne vnder the line or circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, they founde two lyttle Ilandes inhabyted, but very barren, and therefore called them infortunate Ilandes. Departinge from thence they failed on for a great space, and found a certayne Ilande which ye inhabitantes called

The strayght of *Magellanus*.

The altitude of the south pole. lii. degrees.

The main sea beyond the strayghtes.
The fyrme land.The burning line *Torrida Zona*.
The Ilandes of *Molucca*
Tropicus capricorni.

The Iland of
Inuagana.
The Ilandes of
Gades called
Cales Males.
Archipelagus.

Acatan.
Selani.

Massana.
Subuth.

Bread of the
trunke of trees.
Drinke of the
dropping of date
trees.
Golde and Ginger

Magellanus is
slayne.

The new
captaine *Serranus*
is betraied of his
bondman.

The king of
Subuth conspyreth
agaynst the
Spanyardes.

The captayne
Serranus is taken
prisoner.

The Ilandes of
Gibeth and *Porne*.
Siloli.

Peace and Idleness.

Bread of Rice

Camphire

Pearles as bigge
as turtle doues
egges.

A marvelous big
shelvishe

Gilona.
Men with
hanging eares.

Inuagana, where ye eleuacion of the Northe pole, (called pole Artike) was. xij. degrees: And the length from the Ilandes called *Gades*, by the Weste, was iudged to bee. c.lviii. [one hundred and fifty-eight] degrees. Thus proceeding, they saw dyuers other Ilandes, and that so manye, that they supposed they had been brought into a great sea lyke vnto that called *Archipelagus*, where with sygnes and poyntinges (as the dumme are wont to speake with the dumme) they asked of these Indians, the names of the Ilandes, whereby they learned that thei were in *Acatan*, and not farre from the Ilande called *Selani*, wel inhabited and replenished with abundaunce of al thinges necessarie for the commodities of this life. Sayling therefore toward the Ilande of *Selani*, thei were with a contrary wind driuen on the Iland of *Massana*, from whence they came to the greate Iland of *Subuth*, where ye Spanyardes were wel enterteined of the Kinge of the Iland, who brought them into a certayn cotage, and fet before them such delicates as he hadde. Theyr bread, was of the trunke of a certen tree, cut in pieces, and fried with oyle. Theyr drinke was of the humoure or ioyse which droppeth out of the braunches of the date trees, when they are cutte. Theyr meate was suche as they toke by foulinge, with such frutes as the contrei brought forth. This Ilande was very riche of gold and ginger. In these partes *Magellanus* made warre agaynste the inhabitants of certayne other Ilandes: In whiche conflicte, the spaniardes hauing the ouerthrow *Magellanus* was slayne with feuen of hys men. When the Spaniardes hadde thus lost theyr captayne, they elected a new gouernoure of theyr nauie, appointing one *Iohannes Serranus* to that office. *Magellanus* had also a bondman borne in the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whom he had bought in the cite of *Malaccha*. This bondman vnderstode the Spanishe tonge: and where as the captayn *Serranus* could do nothing without him, who now lay sicke by reason of the woundes which he had receaued in the said conflicte, so that he was fayne to speake sharply to him and threaten to beate him or he could geat him out of the shyppe, he here vpon conceaued so great hatred and indignacion agaynste the Spanyardes, that he wente immediately to the Kinge of *Subuth*, declaring the couetousnes of the Spaniardes to be vnfaciabie, and yat thei wold shortly vse crueltie agaynst him also, and bring him into subiection and seruitude. The barbarous king beleued his wordes, and therewith pryuelye with the ayde of the other Ilandes, conspired agaynst the Spanyardes, and toke or slew as many of them as came to a banket whereunto they were bidden vnder pretence of frendship. Among the which also, *Serranus* the Captaine was taken priefoner. But the resydue of the Spanyardes which remayned in the shippes, beyng taught and warned by the euyll chaunce which befell to theyr companions, and fearing greater deceytes and conspiracies, lyft vp their ankers and gaue wind to their sayles. In the meane tyme was *Serranus* brought bound to the sea bankes, desiring his companions to delyuer or redeme him from that horrible captiuitie of hys enemies. But the Spaniardes, albeit they toke it for a dishonour, to leaue or forsake theyr Captayne, yet fearing fraude or further diffimulacion, they sayled asyde from that Iland, and came to the Ilandes of *Gibeth* and *Porne*. In this mayne sea, were two great Ilandes, wherof the one was called *Siloli*, and the other *Porne* the lesse, where our men were wel entreated. The inhabitantes of *Porne* honoure the funne and the mone: they keepe also a certayn ciuile iustice and frendly loue one to another. And aboue all thinges, desyre peace and ydlenes. Therefore their chiefe studie is, in no case to moleste their neyghbours or straungers, or to be iniurious to anye man. They haue lyttle houfes, made of earth and wood, and couered partely with rubbishe, and partly with ye bowes of date trees. They take as manye wyues as they are able to kepe. Theyr comon meat, is such as they take by foulinge or fiffhing. They make bread of ryce: and drinke, of the liquor whiche droppeth from the braunches of date trees, cutte. Some vse marchaundyse in the Ilandes nere about them: some applie themselves to huntinge and fysshing, and some to husbandry. Theyr apparell, is of Goffampine cotton. They haue greate abundaunce of camphyre, ginger and cinomome.

¶ How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.



He Spaniardes takinge theyr leaue of the king of *Porne*, departed: dyrecting theyr viage towarde the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche were shewed vnto them by the same King. They came fyrst to the costes of the Ilande called *Solo*, where are found Pearles as bygge as turtle doues egges: but they are gathered in the depth of the sea. The inhabitantes of this Ilande, at suche tyme as the Spanyardes came thether, toke a shellysshe of suche hodge bignes yat the fleshe therof wayed. xlvij. pound weyght. Wherby it is apparaunt yat great pearles should be found there forasmuch as pearles are the byrth of certayn shellysshes. From hence thei came to the Iland of *Gilona*, in which are certayn people hauing hanging eares of such length, that they hang downe to theyr shoulders. Wherat as the Spaniardes marueyled, the men

of the Iland tolde them, that not farre from thence was another Iland in which were a kind of men, not onely with hanging eares, but also with eares of fuche breadth and length, that with one of them they myghte couer theyr hole head. But the Spanyardes, who foughte for gold and spyces, and not for monsters, sayled dyrectly to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, where they arryued, the eyghte moneth after the death of their gouernour *Magellanus*. These Ilandes are fyue in noubre, the names wherof are these *Tharant*, *Muthil*, *Theiori*, *Mare*, and *Mathien*. Some of them are fyuate on thys fyde the *Equinoctiall* lyne, some vnder it, and some beyonde it. Some beare cloues, some Nutmegges, and some Cinomome. They are not farre distaunt the one from the other. They are but little and narowe. The inhabitantes are very poore, because ther is no encrease of anye other thinge fauing onely of spyces. They lyue with bread and fysh, and sometime popingiayes. They lurke in lowe cotages: And in fyne, all thinges with them are despicable and vile, beside peace, idlenes, and spyces. In *Theiori* is great plentie of cloues, as also in *Tarante* and *Mathien*. The trees which bringe forth cloues, growe not, but on rockes and broken cliffes, which sometime they grow so thicke, that they appeare lyke a lyttle woode or groue. This tree, bothe in leaues, biggenes, and heyght, is much lyke vnto the baye tree. It beareth the fruite in ye toppes of euery braunche. The budde springeth out fyrst, and then in it the floure, not much vnlike the floure of an orange tree. The cloue is fyrst redde: but after beyng scorched by the heate of the sonne, it is made blacke. The inhabitautes deuide the groues of these trees betwene them, as we doe the vynes. The Iland of *Muthil*, bringeth forth cinomome. This tree, is ful of small braunches and baren, best lyking in a drye foyle, and is very like vnto the tree, that beareth the pomgranate. The barke of this tree, by reafon of the great heate of the sonne, ryfing from the braunches, or bodie of the fame, is gathered and dried at the sonne, and is so made perfecte cinomome. Neare vnto this, is another Iland, called *Beda*, greater and larger, then anye of the Ilandes of *Molucca*. In this Iland groweth the Nutmegge, whose tree is bigge and highe, and much lyke vnto the walnutte tree, for as is the walnutte, so is this fruite defended with a double couering, as fyrste with a grene huske, vnder the whiche is a thinne skinne or rimme like a nette, encompassing the shell of the nutte: which skinne we call the flowre of the nutmegge, but of the Spanyardes, it is called mace, an excellent and holesome spyce. The other couering, is the shell of the nutte, within the which is the fruite it selfe, which we call ye nutmegge. Ginger groweth here and there in all the Ilandes of this *Archipelagus*, or mayne sea. Of the whiche, some is fowen, and some groweth of it selfe. But that which is fowen, is the better. The herbe of this, is lyke vnto that which beareth saffrane and hath hys roote, (which is Ginger,) much lyke vnto the fame. In this meane time came two other shyppes out of Spayne: whereof the one sayled directely to the poynte of *Aphrica*, called *Promontorium bonæ spei*: And the other by the greate mayne South sea, to the coastes of that continent or fyrme land whereof we haue spoken here beefore. It shall suffyse that we haue hetherto declared of the nauigacions whiche the Spanyardes attempted by the Weste to sayle into the Easte, by the strayghte of *Magellanus*, where the passage by Sea is open into the Easte, by the continente or fyrme lande of the newe worlde, called *America*. Nowe therefore lette vs retourne to the other Nauigacions of *Columbus*, otherwyfe called the Admyrall, who longe beefore was the fyrst fynder of the newe Ilandes, and of the fayde mayne or fyrme land, and yet founde not that strayght or narrow sea, by the which *Magellanus* sayled from the West into the East.

The Spanyardes
arriue at the
Ilandes of
Molucca.

The tree that
beareth cloues

The cinomome
tree.

The nutmeg tree

Mace.
The nutmegge.
Ginger

*Promontorium
bonæ spei*

Columbus the
admyral, first
finder of the new
Ilandes

¶ The thyrde nauigation of Christophorus Columbus.



IN the yeare of Christ. 1498. *Columbus* the Admyral departed from Spayne with eyght foistles, and arryued fyrst at the Ilandes of *Medera*, where he deuyled hys nauie into two partes. For. v. of these shippes he directed to the Iland of *Hispana*: and with the residue, he failed towarde the fouth, entendinge to passe ouer the *Equinoctial* line, and from thense to turne towarde the Weste, to searche fuche landes as were hetherto vnknowne to the Christian men. Coming therfore to *Caput ueride*, he failed to the burning line, called *Torrida zona* where he found so great heate, that he was in daunger of death: but returninge his shyppes towarde the West, he found a more holesome ayre and (as God woulde) came at the length to a lande well inhabyted, where there came agaynst him and his, a bote with. xxiiij. young men, armed with bowes, arrowes, and shieldes, couering only theyr priue members with a clothe of Gossampine cotton, hauing also very longe heare. The admirall, (as well as he could by signes) allured them to comunicacion. But they trusted not our men, fearing some deceate. The Admirall perceauing that he could nought preuayle, by signes and tokens, he determined with Musical instrumentes to appease their wildnesse. As the minstrelles therefore blew theyr shaulmes, the barbarous people drew neare, suspecting that noyfe to bee a token of warre, whereupon they made ready theyr bowes and arrowes. But the Spaniardes drawinge nearer vnto them, caste certayne apparell into theyr

The Ilandes of
Medera
Hispana or
Hispania

Greate heate vnder
the burning lyne.

Signes and
tokens

The faire region
of *Parias*.
Gold and Pearles

Fearse beastes.
Canibales

The Spanyardes
refuse to obey the
admiral.

bote, willing by this token of frendshippe to concile them, although all were in vayne. For they fled all awaye. Wherefore the Admyrall departing from thence, came to a region called *Parias*, wel inhabited and ful of ciuile people, declaring mucche humanitie toward straungers. They shewed our men Pearles and Gold, and such other riches, desyryng them to come a land, where they gentelly entreated them. When our men asked them where they had suche plentie of golde: they (with home poynting was in the stede of speech) declared by signes and tokens, that thei had it in certayne mountaines, and that thei could not without great daunger resort thether, by reason of certayne fearse beastes in those partes, and also because of the cruell people called *Canibales*, whiche inhabite those mountaynes. But the Admiral, because his wheate fayled, was enforced to departe thence. Dyrectinge therefore his viage toward ye North easte, he came to the Iland of *Hispana*, where he found all thinges confounded and out of ordre. For the Spanyardes which were lefte in the Ilandes, refused to obeye the Admirall and his brother, mouinge greuous complayntes agaynste them before the King of Spaine, and at the length fente them thether bound.

¶ Howe Petrus Alonfus soughte newe Ilandes.



After that the Admyrall hadde incurred the indignacion of the Kynge, manye of his companions, suche as hadde been broughte vpppe with him, and were experte Sea menne, decreede to searche other partes of the worlde yet vnknown. Among which number was *Petrus Alonfus*, who with a shippe wel furnished, fayled to *Parias*, and from thence to *Curtana*, where he begon to exercyse merchaundise with the inhabitantes, receauinge Pearles for belles and nedles. Entiring also into the land, he was honourably entertayned. In their woodes, he saw innumerable Peacockes, nothings vnlyke vnto oures, sauing that the males differ litle from the females. In this region are great plentie of Phefantes. *Alonfus* departinge from hense, failed to the region of *Canchietes*, beyng sixe dayes sayling from *Curtana*, toward the West. In this region is great abundance of golde, Poppingiayes, Goffampine cotton, and mooste temperate ayre. From hence he fayled into another fruiteful region, but inhabited with wilde menne, which could by no gentilnes be allured to frendshippe. Departinge therefore from thence, he came to the region of *Ciniana*, whereas pearles are found in great plentie: but before he came there, he chaunced to come amonge the *Canibales*: agaynste whom, discharginge a piece of ordinaunce, he droue them easely to flight. But *Alonfus* laden with pearles, returned home into Spayne.

Parias
Curtana.
Pearles for belles
and nedles
Peacockes.
Phesants.

The Region of
Canchietes
The region of
Ciniana

Pearles

¶ Howe Pinzonus, companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes.



Incentius, otherwise called *Pinzonus* in the yeare of Christe. 1499. prepared foure brigantines, and failed fyrst to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to *Caput ueride*. From whence directinge his viage toward the fourth farre beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne, he found men in a certayne Iland, but such as he could by no meanes concyle vnto him. Therefore leauinge them, he came to another lande, in whiche were innumerable naked people, dissimuling that thei desired to ioyne frendship with the Spaniardes. And whereas one of our men caste a bell amonge them oute of the shippe, they againe cast to the Spanyardes a masse or piece of golde: which, one of oure companye somewhat to bolde, attemptinge to take vp, they sodeynlye toke him and caried him awaye with merueylous swiftenes: but our men leauing their shippes, made hast to help their fellowe, in so mucche that the matter came to handstrokes. This conflict was so sharpe, that our men hadde much a doe to escape wyth theyr lyues, by reason of the fearsenes of the barbarians. Departing therefore from thence, they fayled toward the Northeaste, and came to the region of *Payra*, and to the Ilandes neare aboute the same in the whiche are woodes of sanders wherewith the marchauntes lade theyr shippes, and carie it into other countreys. In this Region also growe the trees, whiche beare *Cassia fistula* of the beste kynd. There is also founde a foure foted beast of monstrous shape, whose former parte is lyke vnto a wolfe, sauing that the feete are lyke vnto the fete of a man, with eares like an owle: Hauinge also beneath his comon belye, an other belye lyke vnto a purse or bagge, in which he kepeth his yonge whelpes so longe, vntyll they be able safely to wander abrode alone, and to geat theyr meate withoute the helpe of theyr parents. The whelpes while they are very yong, neuer come out of this bagge but when they sucke. This portentous beast with her three whelpes, was broughte to Ciuile in Spaine, and from thence to *Granata*.

Naked people.
Gold for belles.

A conflict betwene
the wild men and
the Spanyardes
The Region of
Payra.
Woodes of
Sanders.
The tree yat
beareth *Cassia*
fistula.
A monstrous
beast.

¶ Of the foure nauigacions of Americus Vesputius to the newe Ilandes.



Americus Vesputius, beyng sent with *Christophorus Columbus*, in the yeare of Christ. M.cccc.xcij. at the commaundement of *Ferdinando King of Castile*, to seke vnknown landes, and wel instructed in sayling on the sea, after a fewe yeares, set forward foure viages of hys owne proper charges. That is to witte, two vnder the sayd King *Ferdinando*, and two other vnder *Emanuel*, king of *Portugale*, of the which he himselfe wryteth after this maner.

Ferdinando kinge of castile.

¶ The fyrste viage of Americus Vesputius.



*I*n the yere of Christ, M.cccc.xcvij. the. xx. daye of Maye, we came with foure shippes, to the fortunate Ilandes, called *Insulæ fortunatæ*, where the North pole hath his eleuacion. xxvij. degrees, and. xl. minutes. And from thence within the space of. xxvij. dayes, we came to a land more Westwarde then the fortunate Ilandes, where the North pole was eleuate. xvi. degrees: where also we founde a nacion of naked people, of innumerable multitude, whiche as sone as they sawe vs, fled to the next mountayne. From hence within two dayes sayling, we came to a safe port wher we founde manye men, which with much adoe, we could scarcely allure to comunicacion, although we profered them belles, lokinge glasse, cristallyne cuppes, and fuche other iewelless. But at the length perceauing our good wyll and liberalitie towarde them, they came to vs by heapes, and ioyned frendshyp with vs without all feare. They goe all as naked as they came forth of their mothers wombe. They suffre no heare on their bodie sauing only on theyr head, in so much that they pulo[f]ye heares of their browes. They are all so perfectlye exercysed in swimminge, that they can continue therein, for the space of two leages without any thinge to beare them vp and especiallye the women. Theyr weapons are bowes and arrowes. They arme theyr arrowes with ye teeth of beastes and fyshes, bycause they lacke Iron and other metals. They kepe warre against their borderers whiche are of straunge language. They fyght not for the enlargeing of theyr dominion, forasmuche as they haue no Magistrates: nor yet for th[e]increase of riches, because thei are contente with their owne commodities: but onely to reuenge the death of theyr prediceffours. At theyr meate, they vse rude and barberous fashions, lying on the ground without any table clothe, or couerlet. They slepe in certayne greate nettes made of Gossampine cotton and hanged a losfe in the ayre beetwene trees. Theyr bodies are verye smothe and clene by reason of theyr often washinge. They are in other thinges fylthy and withoute shame. Thei vse no lawful coniunction of mariage, but euery one hath as many women as him listeth, and leaueth them agayn at his pleasure. The women are very fruitfull, and refuse no laboure al the whyle they are with childe. They trauallye in maner withoute payne, so that the nexte day they are cherefull and able to walke. Neyther haue they theyr bellies wrimpeled, or loofe, and hanginge pappes, by reason of bearinge manye children. Theyr houses and cabbens, are all in common. Theyr houses are fashyoned lyke vnto belles: are made of greate trees fastened together, couered wyth the leaues of date trees, and made very stronge against wind and tempestes. They are also in some places so great, that in one of them sixe hundreth persons may lodge. Thei vse euery feuenth or eyght yeare, to remoue and change theyr dwelling places, because that by theyr longe continuance in one place, the ayre shoulde bee infected. They vse no kynd of marchaundise or bying and selling, beyng content onely with that which nature hath lefte them. As for Golde, Pearles, precious stones, iewelless, and fuche other thinges, which we in Europa esteeme as pleasures and delicates, they sette noughte by. They haue no kynde of corne. Theyr common fedinge, is a certayne roote whiche they drye and beate and make floure or meale therof. They eate no kynd of fleshe except mans fleshe: for they eate all fuche as they kyll in theyr warres, or o[t]herwise take by chaunce. When we had thus vewed the countreye, and consydered the maners of the people, we determyned to sayle further, downe by the landes fyde, and came after a few daies, to a certayn haucn, where we sawe about twentie greate houfes, rayfed vppe muche after the fashion of belles. There came vnto vs a great multitude of men vnder pretense of frendship. Some swimminge, and some in botes. Who, as sone as thei drew neare vnto vs, sodeynly bent theyr bowes against vs, where we defended oure selues manfully. In this bickeringe, we slewe of them about twentie, beeyde manye that were wounded: But of our men, were only fyue hurte, whiche were all perfectlye healed. Thus departinge from this haucn, we sayled on, and came to another nacion, in conuersacion and tongue vtterlye differing from the fyrst. For

Insulæ fortunatæ.

Naked menne.

Wylde men allured with gentlenes

People expert in swimminge.

Cabens hanging betweene trees.

Women in common.

Women very stronge and fruitfull.

Houses made of trees.

Houses of maruelous bignes.

Ryches and superfluites contemned

Bread of a certain roote.

Mans flesh eaten

A conflict

A gentle nacion
Parias.

Fruites vnlike
vnto oures.

Gold everywhere,

Canibales.

An expedicion
agaynst ye
Canibales

comming oute of our shippe, we were very frendly entreated of them, where we continued for the space of nyne dayes. This region is verye fayre, and fruitefull, hauinge manye pleasaunt woodes, which continue grene all the yeare longe. They haue frutes innumerable, vtterlye vnlyke vnto oures. The Region is situate dyrectelye vnder the lyne, called *Tropicus Calieri*. The inhabitantes them selues, call it *Parias*. Saylinge farre beyond this Region, and ouerpassinge manye countreyes and nacions, fyndinge Gold euery where, (but in no great quantitie) we came to another nacion full of gentleneffe and humanitie, where we rested. xxxvij. dayes. These people made greuous complaynte vnto vs, that there was not farre from them, a certayne fearse and cruell nacion, whiche vexed them fore, and made incurfion into theyr countreye at a certayne tyme of the yeare, kyllinge them and violentlye caryng them awaye, to th[e]intent to eate them, in so mucche that they were not able to defend them selues agaynst their fearfeneffe. Whiche thinge when they hadde so lamentablye declared vnto vs, and we hadde made them promyse that we woulde reuenge theyr so manye iniuries, they ioyned vnto oure company feuen of theyr men. Thus we wente forward : and after feuen dayes, came to an Ilande, called *Ity*: where these fearse people dwelte. Who, as sone as they hadde espyed vs, came armed agaynst vs. We ioyned with them in battaile, which contynued for the space of twoo houres. At the length we droue them to flyghte, and slewe and wounded a greate numbere of them, and toke. xxv. captiues. But of our men was onely one slayne, and. xxi. wounded, and shortly after restored to health. We gaue to those feuen men which went with vs, thre menne of oure prifouners and foure women, whom with greate reioysinge they caried with them into theyr countreye : and we returninge home toward Spayne, with many captiues came fyrste to a porte of Spayne called *Calicium*, where we solde oure prifouners, and were ioyefullye receaued : In the yeare of Christ. M.cccc.xcix. the. xv. daye of Octobre.

¶ The seconde viage of Vesputius.

The *Equinoctial*
line.



N the moneth of May folowing *Vesputius* attempted another viage and came by Ilandes of Canaria, euen vnto the burninge lyne, called *Torrída zona*, and founde a lande beeyonde the *Equinoctial* line, toward the South, where the South pole is eleuate fyue degrees. And wheras he coulde fynde no apte enteraunce into the land, and sayled vp and down alonge by the fame, he espyed a bote in which was aboute twentie men : who, as sone as they saw the Spanyardes, lepte into the Sea and escaped all, excepte two, which they toke. In theyr bote which they forfoke, were founde foure young men which they had by force taken oute of another

Canibales

Fyue hundreth
pearles for one bell.
Wine of the iuyse
of frutes

An Iland without
fresh water.

Broad leaucs.

The land of
Gyautes.

Pearles

A hundreth and
xxx. pearles in one
shelvishe.

Antiglia.
Calicium

countrye, hauinge theyr priuie members newelye cutte of. These, *Vesputius* toke into his shippes and learned by theyr signes and tokens, that they hadde been taken of the *Canibales*, and should shortly haue been eaten. But departinge from these costes, and saylinge on forward, they came to a commodious hauen, where they founde mucche people, with whom they ioyned frendshyp, and fell to changeinge of ware, receauinge for one bell, fyue hundreth Pearles. In this lande they drinke a certayne kynde of wyne, made of the iuyse of frutes and fedes, being lyke whyte and redde fydar. Departinge from hence, and saylinge yet further, they founde a certayne Ilande in which was a beastly kind of people, and simple, yet very gentle. In this Ilande is no freshe water : but they gather the dew which in the night season falleth vpon certayne leaues mucche lyke vnto the eare of an Affe. They lyue for the moste parte, by sea fishe. They haue no cotages or houfes : but haue certayne broade leaues, wherewith they defende them selues from the heate of the Sunne, but not from showres : but it is verye lykely, that it rayneth but lyttle in that Iland. *Vesputius* wyth his companye departinge from hence, sayled vnto another Ilande : into the whiche when he hadde entered, he founde certayne cotages, and in them two old women, and three young wenches, whiche were of so greate stature, that they marueyled thereat. And whereas our menne stryued with them to bringe them to the shyppe, to th[e]intente to haue caryed them into Spayne, they espyed cominge toward them fyxe and thyrtye men, yet of mucche greater stature then were the women, bearing with them bowes, arrowes, and great flakes lyke vnto clubbes : at the fyghte of whome, oure menne beinge afrayd, made haste to theyr shippes. But these Gyautes folowinge them euen to the Seafyde, bended theyr arrowes towardes the Spanyardes, vntyll they dischargd two pieces of ordinaunces, wyth the horryble sounde whereof, they were immediatly driuen to flight. Oure menne therefore departinge from thence, called that Ilande, the Ilande of Gyautes. And came to another nacion, which frendlye entreated them, and offered them many Pearles: in so mucche that they boughte. xix. markes weyghte of pearles, for a smal price. They gaue vs also certayne shelfishes, of the whiche some conteyned in them a hundreth and thyrtye Pearles, and some fewer. Departinge from thence they came to the Ilande of *Antiglia*, which *Columbus* had discouered a few yeares before. Leauinge this, they sayled directely to *Calicium*, a porte of Spayne, where they were honourablye receaued.

¶ The thyrde viage of Vesputius.



Vesputius beyng called from Castile to serue Emanuel the King of Portugale, in the yeare of Christe. M. ccccc. ij. the tenth daye of May, departed from the hauen of lisburne, and fayled downe by the coastes of the sea Atlantike, vntil he came vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. And the. xvij. daye of Auguste, they arryued at a certayne lande where they found a kind of beastly people. This land is situate toward the South, fyue degrees beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. A greate multitude of the inhabitantes wer gathered together, and as wel as they coude by signes and poyntinges, desired oure men to come alande and to see theyr countrey. There were two in the shippe, which toke vpon them to vewe the lande, and learne what spycies and other commodities might be had therein. They were appoynted to returne within the space of fyue daies at the vttermost. But when eyght dayes were now paste, they whiche remayned in the shippes, heard yet nothing of theyr returne: wheras in the meane time great multitudes of other people of the same lande reforted to the Sea fyde, but could by no meanes be allured to comunicacion. Yet at the length they broughte certayne women, which shewed them selues familer towarde the Spaniardes: Wherupon they sent forth a young man, beyng very strong and quicke, at whom as the women wondered, and fode gafinge on him and feling his apparell: there came fodeynly a woman downe from a mountayne, bringing with her secreately a great flake, with which she gaue him such a stroke behynde, that he fell dead on the earth. The other womenne foorthwith toke him by the legges, and drewe him to the mountayne, whyle in the mean tyme the men of the countrey came foorth with bowes and arrowes, and shot at oure men. But the Spaniardes dischargeing foure pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them, droue them to flighte. The women also which had slayne the yong man, cut him in pieces euen in the fight of the Spaniardes, shewinge them the pieces, and roasting them at a greate fyre. The men also made certayn tokens. wherby they declared that not past. viii. daies before, they had in lyke maner serued other christian men. Wherfore ye Spaniardes hauinge thus sustayned so greuouse iniuries vnreuenged, departed with euyl wil: sayling therfore further toward ye south, they found a nacion of great multitude, and of much genteler condicions, with whom thei remained. viij. dayes, bartering and changeing ware with them. Sayling on yet farther, they went beyond ye line called *Tropicus Capricorni*, where the south pole is eleuate. 32. degrees: and wheras in those parts thei found no great riches, they failed yet further southward vntill ye pole was eleuate. liij. degrees: where thei came into such a tempeste, that they were enforced to gather vppe theyr sayles, and to rowe only with the maste, directinge theyr viage toward the costes of Ethiopia, from whence they returned againe to Lisburne in Portugale.

The sea Atlantike.

Three of the Spaniardes slayne and eaten.

Fearsome and cruell women.

A ciuile people.

The south pole eleuate liij. degrees.

Lisburne.

¶ The fourth viage of Vesputius.



His nauigation was attempted in the yeare of Christ. M. ccccc. iij. but was not brought to the ende hoped for, by reason of a misfortune which chaunced in the goulfe of the sea Atlantike. *Vesputius* entended in this viage to sayle to the Ilande of *Melcha*, beyng in the East, in which is sayde to be great ryches, and the stacion of restinge place of all shippes comming from the goulfe *Gangeticus*, and from the Indian Sea. This *Melcha*, is situate more toward the West, and *Calicut* more enclininge towarde the south. *Vesputius* came fyrst to ye grene Ilandes, called *Insulæ uerides*: and fayled from them to *Serraliona*, beyng in the Southe partes of Ethiopia: from whence saylinge on yet further, he sawe in the middest of the sea an Iland, high and merueylous: where also the M[aster]. Pilate of this nauie, lost his shippe by running vpon a rocke: but all the mariners escaped. This shippe was of thre hundreth tunne, and had in it al the power of the nauie. When *Vesputius* had entered into the Iland, he found it rude and vnhabited: yet was it full of byrdes: but had no beastes except Lifertes with forked tayles, and Serpentes. Thus makeing prouision for necessaries, he was enforced to returne to portugale, failing of his purpose.

The Iland of melcha.

Calicut.

Insulæ uerides

A shippe wracke.

Lifertes and Serpents

¶ *How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India:
and of the ryche Cytie of Malacha.*



Orasmuche as therefore in the yeares folowinge, there were more often nauigacions made from the West by the south into the East, and the Portugales had now founde a safe passage by ye sea, they thought it expedient for theyr better safetie, to make certaine fortifications and places of refuge in the East. The which theyr intent the better to accomplishe, King Emanuel appoynted one *Alphonfus* an experte man on the sea, to be captayne of this viage. Who, desyring to reuenge the losses and iniuries which the Portugales had before sustained, sayled directly to *Aurea Chersonesus*, now called *Malacha*, a merueylous great and riche citie, whose king is an insydel of the secte of the Moores: for euen thus farre was the secte of Mahumet extended. *Alphonfus* therefore at his coming thether, besieged the cytie, and made warre agaynst the Saracens whiche helde the same. In this conflict a greate noubre of theyr enemies beyng slayne, the Portugales entred into the citie by forse and kept the same, permitting free libertie to theyr souldiers to spoyle, kyll, and burne. The king himselfe, fyghting vpon an Elephante, and beyng fore wounded, fledde with the refydue of his companye. A greate nembre of the Moores were flaine with the losse of a fewe Portugales: manye were taken, and great spoyle caried awaye, in the whiche were feuen Elephantes, and all kyndes of ordinaunces perteyning to the warres, made of copper, to the noubre of two thousande pieces. The cytye beinge thus taken and sacked, and the enemyes driuen to flyghte, *Alphonfus* the Capitayne the better to prouyde for the fauegarde of the Christians, buylded a strong forte at the mouth or entraunce of the riuier which runneth through ye citie. At this time, that is to witte, in the yeare of Christ. M. cccc. xij. there were in *Malacha* many straungers and marchauntes of dyuerse nacions, whereby the cytie was replenished with great ryches and abundaunce of spyces. They of theyr owne mocion, desyred to make a leage with *Alphonfus*, and were of him gently receaued: So that for theyr better safetie, he permitted them to dwell in the houses neare about the forte. And by this meanes, this marktete towne was reedified and broughte to muche better state than euer it was before. These thinges thus happely atchiued, and al thinges in *Malacha* set in good order, *Alphonfus* leauing in the forte a garrison of. vi. hundreth valiante souldiours, returned into India, where he besieged the chiefe castell of the cytie of *Goa*, which (he) a fewe yeares beefore, hadde with no smal daunger of our men, and great slaughter of their enemies, subdued vnder the dominion of Emanuel kynge of Portugale, and was now possessed of the mores, he manfully recouered agayne, and enforced them to render vp the same. Also the ambassadours of the Kinge of *Narsinga*, the Kinge of *Cambaia*, and the King of *Grosapha* with the legates of dyuers other kinges and Princes, offered them selues to be at a leage wyth *Alphonfus*, and thereupon broughte theyr presentes vnto hym. No lesse power and dominion obtayned the king of Spayne in the Ilandes of the Weste partes: In so muche that at his commaundement, were buylded fixe townes in the Ilande of *Cuba*. Lykewyse in the Ilande of *Iucatana*, was buylded a greate cytie wyth sayre houses. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, the Spanyardes called *Sancta Crux*, beecause they came fyrste thether in Maye, on the daye of the Inuencion of the Crosse. In the Ilande of *Hispana* or *Hispaniola*, were erected. 28. fuger presses, to presse ye sugre whiche groweth plentifully in certaine canes or redes of the same countrey. From hence also is brought the wood of *Guaiacum*, otherwyse called, *Lignum Sanctum*, wherewith dyuerse diseases are healed by the order of the newe dyete.

The Portugales
bild fortes in the
Easte partes.

Alphonfus

*Aurea
chersonesus.*

The great and
ryche cytie of
Malacha
Saracens.

Malacha besieged
The king fighteth
on an elephant.

Plenty of copper.

Marchauntes.
Spyces.

The cytie of *Goa*.

The Ambassadors
make a league
wyth *Alphonfus*

The west Ilandes
Cuba.

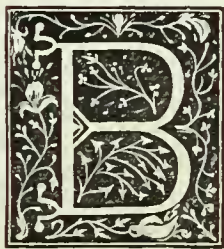
Iucatana.

Cozumel or
Sancta Crux.
Hispana.

Suger presses.

The wood called
Guaiacum.

¶ *Of the Iland of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyse
called the Ilandes of Canaria.*



Etweene Spaine and the Ilandes of *Canaria*, is the Ilande of *Medera*, which the Spaniardes in our time founde vnhabited and saluage. But perceauinge that the soyle thereof, was very fruitefull, they burnt the woodes, and made the ground apt to bringe forth corne, and buylded many houses, and so tilled the same, that at this day is no where founde a more fruiteful lande. It hath in it many springes of fresshe water and goodly ryuers, vpon the which are bylded manye sawe mylles, wherewith manye fayre trees, lyke vnto Ceder and Cypresse trees, are sawed and cut in sunder, whereof are made most fayre tables, coberdes, cofers, and chayres, and such other curious workes made of wood. These trees are of redde colour, and swete

Medera or
Madera.

Sawe milles.
Fayre tree

faour, the bodies and braunches whereof are broughte into Spayne in great plentie. The Kynge of Portugale thought it goode to plante in this Iland, that kynde of redes in which fuger groweth: wherein he was not deceaued in his opinion: For they growe there moste fruitefully, and beare fuger which excelleth the fuge of Candye or *Sicilia*. There were also vynes broughte out of Candye and planted in this Ilande, where they prosper so wel, that for ye moste parte they bring forth more grapes then leaues, and those very great. In this Iland is also great plentie of Partriches, wyld doues, and Peacockes, wild bores, and diuers kindes of other beastes, which onely possessed the Iland before men dyd inhabite the same. Also the Ilandes called *Insulæ fortunatæ*, (whiche are now called *Canaria*, for the multitude of dogges which are in them) are sayd to be no lesse fruytefull. These Ilandes are tenne in noumbre, of the which seuen are inhabited, and thre remaine desolate. They which are inhabited, are called by these names: *Fraçta laucea*, *Magna fors*, *Grancanaria*, *Teneriffa*, *Ginera*, *Palma*, and *Ferrum*. At *Columbus* first comming thether, the inhabitantes went naked, without shame, religion, or knowledge of God. But in successe of time, foure of the greatest Ilandes embrased the Christian faith: They haue eche of them a priuate language. *Teneriffa* and *Grancanaria*, are bigger then the other. *Teneriffa* may be sene afarre of, to the distaunce of fiftie leages, in a fayre and clere daye. The reason whereof is, that in the midst of the Iland, ryfeth a marueylous great and strong rock, which is thought to be. xv. leages high, and casteth fourth continuallye greate flames of fyre and pieces of brimstone, as doth the mount *Etna* in the Iland of *Sicilia*. The people of these Ilandes, lyue with barlye bread, flesshe, and mylke. They haue also greate plentie of Goates, wylde Affes, and Fygges. They lacke wyne and wheate.

Suger

Vynes

The Ilandes of *Canaria*.

Christians

A mount of burninge brimstone. Fygges.

¶ *Whether vnder the Æquinoctial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida zona) be habitable Regions.*



Ius secundus (otherwise called *Eneas Siluius*.) of this question, wryteth in this maner.

It hath beene muche doubted whether habitable regions maye be founde vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. *Eratosthenes* is of th[e] opinion, that the ayre is there verye temperate. So thinketh *Polybius* also, affirming that the earth is there verye highe, and watered with many showers. *Possidonius* supposed that there is no Mountaynes vnder the *Equinoctial*. Some thoughte that the *Equinoctial* lyne was extended beyond the earth ouer the mayne Ocean sea: whiche thinge the Poete *Homere* femeth to insinuate, where he faineth that the horses which drawe the chariote of [the] funne, drinke of the Ocean sea, and the funne it felfe to take his nourishment of the same. Whiche sentence *Macrobius* also foloweth. Neither was *Albertus Magnus* farre from this opinion, who supposed yat the funne draweth vp so much moysture vnder the *Equinoctial* circle, as engendreth the cloudes vnder the poles, where by reason of th[e] exceeding coldnesse, ayre is continually turned into water. But *Ptolomeus* thinketh the earth to bee extended beyonde the *Equinoctial*, whereas he placeth a part of the Iland of *Taprobana*, vnder the *Equinoctial*, and also many nacions of the *Ethiopiens*. Many haue thought that th[e] earthly Paradyse was sette vnder that lyne: which opinion is contrary to th[e] auctoritie of the holy scripture which witnesseth the two famous fluddes *Tigris* and *Euphrates* to springe oute of Paradyse: whiche neuerthelesse we know from the North partes to fal into the goulfe called *Sinus Persicus*: but as concerninge the heate vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne, the nearenesse of the funne, or the directe beames of the same, are no sufficiente causes why vnder that line should be no habitable regions, if we consider how those places are otherwyse shadowed, and tempered with the moystnes and dewes of the nightes, which are all the yeare throughe of equal length with the dayes. Yet wyl no man denye, but that vnder the *Equinoctial* throughout all the burninge lyne there are manye wildernes and desolate places, lacking water, and incommodious for the lyfe of man: Albeit euen in *Ethiopia*, people dwell neare to the ryuers and woodes. *Plinie* also sayth that one *Dalion*, and *Aristocleon*, and *Bion*, and *Basilides*, went Southward beyonde *Meroæ* whiche is almoste vnder the *Equinoctial*. And that *Simonides* who writte the descripcion of *Ethiopia*, dwelte fyue yeres in *Meroæ*: whiche Ilande, (beeynge in the fyrme lande and compassed aboute wyth the Ryuer of *Nilus*) he affirmed to bee situate 972. thousand pases beyonde *Syenes* of *Egypte*, as the searchers of *Nero* declared. But at *Syenes* the Astronomers appoynte the fommer conuersion of the funne: and that there the burninge lyne beginneth, being distaunte from the *Æquinoctial* foure and twentie degrees, that is twelue thousand furlonges. Wherby we maye perceauie that *Meroæ* is situate some what beeyonde the myddest betwene the *Equinoctial* and *Syenes*. *Ptolomeus* also descrybeth the Region of *Agisimba* to bee inhabited beeyonde the *Equinoctial*. Lykewyse the Mountaynes of the Mone, called *Montes Luna*, out of the which, the fennes or marifes of the riuer *Nilus* haue their spring and originall. He addeth hereunto that there are certayne *Ethiopiens* called *Anthropophagi*,

Libr. i. Capit. v.

Eratosthenes.

Polibius.

Possidonius.

The *Equinoctial* line

The poet *Homere*

Macrobius.

Albertus Magnus.

Ptolomeus.

Taprobana

Ethiopes

Tigris and *Euphrates.*

Sinus Persicus.

The nearenes of the sunne.

Temperatenes

vnder the

Equinoctial.

Torrida zona.

Ethiopa.

Plinie.

The Iland of

Meroæ

Syenes in *Egipte.*

The conuersion

of the sunne.

Of the furlonges

of *Italie* viii. doe

make one *Italian*

myle, conteyning

a. m. [thousand]

pases.

Agisimba.

Montes Luna.

Paludes Nili.

Ethiopes

Anthropophagi.
Habitable regions
how farre
extended.
Clima.

that is, such as eate mans fleshe, which inhabite regions beyond the *Equinoctial* about the space of. xvi. degrees. And thus the inhabitation of men is found to be extended. x. hundreth thousand pases beyonde the *Equinoctial* lync. Whiche space conteyneth no lesse then two clymes of earth. And a clyme is a porcion of the worlde betwene South and North, wherein is variacion in length of the daye, the space of halfe an houre.

¶ Finis.

¶ Thus endeth the fyfth boke of *Sebastian Munster*,
of the landes of *Asia the greater*, and of the
newe founde landes, and Ilandes.

1553.



¶ Imprinted at London, in *Lombarde Strete*, By *Edward Sutton*.

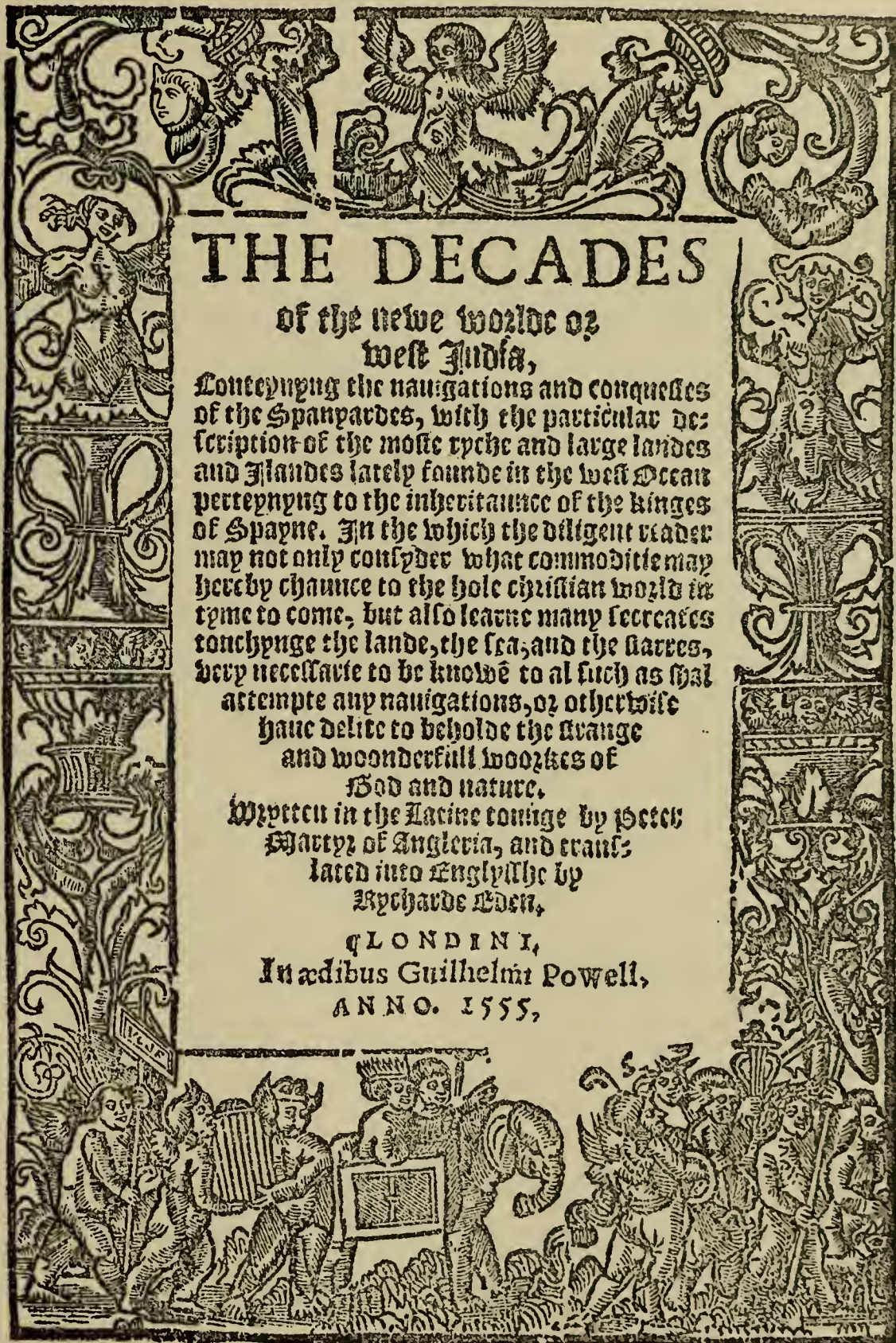


¶ To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses.

Who hath not of sowrenes felte the bitter tast,
Is not worthy of swetenes to take his repast.
To cracke the nutte, he must take the payne,
The which would eate the carnell fayne.
Who that of bees feareth the flinge,
Shal neuer by hony haue great winninge.
As the swete Rose bringeth forth the thorne,
So is man truely to ioye and payne borne.
The byrde vpon hope byldeth her neste,
Where ostentymes she hath but euill reste,
Yet is she not therby drieuen to suche feare,
But yat she performeth the same the nexte yeare.
Much casting of periles doth noble corage swage
Yet do not I commende rashenes or outrage.
What soles do fable, take thou no hede at all,
For what they know not, they cal phantastical.
Nought venter nought haue, is a saying of old.
Better it is to blow the cole, then to fyt a cold.
Fortes fortuna adiuvat, the Latin prouerbe faith,
But sayleth to such as faynt and lacke fayth.
God giueth al thinges, but not ye bul by ye horne
The plowman by trauaile encreaseth his corne.
As fortune fauereth thou mayst be riche or poore,
As *Crefus* or *Irus* that beggeth at the dore.

¶ *Omnis iacta fit alea.*

[The Third English book on America.]





Besyde the Decades (the table of whose contentes you may reade in the ende of the booke [see pp. 391-397.]) are conteyned furthermore in this booke these thynges followynge.

<p>¶ Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. . . . Folio. 149. [p. 186.] The popes bulle and donation 167. and. 171. [p. 201.] The hystorie of the Weste Indies, wrytten by Gonzalus Ferdinandus. 174. [p. 208.] The ordinarie nauigation from Spayne to the Weste Indies. 175. [p. 210.] Of two notable thynges as touchynge the West Indies: and of the greate ryches brought from thense into Spaine. 176. [p. 211.] Of the golde mines and maner of woorkynge in them. . 177. [p. 211.] The maner of fysshynge for pearles. 180. [p. 213.] The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyll. . 181. [p. 215.] Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line. &c. 184. [p. 217.] Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules. &c. 185. [p. 218.] Oftrees, fruites, and plantes, &c. 194. [p. 225.] [Of Reedes or Canes. 196. p. 227.] Of the venomous apples wherwith the Canibales inuene theyr arrows. 199. [p. 229.] Of fyshes & theyr maner of fysshynge. 201. [p. 230.] Of the ryfynge and faulynge of owre Ocean sea and the fourth sea called the sea of Sur. 204. [p. 233.] Of the freight of lande beinge betwene the north and south sea. 205. [p. 234.] Howe thynges of one kynde, dyffer by the nature of the place: and of the beastes cauled Tygers. 206. [p. 235.] Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande and of theyr women. 208. [p. 237.] Of the Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba. 210. [p. 239.] Of the Ilande of Cuba and other. 213. [p. 241.] Of the lande of Baccallaos. 213. [p. 242.] Other notable thynges gathered owt of dyuers autours: and of the vniuersall carde and newe worlde. 214. [p. 245.] A discourse of the maruelous vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde about the worlde. 215. [p. 246.] The order of the starres about the pole Antartike. . . 222. [p. 253.] The prices of precious stones and spices with their weightes and measures as they are soulede bothe of the Moores and Gentyles. 233. [p. 263.] Of the weightes of Portugale and India, and howe they agrée. 239. [p. 269.] Of the dooues of the Ilande of Madera. 239. [p. 270.] Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line. 240. [p. 270.] The debate and strife betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of spices. 240. [p. 271.] Of the pole Antartike and the starres about the same: and of the qualitie of the regions and disposition of the elementes about the Equinoctiall line: Also of certeyne secretes touchynge the arte of faylynge. 245. [p. 277.] A discourse of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which spices, precious stones, and golde were brought in owlde tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the worlde. Also of the vyage to Cathay and Easte India by the northe sea: And of the viages of Sebastian Cabot. 249. [p. 283.] Of the vyages to Moscouia and Cathay. 249. [p. 283.] A breefe description of Moscouia. 259. [p. 291.] The description of the north regions: and howe they are habitable, contrary to th[e] opinion of the owlde wryters. 264. [p. 295.] Scandia. 267. [p. 298.] Gronlande. 268. [p. 299.] Islande. 269. [p. 300.] Laponia. 270. [p. 301.] Norway. 273. [p. 303.] Suetia or Suethlande. 275. [p. 305.] Gothia or Gothlande. 276. [p. 306.] Finlande and Eningia. 276. [p. 306.] Bothnia. 275. [p. 305.] The dyfference of regions and causes of great cities. . . 277. [p. 307.]</p>	<p>The hystorie of Paulus Iouius of the ambassade of great Basilius Prince of Moscouia to pope Clement the seuenth. 278. [p. 308.] Other notable thynges as concernynge Moscouia, gathered owt of the bookes of Sigismundus Liberus. 289. [p. 318.] The description of the regions and people lyinge North and Easte from Moscouia to the ryuer Petzora and the prouince of Iugaria and the ryuer Obi. &c. 294. [p. 322.] Of the famous ryuer of Tanais. 297. [p. 324.] More directly from Moscouia to Cathay. 298. [p. 325.] Of the Tartars. 299. [p. 327.] The nauigation by the frozen sea. 303. [p. 330.] The letters missiue which kynge Edwarde the vi. sent to the kynges, princes, and other potentates inhabitynge the north east partes of the worlde towarde the Empire of Cathay. 306. and. 308. [p. 333.] The letters of the prince of Moscouia sente to kynge Edwarde. 319. [These are not included in the work.] Other notable thynges as touchynge the Indies: and of the foreknowledge that the poet Seneca had of the fyndynge of the newe worlde and other regions not then known. 310. [p. 337.] Of the greate Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide. 310. [p. 337.] Of the coloure of the Indians. 311. [p. 338.] Why they were cauled Indians. 311. [p. 339.] The fyrst discouerynge of the West Indies. 312. [p. 339.] What maner of man Christopher Colon was, and howe he came fyrst to the knowledge of the Indies. 313. [p. 340.] What labour and trauaile he tooke in attemptynge his fyrst vyage to the Indies. 313. [p. 340.] Of newe Spaine cauled Noua Hispania or Mexico. . . . 315. [p. 342.] Of Peru. 316. [p. 343.] Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata. 316. [p. 343.] Of the hygher or superior India cauled India Tercera or Terciera. 317. [p. 344.] Ageyne of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos. . . 318. [p. 344.] The discouerynge of the lande of Florida. 319. [p. 345.] An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne Nauigations about the same. 320. [p. 346.] That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes which inhabite the vndermost halfe of the baule of the earth, contrary to th[e] opinions of the owlde wryters. 321. [p. 347.] Who fyrst founde the nedle of the compasse and the vse thereof. 322. [p. 348.] The situation and byggenesse of the earth. 323. [p. 349.] What degrees are. 324. [p. 349.] A demonstration of the roundnesse of the earth. . . . 324. [p. 350.] What credit ought to be gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature. 325. [p. 351.] The preface to the booke of metals. 326. [p. 355.] Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the maner of fyndynge the same. 327. [p. 356.] Of the mine of golde and the qualitie therof. 334. [p. 362.] Of the myne of syluer. 340. [p. 366.] The maner of woorkynge in the golde mines of Egypte in owlde tyme. 342. [p. 369.] The description of the two vyages made owt of Englande to Guinea in Afrike. 343. [p. 373.] A breefe description of Afrike. 344. [p. 374.] The fyrst vyage to Guinea. 345. [p. 375.] The seconde vyage to guynea. 350. [p. 379.] The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes. 360. [p. 389.] A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions. . 361. [p. 390.] A breefe rehearfall of the contentes of the bookes of the Decades, &c. [p. 391.]</p>
--	--

F I N I S.

¶ The interpretation of certeyne woordes.

<p>¶ <i>Continente</i> (that is) the firme lande not inclosed with water, or no Ilande. <i>A Carauel</i> or <i>Caruel</i>, a kynde of shyppes. <i>Hemispherium</i>, the halfe globe of the earth and water. <i>Pefus</i>, a ducate and a halfe.</p>	<p><i>Equinoctial</i>, the line that diuideth the heauen and the earthe in the myddest betwene the two poles, in the which when the sonne commeth, the days and nyghtes are of equal length <i>Clime</i>, is a portion of the worlde betwene north and south.</p>	<p><i>Paralleles</i>, are lines whereby the sonne passynge causeth variation of tyme. <i>Gauii Mammoni</i>, Monkeys. <i>Schoenus</i>, is a space of xl. furlonges. <i>Werst</i>, is an Italian [?] Russian] mile. <i>Colonie</i>, an habitacion.</p>
--	--	--

The Indian language.

<p>¶ <i>Canoa</i>, a boate or barke. <i>Caciqui</i>, kynges or gouernours. <i>Zemes</i> an Idole. <i>Tuyra</i>, the deuyll.</p>	<p><i>Machana</i>, a sworde. <i>Areit</i>os, songes or balades. <i>Tona</i>, the moone. <i>Tonatic</i>o, the foonne.</p>	<p><i>Quines</i>, prestes. <i>Chiny</i>, a man. <i>Ira</i>, a woman. <i>Boa</i>, a house.</p>	<p><i>Cauni</i>, golde. <i>Mayani</i>, nothyng. &c.</p>
--	---	--	--

¶ Note that the Ilande of Hispaniola, is nowe cauled San Domingo by reason of the chiefe city so named. Also faynte Iohns Ilande cauled sancti Iohannis, or Burichena, is otherwyse cauled Boriquen.

I POTENTISSIMO AC SERENISSIMO
 PHILIPPO, AC SERENISSIMÆ POTENTISSIMÆQVE MARIÆ,
 Dei gratia Regi ac Reginae, Angliæ, Franciæ, Neapolis, Ierusalem, et
 Hiberniæ: Fidei defensoribus, Principibus Hispaniarum et Siciliae,
 Archiducibus Austriæ, Ducibus Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et
 Brabantia, comitibus Hapsburgi, Flandriæ, et Tirolis,
 Richardus Edenus perpetuam optat felicitatem.



MVM IN PRIMO VESTRO ingressu in hanc celeberrimam Londini urbem (illustrissimi Principes) cernerem quanto omnium applausu, populi concursu, ac civium frequentia, quanto insuper spectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum splendore, equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore, cæterisque magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro dignitate vestra accepti estis dum omnes quod sui est officij facere satagebant, ubi in tanta hominum turba vix vnus reperiatur qui non aliquid agendo aduentum vestrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoque aliorum exemplo (propius presertim ad me accedentibus Celsitudinibus vestris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid agendum accendi ne solus in tanta hominum corona otiosus viderer, quod vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem temere erupuissem, nisi et præsentia vestra maiestas, et mea me obscuritas a tam audaci facinore deterruissent. Verum, cum postea penitus de hac re mecum cogitarem, consideraremque quam hæc omnia alioqui per se laude digna, vestris tamen meritis ac regiae dignitatis eminentiæ comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, cœpi denuo cum animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortalis rerum memoria felicissimum vestrum aduentum gratularer, ut inde nominis vestri fama et splendor, non vllis spectaculorum temporarijs ostentis, sed rerum gestarum gloria, ad posteros perpetuo emanaret. Excutio statim diuitias meas. Perscrutor si quid ex penu meo depromere possim quod me ad aliquid agendum vestris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale reperio, agnosco nuditatem meam, atque ad vos confugio. Patrum, auorum, proauorum, atque atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum gestarum video, totque preclarissimorum principum propagines, ut merito ab ipsis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac Hercule, cæterisque theanthropis, originem duxisse videantur. Quod cum ita sit, non aliunde profecto quam ex hac sylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus hominum et æterna rerum memoria, perpetua spectacula rerum a vobis et progenitoribus vestris præclare gestarum, in mundi teatro ab omnibus cum summa nominis vestri fama ac veneratione cernantur. Cum itaque inter cætera a maioribus vestris præclare gesta, nihil sit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam Herculeis laboribus superato Oceano, felicissimo tandem euentu, Indiæ Occidentalis

ditissimas Insulas atque Continentis amplissimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenerunt, in quibus infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Christi conuerterunt (quo nihil augustius aut Christianis principibus magis dignum excogitari potest) visus sum mihi quod non alia in re magis possem felicitati vestrae merito gratulari, quam si nostris quoque hominibus quibus hæc hæctenus nihil aut parum cognita sunt, innotescere faciam, ut perspectis illorum simul et vestrorum amplissimis imperijs non sine diuina prouidentia (ut credere par est) ad ipsos usque Antipodes et *PLVS VLTRA* terminatis, omnes boni, ipsa rerum magnitudine in admirationem ducti, vos ament et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obstruatur si quam in maledicendo voluptatem capiunt. Hæc dum cogito, venit mihi in mentem quod olim adolescens perlegi *Decades de Nouo Orbe* a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illustrissimi Ferdinandi regis Catholici, ac tui (Serenissime rex) proavi oratore, Latine conscriptas, atque sacrae Cæsariæ maiestati patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaque autoris fide et eruditione motus, eum præ cæteris in nostram linguam traducendum suscepi, quod non solum ut historicus res Indicas cum summa fide scriptis mandauit, sed etiam ut philosophus (quod in cæteris scriptoribus desyderatur) naturalium rerum occultas causas reddit, ac admirabilium naturæ operum (quibus hæc vestra India plena est) rationes inuestigat. Atque ut huius Indiæ posterior status cognoscatur, quantusque thesaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumque ditissimarum mercium ac annui census inde quotannis in Hispaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctissimi viri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouiedi libellum quem ille Indicæ historiæ generalis Summarij titulo inscripsit, eiusdemque illustrissimi Caroli Imperatoris patris tui nomini consecrauit: Cæteraque plurima ex recentioribus scriptoribus excerpti, quæ mihi in tam immensa rerum memorabilium bibliotheca, præcipue adnotanda videbantur. Quæ, quanta et qualia sunt, quantisque parasangis, omnium heroum ac Argonautarum res gestas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas superent, hæc mea sequens præfacio vulgari sermone ad huius historiæ lectores populumque Anglicum conscripta, satis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo ut idem hic repetere superuacaneum sit, minimeque necessarium, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Serenissima Regina vernacula est, idemque illustrissimo Regi quod tibi scriptum aut dictum existimen, non solum quod diuino vinculo vnum sitis in carne vna, sed etiam quod eadem animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, cæterisque virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quam carnis vinculo vnum sitis. Sed neque hic opus est ut ego Latino sermone vestras virtutes, animi moderationem, clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationem, castitatem felicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam, victorias, imperia, stemmata, cæteraque huiusmodi multa enumerem, cum præsertim vir nobilis et doctus Leonhardus Goretius Polonus de his omnibus deque felicissimo vestro matrimonio, orationæ satis fusa tractauit, in qua nihil pretermisit quod ad Celsitudinis vestrae et progenitorum vestrorum gloriam virtute partam, pertineat. Cæterum cum regiae vestrae virtutes nominisque splendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per vniuersa Christiani orbis imperia satis nota sint, nisi forte ibi minime vbi maxime nota esse deberent, nempe in hoc Angliæ regno, ideo opere præcium et rem omnibus bonis gratam, quodque mei est officij erga Celsitudines vestras me facturum existimaui, si hæc nostris (ut dixi) hominibus, nostraque lingua ob oculos contemplanda propofuero. Quod quam feliciter aut dextre a me factum sit, aliorum esto iudicium. Quam vero fidelitur, sincere, ac animo in Maiestatis vestras propenso hoc idem aggressus sum, testis est mihi conscientia mea in conspectu illius qui hominum corda et renes scrutatur. Macte igitur virtutis istius animi vestri estote Serenissimi Principes, atque Diuino auxilio freti, pergite ea qua cœpistis fiducia, huius deploratae ac collapsæ reipublicæ nostræ statum, pristino decori restituere, id quod omnes a vobis expectant atque efflagitant,

pollicentes in super vobis in eo negotio suam operam in nullo defuturam. Ne terreat vos quorundam canum latratus qui bonis omnibus oblatrant, et tunc desinent latrare cum desinent vivere. Vulgatissimum semper fuit improbos homines viris probis vel propter invidiam vel propter dissimilitudinem, solere latrare. Et tamen ille probus semper habitus est, quem peruersi maxime improbauerint. Non est igitur curandum quid de nobis homunculi, sed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogitate (Serenissimi Principes) quod magnanimitate ac maiorum insignijs, aquilis et leonibus similes estis. Aquilæ natura est, alta petere, et aduersus solis radios in altum volare. Leonis proprium est parcere subiectis et debellare superbos. Generosus equus per plateas incedens, canes ut animalcula imbellia præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe administrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile est: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuenili ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magistra: hijs præsertim qui contumelia lacescuntur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidissimos solet de gradu dejicere. Sed (ut supra dixi) non est hic mei propositi (Serenissimi Principes) vestras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in summo rerum fastigio vos humiles præbuisistis, de quare fusius in præfatione ad lectores tractaui. Iam itaque ut huic epistolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Serenissimas Maiestates vestras ut has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas vestro nomini consecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore suscipiatis, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem rejicitis. Quem admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam plantauit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primitias soluit a quo prima semina primaque arborum insitiones habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum vestrorum rebus gestis primis sumptis feminibus, hos qualescumque fructus ædidi, videor profecto mihi, debito vestro honore vos defraudasse, nisi eisdem vestro nomini ac numini obtulissem.

Deus. Opt. Max. Celsitudines vestras perpetuo seruat incolumes,
 faxitque ut fecunda sobolis propagine, summaque pace
 ac tranquillitate, huius regni habenas ad Diuini
 nominis gloriam, diu gubernetis.

FINIS.

RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



He moſte famous oratoure and learned Phyloſopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wryteth, that in all conſultations as touchyng owre behaouere .and order of luyng amonge men, it behoueth vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre the dignitie of mans nature, excelleth the condition of brute beaſtes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by ſence, delyte in nothyng but beaſtely appetites, whereunto they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nuryſhed with knowlege, and taketh pleaſure in diuifyng or excogitayng ſume honeſt thyng, whereby it not onely leaueth amonge men a memorie of his immortal nature, but alſo engendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to ſee and heare ſuch thinges as are commendable in theyr prediceffours. And this ſurely thynke I to bee the cauſe that eyther the famous factes of woorthy men, or ingenious inuentions of experte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and diuifers of the fame, or ſuch to whom they haue byn dedicate, but alſo that parte

of theyr commendations haue redounded to all ſuche as haue ſpente theyr tyme and taken peynes in illuſtratyng and ſettyng furthe theyr doyngeſ. For who ſhulde at this daye haue knowen Maufolus the kynge of Caria, with his wyfe Artemiſia, or theſe famous artificers, Scopa, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Pythis, if the wonderfull and ſumptuous woork of the ſepulcher whiche Artemiſia made for kynge Maufolus her huſband (beinge of ſuch woorkemanshypp that it was accompted for one of the marueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all theſe immortal fame, whereas neuertheleſſe it coulde not defende it ſelſe ageynſt th[e] iniurie of tyme conſumyng all thynges. There remayneth at this daye no token of the laborious Tabernacle whiche Moifeſ buylded, or of the renoumed and marueilous Temple that was buylded in Hieruſalem by Salomon and renewed by Eſdras. Yet ſhall the name of the excellent artificers Ooliab and Befelchel, and Hiram the kynge of Tyruſ, lyue for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore alſo, Salomon hym ſelſe, although he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his glory to that princely buyldyng. But certeynely the moſt trewe and permanent glory, procedeth of ſuch monumentes as bryng ſume great and notable commoditie and profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of ſtones of the Pyramides of Egypt, wherin is nought els to ſee but the fonde and barbarous oſtentation of ſuperfluous riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrinthi, or of horryble great Images cauled Coloſſi, of knottes inexplicable, of braſen caudrons of monſtrous byggenefſe, of hauens with echo ſeuē tymes reboundyng, and dyuers ſuche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in conſideryng the maruelous arte and witte of ſuche artificers as diuifed and made the ſame, ſo are they otherwyſe vnprofitable: And bryng rather a fame to theyr inuentoures, then trewe glorye. Perillus was famous by diuifyng his braſen bulle: yet ſo, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obſcure and vnknown. They haue therefore deſerued more trewe commendation whiche in buyldyng of cities, townes, fortrefſes, bridges, cundites, hauens, ſhyppes, and ſuche other, haue ſo ioyned magnificence with profecte, that bothe may remaine for an eternal teſtimonie of abſolute glory, whoſe perfection extendeth to the gratifyng of vniuerſal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I conſider, and caule to memorie howe Cicero defineth trewe glory to bee a fame of many and greate deſertes eyther towarde owre citizens, owre country, or towarde all man kynde, and the fame to bee of ſuch excellencie that the owlde poetes for ſume effecte fayned it to bee the ſweete Ambroſia and Nectar wherwith the goddes are fedde, and that of ſuch force that wno ſo may drynke therof, ſhal alſo become a god, (that is to ſay immortal and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man maye be a god to men as holy ſcripture ſpeaketh of Moifeſ and other) the kynges of Spayne of late dayes (if I may ſpeake it without offence of other) may ſo much the more for theyr iuſt deſertes and good fortune be compared to thoſe goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynde honoured them with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes ſo farre excell al other, as I dare not ſpeake to ſuch as haue not yet harde or redde of the fame, leaſt the greatneſſe therof ſhulde at the firſt brunte ſo muche aſtonyſhe the reader that he myght geue the leſſe credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuertheleſſe hath moſte faythfully wrytten this hyſtorye of ſuche thynges wherof he hath ſene a greate parte him ſelſe (as being by

Commendation
of noble factes.

Mauſolus.
Cunnyng
artificers.

The Tabernacle
of Moifeſ.
The Temple of
Salomon.
Hiram.

Trewe glory.

Great and
ſumptuous works

Fame differeth
from true glory.

Absolute glory.

What is true
glory.

The kynges of
Spayne.
Heroes.

The certentie of
this byſtory

The house of the contractes of India.

The counsayl for the Indies
The heroicall factes of the Spanyardes.

Great Alexander.

The Spanyardes warres in the Indies.

The benefites that the Indians haue receaued by the Spanyardes.

Lybertie.
The Canibales,

Feareful idlenesse.

Isai. 65.

The warres of Moises.

The Indians subdued to the fayth.
Isai. 42.

The contemplation of gods workes.

The Christian Empire enlarged.

The conuersion of the gentyles.

Leuiathan.

the moſte catholyke and puiſſaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted a commiſſionarie in th[e]affayres of India) and gathered the reſidewe partly by information and partly out of the wrytinges of ſuch as haue byn (as Vyrgyll wryteth of Eneas, *Et quorum pars magna fui*) that is, doers and parte of ſuch thynges as are conteyned in the hystorie: as Gouvernours, Lieuetenautes, Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylottes, who by their paineful trauayles and prowes, haue not onely ſubdued theſe landes and ſeas, but haue alſo with lyke diliger ce commytted th[e]order therof to wrytinge: And not this onely, but for the better tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner dayly fende from thenſe into Spayne ſuch monumentes as are moſt certeyne teſtimonies of theyr doynge, as yow may reade in dyuers places in this boke. This newe worlde is nowe ſo much frequented, the Ocean nowe ſo well knowen, and the commodities ſo greate, that the kynge erected a houſe in the cite of Siuile (cauled the houſe of the contractes of India) perteynyng onely to th[e]affayres of the Ocean, to the which al ſuch reforte for neceſſaries as attempte anye vyage to this newe worlde, and lykewyſe at theyr returne make theyr accompte to the counſayle for the Indies for the golde and ſuche other thynges as they brynge from thenſe. It is therefore apparent that the heroicall factes of the Spaniardes of theſe days, deſerue ſo greate prayſe that th[e]autour of this booke (beinge no Spanyarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doynge aboute the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and ſuch other which for theyr glorious and vertuous enterpryſes were accounted as goddes amonge men. And ſurely if great Alexander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then deſerued immortall fame amonge men for theyr bluddye victories onely for theyr owne glory and amplifyinge theyr empire obteyned by ſlaughte of innocentes and kepte by violence, haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much more then ſhal we thynke theſe men woorthy iuſt commendations which in theyr mercyfull warres ageynſt theſe naked people haue ſo vſed them ſelues towarde them in exchaungynge of benefites for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof enſewed to the vanquiſhed then the victourers. They haue taken nothyng from them but ſuch as they them ſelues were wel wyllynge to departe with, and accounted as ſuperfluities, as golde, perles, precious ſtones and ſuch other: for the which they recompensd them with ſuche thynges as they muche more eſtemed. But ſum wyll ſay, they poſſeſſe and inhabyte theyr regions and vſe them as bondemen and tributaries, where before they were free. They inhabite theyr regions indeede: Yet ſo, that by theyr diligence and better manuryng the fame, they maye nowe better ſuſteyne both, then one before. Theyr bondage is ſuche as is much rather to be deſired then theyr former libertie which was to the cruell Canibales rather a horrible licencioſneſſe then a libertie, and to the innocent ſo terrible a bondage, that in the myddeſt of theyr ferefull idleneſſe, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to thoſe manhuntynge woolues. But nowe thanked be God, by the manhodde and pollicie of the Spanyardes, this deuelyſſhe generation is ſo confumed, partely by the ſlaughte of ſuche as coulde by no meanes be brought to ciuilitie, and partly by referuyng ſuch as were ouercome in the warres, and conuertynge them to a better mynde, that the prophecie may herein bee fulfilled that the wolfe and the lambe ſhall feede togethe, and the wylde fieldes with the vale of Achor, ſhalbe the folde of the heard of gods people. Moises as the miniſter of the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in fyer and tempeſtes, was commaunded in his warres to faue neyther man, woman, nor chylde, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom he ouercome and poſſeſſed theyr landes. But the Spaniardes as the myniſters of grace and libertie, browght vnto theſe newe gentyles the victorie of Chryſtes death wherby they beinge ſubdued with the worldely ſworde, are nowe made free from the bondage of Sathans tyrannie, by the myghty poure of this triumphante victourer, whom (as fayth the prophet) god hath ordeyned to be a lyght to the gentyles, to open the eyes of the blynde, and to delyuer the bounde owt of pryſon and captiuitie. What other men do phantaſie herein, I can not tell: but fuer I am, that lyke as the flowe and brutyſſhe wyttes, for the ſcienderneſſe of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or ſeldome lyfte vp theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maieſtie of nature, but lyke brute beaſtes lookynge euer downewarde, thynke the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theyr owne dungehylles or cages, lyttle paſſynge whether the Chryſtian fayth do ſpreade through the worlde, or bee dryuen to one corner: Euen ſo al good wyttes and honeſt natures (I doubt not) wyl not onely reioyce to ſee the kyngedome of God to bee ſo farre enlarged vpon the face of the earthe, to the confuſion of the deuyll and the Turkyſſhe Antichryſte, but alſo do the vttermoſt of theyr poure to further the ſame. For ſurely, as Gonſalus Ouiedus wryteth to the Emperours maieſtie in his hystorie of the Weſte Indies, that he thynketh hym no trewe Spanyarde whiche reioyceth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whoſe ayde and godly zeale this myghtie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the flocke of Chryſtes congregation, Euen ſo do I thinke them no trewe Chryſtian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heauen for the deliuerie of theſe owre brootherne, owre fleſſhe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemye the oulde ſerpente who hath ſo longe had them in hys poſſeſſion, vntyll the fulneſſe of the gentyles be accompliſhed accordynge to the time preſinite by hym, who vnto the yeare after his incarnation. M. CCCC. lxxxii. hath ſuffered the greate ſerpente of the ſea Leuiathan, to haue ſuche dominion in the Ocean and to caſte ſuch myſtes in the eyes of men, that fence the creation of the worlde vntyll the yeare before named, there hath byn no paſſage from ovr knowen partes of the world to theſe newe landes, whereas nowe the ſame

are moſte certeynely knowen to be not paſt. xxx. dayes ſaylynge from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowlege of the myghtie Chryſtian Empire of Preciofus Iohannes, otherwyſe cauled Preſbyter Iohannes, Emperour of many Chryſtian nations in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryſte. M. CCCC. xxxiii. as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and eſpecially in the booke of Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſſhop of Rome, Paule the thyrde of that name, of the fayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde ſence the tyme of the Apoſtles. A thyng certes moſt woonderfull, and ſuche, that yf the ſame were not hydde hetherto by gods vnfercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in ovr forefathers and prediceſſours vntyll the dayes, of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kynge of Aragon Don Ferdinando grandfather to Th[e]mperours maieſtie by his eldeſt dowghter, and to the queenes hyghneſſe by his ſeconde dowghter the moſt vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces moother: A prince doubtleſſe of ſuche nobilitie, prowes, magnificence, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who ſo ſhall indifferently way all his doinges and good ſucceſſe in all his affayres, comparinge the ſame to th[e] enterpryſes and doinges atchyued by ſuche famous princes in whome the Greekes and Romans haue ſo greatly gloryed, maye with one eye perceauē not onely howe farre his noble factes do ſurmount theyrs, but alſo wel conſyder what noble braunches of iſſhewe were lyke to ſprynge owt of ſo woorthy a ſtocke. And fuerly if ſence the begynning of the worlde, the fauour of god toward men hath byn knowen by ſuch benefites and bleſſynges as he hath geuen to men, it ſeemeth to me that in maner (onely Chryſte excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and ſhewed more fauoure. Great doubtleſſe was the fauour and mercie that god ſhewed vnto Noe, by whom he ſaued the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he ſhewed to kynge Ferdinando vnder whom and by whoſe meanes he ſaued not onely the bodies but alſo the ſoules of innumerable millions of men inhabytynge a great part of the worlde heretofore vnknown and drowned in the deluge of erreure. What ſhulde I here ſpeake of Abraham the father of fayth whoſe promyſes were great, and he cauled the frende of god: Dyd he or his poſteritie ſee Iſraell increaſe to ſuch multitudes and nations as kyng Ferdinandos poſteritie may ſee th[e] increaſe of this ſpirituall Iſraell vnto whome as a ſeconde Abraham he was the father of fayth? Moifes was ſo great in the fyght of god that he diſcloſed vnto hym his ſecrete name, and miraculoſly cauſed a corner of the ſea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinando the greate Ocean thought before that tyme to bee without ende, where neuertheleſſe he and his poſteritie the kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Iſraell muche greater then that whiche Moifes ledde throughe the red ſea. It were here ſuperfluous to ſpeake of Dauid whom Godde founde a man accordynge to his hartes defyre: and yet maye it be doubted whether his plages and ſcourges were greater then his benefites? His ſonne Salomon for al his inconstant and wauerynge wyfedome and his great ryches obteyned by his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no knowlege of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his ſhyppes ſayle abowt the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerſe the Equinoctial line to th[e] inferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe and ſea as dyd the famous ſhyppes Victoria ſent furth by Th[e]mperours maieſtie. A thyng doubtleſſe ſo ſtrange and marueylous that as the lyke was neuer done before, ſo is it perhaps neuer lyke to be done ageyne: ſo farre haue the nauigations of the Spanyardes excelled the vyage of Iafon and the *Argonautæ* to the region of Colchos, or all that euer were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Paralipomenon it bee hyperborically wrytten that in the dayes of Salomon golde and ſyluer were in Hieruſalem in maner as plentiful as ſtones, and that his ſeruantes brought from Ophir foure hundreth and fiftie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that any of his ſhyppes were ſo laden with golde that they ſoonke, as dyd a ſhyppes of kynge Ferdinandos as yow maye reade in the laſt booke of the fyrſte Decade. Neyther was the dominion of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the lande of the Philiftians and th[e] extreme confines of Egypte to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of Spayne haue in the weſt Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to be thought much in reſpect of that which hath byn browght from thence into Spayne as ſhall playnely appere to al ſuche as wyll ſeeke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let paſſe to ſpeake any further of the myracles which god hath wrought by the handes of this noble prince in this newe world among theſe newe gentyles. Is it not well knowen to all the world what a defence and braſen wall he hath byn to all Chryſtendome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores or Sarafens and Iewes which ſo many hundreth yeares poſſeſſed a greate parte of Spayne to no ſmaule daungioure of the hole Chriſtian Empire, and yet coulde neuer before bee cleane vanquyſhed vntyll the dayes of this noble and Catholyke prince ſo named for his warres ageynſte the infidelles, whom God rayſed for a Capitayne of his people as an other Gedion vnder whoſe banner they myght ouercome theyr enemies and poure his vineyarde from ſuche wycked weedes. The which thyng doubtleſſe may ſeeme ſo much the greater and more difficulte, forasmuch as in the myddeſt of the chiefe heate of his chargeable

Preſter Iohn
the Chriſtian
Emperour of
Ethiope.

Don Ferdinando
kynge of Aragon.

The fauour of god
known by his
benefites.

Noe.

What god hath
wrought by kynge
Ferdinando.

Abraham.

Spirituall Iſraell.

Moifes.

Dauid.

Salomon.

Ophir.

Antipodes.

The nauigation
rounde about the
worlde.

The dominion
of Salomon.
Paral, 9.

The Indies.

The warres of
kynge Ferdinando
ageynſt the
Sarasens.

The conqueste of
the IndiesThe conqueste
of Naples.The Emperours
maiestie.

warres ageynste the Moores of Granada, he euen then and at the same tyme fente furth shyppes for the conquestynge of the Indies, as though he and the nation of the Spanyardes had byn appoynted by god eyther to subdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe theym to Christes religion. The selfe same kynge Ferdinando also abowte the yeare of Chryst. 1503. fente a nauie of shyppes into Italy, where they vanquysshed, chafed, and slewe the Frenchemen, and recouered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions belongynge thereunto. By which noble victory, his succession and posteritie as the[e]mperours maiestie and nowe his sonne the kynge owre master and soueraigne lorde haue euer fence enioyed th[e]inheritaunce of the same as of antiquitie by iust and ryght tyle dewe to them and theyr predicesours. And as it is the nature of god not only to shewe his loue and fauour to such as haue pleased hym, but also to poure furth the plentie of his grace vpon theyr succession from generation to generation, so hath he with lyke felicitie prospered the reigne of Th[e]emperours maiestie who by his wisdome and prowes hath not onely pollitikly gouerned, but also augmented and inlarged such dominions as fel to hym by discente of inheritaunce. What shuld I speake of his warres and conquestes in India, in Aphrike, in Italic, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaunders: all the which to be declared accordyngely wolde rather require hole volumes then fewe sheetes of paper. Yet hath one in fewe woordes effectually expressed his dominions and conquestes in these verses folowyng,

*Impiger expauit rapidas transire per undas
Oceani Alcides: continuitque gradum.
Maximus at Cæsar, PLVS VLTRA tendere cursum
Aufus, et ignotis est dare iura locis.
Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuersus,
Cætera sub sceptro ponat vt ipse suo.
Nam pater omnipotens vt famam terminet astris
Iussit, et imperium fineat Oceano.*

¶ An other also briefely hath declared the same in these verses.

*Consortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,
Astra Deo cedunt, Carole terra tibi.*

Gen. 17.

The kinges
maiestie

And certes who so well confidereth the progenie of kynges that in so shorte a time haue linially descended from Don Ferdinando, and howe many kyngedomes they possesse, may see that God hath fulfilled in hym also the promises and blessinges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nations, and his feede to growe great vpon the earth: Also that many kynges shulde come furth of his loynes, and to make a perpetuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his posteritie to bee theyr god for euer. And here to omytte to speake of other: Was there euer better hope or more likenes then now, that these blessinges and promyses of god shulde continewe in this princely progenie, fyth the vertues and felicitie of them al doo so shyne and florisse in ovr noble and gracious prince kynge Phylippe, to whom euen in his youth his father (occupied in the warres of Italye and Aphrike) comytted the hole gouernaunce of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Indies. Of his behauour in Englande, his enemies (which canker, vertue neuer lacked) They I say (if any such yet remaine) haue greatest cause to reporte well: ye so well, that yf his naturall clemencie were not greater then was theyr vnnaturall indignation they knowe them selues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyfe men are declared in these owld verses.

*Quid stulti proprium? Non posse et velle nocere.
Quid sapientis opus: Non velle et posse nocere.*

Apostrophe to
Englande.

Isai. 1.

That is to say: What is the propertie of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woorke of a wyfe man? Not to wyl to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyl, it is knowen to barbers and blere eyde men. Who lamented theyr folly more then he? Who more humbly admytted theyr futes and supplications? Ye who obteyned theyr pardon but he? Beynge a Lion he behaued hym selfe as a lambe, and strooke not his enemy hauynge the swoorde in his hande. Stoope Englande stoope, and learne to knowe thy lorde and master, as horses and other brute beastes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and such other monsters noyous to man kynde. God by the mouth of Ifaias the prophet reprooueth the Israelites that they knewe not so well theyr dewtie towarde hym as dyd the brute beastes the mangiers of theyr masters. The oxen and the asse (sayth he) knoweth the mangier of theyr master, but Israell knoweth not me. For shame let vs not be woorfe then oxen and asses, and lyke vnto horses and mules in whom is no vnderstandynge. But O vnthankfull Englande and voyde of honest shame? Who hath geuen the the face of a hoore and toonge of a serpent without shame to speake venemous woordes in secretes ageynst the annoynted of god. O paynted hoore that hast Chryste in thy mouth and the deuyll in thy harte. Hathe not the pocke of thy licentioufnesse bruste furth in maner to thyne owne destruction. Howe longe wylt thou nuryffe in thy boosome

that serpente whose nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme least thy diseafe become vncurable. What neede I rehearse vnto the thy manyfolde infirmities and deformities whiche thou arte faulen into by thyne owne owtragiouneffe? If the greefes of them bee to thee vn sensible by reason of thy feebleneffe and longe sickenes, take vnto the that glasse wherein thou gloryest with the Iewe and thynkest that thou seest al thynges and canst iudge all mysteries: Looke I say in that pure glasse and beholde thy owne deformities, which thou canste not or wylte not feele. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke euen throughe thy selfe, thou wylte abhorre thy selfe to see howe many monsters lye hid in the vnder the shape of man. There is euen nowe great talke of the in the mouthes of all men that thou hast of late yeares brought furthe many monsters and straunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretacions more monstrous then the monsters them selues. But shall I breiefely and simply declare vnto thee the signification of thy monsters? Fyrst then confyder that they are monsters of mankynde and not of other beastes. Secundarily marke well that in them al, the headde is perfect, so that the monstrositie groweth owt of the body, although not owt of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to farre. Confyder ageyne that disorder of the partes is a deformitie to the hole. One hath well interpreted that such monstrous byrthes signifie the monstrous and deformed myndes of the people mysshapened with phantastical opinions, dissolute luynges, licentious talke, and such other vicious behaoures which monstrously deforme the myndes of men in the fyght of god who by suche signes dooth certifie vs in what similitude we appere before hym, and thereby gyueth vs admonition to amende before the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beastes are more monstrous then lyinge, rebellion, strife, contention, priuie malice, slaundrynge, mutterynges, conspiraces, and such other deuillysse imaginations. But O Englande whyle tyme is gyuen thee, circumscribe thy harte. Put to onely thy good wyll, and thou mayste fynde grace and fauoure to recouer thyne aunciente bewtie whiche hath so longe been defaced. Thou haste nowe a kyng and queene that desyre thee to remember thy dewtie, and holde theyr armes abroad to embrace thee yf thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are fory to occupie the whyppe yf thou mightest otherwyse bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleasure to persist in frowarde stobberneffe, knowe thou that they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monsters whereof thou hast had suche experience, that proudly trustynges in thyne owne strengthe, and attemptynges lyke an other Nemroth to buylde a newe towre of confusion, the woorkes of thy gigantes were miraculously ouerthrowne by a woman who deliuered thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughtest to knowe the daungior thou wast in, and bee thankfull to thy deliuerer. Beware therefore leaste whyle thou contemne the peaceable princes that god hath sent the, thou bee lyke vnto Ifopes frogges to whom for theyr vnquietneffe, Iupiter sent a hearon to picke them in the hedes. Consider what benefites thou mayst receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Confyder ageyne that as they are able, so may thy gentelneffe make them wyllynges to recompense the same. Stoppe thyne eares from vayne fables as from the inchauntynge Mermaydes. For as manye speake of Robbyn Hoode and of his bowe that neuer shot therein, so doo fooles prate of such thynges as they knowe not. But O god? what phantasies are nowe in the heades of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe smaule sparkes they kyndle great flames? Summe are so curious to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iust matter woorthy reproche in them whom they desyre to depraue, they speake euyll of theyr parentes and kynred of whom they knowe as lyttle. And not so fatiffyed they dispise and with lyinge dispraysse theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye sum take such pleasure herein, that if they can fynde noughte els to dispraysse, they wyl fynde faute in suche as they fauour not, bycause they weare not theyr apparell as they doo, or perhappes are not so effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fyght, so parciall is the iudgement of fooles in theyr owne rudeneffe, thynkyng them selues the better for dispraysynges of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey sayth one: Th[e]mperour is but poore sayth an other: He is deade sayth an other: The Indies haue rebelled sayth an other, and eyther there commeth no more golde from thense, or there is no more founde nowe: with suche other false and licentious talke diuised by vnquiet braines in whose heades the hammers of sedition seafe not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I shulde here answere to all these querels particularly and as the woorthynesse of the thynges requireth, I myght fynde matter sufficient to make a volume of iuste quantitie and perhappes be tedious to summe. Yet not to passe ouer so great a matter vntouched, and partely to stoppe the mouthes of suche impudente lyers, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat hereof. Fyrst therefore to speake of Spayne, and by the testimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodities therof: Plinie a graue and faythful autour, in the last boke and last chapiture of his natural history greatly commendynge Italy aboute al other contreys, giueth the second prayse vnto Spaine, aswel for al such thynges as in maner the heuen can geue and the earth brynges furth for the commoditie of this lyfe as also for the excellent wittes of men and Ciuile gouernaunce. Also Diodorus Siculus in the sixt booke of his Bibliotheca speakynge of Spayne (cauled of the Greekes Iberia) writeth that when in the mountaines named Pyrinei th[e] inhabitants burnt vp the wooddes, there ranne owt of the mountaynes as it were dyuers streames of pure syluer molten by the heate of the fyre. But the estimation and price of fyluer beinge at those dayes to them vnknown, the Phenician marchauntes bought the same of them for thynges of smaule value: And carynges

Monstrous byrthes.

The significacions of monstrous byrthes.

The deformity of monstrous myndes.

The kyng and Queene.

Howe curious summe are to fynde faute in other.

Lyes Imagined.

Commendacions of Spain

Ryche syluer mynes in Spayne.

The Romans
enriched by the
silver of Spayne.

The
Carthaginensis
enriched by the
silver of Spain.

The commodities
of Spain

The sygne of
the steeple.

Englande
impouershed,
Spayne enriched.

Siluer mines
founde of late
in Spayne.

Siluer brought
frome Peru into
Englande.

Th[e]mperours
reuenues from
the Indies.

The Ilandes of
the Southe sea.

The Ilandes of
Maluca.

it into Grecia, Asia, and other countreys, got great rycheffe therby. For the desyre of gaynes (fayth he) so greatly moued the marchauntes, that when more syluer remaind then myght lade theyr shippes, they tooke the leade frome theyr ankers, and put syluer in the place therof. The Phenices by these gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd assigne many colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there abowt, and also in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many yeares when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price of syluer, and applyed them felues to the seekyng of metals and founde great plentie of syluer, they obteyned greate ryches therby forasmuch as in maner al that earth of the mountaynes is so replenyfshed with syluer that it is a marueylous thyng to consider the nature of the region and the continual labour of the woorkemen in those mynes. Lykewyse when afterwarde the Romans subdued the Iberians, the Italians which for the desyre of gaynes searched those metals, gotte great rycheffe by the same. For they deputed to that labour a multitude of bowghte seruauntes, whiche searchoyng the vaynes of metals in dyuers places, and Percyng the earth dyuers wayes for the space of many furlonges, browght furthe great plentie of golde and syluer. But the rycheffe of these mynes was fyrst founde at such tyme as the Carthaginenses (the enemies of the Romane Empire) had the Iberians in subiection: which was the cause that they poure afterwarde increased. For, with monye hyringe the best and moste experte fouldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynst theyr enemies. And not vsyng the ayde eyther of theyr owne fouldiers or theyr associates, they were a terrour to the Romanes, Sicilians, and Libyans, whom they browght into great daungour by reason they passed them al in abundaunce of golde and syluer. With better fortune therefore, and greater hope of gayne are ryche metals sought in Spayne, the goodnesse of whose soyle yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynyng much golde and syluer. And these be the very wordes of Diodorus Siculus, which the later wryters doo also confirme. For Iulius Solinus in his Polyhistor, compareth Spayne to the best countreys in plentie of grayne, vyttayles, oyle, syluer, golde, and Iron. Likewyse Strabo, Statius, and Claudius, do no lesse commend it. It were to longe here to speake of the greates plentie of fine woolles lyttle inferiour vnto owrs: also abundaunce of fugar, vines, pomegranates, limondes, and orangies in such plentie that they suffice not only Spayne, but also in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of Englande are scarcely able to serue it selfe. And althowghe here summe wyll obiecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and certeyne other thynges, yet are theyr commodities so greates otherwyse, that al such thynges are browght them owt of other countreys for theyr wares: and that in such plentie, that they are there better chepe then euer they were in Englande fence the signe of the steeple the poore mans Inne was pulled downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde greates faute that in trauallyng in Spayne, men shalbe serued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theyr meate and to the tauerne for theyr drynke. And what then I praye yow? What inconuenience enfeweth hereof? Is it not better so to doo then to pay thryse for one thinge as is the maner to doo in summe of owre Innes and in tauernes where all that eate roste meate are beaten with the spitte, as where they that of late in Barthelmewe fayre payde fortie pence for a pygge, where the good man of the house was not a shamed to make his vaunte that he had made foure shyllynges of a pygge, and had in one day taken foure pounce for pygges. But if I shuld here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in fewe yeares decayed and impoueryfshed, and howe on the contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I shulde perhappes displease more in descrybyng the myserie of the one, then please other in expreffyng the florysshynge state of the other, which by all reason is lyke dayly to increase, aswell for the greates rycheffe that are yearely browght thither from the Indies, as also for the ryche syluer mynes that are founde of late in Spayne in the countrey of Asturia as I was credably informed by the woorthy and lerned gentelman Augustinus de Ceratta, Contador (that is) the auditour of the kynges myntes who had longe before byn surueyore of the golde mynes of Peru, and browght from thense and from Rio de Plata. xiii. thousand pounce weyght of syluer which was coyned to the kynges vse in the towre of London where neuer so much hath byn seene at once as suche as haue byn owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme. What shulde I heare speake of the golde which th[e]mperours maiestie receaueth frome all the Indies, whereas onely in the two meltynge shoppes of the gold mines of the Ilande of Hispaniola, is molten yearely three hundreth thousande pounce weyght of. viii. vneces to the pound, wherof the fyfte parte is dewe vnto hym, whiche amounteth to three score thousande weyght yearely. Yet doo I not here speake of the golde mines of the other Ilandes and the firme lande reachyng. viii. thousande myles from the north to the south: Neyther of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea cauled Mare del Sur, where the kyng of one lyttle Ilande named Tacarequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulfe of Saynt Michael, payeth yearely for his tribute a hundreth pounce weight of perles: Neyther yet of the fyfte parte of other thynges, as precious stones, brasile, goffampine cotton, spices, and dyuers other thynges, wheras also the ryche Ilandes cauled the Maluchas perteyne to the inheritaunce of Castile, although the kyng of Portugale enioy them for certeyne yeares by composition. But the Indies haue rebelled (fay they) and there commeth no more golde from thense. But what if summe of them haue rebelled? dooth it therby folowe that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vnder obedience? But if thou wylte fay that they haue al rebelled at once, thou must proue that thou sayest eyther by hystorie or wytnesse of such as know the truth herof, as I (hauing made diligent searcho for the same) am able to proue the contrarie, and that

fuche talke is onely imagined by busie headdes. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in summe prouinces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be browght vnder subiection as were oftentimes the prouinces of the Romanes and as were in owre dayes dyuers countreys of Englande whiche haue byn fore afflicted with that plague. But whether the fandes of the ryuers and the mountaynes of the Indies bee fo emptied with golde that no more can be founde there, I thinke it here superfluous to answere to this obiection, forasmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of metals where yow shall fynde by experience that metals growe and increase, and that after certeyne yeares. fuche owlde caues of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenyfshed with vre: Also that the sprynges of fuche mountaynes turnynge theyr course and breakynge furth in other places, brynge with them greate plentie of such golden fande as is founde in the ryuers into the which they faule. What impudencie is it therfore with woordes of reproche to caule hym poore whose poure is so greate, his treasure so infinite, and his doinges so chargeable, that I beleue that when so euer it please almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the greate damage of all Chrystendome, it shalbe harde to fynde an other that shall in all poyntes bee so well able to supplye that roome and maynteyne th[e] imperiall dignitie. Let al honest natures therfore learne to speake well of princes accordynge to the sentence *De Principibus nil nisi bonum*, forasmuch as they are the ministers of god who hath theyr hartes in his hande and ruleth the same as seemeth beste vnto hym. For there is no poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that refysteth or speaketh euyll of the poure, refisteth and speaketh euyll of god. Thou shalt not speake euyll of the prince or ruler of thy people faith faint Paule.

But wheras nowe by the poure of Neptunus (I wot nere with what wynde) I haue byn dryuen thus farre from my nauigations, I haue thought good to turne my sayles and to folowe the ordinarie course which I beganne, and by th[e] example of this woorthy capitayne kynge Ferdinando, encourage al other to theyr poure to attempte the lyke vyages: As touchynge the which in fewe woordes to declare my opynyon, if any man shulde aske me what I thinke these thinges wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll answere as dooth the autoure of this booke, that when I consyder howe farre owre posteritie shall see the Christian religion enlarged, I am not able with tounge or penne to expresse what I conceaue hereof in my mynd. Yet one thyng I see which enforceth me to speake and lament, that the haruest is so great and the workemen so few. The Spanyardes haue shewed a good exemple to all Chrystian nations to folowe. But as god is great and woonderfull in all his woorkes, so befyde the portion of lande perteynyng to the Spanyardes (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italye as yowe maye reade in the laste booke of the seconde Decade) and beside that which pertaineth to the Portugales, there yet remayneth an other portion of that mayne lande reachynge toward the northeast, thought to be as large as the other, and not yet knowen but only by the sea coastes, neyther inhabyted by any Christian men: whereas neuerthelesse (as wryteth Gemma Phrifijs) in this lande there are many fayre and frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beastes. Also cities and towres so wel buylded and people of such ciuilitie, that this parte of the worlde seemeth lyttle inferiour to owre Europe, if th[e] inhabitants had receaued owre religion. They are wyttie people and refuse not barteryng with straungers. These regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalearum or Bacchallaos of the which yow may reade sumwhat in this booke in the vyage of the woorthy owlde man yet lyuing Sebastiane Cabote, in the. vi. booke of the thyrde Decade. But Cabote touched only in the north corner and most barbarous parte hereof, from whence he was repulged with Ise in the moneth of Iuly. Neuerthelesse, the west and south partes of these regions haue fence byn better searched by other, and founde to bee as we haue sayde before. The chiefe citie in the southwest partes of these regions, is cauled Temixtetan, or Mexico in maner vnder the circle cauled Tropicus Cancrī, and strongly defended by the nature of the place. For it standeth in a very great lake hauynge about it innumerable bridges, and buyldynges to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus. Th[e] inhabitants also can wryte and reade. Summe wryters connecte this lande to the firme lande of Asia: But the truth hereof is not yet knowen. And although the Spanyardes haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is nowe cauled Noua Hispania, yet are the people for the moste parte Idolatours. Howe much therfore is it to be lamented, and howe greatly dooth it founde to the reproche of all Chriſtendome, and especially to such as dwell nereſt to these landes (as we doo) beinge muche nearer vnto the same then are the Spanyardes (as within. xxv. dayes saylinge and lesse) howe muche I saye shall this founde vnto owre reproche and inexcusable slothfulnesse and negligence bothe before god and the worlde, that so large dominions of such tractable people and pure gentiles, not beinge hytherto corrupted with any other false religion (and therefore the easyer to bee allured to embrace owres) are nowe knowen vnto vs, and that we haue no respecte neyther for goddes cause nor for owre owne commoditie to attempte summe vyages into these coastes, to doo for ovr partes as the Spaniardes haue doone for theirs, and not euer lyke sheepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothyng woorthy memorie amonge men or thankes before god, who maye herein woorthely accuse vs for the slackenesse of owre dewtie toward hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gentiles (to whose Apostelshippe also these newe gentiles doo pertaine) was of such zeale toward the Iewes whom god had reiected, that

The nauigations
of the Spanyardes

Itali is. 1020 myles
in lengthe and
126. in breadthe.

The lande cauled
Terra florida, and
regio baccalearum

Looke the last
booke, thirde
decade.

This region is
nowe cauled Noua
Hispania. Sum
thinke that this
citie is Quinsai of
Marcus Paulus.

Looke the last
booke of the 3
decade, and the
beginning of the
booke of the
landes lately
found.

The godlye zeale
of. S. Paule.

he wysshed hym selfe to bee accursed of god for theyr fakes. He went from Damascus to Arabie, preached the gospell in Grecia, came prisoner to Rome, was scourged and stoned, and suffered thryfe shypwracke, what then thinke yow he wold do if he were now aliue? Is it to be thought that he wolde not aduventure. xxv. dayes faylynge to come to such a marte of foules in such redinesse to bee easely obteyned? I beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyll, nor Leuiathan, nor the worlde, shulde let hym but that he wolde geue th[e] onfet ageynst them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom he fayth he can doo all thynges. He was not negligent in his office nor ignorant of his rewarde, but trusted to the promesse of him that sayde by the mouth of the prophet Ifai: Of them that shalbe faued, I wyl sende sum to the gentyles in the sea, into Aphrike and Libia, Italie, and Grecia, and into the Ilandes a farre of, to them that haue not harde of me, and haue not seene my glorie. The like zeale that Paule had, and proceadyng of the same spirite, hath euer sence Chrystes tyme, moued not only the Apostles, but also many other famous and godly men (as superuifours of his testamente) to sende owte preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to shewe furth the gladde tydyng of the gospell. By this zeale dyd Gregorye bysshoppe of Rome and fyrste of that name, when he sawe Englysshe mens chyldren in Rome and asked what nation they were, when answere was made hym in the laten tounge that they were Angli, (that is, Englysshe men) he sayd (alludyng to the similitude of the worde) that they myght wel be cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural bewtie and comelynesse, so it apperteyned to his office beinge the cheefe pastoure of goddes flocke, to prouyde that theyr foules might be made woorthy to inhabite such bodies and the hole nation consecrated vnto god by baptisme. For he sayde furthermore: It is meete that vnto these also, the gospell of life bee preached: And herecuppon immediatly sent preachers into Englande whereby the hole nation was in shorte tyme conuerted to Christes faith, although sum had receaued the gospell long before euen from Chrystes tyme by the preachyng of Ioseph of Arimathia who asked the body of Chryste of Pilote, and buried it reuerently. I wolde to god that there were now many mo such Gregories in the worlde: And that there might lyke zeale and gentelnesse bee founde in vs Englysshe men towarde other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde vs. Owre prediceffoures were not vtterlye vnmyndefull of these benefites, but applyed them selues lykewise to spreade the gospell in other nations. For Vadianus in his booke *De tribus terræ partibus*, wryteth, that more then feuen hundrethe yeares after the death of Chryste, one Vnesfride an Englysshe man and bysshoppe of Mogunce, (nowe cauled Menfe) was the fyrste that tawght the fayth of Chryste amonge the Germaines, at such tyme as the Frankes and Almaynes had passed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttyng the garryfons of the Romans to flight, had possessed a great parte of theyr most notable prouinces. For albeit that these rude and barbarous nations then accustomed onely to warre and robberie did hardly admitte that holfome doctrine at the beginning. Yet by the pollicie and wisedome of the Frankes, it came so to passe that in maner through owt all Germanie, greate increase of the Christian religion folowed there mooste ample victories, as the lyke successe is also seene in these barbarous nations subdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although sum holde opinion that none owght to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we see by experience that without disputyng of opinions (lest the pacientes shulde dye before the phisitians agree of the remedie) these entreprises haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who cauleth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declinyng worlde, otherwyse nowe then in the tyme of Chryste and his Apostles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe fayth which had yet preuaied no where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it shuld so be requisite, as yowe may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a simple mariner euen in th[e] infancie of faythe. And fuerlye, lyke as there is no cause why we shulde anye thyng doubte of goddes goodnesse in this behalfe if the faut be not in owre selues. Euen so, if we wolde fyrste sette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giue encrease and woorke with vs as he hath doone with other, by whose prosperous successe we may plainly see that it was his wyll that suche thynges shulde go forwarde. For euen Israell to whom promesse was made by ignes and miracles that they shulde possess the lande to th[e] inheritaunce wherof, the sea opened it selfe to giue them free passage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the swoorde to make way, with greate losse and slaughter of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promysed to theyr fathers, whiche neuerthelesse fewe of them possessed that first fought for the same, but lest theyr carkeses in the wildernesse. Is it not also written of the Iuwes which repayed the walles of the cite of Hierusalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine set the people in order with swoordes, speares, and bowes to defende the workemen? And that also euen the Princes of Iuda wrought vpon the walles and caried burdens? lykewyse that they wrought with one hande and held theyr swoordes in the other? And if it were lawful for Israell accordyng to the fleshe, to vse all meanes and pollicies to buylde vp the walles of earthly Hierusalem, howe muche more then ought the spirituall Israelites to

Isai. 66.

Gregorie the First.

Th[e] office of
byshoppes.England
converted to the
faith of christ.This vnifride was
afterwarde
named Boniface.Whether any may
bee compelled to
the faythe.The tyme of
miracles.Miracles of late
dayes.Howe Israell
possessed the
lande of
promesse.Esdra. 2.
cap. 4.

vfe all possible meanes to buylde vp the walles and temples of spirituall Hierusalem, whose fundation is Christe, wyllynge all the nations of the worlde to be buylded vppon the same. It is the propertie of a wyfe buylder to vfe such tooles as the woorke requireth. And not at all tymes or in all woorkes to vfe one toole. For that that serueth in softe tymber, wyll not serue in knottie pieces, nor yet for stones. Th[e] expert phisitian vfeth vehement remedies for desperate diseases: And cunnige furgians vfe burnynge and cuttynge if the case so require, as in cuttynge of the fynger to faue the hande, or in cuttyng of the hand to faue the hole body. Ye it hath sumtymes so chauned that wheras men haue entended hurt, there hath good proceeded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue slaine Prometheus, wounded his wenne with his swoorde, whereby he was healed of that disease. So is god able to turne euyl into good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that are. Euen so although summe wyll obiecte that the desyre of golde was the chiefe cause that moued the Spanyardes and Portugales to searche the newe founde landes, trewly albeit we shulde admitte it to bee the chiefe cause, yet dooth it not folowe that it was the only cause, forasmuch as nothyng letteth but that a man may bee a warriour or a marchaunte, and also a Christian. Therefore what so euer owre chiefe intende bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame or rycheffe, (although the zeale to encrease Christian religion ought chiefly to moue vs) I wolde to god we wolde fyrst attempte the matter: And then I doubt not but that it wolde so comme to passe with vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning of the worlde before menne were accustomed to eate flesshe, thought it first sufficient so to vfe them selues amonge beastes that they were not hurte of them: but shortly after, vfed them for theyr commoditie: Then begonne to weare theyr skynnes: And in fine, fell to eatynge of theyr flesshe, and to vfe certeine partes of them for remedies against diseases. Euen so may these barbarians by the only conuersation with the Christians, (although they were enforced therto) be brought to such familiaritie with ciuilitie and vertue, that not onely we maye take greate commoditie thereby, but they may also herewith imbibe trewe religion as a thing accidental although neyther they nor we shulde seeke the fame. For lyke as they that goo much in the foonne, are coloured therewith although they go not for that purpose, So may the conuersation of the Christians with the gentyles induce theym to owre religion, where there is no greater cause of contrarye to refyste as is in the Iuwes and Turkes who are already drowned in theyr confirmed erreure. But these simple gentiles lyuinge only after the lawe of nature, may well bee lykened to a smoothe and bare table vn timer, or a white paper vn timer, vpon the which yow may at the fyrst paynte or wryte what yow lyst, as yow can not vpon tables already paynted, vn timer yow rase or blot owt the fyrst formes. They may also th[e]slyer bee allured to the Christian fayth, for that it is more agreable to the lawe of nature then eyther the cerimonious lawe of Moises, or portentous fables of Mahometes Alcharon. If we were therefore as desyrous to enlarge the fayth of Chryste as to seeke worldly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduenture that wherin we may doo bothe. We muste not nowe looke for a newe Paule or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuerted by heauenly reuelations: Or for a newe Moises to leade men through the sea: Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayer from one place to an other as Habacucke the prophete was caryed by the heare of his heade from Iudea to Babilon: Or as Phylippe th[e] appostle was caryed by the spirite from Gaza to Azotus: but muste (as sayth the prophete Isaias) euery man exhorte his neyghboure, and bid his broother be of good chere: That the mafon and carpenter may buylde togyther, and say to the glewe or cemente, it is good and faste byndynge. What negligence and slackenesse hath hytherto byn in Christian men in this kynde of buyldynge of goddes lyuely temple, the greate clerke Erasmus hath declared in his booke intituled Ecclesiastes, whose woordes for the woorthynesse of the autoure, I haue here thought good to rehearse as they are wrytten by hym in the laten tounge in the fyrst booke of the fayde woorke. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

Audimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantium collapsam Christianam religionem, eamque ditionem quæ quondam complexa est vniuersum terrarum orbem, in has angustias esse contractam. Hoc igitur quibus ex animodolet, eos decet ardentibus assiduisque votis flagitare a Christo vt operarios dignetur mittere in messem suam, aut (vt melius dicam) seminarios mittere in segetem suam. Deum immortalem, quantum in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactum est semen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum est, vt plus sit zizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars est Europa: Omnium florentissima pars est Græcia et Asia minor in quam magno successu primum a Iudæa demigravit Euangelium. At hæc fere tota, nonne tenetur a Mahometanis et ijs qui Christi nomen habent inuisum? Iam in Asia maiore quæ latissime patet, quid obsecro nostrum est? quum ipsa Palestina vnde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, seruiat Allophylis? In Aphrica vero quid nostrum est? Nec dubitandum est quin in tanta vastitate regionum sint populi rudes et simplices qui facile possent ad Christum alici, si mitterentur qui facerent bonam sementem. Quid quod quotidie regiones hæctenus incognitæ reperiuntur, ferunturque superesse quo nullus adhuc nostratium peruenit. Omitto nunc infinitam Iudæorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plurimos qui titulo Christi tegunt Ethnicos: omitto tantas schismaticorum et hæreticorum phalanges. Quantus in his esset prouentus Christo, si gnauis ac fideles mitterentur operarij qui iaciant semen bonum, qui reuellant zizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur structuras non inuitentes petræ Christo, denique qui metant maturam segetem, sed Christo

The buylding
of spirituall
Hierusalem.

The conuersion of
the gentiles.

The christian
faythe.

Isai 45.

Augustia
Christianæ
ditionis.

Preſteian
Aethiopia rex.

Filapii.

Franciſcani
Seraphici.
Dominicani
Cherubici.
Linguae
impericia.
Miracula.

Damianus a Goes

To the christian
princes.

The ſheepe of
Europe.

The doctoure
of diuinitie

An admonition
to riche men.

The marchant.

me taut non ſibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes ſibi. Nuper Aethiopiae rex quem vulgus appellat Preſteian, per oratorem ſuum ſubmiſit ſe ſedi Romanae, non nihil expoſtulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quum a fide Chriſti non ſit aliena, tam diu fuerit a totius orbis paſtore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandae religionis ſtudioſi, queruntur Pilapios Scythiae ſeptentrionalis populum mire ſimplicem ac rudem, a neſcio quibus principibus Chriſtianis teneri ditione, ſed ita duro premi iugo humano, vt eis non imponatur ſuaue iugum Chriſti, atque ita ſpoliari bonis externis, vt non ditentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratiſſimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos ſtudemus Chriſto lucrifacere, ac ſic eos in ditionem noſtram recipere vt gaudeant ſe ſubiectos eſſe principibus ſub quorum imperio commodius degant quam ante debebant. Nouimus cicurare beſtias ſeras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad uſum vulgarem: et non nouimus manſuefacere homines vt ſeruiant Chriſto? Monarchae alunt qui doceant elephantos ad faltandum, qui doment leones ad luſum, qui doment lynces et leopardos ad venatum: et monarcha eccleſiae non inuenit quo homines alliciat ad amabile Chriſti ſeruicium? Scio vix vllam reperiri beluam domitu difficiliorem quam eſt Iudaeus obſtinatus, et obduratus haeretico: quanquam nullum eſt animal tam inuite quod non cicuretur beneficentia et ſuauiſſitate. E repertis regionibus euehitur aurum et gemmae: Sed triumpho dignius erat illuc inuehere Chriſtianam ſapientiam auro preciſiorem, ac margaritum euangelicum quod omnibus diuenditis bene comparatur. Dominus iubet ſuis rogare dominum meſis vt extrudat operarios quod meſis eſſet ampla, operarij pauci. Non minus opus eſt nunc rogare deum vt in tam late patentibus agros eijciat operarios, Sed excuſant omnes, alius aliud. Atqui Chriſtiana ditio tot habet myriadas Franciſcanorum in quibus probabile eſt quamplurimos eſſe qui vere ſagrant igni ſeraphico: nec pauciores ſunt myriades Dominicanorum, et in his conſentaneum eſt permultos eſſe Cherubici ſpiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur viri, mundo vere mortui, Chriſto viui, qui ſyncere apud barbaras gentes doceant verbum Dei. Excusatur linguae imperitia. Atqui principes ob humanas legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiſcant: Et Themistocles Athenienſes vno anno ſic didicit ſermonem Aſiaticum vt abſque interprete cum rege loqui poſſet: An idem non ſtudebimus in tam ſublimi negotio? Inter barbaras et ignotas nationes Apoſtoli inuenerunt victum et amiſſum: et Deus pollicitus eſt nihil deſuturum quaerentibus regnum Dei. Nec miracula quidem deſutura ſunt ſi res poſtulet, modo ad ſit ſyncera fides cum ſeraphica charitate, &c.

Furthermore Damianus a Goes, wryteth in his booke *De deploratione Lappianae gentis*, that he was the fyrſt that moued Erasmus to ſpeake ſumwhat hereof: And that he (Erasmus I meane) was determined to write a juſt volume of this matter yf he had not byn preuented by death. Albeit (ſayth Damianus) in his booke entitiled Eccleſiaſtes, he dyd not keepe ſilence of ſo wicked an vngodlyneſſe, whiche ſurely is fuche, that it may in maner make all Chriſtian men (and eſpeciallye ſuch vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowleage) giltye of ſo heighnous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them in the day of iudgement before the juſte iudge Chryſt. Nowe therfore (ſayth he) let the Chriſtian Monarches take heede what accoumpte they ſhall make before the tribunal of Chryſte at the laſte daye, when neyther fauoure, nor pardon, or flatterie can take place to bee any excuſe for the loſſe of ſo manye foules. And theſe be the very woordes of the woorſhipful and lerned man Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byſſhoppe of Rome Paule the thyrde of that name, whom he further chargeth to looke diligently hereunto, as a thyng moſte chieflye perteynyng to the office of Chriſtian prelates. Mee thynke verely that the ſheepe of Europe ſhulde by this tyme be ſo well fedde, that they ſhulde by good reaſon be ſo ſtrong and mightie in Chriſtes religion (excepte they be infected with the dyſeaſe which the phiſicians caule Cachexia, beinge an euyl diſpoſition of the body whereby the more they are fed the worſe they lyke) that many ſheppardes myght well bee ſpared to bee ſent to other ſheepe which ought to be of the ſame foulde. For this purpoſe the doctoure of diuinitie when he commenſeth, hath his ſcapular caſt ouer his headde in token that he hathe forſaken the worlde for Chriſtes ſake: And his bootes on his legges in token that he ſhall euer bee in a redineſſe to go forwarde in preachyng the goſpell, as I doubt not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amonge theſe newe gentyles if they were therto mainteyned by the ayde of the ſecular poure as in this caſe it ſhalbe requiſite for the furniture of neceſſaries hereunto apperteynyng, I muſt nowe therfore appele vnto yow, yow riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thynges neyther good nor badde of them ſelues, but onely as they are vſed wel or euil. If yowe vſe them well, they are the gyftes of god wherwith yow may doo many thynges acceptable both to god and men. And if yow vſe them otherwyſe, yowe poſſeſſe not them, but they poſſeſſe yow, and theyr canker and ruſte (as ſaythe the Apoſtle) ſhalbe a teſtimonie ageinſt yow in the day of the great audit. Thinke not therfore that this thyng perteyneth not vnto yowe, if yowe perteyne vnto Chriſte and looke to haue any parte with hym. Conſyder with yowre ſelues if it were onely to get worldely ryches, howe redye and greedy yowe wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thyrde part, withowt caſtyng of any perell by lande or by ſea, as the wyttie poet Horace hath in fewe wordes deſcrybed the marchauntes deſyre and aduenture to obteyne rycheſſe.

*Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,
Per mare pauperiem fugiens, per saxa, per ignes.*

The which verses are thus much to say in effecte.

The marchaunt in hope greate rycheffe to fynde,
By fyer and by water passeth to Inde,
By the burnte line or Equinoctiall,
To flye from pouertie and hafarde all.

As the poet hath in these verses, by the marchaunt declared the desyre that couetous men haue to obteyne flipperry riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we see in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contende to put them selues forward to the moste daungerous aduenture as to haue the forewarde of the battayle: a token surely of much nobilitie and manly corage. But oh immortal god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be so valient, stowte, and in maner desperate in theyr owne priuate matters, perteynyng onely to theyr bodies, and yet so coulde, negligent, and fearefull in goddes cause and thynges touchyng the health of theyr soules? If there were neyther deuyll nor lawe to accuse men before god in this case, shall not theyr owne consciences bee a lawe of condemnation ageynste theym in that they haue not shewed that loue to mankynde, which the very lawe of nature moueth brute beastes to shewe one to an other in theyr generations? But what hope is there (excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerte the hartes of such men) what hope is there I say, that they wyll depart with any of theyr gooddes, muche lesse aduenture theyr bodies, to the furtheraunce of Christes religion in these regions beinge so farre from them, wheras many shewe lyttle loue, charitie, or liberalitie (if not rather crueltie, tyrannie, and oppression) to theyr poore neighbours and brootherne dwelling euen at home at theyr owne elbowes. But as this couetousnesse is to bee reprobued, so is the liberalitie of such to be commended as haue byn at greate coaste and charges in fettyng forwarde suche viages: wherein not onely the marchauntes of London, but also diuers noble men and gentelmen aswell of the counsaile as other, which bothe with theyr money and furtheraunce otherwyse haue furnysshed and sent furth certeyne shyppes for the discoueryng of suche landes and regions as were heretofore vnknown, haue herein deserued immortal fame, for as much as in such attemptes and daungerous vyages, they haue shewed no smaule liberalitie vpon vncerteyne hope of gayne: wherein they haue deserued so much the greater prayse as theyr intent seemed to bee rather to further honest enterprises then for respecte of vantage. And here certeynely in the mention of these viages I myght seeme vngratefull if I shulde omitte to giue dewe commendations to the two chiefe capitaynes of the fame as the woorthy knyght syr Hugh Wylloby and the excellent pilotte Rycharde Chaunceler who haue therein aduentured theyr lyues for the commoditie of theyr countrey: Men doubtlesse woorthy for theyr noble attemptes to bee made knightes of the Ocean or otherwyse preferred if euer god sende them home ageyne although they fayle of theyr purpose. For as suche haue obteyned absolute glory that haue brought great thynges to passe, so haue they deserued immortal fame which haue only attempted the fame: forasmuch as fortune (who sumtymes fauoureth the vnworthyest) is not in the pouere of man. Xerxes obteyned glorie in makynge a bridge ouer the sea Hellespontus ioynynge Europe to Asia, and Darius ouer Bosphorus when he passed with his armye towarde the Scythians. No lesse fame and commendation (although not lyke glory) deserued Demetrius, Cesar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted to cutte in fundre certeyne places cauled Isthmi, (beinge narrowe portions of lande so diuidynge twoo seas, that there is no passage from the one to the other) and yet neuer finisshed that they tooke in hande, beinge hyndered eyther by deathe, warres, or other chaunces. The auncient Romans and Greekes gaue such glorie vnto them that had eyther well deserued of the common welthe, or otherwyse attempted such great enterprises as might bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyr death they caused Images of golde, syluer, brasse, Iuery, and marble to bee made to theyr lykenesse, and the fame to be placed in theyr solemne hauies, palaices, or temples, with certeyne verses made to the commendation of them whom the Images represented. And this no lesse to prouoke and encorage other forward natures to th[e] emulation of their vertues, then also to geue them the due honoure of theyr iust desertes. And surely if euer sence the begynnyng of the worlde any enterpryse haue deserued greate prayse as a thyng atchyued by men of heroicall vertue, doubtlesse there was neuer any more woorthy commendation and admiration then is that whiche owre nation haue attempted by the north seas to discouer the mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which vyage not only golde, syluer, precious stonnes, and spices, may be brought hether by a safer and shorter way, but also much greater matters may hereof ensue in tyme if it shall please God to gyue vnto Christian men such passage into those regions, whereby such familiaritie may further growe betwene the Christian princes

The desyre of
wordely fame.

Men are slothfull
in goddes cause.

Vyages from
Eng. ande.

Syr Hugh
Wylloby and
Rycharde
Chaunceler.

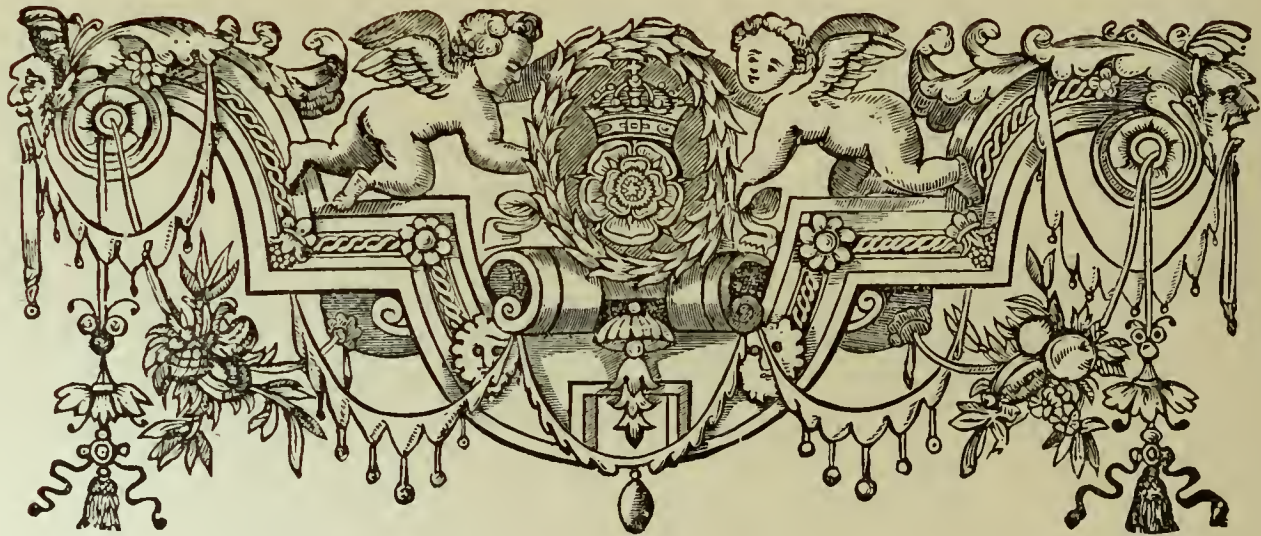
Glory and fame.

The rewarde of
noble enterprises.

The vyage to
Cathay by the
north seas.

Societe between
the Tartars and
the Christians
The Turke.
The Sophie.
Tamburlanes.
Baiafetes.

of Europe and the greate emperoure of Cathay, that (as wryteth Haytho *De societate Christianorum et Tartarorum*) there can nothyng be imagined more effectuali for the confusion of the Turke if the great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Persia on the one syde, and the Christian Princes on the other syde, shulde with one consent inuade his dominions, as dyd Tamburlanes Th[e]emperoure of the Tartars who abowte the yeare of Christe. M. CCC. lxxxviii. toke prifoner Baiafetes Ottomanus Th[e]emperoure of the Turkes and flewe. xx. thousande of his men in one battayle beyde many other great victories, as yowe may further reade in this booke in the hystorie of Paulus Iouius. And to haue fayde thus muche in maner of a preface it may suffice.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION I.

Pietro Martire.

The First Decade, . *Of the Ocean.*

First printed in 1511.

The Second Decade, . *Of the supposed Continent.*

The Third Decade, . [*The discovery of the Pacific by Vasco Nunez de Balboa, on the 25th September 1513. The voyages of Pedro Arias, and Sebastian Cabot.*]

The Second and Third Decades were first printed in 1516.

Of the new found islands (i.e. Yucatan and Mexico.)

First printed in 1521.]



[This eloquent Dedication first appeared in the Second and enlarged Edition of the *Decades*, the printing of which was finished at Alcala on 9th November 1516. Nearly the whole of the following First *Decas* (pp. 65-105) had, however, been previously printed in 1511, and was for the most part *written* even earlier than that year.]

¶ TO THE MOSTE NOBLE PRINCE AND CATHOLIKE KYNGE, CHARLES,
PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA WYSHETH
PERPETUALL FELICITIE.



He diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he fyrste created the worlde, hath referued vnto this day the knowlege of the great and large Ocean sea: In the which tyme he hath opened the same, chiefly vnto yowe (moste mightie Prince) by the good fortune and happie successe of yowr grandfather by yowr mothers fyde. The same prouidence (I knowe not by what destenie) hath brought me owt of my natiue cuntry of Milane, and owt of the cite of Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeares) into Spaine, that I myght particularye collecte, these marueylous and newe thynges, which shoulde otherwyse perhappes haue bene drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion: forasmuch as the Spanyardes (men

woorthy [of] greate commendation) had onely care to the generall inuentions of these thynges. Notwithstandinge, I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile bestowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Ascanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceauynge that I was wyllyng to departe owt of the cite to be present at the warres of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose. But seing that I was fully resolued to departe, exhorted and required me to wryte vnto hym such newes as were famous in Spayne and woorthy to be noted. I tooke therefore my iorney into Spaine chiefly for the desyre I had to see th[e] expedition whiche was prepared ageynst the enemies of the fayth: forasmuche as in Italye, by reason of the dissention among the Princes, I coulde fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wytte, beinge a younge man desyrous of knowlege and experience of thynges. I was therefore presente at the warres: from whence I writte to Cardinal Ascanius, and by sundry epistels certified hym of such thynges as I thought moste woorthye to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune was turned from a natural mooter to a steppedame, I ceased from wrytyng. Yet after I sawe, that by th[e] ouerthrowe of the enemies of owre faythe, Spayne was purged of the Moores as of an euyll weede plucked vp by the rootes, Leaste I shulde bestowe my slippery yeares in vnprofitable Idleneffe I was mynded to returne to Italye. But the singuler benignitie of bothe the Catholyke Kyng and queene nowe departed, and theyr large promyses towarde me vpon my returne from my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpose. Yet dooth it not repent me that I drewe backe my foote: Aswel for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time the lyke woorthy thynges to bee done: As also that in maner through owt all Italy, by reason of the discorde of the Christian

The largenes of the Ocean vnknown to this day.

Cardinal Ascanius.

The warres of Granatum ageynst the Moores.

The autour was sent ambassadour to the Soltane of Alcayr in Egypte.

Italy disquieted with warres.

The sequels of
warre.

Kynge Frederike.

Leo the tenth,
byshoppe of Rome.

Spayne subdued
from the Moores.

The kyn[g]dome of
Naples.

Note, frome the
begynnyng of the
worlde.

The temperatnes
of the Equinoctial
vnknowne to the
owlde wryters.

Contiente or firme
lande as bygge as
thre Europes

Ryches are the
instrumentes of
conquestes.

Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headlonge into ruine, the countreys to be destroyed and made fatte with human bludde: The cities sacked, virgines and matrones without offence to be slayne vnarmed within theyr owne houfes. Of the which calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable owtryes, but dyd also feele the same. For euen the bludde of mine owne kinffolkes and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therefore mufynge with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of Arragonie, after that he had seene the two fyrste bookes of my Decades wrytten to Ascanius, required me in the name of kynge Frederike his vncler, to put foorth the other eyght epistell bookes, In the meane tyme also, while I was voyde of all care as touchynge the matters of the Ocean, the Apostolicall messengers of the bysshoppe of Rome Leo the tenth, (by whose holsome counsayle and autoritie we truste the calamities of Italy shalbe fynnysshed) rayfed me as it were frome sleape, and encoraged me to proceade as I had begunne. To his holyneffe I writte two Decades comprysed in short bokes after the maner of epistels, and added them to the fyrst, which was printed without myne aduise, as shal further appeare by the preface folowynge.

But nowe I returne to yow (most noble Prince) from whom I haue sumwhat digressed. Therefore wheras your graundefathers by your moothers fyde, haue subdued all Spayne vnder your dominion except onely one corner of the same, and haue also lefte yowe the kyngedome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of our seas, it is fuerly a greate thyng and woorthy to be noted in owre cronacles. But not offendynge the reuerence due to owre prediceffors, what so euer frome the begynnyng of the worlde hath byn doone or wrytten to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but little, if wee confyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe seas, what fundry nations and tounge, what golde mynes, what treasuries of perles they haue lefte vnto yowre hyghnesse, besyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare.

Come therefore moste noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe estate of thynges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto yowe the Equinoctiall line hetherto vnknowne and burnt by the furious heate of the soonne and vnhabitable after the opinion of the owlde wryters a fewe excepted: But nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, frutefull, and moste fortunate, with a thowfande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, besyde that greate portion of earth supposed to bee parte of the firme lande, excedynge in quantitie three Europes. Come therefore and embrace this newe worlde,

and suffer vs no longer to consume in desyre of your presence. From hence,
from hence I saye (most noble younge Prince) shall instrumentes
be prepared for you, whereby al the worlde shalbe
vnder your obeyfaunce.

And thus I byd your maiestie farewell: To whose taste if I shal
perceau the fruites of this my tyllage to be delectable, I wyll
hereafter doo my endeuoure that yowe maye receaue the
same more abundantly. From Madrid. The
day before the Calendes of October,
In the yeare of. Chryste.

M. D. X V I.

J. K. N. K. S.

THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES
OF THE OCEAN, WRITTEN BY PETER MARTYR OF
Angleria, Milenoes, counfiler to the kyng of Spayne and
Protonotarie Apostolicall, To *Ascanius*
Sphorcia, vicount Cardinall. etc.



THE REVERENDE AND thanckefull antiquite was accustomed to esteeme those men as goddes, by whose industrie and magnanimitie suche Landes and Regions were discovered, as were vnknown to their prediceffoures. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god whom we honour in triplicite of person, this resteth, that albeit we do not woorship that kind of men with diuine honoure, yet do we reuerence them, and woorthely maruell at their noble actes and enterprifes. Vnto kynges and princes we gyue due obeysaunce, by whose gouernaunce and furtheraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfurme their attemptes. We commende bothe, and for their iust desertes worthely extoll them. Wherefore, as concernyng the Ilandes of the west Ocean, lately discovered, and of the auctours of the same, (whiche thynge you desyre by your letters to knowe) I wyll begynne at the fyrst auctoure therof, lest I be iniurious to any man. Take it therfore as foloweth.

¶ *Christophorus Colonus* (other wise called *Columbus*) A gentylman of Italy, borne in the cite of *Genua*, perswaded Fernando and Elyzabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde certayne Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto owre Ocean sea, if they wolde furnyshe hym with shyppes and other thynges apperteynyng. Affyrminge that therby not onely the Christian religion myght be enlarged, but Spayne also enryched by the great plentie of golde, pearles, precious stones, and spices, whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three shyppes were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the which one was a great caracte with deckes: and the other two were light marchaunte shyppes without deckes, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*. Thus he departed from the costes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Christ 1492. and set forward on his viage, being accompanied with. CC. xx. [two hundred and twenty] Spaniardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canaria*, found but of late dayes) are distaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thousande and twoo hundredth myles, accordyng to their accompte: for they say they are distant three hundredth leaques: wheras such as are exper sea men, affyrme that euery leaque conteyneth foure myles, after theyr supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldenesse of wynter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of sommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore sayled fyrste to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, to the intente there to refreshe his shyppes with freshe water and fuell, before he committed him selfe to thys so laborious a vyage. And bycause I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canaria*: It shall not be muche from my purpose to declare howe of vnknown they became knowen, and of saluage and wilde, better manured. For by the longe course of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknown.

These feuen Ilandes (therfore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permission of queene Katharine, protectrix of kyng Iohn her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Christe. M.CCCC.V. This *Betanchor* inuaded twoo of these Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortifuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his son and heire folde bothe the fayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and *Gomera*. The other three were subdued in our tyme. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble cite of *Xericium*, and Michaell of *Moxica*.

1

The reward of
vertueThe Ilandes of
the weste OceanChristophorus
Colonus.

India.

The fyrst viage
of Colonus.The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Gades or
Cals mals.
A leaque, what it
conteyneth by sea.
The fortunate
Ilandes.
Cabouerde.The seuen Ilandes
of Canarie.
Betanchor A
frenche man
subdued the
ilandes of Canarie
Lancelotus.
Fortisuentura.
Ferrea.
Gomera.
Grancanaria

Palma.
Tenerifen.
Alphonsus Lugo.

2

Colonus men rebel
against hym

Faire wordes and
promises.

Hispaniola.
Iohanna.

Nightingales
syng in
Nouember.

The Ilande of
Ophir.

The ilandes of
Antilia.

A shypwrack

The people of
the ilande.
Naked people.

Expert swimmers.
Gold for erth and
glasse.
Many kinges

Religious and
humaine people.

Canoas.

Monoryla. 3
They haue no
Iren.
Canibales or
Caribes
Anthropophagi.

The cruetie of
the Canibales.

Palma and *Tenerifen*, by *Alphonsus Lugo*, at the kynges charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrea* were easely subdued: But the matter wente harde with *Alphonsus Lugo*. For that naked and wylde nation, fyghtinge onely with stoncs and clubbes, droue his armie to flighte at the fyrste assaulte, and flewe about foure hundreth of his men. But at the length he ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canaria* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* directynge his viage towarde the weste, folowinge the fallinge of the sonne, but declining somewhat towarde the left hande, sayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, hauynge onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyrste to murmure secretly among them selues: and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euyll of *Colonus* theyr gouernoure, and consulted with them selues, eyther to rydde hym out of the waye, or elles to cast hym into the sea: Ragynge that they were deceyued of a straunger, an outlandishe man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into fuche dangerous places, that they myght neuer returne ageyne. And after. xxx. days were paste, they furiously cryed out againste him, and threatned him that he shulde passe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyses, appeased theyr furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme desyring them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that if they shulde attempte any thinge agaynst him, or other wise disobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they espied the lande longe looked for. In this fyrst nauigation, he discouered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectly that *Iohanna* (other wyfe called *Cuba*,) was an Ilande. As they coasted alonge by the shore of certayne of these Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales syng in the thicke woodes in the month of Nouember. They found also great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harborowe greate nauies of shippes. Saylinge by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynte to the west, he rode lyttell lesse then eyght hundreth miles (for they call it a hundreth and foure score leaques) supposyng that it had byn the continent or fyrme land, bicause he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde iudge with his eye: wherfore he determined to returne backe agayne, beyng therto partly enforced by the roughnesse of the sea. For the sea banckes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by fondrye wyndinges and turnynges, bende them selues so muche towarde the Northe, that the northnortheaste wynde roughly tossed the shyppes by reason of the wynter. Turnynge therefore the stemmes of his shyppes towarde the Easte, he affyrmed that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, whyther Salomons shyppes sayled for golde. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that bothe these, and the other Ilandes adioynng, are the Ilandes of *Antilia*. This Ilande he called *Hispaniola*: on whose northe syde as he approached nere to the lande, the keele or bottome of the biggiste vessell ranne vpon a blynde rocke couered with water, and cloue in funder. But the playnnesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makyng haste therefore with the other two shippes to helpe them, they brought awaye al the men without hurte. Here comming fyrst a land, they sawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauynge an vnknown nation comminge towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thicke wooddes, as it hadde byn hares coursed with grehoundes. Owre men purfuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the shyppes: where fyllinge her with meate and wyne, and apparelinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the shore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue descended from heauen. They cast them selues by heapes into the sea, and came swimmyng to the shyppes, bryngyng golde with them, which they chaunged with owre men for erthen pottes, drinking glasse, poyntes, pynnes, hawkes belles, lokinge glasse, and fuche other trifles. Thus growing to further familiaritie, owre men were honorably enterteined of the kyng of that parte of the Ilande, whose name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kynges, as when Eneas arriued in Italy, he founde *Latium* diuided into many kyngedomes and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mezeitium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were seperated with narrow boundes, as shall more largely appere hereafter. At the euen tyde about the faulyng of the sonne, when owre men went to praier, and kneled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they dyd the lyke also. And after what maner so euer they sawe them praye to the crosse, they folowed them in all poyntes as well as they coulde. They shewed much humanitie towardes owre men: and helped them with theyr lighters or small boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlade theyr broken shyppe: And that with fuche celeritie and cherefulnesse, that no frende for frende, or kynfeman for kynfeman, in fuche case moued with pitie, coulde do more. Theyr boates are made only of one tree, made holow with a certain sharpe stone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narowe. Many affirme that they haue sene some of them with fortie ores. The wylde and myscheuous people called *Canibales* or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mannes fleshe (and called of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) molest them excedyngly, inuadyng theyr countrey, takynge them captiue, kylling and eatyng them. As owre men sayled to the Ilandes of these meke and humayne people, they lefte the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middest of theyr viage towarde the south. They complayned that theyr Ilandes were no lesse vexed with the incursions of these manhuntynge *Canibales* when they go forth a rouynge to seeke theyr praye: then are

other tame beastes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of fuche as they eate, they fyrst eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other moſte fleshy partes, they powder for ſtore, as we do pestelles of porke and gammondes of bakon. Yet do they abſteyne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therefore fuche younge women as they take, they keepe for increace, as we doo hennes to leye egges. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe caul owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceau the *Canibales* coming, haue none other shyfte but onely to flie: for althoughe they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to repreſſe the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confeſſe, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouercome a hundreth of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they cal *Ages*: muche lyke a nauew roote in fourme and greatneſſe: but of ſweete taſte, muche lyke a greene cheſtnutte. They haue alſo an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Iucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often roſted or fodden, then to make breade therof. But they neuer eate *Iucca*, excepte it be firſte ſliced and preſſed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or fodden. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a poyſon as ſtrong as *Aconitum*, ſo that if it be dronke it cauſeth preſent death, and yet the breade made of the maſſe therof, is of good taſte and holfome, as all they haue proued. They make alſo an other kynde of breade of a certayne pulſe, called *Panicum*, muche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plentie in the dukedome of Mylane, Spayne, and Granatum. But that of this countrey is longer by a ſpanne, ſomewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brawne: The graynes wherof are fette in a maruelous order, and are in fourme ſomwhat lyke a peaſe. While they be ſoure and vnripe, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whyter then ſnowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizium*. Golde is of ſome eſtimation among them: for ſome of them hange certain ſmall pieces therof at theyr eares and noſethrilles. A lyttell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for freſſhe water, where they chaunced vpon a Ryuer whoſe ſande was myxed with muche golde. They founde there no kindes of foure footed beaſtes excepte three kyndes of lyttell conyes. Theſe Ilandes alſo nouryſhe ſerpentes: but ſuch as are without hurt. Lykewiſe wylde geefe, turtle doues, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as ſwannes, with heades of purple coloure. Alſo Popiniaies, of the whiche ſome are greene, ſome yelow, and ſome lyke them of *India*, with yelow rynges about theyr neckes, as Plinie deſcribeth them. Of theſe they broughte fortie with them, of moſte liuely and delectable coloures, hauyng theyr fethers entermengled with greene, yelow, and purple, whiche varietie, deliteth the ſenſe not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to ſpeake of Poppingiaies, (ryghte noble Prynce) ſpecially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Chriſtophorus Colonus (who affirmeth theſe Ilandes to be parte of *India*) dothe not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wryters as touchyng the bigneſſe of the Sphere and compaſſe of the Globe as concernyng the nauigable portion of the ſame beyng vnder vs, yet the Poppingiaies and many other thynges brought from thence, doo declare that theſe Ilandes ſauoure ſomwhat of *India*, eyther beyng nere vnto it, or elles of the ſame nature: for aſmuch as Ariſtotele alſo, about the ende of his booke *De Cælo et Mundo*, and likewiſe *Seneca*, with diuerſe other authours not ignorant in Coſmography, doo affirme that *India* is no longe tracte by ſea, diſtante from Spayne by the weſte Ocean, for the foyle of theſe Ilandes, bryngeth forth the Maſlix, Aloes, and fundrye other ſweete gummes and ſpyces as doth *India*. Cotton alſo of the goſſampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the people called Seres.

¶ The languages of all the nations of theſe Ilandes, maye well be written with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen *Turei*. A houſe, *Boa*. Golde, *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. Nothing, *Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In theſe Ilandes they founde no trees knowen vnto them, but pyne app[1]e trees, and date trees: And thoſe of maruelous heygth and exceding harde, by reaſon of the greate moyſtneſſe and fatneſſe of the grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the ſonne, whiche endureth ſo all the hole yere. They playnely affyrme the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to be the moſt fruiteful lande that the heauen compaſſeth aboute, as ſhall more largely appere hereafter in the particular deſcription of the ſame, whiche we intende to fette forth when we ſhall be better inſtructed.

Thus makynge a leage of frendſhypp with the kyng, and leauyng with hym. xxxviii. men to ſearche the Ilande, he departed to Spayne takyng with hym. x. of the inhabitauntes to lerne the Spaniſhe tongue, to the intent to vse them afterwarde for interpretours. *Colonus* therefore at his returne, was honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who cauſed him to fytt in theyr preſence, whiche is a token of great loue and honoure amonge the Spaniardes. He was alſo made Admirall of the Ocean: and his brother goue[r]noure of the Iland.

Towarde the ſecond viage, he was furniſhed with. x[v]ii. ſhippes: wherof three were great caractes of a thouſand tunne: xii. were of that forte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*: without deckes: and two other of the ſame forte ſomewhat bygger, and more apte to beare deckes, by reaſon of the gretnesſe of theyr maſtes.

Ages.
Rootes in the
ſteede of meate.
Iucca.
Breade of rootes.

An herbe of a
ſtraunge nature.

Maizium.

Golde in
eſtimation.

Golde in the
ſandes of ryuers.
Serpentes without
venime.
Turtle doues
Duckes.
Poppingiaies.
Plini.

Theſe Ilandes are
parte of *India*.
The Indians are
Antipodes to the
ſpaniardes.

Ariſtotele.
Seneca.
India not far
from Spaine
4
Maſtix.
Aloe.
Goſſampyne
cotton or bombace.
Seres.

The language of
theſe Indians
Trees and frutes
vknownen to vs.
Fat and moyſte
grounde.
Heate continuall
and temperate.
The fruitfulnes of
hispaniola

The ſeconde viage
of *Colonus*.

Corne and sedes
to sowe.

Toolles and
artillery.

Water droppng
from a tree
continually.

He had also a thousand and two hundreth armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were many artificers, as smythes, carpenters, myners, and suche other: Certayne horsfemen also, wel armed: Likewise mares, shiepe, heyghfers, and such other of bothe kindes for increafe. Lykewife all kynde of pulse or grayne and corne, as wheate, barlye, rye, beanes and pease, and suche other, as well for food as to fowe: Befyde vynes, plantes and feedes, of suche trees, frutes, and herbes, as those countreyes lacke. And (not to be forgotten) fundry kindes of artillery and iron toolles, as bowes, arrowes, crossebowes, bylles, hargabufes, brode swoordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, shoouelles, hammers, nayles, sawes, axes, and suche other. Thus beyng furnished accordyngely, they set forwarde from the Ilandes of *Gades*, (nowe called *Cals*,) the .vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Christe. 1493. and arriued at the Ilandes of *Canarie*, at the calendes of October. Of these Ilandes, the laste is called *Ferreca*, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually distilleth from one onely tree growyng on the highest backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trenche made with mannes hande. We were infourmed of these thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What shal succede, we wyl certifie yowe hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE to Ascanius Phorcias, vicounte Cardinall, etc.



Owe repete (ryghte honorable Prynce) that yowe are desirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that those thynges haue greatly delyted you which I wrote vnto yowre highnesse of the fyrste nauigation. Yowe shal now therefore receaue what hath succeeded. *Methymna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the respecte frome yowe, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Castella Vetus*: beyng distant from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the courte remayned, when aboute the .ix. of the kalendes of Aprell in this yere of nyntie and foure, there were postes sente to the kynge and queene, certifyinge them that

Methymna Campi.
Castella Vetus.

Gades

5

there were. xii. shippes come from the newe Ilandes and arryued at *Gades*. But the gouernoure of the shippes sente worde to the kynge and quene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but onely that the Admirall with fiue shippes and. iiii. score and tenne men remayned styll in *Hispaniola*, to searche the secretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym selfe wolde shortly make relation in theyr presence, by worde of mouthe. Therefore the daye before the nones of Aprel, he came to the courte him selfe. What I learned of him and other faythfull and credible men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl reherse vnto yowe in such order as they declared the same to me when I demaunded them. Take it therefore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departyng from *Ferreca*, the laste of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and from the costes of Spayne with a nauie of. xvii. shippes, they sayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclynng of purpose more towarde the leste hand then at the fyrst viage, folowyng the northnortheast wynde: and arriued fyrst at the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, or *Caribes* of which, onely the same was knowen to our men. Amonge these, they chaused fyrste vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not se so muche as an elle space of bare earthe or stony grounde. This they called *Dominica*, bicause they found it on the funday. They taried here no tyme, bycause they sawe it to be deserte. In the space of these. xxi. dayes, they thynke that they sayled viii. hundreth and. xx. leaques, the Northnortheast wynde was so full with them, and so fresshly folowed the sterne of theyr shippes. After they hadde sayled a lyttell further, they espied dyuerse Ilandes replenysshed with fundrye kyndes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant fauours of spyces and sweete gummes. Here they sawe neyther man nor beaste, except certayne lifartes of huge bignesse, as they reported whiche went alande to viewe the countrey. This Iland they cauled *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poynt of this Iland, espying a mountayne a farre of, they sayled thyther. Aboute. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer discending whiche seemed to be a token of some great and large fludde. This is the fyrste lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and is an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hispaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrst viage. Serchyng the Ilande, they founde innumerable villages of. xx. houses or. xxx. at the mooste, sette rounde abowte in order, makynge the streete in coompasse lyke a markette place. And forasmuch as I haue made mention of theyr houses, it shal not be greatly from my purpose to describe in what maner they are buylded. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde pauylions. Theyr frame is rayfed of excedyng hyghe trees, sette close together and fast rampaired in the grounde, so standyng a slope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyne

The Iland of
Ferreca.

Ilands of the
Canibales.

The Iland of
Dominica.
viii. hundreth and
xx. leaques in. xxi.
dayes.

Lysertes,

The Ilande of
Galanta.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

Vilages of. xx or.
xxx. houses
The building of
theyr houses.

together and beare one agaynste an other, hauynge also within the house, certayne stronge and shorte props or postes whiche susteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with the leaues of date trees and other trees strongly compact and hardened, wherewith they make them close from wynde and wether. At the short postes or proppes within the house, they tie ropes of the cotton of goffampine trees, or other ropes made of certayne long and toughe rotes much lyke vnto the shrubbe called *Spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vsed to make bondes for vynes and cabuls and ropes for shyppes. These they tye ouerthwarte the house from poste to poste. On these they ley as it were certayne mattresses made of the cotton of the goffampine trees, whiche growe plentifully in these Ilandes. This cotton the Spaniardes call *Algodon*, and the Italians *Bombafine*. And thus they sleepe in hangynge beddes. At the enteraunce of one of theyr houfes, they fawe two Images of woodde lyke vnto serpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn such idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that they were sette there onely for coomlynesse. For they knowe none other god then the Sunne and Moone, althoughe they make certayne Images of goffampine cotton to the similitude of such phantasies as they say appere to them in the nyghte. Our men found in theyr houfes, all kyndes of erthen vessels, not muche vnlyke vnto oures. They founde also in theyr kichens, mannes flesshe, duckes flesshe, and goose flesshe, al in one pot: and other on the spittes redye to be layde to the fire. Entryng into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they referue to make heades for theyr arrowes, bycause they lacke iron. The other bones they caste awaye when they haue eaten the flesshe. They founde likewise the heade of a yonge man fastened to a poste and yet bleding. They haue in some villages, one great haule or pallaice, aboute the whiche theyr common houfes are placed. To this they resort, as often as they come together to playe. When they perceaued the comynge of our men, they fledde, in theyr houfes they founde also about. xxx. chyldeyn and women captiues which were referued to be eaten, but our men tooke them awaye to vse them for interpretoures. Searchyng more diligently th[e]ynner partes of the Ilande, they founde. vii. other ryuers, bygger then this whiche we spake of before, runnyng throughe the Ilande, with fruitefull and pleafante banckes, delectable to beholde. This Ilande, they called *Guadalupea*, for the similitude that it hath to the mounte *Guadalupus* in Spayne, where the Image of the virgin MARIE is religiously honored. But the inhabitautes caul it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiera*. It is the chiefe habitation of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland. vii. Popingayes, bygger then phefantes, muche differynge from other in coloure: hauynge theyr backes, brestes, and bealies of purple coloure, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al these Ilandes is no lesse plentie of popingiayes then with vs of sparowes or starlings. As we bryng vp capons and hennes to francke or make them fatte, so do they these bigger kyndes of popyngayes for the same purpose. After that they hadde thus searched the Ilande and dryuen these *Canibales* to flyghte, (whiche ranne awaye at theyr fyrst approche as sone as they had espied them) they cauled theyr company together. And as soone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lyghters (whiche they call *Canoas*) they lowfed theyr ankers the daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Guadalupea*. *Colonus* the admirall, for the desyre he hadde to se his companions, whiche at his fyrst vyage he lefte the yere before in *Hispaniola* to searche the countrey, lette passe many Ilandes bothe on his righte hande and lefte hande, and sayled directly thyther. By the waye, there appeared from the Northe. A great Ilande which the captiues that were taken in *Hispaniola*, cauled *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmyng it to be inhabited only with women: To whom the *Canibales* haue accesse at certen tymes of the yere, as in owlde tyme the *Thracians* had to the *Amazones* in the Ilande of *Lesbos*. The men children, they fende to theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them selues. They haue greate and stronge caues or dennes in the ground, to the which they flye for safegarde if any men resorte vnto them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende them selues with bowes and arrowes, agenst the violence of suche as attempte to enuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this Ilande, by reason of the Northenortheast wynde which blew veemently from the same, wheras they nowe folowed the Eastesouthcaste. After they departed frome *Madanino*, and sayled by the space of. xl. myles, they passed not farre frome an other Ilande which the captyues sayde to bee verye peopulous, and replenyshed with all thynges necessarie for the life of man. This they cauled *Mons Serratus*, bycause it was ful of mountaynes. The captyues further declared that the *Canibales*, are wonte at some tyme to goo frome theyr owne coastes aboute a thoufande myle to hunte for men. The daye folowyng, they fawe an other Ilande the whiche, bycause it was rownde, they cauled *Sancta Maria Rotunda*. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauled *S. Martini*. Which they lette passe also bycause they had no leasure to tarye. Lykewyse the thirde daye they espied an other, whose *Diametral* fyde extendynge frome the Easte to the weste, they iudged to bee a hundreth and fyftie myle. Theye affirme all these Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and frutefull. This laste, they cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua*. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had sayled aboute fortie myle, they chaunced vpon an other muche bygger then any of the reste, which th[e]inhabitan[t]s caule *Ay Ay*, but they named it *Insula crucis*. Heare they cast anker to fetche fressh water. The Admirall also commaunded. xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne shyp, and to search the Ilande. Here they founde fowre dogges on the

Gossampine cotton.

Bombase. Hanginge beddes.

Images.

Fyne cookery

Arrowe heds of bones.

6

The mount Guadalupus.

Carucueria.

Popyngayes bygger then phefantes

The Canibales dryuen to flyght.

Matinino an Ilande of women.

The Ilandes of Mons Serratus.

Huntinge for men.

Sancta Maria Rotunda. Sanctus Martinus.

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Insula crucis An Ilande of the Canibals.

The Canibales are expert archers. Arrowes infected with veneme.

A conflict with the Canibales. 7

The fiercenes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable ilandes.

The mynes of Metales and precious stones.

The sea cauled Archipelagus. Insula. S. Iohannes or Buchena

Death for deathe

The mountaynes are coulder then the playnes.

From Dominica to Hispaniola fyue hundreth leaques

The Spanyardes lefte in the Iland are slayne. Kyng Guaccanarillus rebelleth.

Two images of goulde. 8

Libertie and idlencs.

A happy kind of lyfe.

shore. The Inhabitants are *Canibales*, and maruelous experte in shutinge, as well women as men: And vse to infecte theyr arrowes with poyson: when they had taryed there two dayes, they sawe a farre of, a *Canoa*, in the whiche were eight men and as manye women hauynge with them bowes and arrowes. They fearfully assayed owre men withoute all feare, and hurte sum of them with theyr venemous arrowes. Amonge these there was a certen woman to whome the other gaue reuerence and obeyde as though she were theyr queene. Her sonne wayted vppon her, beinge a younge man, strongly made, of terrible and frownyng countenance and a Lyons face. Owre men leaste they sholde take the more hurte by beinge wounded a farre of, thought it beste to ioyn with them. Therefore with all spede settinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in whiche they were sette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, which beinge ouerwhelmed, they notwithstandinge, as well the women as the men swymminge, caste theyr dartes at owre men, thicke and threfowld. At the lengthe, gatherynge them felues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fowght manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one beinge slayne, and the queenes sonne fore wounded. When they were browght into the Admirals shippe, they dyd no more put of their fiernes and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when theye perceaued them felues to be bownde in chaynes. There is no man able to behoulde them, but he shall feele his bowelles grate with a certen horroure, nature hath endewed them with soo terrible menacyng, and cruell aspecte. This coniecture I make of my selfe and other which often tymes wente with me to see them at *Methymna Campi*. But nowe to returne to the viage. Proceedinge thus further and further, more then fiue hundreth myles, firste towards the Westesouthweste, then towarde the Southwest, and at the lengthe towarde the Weste northe weste, they entered into a mayne large sea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelouslye differinge one frome an other, for sum of them were verye frutefull and full of herbes and trees. Other sum, very drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of stone, wherof sum were of bright blewe or asurine coloure, and other glysteringe white: wherfore they supposed them by good reason to bee the mynes of metalles and precious stonnes. But the rowghnes of the sea, and multitude of Ilandes standinge so thicke togyther, hindered them soo, that they cowlde caste no anker leaste the bigger vesselles shulde runne vppon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the searcinge of these Ilandes vntyl an other tyme. They were so manye and stode so thicke, that they coulde not number them. Yet the smauler vesselles which drewe no greate depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortie and fyxe Ilandes. But the bigger vesselles, kepte aloofe in the mayne sea for feare of the rockes. They caule the sea where this multitude of Ilandes are situate, *Archipelagus*. Frome this tracte proceedinge forrewarde, in the mydde waye there lyeth an Iland which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena*. But they named it *Insula S. Iohannis*. Dyuers of theym whome we had delyuered frome the *Canibales*, sayde that they were borne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be very peopulous and frutefull, hauinge also manye fayre wooddes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them and the *Canibales*. They haue no boates to passe from their owne coastes to the *Canibales*. But if it bee their chaunce to ouercome them, when they make incurfion into theyr countreye to seke their praye (as it sumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteine) they ferue them with like faufe, requitinge deathe for deathe. For one of theym mangeleth an other in pieces, and rosteth and eate them euen before their eyes. They taryed not in this Ilande. Yet in the weste angle therof, a fewe of them went a lande for freshe water, and fownd a greate and high howse after the maner of their buylding, hauinge. xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed abowte the same: but were all lefte defolate, whether it were that they reforted to the mountaynes by refon of the heate which was that tyme of the yeare, and to returne to the playne when the ayre waxeth coulder, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incurfion into the Ilande at certen seasons. In all this Ilande is only one kinge. The south syde hereof extendeth abowte two hundreth myles. Shortlye after, they came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, beinge distante frome the firste Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundreth leaques. Here they fownde all thynges out of order, and theyr felowes slayne which they lefte here at their fyrste vyage. In the beginninge of *Hispaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngedomes as we haue sayde) is the region of *Xamana* whose kinge is named *Guaccanarillus*. This *Guaccanarillus* ioyned frendshippe with owre men at the fyrste viage, and made a league with them: But in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cause of owre mens destruction, althowgh he dissimuled the same, and pretended frendship at the Admirales returne. As owre men sayled on yet a litle further, they espied a longe *Canoa* with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guaccanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He browght with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And towlde a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owre men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all deade, or escaped or stoulne awaye when they drewe nere the Ilandes. But of the. x. [ten.] vii. [seuen] dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The inhabitantes of these Ilandes haue byn euer soo vsed to liue at libertie, in playe and pastyme, that they can hardely away with the yoke of seruitude which they attempte to shake of by all meanes they maye. And surely if they had receaued owre religion, I wolde thinke their life moste happye of all men, if they might

therwith enioye their aunciente libertie. A fewe thinges contente them, hauinge no delite in fuche superfluites, for the which in other places men take infinite paynes and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer fatiffied, wheras many haue to muche, and none inowgh. But emonge these simple fowles, a fewe clothes serue the naked: weightes and meafures are not needefull to such as can not skyll of crafte and deceyte and haue not the vse of pestiferous monye, the feede of innumerable myscheues. So that if we shall not be ashamed to confesse the truthe, they seeme to lyue in that goulden worlde of the whiche owlde wryters speake so much: wherin men lyued simplye and innocentlye without inforcement of lawes, without quarrellinge Iudges and libelles, contente onely to fatiffie nature, without further vexation for knowelege of thinges to come. Yet these naked people also are tormented with ambition for the defyre they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reason wherof they kepe warre and destroy one an other: from the which plague I suppose the golden world was not free. For euen then also, *Cede, non cedam*, that is, gyue place, and I wyll not giue place, had entred emonge men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which we haue digressed. The admirall desyrous to knowe further of the death of his men, sent for *Guaccanarillus* to come to him to his ship, diffimulinge that he knew any thinge of the matter. After that he came aboard shyp, saluting the Admirall and his company gyuing also certen golde to the Capetaynes and offycers, turned him to the women captiues which not longe before our men had deliuered from the *Canibales*. And earnestly beholding one of them whome owre men cauled Catharyne, he spake gentelly vnto her. And thus when he had seene and marueyled at the horses and fuche other thinges as were in the shyppe, vnknowen to them, and had with a good grace and merelye asked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet sum there were which counseyled the Admirall to kepe hym styll: that if they might by any meanes proue that he was consentinge to the deathe of owre men, he might bee punished accordinglye. But the Admirall confidering that it was yet no tyme to incense th[e] inhabitants myndes to wrathe, dysmysed hym. The next daye folowing, the kinges brother refortyng to the shyppes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine aswell to recouer her owne libertie as also her felowes, being suborned therto eyther by the kinge or his brothers promifes attempted a much more difficulte and daungerous aduenture then dyd *Cloelia* of Rome, which beinge in hostage with other maydes to the kynge *Porcena*, deceaued her keepers, and rode ouer the ryuer *Tiber*, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For wheras they swamme ouer the ryuer on horsebacke. This Katharyne with feuen other women, trustyng onely to the strengthe of theyr owne armes, swamme aboue three longe myles: and that also, at fuche tyme as the sea was sumwhat rowghe. For euen foo farre of frome the shore, lay the shippes at rode, as nigh as they could coniecture. But owre men folowinge them with the shippeboates, by the same light seene on the shore wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them: supposinge that Katharyne with the other foure, went to *Guaccanarillus*. For in the springe of the morninge, certen messengers beinge sente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and stuffe, and the women also. which thinge ministred further suspection that he was consentinge to the death of owre men. Wherefore the Admirall sente forthe an armye of three hundrethe men, ouer the which he appoynted one *Melchior* to be capitayne, wylling him to make diligent searche to fynde owte *Guaccanarillus*. *Melchior* therefore with the smauleste vessels enteringe into the countreye by the ryuers and scouringe the shores, chaunced into certen crooked goulfes defended with. v lyttle and stiepe hilles, supposinge that it had byn the mouth of sum greate ryuer. He founde here also a verye commodious and safe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They saye that the enteraunce of this is so crooked and bendinge, that after the shippes are once within the same, whether they turne them to the lefte hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceauie where they came in vntyll they returne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there so brode that three of the byggeste vessels may fayle together on a froont. The sharpe and high hilles on the one fyde and on the other, so brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr fayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleasaunte groue full of Popingayes and other byrdes which breede therein and singe verye sweetlye. They perceaued also that two ryuers of no smaule largenes fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus searched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* espied a high house a farre of, where supposinge that *Guaccanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goyng, there mette hym a man with a frownyng countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundreth men folowyng hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staues like iaelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approchyng towards owre men, spake owte alowde with a terryble voyce, sayenge that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when owre men had gyuen them signes of peace, they lefte bothe theyr weapons and fiercenes. Thus geuyng eche of them certen haukes belles, they tooke it for so greate a rewarde, that they desyred to enter bondes of nere frendshyppe with vs, and feared not immediatly to submitte them selues vnder owre power, and reforted to our shyps with theyr presentes. They that meafured the house (beinge made in rounde forme) fownde it to be from fyde to fyde. xxxii. greate paces, compased abowte with. xxx. other vulgare houfes, hauinge in them many beames crosse ouer, and couered with reedes of fundry colours, wretched and as it

Superfluite.

Many haue to much and none inough.

The goulden worlde

Naked men troubled with ambicion.

Gyue place.

The Admirall sendeth for the kynge.

No horses in the Ilandes

A tyme for all thynges.

A desperate aduenture of a woman.

Cloelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus is sought. Melchior.

9

Popingayes and byrdes.

Taini.

Haukes belles.

A large hous

Reedes of
sundry colours.

Caccic[us].

Hoiedus and
Gorualanus.

Golde in ryuers
faulinge from
mountaynes.

The maner of
gathering golde.
Graynes of golde.

A masse of rude
golde weighinge.
ix ounces.

Caunaboa, kynge
of the house of
gold

Holsome water
and plentie of
fysshe.

The day and nyght
of equal length
in December.

Byrdes breed in
December

The eleuation
of the pole

The starres are
cauled gardens
of the pole. 10

The Equinoctial
lyne.

A chapel and
preestes.

Marchaunts
Sirophenicians.
The Cynamome
tree.

Xilaloos or
lignum Aloes.

were weaued with maruelous art When owre men asked fum of them where they myght fynde *Guaccanarillus*. They aunfwered that that Region was none of his. But theyr kynges beyng there presente. Yet they sayde they supposed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makyng therefore a brotherly league with this *Caccicus*, (that is to saye a kynge) they returned to the Admyrall to make relation what they hadde seene and harde: wheryppon he sent forth dyuers other Centurians with their hundrethes to searche the countrey yet further. Emonge the which were *Hoiedus* and *Gorualanus*, noble younge gentlemen and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaynes to seeke *Guaccanarillus*, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene them, one of them fownde on the one fyde therof foure ryuers faulynge from the same mountaynes: and the other founde. iii. on the other fyde. In the fandes of all these ryuers is fownd great plentye of goulde, which th[e] inhabitants of the same Ilande which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the fande with theyr handes, a Cubette deape, and takynge vp fande with their lefte handes from the botome of the fame, they picked out graynes of goulde with their ryght handes withowte any more arte or cunnynge. And so deliuered it to owre men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fytchis. And I my selfe sawe a masse of rude goulde, (that is to say, such as was neuer molten) lyke vnto suche stoncs as are founde in the bottomes of ryuers, weighinge nyne ounces, which *Hoieda* him selfe fownde. Beinge contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punyshment that they shuld meddle no further then their commissiõ: which was only to searche the places with their signes. For the same went that there was a certayne kynge of the mountaynes from whense those ryuers had their faule, whom they caule *Caccicus Caunaboa* that is, the lord of the house of golde. For they caule a house *Boa*, goulde, *Cauni*: and a kynge or Lorde, *Caccicus*, as we haue sayde before. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fyssh, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holsome then in these ryuers: also the waters of the same to be most holsom to drynke. *Melchior* hym selfe towld me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the *Canibales*. But the sphere or circles of the heauen, agreeth not therunto. Albeit that in the same moneth, fume byrdes make their nestes, and fume haue alre dy hatched their egges by reason of the heate beinge rather continuall then extreme. He towld me also when I questioned with hym as concernynge the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that al the sterres cauled *Plastrum* or charles wayne, are hydde vnder the Northe pole to the *Canibales*. And surely there returned none from thense at this viage, to whome there is more credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Astronome, he shulde haue sayde that the day was almoste equall with the night. For in no place towarde the flay of the sonne (cauled *Solsticium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctiall*, for asmuch as they had euer the northe pole theyr guyde, and euer eleuate in sight aboute the *Horizontal*. Thus haue I briefely written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought sufficiente at this tyme. And shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wryte vnto you more largely of suche matters as shalbe dayly better knowen. For the admirall hym selfe (whome I vse famylyerly as my verye frende) hath promysed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowlege of al such thynges as shall chaunce. He hath nowe chosyn a stronge place where he may buyld a Citie nere vnto a comodious hauen. And hath alre dy buylded many houfes and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) god is dayly serued with. xiii. preestes accordinge to the maner of owre churches. When the tyme nowe approached when he promysed to sende to the kynge and queene, and hauynge prosperous wynde for that purpose, sent backe the. xii. Carauelles wherof we made mencion before it was no smaull hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Especially confyderynge the death of his men whom he lefte in the Ilande at the fyrst vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places and other secretes wherof we might otherwyse haue had further knowlege. But as tyme shall reueale them ageyne, so wyll I aduertise yowe of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt strangers *Sirophenicians*, what these Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue sent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree whiche they suppose to bee the Cinamome tree. And yf it be your pleasure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the smaule feedes the which you shoulde perceau to haue fawlen from these graynes, or of the wodde it selfe, touch them firste softly mouinge them to your lippes. For although they bee not hurtefull, yet for theyr excessse of heate, they are sharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any whyle theron. But if the tongue be blystered by tastynge of them, the same is taken away by drynkyng of water. Of the come also wherof they make theyr breade, this brynger shall deliuer fume graynes to your Lordeshyppe bothe whyte and blacke: And therwith also, a Trunke of the tree of *Aloes*. The which if you cutte in peeces, you shall feele a sweete fauoure to proceade from the same. Thus fare you hartely wel. From the courte of *Methimna Campi*. The thyrde day before the Calendes of May. *Anno. Domini*, M. CCCC. XCIII.

¶ THE THYRDE BOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonye and Newie to the kynge.



Owe defyre that folyſhe *Phaeton* ſhulde ageine rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And contende to drawe ſweete lycours out of the harde flynte, wheras you requyre me to dyſſcribe vnto you the neue worlde, fownde in the weſte by the good fortune and gouernaunce of the Catholike Princes *Ferdinandus* and *Helifabeth*, your Vncle and Aunte: ſhewyng ine alſo the letters of kynge *Frederike* your vncle, wrytten to me in the ſame behalfe. But ſythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whoſe power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more then I am wel able. Ye bothe ſhal receaue this precious ſtone, rudely cloſed in leade after my maner of workemanſhpye. Wherefore when you ſhall perceaue the lerned forte frendlye: The malicious, enuiouſly: And the backebyters, furioſly, to bende theyr ſclaunderous dartes ageynſt owre fayre *Nymphes* of the *Ocean*, you ſhall freely proteſte in howe ſhort tyme, and in the myddeſte of what troubles and calamities, you haue enforced me to wryte of the fame. Thus fare you well frome *Granata* the ninthe day before the Calendes of May.

¶ We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admirall paſſed by the coaſtes of the *Canibales* to the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* with his whole nauie. But nowe we entende further to ſhewe what he fownde as concernyng the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better ſearched the ſeacreates of the fame: Likewyſe of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he yet ſuppoſed to bee the firme lande. *Hiſpaniola* therfore (which he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyrde boke of the kynges) is of latitude, fyue ſouthe degrees: hauyng the northe pole eleuate on the northe fyde. xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe fyde (as they ſaye) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the Eaſte to the Weſte, ſeuē hundrethe and foure ſcore myles. It is diſtant from the Ilandes of *Gades* (cauled *Cales*) xlix. degrees, and more as ſum ſaye. The forme of the Ilande, reſembleth the leafe of a cheſnutte tree. Vppon a high hyll on the North fyde of the Ilande, he buylded a citie, bycauſe this place was moſt apte for that purpoſe by reaſon of a myne of ſtones which was nere vnto the fame, ſeruyng well bothe to buylde with, and alſo to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of three ſcore myles in lengthe: and in bredth ſumwhere. xii. ſumwhere. xx. myles where it is brodeſt, and. vi. myles where it is narroweſt. Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of hoſome waters. But the greateſt of them which is nauigable, fauleth into the hauen of the citie for the ſpace of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you ſhal vnderſtand by theſe thynges which ſolowe. On the ſhore of this ryuer, they haue lymyed and enclouſed certeyne grounde to make gardeynes and orchardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyſhe, letuſe, colewortes, borage, and ſuch other, waxe rype within. xvi. dayes after the feede is ſowen. Lykewyſe Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and ſuche other, within the ſpace of. xxxvi. dayes. Theſe garden herbes, they haue freſſhe and greene all the whole yeare. Alſo the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, fuger is made, growe a cubette high within the ſpace of. xv. dayes: but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or ſhrouddes of younge vines: And that they haue the ſecond yeare gathered ripe and ſweete grapes of the fame. But by reaſon of to mucche rankenes, they beare but fewe cluſters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey ſowed a lyttle wheat about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handefull of the rype eares of the fame the thyrde day before the calendes of Aprell: which was that yeare the vigile of the Reſurrection of owre Lorde. Alſo, al kyndes of pulſe, as beanes, peaſon, fytches, tares, and ſuche other, are rype twyſe in the yeare, as all they which come from theſe, affirme with one voyce: Yet that the grounde is not vniuerſally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle theſe thynges were doinge, the Admirall ſent owte a companye of. xxx. men to ſearche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyſe cauled *Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And the myddle backe of the hole Ilande in the whiche is greate plentie of goulde. When they that went to ſearche the Region, were returned they reported maruelous thynges as touchyng the great ryches of this Region. Frome theſe mountaynes, deſcende foure greate ryuers, which by the maruelous induſtrye of nature, deuided the hole Ilande into foure partes, in maner equall, ouerſpreadinge and watering the hole Ilande with their branches. Of theſe foure ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the Eaſte. This the inhabitantes caule *Iunna*: An other, towarde the Weſte, and is cauled *Attibunicus*. The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laſte reacheth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before the Ides of Marche, the Admiral him ſelfe with al his horſe men and foure hundreth footemen, marched directly towarde the South fyde of the goulden Region. Thus paſſyng ouer the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the other fyde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the which a ryuer mucche bygger then the fyrſte, and many other meane ryuers

The fable of
Phaeton.

Kynge
Ferdinandus and
queene Helizabeth

Nereides.
He meaneth
the Ilandes.

Hiſpaniola.

11
Ophir whether
Salomons ſhips
ſayled for golde.

Isabella.

A playne of
threſcore myles
of lengthe.

A token of
maruelous
fruitfulnes.

Herbes grene al
the hole yeare.
Sugar reeds
plantes and vines.

Corne and grayne
rype twiſe a yeare

The Region of
Cipanga or
Cibana.
Golde.

Foure greate
ryuers.

The golden
region of Cibana.

Vales and
mountaynes

The vale of
Cibana.

Golde for haukes
bels. 12

Graynes and
pipple stones of
golde.

They passe not
for golde, in that
it is golde onely
but. etc.

Stones of golde as
byg as the heade
of a chyld.

Spyces.

Wylde vines of
pleasaunte taste.

Fruitful
mountaynes

Golde in the
sandnes of ryuers
faulinge from the
mountaynes.
Libertie and
Idelnes.
The mountaynes
are coulede.

The Ilande of
Cuba.

Least any other
prince, &c

Discencion
betweene the
Portugales and
Spaniardes.

The Ilandes of
Cobouerde or
Hesperides

13

The Portugales
viages

runne through. When he had also conueighed his armye ouer the ryuer and passed the seconde vale whiche was in no part inferiour to the firste, he made away through the thirde mountayne, where was no passage before, and descended into an other vale which was nowe the beginninge of *Cibana*. Through this also runne many fluddes, and ryuers, out of euery hyll, and in the sandnes of theym all, is fownde great plentie of goulde. And when he had nowe entered three score and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie he entended to buylde a fortresse vppon the toppe of a hyll, standing by the shore of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might the better and more safelye seache the fecretes of the inner partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortresse of faynte Thomas. The which in the meane tyme whyle he was buyldynge, th[e]inhabitanes beinge desirous of haukes belles and other of owre thinges, resorted dayly thither. To whom the Admirall declared, that if they wolde brynge goulde, they shulde haue what so euer they wolde aske, Forthwith turnynge theyr backs and runnyng to the shore of the next ryuer, they returned in a short tyme, brynginge with them their handes full of goulde. Amongest al other, there came a owld man bringynge with him two pybble stones of goulde weyginge an vnce, desyryng them to gyue him a bell for the fame who when he sawe oure men maruell at the byggenes therof, he made signes that they were but smaule and of no value in respecte of fume that he had seene. And takynge in his hande foure stones the least wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and the byggest as bygge as an orange, he sayde that there was fownde peeces of goulde soo bygge in his countrey, beyng but halfe a dayes iourney from thense, and that they had no regarde to the gatheringe therof. Wherby we perceau that they passe not muche for goulde in asmuch as it is goulde only, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hathe fashioned it in any coomely fourme. For who doth greatly esteeme rowgh marble or vnwrought Iuerye. But if they be wrought with the cunninge hande of *Phidias* or *Praxiteles*, and shaped to the similitude of the fayre nimphes or fayeres of the sea (cauled *Nerciades*) or the fayres of the wods, (cauled *Hamadriades*) they shal neuer lacke byers. Befyde this owld man, there came also dyuers other, brynginge with them pypple stones of gold weyging. x. or. xii. drammes: And feared not to confesse, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found fumtyme stones of gold as bygge as the heade of a chyld. When he had taryed heare a fewe dayes, he sent one *Luxanus*, a noble younge gentylman with a fewe armed men to seache all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported that th[e]inhabitanes shewed him greater thinges then we haue spoken of here before. But he dyd openly declare nothyng therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales commaundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne spyces: but not fuche as we commonly vse. These they gather euen as they do golde: that is as much as wyl ferue for theyr purpose, euery man for hym selfe, to exchange the fame with the inhabitantes of other countreys adioyninge to them, for such thinges as they lacke, as dyffhes, pottes, flooles, and fuche other necessaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admiral, (which was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes, certeyne wylde vines, rype and of pleasaunt taste. But th[e]inhabitanes passe not on them. This Region though it bee full of stones and rockes (and is therefore cauled *Cibana*, whiche is as muche to faye as a stone) yet it is well replenyshed with trees and pastures. Ye they instantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the space of foure dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many showers of rayne doo faule in this Region, whereof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increase, in euery of the which, golde is fownde myxte with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement course of the streames which faule from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Idelnes and playe. For fuche as inhabyte the mountaynes, fyt quakyng for coulde in the wynter season, and had rather soo wander vppe and downe Idelly, then take the peines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of goffampine cotton. But such as dwel in the vales or plaines feele no coulde in wynter. When the Admirall had thus searched the beginninge of the region of *Cibana*, he repayed to *Ifabella* (for so he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to search further the lymettes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iohanna*, which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from *Hispaniola*, onely three score and ten myles. This dyd he with more speedy expedicion, caulng to remembrance the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyrst with all celeritie to ouer runne the coastes of the newe Ilandes, leaste any other prince shulde in the meane tyme attempte to inuade the same. For the Kyng of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to discouer these vnknown landes. But the byshop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the cause of this discencion, graunted to the Kyng of Spayne by th[e]auctoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince shulde bee so boulde as to make any viages to any of those vnknown regions, lyenge without the precinct of a directe lyne drawn from the North to the Southe a hundreth leaques westwarde without the paralelles of the Ilandes cauled *Capud Viride*. or *Cabouerde*, which we thynke to bee those that in owld tyme were cauled *Hesperides*. These perteyne to the kyng of Portugale. And frome these, his pylottes whiche doo yearely seache newe coastes and regions, directe their course to the Easte, fayllynge euer towarde the lefte hande by the backe of Aphrike and the seas of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales at any tyme sayled Southwarde, or Westwarde from the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*.

Preparyng therefore three shippes, he made haste towarde the Ilande of *Iohanna* or *Cuba* whyther he came in shorte space, and named the poynt therof where he fyrst arryued, *Alpha* and *O*: that is, the fyrste and the laste: for he supposed that there had byn th[e]end of owre Easte bycause the sonne fauleth there: And of the weste, bycause it ryseth there. For it is apperente, that westwarde, it is the beginnynge of *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And Eastwarde, the furthest ende of the same: which thinge is not contrary to reason forasmuche as the Cosmographers haue lefte the lymites of *India* beyonde *Ganges* vndermynded: where as also some were of opinion that *India* was not farre from the coastes of Spaine as we haue sayde before. Within the prospecte of the begynnynge of *Cuba*, he founde a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. For in this part, the Iland receaueth a greate goulfe. This hauen, he named saynt Nycolas porte, beinge scarfely. xx. leaques from *Cuba*. As he departed from hense and sayled westwarde by the fourth fyde of *Cuba*, the further that he went, so muche the more the sea seemed to bee extended in breadth and to bende towarde the south. On the fourth fyde of *Cuba*, he founde an Ilande which th[e]inhabitanes caule *Iamaica*. This he affirmeth to bee longer and broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauyng in it only one mountayne, which on euery parte begynnynge from the sea, ryseth by little and little into the mydde of the Ilande: And that soo playnely without rowghnes, that fuche as goo vp to the toppe of the same, can scarfely perceauie that they ascende. This Ilande he affirmed to bee very fruitfull and full of people as well in th[e]inner partes of the same as by the shore: And that th[e]inhabitanes are of quicker wytte then in the other Ilandes, and more experte artificers and warrelike men. For in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came armed ageynst him and forbodde him with threatening wordes. But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendship with hym. Thus departyng from *Iamaica*, he sayled towarde the Weste with a prosperous wynde for the space of threescore and tenne dayes: thinkinge that he had passed so farre by the compasse of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had byn nere vnto *Aurea Chersonesus* (nowe cauled *Malaccha*,) in owre Easte India beyonde the beginnynge of *Perfides*. For he playnely beleued that he had lefte onely two of the twelue howres of the sonne, which were vnknown to vs, for the owlde wryters haue lefte halfe the course of the sonne vntouched, where as they haue but onely discuffed that superficiall parte of the earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Gades and the ryuer of *Ganges*: or at the vttermoste, to *Aurea Chersonesus*. In this nauigation, he chaunced on many furious seas, running with a faule as it had byn the streames of fluddes: Also many whorlepooles, and shelles, with many other daungers, and streyghtes by reason of the multytude of Ilandes, which ley on euery fyde. But not regardinge all these perelles, he determyned to proceade vntyl he had certayne knowledge whether *Cuba* were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he sayled forward coastinge euer by the shore towarde the weste for the space of CC. xxii. [two hundred and twenty-two] leaques, that is, abowte a thousande and three hundred myles: And gaue names to seuen hundred Ilandes by the waye: Leauynge also on the lefte hande (as he feared not to reporte) three thousande here and there. But let vs nowe returne to fuche thinges as he founde worthy to be noted in this nauigation. Saylinge therefore by the fyde of *Cuba*, and searchinge the nature of the places, he espied not farre from *Alpha* and *O*, a large hauen of capacite to harborowe manye shippes: whose enteraunce is bendinge, beinge inclosed on bothe fydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water. This hauen is large within, and of excedinge depthe. Saylinge by the shore of this porte, he sawe not farre frome the same, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places fyre kyndeled. Here he sente certeyne armed men owte of the shippes to the cotages: where they founde nother man nor woman, but rostemeate enowgh. For they founde certeyne spyttes of woodde lyenge at the fyre, hauinge fyfhe on theym about a hundred pounde weight, and two serpenttes of. viii. foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokynge about if they coulde espye any of th[e]inhabitanes, and that none appeared in fyght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the commynge of owre men) they fell to theyr meate, and eate the fyfhe taken with other mens trauayle: But they absteyned from the serpenttes, which they affirme to differ nothinge from Crocodiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Plinie* sayth) Crocodiles haue fumetymes byn founde of. xviii. cubettes long. But of these the byggest were but of. viii. fote. Thus beinge well refreshed, they entered into the next woodde where they founde many of the same kynde of serpenttes hangynge vpon bowghes of trees: of the which, some had theyr mouthes tyed with slynges, and some theyr teethe taken owte. And as they searched the places nere vnto the hauen, they sawe abowte. lxx. men in the toppe of a hyghe rocke, whiche fledde as soone as they had espied owre men. Who by signes and tokens of peace, caulynge them ageyne, there was one which came nere them and floode on the toppe of a rocke, seemynge as though he were yet ferefull. But the Admiral sent one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the same countrey, whom he had at his fyrste vyage taken in the Ilande of *Guanahaini*, beinge nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee afrayde. When he harde *Didacus* speke to him in his owne tonge he came bowldly to hym: and shortly after reforted to his company, perswadinge them to come without all feare. After this message was doone, there descended from the rockes to the shippes, about three score and ten of th[e]inhabitanes, proferinge frendshippe and gentelnes to owre men: whiche the Admirall accepted thankfully, and gaue them dyuers rewardes: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, that they were the kynges

Alpha and O
The ende of the Easte and west.

Note.
India not far from Spayne.

Saynt Nycolas porte.

The Iland of Iamaica.

Iamaica.
Quicke wytted people.

The compasinge of the earth.

Aurea Chersonesus, or Malaccha.
A secrete of Astronomie.
The ryuer of Ganges.

Daungerous streightes by reason of many Ilandes.

The Admiral gaue names to seuen hundred Ilandes.
Thre thousand Ilandes.

A large hauen

Rosted fyfsh and serpenttes of. viii. foote longe.

14
Crocodiles of Egypte.

Didacus th[e]interpretour.

The kynges fysshers

fyfshers, sent of theyr lorde to take fyfshes ageynst a solemne feaste which he prepared for an other kynge. And wheras the Admirales men had eaten the fyfshes whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were the gladder therof, bycause they had lefte the serpentes. For there is nothinge amonge theyr delicate dyfshes, that they esteeme so muche as these serpentes: In soo muche that it is no more lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then peacockes or phefantes amonge vs. As for the fyfshes, they doubted not to take as many more the same nyght. Beynge asked why they fyrst roasted the fyfshes which they entended to beare to their kynge. They answered, that they might bee the fresher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token of further frendship, euery man reforted to his owne. The Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the faulinge of the sonne from the beginninge of *Cuba* cauled *Alpha* and *O*. The shores or sea bankes euen vnto this hauen, albeit they be ful of trees, yet are they rowgh with mountains. Of these trees, some were ful of blossomes and flowres, and other laden with frutes. Beyond the hauen the lande is more fertile and peopulous, whose inhabitantes are more gentyll and more desyrous of owre thinges. For as sone as they had espied owre shippes, they flocked all to the shore, brynginge with them suche breade as they are accustomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offeringe theym vnto owre men, and further desyryng them to coome alande. In all these Ilandes is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare gourdes in the steade of frutes. These they vse only for drynke pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for the inner substance of them, is sower then gaule, and the barke as harde as any shelle. At the Ides of Maye, the watche men lokinge owte of the toppe castell of the shyppe toward the Southe, sawe a multitude of Ilandes standinge thicke together, beynge all well replenished with trees, grasse, and herbes, and wel inhabyted. In the shore of the continent, he chaunced into a nauigable ryuer whose water was soo hotte, that no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tyme. The day folowinge, espying a farre off a Canoa of fysher men of th[e]inhabitantes, fearinge least they shulde flye at the fyght of owre men, he commaunded certeyne to assaile them pryuely with the shyppe boates. But they fearinge nothinge, taryed the comminge of owre men. Nowe shal you heare a newe kind of fyshinge. Lyke as we with greyhoundes doo hunte hares, in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a huntynge fyfshes, take other fyfshes. This fyfshes was of shape or forme vnknowne vnto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnlyke a greate yele: hauinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very towgh skynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. This fyfshes is tyed by the fyde of the boate with a corde lette downe soo farre into the water, that the fyfshes maye lye close hyd by the keele or bottome of the same, for shee may in no case abyde the sight of the ayer. Thus when they espie any greate fyfshes, or tortoyse (wherof there is great abundance bygger then great targettes) they let the corde at lengthe. But when she feeleth her selfe loosed, shee enuadeth the fyfshes or tortoyse as swiftly as an arrowe. And where she hath once fastened her howld shee casteth the purse of skynne wherof we spake before: And by drawyng the same togyther, so graspeleth her pray, that no mans strenght is sufficient to vnloose the same, excepte by lyttle and lyttle drawinge the lyne, shee bee lyfted sumwhat aboue the brymme of the water. For then, as sone as she seeth the brightnes of the ayer, shee lettethe goo her howld. The praye therefore, beinge nowe drawn nere to the brymme of the water, there leapeth foodenly owte of the boate into the sea soo manye fyfshers, as maye suffice to holde faste the praye, vntyll the reste of the company haue taken it into the boate. Which thinge doone, they loose soo muche of the cord, that the hunting fyfshes, may ageyne returne to her place within the water: where by an other corde, they let downe to her a piece of the praye, as we vse to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue kyled theyr game. This fyfshes, they caule *Guaicanum*, But owre men caule it *Reuersum*. They gaue owre men foure tortoyfes taken by this meanes: And those of such byggenes that they almoste fylled theyr fyfshinge boate. For these fyfshes are esteemed amonge them for delicate meate. Owre men recompensed them ageyne with other rewardes, and soo lette them departe. Beinge asked of the compasse of that lande, they aunswered that it had no ende westwarde. Most instantly desyryng the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to sende one with them to salute their *Cazicus*, (that is) their kinge: Affirmyng that he wolde gyue owre men many presentes, yf they wolde goo to hym. But the Admiral, leaste he shulde bee hyndered of the vyage which he had begunne, refused to goo with them. Then they desyred to knowe his name, and towld owre men lykewyse the name of theyr kyng. Thus sayling on yet further euer toward the West, within fewe dayes he came nere vnto a certeyne exceding high mountayne, wel inhabyted by reason of the great fertilitie of the same. Th[e]inhabitauntes of this mountayne, browght to owre shippe, breade, goffampine cotton, cunnies, and fundry kyndes of wyldfowle: demaundyng relygiouly of th[e]interpretoures, if this nation descended not from heauen. The kynge of this people, and dyuers other sage men that stode by hym, informed hym that that lande was no Ilande. Shortly after, enteringe into one of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they fownde no body therin: for they fledde al at the commyng of owre men. Yet fownde they there foure dogges of maruelous deformed shape, and suche as coulde not barke. This kynd of dogges, they eate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of geefe, duckes, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the continente, he entered into soo narowe streyghtes, that he coulde scarcely turne backe the shippes: And these also so shalowe, that the keele of the shyps sumtyme rased

Serpentes
esteemed for
delicate meat
Ophiophagi.

Blossomes and
frutes bothe at
one tyme.

Trees which
beare gourds

A multitude of
Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A straunge kynde
of fysshynge.
A huntynge
fyfshes.

Abundance of
tortoyfes. 15

Fysshers men.

The fyfshes
Guaicanum.

Humaine people.

A mountaine
fruitefull and well
inhabited.

Dogges of strange
shape and dumme.
Duckes.
Hearons.
Streightes.

on the fandes The water of these freyghtes, for the space of fortie myles, was white and thycke lyke unto mylke, and as though mele had byn sparkeled through owte al that fea. And when they had at the lengthe escaped these strayghtes, and were nowe coome into a mayne and large fea, and had sayled theron for the space of foure score myles, they espyed an other excedinge hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall reforted to store his shyppes with fresshe water and fuel. Heare amonge certeyne wooddes of date trees, and pyneable trees of excedyng height he fownd two natiue sprynges of fresshe water. In the meane tyme whyle the woodde was cuttyng and the barrells fyllyng, one of owre archers went into the wood to hunt: where he espyed a certeyne man with a whyte vesture, soo lyke a fryer of th[e] order of saynt Marye of *Mercedis*, that at the fyrste sight he supposed it had byn the Admiralles preeste which he brought with hym, beyng a man of the same order. But two other folowed hym immediatlye owte of the same wooddes, shortly after, he sawe a farre of a hole company of men clothed in apparel, beinge abowte. xxx. in nomber. Then turning his backe and crying owte to his felowes, he made haste to the shyppes with all that he myght dryue. These apparelled men, made signes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee afrayde. But that notwithstandinge, he ceafed not to flye. The Admirall beinge aduertised hereof, and not a lyttle reioyfyng that he had fownde a ciuile people, incontinently sent forth armed men, with commaundement, that yf neede should soo requyre, they shulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande, vntyl they myght fynde eyther those apparelled men, or other inhabitantes of that countrey. When they hadde passed ouer the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of grasse and herbes, in which appeared no token of any pathe way. Here attemptyng to goo through the grasse and herbes, they were soo entangled and bewrapte therin, that they were scarfely able to passe a myle, the grasse beinge there lyttle lower then owre rype corne. Beinge therefore weryed, they were enforced to returne ageyne, fyndyng no pathe way. The day folowing he sent fourth. xxv. armed men an other way: Commaunding them to make diligent searche and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had fownde not farre from the fea fyde certeyne steppes of wylde beastes, of the which they suspected sum to bee of Lyons feete being striken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came they fownde a woodde in the which were many natiue vines here and there crepinge abowte highe trees, with many other trees bearinge aromaticall fruites and spyces. Of these vines they brought with them into Spaine many clusters of grapes very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other fruites, they brought none bycause they putrified by the waye in the shippe, and were caste into the fea. They saye also that in the laundes or medowes of those wooddes, they sawe flockes of greate cranes twyfe as bygge as owres. As he went forward and turned his sayles towarde certeyne other mountaines, he espied two cotages on the shore, in the whiche he sawe onely one man: who beinge brought to the shyppe, signified with heade, fyngers, and by al other signes, that he coulde deuise that the lande which lay beyonde those mountaynes, was very full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the shore of the same, there mette hym certeyne *Canoas* hauinge in them many people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of peace and frendeshyp. But here *Didacus* th[e] interpretour whiche vnderstoode the language of th[e] inhabitantes of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderstode not them one whytte, wherby they confydred that in fundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were fundry languages. He had also intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region, was a kynge of greate power, and accustomed to weare apparell. He sayth that all the tracte of this shore, was drowned with water and full of mudde, befette with many trees, after the maner of owre marysshes, yet whereas in this place they wente alande for fresshe water, they fownde many of the shel fysshes in the whiche pearles are gathered. But that coulde not cause the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entendinge at this viage, only to proue howe many landes and feas he coulde discouer accordyng to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceded forward, they sawe here and there al the waye alonge by the shore, a great smoke ryfinge, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure score myles distant. There was no rocke or hyll that coulde be seene, but the same was all of a smoke. But whether these fyres were made by th[e] inhabitantes for their necessary busynes, or as we are wont to sette beacons on fyre when we suspecte th[e] approche of owre enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redines, and gather togyther if perchappes owre men shulde attempte any thinge ageynst them, or otherwyfe as seemethe most lykely, to caule them togyther as to a wonder to behould owre shippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended sumetyme towarde the Southe, and sumetyme towarde the Weste and westefouthwest: And the fea was euery where entangeled with Ilandes: by reason whereof, the keeles of the shippes often tymes rased the fandes for shalownes of the water: So that the shyppes beinge very sore brused and appayred, the sayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in maner rotten, and the vytayles, (especially the byskette breade) corrupted by takyng water at the riftes euyll clofed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laste poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beinge knowen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangelista*. Thus turning his sayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the supposed continente, he chaunced into a mayne fea where was suche a multitude of greate tortoyfes, that sumtyme they stayed the shyppes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke unto that wherof we spake before. At the length fearing the shelles of the Ilands, he returned to the shore of *Cuba* by

Whyte and thicke water.

Wooddes of date trees.

Men appareled like white fryers.

16

Grasse almost as hyghe as corne.

Steppes of wylde beastes feete.

Natiue vines

Trees bearinge spyces and sweete fruites.

Greate Cranes.

Dyuers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in shelfysshes.

The sea entangeled with Ilandes

Euangelista.

A multitude of great tortoyfes

A goufe of whyte water
Humaine people.
Stock doues of more pleasaunt tast then partryches.

17

The humanitie of a reuerende owlde gouernour.

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Theyr opinion of the soul of man.

Desyre of golde founde that which religion coulde not fynde.
Virtus post nummos. &c.

The Iland as common as the sunne and water.

The golden worlde.

Prouision without care.

Simple diete

18

The Iland of Iamaica.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

the same way which he came. Here a multitude of th[e]inhabitanes, as well women as men, reforted to hym with cheerefull countenaunce and without feare: bringynge with them popingayes, breade, water, and cunnys: But especially focke doues much bygger then owres: which he affirmeth, in fauour and taste, to bee muche more pleasaunt then owre partryches. Wherfore where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne fauoure of spyce to proceade from them, he commaunded the croppe to bee opened of fuche as were newly kylled, and fownde the same full of sweete spyces, whiche he argued to bee the cause of theyr strange taste. For it standeth with good reason, that the flesshe of beastes, shulde drawe the nature and qualitie of theyr accustomed nuryshmente. As the Admirall harde masse on the shore, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernoure, a man of four score yeares of age, and of great grautie, althowgh he were naked fauinge his pryue partes. He had a great trayne of menne waytinge on hym. All the whyle the preeste was at masse, he shewed hym felfe verye humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenaunce. When the masse was ended, he presented to the Admirall, a baskette of the frutes of his countrey, delyueringe the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gentelly interteyned hym, defyringe leaue to speake, he made an oration in the pefence of *Didacus* th[e]interpretoure, in this effecte. I haue byn'aduertised (moste mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power subdued many landes and Regions hytherto vnknownen to you: and haue browght no little feare vppon all the people and inhabitantes of the same. The which your good fortune, you shal beare with lesse infolencie, if you remember that the foules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this bodye. The one fowle and darke, prepared for fuche as are iniurious and cruell to mankynde: The other pleasaunt and delectable, ordeyned for them which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge your felfe to bee mortall, and confyder that euery man shal receaue condigne rewarde or punyshment for such thinges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wrongefully hurte no man. When he had fayde these wordes and other lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by th[e]interpretoure, he marueylinge at the iudgemente of the naked owlde man, answered, that he was gladd to heare his opinion as touchinge the fundry iourneys and rewardes of fowles departed from theyr bodyes: Supposinge that nother he, or any other of th[e]inhabitanes of those Regions, had had any knowlege thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cause of his comminge thither was to instructe them in such godly knowlege and trewe religion: And that he was fente into those countreys by the Christian kynge of Spayne (his lorde and maister) for the same purpose: And specially to subdue and punissh the Canibales and such other mischeuous people: And to defende innocentes ageynst the violence of such euyl doers wyllynge hym and all other such as embrased vertue, in no case to bee afrayde: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other fuche quiete men as he was, hadde fusteyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold see the same reuenged. These comfortable wordes of the Admirall soo pleased the owlde man, that notwithstanding his extreeme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admiral as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chyldren had not hyndered hym of his purpose. But he marueyled not a lyttle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when th[e]interpretour towlde hym of the glorye, magnificence, pompes, greate powre, and furnymentes of warre of owre kynges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes which were vnder theyr dominions. Intendynge therefore to haue gonne with the Admirall, his wyfe and children fell prostrate at his feete, with teares defyringe hym not to forsake them and leaue them desolate. At whose pytifull requestes, the worthy owlde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and famylie, satiffyenge rather them then hym felfe. For not yet ceasinge to woonder, and of heauy countenaunce bycause he myght not departe, he demaunded oftentymes if that lande were not heauen, which browght forth fuche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the sonne and water: And that Myne and Thyne (the feedes of all myscheefe) haue no place with them. They are contente with soo lyttle, that in soo large a countrey, they haue rather superfluitie then scarsenes. Soo that (as wee haue fayde before) they seeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuinge in open gardens, not intrenched with dykes, dyuyded with hedges, or defended with waules. They deale trewely one with another, without lawes, without bookes, and without Iudges. They take hym for an euyl and myscheuous man, which taketh pleasure in doinge hurte to other. And albeit that they delyte not in superfluities, yet make they prouision for th[e]increase of fuche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as *Maizium*, *Iucca*, and *Ages*, contented with fuche simple dyet, wherby health is preferued, and dyseases auoyded. The Admirall therefore departinge from thense, and myndinge to returne ageyne shortly after, chaunced to coome ageyne to the Ilande of *Iamaica* beinge on the sowe the syde therof: and coasted all alonge by the shore of the same, from the Weste to the Easte. From whose last corner on the East syde, when he sawe towarde the North on his lefte hand, certeyn high mountains he knewe at the length that it was the sowe the syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which he had not yet passed by. Wherfore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the hauen of the same Ilande, cauled saynt Nycolas hauen, he repayred his shippes to th[e]intent that he myght ageyne waft and spoyle the Ilandes of the Canibales, and burne all theyr Canoas, that those raueninge wolues myght no longer perfecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe. But he was at this tyme hyndered of his

purpose by reason of a dysease which he had gotten with to much watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the maryners to the citie of *Ifabella*, where, with his two brytherne which were there, and other his familiers, he recouered his health in shorte space. Yet coulde he not at this tyme assayle the Canibales, by reason of fedicion that was ryfen of late amonge the Spanyardes which he had lefte in *Hispaniola*, wherof we wyll speake more heerafter. Thus fare ye wel.

¶ THE FOURTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



Olonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as he supposed) from the continent or firme lande of East India, had aduertisement that his brother *Boilus* and one *Peter Margarita*, an owld familier of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernement of the Iland, were of corrupted mynde ageynst him, departed into Spayne. Wherefore as wel to purge him of such crimes as they shuld ley to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and especially to prouyde for vitailles, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and such other which the Spanyardes are accustomed to eate, bycause they coulde not yet well agree with such meates as they fownde in the Ilandes, determined shortly to take his vyage into Spayne. But what he dyd before his departure, I wyll brefely rehearse.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hytherto lyued quietly and content with theyr lyttle whiche they thought abundante, wheras they nowe perceaued that owre men began to fasten foote within theyr Regions and to beare rule amonge them, tooke the matter so greuoufly, that they thought nothyngel elles but by what meanes they myght vtterly destroy them, and for euer abolysshe the memory of theyr name. For that kynde of men (the Spanyardes I meane which folowed the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the most parte vnruely, regardyngel nothingel but Idlenes, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes absteyne from iniuries: Rauyshyngel the women of the Ilandes before the faces of their husbandes, fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhomynable mysdemaynour, they disquieted the myndes of all th[e] inhabitants: In so much that where so euer they fownde any of owre men vnprepared, they flewe them with suche fyercesnes and gladnes, as though they had offered sacryfyce to God. Intendyngel therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to punysshel them that slew his men before he departed from thense, he sent for the kyngel of that vale, which in the booke before, we descrybed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Region of *Cibaua*. This kynges name was *Guarionexius*: who, the more streyghtly to concyle vnto hym the frendeshyppe of the Admirall, gaue hys syster to wyfe to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age browght vp with the Admiral, whom he vsed for his interpretoure in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he sent for *Caunaboa*, cauled the lorde of the howse of goulde: that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*. For this *Caunaboa*, he fente one capitayne *Hoieda*, whom the ditionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his howlde bysiegeinge for the space of. xxx. dayes, the fortresse of saynte Thomas, in the which *Hoieda* with his fyftie fouldiers, floode at theyr defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, many ambaffadours of the kynges of dyuers Regions were sent to *Caunaboa*, persuaingel hym in no condicion to permitte the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather serue then rule. On the other parte, *Hoieda* aduertified *Caunaboa* to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendship with hym. But the ambaffadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde soo doo, the other kynges wolde inuade his Region. But *Hoieda* aunswered theym ageyne, that wheras they conspired to maynteyne their libertie, they shuld by that meanes be browght to seruitude and destruction if they entended to resist or keepe warre ageynst the Christians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one fyde and the other, beinge troubeled as it were a rocke in the sea, beaten with contrary fluddes, and much more vexed with the stormes of his gyltie conscience for that he had priuillie slaine. xx. of owre men vnder pretence of peace feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing excogitated this deceyte, to haue slayne the Admirall and his coompany vnder the colour of frendshippe if oportunitie wold soo haue serude, he repayred to the Admiral with his hole familie and many other wayting on hym, armed after theyr maner. Beinge demaunded why he browght soo greate a rout of men with hym, he aunswered that it was not decenete for soo great a prince as he was, to goo foorth of his howse without suche a bande of men. But the thingel chaunced much otherwyse then he looked for. For he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repenete hym that he came foorthel of his howse, *Hoieda* with many fayre wordes and promyses, browght hym to the Admirall: At whose commaundement, he was immediatly taken and put in prifon: So that the fowles of owre men were not longe

Sickenes of to much watchinge.

Easte India.

The Spanyardes rebelle in the Admirals absence.

The kynges of the Ilande rebell.

The Spaniardes misbehauour.

Guarionexius the kyngel of the great vale
Didacus the interpretour
Caunaboa, the kyngel of the house of golde.

Capitayne Hoieda

19

Kyngel Caunaboa, had slaine the Spanyardes.

Caunaboa conspireth the Admiralles death.

Fayre wordes make fooles fayne.

Famine in the
Ilande of
hispaniola.

The hunger of
golde causeth
great famine.

The towre of
conception.

A masse of gold
weyhinge. xx.
ounces.

Tofus.

Electrum is a
metall naturally
mixt of one portion
of golde and an
other of siuer
beinge of propertie
to bewray poyson,
and was
therefore in
owlde tyme in
greater estimation
then golde. 20

The myne of
Electrum.

An other kynde of
amber is taken out
of greate whale
fishes
Orpement or oker.
Wooddes of
brasile trees.

Causes of
hinderance.
Licenciusnes of
to much libertie

And this only
gathered and not
digged out of the
bodi of the mine

The people make
supplication to
stand to their
tribute

from their bodies vnreunged. Thus *Caunaboa* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was such famine amonge th[e]inhabitanes, that there was alreddie fyftie thousande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotten sheepe: The cause wherof was wel knowen to bee theyr owne obstinacie and frowardnes. For where as they sawe that owre men entended to choose them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposinge that they myght haue driuen them from thence if the vytailes of the Ilande shoulde fayle, they determyned with them selues, not only to leaue fowing and plantyng, but also to destroy and plucke vp by the rootes euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alreddie sowne of both kyndes of breade wherof we made mencion in the fyrst booke. But especially amonge the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, otherwyse cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knoweledge that the golde which abundeth in that Region, was the cheefe cause that deteyned owre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he sent forth a Capitayne with a bande of men to searche the fowthe fyde of the Ilande. Who at his returne, reported that throwghe out all the Regions that he traauayled, there was suche scarcenes of breade, that for the space of. xvi. dayes he ate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the fruites of other wylde trees, But *Guarionexius*, the kynge of the vale lyinge beneth the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose kyngedome was not soo wasted as the other, gaue owre menne certeyne vytayles.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe that the iourneys myght bee the shorter, and also that owre men myght haue more safe places of refuge, if the inhabitantes shuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buylded an other fort[r]esse (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the citie of *Ifabella* and faint Thomas fortresse, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the fyde of a hyll, hauynge a fayre ryuer of holsome water runnyng hard by the same. Thus when the inhabitantes sawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and owre shippes lying in the hauen rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to despayre of any hope of libertie, and wandered vp and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, searchyng diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeine kyng whiche gaue them a masse of rude golde, as bygge as a mans fyft, weyhing. xx. vneces. This golde was not fownde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the stone cauled *Tofus*, whiche is foone resolued into sande. This masse of golde, I my selfe sawe in Castile, in the famous citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the courte lay all that wynter. I sawe also a great piece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many suche other vessels and instrumentes maye bee made, as were in owlde tyme of copper of the citie of *Corinthus*. This piece of *Electrum*, was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lifte it from the grownde, but also not of strengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They affirmed that it wayde more then three hundreth pownde weight, after. viii. vneces to the pownde. It was fownde in the howse of a certen prynce, and lefte hym by his predeceffours. And albeit that in the dayes of th[e]inhabitanes yet liuyng, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owre men with muche adoo, coulde hardely cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them suche priuie hatred. Yet at the length, they browght them to the myne, beyng nowe ruinate and stopped with stonnes and rubbisse. It is muche easier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee restored agein, if myners and other woorkemen skylfull therin, were appoynted therto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is fownd great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the same distilleth a substance of the yelowe coloure whiche the paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many greate wooddes, in the which are none other trees then brasile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yowe wolde aske what shoulde be the cause, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought owte of these Ilandes certen shyppes laden with brasile, sumwhat of goffampine cotton, a quantitie of amber, a lyttel golde, and sum spices, why they haue not broughte suche plentie of golde and suche other ryche marchaundies as the fruitfulnessse of these regions seeme to promisse. To this I answere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewise demaunded the cause hereof, he made answere that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with him into these regions, were gyuen rather to slepe, pley, and ydlennesse, then to laboure: And were more studious of sedition and newes, then desyrous of peace and quietnesse: Also that beyng gyuen to lycencioufnes, they rebelled and forfooke hym, fyndyng matter of false accusations agaynst hym, bycause he went aboute to repress the owtragioufenes. By reason wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabytantes, and freely to possesse the full dominion of the Ilande. And these hynderaunces to be the cause that hitherto the gaynes haue scarcely counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wryte these thynges at yowre requeste, they gathered in twoo moonethes the summe of a thousande and twoo hundreth poundes weight of golde. But bycause we intende to speake more largely of these thynges in theyr place, we wyll nowe retourne from whense we haue digressed. When the inhabitantes perceaued that they could by no meanes shake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble supplication to the Admirall that they myght stande to theyr tribute, and apply them selues to reincrease the fruites of theyr countrey, beinge nowe almoste wasted. He graunted them theyr requeste: and appoynted such order that euery Region shulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordinge to

theyr portion, and at fuche tyme as they were agreed vpon. But the violent famine dyd frustrate all these appoyntmentes. For all the trauayles of theyr bodyes, were scarfely able to suffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to susteyne theyr lyues, beinge of long tyme contented with rootes and the fruites of wylde trees. Yet manye of the kyniges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessitie, browght parte of theyr tribute: Moste humbly desyryng the Admirall to haue compassion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyll the Iland were restored to the owlde state. Promynginge farther, that that which was nowe wantinge, shulde then bee dowble recompensed. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, kepte theyr promyse, bycause they were forer oppressed with famine then any of the other. They saye, that the inhabitantes of these mountaynes, differ no lesse in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, then amonge vs, the rusticalles of the countrey from gentylnen of the courte: wheras notwithstandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many thinges, much after one fasshion, as in nakednes, and rude simplicitie. But nowe lette vs returne to *Caunaboa*, the kynge of the howse of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him selfe to be caste in pryson, frettinge and gratinge his teethe as it had bin a lyon of *Libia*, and dayely and nightly deuisinge with hym selfe howe he myght bee delyuered, beganne to persuaide the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Region of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* (wherof he was king) it shulde bee expedient to sende thither a garryson of Christian men, to defende the same from the incurfions of his owld enemyes and borderers. For he sayde, that it was signyfyed vnto hym, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with fuche incurfions. By this crafty deuise, he thought to haue browght to passe, that his brother whiche was in that regyon, and the other his kynfepolkes and frendes with their adherentes, shoulde haue taken, eyther by fleyghte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admyrall vnderstandynge his crafty meanyng, fente *Hoieda* with fuche a coompany of men, as might vanquishe the Cibauians, if they shulde moue warre ageynste them. Owre men had scarfely entered into the Region, but the brother of *Caunaboa* came agenste them with an armie of fyue thousande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fyre. He stole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howses: and encamped rownde about the same on euery syde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignorant in the disciplyne of warre, abowte the distance of a furlonge from the house, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to euery of them a circuite by equal diuision: And placed the froot of his owne batayle, directlye ageynst owre men. When he had thus fet his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne signes that the hole army shulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a larome fresshly affayle theyr enemies, in such fort that none might escape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onfet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycause that place was most commodious for the horsfemen. When the horsfemen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrewe them with the brestes of theyr horses, and slewe as many as abode th[e]nde of the fyght. The residue beinge stryken with feare, disparclod, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whense they made a pytifull houlyng to owre men, desyryng them to spare them: protestinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what so euer they woulde commaunde them, if they wolde suffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of *Caunaboa* beinge taken, the Admirall licenced the people to reforte euery man to his owne. These thinges thus fortunately atchiued this Region was pacified. Amonge those mountaynes, the vale which *Caunaboa* inhabited, is cauled *Magona*, and is excedynge fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly springes: and ryuers, in the sande wherof, is fownde great plentie of golde. The fame yeare in the mooneth of Iune, they saye there rose fuche a boyst[r]ous tempeste of wynde from the sowe theaste, as hath not lightly ben harde of: The violence hereof was such that it plucked vppe by the roots what so euer greate trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whirle wynde came to the hauen of the citie, it beate downe to the bottome of the sea, three shippes which lay at anker, and broke the cables in fundre: and that (which is the greater maruail) without any storme or rowghnes of the sea, onely turnynge them three or foure tymes abowte. The inhabitantes also affirme, that the fame yeare, the sea extended it selfe further in to the lande, and rose higher then euer it dyd before by the memory of man, by the space of a cubet. The people therfore, muttered amonge them selues, that owre nation hadde trowbled the elementes, and caused such portentous signes. These tempestes of the ayer (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that is, whyrle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they say, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they nor theyr great grandfathers euer sawe fuche violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked vppe greate trees by the rootes: Neyther yet fuche farges and vehement motions on the sea, that soo wasted the lande. As in dede it may appeare, for as muche as, where so euer the sea bankes are nere to any plaine there are in maner euery where, flourishing medowes reachinge euen vnto the shore. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa*. As kynge *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother shoulde haue binne browght into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for verye penyuenes and anguythe of mynde. The Admiral, whose shippes were drowned in the forfayde tempeste, perceauinge him selfe to bee nowe enclosed, commaunded foorthwith two other shippes (which the Spaniardes

Famine.

The nature of the Region disposeth the maner of the people.

Kynge Caunaboa in captiuitie.

The persuasion of Caunaboa.

21

Caunaboa his brother rebelleth.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spanyardes.

The Cibauians haue the ouerthrowe.

A great tempest in the moneth of Iune.

Three shippes drowned lyinge at anker

Whyrle wyndes Furacanes.

The death of kynge Caunaboa and his brother.

Bartholomeus
Colonus the
leuetenaunt
searcheth the
golde mines.

22

The golde mynes
of Salomon.

Golde in the
superficiall partes
of the earth.

The Admirall
taketh his viage
to spaine

caule *Carauelas*) to bee made. For he had with hym, all maner of artificers pertheyninge therunto. Whyle these thinges were dooinge, he sent forth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, beinge leuetenaunt of the Ilande, with an army of men to searche the golde mynes beinge dystant three score leaques from the cite of *Ifabella*, which were fownde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, beefore the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* were knowen. In these mynes, they fownde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn digged in owlde tyme, owte of these pyttes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hispaniola* to bee Ophir, as we haue sayde before) supposeth that Salomon the kynge of *Hierusalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde testamente: And that his shippes sayled to this Ophir by the goulfe of *Persia* cauled *Sinus Persicus*. But whether it bee soo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farre of. As the myners dygged the superficiall or vppermost parte of the earthe of the mynes, duryng for the space of. vi. miles, and in dyuers places fyfted the fame on the drye lande, they fownde such plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could easely fynde euery day, the weyght of three drammes. These mynes beinge thus searched and fownde, the Lieuetenaunte certified the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the. v. daye of the Ides of Marche. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe shippes, and tooke his viage directly to Spayne to aduertise the kynge of all his affayres, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Lieuetenaunte,

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE, to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



After the Admyrall departyng into Spain his Brother the Lieuetenaunte, buylded a fort[re]sse in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, bycause the labourers fownde golde in the earth and stonewherof they made the waules of the fortresse. He consumed three monethes in makynge the instrumentes wherwith the golde shulde bee gathered, washed, tryed, and molten. Yet was he at this tyme by reason of wante of vitayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo seeke for meate. Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered three score myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there resortyng to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theyr breade in exchange for other of owre thynges. But he coulde not long tary here, bicause they lacked meate in the fortresse, whyther he hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leauyng therefore in the fortresse a garryson of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leauyng also with them a hownde to take those kyndes of lyttle beastes which they caule *Vfias*, not mucche vnlyke owre conyes, he returned to the fortresse of Conception. This also, was the moonthe wherin the kynge *Guarionexius*, and also *Manicautexius*, bortherer vnto hym, shulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynyng there the hole moonthe of Iune, he exacted the hole tribute of these twoo kynges, and vytayles necessary for hym and fuche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowt foure hundreth in number. Shortely after, abowte the calendes of Iulye, there came three *Carauelas* from Spayne, bringyng with them fundry kyndes of vitayles, as wheate, oyle, wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beafe: whiche were dyuyded to euery man accordyng as neede required. Sum also was lost in the cariage for lacke of good lookyng too. At the arryuall of these shippes, the lieuetenaunte receaued commaundment from the kynge and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men shulde remoue theyr habitation to the fowthe fyde of the Ilande, bycause it was nerer to the golde mynes: Also that he shoulde make dilygent searche for those kynges whiche had flayne the Christian men, and to fende them with theyr confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nexte vyage therefore, he sent three hundreth captiues with three Kinges: And when he had dilygently searched the coastes of the south fyde, he transported his habitation, and buylded a fortresse there, vpon the toppe of a hyll, neere vnto a fure hauen.

This fortresse, he cauled saynt Dominikes towre. Into this hauen, runneth a ryuer of holsome water, replenyshed with fundrye kyndes of good fysshes. They affyrme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature. For, where so euer it runneth all thynges are excedyng pleasaunte and fruitfull: hauyng on euery fyde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes so plentyfully, that as they sayled alonge by the shore, often tymes the branches therof laden with flowres and frutes, hunge soo ouer theyr heades, that they mighte plucke them with theyr handes. Also that the frutes of this grownde, is eyther equall with the soyle of *Ifabella*, or better. In *Ifabella*, he lefte only certeyne ficke men and shippe wrightes, whom he had appointed to make certeyne *carauels*. The residue of his men, he conueighed to the fowth, to saint Dominikes towre. After he had buylded this fortresse, leauinge therein a garryson of. xx. men, he with the remanent of his souldiers, prepared

The golden towre.

Lacke of vytayles.

Huntinge
houndes.

Kynge
Manicautexius.

Vytayles brought
from Spayne.

Saynt Dominikes
towre.

Groues of
date trees.

Ifabella.

23

them felues to searche the inner partes of the Weste fyde of the Ilande, hytherto knowen onely by name. Therefore abowte. xxx. leaques, (that is) foure score and tenne myles from the fortresse, he chaunced on the ryuer *Naiba*, whiche we sayde to descende from the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, ryght towarde the fowth, by the myddest of the Iland. When he had ouerpasse this ryuer with a coompanye of armed men diuided into. xxv. decurions, that is, tenne in a company with theyr capitaynes, he sent two decurions to the regions of those kinges in whose landes were the great woods of brafile trees. Inclyninge towarde the lefte hande, they fownde the woodes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, which were to that day, vntouched. Eche of the decurions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howses with the trunkes of brafile, there to be referued vntyll the shyppes came which shulde cary them away. But the Lieuetenaunt directinge his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, fownde a certeyne kynge whose name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped ageynst th[e] inhabitants of the prouince of *Naiba*, to subdue them vnder his dominion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, bortherers vnto hym: The palaice of this great kynge, is cauled *Xaragua*: and is situate towarde the Weste ende of the Ilande, distante from the ryuer of *Naiba*. xxx. leaques. All the prynces which dwell betwene the Weste ende and his palaice, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from *Naiba*, to the furthest marches of the weste, is vtterly withowte golde, although it bee full of mountaynes. When the kynge had espied owre men, layinge a parte his weapons, and gyuinge signes of peace, he spake gentelly to them, (incerteyne whether it were of humanitie or feare) and demaunded of them what they wolde haue. The Lieuetenaunte answered: That he shulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian kynge of Spayne. To whom he sayde: Howe can yowe requyre that of me, whereas neuer a Region vnder my dominion bringeth foorth golde. For he had harde, that there was a strange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made greate searche for golde. But he supposed that they defyred none other thyng. The leauctenaunt answered ageyne: God forbydde that we shulde enioyne any man to paye such tribute as he myght not easely forbear, or such as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we vnderstand that your Regions brynge foorth great plentie of Gossampine cotton, and heme, with suche other, whereof we desyre yowe to gyue vs parte. When he harde these woordes, he promysed with cherefull countenance, to gyue hym as muche of these thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus dismissinge his army, and fendyng messengers beefore, he hym selfe accompanied the Leauetenaunte and browght hym to his palaice, beinge distante (as we haue sayde). xxx. leaques. In al this tracte, they passed through the Iurisdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, some gaue them heme, of no lesse goodnes to make tackelings for shippes then owre woodde. Other some, browght breade, and some gossampyne cotton: And so euery of them payde tribute with suche commodities as theyr countreys browght foorth. At the lengthe they came to the kinges mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palaice, a greate multitude of the kynges seruantes and subiectes resorted to the courte, honorably (after their maner) to receaue their kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the strangers which he browght with hym to see the magnificence of his courte. But nowe shall yowe heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and fyghtes, two are especially to bee noted. Fyrste there mette them a company of. xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, fyinge and daunsinge: They were all naked, sauyng that theyr pryue partes were couered with breeches of gossampine cotton. But the virgins, hauyng theyr heare hangyng downe abowte their sholders, tyed abowte the foreheade with a fyllet, were vtterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, brestes, pappes, handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were excedyng smoothe, and well proportioned: but somewhat inclyning to a louely brown. They supposed that they had seene those most beautyfull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites speake so muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes when they daunced, they delyuered to the Leauetenaunt with lowe curtesy and smylyng countenance. Thus enteringe into the kynges howse, they fownde a delicate supper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were browght by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodgyng, accordyng to his degree, in certeyne of theyr howses abowte the palaice, where they rested them in hangyng beddes after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue spoken more largely in an other place.

¶ The daye folowyng they browght owre men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or tryumphes, as we haue said beefore. Here, after many daunsynges, fyinges, maskynges, runnynges, wrestlynges, and other trynges of mastries, foodenly there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armies of men of warre, whiche the kynge for his pastyme had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniardes vse the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Iuga de Canias*. As the armies drewe neere together, they assayed the one the other as fierfely, as if mortal enemies with theyr baners spleade, shulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues and theyr chyldren. Soo that within the momente of an howre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue continued longer, if the kynge had not at the request of owre men, caused them to cease. The thyrde day, the

The ryuer of Naiba

Woodes of brasile trees.

Kinge Beuchius Anacauchoa.
The palaice of xaragua.

Mountaynes without gold

Tribute.

The wolfe entreateth the sheepe.

Heme and gossampine cotton.

Howe the Lieuetenant was receaued at the kynges palaice.

The kynges wyues.

Well fauered women.

Dryades.

24

A delicate supper.

Hanginge beddes.

A common haule.

A pretie pastyme.

Foure men slaine in sport

Prouision for
diseased men

The castels or
towers of
hispaniola.

The golden
mountaynes
of Cibaua.

Bonauum

Tribute.

The kynges
rebelle.

Guarionexius
capitaine of
the conspiracie.

An army of xv.
thousande
Barbarians.

25

The kynges are
taken prisoners.

Kynge
Guarionexius
is pardoned.

Lacke of vytayles.

Beuchius
Anacauchoa, the
kynge of Xaragua.

Lieuetenant confelynge the kynge to fowe more plentie of goffampine vppon the bankes nere vnto the waters fyde, that they myghte the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordynge to the multitude of theyr howfes, he repayred to *Ifabella* to vyfite the ficke men whiche he had lefte there, and also to see howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his absence. xxx. of his men were consumed with diuerse diseases. Wherefore beinge fore trowbled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he were best to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges necessarie as well to restore them to healthe whiche were yet acrafed, as also vitayles to mayntaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no shippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determyned to fende abrode the ficke men here and there to undrye Regions of the Ilande, and to the castelles which they had erected in the same. For directly from the cite of *Ifabella* to faynt Dominikes towre, that is, from the north to the south, through the Iland, they had buylded thus many castelles. Fyrste. xxxvi. myles distante from *Ifabella*, they buylded the castell of *Sperantia*, from *Sperantia*. xxv. myles, was the castell of faynte Catharine, from faynte Catharines. xx. myles, was faynt Iames towre. Other. xx. miles from faynte Iames towre, was a stronger fortresse then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the stronger bicause it was situate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibaua, in the greate and large playne soo fruitefull and well inhabited as we haue before described. He buylded also an other in the mydde waye betwene the towre of Conception and faynt Dominikes towre. The which also was stronger then the towre of Conception, bycause it was within the lymittes of a great kynge, hauinge vnder his dominion fiue thowfande men: whose chiefe Citie and heade of the Realme, beyng cauled *Bonauum*, he wylled that the castell shulde also bee cauled after the same name. Therefore leauynge the ficke men in these castels and other of the Ilande howfes nere vnto the same, he hym selfe repayred to faynte Dominikes, exactinge tributes of all the kynges whiche were in his waye. When he had taryed there a fewe dayes, there was a rumor spredde, that all the kynges abowte the borders of the towre of Conception, had conspyred with desperate myndes to rebell agenste the Spaniardes. When the Lieueteaunte was certified hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng discouraged eyther by the lengthe of the waye, or feeblenesse of his souldyers, beyng in maner forweried with trauayle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertisement that kynge *Guarionexius* was chosen by the other prynces to bee the Capitayne of this rebellion: And that he was enforced therto halfe vnwilling, beyng seduced by theyr perswasions and prouocations. The whiche is more lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had experience of the power and policie of owre men. They came together at a daye appoynted, accompanied with. xv. thowfande men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieueteaunte consultancyng with the Capitayne of the fortresse and the other souldiers of whom he had the conducte, determyned to fette vpon them vnwares in their owne howfes before they coude prepare theyr army. He sent forth therfore to euery kynge, a Centurian, that is, a capitaine of a hundreth, which were commaunded vppon a sudden to inuade theyr howfes in the night, and to take them sleeping, beefore the people (beinge scattered here and there) might assemble togyther. Thus secreatly enteringe into their vylages, not fortified with waules, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broke in vppon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away euery man his prisoner according as they were commaunded. The Lieueteaunt hym selfe with his hundreth men, assayled kynge *Guarionexius* as the woorthier perfonage, whom he tooke pryfoner as dyd the other capitaynes theyr kynges, and at the same howre appoynted. Foureteene of theym were browght the same nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had suborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the same: least the people for sorowe of theyr kynges shulde neglecte or forsake their countrey, whiche thinge myght haue byn greate incommoditie to owre men, who by th[e]increase of theyr feedes and fruites were oftentimes ayded, he freely pardoned and dismissed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togyther abowte the towre, to the nomber of fyue thowfande withowte weapons, with pytiful houling for the delyueraunce of theyr kynges: The ayer thundered, and the earth trembeled through the vehemencie of theyr owcry. The Lieueteaunt warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynge, with rewardes, and with promyses, neuer hereafter to attempte any fuche thyng. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the great power of owre men, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, and liberalitie to fuche as remayne faithfull: desyryng them to quiet theyr myndes: and from hensforth nother in deede nor thought to interpryse any thyng ageynst the Christians, but to obeye and serue them, excepte they wolde dayly bryng them selues into further calamyties. When the oration was fynished, they tooke hym vp and set hym on theyr shulders, and soo caryed hym home to his owne palaice. And by this meanes, this Region was pacified for a whyle. But owre men, with heauy countenance, wandered vppe and downe, as desolate in a strange countrey, lackinge vytayles, and worne owte of apparell, whereas. xv. moonethes were nowe passed fence the Admirals departure: duringe which tyme, they coude heare nothyng owte of Spayne. The Lieueteaunt comforted them all that he coude with fayre wordes and promyses. In the meane tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, the kynge of the Weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we spake before) sente messengers to the Lieueteaunt to signifye vnto hym, that he hadde in a redynes the

goffampine cotton and fuche other thinges as he wylled hym to prepare for the paymente of his trybute. Whervppon the Lieuetenaunt tooke his iorney thyther, and was honorably receaued of the kynge and his fyfter, sumtyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kynge of *Cibaua*, bearing no leffe rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngedome, then he hym felfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyfe woman, of good maners, and pleafaunt in company. Shee earnestly perfuaded her brother by th[e]example of her husbände, to loue and obeye the Christians. This woman was cauled *Anacaona*. He fownde in the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*. xxxii. kynges whiche hadde browght theyr tributes with them, and abode his comminge. They browght with them also besyde theyr trybute assigned them, further to demerite the fauour of owre men, great plentie of vytayles: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnys, and fyffhes, alre dyed bycause they shulde not putrifie: Serpentes also of that kynd which wee sayd to bee esteemed amonge them as most delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles sauing in byggenes. These serpentes they caule *Iuannas*, which owre men learned fumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durste aduenture to taste of them by reason of theyr horrible deformitie and lothefumnes. Yet the Lieuetenaunt beinge entyfed by the pleasantnes of the kynges fyfter, determined to taste of the serpentes. But when he felte the fleshe therof to bee so delicate to his tonge, he fel too, amayne without al feare. The which thinge his companyons perceauinge, were not behynde hym in greedines: In soo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke then of the sweetenes of these serpentes: which they affirme to bee of more pleafaunte taste, then eyther owre phefauntes or pertriches. But they lose theyr taste, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne fasshion: as doo peacockes and phefauntes except they bee interlarded beefore they bee roasted. They prepare them therefore after this maner. Fyrst takynge owte theyr bowels euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washe and rubbe theyr bodies very cleane bothe within and withowte. Then rouling them togyther on a cyrcle, inuolued after the maner of a slepyng snake, they thruste them into a potte of no bygger capacitie then to houlde them only. This doone, puttinge a lyttle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they feethe them with a soft fyer of fweete woodde, and fuche as maketh no greate smoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus sodde, is made an excedinge pleafaunte brothe or potage. They say also, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of these serpentes, which they vse to feethe by them selues. They are good to bee eaten as sone as they are sodde: And may also bee referued many dayes after. But hauinge sayde thus muche of theyr intertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe speake of other matters. When the Lieuetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howses with the goffampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynges promysed furthermore to gyue hym as muche of theyr breade, as he wolde demaunde. He gaue them hartie thankes and gently accepted theyr freendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in fundry Regions to bee browght to the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa* kynge of *Xaragua*, he sent messengers to *Ifabella* for one of the two caruelles which were lately made there: intendinge to fende the same thyther ageyne laden with breade. The maryners gladd of these tydynges, sayled abowte the Ilande, and in short space browght the shippe to the coastes of *Xaragua*. The fyfter of kynge *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyfe and pleafaunt woman *Anacaona*, (the wyfe sumtyme of *Caunaboa* the kynge of the golden howse of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose husbände dyed in the way when he shulde haue byn caryed into Spayne,) when shee harde faye that owre shyppe was arryued on the shore of her natiue countrey, perfuaded the kynge her brother that they bothe myght goo togyther to see it. For the place where the shyppe lay, was not paste. vi. myles distante from *Xaragua*. They rested all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne vyllage in the which was the treasurie or iewell howse of *Anacaona*. Her treasurie was nother goulde, syluer, or precious stones, but only thynges necessary to bee vsed, as cheyers, stooles, fettels, dyffhes, potingers, pottes, pannes, basons, treyes, and fuche other howsholde stufte and instrumentes, workemanly made of a certeyne blacke and harde shyninge woodde which that excellent lerned phisition *Iohn baptiste Elifus*, affirmeth to bee hebene. What so euer portion of wytte nature hath gyuen to the inhabitantes of these Ilandes, the same doth most appeare in these kynde of woorkes, in whiche they shewe great arte and cunnyng. But those which this woman had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, situate in the mouth of the weste fyde of *Hispaniola*. In these they graue the lyuely Images of such phantasies as they suppose they see walke by night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Also the Images of men, serpents, bestes, and what soo euer other thyng they haue once seene. What wolde yowe thinke (most noble Prynce) that they coulde doo, if they had the vse of Iren and steele? For they onely fyrste make these softe in the fyre, and afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certeyne stone which they fynde in the ryuers. Of stooles and chayers, shee gaue the Lieuetenaunt. xiiii. And of vesselles perteynyng to the table and kychen, shee gaue hym three score, sum of wood and sume of earthe. Also of goffampine cotton ready spunne foure great bottomes of excedinge weight. The day folowing when they came to the sea fyde, where was an other vylage of the kynges, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the shyppe boat to bee browght to the shore. The kyng also had prepared two canoas, paynted after theyr maner: one for hym felfe and certeyne of his gentelmen: an other for his fyfter *Anacaona* and her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* desyred to bee caryed in the shyppe boate with the

Queene Anacaona
the wife of kynge
Caunaboa.

xxxii. kynges.

Serpentes eaten.

26

The dressing of
serpentes to be
eaten.Serpentes
egges eatenGossampine
cotton.

Queene Anacaona

The treasurie of
Queene Anacaona

Hebene woode.

The Ilande of
Guanabba

Conninge artificers

A stone in the
steede of Iren

Gunnes.

27

Musical
instrumentes.
Ignorance causeth
admiration.Roldanus
Xeminus.
The intemperancie
and malice of a
seruile witte
aduanced.

Ciguaians.

Maiobanexius, the
great kyng of
the mountaynesThe inhabytantes
of the mountaynes.Guarionexius
rebelleth ageyne.Roldanus
Xeminus rebelleth.

28

Licentiousnes
in libertieHercules pyllers.
A violente
persasion.

Lieuetenaunte. When they nowe approched nere vnto the shyppe, certeyne great pieces of ordinaunce were discharged of purpose. The sea was fylled with thunder, and the ayer with smooke. They trembled and quaked for feare, supposinge that the frame of the world had byn in danger of fauling. But when they sawe the Lieuetenaunte lawgh, and looke cherefully on them, they cauled ageyne theyr spirites. And when they yet drewe nerer to the shippe, and harde the noyse of the flutes, shalmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully astroyed at the sweete harmony therof. Enterynge into the shyppe and beholdinge the fore-shippe and the sterne, the toppe castel, the maste, the hatches, the cabens, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother fixinge his eyes on the fyfter, and the fyfter on the brother, they were bothe as it were dumme and amased, and wyfte not what to saye for too muche wonderynge. Whyle beholdinge these thynges they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the ankers to bee loosed, and the failes to be hoyfed vp. Then were they further astroyshed, when they sawe soo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it selfe, without ores and without the force of man. For there arose from the earth fuche a wynde as a man wolde haue wysshed for of purpose. Yet furthermore, when they perceaued the shyppe to moue sumtyme forwarde and sumtyme backwarde: sumtyme towarde the ryght hande and sumtyme towarde the lefte, and that with one wynde and in maner at one instante, they were at theyr wyttes ende for to muche admiracion. These thynges fynished and the shippes beinge laden with breade and fuche other rewardes, they beinge also recompensed with other of owre thynges, he dismyssed not onely the kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, and his fyfter, but lykewise all theyr seruantes and women replenyshed with ioye and woonderinge. After this, he hym selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his fouldiers to the cite of *Ifabella*: where he was aduertified that one *Roldanus Ximenus*, a nawghty felowe, (whom before beinge his seruante, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and after made hym a Iudge in causes of controuersie) had vsed hym selfe owtragiouly and was malyciously mynded ageynst hym, and further, the cause of muche mischiefe in his absence. For kyng *Guarionexius* (who a whyle before was pardoned of his former rebellion, and perswaded the people to obeye the Spanyardes) was by his nawghty vsage, and fuche other as were confethered with hym, so accensed to reuenge the iniuries which they susteyned at his handes, bysyde the abhominable actes which they folowynge onely the lawe of nature, abhorred to admytte, that he with his famelie, famylyers, and ditionaries, of desperate mynde fledde to the mountaynes beinge distant from *Ifabella* onely tenne leaques Westwarde, towarde the north fyde of the sea. These mountaynes, and also the inhabitantes of the same they caule by one name *Ciguaios*. The greate kyng of al the kynges and regions of these mountayne[s], is cauled *Maiobanexius*: and his courte or palaice is named *Capronus*. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and fuche as no man can passe to the toppes therof. They are also bendynge: and haue theyr corners reachinge downe to the sea. Betwene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the sea. The people are verye fierse and warlyke men, hauing theyr original of the Canybales. For when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyr bortherers, they eat all fuche as they kyll. *Guarionexius* therefore, flyinge to this kyng of these mountaynes, gaue hym many presentes of fuche thynges as are wantinge in his countrey: therwith declarynge howe vylely, vylaynously, and violently, he had byn vsed of owre men: with whom he could nothyng preuayle nother by fayre meanes, nor by foule: nother by humylytie nor by stoutnes. And that to bee the cause of his refortinge to hym at that tyme: moste humbly desyryng hym to bee his defence ageynst th[e] oppreffions of fuche myfcheuous people. *Maiobanexius* here vppon, made hym promesse to ayde and helpe hym ageynst the Christians al that he myght. The Lieuetenaunt therefore made hast to the fortresse of Conception: whyther as soone as he was coome, he sent for *Roldanus Xeminus*, who with fuche as folowed hym, lay in certeyne of the Ilande vylages, twelue miles distant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Lieuetenaunt asked hym what al these sturres and tumultes ment. He answered without abasement: Yowre brother the Admirall hath to do therwith, and shall answere for the same before the kyng. For we perceaued that the kyng hath soo put hym in truste, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we peryshe for hunger whyle we folowe yowe: and are dryuen to seeke owre vnhappy foode in the desertes. Yowre brother also, assigned me assistant with yowe in gouerninge the Ilande. Wherefore fyth yowe haue no more respecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder yowre obedience. When *Roldanus* had spoken these wordes and fuche other, the Lieuetenaunte wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he escaped his fyngers, and fledde to the weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua*, hauinge with hym a trayne of threescore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy synke of rebels thus conspired, played their vages and lyued with loofe brydels in al kyndes of myfchefe, robberyng the people, spoylinge the countrey, and rauyshinge bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle these thynges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde eyght shippes appoynted hym by the kyng: Of the whiche he sent two laden with vitayles, from *Cales* or *Cades* of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetenaunt his brother. These shippes by chaunce arruyed fyrst on that fyde of the Ilande where *Rolandus Xeminus* ranged with his coompanyons. *Rolandus* in shorte tyme hadde seduced them: promysinge them in the steade of mattockes, wenches pappes: for laboure, pleasure: for hunger,

abundance: and for wearynes and watchinge, sleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, assemblinge a power of his freendes and confetherates, came oftentimes downe into the playne, and slewe as many of the Christian men, as he coulde meete conuenientlye, and also of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: waslyng theyr grounde, destroyinge theyr feedes, and spoylinge theyr vylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowlege that the Admirall wolde shortly coome, yet feared they nothyng bycause they had seduced the newe menne whiche came in the fyrste shippes. Whyle the Lieuetenaunt was thus tossed in the midst of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admyrall fet forwarde from the coastes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hispaniola*: For he turned more towarde the south. In the which vyage, what he dyd, what coastes bothe of the lande and sea he coompased, and what newe regions he discouered, wee wyl fyrst declare. For to what ende and conclusion the fayde tumultes and seditions came, wee wyl expresse in th[e]nde of the booke folowyng. Thus fare ye well.

THE SIXTE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



*C*olonus the Admyrall, the thyrde day of the Calendes of Iune, in the yeare of Christe. 1498. hoysed vp his sayles in the hauen of the towne *Barramedabas*, not farre distante from *Cales*: and fet forwarde on his vyage with eyght shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries. He diuerted from his accustomed rase which was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reason of certeyne frenchemen pirates and rouers on the sea, whiche laye in the ryght way to meete with hym. In the way from *Cales* to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, abowte foure score and ten myles towarde the lefte hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more southwarde then the cite of *Ciuite* by foure degrees. For the pole artyke is eleuate to *Ciuite*, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners faye) only xxxii. He sayled therefore fyrst to *Madera*. And sendinge from thense directly to *Hispaniola*, the refydue of the shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries, he hym selfe with one shyppe with deckes, and two marchaunt carauelles coasted towarde the south to coome to the *Equinoctial* lyne, and so furth to folowe the tracte of the same towarde the West, to th[e]intent to searche the natures of suche places as he coulde fynde vnder or nere vnto the same, leauinge *Hispaniola* on the north fyde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his rase, lye. xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in owlde tyme cauled *Hesperides*: And are now cauled *Caput Viride*, or *Cabouerde*. These are situate in the sea, ryght ouer ageynst the inner partes of *Ethiope*, Westwarde two dayes saylinge. One of these the Portugales caule *Bonauista*. With the snayles, or rather tortoyfes of this Ilande, many leprous men are healed and clenfed of theyr leprositie. Departing sodainly from hense by reason of the contagioufnes of the ayre, he sayled. CCCCLXXX. [four hundred and eighty] myles towarde the Weste southwest, which is the myddeft betwene the weste and the southe. There was he so vexed with maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of Iune) that his shippes were almoſte sette on fyre. The hoopes of his barrells cracked and brake, and the fresshe water ranne owte. The men also complayned that they were not able to abyde that extremitie of heate. Here the northe pole was eleuate only. v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of. viii. dayes in the which he suffered these extremities, only the fyrst day was fayre: but all the other, cloudy and rainy: yet neuerthelesse feruent hotte. Wherefore it oftentimes repented hym not a little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge tossed in these dangiours and vexations eyght contynuall dayes, at the lengthe an Eastfoutheaste wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his sayles. Which wynde folowinge directly towarde the weste, he fownde the starres ouer that parallele, placed in other order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the Admirall hym selfe towlde me. And they al affirme, that within three dayes saylinge, they fownde moste temperate and pleasaunte ayer. The Admirall also affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and vnholsome ayer, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of Iuly, the watcheman lookyng forth of the toppecastell of the greatest shyppe, cryed owte alowde for ioy that he espyed three exceedyng hyghe mountaynes: Exhortinge his felowes to bee of good cheere, and put away all pensuenes. For they were very heauy and sorowfull, as well for the greefe which they susteyned by reason of th[e]intollerable heate, as also that their fresshe water sayled them, which ranne owte at the ryftes of the barels, caused by extreme heate as we haue sayde. Thus beinge wel comforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet at theyr fyrst approche, they coulde not arryue by reason of the shalownes of the sea nere the shore. Yet lookyng owte of theyr shippes, they might wel perceaue that the Region was inhabyted and well cultured. For they sawe very fayre gardens, and pleasaunte medowes:

The furie of
guarionexius

The thyrde vyage
of Colonus the
Admirall.

Frenche men
pyrats.

The Iland of
Madera.

The Admirall
[s]ayleth to the
Equinoctiall.

xiii. Ilandes of
Hesperides, now
cauled Cabouerde

Healyng of the
leper.

Contagious ayre
and extreme heate

The pole eleuate.
v. degrees.

29
The starres placed
in other order.

A sea rysyng lyke
a mountayne.

Heate causeth the
barrells to breke.

Swete sauours
proceedynge
frome the lande.

The Iland of Puta.
People of [goodly]
corporature and
longe heare nere
the Equinoctiall.

The higher the
coulde.

Difference
betwene people of
one clime.
Ethiopia.

Note the cause of
difference.

Musical
instrumentes.

30

The violent course
of the water from
the Easte to the
Weste.

The goulfe cauled
Os Draconis.
A conflict betwene
the freshe water
and the salte.

A sea of fresh
water.

Marmasets and
monkeys.

frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the mornynge dewes beganne to ryse, there proceeded manye fweete fauoures. Twentic myles distant from hense, they chaunced into a hauen, verye apte to harborowe shippes, but it had no ryuer runninge into it. Saylinge on yet sumwhat further, he fownde at the lengthe a commodious hauen wherin he might repayre his shippes and make prouision of fresshe water and fuell. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Futa*. They fownd no houses nere vnto the hauen: but innumerable steppes of certein wilde beastes feete, of the which they fownde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowyng, they sawe a Canoa comynge a farre of, hauinge in it. xxiii. younge men of godly corporature and high stature, al armed with targets, bowes and arowes. The heare of theyr heds, was longe and plaine, and cutte on the forheade much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priuie partes were couered with filletes of goffampyne cotton, of fundry coloures enterlaced: And were befyde al ouer naked. Here the Admirall confideringe with hym selfe the corporature of this people and nature of the lande, he beleaued the same to bee soo much the nerer heauen then other Regions of the same paralelle, and further remoued from the grosse vapours of the vales and marysshes, howe muche the hygheste toppes of the byggest mountaynes are distante from the deepe vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer wente owte of the paralelles of Ethiope: So greate difference is there betwene the nature of th[e]inhabitanes and of the foyles of dyuers Regions all vnder one clyme or paralelle: as is to see betwene the people and regions being in the firme lande of Ethiope, and theym of the Ilandes vnder the same clime, hauinge the pole starre eleuate in the same degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare curld more lyke wulle then heare. But these people of the Iland of *Put*a (beinge as I haue fayde vnder the clyme of Ethiope) are whyte, with longe heare, and of yelowe colour. Wherefore it is apparente, the cause of this soo greate difference, to bee rather by the disposition of the earthe, then constitucion of heauen. For wee knowe, that snowe fauleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall or burnt lynes, and the same to endure there continually: We knowe lykewyse that th[e]inhabitanes of the Regions farre distante frome that lynes towarde the northe, are molested with greate heate.

¶ The Admirall that he myght allure the younge men to him with gentelnes, shewed them lokyng glasses, fayre and bright vesselles of copper, haukes belles, and suche other thynges vnknown to them. But the more they were cauled, so much the more they suspected crafte and deceate, and fledde backwarde. Yet dyd they with greate admiracion beholde owre men and theyr thynges, but styll hauinge their ores in theyr handes redy to flye. When the Admirall sawe that he coulde by no meanes allure them by gyftes, he thought to proue what he coulde do with muscalle instrumentes: and therefore commaunded that they which were in the greatest shippe, shulde play on theyr drummes and shalmes. But the younge men supposinge this to bee a token of battayle, lefte theyr ores, and in the twyn[k]lyng of an eye hadde put theyr arrowes in theyr bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus directinge theyr arrowes towarde owre men, stoode in expectacion to knowe what this noyse myght meane. Owre men lykewise preparinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approched toward them by lyttle and lyttle. But they departinge from the Admirals shippe, and trustinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came soo neare one of the lesse shippes, that one of theym plucked the cloke from the gouernour of that shippe, and as wel as they coulde by signes, requyred hym to coome alande, promysinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they sawe hym goo to the Admirals shippe whether he went to aske leaue that he might common with them, suspectinge hereby fume further deceate, they lept immediatly into the Canoa, and fledde as swyft as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherefore the Admirall thought it not conuenient to bestowe any longe tyme there, at this vyage. No greate space frome this Ilande, euer towarde the weste, the Admirall faith he fownde so owteragious a faule of water, runninge with such a violence from the Easte to the Weste, that it was nothyng inferioure to a myghty streame faulyng from hyghe mountaynes. He also confessed, that since the fyrst daye that euer he knewe what the sea mente, he was neuer in suche feare. Proceedinge yet sumwhat further in this dangerous vyage, he fownde certeyne goulfes of. viii. myles, as it had byn the[er]nterance of fume greate hauen, into the which, the sayde violent streames dyd faule. These goulfes or streyghtes, he cauled *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Iland directly ouer ageynste the same, he named *Margarita*. Owte of these streyghtes, isshewed no lesse force of fresshe water: whiche encounteringe with the faulte, dyd stryue to passe foorth: Soo that betwene bothe the waters, was no smaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulfe, at the lengthe he fownde the water therof very fresshe and good to drynke. The Admirall hym selfe, and they which were his companions in this vyage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in searching for these matters, towlde me yet of a greater thyng. That is, that for the space of. xxvi. leaques, amountynge to a hundreth and foure myles, he fayled euer by fresshe water: In so muche, that the further he proceeded, especially towarde the west, he affirmeth the water to bee the fressher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely with moonkeys or marmasets on that part towarde the East. For that fyde was rowgh with rockye and stony mountains: And therefore not inhabyted with men. Yet they that went alande to searche the countrey, fownde nere vnto the sea, many fayre fieldes well tyllid and fowen: But noo people, nor yet houses or cotages. Parhappes they were

gone further into the countrey to fowe theyr corne and applye theyr husbandry, as wee often see owre husbande men to leaue theyr stations and vylages for the same purpose. In the weste fyde of that mountayne, they espyed a large playne, whither they made haste, and cast anker in the brode ryuer. As soone as the inhabitantes had knowlege that a strange nation was arryued in theyr coastes, they came flockinge withowte all feare to see owre men. We vnderstode by theyr fynges and poyntynges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very large: In so muche that the further it reacheth towarde the weste, to be so muche the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therefore, takynge into his shyppe foure of the men of that lande, searched the weste partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleasauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they saw dayly more and more as they sayled, they coniectured that these thynges portended sum great matter: As in dedde their opinion sayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The soonne not yet ryfen, but beginninge euen now to ryse, beinge one day allured by the pleasauntnes of the place and swete fauours which breathed from the land to the shippes, they went alande. Here they fownde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men approached towarde them, there came certeine messengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kynges of the countrey, to desyre the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to coome to theyr palayces withowte feare, and that they and al theirs shulde bee at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuse for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the shippes: hauyng for the most parte cheynes abowte theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heades, and brafelettes on theyr armes of pearles of India: And that so commonlye, that owre women in playes and tryumphes haue not greater plentie of flones of glasse and crystall in theyr garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and fuche other tyrements. Beinge asked where they gathered them, they poynted to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also by certeyne scorneful giestures which they made with theyr mouthes and handes, that they nothyng esteemed perles. Taking also baskettes in theyr handes, they made signes that the same might bee fylled with them in shorte space. But bycause the corne wherwith his shyppes were laden to bee caryed into *Hispaniola*, had taken hurt by reason of the false water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient tyme. Yet he sent to lande two of the shippe boates laden with men, to th[e]intent to fetch sum garlandes of perles for exchange of our thynges, and also sumwhat to searche the nature of the Region and disposition of the people. They enterteyned our men gentelly: and came flockynge to them by heapes, as it hadde byn to beholde some straunge monsters. Fyrste there came to meete owre men, two men of grautie, whome the multitude folowed. One of these was well in age, and the other but younge. They thinke it was the father with his soonne whiche shulde succede hym. When the one had saluted and embrased the other, they brought owre men into a certeyne rownde howse, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate courte. Hether were brought many chayers and stooles made of a certeyne blacke woodde, and very cooninglye wrowght. After that owre men, and theyr Princes were sette, theyr wayting men came in laden, some with fundry delicate dyffshes, and some with wyne. But theyr meate, was only fruites: and those of dyuers kyndes and vtterly vnknownen to vs. Theyr wyne was both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruites, and very pleasaunte in drynkyng. After this banquette made in the owlde mans howse, the younge man brought them to his tabernacle or mancion place, where was a greate company bothe of men and women, but they floode deceauered the one from the other. They are whyte, euen as owre men are, fauyng fuche as are much conuersant in the sonne. They are also very gentyll, and full of humanitie towarde strangiers. They couer theyr pryuie partes with gossampine cotton wrowght with fundry coloures: and are beyde all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not eyther a collar, a cheyne, or a brafelette of golde and pearles, and many had all. Beinge asked where they had that golde, they poynted to certeyne mountaynes, seemyng with theyr countenance to diffuade owre men from goinge thither. For puttinge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynninge as though they bytte the same, sylle poyntinge to the mountaynes, they seemed to insinuate that men were eaten there: But whether they mente by the Canibales, or wylde beastes owre men cowlde not well perceau. They tooke it excedinge greeuouslye, that they coulde nother vnderstande owre men, nor owre men them. When they which were sente to lande, were returned to the shippes abowte three of the clocke at after noone the same daye, bringinge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of pearles, they loosed theyr ankers to departe, myndinge to coome ageyne shortly, when all thynges were sette in good order in *Hispaniola*. But he was preuented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his trauallye. He was also hyndered at this tyme by reason of the shalownes of the sea and violent course of the water, which with continual tossing, brooked the greatest ship as often as any great gale of wynde arose. To auoyde the daungiors of fuche shalowe places, and shelves, he euer sent one of the sinaulest caruelles before, to try the way with foundinge: and the byggest shyppes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the space of CCXXX. [two hundred and thirty] myles, are cauled of th[e]inhabitantes, *Cumana*, and *Manacapana*: from these regions distant three score leaques, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposinge sylle that it had byn an Ilande, and doutinge that he

The fayre and large region of *paria*.

Temperate ayer and fruitful grounde.

Swete sauours proceedynge frome the lande.

Humayne people.

Cheynes and garlandes of gold and perles

31

Baskettes ful of pearles, I knowe who had bags ful

Howe the Admirals men were enterteyned.

Cheyers and stoles of hebene.

Fruites and wyne.

Wyne of the lycour of fruites.

Whyte men nere the Equinoctial

Mountaynes are the matrices of golde.

Canibales

Shalownes of the sea.

The vse of careuelles or brigantines.

Cumana and Manacapana regions of the prouince of *Paria*. *Curiana*.

A ryuer of
maruelous depth
and bredth.

A sea of weedes.
Lentiscus.
Mastix.

32

The elenation of
the pole at Paria.

Note a secreate
as concerning the
pole starre.

An experience

A maruelous
secreate.

That the earth is
not perfectly
rownde.

Paradise is in the
mountaynes of
paria.

Looke the ninth
booke seconde
decade.

Paria is part of
the firme lande of
india

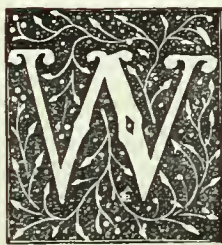
Tyme reuealeth al
things

Paria more
southwarde then
hispaniola

The spanyardes
rebell in the
Admirals absence

might passe by the Weste to the Northe directlye to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of. xxx. cubettes depthe, and of such breadth as hath not lyghtly byn harde of. For he affirmeth it to bee. xxviii. leaques. A lyttle further toward the Weste, yet fowthwarde as the bending of the shorc requyred, he entered into a fea full of herbes or weedes. The feede of the herbes whiche swymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree cauled *Lentiscus*, which beareth the sweete gumme cauled *Mastix*. They grewe foo thicke, that they fumetyme in maner stayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thorowghe owte all the yeare muche longer or shorter then an other: And that the Northe pole is here eleaute onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. Hee also declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the northe pole: The which because they seeme contrarye to th[e]oppinions of all the Astronomers, I wyll touche them but with a drye foote as fayth the prouerbe. But it is wel knowen (moste noble prince) that the starre which we caule the pole starre, or northe starre, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynte of the pole Artyke vppon the whiche the axes or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thyng may well be proued, if when the starres fyrst appeare, yowe beeholde the pole starre through any narowe hole. For foo, applynge yowre instrument therto in the morninge fowthwarde before the daye spryng haue blemysht theyr lyght, yf then yowe looke through the same hole, yowe shall perceaue it to bee moued from the place where yowe faueit fyrst. But howe it commeth to passe, that at the beginnyng of the euenyng twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of Iune, and in the morninge twylyght to bee eleuate. xv. degrees by the same quaadrante, I doo not vnderstande. Nor yet doo the reafons which he bringeth, in any poynt fatyffye me. For he fayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectly rownde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape reyed theron, much hygher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he faith) it is not rownde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thynke) but rather lyke a peare as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which possesseth the supereminente or hyghest parte thereof nerefte vnto heauen. In foo muche that he earnestly contendeth, the earthly Paradyse to bee situate in the toppes of those three hylles, which wee fayde beefore, that the watche man sawe owte of the toppe castell of the shippe: And that the outrageous streames of the freshe waters whiche foo violently isshewe owte of the fayde goulfes and stryue foo with the falte water, faule headlonge from the toppes of the fayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue fayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therfore returne to the historye from which we haue dygrefsed. When he perceaued hym selfe to bee thus inwrapped in foo greate a goulfe beyonde his expectacion, foo that he had now no hope to fynde any passage towarde the northe whereby he myght sayle directly to *Hispaniola*, he was enforced to turne backe the same way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *Hispaniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the Easte. They which afterwarde searched this lande more curiouslye, wyll it to bee parte of the continente or firme lande of India, and not of *Cuba* as the Admirall supposyd. For there are many which affirme that they haue sayled rownd about *Cuba*. But whether it bee fo or not, or whether enuyng the good fortune of this man, they seeke occasiōs of querelinge ageynste hym, I can not iudge: But tyme shall speake, which in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falsehod. But whether *Paria* be Contiente or not, the Admirall dothe not muche contende. But he supposeth it to bee Contiente. He also affirmeth that *Paria* is more southwarde then *Hispaniola*, by eyght hundreth fourescore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hispaniola* (to see his fouldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the yeare 1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,) amonge his foo many prosperous, pleasaunte, and luckye affayres, fortune mengeled fume feedes of wormewoodde, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of coccle.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to the same Lodouike Cardinall. etc.



When the Admirall was nowe come to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, he fownde all thynges confounded and owte of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom wee spake beefore) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trustinge to the multitude of such as were confethered with him. And not onely behaued hym selfe proudly ageynst the Admiralles brother and Lieuetenaunt fumtyme his maister, but also sente letters to his reproche to the kynge of Spayne, therin accusyng bothe the brethren, leying heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, sent messengers to the kynge, which myght informe hym of theyr rebellion: Instantly defyringe his grace, to sende hym a newe supplye of men, wherby he myght suppress the licentiousnes and

punyshe them for theyr mischeuous actes. They accused the Admirall and his brother to bee vniust men, cruel enemies and sheaders of the Spanyshe bludde: declarynge that vpon euery lyght occasion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleasure therin. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wylde beastes reioynginge in bludde, also the kynges enemyes. Affyrminge lykewyse that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vsurpe Th[e]mpire of the Ilandes: whiche thyng (they sayde) they suspected by a thousand coniectures. And especially in that they wolde permitte none to reforte to the golde mynes, but only fuche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he defyred ayde of the kyng to infringe theyr insolencie, auouched that al those his accusers, which had deuifed fuche lyes ageynste hym, were nowghtye felowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruffians aduouterers and rauifhers of women, faulfe periured vagabundes, and fuche as had byn eyther conuict in pryfons, or fledde for feare of Iudgment: soo escaping punyschement, but not leauinge vice wherin they styll contynued and browght the fame with them to the Ilande, luyng there in lyke maner as before, in thefte, lechery, and all kyndes of myscheefe: And soo gyuen to Idlenes and sleepe, that wheras they were browght thither for myners, labourers, and scullyans, they wolde not nowe goo one furlonge from theyr houfes except they were borne on mens backes, lyke vnto them whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miserable Ilande men, whom they handeled moste cruelly. For leaste theyr handes shulde discontinued from sheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr strenght and manhod, they vsed nowe and then for theyr pastyme to stryue amonge them felues and proue who coulde most cleanly with his swoorde at one stroke stryke of the heade of an innocente. Soo that he which coulde with moste agilitie make the heade of one of those poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the grounde at one stroke, he was the best man and counted moste honorable. These thynges and many fuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kyng. Whyle these thynges were doinge, the Admirall fente his brother the lieuetenaunt with an army of foure score and tenne footemen, and a fewe horsemen, (with three thousande of the Ilande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguaua*, with Kyng *Guarionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myscheefe to owre men and fuche as faouored them. Therefore when the Lieuetenaunt had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne greate ryuer runnyng by the playne which we sayd before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of *Ciguaua* and the sea, he fownde two scoutes of his enemyes lurkinginge in certeyne bushes: wherof the one, castyng hym selfe head longe into the sea, escaped: and by the mouthe of the ryuer swamme ouer to his companyons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other side the ryuer, there lay in campe fyxe thousande Ciguauians redy, vnwares to assaile owre men passyng bye. Wherfore the Lieuetenaunte fyndyng a shalowe place where he myght passe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thyng when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng owte of the wooddes with a terrible crye and moste horrible aspect, much lyke vnto the people cauled *Agathyrsi* of whom the poete virgile speaketh. For they were all paynted and spotted with fundry coloures, and especiall with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne fruites nooryshed for the same purpose in theyr gardens, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them felues from the foreheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wretched and rowled after a thousande fasshions. A man wold thinke them to bee deuylles incarnate newly broke owte of hell, they are soo lyke vnto helhoundes. As owre men waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them and hurled dartes soo thicke, that it almoste tooke the lyght of the sonne from owre men. In so much that if they had not borne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gone wronge with them. Yet at the length, many beinge wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer, which thyng when the enemies sawe, they fledde: whome owre men persuinge, slewe fume in the chafe: but not many, by reason of theyr fvyftenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they shotte at owre men more safely. For they beinge accustomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, passed through the bushes and shrubbes as it had byn wylde bores or hartes: wheras owre men were hyndered by reason of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherfore, when he had rested there all that nyght in vayne, and the daye folowyng sawe none sterunge in the wooddes, he went (by the counsel and conducte of the other Ilande men which were in his armye) immediatly from thense, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe mansion place in the vylage cauled *Capronum*, by the which name also, the kynges palaice was cauled, beinge in the same vylage. Thus marchyng forward with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the vylage of an other kyng, which th[e]inhabitantes had forsaken for feare of owre men. Yet makyng diligent searce, they fownde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiobanexius* in his palaice of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thousand Ciguauians. At the Lieuetenantes fyrst approche, he durst not gyue them battayle vntyll he had fumwhat better searched the Region: Yet did he in the meane tyme skyrmysshe with them twyse. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he sent furth scoutes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the country. Whom the Ciguauians espyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them felues

33

The Spanyardes
accuse the
Admirall.The Admirales
answere.Insolencie and
idlenes of libertie.These had the
custodies of the
temples.A cruel and
deuelyshe
pastyme.Kyng
Guarionexius is
capitaine of. vi.
thousand
Ciguauians.*Picti Agathyrsi.*
Naked men
painted with the
ioyce of certen
fruites.
Heere made long
and black by arte.The vse of
targettes.
The Ciguauians
are dryuen to
flyght.

34

Kyng
Maiobanexius.An army of viii.
thousand
Ciguauians.

A Larome.

The Ciguauians
put to flyght
ageineThe Lieuetenaunt
his ambassage
to kynge
Maiobanexius.Kynge
GuarionexiusMaiobanexius his
answere.
Natural hatred
of vyce.The
Lieuetenautes
gentelnes toward
maiobanexius35
A rare faythfulnes
in a barbarous
kynge.The
Lieuetenautes
messengers are
slayne.Al the kir ges are
dryuen to flyght.

to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their maner: but yet durst not coome owte of the wooddes, supposing that the Lieuetenaunt with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowynge, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owt of the wooddes, they twyse attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assaying owre men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye before they coude cooner them with theyr targettes. Yet owre men put them to flyght, flewe many, and tooke many. The refydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them styll as in their mooste safe houlde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, and wyth hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiobanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieuetenaunt brought not hether his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynst yowe or yowre people: For he greatly desyreth yowre frendeshippe. But his entent is, that *Guarionexius* who hath perswaded yowe to bee his ayde ageynste hym to the greate destruction of yowre people and vndoynge of yowre countrey, may haue dewe correction afwell for his difobedience towarde him, as also for rayfing tumultes amonge the people. Wherefore, he requyreth yowe and exorteth yowe, to delyuer *Guarionexius* into his handes. The which thyng yf yowe shall performe, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admitte yowe to his frendeshippe, but also enlarge and defende yowre dominion. And if herein yowe refuse to accomplysse his requeste, it wyll folowe, that yowe shall shortelye repent yowe therof. For yowre kyngedome shall be wasted with swoorde and fyer, and yowe shall abyde the fortune of warre wherof yowe haue had experience with fauour, as you shall further know here after to yowre payne, yf with stobernes yowe prouoke hym to shewe the vttermooste of his poure. When the messenger had thus doone his errante, *Maiobanexius* answered, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe: And therefore he thought hym worthy his ayde: especially in as muche as he fledde to hym for succoure, and that he had made him such promesse, whom also he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyne, that they were nawghty men, violent and cruell, desyringe other mens gooddes, and fuche as spared not to sheede innocentes bludde: In fyne, that he wolde not haue to doo with fuche myscheuous men, nor yet enter into frendeshippe with them. When these thynges came to the Lieuetenautes eare, he commaunded the vylage to be burnt where he hym selfe encamped, with many other vylages there abowte. And when he drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he sent messengers to him ageyne, to common the matter with hym, and to wyll hym, to sende fume one of his mooste feythful frendes to entreate with hym of peace. Where vpon the kynge sent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieuetenautes presence, he frendly requyred hym to perswade his lord and master in his name, and earnestly to admonyshe hym, not to suffer his floryfinge kyngedome to bee spoyled, or hym selfe to abyde the hafarde of warre for *Guarionexius* sake: And further to exhorte hym to delyuer hym, excepte he wolde procure the destruction bothe of hym selfe, his people, and his countrey. When the messenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* assembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried owte on hym to delyuer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curse the daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to disturbe theyr quietnes. *Maiobanexius* answered them, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, and had well deserued of him, giuinge hym many princely presentes: And had also tawght both his wyfe and hym to synge and daunce, whiche thyng he dyd not lyttle esteeme. And was therefore fully resolued in no case to forsake hym, or ageynste all humanitie to betraye his frende whiche fledde to hym for succoure: but rather to abyde al extremities with him, then to minister occasion of obloquye to slaunderses to reporte that he had betrayed his geste whom he tooke into his house with warranties. Thus dismissinge the people fighinge and with forowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* before hym, promysinge hym ageyne, that he wolde bee partaker of his fortune whyle lyfe lasted. In so muche that he thought it not beste to sende any further woorde to the Lieuetenaunt: but appoynted hym whome before he sent to hym, to keepe the way with a garryfon of men, to th[e] intent that if any messengers shulde be sent from the Lieuetenaunt, to fleye them by the way, and admitte none to communication or further entretie of peace. In the meane tyme, the Lieuetenaunt sent twoo, wherof the one was a captiue Ciguauian, and the other an Ilande man of them which were frendes to owre men: They were bothe taken and slayne. The Lieuetenaunt folowed them onely with ten footemen and foure horsemen. Fyndinge his messengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to wrathe, and determyned more extremely to deale with *Maiobanexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontinently with his hole army to his cheefe palaice of *Capronum* where he yet laye in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, euery man his way, and forooke theyr capitayne *Maiobanexius*: who also with all his famelye, fledde to the rowgh mountaynes. Sum of the Ciguauians, fowght for *Guarionexius* to fleye hym, for that he was the cause of all these troubles. But his feete faued his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where he lurked in maner alone amonge the desolate rockes.

Whereas nowe the Lieuetenautes souldiers were forweryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunger, (for it was nowe three moonethes fence the warres beganne) many desyred leaue to departe to the towre of Conception, where they had graneges and exercised tyllage. He gaue them theyr passeportes with allowance of vytayles, soo that only thyrtye remayned with hym. These three moonethes warre, they

contynued very paynefull and myferablye: Soo that duryng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only *Cazibi*: that is, fuche rootes whereof they make theyr breade, and that but fyldome to theyr fyll: Also *Vfias*, that is, lyttle beastes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke fume with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, such as they fownde, fumtyme fweete, and fumtyme muddy faueringe of the maryffhes. Emonge these delicates, that lyttle fleepe that they had, was euer for the moſte parte abroad vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchemen, and in contynual remoouinge as the nature of warre requyreth. With these fewe therefore, the Lieuetenaunt determined to ſearche the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the ſteppes of *Maiobanexius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certeyne of his menne (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chaunced vppon twoo of *Maiobanexius* familyers, whiche were ſent to certeyne vylages of his, to make prouifion of breade. These he enforced to declare where theyr lord lay hydde. And vſed the ſame alſo for guides to bringe owre men to the place. Twelue of owre men tooke this enterpryſe in hand, painting them ſelues after the maner of the Ciguaiians. Soo that by this ſtratageme or policie, they came ſodenly vppon *Maiobanexius*, and tooke hym priſoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conueighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieuetenaunt. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to coome owte of the dennes: whome, certeyne of the people fearinge the Lieuetenaunt, bewrayde to owre hunters. The Lieuetenaunt beinge certified hereof, ſent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambuſhe vntyll fuche tyme as *Guarionexius* wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then ſoodenly to intrappe hym. They went as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and browght hym awaye with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere abowte, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to *Maiobanexius*, and wyfe to an other kynge whoſe dominion was yet vntouched, folowed hym in al theſe aduerſities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayreſt and moſte bewetifull that euer nature browght forth in the Ilande. Whom, when the kynge her huſbande who loued her moſte ardently (as her bewetie deſerued) harde ſaye that ſhee was taken priſoner he wandered vppe and downe the deſertes lyke a man owte of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or ſaye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieuetenaunte, promyſinge moſte faythfully that he wold ſubmitte hym ſelfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, ſoo that he wolde reſtore hym his wyfe. The Lieuetenant accepted the condition and reſtored him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentelmen which he had taken priſoners before: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kynge, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieuetenaunt, bringyng with hym fyue thouſande men without weapons, ſauynge onely fuche instrumentes as they vſe in tyllage of theyr grownde. He browght with hym alſo, feedes to ſowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he cauſed fuche plentie of theyr corne and fruites to growe in fundry places of the large vale whereof wee ſpake before, that ſhortely after, were ſeene manye fayre and fruitfull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieuetenaunte with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguaiians, it mooued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vppon they came togyther to the Lieuetenaunt with humble ſubmiſſion and faythful promeſſe euer after to bee vnder his obedience: deſyryng hym to reſtore vnto them theyr kynge, with his familie. At theyr requeſte, the kynges wyfe and his houſeholde was ſette at Libertie, but he kepte ſtyll as a priſoner. Theſe thynges dyd the Lieuetenaunt in the Ilande, not yet knowinge what his aduerſaries and accuſers had layde to his charge before the kynge of Spayne: who beinge diſquyeted with theyr querelinges and accuſacions, and eſpecially for that by reaſon of theyr diſcention, of ſoo greate abundaunce of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle browght into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which ſhuld ſee a redreſſe in theſe thinges: And eyther to punyſhe fuche as were faultie, or elles to fende them to hym. What was fownde ageynſte the Admirall and his brother, or ageynſt his aduerſaries whiche accuſed hym, I doo not wel knowe. But this I am ſure of, that both the brethrene are taken, browght, and caſt in priſon, with their goodes conſiſcate. But as ſoone as the kynge vnderſtoode that they were browght bounde to Cales, he ſent meſſengers in poſte, with commaundement that they ſhulde bee loofed and coome freely to his preſence: wherby he declared that he tooke theyr troubles greeuouſlye. It is alſo ſayde, that the newe gouernoure ſent letters to the kynge, wrytten with the Admiralles hande in ſtraunge and vnknownen ſypheringes, to his brother the Lieuetenaunt beinge abſente, wyllynge hym to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to coome and ayde hym if the Gouernoure ſhulde profer hym any violence. Wherof the gouernour hauinge knowlege (as he ſaythe) beinge alſo aduertified that the Lieuetenaunt was gonne to his brother before the men which he had prepared were in a redynes, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude came togyther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moſte trewe and prudent Iudge, wyl declare. Thus fare ye well.

The Spanyardes are painful in the warres.

A desperate aduerture with xxx. men

A polic[i]e. Kynge Maiobanexius is taken.

Guarionexius is taken.

36
A Bewtifull woman.

A kynge ſendeth the lieuetenaunt fyue thousand men to tyll the grownde.

The kynges ſubmit themſelues to the Lieuetenaunt

A newe gouernour of the ilande.

An vnwoorthy rewarde for ſoo greate paynes.

THE EYGHTH BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Cardinall Lodouike.



The greate, ryche, and plentiful Ocean fea, heretofore vnknown, and nowe fownde by *Christophorus Colonus* the Admyrall, by th[e]autoritie and furtherance of the Catholyke kynge, I haue presentet vnto yowre honoure (ryght noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnwoorkmanly wrought. But yowe shall nowe receaue a precious iewell to bee appendaunt therto. Therefore emonge fuche as were pylottes or gouernoures vnder the Admyrall, and had dylygently marked the courfes and differences of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the kynge to feeke further of theyr owne charges, vppon condicion to pay hym faithfully his portion, which is the fyft parte. But bycause emonge all other, one *Petrus Alphonsus* (cauled *Nignus* by his furname) fayled towarde the Southe with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake sumwhat of his vyage. He therefore, with only one shippe, well furnyshed at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte with commaundement in no case to caste anker paste fyftie leaques distante from any place where the Admyrall hadde touched, fayled fyrste to *Paria* where the Admyrall fownde bothe the men and women soo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and braselettes of pearles, as wee haue fayde before. Coastynge therefore alonge by the fame shore accordinge to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*) he came to the Region which th[e]inhabitanes thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he fownd a hauen (as he faythe) mucche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cales*. In to the which enteringe, he fawe a farre of certeyne howfes on the shore, and perceaued when he drewe nere, that it was a vylage of onely eyght howfes. Proceadyng yet further for the space of thre myles, he espyed an other vylage well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyftie naked men on a coompany hauinge with them a certeyne ruler, who desyred Alphonsus to coome to theyr coastes. He browght with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pynnes, nedels, braselettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet stones and glasses, and fuch other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for. xv. vneces of theyr pearles which they wore abowte theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more earnestly desyred him to sayle to theyr coastes: Promysynge hym that he shulde there haue as many pearles as he wolde desyre. He conde[f]cended to their requeste: And the daye folowyng, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multytude of people resorted to hym, instantly requyringe hym to coome alande. But when he consydered the innumerable multytude of people which was there assembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his coompany, he durste not comnyt hym felse to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderstand by signes and tokens that they shulde coome to the shyppe with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Iland caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the Ilandes: yet more rude, and not soo artificially as theyrs are. These they caule *Gallitas*: They swarmed therefore to the shyp as faste as they myght, brynginge with them great plentie of pearles (which they caule *Tenoros*) exchaunginge the fame for owre marchaundies. He fownde this people to bee of gentyl nature, simple and innocente, beinge conuerfant with them in theyr houses, for the space of. xx. dayes. Theyr houses are made of woodde, couered with the leaues of date trees. Theyr meate for the moste parte, is the shelyffshes in the whiche pearles are engendred, wherof theyr sea coastes are ful. They haue also greate plentie of wylde beastes, as hartes, wylde bores, and coonys lyke vnto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke doues also, and turtle doues. Lykewyfe geese and duckes which they nooryshe in theyr houses as wee doo. Peacockes flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not distinct with fundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke vnto the hennes. These people of *Curiana*, are craftie hunters and exceding cunning archers, soo that they wyll not lyghtly mysse any beast or byrde that they shoote at. Owre men consumed certeyne dayes here very plefauntely. Duryng which tyme, who soo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the fame, foure pynnes. He that brought a pheafaunt, had twoo: And for a stocke doue or turtle doue, one: And for a goofe, a fmaul lookyng glasse or a lyttle stone of glasse. Thus they bought and foulded with proferyng and byddyng, denyng and refusinge as it had byn in a greate market. When pynnes were profered them, they asked what they shulde doo with them, beinge naked. But owre men fatiffied them with a craftie answere, declaring by tokens that they were very necessary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thornes owte of theyr fleshe. But aboue al thynges haukes belles were most esteemed amonge them, for theyr founde and faire coloure: And wolde therefore gyue much for one of them. Owre men lodginge in theyr houses, harde in the nyght feason horryble noyses and rorynges of wylde beastes in the wooddes which are full of excedinge greate and hygh trees of fundry kyndes. But the beastes of these

The Ocean sea
heretofore
vnknown.

Shipmasters vnder
the Admiral.

The fyft. portion
dewe to the kynge.

37

The nauigation of
Petrus Alphonsus.
Paria.

Cumana.
Manacapana.
Curiana.

Perles for tryfels.

Great plentie of
pearles
Humayne people.

Shel fyshes in
which perles are
engendred.
Beastes and
foules.

Hunters and
archers.

Theyr maner of
bargenyng

The vse of pynnes.

Haukes bels in
great estimation.

Rorynges of wylde
beastes

wooddes, are not noyfome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with theyr bowes and arrowes: Yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn flayne of any wylde beaste. As many hartes or wylde bores as owre men wolde defyre them to brynge, they wolde kyll in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to brynge them. They lacke kyne, goates, and sheepe. Theyr breade is made of rootes, as is theyrs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare, grosse and fumwhat curlde, yet longe also. They keepe theyr teeth very whyte: And for that purpose vse to cary a certeine herbe betwene theyr lypes for the most parte of the day, and to wasshe theyr mouthes when they cast it away. The women doo all theyr bufynes at home in theyr howses, and haue also the cure of tyllage of the grounde. But the men apply them selues to the warres and huntyng, to playe, fyinge and daunfing. They haue fundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges, and drinckinge cuppes made of earthe in other places abowt theym and brought thether for exchange of other thynges: For they vse fayres and markettes for the same purpose: and are gretly defyrous of such thynges, as are not brought forth or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a disposition to al men to defyre and bee dellyted with newe and strange thynges. Many of them, had hangyng at theyr pearles, the Images of certeine beastes and birdes very artificiously made of golde, but not pure. These also are brought them from other places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wherof they are made, is natiue, and of much lyke finenes to that wherof the florenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, inclose theyr priuie members in a gourde, cutte after the fashon of a coddepiece: or els, couer the same with the shelle of a tortoyfe, tyed abowt theyr loynes with laces of goffampine cotton. In other places of that tract, they thrust the fynew within the sheethe therof, and bynde the skinne fast with a stringe. The greate wylde beastes wherof wee spake before, and many other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes, testifie that this region is part of the continent or firme land. But the chiefeft coniecture wherby they argue the same, is, that by the coastes of that lande, from *Paria* towarde the weste, they sayled aboute three thousande myles, fyndyng no signe or token of any ende. These people of *Curiana* (whiche sum caule *Curtana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde suche plentie of golde, signified that it was brought them from a Region cauled *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, beinge distant from them fyxe foonnes, that is, fyxe dayes iourney westwarde: And that theyr Images of golde, were made in the same Region. Where vppon owre men directed theyr vyage thither immediatly: and arryued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ a thousande and fyue hundreth. The people of the countrey reforted to them withoute feare, bryngyng with them of the golde which we sayde to bee natyue in that Region. This people had also collers of pearles abowt theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frome *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchange any of those thinges which they had owte of other countreys: as nother the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles. Yet amonge the Canchietans, they fownde but little gold redy gathered. They toke with them from thense, certen very fayre marmafets or munkeys, and many poppingayes of fundry coloures. In the monethe of Nouember, the ayer was there most temperate, and nothyng coulde. The guardens of the north pole, were owte of fyght to bothe these people, they are soo nere to the Equinoctiall. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accompte. These people, are wel disposed men, of honest condicions, and nothyng suspitious. For all most all the nyght longe, they reforted to the shippe with theyr boates, and went aboorde ship withowte feare, as dyd the Curians. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are fumwhat ielyous. For, when any straungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd them. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the goffampine trees growe of them selues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and salowes. And therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherwith they couer theyr pryuie partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet sayled on forwarde by the same coastes, there came foorth ageynste them abowt two thousande men, armed after theyr maner, forbydding them to coome aland. These people were soo rude and saluage, that owre men coulde by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Owre men therefore, contented only with their pearles, returned backe the same way they came: where they remayned with the Curians continually for the space of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellies wel with good meate. And here it seemeth to me, not farre from my purpose, to declare what chaunced vnto them in theyr returne, when they came nowe within the fyght of the coaste of *Paria*. They happened therefore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee spake before) to meete with a nauie of. xviii. Canoas of Canibales which went a rouyng to hunt for men. Who as soone as they had espyed owr men, assailed theyr shippe fiercely and without feare enclosed the same, disturbing owre men on euery fyde with theyr arrowes. But owre men so feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom owre menne folowinge with the shippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with hym, an other man bownde: Who, with teares runninge downe his cheekes, and with giesture of his handes, eyes, and heade, signified that fyxe of his coompanyons had byn cruelly cutte in pieces and eaten of that myscheuous nation: and that he shulde haue byn lykewyse handeled the day folowyng. Wherfore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the Canibales owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dryue with

Hartes and wylde bores.

38

Blacke and curlde heare.

White teethe.

Earthen vessels.

Conninge artificers.

Base golde.

A strange maner of coueringe theyr priuities.

Tokens of the continent or firme lande.

The golden Region of Canchieta.

Temperate ayer in Nouember.

The Equinoctiall lyne.

Humane people

Gossampine trees.

Chorlyshe people

Alphonsus returneth to *Paria*.Canibales in the goulfes of *Paria*.

39

Death for death.

Howe the
canibales fortifie
theyr campe

Haraia.

Salte engendred
of the water of
the sea.

Sprynge of salt
water.

The bodies of
princes dried and
reserued

Threescore and
xvi. poundes
weight of perles
for. v. shillynges.
The course of the
sea toward the
weste.

Perles as common
as chaffe
Petrus Alphonsus
in prison.

Orient perles as
bygge as hasel
nuttes.

40

Curiana
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
The Iland of
Margarita.

hande and foote, grinninge and frettinge as it had byn a wylde bore: Thinkynge that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companyons, when he had beaten owte his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what sorte the Canibales were woont to inuade other contreys, he answered that they euer vsed to carye with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where foo euer they lande, they pitche in the grownde, and encampe them selues within the coompasse of the same, to lye the more safely in the nyght feason. In *Curiana*, they fownde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales, nailed ouer the doore of a certeyne gouernoure, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the standerde or helmette taken from the enemye in battayle. In these coastes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Haraia*, in the whiche, greate plentie of salte is gathered after a strange sorte. For the sea beinge there tossed with the poure of the wyndes, dryueth the salte waters into a large playne by the sea fyde: where: afterward when the sea waxeth caulme, and the foonne begynneth to shyne, the water is congeled into moste pure and whyte salte, wherewith innumerable shyppes might bee laden, if men doo reforte thether for the same beefore there faule any rayne. For the rayne melteth it, and causeth it to synke into the sande, and foo by the pores of the earthe, to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other say, that the playne is not fylled from the sea, but of certeyne springes whose water is more sharpe and salt then the water of the sea. Th[e] inhabitants doo greatlye esteeme this bay of salte. Which they vse, not only for theyr owne commoditie, but also woorkinge the same into a square forme lyke vnto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they stretche and drye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, layinge the same vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vnto a hurdle or grediren, with a gentell fyre vnder the same, thus by lyttle and lyttle confuminge the flesshe and keepinge the skynne hole with the bones inclosed therein. These dried carcases, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for theyr householde and famylier goddes. They say that in this place they sawe a man, and in an other place a woman, thus dried and reserued. When they departed from *Curiana*, the. viii. day of the Ides of February to returne to Spayne, they had three score and. xvi. poundes weight (after. viii. vneces to the pounce) of perles, which they bought for exchange of owre thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue shyllinges. Departinge therefore, they consumed three score dayes in theyr iourney (althowgh it were shorter then frome *Hispaniola*) by reason of the contynuall course of the sea into the weste, whiche dyd not only greatlye stey the shippe, but also sumtymes dryue it backe. But at the length they came home foo laden with perles, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the master of the shyppe, *Petrus Alphonsus*, beinge accused of his companyons that he had flowen a great multitude of precious perles, and defrauded the kynge of his portion which was the syueth parte, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of greate lerninge and experience and gouernour of *Gallicia*, where they arryued, and was there kepte in pryson a longe tyme. But he styll denyeth that euer he deteyned anye parte of the perles. Many of these perles were as bygge as hasell nuttes, and oriente, (as we caule it) that is, lyke vnto them of the Easte partes. Yet not of foo greate price, by reason that the holes therof are not foo perfecte. When I my selfe was presente with the ryght honorable duke of *Methyna*, and was bidden to dyner with hym, in the citie of *Ciuile*, they browght to hym aboue a hundreth and twentie vneces of perles to be foulded: which surely did greatlye delyte me with their fayrenes and brightnes. Sum saye, that *Alphonsus* hadde not these perles in *Curiana* beinge distante from *Os Draconis* more then a hundreth and twentie leaques, but that he had them in the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is anye perles fownde in *Curiana*. But sith the matter is yet in controuersie, we wyll passe to other matters. Thus muche yowe haue whereby yowe maye coniecture what commoditie in tyme to coome may bee looked for from these newe landes of the west Ocean, whereas at the fyrste discoueringe, they shewe such tokens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

THE. IX. BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Cardynall Lodouike.



Incentiagnes Pinzonus, and also *Aries Pinzonus*, his neuie, by his brothers fyde, which accompanied the Admiral *Colonus* in his fyrste vyage, and were by him appoynted to bee masters of twoo of the smaule shippes which the Spaniardes caule *Carauelas*, beinge mooued by the greate ryches and amplytude of the new landes, furnyshed of theyr owne charges, foure carauels in the hauen of theyr owne countrey which the Spaniardes caule *Palos*, bortheringe on the weste Ocean. Hauynge therefore the kynges licence and passeporte to departe, they loofed from the hauen, abowte the Calendes of December, in the yeare 1499. This hauen

The nauigation of
Vincentius and
Aries Pinzonus

Licence and
passeporte.

of *Palos* is three score and twelue myles distant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cales*: and three score and foure myles from *Ciuiile*. All th[e]inhabitanes of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly gyuen to searching of the sea, and continually exercyfed in sayling. They also directed theyr vyage fyrst to the Ilandes of Canarie by the Ilandes of *Hesperides*, nowe cauled *Cabouerde*, which sum caule *Gorgodes Meducias*. Saylinge therefore directly towarde the fouth frome that Iland of the *Hesperides* which the Portugales (being possessers of the fame) caule *Sancti Iacobi*, and departinge frome thense at the Ides of Ianuary, they folowed the southwest wynde, beinge in the myddeft betwene the south and the weste. When they supposed that they had sayled aboute three hundrethe leaques by the fame wynde, they say that they loste the fyght of the Northe starre: and were shortelye after, tossed with excedinge tempestes bothe of wynde and sea, and vexed with intollerable heate. Yet sayled they on further (not without greate daunger) for the space of twoo hundrethe and fortie leaques, folowing yet the fame wynde by the lost pole. Wherefore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall lyne or not, let these men and the owlde wryters, aswel Philosphers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these men, affirme it to bee habitable, and maruelously replenished with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reason of the foone beames dependinge perpendicularly or directlye ouer the fame. Yet were there many of the oulde wryters, whiche attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners beinge demaunded, if they sawe the south pole, they answered that they knewe no starre there lyke vnto this pole, that myght be decerned aboute the poynte. But that they sawe an other order of starres, and a certeyne thicke myst rysyng from the horizontall lyne, which greatly hyndered theyr fyght. They contende also, that there is a great heape or rysyng in the myddeft of the earth, which taketh away the fyght of the fouth pole, vntyll they haue vtterly passed ouer the fame. But they verely beleue that they sawe other images of starres, muche differinge from the situation of the starres of owre hemispherie or halfe circle of heauen. Howe soo euer the matter bee, as they informe vs, wee certifie yowe. At the lengthe, the feuenth day of the calendes of Februarye, they espied lande a farre of. And feinge the water of the sea to bee troubelous, foundinge with theyr plummet, they founde it to bee. xvi. fathames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarienge there for the space of twoo dayes, they departed bycause they saw no people sferinge, althowghe they fownde certeyne steppes of men by the sea fyde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the stoncs nere vnto the shore, the kynges name and theirs, and the tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farre from this station, folowyng the fyers on the lande by nyght, they founde a nation lyinge vnder the open firmamente after the maner of warre. Owre men thought it not beste to trowble them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the rysyng of the foone, fortie of owre men well armed, wente toward them: ageynst whom came furth. xxxii. of them, with bowes, slinges and dartes, euen redy to the feyght. The other coompanye folowed them, armed after the fame maner. Owr men affirme that they were of hygh stature then eyther the Almaynes or Pannonians. They behelde owre men with frownyng and threatenynge countenance. But owre men thought it not good to faule to bickeringe with them, vncerteyne whether it were for feare, or bycause they wolde not dryue them to flight. Wherefore they went aboute to allure them by faire meanes and rewardes. But they refused all kynde of gentelnes, and stode euer in a redines to feight, declaringe the fame by signes and tokens. Thus owr men resorted to theyr shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further bufynes. The fame nyght abowte mydnyght, they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Owre men suppose them to bee a vagabunde and wanderyng nacion lyke vnto the Scythians, withowte houses or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the fruites of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyl dren folowinge them. Such as meafured their footesteppes in the sande, affirme with greate othes, that one of theyr feete is almost as longe as twoo feete of owre men of the meane forte. Saylinge on yet further, they founde an other ryuer, but not of deapth sufficient to beare the carauels. They sent therefore the foure shippe boates to lande, ful of armed men to searce the countrey. They espyed vpon a hyghe hyll nere vnto the sea fyde, a greate multitude of people, to whom owre coompany sent furthe one man with certeyne of owre thynges to allure them to exchange. And when he had cast a haukes bell towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubette longe. The which as he stouped to take vppe, they foodenly inclosed hym, and caryed hym away. But he was shortly after rescued by his coompanyons, to sum of their paynes: for they slewe eyght of owre men, and wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and dartes made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they encompafed owre shippe boates within the ryuer, and came raffhelye within the reache of owre men, layinge houlde on the boates fydes, where they were thrust through and hewen in peeces as it had byn sheepe, by reason they were naked. Yet wolde they not for all this, gyue ouer: but tooke from owre men one of their boates, hauing noo men in it. For the gouernour therof beinge slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they left this fierce and warlyke people, saylinge towarde the northweste alonge by the fame coastes, with sorowfull hartes for the death of theyr coompanyons. When they had sayled abowte. xl. leaques, they chaunced into a sea of fuche fresshe water, that they fylled theyr banelles and hogges heades therwith. Searching the cause hereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of ryuers discended with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greate hylles. They say

Cales. Ciuiile.

The Ilandes of Canarie
Cabouerde.

S. Iames Ilande.

The North pole
owte of syght.

Habitable Regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

An other order of
starres
A thicke mist
A rysyng in the
myddeft of the
earth.

41

People of hygh
stature.

A vagabunde
kynde of men

Giantes.

Desperate
bouldenes.

A sea of freshe
water.

Many fruitfull
Ilandes.
Humane people.

Mariatamball.
Camomorus.
Paricora.

Regions of Paria.
Golde and perles.
Os Draconis.

Cumana.
Manacapana.
Curiana
The hole earth
largely taken,
maye bee cauled
an Ilande.

Maragnonus
a ryuer
of exceading
breadth and full
of Ilands looke
decade ii. liber. ix.
42

Boriostomea, and
Spiriostomea,
mouthes of the
ryuer of Danubius.

The commodities
of the Regions
and Ilandes about
Paria.
Brasile.

Mani fruitfull
Ilandes left
desolate.
Canibales.

Trees of Cassia
fistula.

Trees of maruelous
byggenes.
A monstrous
beaste.

Alteracion of ayer
and change of
meate

Cathay in India
beyonde the
ryuer of Ganges
A shipwrake
by tempest.

also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabyted: And that th[e]inhabitantes of this tracte are men of meeke nature and suche as doo not refuse strangers: Yet lyttle profytable to them, bycause they had noo marchandyes for their purpose, as golde or precyous stones. For lacke wherof, they brought frome thense thyrty captiues to sell for slaues. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this Region *Mariatambal*. The Region of the easte parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weste parte, *Paricora*: in the mid lande wherof, th[e]inhabitantes signified that there is greate plentie of golde. For, folowyng this ryuer directly toward the Northe (as the bendyng of the shore requyred) they recouered ageyne the fyght of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, perteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrst founde by *Colonus* hym selfe, and hath in maner in euery place, greate abundaunce of pearles. They fay that these coastes are adioynge vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also bortheryng vppon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapana*, *Curiana*, *Cauchieta*, and *Cuchibachoa*. Wherefore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*. For the greate and large coompasse therof, dothe not permit that it shulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, maye bee cauled an Ilande. From the poynte of that land where they lost the fight of the north pole, saylyng by a continuall tracke abowte three hundred leaques toward the weste syde of *Paria*, they say that almoſte in the mydde way, they chaunced into a ryuer cauled *Maragnonum*, which they affirme to bee of such exceading breadth, that it myght seeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not false water where it diuided the lande, they answered, that the water therof was very fresshe and sweete: And that the further it ranne, to bee soo muche the fressher: Also full of Ilandes and holsome fysh. They dare auouche the breadth therof, to bee more then thyrty leaques. Yet if wee well weighe and confyder the largenes and wydenes of *Boriostomea* and *Spiriostomea*, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Ister* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) and howe farre they violate or corrupte the false water with their freshenes, wee shall cease to marueile, although this other ryuer bee greater. For, who can dimynyshe the poure of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other bygger then this. And I suppose this to bee the ryuer wherof *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the discription of his vyage in these coastes. But wee shall hereafter haue further knowlege hereof. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the commodities of these Regions. They fownde in many Ilandes abowte *Paria*, great wooddes of brasile trees: And brought awaye with them, three thousand pounde weight thereof. They say that the brasile of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. From hense, folowyng the wynde (whiche the Spanyardes caule *Norduest*, and the Italians *Graco*) they passed by many Ilandes very fruitfull, yet lefte desolate and wasted by reason of the crueltie of the Canibales. For they went alande in many places, and fownde the ruines of many destroyed howses. Yet in sum places, they founde men, but those exceading fearefull, flyng to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the sight of euery straunger or shippe, and wanderyng without houes or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the Caniballes layinge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde those great trees which of them selues in dyuers places bringe furth the fruite or spice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Cassia fistula*: And that of noo lesse goodnes then that which the phisitians minister to such as bee diseased with the ague. But it was not ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of suche byggenes, that. xvi. men ioynge handes togyther and standyng in coompasse, can scarcely embrace sum of them. Emonge these trees is fownde that monstrous beaste with a snowte lyke a foxe, a tayle lyke a marmafette, eares lyke a batte, handes lyke a man, and feete lyke an ape, bearing her whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye much lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. The deade carcas of this beast, you sawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yowre owne handes, marueilyng at that newe belly and wonderfull prouision of nature. They say it is knowen by experience, that shee neuer letteth her whelpes goo owte of that purse, except it bee eyther to play, or to sucke, vntyl suche tyme that they bee able to gette theyr lyuyng by them selues. They tooke this beaste with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed shortly after in the shyppes. Yet the damme liued certeyne moonethes: But at the length, not beinge able to abyde soo greate alteration of ayer, and change of meate, shee dyed also in the way. But of this beaste, wee haue sayde enowgh. Let vs now therefore returne to the autours of these thynges. These twoo *Pinzoni*, the vncler and the neuier, fulleynd manye great trowbles and horrible tempestes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had nowe sayled by the coastes of *Paria* abowte. vi. hundred leaques, and (as they supposed) beyonde the cite of *Cathay* and the coastes of Easte India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*, there rose foodenly soo fierce a tempeste in the mooneth of Iuly, that, of the foure carauels which they had with them, twoo were drowned euen beefore theyr eyes: and the thyrde lyenge at anker, with lyke foodennes caryed owte of theyr fyght through the violence of the tempeste: The fourth also lyenge at anker, was soo shaken and broofed, that al the seames therof were almost loosed. Yet came they to lande owt of this laste shyppes, but vtterlye despayryng of the shyppes. Wherefore consultancyng with them selues what was best to bee doone in soo extreeme a case, and how to prouide them a safe dwellinge place in those Regions beinge owt of al hope how to departe from thense, they determined

to fley all the inhabitantes of the contrey nere abowte them, leaste they with the other shulde conspire togyther to kyl them, but theyr fortune was better. For the carauell which the tempeste had caryed away, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remayned, was faued and repayed. With these two therfore, they tooke theyr vyage directly to Spaine And thus beinge toffed with tempestes and vexed with aduersities, they returned to theyr natiue contrey of *Palos*, to theyr wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the losse of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours. They browght with them Cinamome and gynger: but not very good, bycause they were not there fully seasoned with the heate of the soone before they brought them from thense. They browght also, certeyne precious stones, whiche *Baptista Elysius*, that excellent philofopher and yowre lordeshippes phisitian, affirmeth to bee trewe Topases. After these mens returne, other of theyr neighbours beinge moued thereto by a certeyne emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wolde bee anye better, lyke men of good corage, beinge nothinge discomforted by the harde fortune of theyr neighbours, knowinge that it often tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an other mans makynge, attempted a newe vyage towarde the fowthe by the coastes of *Paria*, folowynge the steppes of *Colonus* the Admiral, who had fyrst discouered the same. They also browght with them greate plentie of *Cassia fistula*: And fownde that precious medicine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Animæ album*, whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes, mures, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage, as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to certifie yowe of. Wherefore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this booke, bycause yow put me so often in remembrance of your departure. Yet to accomplysse the Decade, I wyll declare sumwhat of the superstitions of *Hispaniola*. Yowe shall nowe therfore vnderstand the illusions wherwith the people of the Ilande haue byn seduced after the errors of the owlde gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndenes of humane nature corrupted by the disobediene of ovr fyrst parentes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the earth, except where it hath pleased god by the lyght of his spirite by his woorde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of renouation, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenes receaueth fume clearenes as in a glasse, vntyll imperfection shalbe abolyshed. Owre men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede any other thyng then the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuersante with them, and by vnderstandyng their language, drewe to a further familiaritie, they had knowlege that they vsed dyuers rytes and superstitions. I haue therfore gathered these fewe thynges folowynge, owte of a booke wrytten by one *Ramonus* an heremyte, whom *Colonus* had lefte with certeyne kynges of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian fayth. And bycause in maner their hole religion is none other thing then Idolatry, I wyll begynne at theyr Idoles. It is therfore apparente by the Images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte seasons certeyne phantasies and illusions of euyll spirites, seducinge them into many fonde and folythe errors. For they make certeyne Images of gossampine cotton fouled or wretched after theyr maner, and harde stopped within. These Images they make fytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of sprites and deuilles which ovr paynters are accustomed to paint vppon waules. But forasmuch as I my selfe sent yowe foure of these Images, yowe may better presently signifie vnto the kyng yowre vncke, what maner of thynges they are, and howe lyke vnto paynted deuilles, then I can expresse the same by wrytynge. These Images, th[e]inhabitantes caule *Zemes*: wherof the leaste, made to the lykenes of younge deuils, they bind to theyr forheades when they goo to the warres ageynst their enemies: And for that purpose haue they those strynges hangynge at them which yowe see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyse fayre wether. For they thinke that these *Zemes* are the mediatours and messengers of the greate god, whom they acknowlege to be only one, eternall, withowte ende, omnipotent and inuisible. Thus euery kyng hath his particuler *Zemes* which he honoureth. They caule the eternall god, by these twoo names, *Iocauna*, and *Guamaonocon*, as theyr prediceffours tawght them. Affirminge that he hath a father cauled by these fyue names: that is, *Attabeira*, *Mamona*, *Guacarapita*, *Liella*, *Guimazoa*. Nowe shall yowe heare what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled *Caunana*, wher they fayne that mankynde came fyrst owte of twoo caues of a mountayne: and that the byggest forte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggest caue, and the leaft forte owte of the leaste caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they caule *Cauta*. The greatest denne, they name *Cazibaxagua*, and the lesse *Amaiauna*. They say, that before it was lawful for men to come forth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kepte and watched nyghtly by a man whose name was *Machochael*. This *Machochael*, departinge sumwhat farre from the caue to th[e]intente to see what thynges were abrode, was foodenly taken of the soonne (whose sight he was forbydden) and was turned into a stone. They fayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went foorth in the nyghte season a fysshynge, so farre from the caue that they coulde not returne before the rysynge of the soone (the which it was not lawful for them to behold) they were transformed into myrobalane trees, which of them felues growe plentifully in the Ilande. They fayne furthermore, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, sent one furth of the caue to goo a fysshynge, who by lyke chauce

Extreme remedie
in a desperat
case

43

Cinamome and
gynger

Topases.

Men of noble
corage.

A nother vyage

Animæ album.The superstitions
of hispaniola.
The errors of the
owlde gentilitie.The grace of
renouation.Ramonus an
heremyte.
Idolatry and
Idoles.Illusions of euyl
spirites.
Images of
gossampine cottonZemes.
Younge deuyls.

Mediatours.

Only one god
eternall.
The names of god.
The father of god.The originall of
man kyndeFables much lyke
Ouide his
transformations

44

The original of
Mirobalane trees

<p>The nightingale.</p> <p>The Iland of Mathinino.</p> <p>Children turned into frogges.</p> <p>A speciall grace.</p> <p>Holy reliques</p> <p>Women are slippery cattayle. Al wisdome goeth not by age.</p> <p>Here nedeth sum tropological interpretour.</p> <p><i>Myrmidones</i></p> <p>Preachers for the deuyll.</p> <p>A vengeable greate gourd.</p> <p>The originall of the sea.</p> <p>45</p> <p>The originall of Ilandes.</p> <p>A holy caue.</p> <p>Images.</p> <p>The originall of the soone and moone.</p> <p>Pylgramage.</p> <p>Walkynge sprytes.</p> <p><i>Incubi.</i></p> <p>A remedye ageynst walkyng sprites.</p>	<p>was turned into a nyghtyngale bycause the foonne was ryfen beefore he came ageyne to the caue: And that yearelye abowte the fame tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moornyng fonge bewayle his myffortune, and caule for the helpe of his maister <i>Vagoniona</i>. And this they thynke to bee the cause why that byrde singeth in the night seafon. But <i>Vagoniona</i>, beinge fore troubled in his mynd for the losse of his familier frende whom he loued soo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought forth onely the women with theyr fuckynge chyldren, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that tracte, cauled <i>Mathinino</i>, and caryed the chyldren awaye with hym: which poore wretches oppressed with famine, fainted and remained on the banke of a certeine ryuer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed <i>toa, toa</i>, that is, <i>mama, mama</i>, as chyldren are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they fay it commeth that frogges vse to crye fo pytifully in the sprynge tyme of the yeare: And that men were scattered abrode in the caues of <i>Hispaniola</i> withowte the companye of women. They fay also, that whereas <i>Vagoniona</i> hym selfe, was accustomed to wander in dyuers places, and yet by a speciall grace, neuer transformed, descended to a certeyne fayre woman whom he sawe in the bottome of the sea, and receaued of her certeyne pibple stones of marble (whiche they caule <i>Cibas</i>) and also certeine yelowe and bright plates of laton, whiche they caule <i>Guaninos</i>. These thynges to this day are had in greate estimation amonge the kynges, as goodly iewels and most holy reliques. These men whiche we fayde before were lefte in the caues withowte women, went furth in the nyght (as they fay) to washe them selues in a ponde of raine water and sawe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certeine beastes in shape sumwhat lyke vnto women, creping as thicke as antes aboute the myrobalane trees: And that as they attempted to take these beastes, they slypped owte of their handes as they had byn yeles. Where vppon they consulted, and determyned by th[e]advice of the elders, that al sliche shulde bee fowght foorthe amonge them, as were scabbyd and leprous, to th[e]intente that with theyr rowghe and harde handes, they myght th[e]efelyer take holde of them. These men, they caule <i>Caracaracoles</i>: And sente them foorthe a huntinge to take these beastes. But of many which they tooke, they coude keepe but only foure: The whiche as they wolde haue vsed for women, they fownde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore caulinge th[e]elders ageyne to counfayle, to consult what were beste to bee done in this case, theyr advice was that the byrde which wee caule the Pye, shuld bee admitted with his byll to open a place for that purpose, whyle in the meane tyme these men cauled <i>Caracaracoles</i>, shulde hould fast the womens thighes abrode with theyr rowgh handes. Full wyfely therfore was the pye put to this office, and opened the womens priuities, and hereof the women of the Ilande haue theyr original and offspringe. But nowe doo I cease to marueyle that the owlde Grekes dyd fable and wryte fo manye bookes of the people cauled <i>Myrmidones</i>, which they fayned to bee engendred of antes or pissemeris. These and sliche lyke, the sagest and wyfest of the people, preache continually to the simple sorte, and reherse the fame as moste holy oracles. But it is yet more chyllysshe that they fable as touchinge th[e]originall of the sea. For they faye that there was once in the Ilande, a man of greate power, whose name was <i>Iaia</i>: whose only foonne being dead, he buried hym within a greate gourde. This <i>Iaia</i>, greuoulye takyng the death of his foonne, after a fewe moonthes, came ageyne to the gourde: The which when he had opened, there iss Hewed forth many great whales and other monsters of the sea: where vppon he declared to sliche as dwelt abowte hym, that the sea was enclosed in that gourde. By which report, foure brethren (borne of one woman who dyed in her trauail) beinge moued, came to the gourde in hope to haue many fysshes. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and espied <i>Iaia</i> comming, (who oftentimes resorted to the gourd to vifet the boones of his foonne) fearing least he shulde suspecte them of theste and sacrileage, sodaynely let the gourde faule owte of theyr handes: which beinge broken in the faule the sea furthwith brake owte at the ryftes therof, and so fylled the vales, and ouerflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche nowe conteyne the Ilandes which are seene in those coastes. And this is the oppinion of theyr wyfe men as concernynge th[e]originall of the sea. But nowe (most noble prince) you shall heare a more pleasaunt fable. There is a certeyne caue cauled <i>Iouanaboina</i>, in the territorye of a certeyne kynge whose name is <i>Machinnech</i>. This caue they honour more religiously then dyd the Grekes in tyme paste, Corinth, Cyrria, or Nyfa: And haue adourned it with pictures of a thousand fashions. In th[e]enterance of this caue they haue twoo grauen <i>Zemes</i>, wherof the one is cauled <i>Binthaitel</i>, and the other <i>Marobu</i>. Beinge demaunded why they had this caue in soo greate reuerence, they answered ernestly, bycause the Soonne and the Moone came fyrst owt of the same to gyue lyght to the worlde. They haue religious concourse to these caues, as wee are accustomed to goo on Pylgramage to Rome or Vaticane, Composlele, or Hierusalem, and most holye and heade places of owre Religion. They are also subiect to an other kynde of superstition. For they thinke that deade folkes walke in the nyght, and eate of the fruite cauled <i>Guannaba</i>, vnknownen vnto vs, and sumwhat lyke vnto a quynse. Affirmynge also that they are conuersant with luyng people, euen in theyr beddes, and to deceaue women in takynge vpon them the shape of men, shewynge them selues as though they wolde haue to doo with them: But when the matter commeth to actual deede, foodenly to vanysshe away. If any doo suspecte that a deade body lyeth by hym when he feeleth anye straunge thyng in the bedde, they fay hee shalbe owt of dout</p>
---	---

by feelynge of the belly therof: affirmyng that the spirites of deade men may take vppon them al the members of mans body, fauinge only the nauell. If therefore by lacke of the nauell he doo perceauce that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelynge is immediatly resolued. They beleue verely, that in the nyght, and often tymes in theyr iourneys, and especially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meete with the luyunge. Ageynste whome, if any man bee floute and owte of feare, the phantafye varyssheth incontinentely. But yf anye feare, the phantafy or vyfion doth foo affaute hym and ftryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby afonysshed and haue the lymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Th[e]inhabytantes beinge demaunded of whom they had those vayne supersticions, they answered that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers as by discent of inheritance: And that they haue had the fame (before the memory of man) composed in certeine rymes and songes, which it was lawful for none to lerne but onely the kynges soones, who commytted the fame to memorye, bycause they hadde neuer any knoweledge of letters. These they synge beefore the people on certeyne solemne and festiuall dayes, as most religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeyne instrumente made of one hole peece of woodde sumwhat holowe lyke a tymbrell. Their preestes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) instructe them in these supersticions. These preestes, are also phisitians, diuisinge a thousande craftes and subtylties howe to deceaue the simple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they perfuade them that the *Zemes* vse to speak with theym familierlye, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin sicke and are recouered, they make them beleue that they obteyned theyr healthe of the *Zemes*. These *Boitii*, bynde them selues to muche fastyng and owtewarde clenlynes and poureinges: Especially when they take vppon them the cure of any Prince. For then they drynke the pouder of a certeyne herbe, by whose qualitie they are dryuen into a furye: At whiche tyme (as they say) they lerne many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttinge secreatly in theyr mouthes, eyther a stone, or a bone, or a piece of fleshe, they coomme to the sicke perfon, commaunding al to departe owte of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it shall please the sicke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym three or foure tymes, greatly deforminge theyr faces, lypes, and nosethrils with sundry fylthy giestures: blowyng, breathing, and fuckyng the forheade, temples, and necke of the pacient, wherby (they saye) they drawe the euyl ayer from hym, and sucke the disese owt of his veynes. Then rubbinge hym about the shoulders, thyghes, and legges, and drawyng downe theyr handes clofe by his feete, holdinge them yet faste togyther, they runne to the dore beinge open, where they vnclofe and shake theyr handes, affirminge that they haue dryuen away the disese, and that the pacient shall shortly bee perfectly restored to health. After this, commyng behynde hym, he conueygheth the piece of fleshe owte of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and sheweth it to the sicke man, sayinge, behoulde what you haue eaten to muche: you shall nowe bee hole, bycause I haue taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue the pacient, he perfuadeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, eyther bycause he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not honored hym religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it foo chauce that the sicke perfon dye, his kinfolkes by wytchecrafte enforce the deade to confesse whether he dyed by naturall destenye, or by the neglygence of the *Boitius*, in that he had not fasted as he shulde haue doone, or not mynistred a conuenient medicine for the disese. Soo that yf this phisitian bee founde fautie, they take reuenge of hym. Of the stones or bones which these *Boitii* carye in theyr mouthes, yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiously beleauinge them to bee greatly effectuall to helpe women whiche trauayle with chylde: And therefore honoure them as they doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of th[e]inhabitantes, honour *Zemes* of dyuers fashions. Some make them of woodde, as they were admonyshed by certeyne visions apperinge vnto them in the wooddes. Others, whiche haue receaued answere of them amonge the rockes, make them of stone and marble. Sum they make of rootes to the similitude of fuche as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes cauled *Ages*, wherof they make theyr breade, as we haue sayde before. These *Zemes*, they beleue to fend plentie and frutefulness of those rootes, as the antiquitie beleued fuche fayries or spirites as they cauled *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Panes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and prouidence of the sea, wooddes, and sprynges and fountaynes, affigninge to euery thyng, theyr peculier goddes. Euen foo doo th[e]inhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to euery thyng, supposinge the fame to gyue eare to theyr inuocations. Wherfore, as often as the kynges aske counsaile of their *Zemes* as concerning their warres, increase of fruites or scarfnes, or health and fickenes, they enter into the house dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, snuffinge vp into theyr noisethryls the pouder of the herbe cauled *Cohobba* (wherwith the *Boitii* are dryuen into a furye) they say that immediatly they see the houses turne topsy turuye, and men to walke with theyr heeles vpwarde: of fuche force is this pouder vtterly to take away all sense. As soone as this maddenes ceaseth, he embraseth his knees with his armes, holdyng downe his heade. And when he hath remayned thus a while afonysshed, he lyfteth vp his heade as one that came newe owt of sleepe: And thus loking vp towarde heauen, Fyrst he sumbeleth certeyne confounded woordes with hym selfe. Then certeyne of the nobilitie or chiefe gentlemen that are about him (for none of the common people are admytted to these mysteries) with lowde voyces gyue tokens of reioyng that he is returned to them from the speache of the *Zemes*, demaundyng of hym what he hathe seene. Then hee openinge his

Phantasies
proceedyng of
feare.
Al is not good that
is owlde

Syngyng and
playyng

Preestes and
diuines.
Phisitians.
Ignorance is
noryshed with
superstition.

Fastyng and
outward clenlynes.

A pouder of
maruelous effecte.

Iuggelyng.

A strange maner
of curing

46

Angery gods
They make the
deade to speake.

Diuers Idols of
sundry shape.

Fayries or spirites
of the gentyles.

Peculier goddes.

They aske
consaile of Idols

The pouder of the
herbe Cohobba.

Secreate misteries.

Reuelations.

The spirite of
Apollo.
The SibillesI haue harde the
lyke of other in
Englande.Hungery and
lecherous gods.Children with two
crownes

47

Wanderinge
Images.

Mediatours.

A woman zemes
of great poure.Fyue dayes
fastinge.A maruelous
illusion of the
deuyll.
The deuyll
sumtyme telleth
truth.The Idols
abolished.

mouthe, doateth that the *Zemes* spake to hym duryng the tyme of his traunce: declaring that he had reuelations eyther concerninge victorie or destruction: famyne or plentie: health or fyckenes, or what soo euer happeneth fyrst on his toonge. Nowe (moste noble Prince) what neede you hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of *Apollo* soo shakynge his Sibylles with extreme furie? Yowe had thowght that the superstitious antiquitie hadde peryshed. But nowe wheras I haue declared thus much of the *Zemes* in generall, I thowght it not good to lette passe what is sayde of them in particuler. They saye therefore, that a certeyne kynge cauled *Guamaretus*, had a *Zemes* whose name was *Corochotum*: who (they say) was often tymes woonte to descende from the hygheste place of the house where *Guamaretus* kepte hym faste bounde. They affirme, that the cause of this his breakynge of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hyde hym selfe, or to goo seeke for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that sumtymes beinge offended, that the kynge *Guamaretus* had byn negligent and slacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye hyd for certeyne dayes. They say also that in the kynges vylage there are sumtyme chyldren borne hauing twoo crownes which they suppose to bee the children of *Corochotum* the *Zemes*. They fayne lykewyse, that *Guamaretus* beinge ouercome of his enemies in the battayle, and his vylage with the palaice consumed with fyer, *Corochotus* brake his bandes and was afterwarde founde a furlonge of, safe and withowte hurte. He hath also an other *Zemes* cauled *Epileguanita*, made of woodde, in shape lyke a foure footed beaste: who also is sayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, into the wooddes. As soone as they perceauie him to bee gonne, a great multitude of them gather togyther to seeke hym with deuoute prayers: And when they haue fownde hym, brynge hym home religiouly on theyr shulders to the chapell dedicated vnto hym. But they coomplayne that fence the commyng of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulde neuer fence bee founde, wherby they diuined the destruction of theyr countrey. They honoured an other *Zemes* in the lykenes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed th[e]office of a mediatour to the other *Zemes* which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayse wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundemente a messenger to the other *Zemes* whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleys, that beinge loosed, they may with force burst owte into greate fluddes and ouerflowe the countrey if the people doo not gyue due honoure to her Image. There remayneth yet one thyng woorthy to bee noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thyng well knowen, and yet fresshe in memory amonge the inhabitantes of the Ilande, that there was sumtyme twoo kynges (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius* of whom we made mention before) which were woont to absteine fyue dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe sumwhat of theyr *Zemes* of thynges to coome: And that for this fastynge beinge acceptable to theyr *Zemes*, they receaued answere of them, that within fewe yeares, there shuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which shulde destroye al the customes and cerymonyes of the Iland, and eyther sley all theyr chyldren, or brynge them into feruitude. The common sort of the people, vnderstoode this oracle to bee mente of the Canibales. And therefore when they had any knowleage of theyr commyng, they euer fledde, and were fully determynd neuer more [to] aduenture the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the Spanyardes had entered into the Ilande, consultinge amonge them felues of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation which was ment by th[e]oracle. Wherin, theyr opinion deceaued them not. For they are nowe all subiecte to the Christians, all suche beinge slayne as stoobernely resisted. Nor yet remayneth there anye memory of theyr *Zemes*: for they are al brought into Spayne, that we myght bee certified of theyr illusions of euyl spirites and Idoles, the which yowe yowre selfe (most noble Prince) haue seene and felte when I was presente with yowe. I let passe many thynges bycause yow put me in remembrance that to morowe yowe take yowre iorney towarde yowre countrey, to brynge home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowe accompanyed hether at the commaundemente of kynge *Frederyke* yowre vncl. Wherfore I byd yowe farewell for this tyme, desyrynge yowe to remember yowre *Martyr*, whome yowe haue compelled in the name of the kynge yowre vncl, to gather these fewe thynges owte of a large feelde of hystories.

THE TENTH AND LASTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
as a conclusion of the former bookes:

Wrytten to Inacus Iopez Mendocius, countie of Tendilla, and viceroye of Granata.



THE fyrst begynnyng and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vpon hym th[e] enterpryse to searck the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and requyred by the letters of certeyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome to wryte suche thynges as shoulde happen. For they whyspered with greate admiracion, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they coulde here noo certentie therof, beinge greatly desyrous of the fame. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Ascanius* (his brother Lodouike beinge cast owt of Mylayne by the frenchmen) whose autoritie wold not suffer me to bee idle, but euer to haue my pen in hande. To hym I wryte the twoo fyrst bookes of this decade, besyde many other of my hyd commentaries whiche yowe shall see shortly. Fortune dyd noo lesse withdrawe my mynde frome wrytynge, then disturbe *Ascanius* from power. As he was tossed with contrary stormes and ceased to perswade me, euen soo flacked my feruentnes to enqyre any further, vntyl the yeare of Christe. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowe are viceroye: At which time Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neuie to kynge Frederike by his brothers fyde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopea* the fyfster of owre catholike kynge) brought me kynge Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to fynyshe the other bookes whiche folowed the twoo epystell bookes, which I wryte to *Ascanius*. For they both acknowleged that they hadde the copie of all that I wryte to cardinall *Ascanius*. And albeit that euen then I was ficke (as yowe knowe) yet tooke I the burden vpon me, and applyed my selfe to wrytynge. I haue therefore chofen these fewe thynges, owte of a greate heape of suche as seemed to me most woorthy to bee noted amonge the large wrytynge of the autoures and searckers of the fame. Wherefore, forasmuch as yowe haue endeouored to wreste owt of my handes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the same to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thought it good nowe to make a breefe reherfall of those thynges which were done from that yeare of a thowfande and fyue hundreth, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wryte more largelye of these thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it selfe of the superstitions of the people of the Ilande, supposinge therewith to haue accomplyshed the hole Decade consistynge of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenthe as a perpendicular lyne, and as it were a backe guyde or rereuarde to the other: So that yowe may knytte the fyrst tenthe, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenthe to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, lest I shulde bee compelled often times to wryte ouer the hole woork, or sende yowe the same defaced with blottes and interlynynge. But nowe let vs coome to owre purpose. The shippe mastres and maryners ranne ouer many coastes duryng these tenne yeares: But euer folowed suche as were fyrste fownde by *Colonus*. For rasynge continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of easte India, sume of theym chaunced vpon certeyne newe landes towarde the easte, and sume towarde the weste, in which they fownde bothe goulde and frankensence. For they brought from thense many iewels and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankensence, whiche they had of the people of those countreys, partely for exchange of sume of owre thynges, and partely by force, ouercommynge them by warre. Yet in sume places, although they bee naked, they ouercame owre men, and slewe hole armies. For they are excedinge fierce, and vse venemous arrowes, and longe staues lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyer. They fownde many beastes, both creepinge and foure footed, muche differinge from owres, variable and of fundrye shapes innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in fundrye Regions of that greate lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: Noo not soo much as one. For all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and withowte hurte, except men which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes deuourers of mans flesshe. There are also dyuers kyndes of foules. And in many places bates of fuch bygnes, that they are equall with turtle doues. These bates, haue often tymes affauted men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, and soo bytten them with theyr venemous teethe, that they haue byn therby almoste dryuen to madnes, in soo much that they haue byn compelled to flye from fuch places, as from rauenous harpies. In an other place, where certeyne of them slepte in the nyght seafon on the sandes by the sea fyde, a monster commynge owte of the sea, came vpon one of them secreatly and caryed hym away by the myddeste owte of the fight of his felowes to whome he cryed in vayne for helpe vntyll the beaste lepte into the sea with her praye.

The Lawe of nature.

Milayne in the hands of the frenchmen

48

Epistel books

The historye folowing, conteyneth the actes of ten yeare

Paria, part of the firme land of East India

Golde and frankensence.

The fiercenes of the naked people. Innumerable beastes vnlyke vnto owres.

Nothing hurtfull in the Ilandes.

Bates as bygge as turtle doues.

A man deuoured of a monster of the sea

The Spanyardes
profer them selues
to subdue the
newe landes.

Note the largenes
of the newe landes.

Commendacion of
the Spaniardes.

49

Antipodes.

The autours
excusse.

Hispaniola.

The nature of the
place, altereth
the formes and
qualities of
thynges.

Wheate.

Herbes.

Catayle.

Hogges.

Plentie of beastes
and foule.

Cuba, is an
Ilande.

The description
of Cuba.

The Iland of
Burichema or
S. Iohannis.
Golde mynes

The order of
woorkynge in the
golde mynes.

The kynges
brynge theyr
subiectes
to worke in
the golde mynes.

Tyllage.

50

They abhorre
laboure
They are docible.

The kynges
chyl dren.

It was the kynges pleasure that they shulde remayne in these landes, and buylde townes and fortresses. Where vnto they were soo wel wyllynge, that dyuers profered them selues to take vppon them the subduing of the lande, makynge great sute to the kyng that they might bee appoynted therto. The coaste of this tracte is exceadynge greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of these Regions with the Ilandes abowte the same, to bee thryse as bygge as al Europe, besyde those landes that the Portugales haue fownde southwarde, whiche are also exceadynge large. Therefore doubtlesse Spayne hathe deserued greate prayse in these owre dayes, in that it hath made knowen vnto us soo many thowfandes of *Antipodes* which leye hyd before and vnknown to owre forefathers: And hath thereby mynstred so large matter to wryte of, to suche lerned wyttes as are desyrous to sette furthe knowlege to the commoditie of men: to whom I opened a way when I gathered these thynges rudely to gyther as yowe see: The which, neuerthelesse I trust yowe wyll take in good parte, aswell for that I can not adourne my rudenes with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke penne in hande to wryte lyke an historiographer, but only by epistels scribeled in haste, to satisfie theym, from whose commaundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now I haue digressed enowghe. Let vs nowe therefore returne to *Hispaniola*. Owre men haue founde by experience, that the breade of the Iland is of smaule strength to such as haue byn vsed to owr breade made of wheate: And that theyr stren[g]thes were much decayed by vsynge of the same. Wherefore the king hath of late commaunded that wheate shulde bee sowne there in diuers places and at fundry tymes of the yeare. It groweth into holowe reedes, with fewe eares, but those verye bygge and frutefull. They fynde the lyke softenes or delicatenes to bee in herbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattall, becoome of bygger stature and exceadynge fat, but theyr flesshe is more vnfaury, and theyr bones (as they say) eyther withowte marye, or the same to bee verye wateryshe. But of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrarye, that they are more holfoome and of better taste, by reason of certeyne wylde frutes whiche they cate, beinge of muche better nooryshment then maste. There is almost none other kynd of flesshe commonly sould in the market. The multitude of hogges, are exceedingly encreased, and becoome wylde as soone as they are owte of the swyneheardes keepynge. They haue suche plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall heereafter haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Th[e]increase of all beastes, growe bygger then the broode they came of, by reason of the rankenes of the pasture, althowgh theyr feadynge bee only of grasse, withowte eyther barley or other grayne. But wee haue sayde enowgh of *Hispaniola*. They haue nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thought to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Ilande. Yet is it noo maruell that th[e]inhabitanes them selues towlde owre men when they searched the length therof, that it was withowte ende. For this nacion beinge naked and contente with a lyttle, and with the limittes of theyr owne contrey, is not greatly curyous to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr dominion. Nor yet knewe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, besyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. *Cuba*, is frome the Easte into the Weste, muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And in breadthe from the Northe to the Southe, much lesse then they supposd at the fyrst: for it is very narowe in respecte to the length: And is for the moste parte, very frutefull and pleasaunt, Eastwarde not farre from *Hispaniola*, there lyethe an Ilande, lesse then *Hispaniola* more then by the halfe, which owre men cauled *Santi Iohannis*, beinge in maner square. In this they founde exceadynge ryche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of *Hispaniola*, they haue not yet sent labourers into that Iland. But the plentie and reuenue of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to *Hispaniola*, where they gyue them selues in maner to none other thyng then to gather golde, of which woorke this order is appoynted. To euery such wyttie and skylfull man as is put in truste to bee a furuoier or ouerfer of these woorkes, there is assigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with theyr subiectes. These kynges accordyng to theyr league, coome with theyr people at certeyne tymes of the yeare, and reforte euery of them to the golde myne to the which he is assigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or myninge tooles deliuered them: And euery kyng with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde alowed them for theyr labour. For when they departe from the mynes to sowynge of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certeyne other tymes, leaste theyr foode shulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a ierken, or a dublet, an other a sherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleasure in these thynges, and goo no more naked as they were wont too doo. And thus they vse the helpe and laboure of the inhabitantes both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as thowghe they were theyr seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of seruitude with an euyl wyll: but yet they beare it. They caule these hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kyng doth not suffer that they shulde bee vsed as bondemen: And onely at his pleasure they are sette at libertie or appoynted to woorke. At suche tyme as they are cauled together of theyr kynges to woorke (as souldiers or pioners are assembled of theyr centurians) many of them stele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkyng, beinge content for that tyme to lyue with wylde frutes, rather then to take the paynes to laboure. They are docible and apte to lerne, and haue nowe vtterly forgotten theyr owlde supersticions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memory suche thynges as they haue lerned of owre faith. Theyr kynges children are brought vp with the chiefe of owre

men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they fende them home to theyr countreys to bee exemple to other, and especially to gouerne the people if theyr fathers bee dead that they maye the better fet foorth the Christian Religion, and keepe theyr subiectes in loue and obedience. By reason whereof, they coome nowe by fayre meanes and gentell perfuasions to the mynes which lye in two Regions of the Ilande aboute thirtie myles distante frome the citie of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *Sancti Christophori*: And the other being distante aboute foure score and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibaua*, not farre from the cheefe hauen cauled *Portus Regalis*. These regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are fownd sumtyme euen in the vpper crust of the earth and sumtyme amonge the stones, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, sumtyme of smaule quantitie, and in sum places of great weyght: In so mucche that there hath byn found rounde pieces of three hundreth pounce weyght, and one of three thousande, three hundreth and tenne pounce weyght: The whiche (as yowe harde) was fente hole to the kynge in that shyppe in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the shyppe with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reason it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thowefande perfons whiche fawe and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I speake of a pounce, I doo not meane the common pounce, but the summe of the ducate of golde, with the coyne cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrde parte of a pounce, whiche they caule *Pefus*. The sum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyardes caule *Castellanum Aureum*. Al the golde that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Porte Regale*, is caryed to the towre of *Conception*, where shoppes with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnysshed to fyne it, melte it, and caste it into wedges. That doone, they take the kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfte parte, and soo restore to euery man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour. But the golde whiche is fownde in faynt *Christophers* myne and the Region there aboute, is caryed to the shoppes whiche are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In these twoo shoppes, is molten yerely, aboue three hundreth thousand pounce weight of golde. If any man bee knowen deceatefully to keepe backe any portion of golde, whereof he hathe not made the kynges officers pryue, he forfith the fame for a fyne. There chaunce amonge them often tymes many contentions and controuerfies, the whiche onlesse the magistrates of the Ilande doo fynyshe, the case is remoued by appellation to the hyghe counsaile of the courte, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to appele in all the dominions of Castyle. But lette vs nowe returne to the newe landes frome whense we haue digressed. They are innumerable, dyuers, and exceedyng fortunate. Wherfore the Spanyardes in these owre dayes, and theyr noble enterpryses, doo not gyue place eyther to the factes of *Saturnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memorie which were canonized amonge the goddes cauled *Heroes* for theyr searchinge of newe landes and regions, and bringinge the fame to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh God: howe large and farre shal owre posteritie see the Christian Religion extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in, whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or moued by vertue, wyll attempte eyther to deserue lyke prayse amonge men, or reputacion of well doinge before god. What I conceaue in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse with penne or tonge. I wyll nowe therefore soo make an ende of this perpendicular conclusion of the hole Decade, as myndinge hereafter to searche and gather euery thyng particulerye, that I maye at further leasure wryte the fame more at large. For *Colonus* the Admiral with foure shyppes, and a hundreth threescore and tenne men appoynted by the kynge, discovered in the yeare of Christe. 1502. the lande ouer ageynste the weste corner of *Cuba*, distant from the fame aboute a hundreth and thirtie leaques: In the myddest of which tracte, lyeth an Ilande cauled *Guanassa*. From henfe he directed his vyage backwarde towarde the Easte by the shore of that coast, supposinge that he shulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*: but it chaunced otherwyse. It is sayd also that *Vincentius Agnes* (of whom we haue spoken before) and one *Iohannes Diaz* (with dyuers other of whose vyages I haue as yet no certeyne knowleage) haue ouer runne those coastes. But if God graunt me life, I trust to know the truthe hereof and to aduertise yowe of the fame. Thus fare ye well.

The two chiefe golde mynes of hispaniola.

Golde founde in the vpper part of the earth.

A piece of golde weighinge three thousande three hundreth and ten pounds.

A coastly ship wrake.

Pesus.

The synyng and distribution of golde.

Three hundreth thousand weyght of gold molten yerely in hispaniola.

Controuerfies

The newe landes.

The Spanyardes noble enterpryses are not inferiour to the actes of Hercules or Saturnus. etc.

Enlarging of the Christian Religion.

The originall of trewe nobilitie.

51

The Ilande of Guanassa

The vyage of Iohannes Diaz.



¶ The seconde Decade foloweth.

THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
TO LEO BYSSHOP OF ROME, THE TENTHE OF THAT NAME,
Of the supposed Continent or firme lande.



INSENSE the tyme that *Galeatius Butrigarius* of Bononie, and *Iohannes Cursius* of Florence (moſte holye father) came to the catholyke kynge of Spayne, the one, of yowre holynes ambaſage, and th[e]other for th[e]affaires of his common welth, I was euer for the moſte parte in theyr coompanie, and for theyr vertues and wyſedome, had them in greate reuerence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to ſtudy, and continuall reuoluinge of dyuers autours, they chaunced vppon certeyne bookes negligently let ſlyppe owte of my handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions hetherto lyinge hyd, and almoſt weſt *Antipodes*, fownde of late by the Spanyardes. Yet beinge allured and delited with the newenes and ſtrangenenes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned, they commended the ſame: Therwith ernestely deſyryng me in theyr owne names, and requyryng me in the name of yowr holynes, to adde here vnto all ſuche thynges as were fownde after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to ſende to yowre holynes, that yowe myght therby vnderſtande, bothe howe greate commoditie is chaunced

to the progenye of mankynde, as alſo increaſe of the militante congregation in theſe owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryſes of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as raſed or vnpaynted tables, are apte to receaue what formes ſoo euer are fyrſt drawen thereon by the hande of the paynter, euen ſoo theſe naked and ſimple people, doo ſoone receaue the cuſtomes of owre Religion, and by conuerſation with owre men, ſhake of theyr fierce and natiue barbarouſnes. I haue thought it good therefore to ſatiſſie the requeſt of theſe wyſe men, eſpecially vſynge th[e]autoritie of yowre name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I ſhulde eſteeme my ſelfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I wyl nowe brefely reherſe in order, what hyd coaſtes the Spanyardes ouerranne, who were the autours therof, where they reſted, what further hope they browght, and fynallye what great thynges thoſe tractes of landes doo promeſſe in tyme to coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is nowe printed and diſperſed throwghowte Chriſtendome vnwares to me, I deſcribed howe *Chriſtophorus Colonus* fownde thoſe Ilandes wherof we haue ſpoken, and that turnynge from theſe towarde the lefte hande fouthwarde, he chaunced into greate regions of landes, and large feas, diſtant from the Equinoctiallyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he founde brode ryuers and exceadinge hygh mountaynes couered with ſnowe and harde by the ſea bankes, where were many commodious and quyete hauens. But *Colonus* beinge now departed owte of this lyfe, the kynge beganne to take care, howe thoſe landes myght be inhabited with Chriſtian men to th[e]increaſe of owre fayth: Where vppon he gaue licence by his letters patentes to al ſuch as wolde take the matter in hand, and eſpecially to twoo, wherof *Diego Nicueſa* was one, and the other was *Alphonſus Fogeda*. Wherefore about the Ides of December, *Alphonſus* departinge fyrſt with three hundreth ſouldiers from the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* (in the which wee ſayde the Spanyardes had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitacion) and ſaylynge in maner full fouth, he came to one of the hauens founde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginis*, bothe bycauſe of the Ilande ſtandyng ageynſte the courſe of the ſtreame, and alſo that by reaſon of the largenes of the place and bendynge ſydes, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine cauled *Carthago*. Th[e]inhabitantes caule the Ilande *Codego*, as the Spanyardes caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Scombria*. This Region is cauled of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*: In the which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of goodly ſtature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rownde by theyr eares, but the women were it longe. Bothe the men and women are very good archers. Owre men fownde certen trees in this prouince, which bore greate plentie of ſweete apples, but hurteful, for they turne into wormes when they are eaten. Eſpecially the ſhadowe of the tree, is contagious,

West Antipodes.

The increaſe of the Chriſtian congregation.

Chriſtophorus Colonus.
Of landes diſtante from the Equinoctiall from fyue degrees to ten.
The death of *Colonus*.
A generall lycence.

The nauigation of *Alphonſus Fogeda*.

52

Portus Carthaginis.

The Region of *Caramairi*.
People of goodly ſtature

Apples whiche turne into wormes.

for fuche as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes fwolne and lose theyr fight. But if they sleepe but a while, theyr fyght commeth ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is dystant foure hundreth fyftie and fyxe myles from that parte of *Hispaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which also they furnyssh the them felues when they prepare anye vyage to seeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the hauen, he inuaded, slewe, and spoyled the people, whome he founde naked and scattered. For they were gyuen hym for a praye, by the kynges letters patentes bycause they hadde bin before tyme cruel ageynst the Christians, and coulde neuer bee allured to permytte them quietly to coome within theyr dominions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor yet that pure. They make of it, certeyne brest plates and brooches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not content with these spoyle, vsinge certeyne captiues whiche he had taken before, for guydes, entered into a vyllage twelue myles distante frome the sea syde further into the lande, into the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrst inuaded. Here he founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were armed with targettes, shieldes, longe swoordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with fyer. As soone as they had espyed owre men, they with their gestes whom they had receaued, affayled them with desperate myndes, beinge therto more earnestly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of these whiche fledde vnto theym, by the violence doone to theyr women and chyldren, in the spoyle and slawghter. In this conflicte owre men had the ouerthrowe: In the which, one *Iohannes de Lacoffa* (beinge in autoritie nexte vnto *Fogeda* the capitayne, and also the fyrste that gathered golde in the sandes of *Vraba*) was slayne with fyftie fouldiers. For these people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyson of a certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* beinge discomfited, fledde to the shyppes. Whyle they remayned thus in the hauen of *Carthago* sorowfull and penyue for the losse of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicuesa*, (whom they lefte in *Hispaniola*, preparyng hym selfe towarde the vyage in the hauen *Beata*) came to them with fyue shippes and feuen hundreth foure score and fyfteene menne. For the greater number of fouldyers, folowed *Nicuesa*, both bycause free libertie was gyuen them to choose which of the capytaynes them lyst, and also that by reason of his age, he was of greater autoritie: But especially bycause the rumoure was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commission appoynted to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assigned to *Alphonfus Fogeda*. Therefore, at the arryuall of *Nicuesa*, they consulted what was beste to bee doone: And determyned fyrste to reuenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, settinge theyr battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towarde them whiche flewe *Coffa* with his coompanyons. Thus stealyng on them vnwares in the last wathe of the nyght, and encompasinge the vyllage where they laye, consistyng of a hundreth howses and more, hauyng also in it thryse as many of theyr neyghbours as of them felues, they set it on fyer, with diligent wathe that none myght escape. And thus in shorte tyme they browght theym and theyr howses to ashes, and made them pay the raunfome of bludde with bludde. For of a greate multitude of men and women, they spared onely fyxe chyldren, al other being destroyed with fyer or sword except fewe which escaped priuilye. They lerned by the reserued chyldren, that *Coffa* and his felowes were cutte in pieces and eaten of them that slewe them. By reason wherof, they supposse that these people of *Caramairi* tooke theyr originall of the *Caribes* otherwysse cauled *Canibales*. Here they founde sume golde amonge the ashes. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo lesse encorage ovr men to aduenture these perels and labours then dyd the possessyng of the landes. These thynges thus fynysshed, and the death of *Coffa* and his felowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came fyrst, fyrst lykewysse departinge with his army to seeke *Vraba*, commytted to his gouernaunce, sayled by an Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyeing in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the hauen of *Carthago*. In to the which descendinge, he fownde it to bee an Ilande of the Canybales, brynginge with hym frome thense two men and feuen women: for the residue escaped. Here he fownde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundreth foure score and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dyuers formes. Saylyng forward from henfse, he came to the Easte coastes of *Vraba*, whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Caribana*, from whenfse the *Caribes* or *Canibales* of the Ilandes are sayde to haue theyr name and originall. Here he beganne to buylde a fortresse, and a vyllage nere vnto the same, therein intendencyng to place theyr fyrst habitacion. Shortly after, beinge instructed by certeyne captiues that there was aboute twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne vyllage cauled *Tirusi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to destroye the vylage. To the which when he came, he fownde th[e]inhabitantes redye to defende theyr ryght: And that foo stoutly, that encounteryng with them, he was repulsd with shame and damage. For these people also, vse bowes and venemous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beinge enforced for lacke of vytayles to inuade an other vyllage, he hym selfe was stryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Sume of his felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of th[e]inhabitantes whose wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue before. They say also that he had first frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for redemyng of his wyfe, and had appoynted a day to bryng a portion of golde for her raunfome: And that he came at the daye assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eyght other confetherate with hym, whiche had bin before partetakers of the iniuries doone to them first at the hauen of *Carthago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the vyllage. In

A tree whose shadowe is hurtfull.

Fogeda his autoritie confirmed by the kynges letters patentes.

Warlyke people.

The Spanyardes haue the ouerthrowe.

Arrowes infected with poyson.

The nauigation of *Diego Nicuesa*.

The regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua*.

The Spanyardes reuenge the death of theyr companyons.

A greate slawghter.

Canibales.

The hunger of golde.
53

The Ilande *Fortis*

Wrought gold

Caribana.

A gold myne.
The Spanyardes are repulsd.

Fogeda is wounded.

Ransome.

reunge wherof they had desperatly consecrated them selues to death. But the matter beinge knowen, the captayne of this conspiracie was slayne of *Fogeda* his coompanyons, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie. *Fogeda* also through the malicioufnes of the veneme, consumed and was dryed vp by lyttle and lyttle. Whyle these thynges chaunced thus, they espyed *Nicuesa* the other capitayne to whom *Beragua* the region of the weste fyde of *Vraba*, was assigned to inhabite. He gaue wynde to his sayles to take his vyage towarde *Beragua*, the day after that *Fogeda* departed owte of the hauen of *Carthago*. He with his army which he browght with hym, coasted euer alonge by the shore vntyll he came to the goulfe *Coiba*, whose kynges name is *Careta*. Here he founde theyr language to bee in maner nothyng lyke vnto that of *Hispaniola* or of the hauen of *Carthago*: wherby he perceaued that in this tracte there are many languages differinge from theyr owne bortherers. *Nicuesa* departinge from *Coiba*, wente to the prouince or Lieutenantsshippe of *Fogeda* his companion. Within a fewe dayes after he hym selfe enteringe into one of those marchaunt shippes whiche the Spanyardes caule *Carauelas*, commaunded that the bygger vessels, shulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke with hym twoo smaule shippes comenly cauled bergantines or brygantynes. I haue thowght it good in all the discourse of these bookes, to vse the common names of thinges, bicause I had rather bee playne then curious: especially forasmuche as there doo dayly aryse manye newe thynges vnknownen to the antiquitie, wherof they haue lefte noo trewe names. After the departure of *Nicuesa*, there came a shyppe from *Hispaniola* to *Fogeda*, the capitayne wherof, was one *Barnardino de Calauera*, who had stolne the same from *Hispaniola* with three score men, withowte leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other gouernours. With the vytayles whiche this shippe browght they refreshed theym selues and fumewhat recouered theyr strengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, *Fogeda* his companyons whyspered and muttered ageynste hym daylye more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope. For he had towlde them that he left *Ancifus* in *Hispaniola* (whom he chose by the kynges commission to bee a Iudge in caufes, bycause he was lerned in the lawe) to coome shortly after him with a shippe laden with vytayles: And that he marueyled that he was not coome many dayes fense. And herein he said nothyng but trewth. For when he departed, he lefte *Ancifus* halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes supposinge that all that he sayde of *Ancifus* had byn fayned, fume of them determyned priuile to steale away the twoo brigantynes frome *Fogeda*, and to returne to *Hispaniola*. But *Fogeda* hauing knowlege hereof, preuented theyr diuise. For leauynge the custodie of the fortresse with a certeyne noble gentelman cauled *Francisco Pizarro*, he hym selfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his companie, entered into the shyppe wherof we spake before, and sayled directly to *Hispaniola*, both to heale the wound of his thygh if any remedy myght bee found, and also to knowe what was the cause of *Ancifus* taryinge: Leauing hope with his felowes (which were nowe browght from three hundreth to three score, partly by famyne and partly by warre) that he wolde returne within the space of. xv. dayes: prescribyng also a condition to *Pizarro* and his companions, that it shulde not bee imputed to them for treason to departe from thense if he came not ageyne at the day appoynted with vytayles and a newe supply of men. These. xv. dayes beinge nowe paste, whereas they coulde yet heare nothyng of *Fogeda*, and were dayly more and more oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entered into the twoo brigantynes which were lefte, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe saylyng on the mayne sea towarde *Hispaniola*, a tempeste soodeynly arysynge, swalowed one of the brygantynes with all that were therein. Sum of theyr felowes affirme that they playnely sawe a fyfhe of houghe greatenes swymmyng abowte the brygantyne (for those seas brynge furthe greate monstres) and that with a stroke of her tayle, she broke the rudder of the shyppe in peces: which saylyng, the brigantine beinge dryuen abowt by force of the tempest, was drowned not farre from the Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyinge betwene the coastes of the hauen *Carthago* and *Vraba*. As they of the other brygantyne wolde haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceadyng therfore on theyr vyage, they mette by chaunce with *Ancifus* betweene the hauen of *Carthago*, and the Region of *Cuchibacoa* in the mouthe of the ryuer whiche the Spanyardes cauled *Boium gatti*, that is, the house of the catte, bycause they sawe a catte first in that place: and *Boium*, in the toonge of *Hispaniola*, is a house. *Ancifus* came wyth a shyppe laden with all thynges necessarye, bothe for meate and drynke, and apparell, bryngynge also with hym an other brigantine. This is he for whose comming the capitayne *Fogeda* looked for soo longe. He loofed anker from *Hispaniola* in the Ides of September: And the fourth day after his departure, he espyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of snowe which lyeth continually in the toppes therof, the Spanyardes cauled *Serra Neuata*, when *Colonus* the fyrst fynder of those Regions passed by the fame. The fyfte daye, he sayled by *Os Draconis*. They whiche were in the brygantyne, towlde *Ancifus* that *Fogeda* was returned to *Hispaniola*. But *Ancifus* supposinge that they had fayned that tale, commaunded them by th[e]authoritie of his commission to turne backe ageyne. The brigantiners obeyed and folowed hym: yet made they humble sute vnto hym that he wolde graunte them that with his fauour they myght eyther goo ageyne to *Hispaniola*, or that he hym selfe wolde brynge them to *Nicuesa*: And that they wolde for his gentelnes declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde hym with twoo thousande drammes of golde. For they were

Fogeda consumeth
by force of the
[veneme.]

Beragua and
Vraba.
Nicuesa.

The goulfe Coiba.
Dyuers languages.

Bergantynes or
brigantynes.

Barnardino de
Calauera.

Ancifus.

54

Fogeda returneth
to hispaniola.

Famyne

A brigantine
drowned with the
stroke of a fyfhe.

The Ilande Fortis.

Ancifus.
The Region of
Cuchibacoa.
Boium gatti.

Mountaynes
couered with
snowe.
Serra Neuata.
Os Draconis.

ryche in golde, but poore in breade. But *Ancifus* assented to neyther of theyr requestes: affirmynge that he myght by no meanes goo anye other way then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to *Fogeda*. Where vppon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his vyage directly toward *Vraba*. But nowe let it not seme tedious to yowre holynes to heare of one thyng worthy to bee remembred, which chaunced to this Lieuetenaunt *Ancifus* as he came thether. For he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramairi* whiche wee sayde to bee famous by reason of the hauen of *Carthago*: and of the goodly stature, strenght, and beawty of both men and women beinge in the fame. Here he sent certeyne to goo alande on the shore, both to fetche fresshe water, and also to repaire the shippe boate which was fore broofed. In this meane tyme a greate multitude of the people of the countrey armed after theyr maner, came aboute owre men as they were occupied abowte theyr bufynes, and stode in a redynes to feight, for the space of three dayes contynually: duryng whiche tyme, neyther durft they fet vppon owre men, nor owre men assayle them. Thus bothe parties keepynge theyr arraye, stode styll three hole dayes the one gafynge on the other. Yet all this tyme owre men applyed theyr woorke, placinge the shippwrightes in the myddeste of theyr armye. As they stode thus amased, twoo of owre coompanye wente to fyll theyr water pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where foodenly there came furthe ageynste them a capitayne of the barbarians with ten armed men which inclosed them, and with terrible countenance bent theyr arrowes ageynste them, but shotte theym not of. One of owre men fledde: but the other remayned, caulynge his felowe ageyne and rebukynge hym for his fearefulnes. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language which he had lerned beinge conuerfant with the captiues that were caryed from thense longe before. They marueyllynge to here a straunger speake in their natiue tonge, put of theyr fiercenes and fell to frendly communication, demaunding who were the capitaynes of that coompanye whiche were arryued in theyr lande. He answered that they were strangers passyng by: And that he marueyled why they wold attempte to dryue them from theyr coastes and disturbe theyr shyppes: arguynge theim of follye and crueltie, and further threatinge their ruine and destruction, except they wold vse them selues more frendly towarde them. For hee aduertised them that there wolde shortly coome into theyr lande armed men, in nomber lyke to the fandes of the sea: And that to theyr vtter destruction, not only if they refysted them not, but also excepte they receaued them and enterteined them honorably. In the meane tyme *Ancifus* was enformed that his men were deteyned. Wherefore suspectynge fume deceate, he browght furth al his target men for feare of theyr venemous arrowes: And settinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde towarde them which steyed his men. But he which communed with the barbarians, gyuinge him a signe with his hande to procede noo further, he steyed. And caulynge to hym the other, he knewe that all was safe. For the barbarians profered him peace, bycause they were not they whom they suspected them to haue byn: meanyng by *Fogeda* and *Nicuesa*, who had spoyled the vyllage stadinge there by the sea fyde, and caryed away many captiues, and also burnt an other vyllage further within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of theyr commynge thether, was to reuenge those iniuries, if by any meanes they coulde. Yet that they wolde not exercyse theyr weapons ageynste the innocente. For they sayde it was vngodly to feyght ageynst any, not beinge prouoked. Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they enterteined owre men gentelly, and gaue them great plentie of salted fysshe and breade of theyr contrey: And fylled theyr vessels with fyder made of theyr contrey frutes and feedes, not inferiour to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Ancifus* hauinge entered into frendshyp and made a league of peace with th[e] inhabitants of *Caramairi* whiche were before fore prouoked by other capitaynes, he lanced from that lande, and directed his course to *Vraba* by the Ilande *Fortis*, hauinge in his shippe a hundreth and fyftie fresshe men whiche were substitute in the place of fuche as were deade. Also twelue mares, and manye swine, and other beastes both males and females for increase. Lykewyse, fyftie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multytude of targettes, swoordes, iaelyns, and fuche other weapons for the warres. But all this with euyl speede and in an euylle houre. For as they were euen nowe enteringe into the hauen, the gouernour of the shippe which fatte at the helme, stroke the shyppe vppon the fandes, where it was soo fast enclosed, and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened in the myddeste, and al loft that was therein. A thyng surely miserable to beholde. For of all the vytayles that they had, they saued onely twelue barels of meale, with a fewe chiefes, and a lyttle bysket breade. For al the beastes were drowned: And they them selues scaped hardly and halfe naked by helpe of the brigantine and ship boate, caryeng with them only a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into an other, beinge nowe more carefull fo rtheyr lyues then for golde. Yet beinge browght alyue and in health to that land which they soo greatly defyred, they coulde doo noo lesse then to prouide for the susteynyng of theyr bodyes, bycause they coulde not lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne fayled, they must needes lyue by other mens. Yet amonge these soo many aduersities, one good chaunce offered it selfe vnto them. For they founde, not farre from the sea fyde, a groue of date trees, amonge the which, and also amonge the reke or weedes of the maryshes, they espyed a multitude of wylde bores, with whose fleshe they fed them selues wel certeyne dayes. These they say to bee lesse then owres: And with soo shorte tayles, that they thought they had byn cutte of. They dyffer also from owres in theyr feete: for theyr hynder feete are hole vndiuided, and also withowte any

Riche in gold and pore in breade.

The Region of Caramairi

Feare on both partes.

Ship wryghtes.

55

The vse of targettes agenst venemous arrowes

The barbarians haue respect to iustice

Salted fishe.

Wyne of frutes and seedes.

Vraba.

Artillerie.

Ancifus ship wracke.

Meale, cheeses, and bysket.

A groue of date trees.

Wylde bores.

56 houfe. But they affirme that they haue proued by experience theyr flefthe to bee of better taste and more holfoome then owres. Duryng this tyme, they fedde also of dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate likewyse in Ciuile and *Granata* where they caule them *Palmitos*, of the leaues wherof they make biefomes in Rome. Sumetymes also, they eate of the appels of that Region, whiche haue the taste of prunes, and haue also stoncs in them, and are but lyttle and of redde coloure. I suppose them to bee of that kynde wherof I eate in the citie of *Alexandria* in Egypt in the moneth of Aprell: The trees wherof, the Iewes that dwel there, beinge lerned in the lawe of Moyfes, affirme to bee the Ceders of Libane, which beare owlde frutes and newe all the yeare as dothe the orange tree. These apples are good to bee eaten, and haue a certeyne sweetnes myxte with a gentell sharpnes, as haue the frutes cauled *Sorbes*. Th[e]inhabitantes plant these trees in theyr orchyarden and garedens, and nooryshe them with greate diligence as wee doo cherries, peaches, and quynses. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunke, is verye lyke vnto the tree that beareth the frute cauled *Zizipha*, which the Apothecaries caule *Iuiuba*. But wheras now the wylde bores beganne to faile them, they were ageyne enforced to consulte and prouyde for the tyme to coome. Where vppon with theyr hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are mooste experte archers. *Ancifus* had in his coompany, a hundreth men. They mette by the way with only three men of th[e]inhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes and venemous arrowes, who without al feare, assayled owr men fiercely, wounded manye, and flewe manye: And when they had emptied theyr quyuers, fledde as swyftely as the wynde: For (as we haue sayde) they are excedyng swyfte of foote by reason of theyr loose goinge frome theyr chyldes age. They affirme that they lette slyppe no arrowe owte of theyr bowes in vayne. Owre men therfore returned the same waye that they came, much more infortunate then they were before and consulted amonge them selues to leaue that lande: especyally because th[e]inhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortresse which *Fogeda* buylded, and had burnte thirtie houfes of the vyllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*, had forsaken the lande. By this occasion therefore, beinge dryuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the weste fyde of that goulfe of *Vraba*, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherefore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men thither with the brigantine, and lefte the other nere to the sea fyde on the easte part. This goulfe, is. xxiiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is soo muche the narrower. Into the goulfe of *Vraba*, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they say) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. This ryuer is cauled *Darien*, vppon the bankes whereof, beinge verye frutefull of trees and grasse, they entended to playnte their newe colonie or habitacion. But th[e]inhabitantes maruelynge at the brygantyne beinge bygger then theyr canoas, and specially at the sayles therof, fyrst sente away theyr chyldren and weakeste sorte of theyr people with theyr baggage and housholde stufte, and assembled all fuche togyther bothe men and women, as were meete for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and desperate myndes, they stode in a redynes to feight, and taryed the comminge of owre men vppon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take th[e]aduantage of the grounde. Owre men iudged them to bee aboute fyue hundreth in nomber. Then *Ancifus* the capitayne of owre men, and Lieuetenaunt in the steede of *Fogeda*, settinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole coompany kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayers to god for the victorie, and a vowe to the Image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in Ciuile, by the name of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, promynginge to fende her manye golden gyftes and a straunger of that contrey: also to name the vyllage *Sancta Maria Antiqua* after her name: lykewyse to erecte a temple cauled by the same name: or at the leaste to dedicate the king of that prouince his palaice to that vse, if it shulde please her to assiste them in this daungerous enterpryse. This doone, al the souldiers tooke an othe, that noo man shulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redynes with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumpeter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assayled theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owre men, were putte to flyght, with theyr kynge and capitayne *Cemaccus*. Owre men entered into the vyllage, where they fownde plentie of meate fuche as the people of the contrey vse, sufficiente to assuage theyr present hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certeine frutes vnlyke vnto owres, whiche they referue for store as wee doo chestnuttes. Of these people, the men are vtterly naked: but the women from the nauell downwarde, are couered with a fyne clothe made of goffampine cotton. This Region is vtterly withowte any sharpenes of wynter. For the mouthe of this ryuer of *Darien*, is only eyght degrees distante from the *Equinoctiall* lyne: So that the commone sorte of owre men, scarsely perceau any difference in lengthe betwene the day and nyght all the hole yeare. But bycause they are ignorant in astronome, they can perceau noo smaule difference. Therefore wee neede not much passe if the degree do differ sum what from theyr opinion, for asmuche as the difference can not bee greate. The day after that they arryued at the lande, they sayled alonge by the ryuer, where they founde a greate thicket of reedes continuinge for the space of a myle in length supposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the bortherers there aboute which had fledde, had eyther lyne lurkyng there, or els to haue hyd theyr stufte amonge those reedes: Where vppon, armynginge them selues with theyr targettes, for feare of the people lyinge in ambusshe, they searched the thicket dilygently,

Apples of a strange kynd

Ceders of Libane.

Sorbes are cauled in french Cormier they grow not in Englande. The frute cauled zizipha or Iuiuba

Canibales.

Men of desperat boldnes.

The goulfe of Vraba.

The great ryuer of Darien, fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.

Prayer and voves.

The souldiers make an othe.

The barbarians are dryuen to flight.

57

Chestnuttes.

The ryuer of Darien, but viii. degrees from the Equinoctial.

Golde founde in a thicket of reedes.

and founde it withowte men, but replenyshed with householde stufte and golde. They fownde also a great multitude of sheetes, made of the fylke or cotton of the goffampine tree. Lykewyse dyuers kyndes of vessels and tooles made of woodde, and many of earth: Also many breste plates of gold and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the fum of a hundreth and twoo pounce weight. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although it bee not the price of thynges amonge them as with vs. They haue it owte of other Regions for exchange of such thynges as theyr contrey bringeth furthe. For suche Regions as haue plentie of breade and goffampine, lacke golde: And suche as brynge furth golde, are for the most parte rowght with montaynes and rockes, and therefore baren. And thus they exercise marchandies withowte the vse of money. Reioysing therefore with double gladdenes, aswell in that they sawe greate lyknes of golde, as also that fortune hadde offered them soo fayre and frutefull a contrey, they sent for theyr felowes whom they hadde lefte before in the easte syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. Yet fume saye that the ayer is there vnholosome, bycause that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley enuironed with mountaynes and marysshes.

Sheetes of
gossampine.

Breste plates of
golde.

The golden
Regions, are for
the moste parte
baren.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
Of the supposed continente.



Haue described to yowre holynes where *Fogeda* with his coompany (to whome the large tractes of *Vraba* was assigned to inhabite) intended to fasten there foote. Lette vs nowe therefore leaue them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and returne ageyne to *Nicuesa* to whom the gouernance and Lieuetenauteshippe of the moste large prouince of *Beragua* (beinge the weste syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicuesa* departinge with one carauell and twoo brigantines frome *Vraba* the iurisdiction of his frende and companyon *Fogeda*, directed his course westwarde to *Beragua*, leauinge the bygger shippes sumewhat behynde hym, to folowe hym a farre of. But he tooke this diuise in an euyll howre. For he bothe loste his felowes in the nyght, and went past the mouth of the ryuer of *Beragua*, which he chiefly fowght. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernoure of one of the greate shippes, had the conducte of one of the brigantines. He comynge behynde, lerned of th[e]inhabitates which was the way Eastwarde to the goulfe of *Beragua* ouer passed and lefte behynde of *Nicuesa*. *Olanus* therefore directinge his course towarde the Easte, mette with the other brigantine which had also wandered owte of the way by reason of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they consulted what was best to bee doone, and which way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken his vyage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicuesa* could no more lacke fum to put him in remembraunce of *Beragua*, then they them selues were myndful therof, hopynge also to fynde hym there. They sayled therefore towarde *Beragua*: where they founde within. xvi. myles dystant, a ryuer which *Colonus* named *Lagartos*, bycause it nooryshethe greate lysardes whiche in the Spanyshe toonge are cauled *Lagartos*. These lysertes are hurtfull bothe to man and beaste, and in shape muche lyke vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. In this ryuer, they founde theyr companyons and felowes of theyr erreure lyinge at anker with the greate shippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole assembl[i]e beinge carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours erreure, after consultacion, by th[e]aduise of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had rased nere vnto the coastes of *Beragua*, they sayled directly thether. *Beragua*, in the language of th[e]inhabitates of the same prouince, is as much to faye, as the golden ryuer. The region it selfe is also cauled by the same name, takynge name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vessels cast anker, and conueighed al theyr vytailes and other necessaries to lande with theyr shippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the steede of *Nicuesa* whom they had loste. By th[e]aduise therefore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the souldiers which they had nowe browght thether, and to make them the more wyllinge to inhabite that land, they vtterly forfooke and caste of those shippes beinge nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to bee shaken and broosed of the furies of the sea. Yet of theyr foundeste planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they say to be excedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauell shortly after, whiche they myght vse to ferue for theyr necessitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfortunate destenie of *Petrus de Vmbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwardenes to attempte thynges (in whiche sumetyme fortune wyll beare a stroke notwithstandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym th[e]aduenture to searche the shore to th[e]intent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beste coome alande. For this purpose, he chose

Fogeda, the
Lieuetenaunt of
Vraba.

Nicuesa the
Lieuetenaunt of
Beragua.

Nicuesa loste his
felowes in the
nyght.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de vmbria

The capitaynes
consulte where to
find theyr lost
gouernour.

The ryuer
Lagartos.

58

The golden ryuer
of *Beragua*.

The enterprise
and death of
Petrus de Vmbria.

The daungerous
place of Scilla in
the sea of Cicilie.

Swymmyng

The fysshers boate
of Nicuesa his
carauele.

The miserable
case of Nicuesa.

59

The Region of
Gratia Dei or
Cerabaro.
The ryuer of
Sancti Matthei.

The rigorousnes
of Nicuesa.

Corne waxeth
rype euery fourth
month

The commendation
of a younge man
brought vp with
Colonus.

Portus Bellus.
Weakenes of
hunger.

Cape, Marmor.

hym twelue maryners, and wente aboarde the shippe boate whiche ferued the greateste shyppes. The flowinge of the fea, raged and rored there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the daungerous place of *Scylla* in the fea of Scicilie, by reason of the houghe and ragged rockes reachyng into the fea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noyfe and rowghnes on the water, whiche rowghnes or reflowinge, the Spanyardes caule *Refaca*. In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wresteled a while. But in shorte space, a waue of the fea almoste as bygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate and deuoured the same with the men, euen in the fight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reason he was experte in swymmyng. For gettynge holde of the corner of a rocke, and susteynyng the rage of the fea vntyll the nexte daye when it waxed calme, and the shore was drye by the faule of the water, he escaped and reforted to his coompanye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye caste away. The resydue of the coompany, durst not commite them selues to the shippe boates, but went alande with theyr brigantines. Where remaynyng a fewe dayes, and saylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e]inhabitanes, which they caule *Mumu*. Here they beganne to build a fortresse, and to sowe seedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutefull grownde, bicause in other places the region is baren. As these thynges were thus dooynge in *Beragua*, one of their coompanye standynge vpon the toppe of a hyghe rocke of especiall, and lyftyng his eyes towarde the Weste, beganne to crye, *Lynnyn sayles, lynnyn sayles*. And the nerer it drewe towarde hym, he perceaued it to bee a shyppes boate commynge with a lyttle sayle. Yet receaued they it with muche reioyfyng: for it was the fysshers boate of *Nicuesa* his carauele, and of capacitie to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but three in it, which had stolne it from *Nicuesa* bycause he refused to gyue credit to them that he had passed *Beragua*, and lefte it behynde hym Eastwarde. For they feinge *Nicuesa* and his felowes to confume dayely by famynne, thought they wolde proue fortune with that boate, if their chaunce myght bee to fynde *Beragua*, as in deede it was. Debatinge therefore with theyr felowes, of these matters, they declared howe *Nicuesa* erred and loste the carauele by tempest, and that he was nowe wanderynge amonge the marysshes of vnknown coastes, full of myferie and in extreeme penurie of all thynges, hauynge nowe lyued for the space of three score and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and fylldome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes faylyng, bycause he was instant to trauayle westwarde by foote, supposynge by that meanes to come to *Beragua*. *Colonus* the fyrste fynder of this mayne lande, had coasted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitantes caule it *Cerabaro*. Throgh this Region, there runneth a ryuer which owre men named *Sancti Matthei*, distante from the weste syde of *Beragua* aboute a hundrethe and thirtie myles. Here I lette passe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which th[e]inhabitanes vse, bycause owre men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductor of one of the shippes of *Nicuesa*, and nowe also vice Leauetenaunt in his steede, after that he hadde receaued this information of the maryners, sente thether a brigantine vnder theyr guydyng, these maryners therefore, which came in the fysshers boate, founde *Nicuesa*, and brought hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whome at his commynge he caste in pryson, and accused hym of treason bycause he vsurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenauntshippe, and that for the desyre he had to beare rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: also that he behaued hym selfe negligently: demaunding further more of hym, what was the cause of his soo longe delay. Lykewyse he spake to al the vnder officers sharplye and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to trusse vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They desyred hym to quyet hym selfe, and to forbear them a while vntyl they had reaped the corne that they had sowne, which wolde shortly bee rype. For all kynd of corne waxeth rype there euery fourth moonethe after it is sowne. But he vtterly denied to tarye any whytte: but that he wolde forthwith departe from that vnfortunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that euer was brought into the goulfe of *Beragua*, and commaunded them to directe theyr course towarde the Easte. After they had sayled aboute the space of. xvi. myles, a certeyne younge man whose name was Gregorie, a Genues borne, and of a chylde brought vp with *Colonus*, cauled to remembrance that there was a hauen not farre frome thense: And to proue his sayynge trewe, he gaue his felowes these tokens: that is, that they shulde fynde vpon the shore, an anker of a loste shyppes halfe couered with sande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the hauen, a sprynge of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the sprynge, and commended the wytt and memorye of the younge man, that he only amonge many of the maryne[r]s whiche had searched those coastes with *Colonus*, bore the thynges soo well in mynde. This hauen, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus*. Wheras in this vyage for lacke of vytayles they were sumetymes enforced to goo alande, they were euel entreated of the inhabitantes. By reason wherof, theyr strengthes were soo weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre ageynst naked men, or scarfely to beare theyr harnes on their backs. And therefore owre men loste twentie of theyr coompanye, which were slayne with venemous arrowes. They consulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the hauen of *Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicuesa* tooke with hym towarde the Easte: where abowte twentie and eyght myles from *Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortresse harde by the sea syde vpon the poynte or cape which in tyme paste *Colonus* named *Marmor*.

But they were soo feeble by reason of longe hunger, that theyr strength serued them not to fusteyne suche laboure. Yet he erected a lyttle towre able to resyst the fyrst assaute of the inhabitantes. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei*. From the tyme that he left *Beragua*, what in the iorney amonge the sandie playnes, then also for hunger whyle he buylded the towre, of the fewe which remayned a lyue, he losse twoo hundreth. And thus by lyttle and lyttle, the multitude of seuen hundreth foure score and fyue men, was nowe browght to scarfely one hundreth. Whyle *Nicuesa* lyued with these few miserable men, there arose a contention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concerninge the Lieuetenantshippe. For one *Vaschus Nunnez*, by the iudgemente of all men, trustyng more to his strengthe then wytte, stoured vp certeyne lyght felowes ageynst *Ancifus*, sayinge that *Ancifus* had not the kynges letters patentes for that office: And that it was not sufficient that he was autorised by *Fogeda*, And therefore forbodde that he shulde execute the office of the Lieuetenauteshippe: And wyllled them to chuse certeyne of theyr owne companye, by whose counsaile and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.

Thus beinge diuided into factions by reason that *Fogeda*, their capitayne came not ageyne, whom they suppossed to bee nowe deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whether it were beste to substitute *Nicuesa* in his place. The wyfeste sorte suche as were famylier with *Nicuesa*, and coulde not beare th[e]insolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, thought it good that *Nicuesa* shuld bee sough t owt through owt all those coastes. For they had knoweledge that he departed from *Beragua* bycause of the barrenes of the grounde: And that by th[e]example of *Ancifus*, and suche other as had made shippewracke, it were possible that he might wander in some secrete place: And that they coulde not be quiete in their myndes vntyll they knewe the certentie, whether he with his felowes were alyue or deade. But *Vaschus Nunnez*, fearinge leaste at the commyng of *Nicuesa* he shulde not bee had in autoritie amonge his felowes, sayde they were mad men to thinke that *Nicuesa* lyued: And althowgh he were alyue, yet that they hadde noo neade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meete to rule as *Nicuesa*. While they were thus reasonyng too and froo, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* arryued in those coastes with two greate shippes hauinge in them three score freshe men, with greate plentie of vitales and apparel. Of the navigation of this *Colmenaris*, I intende to speake sumewhat more. He therefore departed from the hauen of *Hispaniola* cauled *Beata* (where they prepare and furnyshe them selues whiche make any viage into these landes) aboute the Ides of October in the yeare. 1510: And landed the. ix. of Nouember in a Region in the large prouince of *Paria* founde by *Colonus* betwene the hauen *Carthago* and the Region of *Cuchibachoa*. In this viage what by the rowghnes of the sea and fiercenes of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities. For when his freshe water fayled, he fayled to the mouthe of a certeyne riuer which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Gaira*, beinge apte to receaue shippes. This ryuer had his course from the toppe of an excedinge hyghe mountayne couered with snowe, hygher then the which, all the companyons of this capitayne *Rodericus*, saye that they neuer sawe. And that by good reason, yf it were couered wyth snowe in that Region which is not past ten degrees distante from the *Equinoctial* lyne. As they beganne to drawe water owt of their shippeboate, a certeyne Kyng made towarde them appareled with vestures of gossampine cotton, hauinge twentie noble men in his companye appareled also: Whyche thinge seemed straunge to owre men, and not seene before in those parties. The Kinges apparell, hunge loose from his shoulders to his elbowes: And from the gerdle downewarde, it was muche like a womans kertle, reachinge euen to his heeles. As he drewe nere towarde owre men, he seemed frendly to admonyshe them to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirminge it to bee vnholsome for men: And shewed them that not farre from thense, there was a ryuer of good water. They came to the ryuer. And endeuouringe to coome nere the shore, they were dryuen backe by tempeste. Also the burbulinge of the sande, declared the sea to bee but shalowe there. They were therefore enforced to returne to the fyrste ryuer where they myght safely caste anker. This Kinge layde wayte for owre men. For as they were fyllinge their barrells, he set on them with abowt seuen hundreth men (as owre men iudged) armed after their maner, althowgh they were naked. For only the kyng and his noble men were appareled. They tooke away the shippeboate, and brooke it in maner to chips: soo fiercely assaylyng owre menne with their venemous arrowes, that they slewe of them fortie and seuen beefore they coulde couer them selues with their targettes. For that poyson is of such force, that albeit the woundes were not great, yet they dyed therof immediatly. For they yet knewe noo remedie ageynste this kynde of poyson, as they after lerned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Hispaniola*. For this Ilande bringeth forth an herbe which quencheth and mortifieth the violent poyson of the herbe wherewith their arrowes are infected, soo that it bee ministred in tyme. Yet of owre company whiche went for water, seuen escaped that conflicte, and hyd them selues in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there vntyll nyght. Yet escaped they not the handes of their enemyes. For the shippe departed from thense in the nyght seafon and leste them there, supposinge that they had byn slayne. Thus by manye suche perels and daungers (which I lyghtly ouerpasse bicause I wyl not bee tedious to yowre holynes) he arryued at the length at the hauen of *Vraba*, and cast anker at the easte fyde therof, from whense not longe before, owre men departed to the west fyde by reason of the barrenes of that foyle. When he had

Nomen Dei.
Nicuesa his men
consumed

Contencion
about the
lieuetenauteship
of Vraba.
Vaschus Nunnez
moueth sedition.
Ancifus
lieuetenaunt for
Fogeda.

60

Nicuesa.

*Rodericus
Colmenaris.*
The nauigation
of Rodericus
Colmenaris.

Cuchibachoa.

The ryuer *Gaira*.

An exceding hygh
mountayne
couered with
snowe.

Appareled men.

Seuen and forty
Spanyars are
slaine with
venemous arrowes.

Ierua.
A remedie agenste
venemous arrows

Seuen men left
behynde.

The hauen of
Vraba.

61

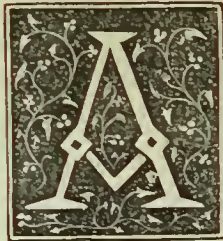
The goulfe of
Vraba.
Dariena.

Famen.

What became of
the contention of
Vraba

contynued a whyle in the hauen, and sawe noo man stourynge, marueylinge at the silence of the places (for he supposed there to haue fownde his felowes) he coulde not coniecture what this shulde meane: and there vppon beganne to suspecte that eyther they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place of theyr habitacion. To knowe the certentie hereof, he commaunded all the greate ordinaunce and other finaule gunnes which he had in his shippes, to bee charged: And fyers to bee made in the nyght vppon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyers beinge kyndeled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee shotte of at one instante: by the horrible noyse whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was shaken, althowghe it were. xxiiii. myles distante: for soo brode is the goulfe. This noyse was harde of theyr felowes in *Dariena*: And they aunswered them ageyne with mutual fyers. Wherefore, by the folowynge of these fyers, *Colmenaris* browght his shippes to the West syde. Here those wretched and miserable men of *Dariena* which nowe thorowgh famen and feeblenes helde theyr very fowles in theyr teethe redy to departe from theyr bodies by reason of the calamities which beefell vnto them after *Ancifus* shippewracke, lystinge vp theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnyng downe theyr cheekes bothe for ioye and forowe, embrased *Rodericus* and his felowes with such kynde of reioysinge as their presente necessitie seemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withowte vytayles and almoste naked, he browght them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. It restethe nowe (moste holy father) to declare what came of the dissention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernynge the gouernaunce after the losse of theyr capitaynes.

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE Of the supposed continent.

Beragua.Nicuesa is sought
foorthNicuesa is founde
in a miserable
case.Insolencie of to
much felicitie.

62

Nicuesa fauleth
from one miserie
into an other.

All the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and such as were most politike in counsayle, determyned that *Nicuesa* shulde bee sowght owte if by any meanes he coulde bee founde. Where vppon they tooke from *Ancifus* the gouernoure refusinge the commynge of *Nicuesa*, a brygantyne whiche he made of his owne charges: And agreed, ageynst bothe the wyll of *Ancifus*, and the master of fence *Vaschus Nunnez*, that *Nicuesa* shulde bee sowght foorth to take away the stryfe as touchinge the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllynge hym to make diligent search for *Nicuesa* in those coastes where they supposed he erred. For they harde that he had forsaken *Beragua*, the region of an vnfrutefull grounde. They gaue hym therfore commaundement to brynge *Nicuesa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he shulde doo ryght good seruice to coome thether, in takyng away th[e] occasion of theyr seditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the thyng vppon hym the more gladly bycause *Nicuesa* was his very frende: Supposinge that his commynge with vytayles shulde bee noo lesse thankefull to *Nicuesa* and his coompanie, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Furnysshynge therefore one of his owne shippes whiche he browght with hym and also the brigantyne taken frome *Ancifus*, he frayghted the same with part of the vytayles and other necessaries which he browght with hym before from *Hispaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus coursynge alonge by all the coastes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynte called *Marmor*, he founde *Nicuesa*, of all lyuynge men most infortunate, in maner dryed vppe with extreeme hunger, fylthye and horrible to beholde, with onely three score men in his company, leste alyue of feuen hundreth. They al seemed to hym soo miserable, that he noo lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had founde them deade. But *Colmenaris* confortd his frende *Nicuesa*: and embrasinge hym with teares and cherefull woordes, relyued his spirites, and further encoraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declarynge also that his commynge was looked for and greatelye defyred of al the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his autoritie, theyr discorde and contention shulde bee fynnyshed. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after such forte as his calamitie requyred. Thus they tooke shyppe to gyther, and sayled directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vnconstant is the nature of man, that he soone groweth owte of vse, becommeth insolente and vnmyndful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicuesa*, after thus many teares and weepynge, after dyuers bewaylinges of his infortunate destiny, after so many thankes geuyng, ye after that he had faulen downe to the grounde and kyssed the feete of *Colmenaris* his sauoure, he beganne to quarel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, repprouinge hym and them all for th[e] alteration of the state of thynges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirming that none of them owght to haue layde hande of any golde with owte the aduice of hym or of *Fogeda* his coompanion. When these sayinges and suche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they soo floured vp the myndes of *Ancifus* Lieuetenaunte for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaschus Nunnez*, of the contrary parte, ageynste *Nicuesa*,

that shortly after his arryuall with his three score men, they commaunded hym with threatenynge to departe from thenfe. But this pleased not the better fort. Yet fearynge leaft tumult shulde bee amonge the people whom *Vaschus Nunnez* had stered to factions, the best parte was fayne to giue place to the greateft. This wretched man therefore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseris, was thruſte into the brigantyne whiche he hym ſelfe browght: and with hym only ſeuentene men, of his three ſcore which remayned alyue. He tooke ſhypp in the Calendes of Marche in the yeare. 1511. intendynge to goo to *Hispaniola* to coomplayne of the raffhenes of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Ancifus*. But he entered into the brigantine in an vnfortunate houre: for he was neuer ſeene after. They ſuppoſe that the brigantine was drowned with all the men therin. And thus vnhappy *Nicuesa* faulynge headlonge owte of one miſerye into an other, ended his lyfe more myſerablye then he lyued. *Nicuesa* beinge thus vylely reiected, and al theyr vytayles confumed which *Colmenaris* browght them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woolues feakyng theyr praye, to inuade ſuche as dwelte abowte theyr confynes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therefore, theyr newe capitayne of theyr owne election, aſſemblinge togyther a hundreth and thirtie men, and ſettinge them in order of battell after his ſwoordeplayers faſhion, puffed vppe with pryde, placed his ſouldiers as pleased hym in the forward and rereward, and fume as pertifens abowt his owne perſon. Thus aſſociatinge with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to ſpoyle the kynges which were bortherers there abowte, and came fyrſt to a Region abowte that coaſte, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mencion before) imperiouſly and with cruel countenance commaundynge the kyng of the region whoſe name was *Careta*, (of whome they were neuer troubled as often as they paſſed by his dominions) to gyue them vytayles. But *Careta* denyed that he coulde gyue them any at that tyme: alleagyng that he had oftentimes ayded the Chriſtians as they paſſed by thoſe coaſtes: by reaſon wherof his flore was nowe confumed: Alſo that by the meanes of the contynual warre which he kepte euer from his chyldes age with a kyng whoſe name is *Poncha*, bortheringe vppon his dominion, he and his famelie were in greate ſcarfenes of all thynges. But *Vaschus* wolde admytte none of theſe excuſes: And thervppon tooke *Careta* priſoner, ſpoyled his vyllage, and browght hym bownd with his twoo wyues and chyldren and all his famelie to *Dariena*. With this kyng *Careta*, they founde three of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the whiche when *Nicuesa* paſſed by thoſe coaſtes to ſeeke *Beragua*, fearynge punyſſhement for theyr euyll deſertes ſtoule away from the ſhyppes lyeinge at anker: And when the nauie departed, commytted them ſelues to the mercie of *Careta*, who entertheyned them very frendely. They had nowe bynne there. xviii. moonethes, and were therefore as vtterly naked as the people of the contrey. Duringe this tyme, the meate of th[e]inhabitantes ſeemed vnto them delicate diſſhes and princely fare: eſpecially bycauſe they enioyed the ſame withowte any ſtryfe for myne and thine, which twoo thynges moue and enforce men to ſuch harde ſhyftes and miſeries, that in lyeinge they ſeeme not to lyue. Yet deſyred they to returne to theyr owlde cares, of ſuche force is education and natural eſſection towarde them with whom we haue byn browght vp. The vytayles whiche *Vaschus* browght frome the vyllage of *Careta* to his felowes lefte in *Dariena*, was rather ſumewhat to aſſuage theyr preſent hunger, then vtterly to take away theyr neceſſitie. But as touchinge *Ancifus* beinge Lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda*, whether it were before theſe thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am ſure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicuesa*, many occaſions were fought agenſt *Ancifus* by *Vaschus* and his factionaries. Howe ſoo euer it was, *Ancifus* was taken, and caſt in pryſon, and his goodes conſiſcate. The cauſe hereof was, (as *Vaschus* alleaged) that *Ancifus* hadde his commiſſion of the Lieuetenauntſhippe, of *Fogeda* onely whome they ſayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kyng. Sayinge that he wolde not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym ſelfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the requere of the graueſte forte, he was ſumewhat pacified, and delt more gently with hym, hauinge ſum compaſſion of his calamities. And thervppon commaunded hym to bee loofed. *Ancifus* beinge at libertie, tooke ſhypp to departe from thenfe to *Hispaniola*. But beefore he had hoyſed vppe his ſayle, all the wyfeſt forte reforted to hym, humbly deſyryng hym to returne ageyne: promyſyng that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vaschus* beinge reconciled, he myght bee reſtored to his full autoritie of the Lieuetenauntſhippe. But *Ancifus* refuſed to conſent to theyr requere and ſoo departed. Yet ſume there were that murmured that god and his angels ſhewed this reuenge vpon *Ancifus*, bycauſe *Nicuesa* was reiected through his counſayle. Howe ſoo euer it bee, the ſearchers of the newe landes, faule headlonge into ruine by theyr owne follye, confuminge them ſelues with ciuile diſcorde, not weighinge ſoo greate a matter, nor employinge theyr beſte endeouere aboute the ſame as the woorthynes of the thyng requyred. In this meane tyme, they determyned all with one agreemente, to ſende meſſengers into *Hispaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, ſonne and heyre to *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the fynder of theſe landes, and to the other gouernours of the Ilande (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to ſignifie vnto them what ſtate they floode in, and in what neceſſitie they lyued: alſo what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thinges if they were furnyſhed with plentie of vytayles and other neceſſaries. For this purpoſe they elected at the aſſignment of *Vaschus*, one *Valdiuia*, beinge one of his faction, and inſtructed by hym ageinſt *Ancifus*. And to bee aſſiſtant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a Cantabrian: So that commaunde-

The greateſt part ouercommeth the beſt

The death of *Nicuesa*.

Famen enforſeth them to faule to ſpoilyng.
Vaschus vſurpeth th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenauntſhippe.

Careta, kinge of *Coiba*.

Kyng *Careta* is taken and ſpoyled.

Hunger is the beſt ſauce.
 Myne and thine the ſeedes of al miſcheſe.

Ancifus, lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda* is caſt in priſon.

Ancifus taket his vyage to *hispaniola*.

63

The reueng[e] of God.

The inconueniences of diſcorde.

The ſonne and heyre of *Colonus*, is Admirall and Viceroy of *hispaniola*.

Valdiuia.

Zamudius and Ancifus, take their vyage to Spayne.	ment was gyuen to <i>Valdiuia</i> to returne from <i>Hispaniola</i> with vytayles: And <i>Zamudius</i> was appoynted to take his vyage into Spayne to the kynge. They tooke shippe togyther with <i>Ancifus</i> , hauinge in mynde to certifie the kynge howe thynges were handeled there, muche otherwyfe then <i>Zamudius</i> information. I my selfe spake with both <i>Ancifus</i> and <i>Zamudius</i> at their commynge to the courte. Whyle they were occupied aboute these matters, those wretched men of <i>Dariena</i> loosed <i>Careta</i> the kynge of <i>Coiba</i> vppon condicion that he shulde ayde them in
Kynge Poncha.	theyr warres ageynst his enemy and theyrs, kynge <i>Poncha</i> bortheringe vpon his dominions. <i>Careta</i> made a league with them, promysinge that as they passed by his kyngedome, he wolde gyue them all thynges necessarie, and meete them with an armie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agenst <i>Poncha</i> . Their weapons are nother bowes nor venemed arrowes, as we fayde th[e]inhabitanes to haue which dwel eastwarde beyonde the goulfe. They feight therefore at hande, with longe swordes (which they caule <i>Macanas</i>) made of wood
Swordes of woodde.	bycaufe they haue noo Iren. They vse also longe flaues lyke iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer, or typte with bone. Also certeyne flynges and dartes. Thus after the league made with <i>Careta</i> , bothe he and owre men had certeyne dayes appoynted them to tyll their grounde and fowe theyr feedes. This doone, by the ayde of
Kynge Careta conspireth with the Spanyardes agenst kynge Poncha.	<i>Careta</i> and by his conduction, they marched towarde the palaice of <i>Poncha</i> , who fledde at their commynge. They spoyled his vyllage and mytigated their hunger with such vytayles as they founde there. Yet couldde they not helpe their felowes therwith by reason of the farre distance of the place, althowghe they had greate plentie.
Wrought gold	For the vyllage of <i>Poncha</i> , was more then a hundreth myles distant from <i>Dariena</i> : wheras was also none other remedy but that the same shulde haue byn caryed on mens backes to the sea fyde beinge farre of, where they left their shyppes in the which they came to the vyllage of <i>Careta</i> . Here they founde certeyne powndes weyght of gold, grauen and wrought into fundrye ouches. After the facking of this vyllage they resorted toward the ships intendyng to leaue the kinges of the inland vntouched at this tyme, and to inuade onely them
The region of Comogra, distant frome Dariena. xxx. leaques.	which dwelt by the sea coastes. Not farre from <i>Coiba</i> , in the same tracte, there is a Region named <i>Comogra</i> , and the Kynge thereof, cauled <i>Comogrus</i> after the same name. To this Kynge they came fyrst next after the subuersion of <i>Poncha</i> : And founde his palaice situate in a frutefull playne of twelue leaques in bredthe, at the rootes of the further fyde of the nexte mountaynes. <i>Comogrus</i> had in his courte a certeyne noble man of nere
Kynge Comogrus.	confanguinitie to Kynge <i>Careta</i> , whiche had fledde to <i>Comogrus</i> by reason of certeyne diffention whiche was betwene <i>Careta</i> and hym. These noble men, they caule <i>Iura</i> . This <i>Iura</i> therefore of <i>Coiba</i> , mette owre men by the way, and conciled <i>Comogrus</i> to them, bycaufe he was well knowen to owr men from the time that <i>Nicuesa</i> passed fyrst by those coastes. Owre men therefore went quietlye to the palaice of <i>Comogrus</i> beinge
The kynges palaice.	distante from <i>Dariena</i> thirtie leaques by a plaine waye abowte the mountaynes, This Kynge <i>Comogrus</i> , had feuen fonnes, younge men of comelye forme and stature, whiche he had by fundry wyues. His palaice was framed of postes or proppes made of trees fastened togeyther after a straungé forte, and of foo stronge bylding, that it is of no lesse strength then waules of stone. They which measured the length of the floure thereof, founde it to bee a hundreth and fytie pases, and in breadthe, foure score foote: beinge roofed and pauered with
64	maruelous arte. They founde his store house, furnysshed with abundance of delicate vitales after the maner of their countrey: And his wyne celler replenished with great vesselles of earth and also of woodde fylled with
Wyne and syder	their kynde of wyne and fyder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make their breade of those three kyndes of rootes cauled <i>Iucca</i> , <i>agis</i> , and <i>Maizium</i> , (whereof we spake in the fyrste decade) Soo make they their wyne of the frutes of date trees, and fyder of other frutes and feedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynges, Englyshe men, and owre Spanyardes whych inhabite the mountaynes, as the Vascons and Asturians: likewise
Blacke wine.	in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sueuians, and Heluetians, make certeyne drynkes of barley, wheat, hoppes, and apples. They say also that with <i>Comogrus</i> , they droonk wynes of fundry tastes, both whyte and blacke. But nowe yow shall heare of a thyng more monstros too behoulde. Enterynge therfor into the
The bodyes of deade kynges religiously honoured.	inner partes of the palaice, they were brought into a chamber hanged aboute with the carkefes of men, tyed with ropes of goffampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what they ment by that superstition, they answered that those were the carkefes of the father, graundefather, and great graundefather with the other auncestours of their
Penates.	Kynge <i>Comogrus</i> . Declaringe that they had the same in greate reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thyng to honoure them religiously: And therefore appareled euery of the same sumptuouslye with golde and precious stones accordyng vnto theyr estate. After this forte dyd the antiquitie honoure theyr <i>Penates</i> , whyche
The carcasses of men dried	they thought had the gouernaunce of their lyues. Howe they drye these carkefes vppon certeine instrumentes made of wood, like vnto hurdels, with a softe fyer vnder the same, so that onely the skynne remayneth to houlde
The kynges sonne a yonge man of excellent wytte.	the bones together, we haue described in the former decade. Of <i>Comogrus</i> his feuen fonnes, the eldest had an excellent naturall wytte. He therefore thought it good to flatter and please thys wandryng kynde of men
Foure thousande vneces of wrought golde.	(owr men I meane) lyuyng onely by shiftes and spoyle, least beinge offended and feekyng occasions ageynste hym and his familie, they shuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche sowght noo meanes howe to gratifie them. Wherefore, he gaue <i>Vaschus</i> and <i>Colmenaris</i> foure thousande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fytie
	flaues whyche he had taken in the warres. For suche, eyther they fell for exchaunce of other thynges, or

otherwise vse them as theym lysteth: For they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as much more which they had in an other place, owre men wayed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palaice to separate the fyfte parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the Kynges eschequer. For it is decreed that the fyft parte of both golde, perles, and precious stoncs, shulde be assigned to the Kinges treasourers: And the resydue, to bee diuided emooonge theym selues by composition. Here as brabblyng and contention arose emonge owr men about the diuidinge of gold, this eldeste foonne of Kynge *Comogrus* beinge presente, whome we prayfed for his wysedome, commynge fume what wyth an angry countenance towarde hym whiche helde the balences, he strooke theym wyth his fyfte, and scatered all the golde that was therein, abowte the porche, sharpely rebukyng theym with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Christian men, that yow soo greatly esteeme soo litle a portion of golde more then yowr owne quietnes, whiche neuerthelesse yow entend to deface from these fayre ouches and to melte the same into a rude masse. If yowre hunger of goulde bee soo insatiabile that onely for the desyre yowe haue therto, yowe disquiete soo many nations, and yow yowre selues also susteyne soo many calamit[i]es and incommodities, lyuing like banished men owte of yowre owne countrey, I wyll shewe yowe a Region floweing with goulde, where yowe may satisfie yowr raueninge appetites. But yowe muste attempte the thyng with a greater poure: For it standeth yow in hande by force of armes to ouercome kynges of greate puissaunce, and rigorous defenders of theyr dominions. For besyde other, the greate kynge *Tumanama* will coome foorth ageynste yowe, whose kengdome is mooste ryche with golde, and distante from hense onely fyx foonnes: that is, fyx dayes: for they number the dayes by the sonne. Furthermore, or euer yowe canne coome thether, yow must passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canybales a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans flesshe, lyuing withowte lawes, wanderinge, and withowte empire. For they also, beinge desyrous of golde, haue subdewed them vnder theyr dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vsyng their labour in dygginge and workyng theyr golde in plates and sundry Images lyke vnto these whiche yowe see here. For we doo no more esteeme rude golde vnwrought, then we doo cloddes of earthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the worke-man to the similitude eyther of fume vessell necessarie for owre vse, or fume ouch bewetifull to be worne. These thynges doo wee receaue of them for exchaunge of other of owre thynges, as of prisoners taken in warre, whiche they bye to eate, or for sheetes and other thynges perteynyng to the furnytur of householde, fuche as they lacke which inhabite the mountaynes: And especially for vitayles wherof they stande in greate neede by reason of the barrennes of the mountaynes. This iorney therefore, must bee made open by force of men. And when yowe are passyng ouer these mountaynes (poyntyng with his fynger towarde the southe mountaynes) yowe shal see an other sea, where they sayle with shyppes as bygge as yowres (meanynge the carauelles) vsyng both sayles and ores as yowe doo, althowghe the men bee naked as wee are. All the waye that the water runnethe frome the mountaynes, and all that fyde lyeing towarde the Southe, bryngeth foorth golde abundantly. As he sayde these woordes, he poynted to the vesselles in whiche they vse to serue theyr meate, affirmyng that kynge *Tumanama*, and all the other kynges beyonde the mountaynes, had fuche and al their other householde stuffe of golde: And that there was noo lesse plentie of golde amonge those people of the Southe, then of Iren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wherof owre swoordes and other weapons were made. Owre capitaynes marueylyng at the oration of the naked younge man (for they had for interpretours those three men whiche had byn before a yere and a halfe conuerfant in the court of kynge *Careta*) pondered in theyr myndes, and earnestly considered his sayings. Soo that his rasshenes in scatteringe the golde owte of the balences, they turned to myrth and vrbanitie, commendynge his dooinge and sayyng therin. Then they asked hym frendely, vppon what certeyne knoweledge he spake those thynges: Or what he thought beste herein to bee doone yf they shulde bryng a greater suppye of men. To this, younge *Comogrus*, stayyng a whyle with hym selfe as it were an oratour preparyng him selfe to speake of fume graue matter, and disposyng his bodye to a giesture meete to persuaide, spake thus in his mother tonge. Gyue eare vnto me o yowe Chrystians. Albeit that the gredie hunger of golde hathe not yet vexed vs naked men, yet doo we destroy one an other by reason of ambition and desyre to rule. Hereof springeth mortall hatred amonge vs, and hereof commethe owre destruction. Owre prediceffours kepte warres, and soo dyd *Comogrus* my father with princes beinge bortherers abowte hym. In the which warres, as wee haue ouercoome, so haue wee byn ouercoome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of owre enemyes, of the whiche I haue gyuen yowe fiftie. Lykewyse at an other tyme, owre aduersaries hauinge th[e]upper hande agenste vs, ledde away manye of vs captiue. For fuche is the chaunce of warre. Also, amonge owre familiers (wherof a great number haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the yoke of that kynge beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome is fuche abundance of golde. Of hym, and fuche other innumerable, and lykewyse by the resort of free men on theyr fyde commyng to vs, and ageyne of owre men resortyng to them by safe conduct, these thynges haue byn euer as well knowen vnto vs, as owre owne possessions. But that yowe maye bee the better assured hereof, and bee owte of all suspection that yowe

The distribution of golde.

Young *Comogrus* his oration.

The hunger of golde.

A region floweing wyth golde.

Kynge *Tumanama*.

Canibales.

65

The golde mynes of the mountaynes.

Vnwrought golde not esteemed.

Exchaunge.

Abundance of golde.

Householde stuffe of gold

Naked people tormented with ambition.

A vehement persuasion.

shal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this viage, byndynge me fast and keepyng me in safe custodie to bee hanged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my sayynges in any point vntrewe. Folowe my counfayle therefore, and fend for a thousande Christian men apte for the warres, by whose power we may with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed after owre maner, inuade the dominions of owre enemyes: where, bothe yowe may bee satisfiied with golde, and we for owre conductinge and aydyng yowe in this enterpryse, shall thynke owre felues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe shall helpe to delyuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of owre enemies. After these woordes, this prudente younge *Comogrus* helde his peace. And owre men moued with greate hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to swalowe downe theyr spettle.

66

A token of hunger

THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.

Kynge Comogrus
is baptised with
his famely.Valdiuia returneth
from hispaniola.

After that they had taryed here a fewe dayes and baptised *Comogrus* with all his famelie, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kynge of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thousande fouldyers, which his sonne requyred to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus enteringe into the vyllage which they had chosfen to inhabite, they had knowlege that *Valdiuia* was returned, within fyxe moonethes after his departure: but with noo great plentie of vytayles, bycause he browght but a smaule shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there shulde bee sent them abundance of vytayles with a newe supply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admiral and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowleged that hetherto they had noo respecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycause they supposed that *Ancifus* the Lieuutenant had safely arryued there with his shippe laden with vatayles: wyllynge them from hensfoorth to bee of good cheere, and that they shulde lacke nothyng hereafter: But that at this present tyme, they had noo bygger shippe wherby they myght sende them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuia*. The vytayles therefore which he browght, serued rather sumwhat to mytigate theyr present necessitie, then to satisfiye theyr lacke. Wherfore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke scarfnes: especially for asmuch as a great storme and tempest whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, browght with it suche a fludde, that it partely caryed away and partly drowned all the corne and feedes whiche they had sowne in the moonethe of September in a frutefull grounde before they went to kyng *Comogrus*. The feedes which they of *Hispaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Vraba* caule *Hobba*: Wherof they make theyr breade, which also wee sayde to bee rype thryse euery yeare, bycause those Regions are not bytten with the sharpnes of wynter by reason of theyr nerenes to the Equinoctial lyne. It is also agreable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, shulde bee more holsome for th[e]inhabitanes of those contreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easyer digestion. For wheras coulde is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dryuen frome the owtewarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordials, whereby digestion is much strengthened. Beinge therefore thus frustrate of the increase of theyr feedes, and the kynges nere abowte them spoyled of both vytayles and golde, they were enforced to seeke theyr meate further of: And therwith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great necessitie they were oppressed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernyng the Regions towarde the Southe: wyllynge them in consideration therof to aduertise the kynge to sende them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye throwghe the mountaynes diuidyng the sea on bothe sydes, if they coulde not bryng the same to passe quyetly. The same *Valdiuia* was also sent on this message, caryinge with hym to the kynges treasourers (hauinge theyr office of recepte in *Hispaniola*) three hundreth poundes weyght of golde after eyght ounces to the pounce, for the fyfte portion dewe to the kynges eschequer. This pounce of. viii. vnces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weyght amounteth to fyftie pieces of golde cauled *Castellani*. But the Castilians, caule a pound *Pesum*. We conclude therefore, that the sune hereof, was. xv. thousande of those peeces of golde cauled *Castellani*. And thus is it apparenate by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thousande and fyue hundreth poundes of eyght ounces to the pounce. All the whiche they founde redy wrought in fundry kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, braselets, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr brestes, and also at theyr eares, and nosethryls. *Valdiuia* therefore tooke shypinge in the same carauell in the whiche he came last, and returned also beefore the thyrd day of the Ides of Ianuary, in the yeare of Christ M. D. XI. What chaunced to hym in this vyage, we wyl declare in place conuenient. But let vs nowe returne to them which

Horrible thunder
and lightnyng in
the moneth of
Nouember.Bread of Maizius
and hobbaDigestion
strengthened by
owtwarde colde.

Hunger.

A newe supply of
a thousande
souldiers.*Marcha*.*Pesum*.A thousande and
fyue hundreth
poundes weyght
of wrought gold

67

remained in *Vraba*. After the dismissing of *Valdiuia*, beinge pricked forward with outrageous hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that goulfe in fundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the same goulfe is distant from the enterance therof, aboute foure score myles. This angle or corner, the Spaniardes caule *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe came to this poynte with a hundreth men, coastynge alonge by the goulfe with one brygantine and certeyne of the boates of those regions, which the Vrabiens caule *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche th[e]inhabitanes of *Hispaniola* caule *Canoas*. From this poynt, there fauleth a ryuer from the East into the goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariena* which also fauleth into the same. Saylyng alonge by the ryuer about the space of thirtie myles (for they caule it nyne leaques) and sumwhat inclynge towarde the ryght hande fouthwarde, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e]inhabitanes, the Kynge whereof, was cauled *Dabaiba*. Owre men also were certified before, that *Cemacchus* the kynge of *Dariena* whom they put to flyght in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*. But at the comynge of owre men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thought that he was admonished by *Cemacchus*, that he shulde not abyde the brunte of owre men. He folowed his counfayle: forfooke his vyllages, and lefte all thynges desolate. Yet owre men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Also much household stufte and many fyffhyng boates. But those maryshe groundes were neyther apte for sowinge of feedes or planting of trees. By reason wherof, they founde there fewe fuche thynges as they desyred: that is, plentie of vytayles. For th[e]inhabitanes of this Region, haue noo breade but such as they get in other contreys nere abowte them by exchaunge for theyr fyffhe, only to ferue theyr owne necessitie. Yet founde they in the houfes of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amountynge to the fume of feuen thousande of those pieces whiche we sayde to bee cauled *Castellani*: Also certeyne canoas: of the which they brought away twoo with them, and great plentie of theyr houfholde stufte, with certeyne bundels of bowes and arrowes. They saye, that from the maryshes of that ryuer, there coome certeyne battes in the nyght seafon, as bygge as turtle dooues, inuadyng men and bytinge them with a deadly wounde, as fume of them testifie whiche haue byn bytten of the same. I my selfe communing with *Ancifus* the Lieuetenant whom they reiected, and amonge other thynges askynge him of the venemous bytinge of these battes, he toulde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote lyng vncouered in the nyght by reason of the heate in sommer seafon: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaste not venemous. Other saye, that the bytyng of fume of them is venemous: Yet that the same is healed incontiently, if it be waffhed with water of the sea. *Ancifus* toulde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by waffhyng with water of the sea, and also by cauterifing with hotte Irens: And that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therefore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraba*, not well contented bycause they were not laden with vitales. In this their returne, there arose soo greate a tempest in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to caste into the sea, all the houfholde stufte whiche they tooke from the poore wretches whiche lyued onely by fyffhyng. The sea also swalowed vpp the two boates that they tooke from theym, wherewyth the men were likewise drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnez* attempted to searche the poynte of the goulfe towarde the southe, euen then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the east, with thre scor[e] men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles distante from the mouthe of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leaques) he founde certeyne vilages situate vppon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui*, (that is,) kinge, they caule *Turui*. With this kinge dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaschus* after his returne to *Dariena*, saylyng by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refreshinge theyr hole company with the vitales of this *Turui*, they departed from thense togyther. Other fortie myles from henfe, the ryuer encompafeth an Iland inhabited with fyffher men. In this, bycause they sawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannafistula*. They found in it, threescore villages of tenne cotages apiece. On the right fyde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whose chanell is of depth sufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer they cauled *Riuus Nigerum*: from the mouthe wherof about. xv. myles distante they founde a towne of fyue hundreth houfes seuered: whose *Chebi*, (that is,) kinge, was cauled *Abenamachei*. They all forfooke theyr houfes as soone as they harde of owre mennes comynge. But when they sawe that owre men purfued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vppon them with desperate mindes, as men driuen from their owne possessions. Theyr wepons, are swordes of wod, and long itaues like iauelens, hardened at the ende with fyer: But they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of th[e]inhabitanes of the weste fyde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were easely dryuen to flight with owre weapons. As owre men folowed theym in the chafe, they tooke the kinge *Abenamachei* and certeyne of his noble men. A common souldier of owres whom the kynge had wounded, coominge to hym when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one stroke with his swoorde. But this was doone vnwares to the capitaynes. The number of the Christian men which were here, was aboute a hundreth and fiftie: the one halfe whereof, the capytaynes lefte here, and they with the resydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with twelue of the boates of those Regions, whiche they caul. *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canoas*, as we haue sayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Iland of *Cannafistula*,

The goulfe of Vraba.

Culata.

Vaschus searcheth the goulfe of Vraba.

A maruelous great ryuer, faulyng into the goulfe of Vraba.

Kynge Dabaiba and Chemacchus, are dryuen to flyght.

Marysse grounde

Wrought gold wheyghynge vii thousand Castellanes.

Battes as bygge as turtle doues.

Ancifus bytten of a batte

Remedies ageynst venemous arrows

A tempest.

Colmenaris taketh his vyage towarde the montains

Kynge Turui.

The Iland of Cannafistula.

68

The ryuer of Riuus Niger. A towne of v. hundreth houses.

Th[e]inhabitanes of the west syde of the goulfe.

Kynge Abenamachei, is taken and his arme cut of.

Many other ryuers fauling into Riuis Niger.

Kyng abibeiba dwellethe in a tree.

Abundance of moyster and heat is cause of byggenes.

The rysynge of the Ocean sea.

Trees of maruelous height

Plinie.

Frutefull grounde.

Cellers in the grounde.

Abibeiba, the kyng of the tree, yeldethe to Vaschus.

69

Gold no more esteemed then stones.

Canibales.

for the space of threescore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande and on the lefte many riuers fauling into it bigger then it selfe, they entred into one by the conductynge of one of the naked inhabitantes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpose. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouthe of the fame, there was a kyng cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycause the Region was full of maryffhes, had his palaice buylded in the toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldynge and feldome seene. But that lande beareth trees of fuche exceding heig[h]th, that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houfes: As wee reede the like in diuers autoures howe in many Regions where the ocean sea ryfethe and ouerflowethe the lande, the people were accustomed to flye to the high trees, and after the faule of the water, to take the fyssh lefte on the lande. This maner of buyldinge, is to laye beames crosse ouer the branches of the trees, faste bownde togyther, and there vppon to rayfe theyr frame, strongly made ageynste wynde and wether. Owre men suppose that they buylde theyr houfes in trees, by reason of the greate fluddes and ouerflowinge of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in those Regions. These trees are of fuche heighth, that the strenght of no manes arme is able to hurle a stone to the houfes buylded therein. And therefore doo I gyue the better credit to Plinie and other autours whiche wrytte that the trees in fume places in *India* are soo high by reason of the frutesfulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to shute ouer theym with an arrowe. And by iudgemente of all men, it is thought that there is noo frutfuller ground vnder the soonne, then this is whereof wee nowe entreate. Owr men meafuringe manye of these trees, founde theym to bee of fuche biggnes, that feuen men, ye sumetymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyr armes streached furthe, were scarcely able too fathame them aboute. Yet haue they theyr cellers in the grounde, well replenysshed with such wynes wherof wee haue spoken beefore. For albeit that the vehemencie of the wynde, is not of poure to caste downe those houfes, or to breeke the branches of the trees, yet are they tossed therewith, and swaye sumwhat from fyde to fyde, by reason wherof, the wyne shulde bee muche troubeled with moouinge. All other necessayre thinges, they haue with theym in the trees. When the kyng or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyr wynes are brought theym from the celleres by theyr seruantes, whyche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with noo lesse celeritie to runne vppe and downe the steares adherente to the tree, then doo owre waytynge boyes vppon the playne grounde, fetche vs what wee caule for from the cobbarde byfyde owr dyninge table. Owre men therefore, came to the tree of kinge *Abibeiba*, and by th[e]interpretoures cauled hym forth to communication, gyuinge hym signes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denyed that he wolde coomme owte of his house: Desyryng them to suffer hym to lyue after his fashion. But owre men fell from fayre woordes to threateninge, that excepte he wolde descende with all his famelie, they wolde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles fet it on fyer. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to hewing the tree with theyr axes. *Abibeiba* feeinge the chippes faule from the tree on euery fyde, chaunged his purpose, and came downe with only two of his soones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* answered that he had noo golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But when they were instante vppon hym, he sayde vnto them. If yowe soo greatly desyre golde, I will seeke for fume in the nexte mountaynes, and bringe it vnto yowe. For it is plentifully engendred in those mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the daye appoynted. They departed therefore from thense well refresshed with his vitales and wyne, but not with goulde as they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and his ditionaries as concerninge the golde mynes and the Canibales, as they harde beefore of kinge *Comogrus*. Saylinge yet further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vppon certeyne cotages of the Canibales: But vtterly voyde with owte men or stufte. For when they had knowleage that owre men wandered in the prouinces nere aboute theym they reforted to the mountaynes, caryinge al theyr goodes and stufte wyth them.

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE Of the supposed continent.



IN the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doone alonge by the shores or bankes of the ryuer, a certeyne Decurian, that is a capytayne ouer tenne, of the coompanye of those which *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a garryson in *Riuo Nigro* in the dominion of kyng *Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was compelled through hunger, or that his fataule dayes was nowe coome, he attempted with his fouldiers to searche the countreys nere there about, and entered into the vyllage of a king cauled *Abraiba*. This capitaynes name was *Raia*: whom *Abraiba* flewe, with twoo of his felowes: but the refydue fledde. Within a fewe dayes

Kyng Abraiba

after, *Abraiba* hauinge compassion of the calamitie of his kynfeman and neyghbour *Abenamacheius* being dryuen from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd before that one of the fouldiers cut of at the riuer of *Riuo Nigro* and nowe remaynyng with *Abraiba* to whome he fledde by stelth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* th[e]inhabitour of the tree, who had nowe lykewyse forsaken his contrey for feare of owre men, and wandered in the defolate mountaynes and wooddes. When he had therefore founde him, he spake to him in this effecte. What thyng is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*: or what nation is this that foo tormenteth vs that wee can not enioye owre quyet lybertie? Howe longe, howe longe I say shall wee suffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for vs to die, then to abide such iniuries and oppreSSIONS as yow, as *Abinamacheius* owre kynfeman, as *Cemacchus*, as *Careta*, as *Poncha*, as I and other princes of owr order doo susteyne? Canne any thinge bee more intollerable then to see owre wyues, owre chylidren, and owre subiectes, to bee ledde awaye captiues, and owre goodes to be spoyled euen before owre faces.

I take the goddes to wytnes, that I speake not foo much for myne owne part as I doo for yowe whose case I lament. For albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuerthelesse, by the example of other, I owght to thynke that my destruction is not farre of. Let vs therefore (yf wee bee men) trye owre strengthe and proue owre fortune ageynst them whiche haue delte thus cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owte of his contrey. Let vs fet on them with all owre poure, and vtterly destroy them And yf wee can not fleye them al, yet shall wee make them afrayde eyther to affayle vs ageyne, or at the least dimynysshe theyr poure. For what foo euer shall befaule, nothyng can chaunce woorse vnto vs then that which we now suffer. When *Abibeiba* harde these wordes and such other like, he conde[f]cended to doo in al thinges as *Abraiba* wolde requyre: Where vpon they appoynted a day to bryng their conspiracie to passe. But the thyng chaunced not accordyng to their defyre. For of those whiche wee sayde to haue passed to the Canibales, there returned by chaunce to *Riuo Niger* the nyght before the day appoynted to worke theyr feate, thirtie men to the ayde of theym whiche were lefte there yf anye sedition shulde ryse as they suspected. Therefore at the daunyng of the day, the confetherate kynges with fyue hundreth of theyr ditionaries armed after theyr maner, beseged the vyllage with a terrible alarome, knowyng nothyng of the newe menne which came thether the same nyght. Here owre target men came fourth ageynst them, and fyrst assayled them a farre of with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and laste with theyr swoordes: But the naked feely fowles, perceauinge a greater number of theyr aduerfaries then they looked for, were soone dryuen to flyght, and slayne for the most parte lyke scaterynge sheepe. The kynges escaped, they flewe manye, and tooke many captiues whiche they sente to *Dariena* where they vse them for labourers to tyll and fowe they grounde. These thynges thus happely atchyued, and that prouince quyeted, they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauinge theyr thyrtye men for a garryson vnder the gouernance of one *Furatado* a capitayne. This *Furatado* therefore, sente from *Riuo Nigro* where he was appoynted gouernoure, twentie of his felowes and one woman, with. xxiiii. captiues to *Vaschus* and his company, in one of the byggest *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed downe by the ryuer, there came fourth foodenly ouerthwarte the ryuer ageynst them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew theyr boate and flewe as many of them as they coulde coome by, bycause they were vnprepared suspecting noo such thinge. Owre men were all drowned and slayne excepte twoo, which hyd them felues amonge certeyne fagottes that swamme on the water, in the whiche they laye lurkyng, and foo escaped to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beinge aduerted hereof, beganne to caste theyr wyttes what this thyng might meane: beinge no lesse solicitate for them felues, then meditatynge in what daunger theyr felowes had byn in *Riuo Nigro*, excepte by good fortune, those thirtie newe men which were sente to them, had coome to the vyllage the nyght before the conspiracie shulde haue byn wrought. Confultinge therefore what was best to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dylygent searchoyng they had intelligence that fyue kynges, that is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitoure of the tree, and *Cemacchus* dryuen from his vyllage whiche owre menne nowe possessed, *Abraiba* also and *Abenamacheius*, kynfemen, with *Dabaiba* the king of the fysher men inhabytyng the corner of the goulfe whiche we cauled *Culata*, were all assembled to conspire the Christian mens destruction at a day assigned. Which thyng had surely coome to passe, if it had not byn otherwyse hyndered by gods prouidence. It is therefore afcrybed to a myracle: And trewly not vnwoorthely if wee weye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counsayle of these kynges. And bycause it is worthy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe woordes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therefore, who rather by poure then by election, vsurped the gouernaunce in *Dariena*, beinge a master of fence, and rather a rassishe royster then politike capitayne (althowgh fortune sumtyme fauoureth fooles) amonge many women which in dyuers of these regions he had taken captiue, had one whiche in faouere and bewtie excelled all other. To this woman her owne brother often tymes resorted, who was also dryuen owte of his contrey with kyng *Cemacchus*, with whom he was very familer and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amonge other communication which he had with his fyfster whom he loued entierly, he vttered these woordes. My deare and welbeloued fyfster, gyue eare to my saynges, and keepe moste secreatlye that whiche I wyll declare vnto yowe, yf yowe desyre yowe owne wealth and myne, and the prosperitie of owre contrey and kynfepolkes. The infolencie and crueltie of these menne

Abraiba causeth
the kynges to
rebeil.

Men good
enough yf they
had iren

The kynges are
are dryuen to
flyght.

70
Captiues.

A garyson of xxx.
men.

xviii. Spanyardes
slayne and
drowned

The kynges which
conspired the
death of the
Christians.

A strange chaunce

Vaschus.

Women can keepe
no counsayle.

An army of C
[hundred] canoas
and fyue. M.
[thousand] men.
Tryumphe before
victory

Affection
corrupteth trew
iudgement.

71

The conspiracie
of the kynges is
detected.

Kyng Cemacchus,
conspyreth the
deth of Vaschus.

Vaschus purseweth
the kynges with
three score and
ten men.

Colmenaris
sacketh the
vyllage of Tichiri.
Fyue rulers
hanged and shot
through with
arrows.

whiche haue dryuen vs owte of owre possessions, is foo intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo longer to susteyne theyr oppressions.

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kynges (which he named in order) they haue prepared a hundreth greate *Canoas*, with fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with vitales also in the village of *Tichiri*, sufficient to maintayne such an army. Declaringe further, that the kynges by agremente, had diuided emonge theym the goodes and headdes of owre men: And therfore admonyshed her, at the daye appoynted by fume occasion to conueigh her felse owte of the way, lest shee shuld bee slayne in the confusion of the bataile. For the fouldier victourer, is not woonte to spare any that commethe in his rase. And thus shewinge his fyster the daye assigned to the slawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the swoord that women feare and obserue more then the grautie of *Cato*,) whether it were for the loue or feare that shee had to *Vaschus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynffolkes, her countrey and all her frendes, ye and all the kynges into whose throtes *Vaschus*, had thruste his swoorde shee opened all the matter vnto hym, and conceled none of those thinges whiche her vndiscrete broother had declared to her. When *Vaschus* therfore had hard the matter, he caused *Fuluia*, (for soo had they named her) to sende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumstances of the matter. Where vppon, he playnely confessed that kinge *Cemacchus* hys lorde and master, sente those foure canoas to the destruction of owre men, and that these newe conspiracies were attempted by his confaile. Likewise that *Cemacchus* sowght the destruction of *Vaschus* hym felse when he sent hym fortie men vnder pretence of frendshippe to tyll and sowe his grownd after the maner of the contrey, gyuinge them in commaundement to sleve *Vaschus* at *Marris*, whyther he reforted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good husbandes. Yet durste they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes commaundemente vppon hym, bycause *Vaschus* came neuer emonge them asoote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to theym in harnes with a iauelen in his hande and a swoorde by his fyde. Wherefore *Cemacchus* beinge frustrate of his particuler confaile, tooke this laste thing in hande to his owne destruction and his neighbours. For the conspiracie beinge detected, *Vaschus* cauled threescore and tenne souldiers, commaundinge them to folowe him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee entended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyrste towarde *Cemacchus* which ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowlege that he was fledde to *Dabaiba* the kinge of the marishes of *Culata*. Yet searchinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and also his kinffeman, whome he tooke prisoner with many other of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The same houre that he sette forwarde to seeke for *Cemacchus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed vp the ryuer with foure of theyr byggeste *Canoas* and threescore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who brought hym to the village of *Tichiri*, in the which we sayd all their vitales to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armye. *Colmenaris* therfore, sacked the village, and possessed all their vitayles and wyne of fundry colours: likewise tooke the gouernoure thereof prisoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym felse, commaundinge hym too bee shotte through with arrowes in the sight of th[e]inhabitantes, and with hym foure other rulers to bee hanged on iebbettes to the exemple of other rebelles. This punysshmente thus executed vppon the conspiratours, strooke the hartes of all th[e]inhabitantes of the prouince wyth suche feare, that there is not nowe a man that dare floore his finger ageynst the wrathe of owre men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly: And the other kynges by theyr exemple doo the gladlyer liue in subiECTION, with lesse offence bearinge the yoke whyche they can by noo meanes shake of.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continente.



Hese thynges, thus fynysshed, assemblinge all their company together they determined with one consente, that a messynger shulde foorth with bee sente to *Hispaniola* (from whense they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all these affayres, fyrste to the admirall and gouernoure of the Ilande, and afterwarde to the Kinge of Spayne, and to persuaue hym to sende those thousand men which younge *Comogrus* said to bee expediente to passe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. *Vaschus* him felse dyd greatly affecte this embafage: But neyther wolde the resydewe of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries suffer hym to departe: Aswell for that therby they thought they shulde bee left desolate, as also that they murmured that if *Vaschus* shulde once goo from theym, he wolde neuer returne to suche turmoyles and calamities, by th[e]example of *Valdiuia* and *Zamudius*, who had byn now absente fence

The golden
regions on the
south side the
mountaynes.

The death of
Valdiuia and
Zamudius.

the mooneth of January, in soo muche that they thought they wolde neuer comme ageine. But the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I wyl shewe in his place. For they were perished. At the length after many scrutines, they elected one Iohn *Quicedus*, a graue man well in yeares, and tresourer of the kings eschequer in those prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this *Quicedus* that all thynges shulde bee well brought to passe by his meanes, aswell for his wysdome, as also that they were in good hop[e] of his returne, bycause he had brought his wiffe with hym to those regions, whome he lefte with his felowes for a pledge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected *Quicedus*, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioine with hym for assistance: Affirminge that it were a daungerous thinge to committe soo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they mistrusted *Quicedus*, but bycause the life of man is frayle, and the chaunge of the ayer perelous, especially to them hauynge nowe of longe tyme byn accustomed to the temperature nere vnto the *Equinoctiall*, if they shulde bee compelled to returne to the North with alteration of ayer and dyet. They thought it therefore good to appoynt a companion to *Quicedus*, that if by chance the one shuld fayl the other might remayne: And that if they both escaped, the king shuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both: After longe consultation therefore, they chose *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experience, of whom we haue often tymes made mencion. For from his youth, he had trauallyed ouer al Europe by land and by sea, and was present at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynst the Frenchemen: Of whose returne also, they had noo fmaule hope bycause he had many fermes and hadde tyllid and fowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by th[e]increase wherof he might get much gold by fellyng the same to his felows. He lefte therefore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonfus Nunnez*, a Iudge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue byn chosen procuratoure of this vyage before *Colmenaris* if one had not put them in remembraunce that he had a wyfe at *Matritis*: fearyng least beinge ouercoome with her teares, he wolde no more returne. *Colmenaris* therefore, a free man and at libertie beinge associate assistant with *Quicedus* they tooke shyping together in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ. 1512. In this vyage, beinge tossed with fundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the wynde, cast vpon the Weste coastes of that large Ilande whiche in the fyrste Decade we cauled *Cuba*, supposed to haue byn fyrme lande. They were fore oppressed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes sence they departed from theyr felowes. By reason whereof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gette amonge the inhabitantes. Theyr chaunce therefore, was to arryue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuia* was dryuen alande by tempest. But oh yowe wretched men of *Dariena*? Tary for *Valdiuia* whom yowe sent to prouide to helpe yowre necessities? Proude for yowre felues rather and trust not to them whose fortune yowe knowe not. For when he arryued in *Cuba*, th[e]inhabitantes flewe him with al his felowes, and lefte the carauell wherin they were caried, torne in pieces and halfe couered with sande on the shore: where *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* fyndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their felowes myffortune. But they founde none of theyr carkefes: supposinge that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of the Canibals, which oftentymes make incurfions into that Ilande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the Ilande men which they had taken, they had knowlege of *Valdiuia* his destruction: And that th[e]inhabitantes the more greedely attempted the same, for that they had harde by the bablyng of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, which they forme artificially into fundry ouches. Thus owre men stryken with penyuenes for the cruell destenie of theyr felowes, and in vayne seekyng reuenge for theyr iniuries, determyned to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departyng from those couetous naked barbarians with more sorowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousande myffortunes: and had intellygence that *Fogeda* arryued thereabout, leadyng a myserable lyfe, tossed and turmoyled with tempestes and vexed with a thousand perplexities: Soo that departing from thense almost alone, his felowes beinge for the most parte all consumed with maladies and famyn, he came with much difficultie to *Hispaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his venemous wound which he had receaued in *Vraba* as we haue said before. But *Ancifus* elected Lieuetenaunt, sayled by all those coastes with much better fortune. For as he hym selfe toulde me, he founde prosperous wyndes in those parties, and was well enterteyned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Cuba*. But this specially in the dominion of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Commendator*. For wheras he defyred of the Christian men whiche passed by, to bee baptised, demaundyng the name of the gouernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hispaniola*, beinge a noble man and a knyght of th[e]order of *Calatraua* of which order al are cauled *Commendatores*, this kynges defyre was to bee named after hym. Kynge *Commendator* therefore, frendely receaued *Ancifus*, and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges necessarie. But what *Ancifus* lerned of theyr religion duryng the tyme of his remaynyng there, I haue thought good to aduertise yowre holynes. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that certeyne of owre men saylinge by the coastes of *Cuba*, lefte with kynge *Commendator* a certeyne poore maryner beinge diseased. Who in shorte space recoueringe his health, and hauynge nowe sumwhat lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great estimation with the kynge and his subiectes, in soo muche that he was oftentymes

Iohannes
Quicedus is sent
to Spain

72

Chaunge of the
ayer is daungerous.

Rodericus
Colmenaris,
assistant with
Quicedus.

A wyfe is a
hynderance

Cuba.

Three moonethes
from Dariena to
Cuba, by reason
of tempests

The death of
Valdiuia.

Hurt of lauyshenes
of the tonge.

The calamitie and
death of Fogeda.

Maladies and
famen.

The prosperous
vyage of Ancifus.

A kyng of Cuba
baptised by the
name of
Commendator.

Ancifus

73

A maruelous
historic howe God
wrought miracles
by the simple fayth
of a maryner.

Be not rashe in
iudgement

Zemes.

A chapel builded
to the picture of
the virgin Mary

God respecteth
the infancie of
faith for zeles
sake

One Religion
turned into an
other, holdeth styl
many thinges of
the fyrst.

A strange fantasie.

The effect of
godly zeale.

A miracle in the
tyme of the
battayle

The virgin Mary,
is present at the
battayle.

74

A maruelus
experience of
fayth

Muche lyke vnto
this, is redde iii.
Reg. xviii.

the kynge Lieuetenaunt in his warres ageynst other princes his bortherers. This mans fortune was soo good, that all thynges prospered well that he tooke in hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanyng man accordyng to his knowlege, and dyd religiously honoure the blessed virgin, bearyng euer about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper and fowd in his apparell nere vnto his breste: Signifyng vnto the kyng, that this holynes was the cause of al his victories: perswadyng hym to doo the lyke, and to cast away all his *Zemes* which were none other then the fymilitudes of euill spirites, moſte cruell enemyes and deuourers of owre fowles: And to take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his patronesse if he defyred all his affayres aswell in warre as in peace to succeed prosperously. Also that the blessed virgyn wolde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him and his, if they wolde with deuoute hartes caule vppon her name. The maryner had soone perswaded the naked nation: And there vppon gaue the kyng (who demaunded the fame) his pycure of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicate a chapell and an altare, euer after contemnyng and reiectyng his *Zemes*. Of these *Zemes* made of goſſampine cotton to the fymilitudes of sprytes walkyng in the nyght which they oftentymes see, and speake with them familiarly, wee haue spoken sufficiently in the nynth booke of the fyrſte Decade. Furthermore, accordyng to the institution of this maryner, when the soonne draweth towarde the faule, this kyng *Commendator* with all his famely bothe men and women, reforte daylye to the fayde chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneelyng on theyr knees and reuerently bowyng downe theyr heades, holdyng theyr handes ioyned togyther, they salute th[e] image of the virgin with these woordes: *Aue Maria, Aue Maria*. For fewe of them can rehearse any more woordes of this prayer. At *Ancifus* his beinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioyfyng, sayng that they wolde shewe theym maruelous thynges. When they were entered, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgin al to beset and hanged abowte with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled sum with fundry meates, and sume with water, rownde aboute all the tabernacle. For these thynges they offer to the image in the steede of sacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde supersticion towarde theyr *Zemes*. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, leaste the image shulde lacke meate if perhaps it shuld be a hungerd. For they most certainly beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confesse that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thyng woorthy to be harde, and most assuredly to bee taken for a truthe. For by the report of owre men, there is such feruent godly loue and zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynst theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may soo terme it) compel her to descende from heauen to helpe them in theyr necessities: For such is the goodnes of god, that he hath lefte vnto men in maner a pryce wherby wee may purchase hym with his holy angels and fayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie and zeale. Howe therefore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent from them which cal for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue? *Commendator* him selfe, with al his noble men and gentelmen, doo testifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin Marie, the *Zemes* of theyr enemies turned their backes and trembeled in the presence of the virgins Image and in the fyght of them all. For euery of them brynged theyr *Zemes* to the battayle, hopyng by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they say further, that duryng the tyme of the battayle, they sawe not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and whyte apparel, aydyng them ageynst theyr enemies: whiche thyng also the enemyes them selues acknowleaged, confessyng that on the contrarye parte shee appeared to them, shakynge a septer in her hande with threatenynge countenaunce, whiche caused theyr hartes to shake and faynt for feare. But after that this maryner departed from them, beinge taken into a shypp of certeyne Christians passyng by those coastes, *Commendator* declared that he with all his subiectes, continually obserued his institutions: In soo muche that beinge at contention with another prince, which of theyr *Zemes* were moſte holy and of greateſte poure, the matter grewe to suche extremitie that they tryed it with hande strokes: And that in all these attemptes, the blessed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer presente in the brunte of the battayle, and gaue hym easye victorie with a smaule poure of men, ageynst a mayne armye of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vppon the virgin Mary when they assayed theyr enemies, they answered that they had lerned noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*: That is, holy Mary helpe vs, holy Marye helpe vs: And this also in the Spanyſhe tonge. For he had lefte these woordes in the mouthes of all men. Whyle they murthered and destroyed them selues thus on bothe fydes, they fell to entreatie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne chofen for bothe parties as the maner was amonge the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any flyght or policie, but that twoo younge men shulde bee chofen, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde fast behynde them in the playne felde, bothe parties beinge sworne to acknowleage that *Zemes* to bee the better, which fyrſt loosed the bandes of the younge man whiche stode bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidyng them selues, and placeyng the fayde younge men before them in the fyght of them al, with theyr handes fast bounde by theyr enemyes, the

contrary parte cauled fyrst on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyll to whose similitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lykenes aboute the younge man that floode bounde in the defence of Sathans kyngedome.

But as soone as *Commendator* with his coompanye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in whyte, at whose pefence the deuell vanquished immediatly. But the virgin hauinge a longe rod in her hande, and putting the same on the bandes of the younge man that floode for *Commendator*, his handes were loofed immediatly in the fyght of them all, and his bandes founde about the handes of hym that floode for the other partie, in somuch that they them selues fownde hym dowble bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies fatiffyed: querelinge that this thyng was doone by sum slyght or diuise of man, and not by the poure of the better *Zemes*. And there vppon requyred for th[e]aduoydyng of all suspection, that there myght bee eyght graue and sage men appoynted, for eche fyde foure, whiche shulde bynde the men in the fyght of them all, and also gyue iudgemente whether the thyng was doone withowte crafte or gyle. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: Oh golden and blessed confidence. *Commendator* and his familiers, doubted not to graunte theyr enemies theyr requeste with lyke faythe wherwith the diseafed woman obteyned healthe of the fluxe of her bludde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the fyght of his master Christe. These younge men therefore were bounde in the pefence of these eight graue men, and were placed within theyr lystes in the fyght of bothe parties. Thus vppon a signe gyuen, when they cauled vppon theyr *Zemes*, there appered in the fyght of them all, a deuyll with a longe tayle, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hornes, refemblyng the similitude of the Image which the kyng being enemye to *Commendator*, honoured for his *Zemes*. As this deuyll attempted to loose the bandes of his cliente, the blessed virgin was immediatly pefente as before at the caule of *Commendator* and his subiectes, and with her rodde loofed the bandes of her suppliant, which were ageyne lykewyse founde fast tyed aboute the handes of hym that floode for the contrarye parte. The enemies therefore of *Commendator*, beinge stryken with greate feare and amafed by reason of this greate miracle, confessed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better then their *Zemes*. For the better profe wherof, these pagans beinge bortherers to *Commendator*, which had euer before byn at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowlege that *Ancifus* was arryued in those coastes, they sente ambafadoures vnto hym, to desyre hym to fend them preestes of whom they might bee baptised: Where vppon he sent them twoo which hee had with hym there at that present. They baptised in one day a hundreth and thirtie of th[e]inhabitantes, sumtyme enemyes to *Commendator*, but now his frendes and ioyned with him in aliance. All suche as came to bee baptised, gaue the preestes of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yet skyl how to carue theyr cocke chykens to make them capons. Also certeyne falted fyffhes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewise certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the preestes reforted to the shippes, fyxe of these newe baptyfed men accompanied theym laden with vitailles, wherwith they ledde a ioyfull Easter. For on the Sunday two dayes before saynte *Lazarus* day, they departed from *Dariena*, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of *Cuba* nere vnto the Easte fyde of *Hispaniola*. At the requeste of *Commendator*, *Ancifus* lefte with hym one of his coompanie, to th[e]intente too teache hym and his subiectes wyth other his bortherers, the salutation of the angell whiche we caule the *Aue Maria*. For they thinke them selues to be soo much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can reherse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus *Ancifus* takinge his leaue of kyng *Commendator*, directed his course to *Hispaniola*, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to *Valladoletto* to the kyng, to whom he made greuous complaint of the insolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, in so muche that by his procuremente, the Kyng gaue sentence ageynste hym. Thus muche haue I thowght good (moste holy father) wherof to aduertise yowr holynes as concernyng the religion of these nations, not only as I haue byn instructed of *Ancifus* (wyth whom I was dayly conuerfante in the court and vfed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate autoritie, to th[e]intente that yowre excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilitie they may bee allured to embrace our religion. But this can not bee doone foodenlye. Yet we haue greate cause to hope that in shorte tyme they wilbe all drawn by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Christe, to the great encrease of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernyng the affayres of *Dariena*.

The deuil
appeareth in his
lykenes

An other miracle.

Math. 14.

The deuyll
appereth agein.

The virgin Mary
ouercommeth the
deuyll.

Infidels conuerted
by miracle, and
baptised.

75

The preestes
rewarde.

Aue Maria.

Ancifus vyage to
Spain

Ancifus
complayneth of
Vaschus.

The hartest is
great, but the
labourers are fewe.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE
Of the supposed continente.

From Dariena to Hispaniola viii. dayes saylyng.



From *Dariena* to *Hispaniola* is eyghte dayes failinge and sumtymes lesse with a prosperous wynde. Yet *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, by reason of tempestes and contrary wyndes, could scarfely faile it in a hundrethe dayes. When they had taryed a fewe dayes in *Hispaniola*, and had declared the cause of the comminge to the admirall and the other gouernours, they tooke shippinge in two marchante shippes beinge redye furnysshed, which were also accustommed to faile too and froo betwene Spayne and the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. They departed from *Dariena* (as we sayde before) the fourthe day of the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Christ. 1512, and came not to the courte before the calendes of May in the yeare folowinge beinge the yeare of Christe. 1513. At th[e]yr commynge to the courte, *Iohannes Fonseca* (to whom at the begynnyng the charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for hys faithful seruice towarde the kinge, yowre holynes created generall commissarie in the warres ageynste the moores) receaued them honorably, as men comminge from the newe world, from naked nations, and landes vnknownen to other menne.

The procuratours of Dariena, are honorably receaued at the courte.

Their complexion is altered

Of whom the autour had information

76

The greate master of the kynges ships

Petrus arias is elected gouernour of Dariena.

Th[e] oracion of the byshop. of Burges in the defence of Petrus arias.

The warres of Aphrica.

By the preferment therefore of the bysshope of *Burges*, *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* were brought before the king, and declared theyr legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble men, for the newnes and straungnes therof. They also fuiorned with me often tymes. Their countenaunces doo declare the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of *Dariena*. For they are yelowe lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe gaundies: And also swolne. But they ascrybe the cause hereof, to the hunger which they susteyned in tyme past. I haue byn aduertised of th[e] affayres of this newe woorld, not onely by these procuratours of *Dariena*, and *Ancifus*, and *Zamudius*, but also by conference with *Baccia* the lawier, who ranne ouer a greate parte of those coastes. Likewyse by relation of *Vincentius Annez* the patrone of the shippes, and *Alfonfus Nignus*, both being men of greate experience and wel trauayled in those parties, beside many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places. For there came neuer any from thense to the court, but tooke greate pleasure to certifie mee of al thynges eyther by woorde of mouth or by wrytyng. Of many thynges therefore which I lerned of them, I haue gathered siche as to my Iudgement seeme moste worthy to satisfie them that take delyte in hystories. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the comminge of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therefore, before theyr arryual there was a rumoure spreade in the courte, that the chiefe gouernoures and Lieutenantes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, also *Iohannes De la Coffa* (a man of such reputacion that by the kinges letters patentes he was named the greate master of the kynges shippes) were all peryshed by mischaunce: And that those fewe which yet remayned alyue in *Dariena*, were at contencion and discorde amonge them selues: So that they neyther endeuoured theyr diligence to allure those simple nations to owre faythe, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those Regions. In consideration wherof, the kyng was determyned to sende a newe capitayne thither whiche shulde restore and set all thynges in good order, and put them owte of autoritie whiche hadde vsurped th[e] empire of those prouinces withowte the kynges speciall commaundement. To this office, was one *Petrus Arias* assigned, a man of greate prowes and a citisen of *Segouia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena* had published in the courte howe greate a matter it was, and of what moment, many laboured earnestly to the kyng, to take the office owte of his handes. But the bysshop of *Burges* beinge the kinges chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commissioners appoynted by hym in these matters, beinge aduertised hereof, came immediatly to the kyng, and spake to hym in this effect. May it please yowre hyghnes to vnderstand (moste catholyke Prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente corage and greate seruice, hath offered hym selfe to aduenture his lyfe in yowre maiesties affayres, vnder vncerteyue hope of gayne and moste certeyne perels, yet that notwithstandinge sum other haue ambicioufly maliced his felicitie and preferment labouringe for th[e] office whereto he is elected: It maye please yowre grace herein soo to shewe hym yowr fauour and permit hym to enioye his sayde office, as yowre maiestie doo knowe hym to bee a woorthy and meete man for the same, hauyng in tyme paste had greate experience of his prowesse and valiantnesse, aswell in behauinge hym selfe as orderinge his souldiers, as yowr hyghnes may the better confyder if it shal please yowe to caule to remembrance his doinges in the warres of Aphrica, where he shewed hym selfe bothe a wyse Capitayne, and valient souldier. As concerninge his maners and vsages other wayes, they are not vnknownen to yowre maiestie, vnder whose wyng he hath of a chylde byn browght vp in the courte, and euer founde faythfull towarde yowre hyghnesse. Wherfore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a

commissioner in these affayres) I think it were vngodly that he shuld bee put from his office at the sute of any other, especially beinge thereto moued by ambition and couetousnes: who perchaunce wouold proue them selues to be the same men in the office if they shuld obteyne it, as they nowe shewe them selues in the ambitious desiryng of the fame. When the bysshoppe hadde sayde these woordes, the kynge confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias* in more ample maner then before: wyllynge the bysshoppe to appoynt hym a thousand and two hundred souldiers at his charges, makynge hym a warrante to th[e] officers of his eschequer to delyuer hym money in preste for the same purpose. *Petrus Arias* therefore beinge thus put in office and authorysed by the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode seale, chose a greate number of his souldiers in the court, and soo departed from *Valladolecto* aboute the calendes of October in the yere 1513: And sayled fyrst to Ciuile beinge a verye ryche citie and well replenyshed with people: where by the kynges magistrates he was furnyshed with men and vytayles and other necessaries perteynynge to soo greate a matter. For the king hath in this citie erected a house feruinge only for th[e] affayres of the Ocean, to the which al they that goo or coome from the newe landes and Ilandes, reforte to gyue accomptes aswell what they cary thither as what they brynge from thense, that the kynge may bee truly answered of his custome of the fyfte part bothe of golde and other thynges as wee haue sayde before. This house, they caule the house of the Contractes of *Indi*. *Petrus Arias* founde in Ciuile aboute two thousand younge men which made great sute to goo with hym: lykewyse noo small number of couetous owlde men: of the whiche, many offered them selues to goo with him of theyr owne charges without the kynges stipende. But lest the shippes shulde bee pestered with to great a multitude, or leaft vytayles shulde fayle them, the libertie of free passage was restraynt. It was also decreed that noo stranger might passe without the kynges licence. Wherefore I doo not a lyttle maruaile at *Aloisius Cadamustus* a venetian and wryter of the Portugales vyages, that he was not a shamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: we went: we sawe: we dyd. Wheras he neuer went, nor any Venetian sawe. But he floule certeyne annotations owte of the three first bookes of my fyrst Decade wrytten to Cardinal *Afcanius* and *Arciboldus*, supposinge that I wolde neuer haue publysshed the same. It myght also happen that he came by the copie therof at the hande of sum ambafadoure of Venice. For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the same to other. Howe so euer it bee, this honeste man *Aloisius Cadamustus* feared not to challenge vnto hym the frute of an other mans laboure. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (which surely are woonderfull) whether he haue wrytten that whiche he hath seene (as he sayth) or lykewyse bereaued other men of the iuste commendations of theyr trauayles, I wyll not iudge, but am content to let hym lyue after his maner. Emonge the company of these souldiers, there were none embarked but suche as were licenced by the kynge, except a fewe Italians, Genues, who by frendshippe and sute were admitted for the Admirals sake younge *Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of those landes. *Petrus Arias* therefore tooke shippyng in the ryuer *Betis* (nowe cauled *Guadalqueuir*) runnyng by the citie of Ciuile, aboute the beginnyng of the yere of Christe. 1514. But he loosed anker in an euyll houre. For suche a tempeste folowed shortly after his departure, that it rent in pieces two of his shippes, and soo tossed the other that they were enforced to heaue ouer boorde parte of theyr vytayles to lyghten them. All such as escaped, sayled backe ageyne to the coastes of Spayne: where, beinge newly furnyshed and refreshed, by the kynges officers, they went forward on theyr viage. The master pylot of the gouernoures shyppe, was *Iohannes Vesputius* a Florentine, the neuie of *Americus Vesputius*, who left hym as it were by discente of inheritance, th[e] experience of the mariners facultie, and knowlege of the sea, carde and compasse. But wee were aduertised of late by certeyne which came from *Hispaniola*, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous wynde. For this marchaunt shyppe comynge from *Hispaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboute. But in the meane tyme whyle my importunate caulers on, *Galeaceus Butrigarius* and *Iohannes Curstus*, men studious by al meanes to gratifie yowre holynes, ceased not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a redines to depart into Italy, and taryed onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes these my fayre *Nereides* althowgh rudely decked, leafe I shulde bestow muche tyme in vayne, I haue let passe many thynges, and wyll reherse onely such as seeme in my iudgement mooste woorthye memory, althowgh sumwhat disordered as occasion hath serued. So it is therefore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Helisabeth a Boadilla*, beinge niefe by the broothers fyde to the marques of *Boadilla*, which rendered the citie of *Segouia* to Fernando and Helisabeth princes of Spayne at such tyme as the Portugales invaded the kingdome of Castile: by reason wherof they were encoraged fyrste to resyste, and then with open warre to affayle and expulse the Portugales for the greate tresure which kynge Henry brother to queene Helisabeth hadde gathered togyther there. This marquesse whyle shee lyued, dyd euer shewe a manly and stout mynde, bothe in peace and warre, so that by her counsayle manye noble thynges were brought to good effecte in Castile: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was niefe by her brothers fyde. Shee folowyng the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceauinge her husbände nowe furnyshyng hym selfe to depart to the vnknown coastes of the newe woorld, and those large tractes of lande and sea, spake these wordes vnto hym. My mooste deare and welbeloued husbände, we owght not nowe to forget that from owre younge

Petrus Arias
Lieutenante of
Darien.
Petrus Arias hath
a thousand and
two hundred
men appoynted at
the kynges
charges.

A house in Ciuile
appointed to the
affayres of India.

Perularia.

77

Many profer
them selues to go
of theyr owne
charges.
Aloisius
Cadamustus is
reproued.

The Portugales
inuentions.

The nauigation of
Petrus Arias.

A shipwracke

Americus
Vesputius.

A notable exemple
of a valient woman.

Kynge Henry.

The wyfe of
Petrus Arias

78

yeares we haue byn ioyned togyther with the yoke of holy matrimonie to th[e]intente that wee shulde foo lyue togyther and not a funder duryng the tyme of owre naturall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection herein, yowe shall vnderstande, that whyther so cuer yowre fatal destenye shall dryue yowe, eyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoulde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll surely beare yowe company. There can no perell chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruell, that shal not bee much easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre seperate from yowe. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to bee cast into the sea to bee deuoured of the fysshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall mournynge and bewaylinge, to lyue in deathe and dye lyuinge, whyle I consume in lookyng rather for my husbandes letters then for hym selfe. This is my full determinacion, not rashely nor presentely excogitate, nor conceaued by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberation and good aduifement. Nowe therefore choose to whether of these twoo yowe wyll assente: Eyther to thruste yowre swoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeste. As for the chyldren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of owr inseperable loue, (for they had foure sonnes and as many dowghters) shal not stay me a moment. Let vs leaue vnto them suche gooddes and possessions as haue byn left vs by owre parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amonge the woorthful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fynished these woordes, her husbände feinge the constant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accordynge to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louinge petition: but embrasinge her in his armes, commended her intente and consented to her requeste. Shee folowed hym therfore as dyd *Ipsicratca* her *Mithridates* with her heare hangeinge loose aboute her shulders. For shee loueth her husbände as dyd *Halicarnassea* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Artemisia* her *Mausolus*: We haue also had aduertisement fence their departure that she (beinge browght vp as it were amonge soft fethers) hath with no lesse stoute corage susteyned the rorings and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her husband or any of the maryners brought vp euen amonge the fourges of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hereof, this shal suffice. Let vs nowe speake of other thynges no lesse woorthy memorie. Therefore, whereas in the fyrste Decade we haue made mencion of *Vincentius Annez Pinzonus*, ye shal vnderstande that he accompanyed *Christophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyrst vyage, and afterwarde made an other vyage of his owne charges with onely one shyppe. Ageyne, the fyrste yeare after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer those coastes of *Hispaniola*, and searched all the southe syde of *Cuba* from the Easte to the weste, and sayled rownde about that Ilande which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, althowgh fume other say that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Annez* therfore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an Ilande, sayled on further, and found other landes westward from *Cuba*, but such as the Admirall had fyrst touched. Wherefore, beinge in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turninge his course towarde the lefte hande, and rasing the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpassinge also the mouthes of the goulfes of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Cuchibachoa*, he arryued at the Region which in the fyrst Decade we cauled *Paria* and *Os Draconis*: And entered into the greate goulfe of freshe water, which *Colonus* discouered, beinge replenished with great abundance of fyfsh, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes lyinge in the same, beinge distant Eastwarde from *Curiana* aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles, in the which tract are the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapaná*, whiche also in the fyxte booke of the fyrst Decade we sayde to bee Regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affirme to bee the gretefte plentie of the beste pearles, and not in *Curiana*. The kinges of these regions (whom they caule *Chiacones*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Cacici*) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, sente certeyne spyes to enquire what newe nation was arryued in theyr coastes, what they browght, and what they wolde haue: and in the meane tyme furnysshed a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they caule *Chichos*) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle astonished to beholde owre shippes with the sayles sprede, wheras they vse no sayles, nor can vse but smaule ons if they wolde, by reason of the narownes of theyr canoas. Swarmynge therfore aboute the shippe with theyr canoas (which we may well caule *Monoxylla*, bycause they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to shute at owr men beinge yet within their ships and keepinge theym selues vnder the hatches as safely as yf they had byn defended with stone waules. But when owre men had shotte of certeyne pieces of ordinance ageynst theym they were foo discomfited with the noyse and slawghter therof that they droue them selues to flight. Beinge thus disparclod, owr men chafed them with the shippe bote, tooke many, and slewe many. When the kynges harde the noyse of the gunnes, and were certyfyed of the losse of their men, they sent ambasadours to *Vincentius Agnes* to entreate of peace, fearinge the spoyle of theyr goodes and destruction of theyr people, if owre men shulde coomme alande in theyr wraathe and furye. They desyred peace therfore, as could bee coniectured by their signes and poyntinges. For owre men vnderstoode not one worde of theyr language. And for the better prooffe that they desired peace, they presented owre men with three thousand of those weights of gold that the Spanyardes caule *Castellanum Aureum*, which they commonly caule *Pesum*. Also a greate barell of woodde full of moste excellente masculine frankensence, weighing about two thousande and fyxe hundreth poundes weight after eight ounces to the pounde: Whereby they knewe that that lande

The thynde
nauigation of
Vincentius
Pinzonus.

Cuba.

Beragua.

Vraba.

Cuchibacoa.

Paria.

Os Draconis

Curiana.

Cumana.

Manacapaná.

Plentie of Pearles.

Monoxylla.

The Barbarians
assayle owre men
beinge in theyr
shyppes.

The vse of gunnes.

79

Great abundance
of gold and
frankensence.
Olibanum,

brought furthe greate plentie of frankensence. For there is noo entercourse of marchaundies betwene th[e]inhabitantes of *Paria* and the fabeans beinge soo farre distante, wheras also the[y] of *Paria* knowe nothyng withoute theyr owne coastes. With the golde and frankensence whiche the[y] presented to owre men, they gaue them also a greate multitude of theyr peacockes, bothe cockes and hennes, deade and alyue, aswell to satiffie theyr present necessitie, as also to cary with theym into Spayne for encrease. Lykewyse certeyne carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of goffampine filke fynelye wrought after a straunge diuise with plesante and variable colours, hauing golden belles and fuche other spangles and pendauntes as the Italians caule *Sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaueles*, hanging at the purfles therof. They gaue them furthermore speakeinge poppingiais of fundry colours as many as they wolde aske. For in *Paria*, there is no lesse plentie of poppingiais, then with vs of dooues or sparous. Th[e]inhabitantes of these Regions both men and women are appareled with vestures made of goffampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The fasshion of theyr apparell, is symple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes. But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autoritie is noo lesse emonge the people both in peace and warre, then is th[e]autoritie of other kynges in those Regions. Theyr villages are buylded in coompasse, along by the bankes of all that greate goulfe. Fyue of theyr princes came to owre men wyth theyr presentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put in this historie in remembrance of soo notable a thinge *Chiaconus Chiauccha*, (that is the prince of *Chiauaccha*, for they caule princes or kinges *Chiaconos*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus Chamailaba*, *Chiaconus Polomus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The goulfe beinge fyrste founde of the admirall *Colonus*, they caule, *Baia Natiuitatis*, bycause he entered into the fame in the day of the natiuitie of Christe: But at that tyme he only passed by it withoute anye further searching, and *Baia* in the Spanysshe tong, signifieth a goulfe. When *Vincentius* had thus made a league with these Princes, folowinge his appoynted course, he founde many regions towarde the East, desolate by reason of diuers fluddes and ouerflowynges of waters: also many standyng pooles in dyuers places, and those of excedyng largenes. He ceafed not to folowe this tracte vntyll he came to the poynte or cape of that moste longe lande. This poynte semethe as though it wolde inuade the monte *Atlas* in *Aphrica*. For it prospectethe towarde that parte of *Aphrike*, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bonæ Sperantie*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough and saluage nere vnto the sea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, gatherethe thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled the pole antartike: But that poynte, onely seuen degrees. I suppose this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wryters of Cosmographie to bee cauled the greate Iland Atlantike, without any further declaringe eyther of the fyтуation, or of the nature therof.

Sabea, is a contrey in Arabie, which bringeth forth frankensence

Paria.

Peacockes which wee caule Turkye cockes.

Carpetts and couerlettes fynely wrought.

Popyngayes.

Th[e]apparell of the inhabitants of *paria*

Rulers for one yeare.

The greate goulfe of *Paria*.

Baia Natiuitatis the gret goulfe of *Paria*.

Vincentius maketh a league with v. princes. of *Paria*.

Mount *Atlas* in *aphrike*.

The great Iland *atlantike*

THE EIGHT BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continente.



When Iohan the king of portugale lyued which was predicesseure to hym that nowe reigneth, there arose a great contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales as concerninge the dominion of these newe founde landes. The Portugales, bycause they were the firste that durst attempte to searche the Ocean sea fence the memorie of man, affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, owght to perteyne to theym onely. The Castilians argued on the contrarie parte, that what so euer god by the ministracion of nature hath created on the earth, was at the begynnyng common among men: And that it is therefore lawfull to euery man to possesse fuche landes as are voyd of Christian inhabitours. Whyle the matter was thus vncerteynly debated, bothe parties agreed that the controuersie shulde bee decerned by the bysshope of Rome, and plighted faithe to stande to his arbitrimente. The kyngedome of Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that great Queene *Helisabeth* with her husbände: for the roialme of Castile was her dowerye. Shee also and the kyng of Portugale, were cosyn germaynes of two systers: by reason wherof the diffention was more easely pacified. By th[e]assent therefore of both parties, Alexander the bysshop [of] Rome, the. vi. of that name, by th[e]autoritie of his leaden bull, drewe a right line from the North to the South a hundreth leaques westwarde withoute the paralelles of those Ilandes whiche are cauled *Caput Viride* or *Cabouerde*, Within the compase of this lyne (althowgh foomme denye it) faulethe the poynte of this lande wherof we haue spoken, which they caule *Caput Sancti Augustini*, otherwyse cauled *Promontorium Sancti Augustini*, that is, saynt Augustines cape or poynte. And therefore it is not lawfull for the Castilians to fasten foote in the beginnyng of that lande. *Vincentius Annez* therefore, departed from thense, beinge aduertised of th[e]inhabitantes, that on the other syde of the hyghe mountaynes towarde the

Contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales for the newe landes

80

The bysshop of Rome diuideth the land

Cabouerde loke decade i. lib. iii

The golden region
of Ciamba.

The Iland of S.
Iohannes

Fyue byshoppes
of the Iland[s]
made by the
bysshop of Rome.

The Canibales of
the Iland of
Sancta Crux.

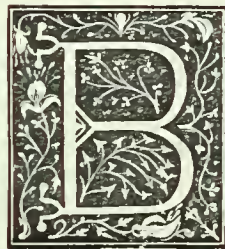
81

Beragua and
Vraba.

The ryuers of
Vraba.

South, lying before his eyes, there was a Region cauled *Ciamba*, which brought fourth greate plentie of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goulfe of *Paria* (which certainly pertyneth to the dominion of Castile) he brought fume with hym to *Hispaniola*, and lefte them with the younge Admirall to lerne owre language. But he hym selfe, repayred to the courte to make earnest sute to the kynge that by his fauoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*, beinge distante from *Hispaniola* onely. xxv. leaques) bycause he was the fyrst fynder of golde in that Ilande. Before *Vincentius* made sute for this office, one Don Christopher a Portugale, the foone of the countie of *Camigna*, was gouernoure of the Ilande: whom the Canibales of the other Ilandes slewe, with all the Christian men that were in the same, excepte the byshop and his familiers, which fledde and shyfted for them selues, forfakynge the church and all the ornamentes thereof. For yowre holynes hath consecrated fyue byshoppes in these Ilandes at the request of the most catholyke kynge. In *Sancto Dominico* beinge the chiefe cite of *Hispaniola*, *Garfia de Padilla*, a reguler fryer of the order of saynt Fraunces, is bysshop. In the towne of Conception, doctor *Petrus Xuarez* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of saynte Iohn or *Burichena*, *Alfonfus Mansus* a licenciante, beinge bothe obseruantes of th[e] institution of saynt Peter. The fourth, is fryer Barnarde of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*, a preacher, and bysshop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfte is *Iohannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes annoynted mynister of Christ, to teache the Christian faithe amonge the inhabitantes of *Dariena*. The Canibales shall shortly repent them, and the bludde of owre men shalbe reuenged: And that the sooner, bycause that shortly after they had committed this abhominable slaughter of owre men, they came ageyne from theyr owne Ilande of *Sancta Crux* (otherwyse cauled *Ay Ay*) to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*. and slewe a kynge whiche was a frende to owre men, and eate hym and all his famely, vtterly subuertinge his vyllage, vppon this occasion that violatinge the lawe of hostage, he had slayne feuen Canibales whiche were lefte with hym by composition to make certeyne canoas, bicause the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees and apter for that purpose, then doth the Ilande of *Sancti Crux* the chiefe habitacion of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaynyng in the Ilande, certeine of owre men sayling from *Hispaniola*, chaunced vppon them. The thyng beinge vnderstode by th[e] interpretoures, owre men quarelyng with theym and caulynge them to accompte for that mischeuous deede, they immediatly directed theyr bowes and venemous arrowes ageynst them, and with cruell countenaunces threatened them to bee quyet, leaft it shulde repent them of theyr commyng thyther. Owre men fearyng theyr venemous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Beinge demaunded why they destroyed the vyllage, and where the kynge was with his famelye, they answered that they rased the vyllage and cutte the kynge with his famelye in peeces and eate them in the reuenge of theyr feuen workemen: And that they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary them to the wyues and chyldeyn of theyr slayne woorkemen, in wytnesse that the bodyes of theyr husbandes and parentes lay not vnreuenged: and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to owre men: who beinge astonysed at theyr fiercenes and crueltie, were enforced to diffimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelyng noo further with them at that tyme. These and fuche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let passe leaft I shulde offende the eares of yowr holynes with fuche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee sufficiently digressed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefeste foundations of owre purpose. Wee wyll nowe therefore entreate sumewhat of the largenes and depthe of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Also declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo bryng forth: lykewise of the greatnes of the lande from the Easte to the West, and of the bredth therof from the Southe to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynges yet vnknownen in the same. Wee wyll therefore beginne at the newe names wherwith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces fence they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.



Beragua therefore, they cauled *Castella Aurca*, that is golden Castile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andalusia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they subdued, they choose *Hispaniola* for the chiefe place of theyr habitacion, soo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr colonie or bydyng place in the twoo regions *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all fuche as attempte any vyages in those coastes, may reforte to them as to safe portes to bee refreshed when they are wery or dryuen to necessitie. All owre feedes, and plantes, do nowe maruelously encrease in *Vraba*. Lykewise blades, fettes, slippes, grasses, fuger canes, and

Beragua, cauled
Castella aurifera,
and Vraba,
Andaluzia noua.
Sum caule Peru,
Noua Castilia.
Beragua and
Vraba, regions of
Paria.
The frutefulness
of Vraba

fuche other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules as we haue fayde before. O maruelous frutefulnes. Twentie dayes after the feede is sowne, they gather rype cucumers, and such lyke, But colwortes, beetes, Letuse, Borage are rype within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pompones, within the space of. xxviii. dayes. *Dariona* hathe many natiue trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with fundry tastes, and holsome for the vse of men: of the which I haue thought it good to descrybe certeyne of the best. They noorysse a tree which they caule *Guaiana*, that beareth a frute much refemblynge the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taste sumwhat sharpe myxt with swetenes. They haue also abundance of nuttes of pynetrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knowen to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theyr to much sowernes. Wylde and baren date trees, growe of them selues in fundry places, the branches wherof they vse for biesommes, and eate also the buddes of the same. *Guarauana*, being higher and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as pome citrons.

Ther is an other tree much lyke to a cheftnut tree whose frute is lyke to the bygger fort of fygs, beinge holsome and of plesant taste. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth foorthe frute as bygge as an orange, in taste nothyng inferioure to the beste kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, beareth a frute lesse then any of the other, but of sweete faouere lyke spice, and of delectable taste. *Houos*, is an other tree whose frute bothe in shape and taste, is much lyke to prunes, but sumwhat bygger. They are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe soo abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with masse amonge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of feadyng soo well, that when these frutes wax rype, the swyneherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of these trees: by reason wherof, a greate multytude of them are becoome wylde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola*, swynes flesshe is of much better taste and more holsome then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dyuers kyndes of meates do engender fundry tastes and qualities in fuche as are noryshed therwith. The moste puiffaunte prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute brought from those landes, beinge full of scales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and coloure, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taste excedyng all garden frutes. For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke, or *Acantho*. The kynge hym selfe, gaue the cheefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these frutes. For of a great number which they brought from thense, only one remayned vncorrupted, the other beinge putrifed by reason of the longe vyage. All fuche as haue eaten of theym newly gathered in theyr natyue foyle, doo maruelously commende theyr swetenes and pleasaunt taste. They dygge also owte of the ground certeyne rootes growyng of them selues, whiche they caule *Botatas*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of Mylayne, or the greate puffes or musheroms of the earth. Howe soo euer they bee dressed, eyther fryed or fodde, they gyue place to noo such kynde of meate in pleasant tendernes. The skyn is sumwhat towgher then eyther of nauies or musheroms, and of earthy coloure: But the inner meate therof, is verye whyte. These are nooryshed in gardens, as we fayde of *Iucca* in the fyrste Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe chestnuttes, but are sumwhat sweeter. Wee haue spoken sufficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. We wyll nowe therefore entreate of thynges fencitiue. The laundes and desolate pastures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wild and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and such other monsters as we nowe knowe, and haue byn descrybed of owlde autoures in tyme past. But there is especially one beast engendered here, in which nature hath endeouored to shewe her cunnyng. This beaste is as bygge as an oxe, armed with a longe snoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the colour of an oxe and yet noo oxe. With the houe of a horse, and yet noo horse. With eares also much lyke vnto an Elephant, but not soo open nor soo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder then the eares of any other beaste. Of the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her seconde belly as in a purse (beinge knowen to none of the owlde wryters) I haue spoken in the fyrst Decade which I doubte not to haue coome to the handes of yowre holynes. Let vs nowe therefore declare what resteth of the fluddes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Dariona* fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* with a narowe chanel, scarcely able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that prouince, and runneth by the vyllage where they chose theyr dwellyng place. But the ryuer in the corner of the goulfe which we fayde that *Vaschus* passed by, they found to bee. xxiiii. furlonges in bredth (which they caule a league) and of excedynge depthe, as of two hundreth cubettes, faulyng into the goulfe by dyuers mouthes. They say that this ryuer fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba*, lyke as the ryuer *Ister* (otherwyse cauled *Danubius*, and *Danowe*) fauleth into the sea Pontike, and *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte: wherfore they named it *Grandis*, that is great: whiche also they affirme to noorysse many and great Crocodyles, as the owld wryters testifie of *Nilus*, and especially as I haue lerned by experience, hauinge sayled vp and downe the ryuer of *Nilus* when I was sent ambasadoure to the Soldane of Alcayr at the commaundement of the moste catholyke Kyng. What I may therefore gather owte of the wrytynges of so many lerned autours as concernyng the ryuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not. For they say that nature hath gyuen two riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to spryng owte of the mountaynes of the moone

The frutefulnes of Dariona.

Dyuers holsomy frutes of trees.

Guaiana,

Pine trees.
Date trees.

Guarauana

Mameis.

Guananala.

Houos.

Mirobalani.

Hogges fed with mirobalanes
Swynes flesshe of better tast and more holsom then mutton.

82

Frutes putrifed on the sea.

Botatas.

Lions and Tygers.

A straunge beast.

The ryuers of Vraba.

The ryuer of Darien fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba.

A league is xxiiii. furlonges

Danubius.

Grandis or Rio grandis.

A crocodile is much lyke an ente, but of excedyng bignes.
The autoure of this booke was in Egypt

The riuer Nilus
in Egypte
Montes Lunæ.

The Portugales
nauigacions.

The ryuer Senega,
another channell
of the ryuer of
Nilus.
Crocodyles.
The thyrde and
fourth Nilus.
Delagartos.

83

The ryuers
springe owt of the
mountaynes.

Crocodyles
engendred on
other ryuers
besyde Nilus in
Egypte.
Byrdes and foules.

Popingayes.

A philosophical
discourse as
concerning
th[e]original of
springes and
ryuers.
The breadth of
the lande at
Vraba, from the
North Ocean to
the South sea.

A ryuer of
maruelous
byggens loke the
first decade the
ix. boke.

The great ryuer
Maragnonus. liber.
iv. decade. i.
Mariatambal.
Camamorus.
Paricora.

Paradice.
Loke. vi. boke
fyrst decade.

The sea.

The land enclosed
with two seas.

or the soonne, or owte of the toppes of the rowgh mountaines of *Ethiopia*: Affirming one of the fame to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the Northe, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee saye in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypte, there is noo doubt. The Portugales also whiche saye by the coastes of the Ethiopians cauled *Nigrita*, and by the kyngedome of *Melinda* passinge vnder the Equinoctiall lynce, amonge theyr maruelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and earnestly affirme the fame to bee also deriued from the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other channell of *Nilus*, bycause it bryngeth fourth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before tyme that any other ryuer noorysshed Crocodyles fauinge onely *Nilus*. This ryuer, the Portugales caule *Senega*. It runneth through the Region of the *Nigritas*, beinge very frutefull towarde the north shore. but on the fouth fyde sandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall wee then say of this thyrde: ye I may wel say the fourth. For I suppose them also to bee Crocodiles which *Colonus* with his company founde armed with scales as harde as shelles in the ryuer cauled *Delagartos* wherof wee haue made mention before. Shall wee say that these ryuers also of *Darien* and *Vraba*, haue theyr originall from the mountaynes of the moone, wheras they sprynge owte of the nexte mountaynes, and can by noo meanes haue the fame originall with *Nilus* in Egypte, or that in *Nigrita*, or els that in the kyngedome of *Melinda*, from whense soo euer they are deriued. Whereas these other (as we haue sayde) springe owt of the next mountaines whiche deuyde an other fouth fea with noo greate distaunce from the North Ocean. Wherefore it appeareth by experience of such as haue traauyled the worlde in owre time, that other waters beyde the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte, maye lykewyse brynge fourth Crocodiles. In the marysshes also and fennes of the Regions of *Dariena*, are founde greate plentie of Phefauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foules vnlyke vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as also to delite the eares of menne with pleasaunt noyse. But owre Spanyardes, bycause they are ignorant in foulyng, take but fewe. Also innumerable popingayes of fundry kindes are found chattering in the groues of those fenny places. Of these there are some equall to Capons in byggenes, and some as lyttle as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of popingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the fyrst Decade. For in the rafe of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe brought and sent to the courte a greate number of euery kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet dayly brought in lyke maner. There remayneth yet one thyng mozte woorthy to bee put in hyforye: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Liuius*, then into myne. For the thyng is soo marueylous in my estimation, that I fynde my wytte more entangeled in the description hereof, then is sayde of the henne when shee seeth her younge chekyn inwrapped in towe or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the fouth fea is only fyxe dayes iourney by relation of th[e]inhabitanes. The multitude therefore and greatnes of the ryuers on the one fyde and on the other fyde the narrowenes of the lande, brynge me into suche doubt howe it can coome to passe, that in soo little a space of three dayes iourney, meafuryng from the hygh toppes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe soo many and soo great ryuers, may haue recourse into this north fea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe towarde th[e]inhabitanes of the fouth. These ryuers of *Vraba* are but smaule, in comparifon of many other in those coastes. For the Spanyardes say, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and passed by an other ryuer after this, whose goulfe faulyng into the sea, they affirme to bee lyttle lesse then a hundreth myles in the fyrste coastes of *Paria*, as wee haue sayde elsewhere. For they saye that it fauleth from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes with soo swyfte and furious a course, that by the violence and greatnes therof, it dryueth backe the sea althowgh it bee rowghe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykewyse, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo fower or falte water, but that all the water was fresshe, sweete, and apte to bee dronke. Th[e]inhabitanes caule this ryuer *Maragnonum*: And the regions adiacent to the fame, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Beyde those ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabaiba*, *Beragua*, *Sancti Mathei*, *Boius gatti*, *Delagartos*, and *Gaira*, they which of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberatinge therefore with my selfe, from whense these mountaynes beinge soo narowe and nere vnto the sea on bothe fydes, haue such great holowe caues or dennes of suche capacite, and from whense they are fylled to cast fourth such abundance of water, hereof also askyng them the opinions of the inhabitanes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgementes herein: Alleagyng fyrst the greatnes of the mountaynes to bee the cause, whiche they say to bee very hygh, which thyng also *Colonus* the first synder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Adding there vnto that the Paradise of pleasure is in the toppes of those mountaines whiche appeare from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Os Draconis*, as he is fully perswaded. They agree therefore that there is greate caues within these mountaynes: but it resteth to confyder from whense they are fylled. If therefore all the ryuers of fresshe waters by th[e]oppinion of manye, do soo flowe owte of the sea as dryuen and compelled throwghe the passages or pores of the earth by the ponderous weyght of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake furth of the sprynges and directe their course to the sea ageyne, then the thyng is lesse to bee marueyled at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo such seas haue emironed any lande with soo narowe lymittes. For it hath on the right fyde, the great Ocean where the sonne goeth downe on the lefte hande: And an other

on the other fyde where the sonne ryfeth, nothyng inferioure to the fyrst in greatenes, for they suppose it to bee myxte and ioyned as all one with the sea of East India.

This lande therefore being burdened with so great a weight on the one fyde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to swalowe vp such deuoured waters, and ageyne to cast fourth the same in open springes and streames. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humours of the sea, and agree that all fountaynes or sprynges are engendered of the conuerfion or turnyng of ayer into water distilling within the holowe places of the montaynes (as the most part thinke) we wyl gyue place rather to th[e]authoritie of them whiche flycke to those reasons, then that owre sense is satisfiied of the full truth therof. Yet doo I not repugne that in some caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my selfe haue seene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner showers of rayne doo faule continually: And that the water gathered by this meanes, doth send furth certeyne ryuers by the fydes of the mountaynes, wherwith al suche trees as are planted on the steepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Oliue trees, and suche other, are watered. And this especially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moste obsequious to yowre holynes, and twoo other byshoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebyshhop (whose name and tittle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For when wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately delyuered from the dominion of the Moores, and walked for owre pastyme to certeyne pleasaunte hylles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) Whyle Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym selfe in shutyng at byrdes whiche were in the bushes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other twoo byshops determined to clime the mountaynes to searche th[e]originall and springe of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowyng therefore the course of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was a continuall faule of water as it had byn a shoure of rayne: the water wherof, faulyng into a trenche made with mans hand, increaseth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the fydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is also seene in this famous towne of *Valladoletto* (where we nowe liuorne) in a certeyne greene close, not past a furlonge distant from the waules of the towne. I graunte therefore that in certeyne places by conuerfion of the ayrie dewe into water within the caues of suche mountaynes, many sprynges and ryuers are engendred. But I suppose that nature was not sollicitate to bryng furthe suche greate fluds by this so smaule industry. Twoo reasons therefore, do found beste to my iudgement: whereof the one is, the often faule of rayne: The other, the continuall autumnne or spryng tyme which is in those regions beinge soo nere vnto the Equinoctial that the common people can perceauie no difference betwene the length of the day and the night through out al the yeare whereas these two seasons are more apte to engender abundance of rayne then eyther extreme wynter or feruent summer. An other reason in effect much lyke vnto the fyrst, is this: If the sea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge opened by the Southe windes, wee shal consent that vapours are lyfted vp wherof the watery cloudes are engendred, this lande must needes bee moysted with moo shoures then anye other, yf it bee as narowe as they faye, and enuironed with twoo mayne seas collaterally beatinge on the same. Howe so euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of such worthy men as haue recourse to those regions: And can noo lesse then declare the same albeit it may seeme incredible to some ignorant persons not knowyng the poure of nature to whome Plinie was perswaded that nothyng was impossible. Wee haue therefore thought it good to make this discourse by the way of argument, least on the one fyde, men of good lernyng and iudgement, and on the other fyde, suche as are studious to fynde occasions of quarelyng in other mens wrytynges, shulde iudge vs to bee so vndescrete lyghtly to gyue creditte to euery tale not beinge consonant to reason. But of the force and greate violence of those freshe waters, which repulging the sea make so greate a goulfe (as wee haue sayde) I thinke the cause therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ryuers, whiche beinge gathered together, make so great a poole: and not one ryuer as they suppose. And foras muche as the mountaynes are excedyng hyghe and steepe, I thinke the violence of the faule of the waters to be of such force, that this conflicte betwene the waters, is caused by th[e]impulsion of the poole that the salte water can not enter into the goulfe. But here perhappes some wyl marueyle at me why I shulde marueyle soo muche hereat, speakyng vnto me scornefully after this maner. Why dothe he soo marueyle at the greate ryuers of these Regions? Hathe not Italye his *Eridanus*, named the kyng of ryuers of the owlde wryters? Haue not other regions also the lyke? as wee reede of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are sayde soo to ouercoome the sea, that freshe water may be drawne fortie myles within the same. These menne I woulde satisfie with this answere. The famous ryuer of *Padus*, in Italye (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Greekes cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuidinge Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie from Italye, lyeinge at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moysture: And with a longe tracte receauinge *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, fauleth into the sea Adriatike. The lyke is also to bee vnderstode of the other. But these ryuers (as owre men were enformed by the kynges) faul into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller chanelles nere hand. And some there are which affirme this lande to bee very large in other places althowgh it bee but narowe here. There commeth also to my remembrance an other cause: the whiche althowgh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wryte it.

84

Conu[er]sion of ayer into water in the caues of mountaynes.

Showers of rayne in the caues of mountaynes

The often fal of rayne and continuall spryng tyme.
The Equinoctiall.

The pores of the sea and the South wynd.

Nothinge impossible to the poure of nature.

The cause of the greatnes and force of the goulfe.

Hygh and steepe hylles

85

The fludde Eridanus.
Tanais.
Ganges.
Danubius.
Padus.
Alpes.

Ticinum.

The sea Adriatike, some caule the goulfe of Venes

An other reason

The ryuer
Alpheus.

Arethusa

Longe caues in
the mountaynes.

Perhappes therfore the length of the lande reachyng far from the Easte to the weste, if it bee narowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* passethe through the holowe places vnder the sea from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponefo*, and breaketh foorth at the fountayne or spryng *Arethusa* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, so is it possible that these mountaynes may haue fuche longe caues perteynyng vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beinge farre distante: And that the same waters commynge by soo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greatlye encreased by the conuersion of ayer into water, as wee haue sayde. Thus muche haue I spoken freely, permitteinge bothe to them whiche doo frendely enterprete other mens doinges, and also to the malicious scornors, to take the thyng euen as them lysteth. For hetherto I can make no further declaration hereof. But when the truth shalbe better knowen, I wyl do my diligence to commit the same to wryting. Nowe therefore, forasmuche as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we entend to describe the length and forme of the same.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, Of the supposed Continent.



That lande reacheth foorth into the sea euen as doth Italy, althowgh not like the legge of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a Pigmean or a dwarfe to a giant. For that part therof which the Spaniardes haue ouer runne from the sayde Easte poynt which reacheth towarde the sea Atlantike (the ende not beinge yet founde towarde the Weste) is more then eyght tymes longer then Italye. And by what reason I am moued to say eyght tymes, yowre holynes shall vnderstande. From the tyme therefore that I fyrste determined to obeye their requestes who wylled me fyrste in yowre name to wryte these thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeouere that all thinges myght coome foorth with dewe tryall and experience. Wherupon I repayed to the byshoppe of *Burges* beinge the chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therfore secretly togyther in one chamber, we had many instrumentes perteynyng to these affayres as globes and manye of those mappes which are commonly cauled the shipmans cardes, or cardes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawn by the Portugales, wherunto *Americus Vesputius* is sayde to haue put to his hande, beinge a man moste experte in this facultie and a Florentyne borne: who also vnder the stipende of the Portugales, hadde sayled towarde the south pole many degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrst front of this land to bee brooder then the kynges of *Vraba* had perswaded owre men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, *Colonus* the Admiral whyle he yet lyued and searched those places had gyuen the beginnyng with his owne handes: Wherunto *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetenaunt had addid his iudgement, for he also, had sayled aboute those coastes. Of the Spanyardes lykewyse, as many as thought them selues to haue any knowlege what perteyned to measure the lande and the sea, drewe certeyne cardes in parchement as concernyng these nauigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which *Iohannes de la Coffa* the coompanion of *Fogeda* (whom wee sayde to bee slayne of the people of *Caramairi* in the hauen *Carthago*;) and an other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had fet foorth. And this aswell for the greate experience which they bothe hadde (to whom these tractes were as wel knowen as the chambers of theyr owne houfes) as also that they were thought to bee cunninger in that parte of Cosmographie which teacheth the description and meafuringe of the sea. Conferringe therefore all these cardes togyther, in euery of the whiche was drawn a lyne expreffinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyardes, we tooke owre compases and beganne to measure the sea coastes after this order. From that poynt or fronte which we sayde to bee included within the lyne perteynyng to the Portugales iurisdiction, beinge drawn by the paralelles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundreth leagues further towarde the weste (which they haue nowe also searched on euery fyde) we founde three hundreth leagues to the enterance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thense to *Os Draconis*, seuen hundreth leagues: but sumwhat lesse in the description of sume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyardes wyll that a league conteyne foure myles by sea and but three by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, which beinge passed, there is a goulfe on the lefte hande, we meafured three hundreth leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the hauen *Carthago* (which sum caule *Carthagen*) we found about a hundreth and feuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues. From thense to the goulfes of *Vraba* amonge the which is the vyllage cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua* where the Spanyardes haue apoynted theyr habitacion, only. xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena* to the ryuer of *Beragua*

The length and
forme of the Iland.
Cap. S. Augusti.

Eyght tymes
bygger then Italy
besyde that part
whiche the
portugales
possesse. Italy
is in length a
thousand and two
hundreth myles,
and in breadth
foure hundreth
and ten.

Cardes of the sea.

The carde of
Americus
Vesputius.

The carde of
Colonus.

The carde of
Iohannes de la
Cossa.

86

The carde of
Andreas moralis.

The maner of
measuring the
cardes.

Loke decade i.
liber. iii.

The Iland of
Cabouerde.

Maragnonum
Os Draconis

A league.

Cuchibacoa.

Caramairi.

Carthago.

The Iland *Fortis*.

Vraba.

Beragua.

where *Nicuesa* hadde intended to haue fastened his foote if god hadde not otherwyse decreed, we measured a hundreth and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer whiche wee fayde of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Matthei*, in the which also *Nicuesa* loofinge his carauell, wandered in greate calamities, we founde in owre cardes, onely a hundreth and fortie leagues: Yet many other which of late tyme haue coome from these partes, haue descrybed many moo leagues in this tracte from the ryuer of *Sancti Matthei*: In which also, they place dyuers ryuers, as *Aburema* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cateba* lyinge before it, whose kynges name is *Facies combusta*. Lykewise an other ryuer cauled *Zobroba*: after that, *Vrida*: and then *Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauens, as *Cerabaro* and *Hiebra*, soo cauled of th[e]inhabitantes. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conferre these numbers togyther, yowe shall fynde in this accompte, a thousand fye hundreth twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fyue thousande and feuen hundreth myles from the poynt of *Sancti Matthei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of the losste men. But we may not leaue here. For after this, one *Astur Ouetenses*, otherwyse named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, borne in *Nebriffa* (which bringeth fourth many lerned men) faylinge frome this ryuer towarde the weste, ouer ranne manye coastes and leagues: But the myddeste of that shore, bendethe towarde the North: And it is therefore directly placed in order with the other. Yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about three hundreth leagues. Hereby maye yowe gather what is the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perhappes wee shall hereafter haue further knowleage. Let vs nowe speake sumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starres. This lande therefore, althowgh it reache fourth from the East into the Weste, yet is it crooked and hath the poynt bendynge so toward the south, that it loseth the sight of the North pole, and is extended beyonde the Equinoctial lyne feuen degrees towarde the South pole. But the poynt herof, perteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales as we haue sayde. Leauinge this poynt and faylinge toward *Paria* the north starre is seene ageyne, and is so much the more lyfted vp, in howe much the region enclyneth more towarde the Weste. The Spanyardes therefore, haue dyuers degrees of eleuations, vntyl they come to *Dariena* beinge their chiefe station and dwellynge place in those landes. For they haue forsaken *Beragua*, where they found the North pole eleuate. viii. degrees. But from hense the lande doth soo muche bende towarde the North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of the strayghtes of Hercules pyllers: especially yf wee measure certeyne landes founde by them towarde the Northe fyde of *Hispaniola*. Emonge the which, there is an Ilande, about three hundreth and. xxv. leagues from *Hispaniola*, as they say whiche haue seached the same, named *Boiuca* or *Aganaco*, in the which is a continual sprynge of runnyng water of such maruelous vertue, that the water therof beinge dronk, perhappes with fume dyete, maketh owld men younge ageyne. And here must I make protestacion to yowre holynes, not to thynke this to bee fayde lyghtly or rashely. For they haue soo spredde this rumour for a truth throwghout all the courte, that not onely all the people, but also many of them whom wisedome or fortune hath diuided from the common fort, thinke it to be true. But if yowe shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere that I wyll not attribute so greate poure to nature: but that god hath noo lesse referued this prerogatiue to hym selfe, then to searche the hartes of men, or to gyue substance to priuation, (that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we shall beleue the fable of *Colchis* of *Eson* renouate, to bee as trewe as the wrytinges of *Sibylla Erythrea*. Albeit perhappes the scoles of phisicians and naturall philosophers wyll not muche flycke to affirme that by th[e]use of certeyne secrete medecines and dyete, the accidentes of age (as they caule them) may be longe hydden and deferred, which they wyll to bee vnderstoode, by the renouacion of age. And to haue sayde thus much of the length and breadthe of these Regions, and of the rowghe and hugious mountaynes with theyr watery caues, also of the dyuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men amonge theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I was a chylde, mee thought my bowelles grated and that my spirites were maruelouslye troubeled for verye pitie, when I readde in the poet Virgyl howe *Achemenides* was leste of *Vlysses* vpon the sea bankes amonge the gigantes cauled *Cyclopes* where for the space of many dayes from the departinge of *Vlysses* vntyll the comynge of *Eneas* he ate none other meate but only berryes and hawes. But owre vnfortunate Spanyardes whiche folowed *Nicuesa* to inhabite *Beragua*, wolde haue esteemed hawes and berryes for greate delicates. What shulde I heare speake of the heade of an asse bowght for a greate price, and of such other extremities as men haue suffered in townes beleaged? After that *Nicuesa* hadde determyned to leaue *Beragua* for the barrennes of the foyle, he attempted to searche *Portum Bellum*, and then the coastes of the poynt cauled *Marmor*, if he myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, so greuous famen oppressed his fouldiers, that they neyther absteyned from eatinge of mangie dogges which they had with them aswell for theyr defence as for huntyng (for in the warre ageynst the naked people, dogges stode them in greate steade) nor yet sumtymes from the flayne inhabitantes. For they founde not there any frutesfull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariena*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the fouldiers made a bargein with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who also was almoste deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of those pieces of golde which they caule *Pefos* or golden Castellans. Thus agreinge of the

R. Sancti Matthei.

R. Aburena
Scutum Cateba
R. Zobroba.
Vrida.
Duraba.
Cerabaro.
Hiebra.

Note.
R. d los perdidos
The nauigation of Iohannes Dias.

The eleuation of the pole.

The iurisdiction of the Portugales. *Paria.*

Dariena.
Beragua.

Hercules pyllers.

87

The Ilande *Boiuca* or *Aganaco.*
A water of maruelous vertue.
The renouation of age.

The accidentes of age may bee hydden.

Achemenides.
Vlysses.
Eneas.
Extreme hunger.

This was at the siege of hierusalem.

Portus Bellus
Marmor.

Mangy dogs eaten.

A mangy dog dere sold.

Broth of a mangy
dogs skynne.
Toades eaten

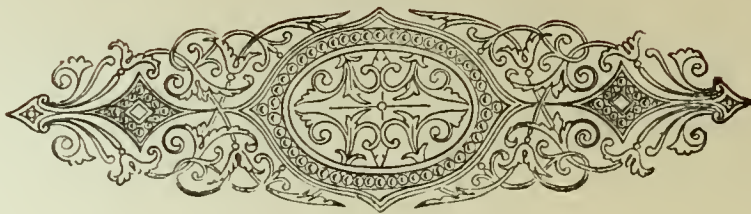
A deade man
eaten.

88

Note.

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spanyarde caule
Pedarias.

price, they fleid the dogge to bee eaten, and caste his mangie skynne with the bones of the heade hangyng therto, amonge the bushes. The day folowyng, a certeyne footeman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the skynne beinge nowe full of maggottes and stynkyng. He brought it home with hym, fodde it, and ate it. Many resorted to hym with theyr dysshes for the brothe of the fodde skynne, proseringe hym for euerye dysshfull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo toades and fodde them which a sicke man bought of hym for twoo fyne shertes curiously wrought of lymen intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderyng abowte to seeke for vytayles, founde in a pathway in the mydde of a fylde, a deade man of th[e]inhabitantes whiche had byn slayne of his owne coompanye and was nowe rotten and stynkyng. They drewe hym a fyde, dismemberde hym secreatly, rosted hym and ate hym, therewith asswagyng theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheasautes. One also, which departinge from his companions in the nyght feason, went a fyshyng amonge the reedes of the maryshes, lyued only with flyme or mudde for the space of certeyne dayes, vntyll at the lengthe creepinge and almoste deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserabile men of *Beragua* vexed with these and suche other a[f]flictions, were browgh[t]e from the number of seuen hundreth threscore and ten fouldiers, fearfully to fortie, beinge nowe also added to the coompany of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were slayne of th[e]inhabitantes. But the resydewe consumed by famen, breathed owt theyr wery fowles, openyng a waye to the newe landes for such as shal coome after them, appeasinge the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. Consyderinge therefore after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouerrunne and inhabite these landes, in respecte to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goo to bryde feastes where all thynges are redy prepared ageynst their comyng. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges maie and newe supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certentie. What shall chaunce herafter I wyll make diligente inquisition if I shall vnderstande this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes. Thus I byd yowe hartely farewell: from the courte of the mooste Catholyke kyng, the daye beefore the nones of December, in the yeaere of Christe, M. D. XIII.



THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE,
TO THE BYSSHOPPE OF ROME LEO THE TENTH.



Was determynd (moste holye father) to haue clofed vp the gates to this newe worlde, supposinge that I had wandered farre enough in the coastes therof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me frome thense, which caused me ageyne to take my penne in hande. For I receaued letters not only from certeyne of myne acquaintaunce there, but also frome *Vaschus Nunnez* whome we sayde by the confidence of his owne poure with his confetherates, to haue vsurped the gouernance of *Dariena* after the reiecting of *Nicuesa* and *Ancifus*, Lieuetenantes. By his letter wrytten after his warlyke maner, wee vnderstand that he hath passed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean knowen to vs, from the other mayne sea on the south fyde of this lande hetherto vnknowen. His epistell is greater then that cauled *Capreensfis de Seiano*. But wee haue gathered out of that and other, onely suche thynges as we thought moste woorthy to bee noted. *Vaschus* soo behaued hym selfe in these affayres, that he dyd not onely pacifie the kynges

displeasure conceaued ageynst hym, but also made hym so fauorable and gracious good lorde towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his coompanions with many honorable gyftes and priuileges for theyr attemptes. Wherefore I desyre yowre holynes to inclyne yowre attentiu eares, and to confyder with a ioyfull mynde what they haue brought to passe in these great enterpryses. For this valiante nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers subdued to the Christian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but also myriades of men. *Vaschus Nunnez* therefore, whether it were that he was impacient of Idlenes (for a valiente mynde can not rest in one place or bee vnoccupied) or leaste any other shulde preuent hym in soo great a matter (suspecting the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both these causes, and especially for that the kyng had taken displeasure with hym for such thynges as he had doone before, toke th[e] aduenture vpon hym with a fewe men to brynge that to passe which the sonne of kyng *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue byn doone with the ayde of a thousande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the same purpose. Assemblyng therefore certeyne of the owlde souldiers of *Dariena*, and many of those whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armye of a hundreth fourescore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnysshed and redie to take his vyage by sea, whyle the wynde serued hym, he departed frome *Dariena* with one brygantine and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule Canoas as wee haue sayde. Fyrst therefore arruyng in the dominion of *Careta* kyng of *Coiba* and frende to the Christians, and leauyng his shyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therwith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he fyrst entered into the region of kyng *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng as he had doone before. But *Vaschus* sent messengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promyng hym frendship and defence ageynst his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entysed with the fayre speache and frendely profers bothe of owre men and of the Caretans, came to owr men gladly and wyllyngely makyng a league of frendshippe with them. *Vaschus* enterteined hym very frendely, and perswaded him neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embrased, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the other to knytte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaschus* a hundreth and ten poundes weyght of golde, of that pounce which the Spanyardes caule *Pesum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reason he was spoyled the yeare before as we haue sayde. *Vaschus* to recompence one benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of owre thynges, as counterfet rynges, Christal stones, copper cheynes and brafelettes, haukes belles, lokyng glasse, and suche other fyne stufte. These thynges they set much by and greatly esteeme. For suche thynges as are straunge, are euery where counted precious. He gaue also to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees: which he accepted as a princely gyfte,

Vaschus Nunnez,
gouernor of
Dariena.

The newe south
Ocean.

Commendation of
the Spanyardes.

A valient mynd
can not bee ydle.

A desperate
aduenture

Vaschus his viage
toward the golden
mountaynes.

Careta kyng of
Coiba

Kyng Poncha

89

A hundreth and x.
poundes weyght
of golde.

Strange thynges
are counted
precious.

Lacke of iren

A stone in the
steede of iren.Superfluites
lynder libertie.

Carpenters.

Brydges.

The region of
Quarequa.Kinge Quarequa
is dryuen to
flyght.

Hargabusies.

Crossebowes

vi. C. [six hundred]
Barbarians are
slaine
Vnnatural lechery.

90

The vse of dogges
in the warre
agenst the naked
Barbarians.Naturaul hatred
of vnnatural sinne.*Palatini.*
I wolde all men
were of this
opinion.The haruest is
great and the
woorkemen but
fewe.

Warrelyke people.

The hygher the
coulder.

bycause they lacke Iren and all other metals except golde: by reason wherof they are enforced with greate laboure to cut theyr trees to buylde theyr houfes, and especially to make theyr boates holowe withowte instrumentes of Iren, with certeyne sharpe stones whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus *Vaschus* leauynge all thynges in safetie behynde hym, marched forwarde with his armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conducte of certeyne guydes and labourers which *Poncha* had gyuen hym, as well to leade hym the way, as also to cary his baggages and open the straights through the desolate places and craggy rockes full of the dennes of wylde beastes. For there is seldome entercourse or byinge and fellynge betwene these naked people, bycause they stand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the vse of money. But yf at any tyme they exercise any bartering they doo it but nere hande, exchanginge golde for housholde stufte with theyr confines whiche fumewhat esteeme the same for ornamente when it is wrought. Other superfluities they vtterly contemne, as hynderances of theyr fweete libertie, forasmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for this cause, the high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions are not much worne with many iorneyes. Yet haue theyr scoutes certeyne priiue markes whereby they knowe the waye the one to inuade the others dominions, and spoyle and infeste them felues on bothe fydes with mutual incurfions priiue in the nyght seafon. By the helpe therfore of theyr guydes and labourers, with owre carpenters, he passed ouer the horrible mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyinge in the way, ouer the which he made brydges eyther with pyles or trunkes of trees. And here doo I let passe manye thynges whiche they suffered for lacke of necessaries, beinge also in maner ouercome with extreme laboure, leaste I shulde bee tedious in reherfinge thynges of smaule value. But I haue thought it good not to omitte suche doinges as he had with the kynges by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled *Quarequa*, and mette with the kyng thereof cauled by the same name, with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed fwordes made of wodde, longe staues hardened at the endes with fyer, dartes also and flynges. He came proudely and cruelly ageynst owre men, and sent messengers to them to byd theym stande and procede no further: demaundyng whyther they went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came forth and shewed hym selfe beinge appareled with al his nobilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approchinge towarde owre men, he thretened them with a lions countenance to depart from thense except they wolde bee slayne euery mothers sonne. When owre men denyed that they wolde goo backe, he affayled them fiercely. But the battayle was sone fynnyshed. For as soone as they harde the noyse of the hargabusies, they beleued that owre menne caryed thunder and lyghtenyng about with them. Many also beinge slayne and fore wounded with quarels of crossebowes, they turned their backes and fledde. Owre men folowyng them in the chase, hewed them in piefes as the butchers doo fleshe in the shamwelles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym a buttocke, from an other a shulder, and from sume the necke from the bodye at one stroke. Thus, syxe hundreth of them with theyr kyng, were slayne lyke brute beastes. *Vaschus* founde the house of this kyng infected with most abhominable and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges brother and many other younge men in womens apparell, smoth and effeminately decked, which by the report of such as dwelte abowte hym, he abused with preposterous venus. Of these abowte the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyuen for a pray to his dogges. For (as we haue sayd) the Spaniardes vse [t]he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynst the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngely as yf they were wylde boares or hartes. In soo muche that owre Spaniardes haue founde theyr dogges noo lesse faythful to them in all daungious and enterpryses, then dyd the Colophonians or Castabalenfes which intituted hole armies of dogges soo made to serue in the warres, that beinge accustomed to place them in the fore frounte of the battayles, they neuer shrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the seure punysshment which owre men had executed vpon that fylthy kynde of men, they reforted to them as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngyng with them al such as they knewe to bee infected with that pestilence, spettyng in theyr faces and cryng owte to owre men to take reuenge of them and rydde them owte of the worlde from amonge men as contagious beastes. This stinkyng abomination hadde not yet entered amonge the people, but was exercised onely by the noble men and gentelmen. But the people lyfinge vp theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuouly offended with such vyle deedes. Affirmynge this to bee the cause of theyr soo many thunderinges, lyghtnyng, and tempestes wherwith they are soo often troubeled: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which drowne theyr sets and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers diseafes infue, as they simplye and faythfully beleue, although they knowe none other god then the soonne, whom onely they honoure, thinkynge that it dooth bothe gyue and take awaye as it is pleased or offended. Yet are they very docible, and easye to bee allured to owre customes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothyng vnpleasaunte to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr woordes may bee wrytten with latin letters as wee fayde of th[e] inhabitants of *Hispaniola*. It is a warlyke nation, and hath byn euer hetherto molestous to theyr bortherers. But the region is not fortunate with frutful ground or plentie of gold. Yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge fumewhat colde by reason of theyr heygth. And

therefore the noble men and gentelmen are apparelled. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from *Quarequa*, in which they founde only blacke Moores: and those excedynge fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme paste certeyne blacke mores sayled thether owt of *Aethiopia* to robbe: and that by shippewracke or some other chaunce, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. Th[e]inhabitanes of *Quarequa* lyue in continuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Here *Vaschus* leauinge in *Quarequa* many of his souldiers (which by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauayles and hunger, fell into dyuers diseases) tooke with hym certeyne guydes of the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the palaice of kynge *Poncha*, to the prospect of the other south sea, is only fyxe dayes iorney: the which neuerthelesse by reason of many hynderances and chaunces, and especially for lacke of vytayles, he coulde accomplyshe in noo lesse then. xxv. dayes. But at the length, the feuenth daye of the calendes of October, he behelde with woonderinge eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes shewed vnto hym by the guydes of *Quarequa*, from the whiche he myght see the other sea soo longe looked for, and neuer seene before of any man commynge owte of owre worlde. Approching therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to fley, and went him selfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrst possession therof. Where, faulyng prostrate vpon the grounde, and rayfinge hym selfe ageyne vpon his knees as is the maner of the Christians to pray, lyftyng vpe his eyes and handes towarde heauen, and directinge his face towarde the newe founde south sea, he poored foorth his humble and deuout prayers before almyghtie God as a spirituall sacrifice with thankes gyuing, that it had pleased his diuine maiestie to referue vnto that day the victorie and praise of so greate a thyng vnto hym, beinge a man but of smaule witte and knowlege, of lyttle experience and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner he beckened with his hande to his coompanions to coome to hym, shewyng them the greate mayne sea heretofore vnknownen to th[e]inhabitanes of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: defyringe almyghtie God and the blessed virgin to fauour his beginnynges, and to gyue hym good successe to subdue those landes to the glorie of his holy name and encrease of his trewe religion. All his coompanions dyd lykewyse, and prayfed god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaschus*, with no lesse manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage shewed his souldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hartes, and to behoulde the lande euen nowe vnder theyr feete, and the sea before theyr eyes, whiche shulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of theyr great laboures and trauayles nowe ouerpasse. When he had sayde these woordes, he commaunded them to raise certeine heapes of stoncs in the steede of alters for a token of possession. Then descendyng from the toppes of the mountaynes, least such as might come after hym shulde argue hym of lyinge or falshod, he wrote the kynge of Castelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the lefte: and rayfed heapes of stoncs all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the nexte kynge towarde the south whose name was *Chiapes*. This kynge came foorth ageynste hym with a greate multitude of men: threateninge and forbyddyng him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goo no further. Herevpon, *Vaschus* set his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge nowe but fewe) fiercely to assaile theyr enemies, and to esteeme theym noo better then dogges meate as they shulde bee shortly. Placeinge therefore the hargabufiers and masties in the forefroonte, they saluted kynge *Chiapes* and his men with such a larome, that when they hard the noyse of the gunnes, sawe the flames of fyre, and smelte the fauour of brymstone (for the wynde blew towards them) they droue them selues to flyght with suche feare leaste thunderboultes and lyghtnynges folowed them, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom owre men purfuinge, fyrst keepinge theyr order, and after breakyng theyr array, slewe but fewe and tooke many captiue. For they determined to vse no extremitie, but to pacifie those Regions as quietlye as they myght. Enteringe therefore into the palaice of kynge *Chiapes*, *Vaschus* commaunded many of the captiues to bee loosed: wyllyng them to search owte theyr kynge, and to exhorte hym to coome thither: And that in soo doinge, he wolde bee his frende and profer hym peace, belyde many other benefites. But if he refused to coome, it shulde turne to the destruction of hym and his, and vtter subuersion of his contrey. And that they myght the more assuredly do this message to *Chiapes* he sent with them certeyne of the guydes whiche came with hym from *Quarequa*.

Thus *Chiapes* beinge perswaded aswel by the Quareqans who coulde coniecture to what ende the matter wolde coome by th[e] experience whiche they had seene in them selues and theyr kynge, as also by the reasons of his owne men to whome *Vaschus* hadde made soo frendely promyses in his behalfe, came foorth of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and submytted hym selfe to *Vaschus*, who accepted hym frendelye. They ioyned handes, embraced the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendeshippe, and gaue greate rewardes on bothe sydes. *Chiapes* gaue *Vaschus* foure hundreth poundes weyght of wrought goulde of those poundes whiche they caule *Pesos*: And *Vaschus* recompensed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thynges. Thus beinge made frendes, they remayned togyther a fewe dayes vntyll *Vaschus* souldiers were coome which he lefte behynde hym in *Quarequa*. Then caulinge vnto hym the guydes and labourers which came with hym from thence he

A region of black moores

Diseases of change of ayer and dyet.

The south sea.

Vaschus is coome to the syght of the newe south sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth the poore from the dungehyl

91

Hanniball of Carthage.

Vaschus taketh possession of the mountaynes

Kynge Chiapes.

A battayle.

Chiapes is dryuen to flyght.

Vaschus sendeth for king Chiapes.

Chiapes submitteth hymselfe to Vaschus.

iiii. C. [four hundred] poundes weyght of wrought gold

Vaschus addicteth
the newe land
and sea, to the
dominion of
Castile.

Kynge Coquera
is dryuen to flyght.
Vaschus vseth
both gentelnes
and rigour.

92

vi. C. [six
hundred] and
l. [fifty] poundes
weyght of wrought
gold

A goulfe of
threescore myles.
Saynt Michaels
goulfe

The manly corage
and godly zeale
of Vaschus

Ryches are the
synewes of warre
The faythfulnes of
kynge Chiapes.

A tempest on the
sea.

The increasing of
the South sea.

The Northe
Ocean.

Hard shyft in
necessitie.

93

The Region
Tumacca.

rewarded them liberallye and dismissed theym with thankes. Shortly after, by the conduct of *Chiapes* hym felfe, and certeyne of his men, departinge from the toppes of the mountaynes, he came in the fpace of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where asssemblynge al his men togyther with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicted al that maine sea with all the landes adiacent there vnto to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his fouldiers with *Chiapes* that he myght th[e]selier searche those coastes. And takyng with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hole tree (which they caule *Culchas* as th[e]inhabitanes of *Hispaniola* caul them *Canoas*) and also a bande of fourescore men with certeine of *Chiapes* men, he passed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Coquera*. He attempted to refyste owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was ouercoome and put to flyght. But *Vaschus* who entended to wynne hym with gentelnes, sente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe inuincible they were: howe mercifull to such as submit them selues, also cruell and feure to such as obstinaty withstande them. Promynginge hym furthermore, that by the frendshippe of owre men, he myght bee well assured by th[e]example of other, not onely to lyue in peace and quietnes hym felfe, but also to bee reuenged of th[e]iniuries of his enemies. Wylling hym in conclusion soo to weigh the matter, that if he refused this gentelnes profered vnto hym by soo greate a victourer, he shulde or it were longe, lerne by feelynginge to repent him to late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing. *Coquera* with these woordes and exemples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bryngyng with him fyxe hundreth and l. [fifty] *Pesos* of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto owre men. *Vaschus* rewarded hym lykewise as we fayd before of *Poncha*. *Coquera* beinge thus pacified, they returned to the palaice of *Chiapes*. Where, vistinge theyr companions, and restynginge there a whyle, *Vaschus* determyned to searche the nexte greate goulfe, the which, from the furthest reachynginge therof into the lande of theyr countreys, from the enteraunce of the mayne sea, they faye to bee threescore myles. This they named saynt Michaels goulfe, which they faye to bee full of inhabited Ilandes and hugious rockes. Enteringe therefore into the nyne boates or *Culchas* wherwith he passed ouer the ryuer before, hauinge also with hym the fame coompanye of fourescore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpose, although he were greatly diffuaded by *Chiapes*, who ernestly desyred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming the goulfe to be soo tempestuous and stormy three moonethes in the yeare, that the sea was there by noo meanes nauigable: And that he had seene many *Culchas* deuoured of whirlepoles euen beefore his eyes. But inuincible *Vaschus*, impaciente of idlenes, and voyde of all feare in goddes cause, aunswered that god and his holy fayntes wolde prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasynuche as the matter touched God and the defence of the Christian religion, for the maynetenaunce wherof it shulde bee necessarie to haue great abundance of ryches and treasure as the synewes of war ageynste the enemies of the faythe. Thus vsinginge also th[e]office both of an oratoure and preacher, and hauinge perswaded his coompanyons, he lanced from the lande. But *Chiapes*, least *Vaschus* shulde any thynginge doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered himselfe to goo with hym whither soo euer he went: And wolde by noo meanes assent that *Vaschus* shulde depart from his palaice, but that he wolde brynginge hym on the waye and take part of his fortune. Therefore as soone as they were nowe entered into the maine sea, such fourses and conflictes of water arose ageynst them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or where to reste. Thus beinge tossed and amased with feare, the one loked on the other with pale and vncherefull countenaunces. But especially *Chiapes* and his coompany, who had before tyme with theyr eyes seene th[e]experience of those ieoperdies, were greatly discomforted. Yet (as god wolde) they escaped all, and landed at the nexte Ilande: Where makynge faste theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water soo encreased, that it almost ouerflowed the Iland. They faye also that that fourth sea doth soo in maner boyle and fwelle, that when it is at the hyghest it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule therof, are seene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all suche as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that hit scarfely rifeth at any tyme a cubet aboue the bankes as they also confesse which inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola* and other Ilandes situate in the same. The Ilande therefore beinge nowe drye by the faule of the water, they reforted to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of sande, and fume fore brused, with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken. Such as were brused, they tyed fast with theyr gyrdels, with flippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe stalkes of certein herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chynkes with grasse accordynginge to the presente necessitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe ageyne lyke vnto men that came frome shippewracke, beinge almost confumed with hunger, bycause theyr vytayles were vtterly destroyed by tempeste. Th[e]inhabitanes declared that there is harde all the yeare horrible rorynginge of the sea amonge those Ilandes as often as it rysethe or fauleth. But this most especially in those three monethes in the which it is moste boyst[r]ious as *Chiapes* towlde *Vaschus* before: Meanynginge (as they coulde coniecture by his woordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone and the twoo moones folowynginge, countynginge the moonethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreshynginge hym felfe and his fouldiers a whyle, and passynginge by one vnprofitable kynginge, he came to an other whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge situate on that fyde

of the goulfe. This *Tumaccus* came fourth ageynste owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune. For he was ouércoome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men slayne. He hym selfe was also fore wounded, but yet escaped. *Vaschus* sent certeyne messengers of the Chiapeans to hym to returne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nether by promyffes nor threateninges. Yet when the messengers were instant, and ceassed not to threaten death to him and his famely, with the vtter defolation of his kyngedome if he perfisted in that obstinacie, at the length, he sent his foonne with them: whom *Vaschus* honorably enterteyninge, apparelinge hym gorgiously and gyuing hym many gyftes, sent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to persuade hym of the puiffaunce, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of owre men. *Tumaccus* beinge moued by this gentelnes declared toward his sonne, came with him the thyrde day, bryngynge nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that owre men defyred golde and pearles, he sent for fyxe hundreth and. xiiii. *Pefos* of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the biggest and fayrest pearles beyde a great number of the smaulest forte. Owre men marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these pearles although they were not perfectly whyte bycause they take theym not owte of the sea muscals excepte they fyrst rost them, that they may th[e]selfe open them selfe, and also that the fyfthe maye haue the better taste, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dyfthe, and fet more thereby then by the pearles them selues. Of these thynges I was enformed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaschus* coompanions whom he sent to the kyng with manye pearles and certeyne of those sea muscals. But when *Tumaccus* sawe that owre men soo greatly regarded the bewtie of the pearles, he commaunded certeyne of his men to prepare them selues to goo a fyffhyng for pearles. Who departinge, came ageyne within foure dayes, bringynge with them twelue pounce weight of orient pearles after eight ounces to the pounce. Thus reioysinge on bothe parties, they embraced and made a league of continuall frendshippe. *Tumaccus* thought him selfe happie that he had presented owre men with such thankful gyftes and was admitted to theyr frendshippe: and owre men thinkynge them selues happie and blessed that they had founde suche tokens of great ryches, swalowed downe theyr spettle for thyrste. At all these doinges, kyng *Chiapes* was present as a wytnes and coompanion. He also reioysed not a lyttle, aswell that by his conductinge he sawe that owre men shulde be satisfied of theyr defyre, as also that by this meanes he had declared to the next kyng his bortherer and enemye, what frendes he had of owre men, by whose ayde he myght lyue in quyetes and bee reuenged of his aduerfarie if neede shulde soo requyre. For (as wee haue sayde) these naked kynges infeste them selues with greuous warres onely for ambition and defyre to rule. *Vaschus* bofeth in his epistell, that he lerned certeyne maruelous secretes of *Tumaccus* hym selfe as concernynge the greate ryches of this lande: wherof (as he sayth) he woold vtter nothyng at this presente, for asmuche as *Tumaccus* toulde it him in his eare. But he was enformed of bothe the kynges, that there is an Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, hauing in it but onely one kyng, and hym of soo great poure, that at suche tymes of the yeare as the sea is caulme, he inuadethe theyr dominions with a greate nauie of *Culchas*, spoyling and caryinge a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Iland is distant from these coastes, onely twentie myles: Soo that the promontories or poyntes therof rechyng into the sea, may bee seene from the hylles of this Continent. In the sea nere about this Ilande, sea muscals are engendred of such quantitie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers. In these are pearles founde (beinge the hartes of those shell fyfthes) often tymes as bygge as beanes, sumtymes bygger then olyues and such as sumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue defyred. Althoughe this Ilande bee soo nere to the shore of this firme lande, yet is the begynnyng therof in the mayne sea without the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaschus* beinge ioyfull and mery with this rych communication, fantasinge nowe in maner nothing but princes treasures, begaune to speake fierce and cruell wordes ageynst the tyranne of that Ilande, meanyng hereby too woonne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde them to hym with a nearer bonde of frendship. Yet therefore raylynge further on hym with spytefull and opprobrious wordes, he swore great othes that he woold furthwith inuade the Ilande, spoylynge, destroyinge, burnynge, drownynge, and hangynge, sparinge neyther swoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iniuries: And therewith commaunded his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the twoo kynges *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, exhorted hym frendly to deferre this enterpryse vntyll a more quiete seafon, bycause that sea was not nauigable withowte greate daunger, beinge nowe the begynnyng of Nouember. Wherin the kynges seemed to faye trewe For as *Vaschus* hym selfe wryteth, great roryng of the sea was harde amonge the Ilandes of the goulfe by reason of the raginge and conflicte of the water. Great ryuers also descending from the toppes of the mountaynes the same time of the yeare, and ouerflowyng theyr bankes, dryuyng downe with theyr vyolence greate rockes and trees, make a marueylous noyse. Lykewise the furie of the South and Northeast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghtnyng at the same seafon, dyd greatly moleste them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were vexed in the night with could: and in the day time, the heate of the sonne troubled them: wherof it is noo maruaile, forasmuche as they were neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, although they make noo mention of the eleuation of the pole. For in such regions, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the soone and other hotte planettes, doo chiefly exercise theyr influence: Althowghe the antiquitie were of an other

Kynge *Tumaccus* is driuen to flyght

Golde and pearles.

Muscals of the sea.

Fysshynge for pearles.
xii pounce weyght of pearles.

The thyrst of golde.

Ambition amonge naked men.

This Ilande is cauled *Margaritea* *Diues*, or *Dites*.
A kyng of greate poure.

Bigge pearles.
Cleopatra, queene of *Egypt* resolued a pearle in vineger and drunke it, price. v. thousande pounce of our mony.
The fiercenes of *Vaschus*.

94

Great ryuers faulyng from mountaynes.

Thunder and lyghtnyng in Nouember.

Colde in the nyght nere the Equinoctiall.

Habitable regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

The nauigations
[? nauigations] of
the Portugales
towards the southe
pole.

Antipodes.
He meaneth S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.

The starres about
the southe pole.

Lactea via.

A similitude
declarynge
Antipodes.

opinion, supposinge the Equinoctiall circle to bee vnhabitable and desolate by reason of the heate of the soonne hauinge his course perpendiculerly or directly ouer the same: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience proued to bee trewe. For they faile yearly to th[e]inhabitanes of the south pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercise marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath byn men of singular witte and great lernyng, which haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*: that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is most certeyne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For euen they also were men: whose propertie is to erre and bee deceaued in many thynges. Neuerthelesse, the Portugales of owre tyme haue sayled to the fyue and fyftie degree of the south pole: Where, coompasinge abowte the poynt thereof, they myght see throughowte al the heauen about the same, certeyne shynynge whyte cloudes here and there amonge the starres, lyke vnto theym whiche are seene in the tracte of heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They say, there is noo notable starre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of owres which the common people thynke to bee the pole it selfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the same fauleth benethe the Ocean. When the sonne descendeth from the myddeste of the exiltree of the woorld from vs, it rysethe to them, as a payre of balances whose weyght inclynynge from the equall poyse in the myddeste toward eyther of the fydes, caufeth the one ende to ryse as much as the other fauleth. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is sprynge tyme with them: And summer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it suffiseth to haue sayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therfore returne to the historie and to owre men.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Vaschus by th[e]aduice of kynge *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, determyned to deferre his vyage to the sayde Ilande vntyll the nexte sprynge or summer, at which tyme *Chiapes* offered hym selfe to accompanie owre men and ayde them therein all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vaschus* had knowlege that these kynges had nettes and fysshynge places in certeyne stations of that sea nere vnto the shore, where they were accustomed to fysh for sea muscals in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purpose they had certeyne dyuers or fysshers exercised frome theyr youthe in swymmyng vnder the water. But they doo this onely at

certeyne tymes when the sea is calme, that they may th[e]selfe come to the place where these shell fyshes are woonte to lye. For the bygger that they are, soo much ly they the deeper and nerer to the bottome. But the lesser, as it were dowghters to the other, are nerer the bryme of the water. Lykewyse the lease of all, as it were their nieses, are yet nearer to the superficiall parte therof. Too them of the byggeste forte whiche lye loweste, the fysshers descende the depthe of three mens heyght, and sumtyme foure. But to the doughters or nieses as their succeffion, they descend onely to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes also, after that the sea hathe byn disquyeted with vehemente tempestes, they fynde a greate multytude of these fysshes on the sandes, beyng dryuen to the shore by the vyolence of the water. The perles of these whiche are founde on the sande, are but lytle.

The fyfthe it selfe, is more pleasaunte in eatynge then are owre oysters as owre men report. But perhappes hunger the sweete fause of all meates, caused owre men soo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of sea muscals (as Aristotell supposed) or the byrthe or spaune of there intrals (as *Plinye* thought) Or whether they cleaue contynually to the rockes, or wander by companies in the sea by the guyinge of th[e]eldeste: Whether euerye fyfthe brynge forth the one perle or more, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Also whether they bee fyled frome the rockes wherunto they cleaue, or maye bee easlye pulled awaye, or otherwyse faule of by them selues when they are coomme to there full growth: Lykewyse whether perles bee harde within the shelle or softe, owre men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truste or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owre men are euen nowe in hande with the matter. Also, as soone as I shall bee aduertysed of the arryuall of *Petrus Arias* the capytayne of owre men, I wyll desyre hym by my letters to make diligent searche for these thynges, and certifie me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee slacke or omytte any thyng herein. For he is my verye frende: and one that taketh greate pleasure in confyderyng the woorkes of nature. And surelye it feemeth vnto me vndecente, that wee shoulde with fylence ouerflynge so greate a thyng whiche aswell in the owlde tyme as in owre dayes, hathe, and yet doothe, drawe bothe men and women to emmoderate desyre of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shalbe able hereafter with perles to satiffie the gredye appetite of fuche as in wanton pleasures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* and *Afopus*. So that frome henfforth we shal neyther enuye nor

The maner of
fysshynge for
perles.

Three kindes of
perles.

95

Dyuers questions
as concernynge
perles

Petrus arias

Wanton and
superfluous
pleasures.
Cleopatra.
Asopus.

reuerence the nyfe frutefulness of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde sea. But lette vs nowe returne to owre purpose. *Vaschus* therefore determined with the fysshers of *Chiapes* to proue what myght bee doone in his fyfhe pooles or flations of sea muscules. *Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obediente to *Vaschus* his requeste, although the sea were boyft[r]yous, coommaunded thirtye of his fysshers to prepare them selfes and to resort to the fysshinge places. *Vaschus* fente onelye fyxe of his men with them to beeholde them frome the sea bankes, but not to coommitte them felues to the daunger of the sea. The fysshynge place was distante frome the palayce of *Chiapes* aboute tenne myles. They durste not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reason of the furye of the sea. Yet of the muscules whiche lye hyghest, and of fuche as were dryuen to the shore by the vyolence of the water, they broughte fyxe greate farthels in the space of a fewe dayes. The perles of these were but lyttle, aboute the bygnes of smaule fytches: yet verye fayre and bewtyfull, by reason theye were taken newly owte of the fyfhe, beinge yet rawe. And that they shulde not bee reproued of lyinge as concerninge the bignes of these sea muscals, they fente many of them into Spayne to the kynge with the perles, the fyfhe beyng taken owte. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. These shelle fysshes therefore beyng thus founde here in foo manye places in that sea, and gold in maner in euery house, doo argue the ryche treasurye of nature too bee hyd in those coastes, forafinuche as fuche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle fynger of a gigantes hande. What then maye wee thynke of the hole hande of the gyante (for hetherto theye haue onely bynne in hande with the confynes of *Vraba*) when theye shall haue thorowly searched all the coastes and secretes of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaschus* contented with these fygnes and ioyfull of his good succeffe in these enterprifes, determined by an other waye to returne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where also, they haue golde mynes aboute tenne myles from the village. He gaue therefore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym noo further: Confailyng hym to continue faythfull to the christian kynge his lorde and maister. Thus embrasinge the one the other, and ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he bore to owre men. *Vaschus* leauing his ficke men with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourney with the refydue, hauinge also with him for guydes three of *Chiapes* maryners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeine kynge cauled *Teaocha*: who beinge aduertified of the coommyng of owre men, of whose famous actes he had harde muche before, was verye gladde therof and enterteyned them honorably: So that for a token of his frendely affection towarde them, he gaue *Vaschus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eyght ounces to the pounce: Also twoo hundreth bigge perles: but not fayre, by reason they were taken owt of the muscals after they had byn foddren. After they had ioyned handes, *Vaschus* recompensed hym with certeyne of owre thynges. Lykewise rewardyng his guydes the feruantes of *Chiapes*, he dismissed them with commendations to theyr lord. Kyng *Teaocha* at the departure of owr men from his palaice, dyd not onely appoint them guydes to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certeyne slaues in the fleede of beastes to cary theyr vytayles, bycause they shulde passe through many defertes, baren and rowgh mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, ladyng them with salted and dried fyfhe, and breade of those regions, made of the rootes of *Maizium* and *Iucca*. He also commaunded his sonne not to depart from owr men vntyl he were licenced by *Vaschus*. By theyr conductinge therefore, *Vaschus* came to the dominion of an other kyng whose name was *Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bortherers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyran, whether it were that his giltie conscience for his mischeuous actes, put him in feare that owre menne wolde reuenge the fame, or that he thought hym selfe inferior to resist them, fled at theyr commyng. *Vaschus* wryteth that in these regions in the mooneth of Nouember he was fore afflicted with greate heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that fyde of the mountaynes hath lyttle water: In foo muche that they were in daunger to haue perished but that certeyne of th[e] inhabitants shewed them of a sprynge which was in the secrete place of a woodde, whither *Vaschus* with all speade sent twoo quycke and stronge younge men of his coompanions with theyr gourdes and fuche water vesselles as *Teaocha* his men browghte with them. Of th[e] inhabitantes, there durst none depart from there coompany bycause the wylde beastes doo soone inuade naked men. For in those mountaynes, and especially in the wooddes neare vnto the springe, they saye that they are sumtymes taken owte of there houses in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doores bee well sparde. It shall not bee frome my purpose here to declare a particular chaunce before I enter any further in this matter. Theye saye therefore that the laste yeare the regyon of *Dariena* was noo lesse infested and trowbeled with a fierse tyger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme paste with a wylde bore, and *Nemea* with a horrible lyon. For they affyrme that for the space of fyxe hole moonethes there passed not one nyghte withowte summe hurte doone: soo that it kyled nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, sumtymes euen in the highe wayes of the village. For owre men haue nowe greate heardes of cattayle in those regions. They say also that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght safelye goo furthe of his doores, bycause shee spared not men if shee mette fyrste with them. But at the length, necessitye enforced them to inuente a policie howe they myght bee reuenged of fuche bludshed. Searchynge therefore dilygently her footestepes, and folowyng the pathe wherbye shee was accustomed in the

Stoidum.
Taprobana.

The fysshing place
of kyng Chiapes.

Golde in maner in
euery house.
The ryche
treasurye of
nature.

The golde mynes
of Dariena.

96

Kyng Teaocha
enterteyneth
Vaschus frendelye.
Twentye pounce
weyght of wrought
golde.

Desertes full of
wylde beastes.

Dryed fysshe

Kyng Pacra
a tyranne.

Greate heate in
the monethe of
Nouember.

Hurte by wylde
beastes.

A tyger.
Calydonia is a
foreste in
Scotlande.
Nemea is a wodde
in Greece.

Tigers whelpes.

Thus the Egyprians
take Crocodiles.

The dogge tyger taken.
The rorynge of the tyger.

Tigers flesh eaten.
97

The bitche tyger.

Tigers whelpes.

A straunge thyng.

Kynge Pacra

Naturall hatred of vyce.

Foure kynges deuoured of dogges.

The vse of dogges in warre ageinst naked men.

The Canybales are experte archers.

Swoordes of woodde.

Fiftie ponde weyght of golde.
98

nyght seafon to wander owte of her denne to seeke her praye, theye made a greate trenshe or pytte in her walke, coueringe the same with hurdels wheruppon they caste parte of the earthe and disperfed the refydue. The dogge tyger chaunfed fyrste into this pitfaul, and fel vppon the poyntes of sharpe stakes and fuche other ingens as were of purpose fixed in the bottome of the trenshe. Beynge thus wounded, he rored foo terrybly, that it grated the bowels of fuche as harde hym, and the wooddes and montaynes neare aboute, rebounded the noyse of the horryble crye. When they perceaued that he was layde faste, they reforted to the trenshe and flewe hym with flones, dartes, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the dartes into a thoufande chyppes. Beynge yet deade, he was fearefull to all fuche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he wolde haue doone beynge alyue and loofe. One *Iohannes Ledisma* of Ciuile, a nere frynde to *Vaschus* and one of his coompanyons of his trauayles, toulde me that he hym selfe dyd eate of the fleshe of that tiger: and that it was nothings inferyor to biefe in goodnes. Beynge demaunded howe they knewe hit to bee a tyger forasmuche as none of them had euer feene a tyger, they answered that they knewe hit by the spottes, fiercenes, agilyte, and fuche other markes and token wherby the anciente writers haue described, the tiger. For sum of them, had before tyme feene other spotted wilde beastes, as lybardes and panthers. The dogge tyger beynge thus kylled, theye folowyng the trafe of his steppes towarde the mountaines, came to the denne where the bytche remayned with her twoo younge fuckyng whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at there coommyng. Theye fyrste caryed awaye the whelpes with them. But afterwarde fearyng leaste they shulde dye bycause theye were very younge, entendyng when they were bygger to fende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren aboute there neckes, and caryed them agayne to there denne: whither returnyng within a fewe dayes after, they founde the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there place. Theye suppose that the damme in her furye tore them in pyeces and caryed them awaye, leste anye shulde haue the fruition of them. For theye playnely affirme that it was not possible that they shulde bee loofed frome the chaynes alyue. The skynne of the deade tyger stuffed with drye herbes and strawe, they sente to *Hispaniola* to the admyrall and other of the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there lawes and succoure. It shall at this tyme suffyce to haue written thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte of them whiche bothe susteyned damage by there rauenyng, and also handeled the skynne of that whiche was slayne. Let vs nowe therefore returne to kynge *Pacra* frome whome wee haue digressed. When *Vaschus* had entred into the houfes forsaken of *Pacra*, he sente messengiers to reconcyle hym as he had doone the other kynges. At the first he refused to coomme. But after threatenynge, he came with three other kynges in his coompanye. *Vaschus* writethe that he neuer sawe a more monstous and deformed creature: And that nature hath onely gyuen hym humane shape, and otherwyse to bee worfe then a brute beaste, with maners accordyng to the linyamentes of his bodye. He abufed with mooste abhominable lechery the doughters of foure kynges his bortherers frome whome hee had taken them by vyolence. Of the fylthe behauoure of *Pacra*, of his crueltye and iniuries doone by hym, many of the other kynges made greuous coomplayntes to *Vaschus* as vnto a hygh Iudge and iuste reuenger: Mooste humblye besechyng hym to seee fuche thynges punysshed, forasmuche as theye tooke hym for a man sente of god for that purpose. Herevppon *Vaschus* aswell to wyne their good wylles, as also too shewe an exemple of terroure to fuche as vfed lyke fashions, coommaunded that this monstous beaste with the other three kynges whiche were subiecte to hym and of lyke conditions, shulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghtinge dogges, and their tome carkeses to bee burned. Of these dogges whiche theye vse in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynges. For theye faye that theye runne vppon th[e]inhabitanes armed after there maner, with noo lesse fiercenes then if theye were hartes or wylde bores, if the Spaniardes doo but onely poynte towarde them with their fyngers: In foo muche that oftentimes they haue had no neede too dryue their enemyes too flyght with swoordes or arrowes: But haue doone the same onely with dogges placed in the forefronte of their battayle, and lettyng them flyppe with their wache woorde and priuye token. Wheruppon the barbaryans stryken with feare by reason of the cruell countenaunces of the masties, with their desperate bouldenes and vnaccustomed houlyng and barkyng, haue disparclod at the fyrste onfette and broke their arraye. Yet it chaunfeth otherwyse when theye haue anye conflicte agaynst the Canibales and the people of *Caramairi*. For these are fyerfer, and more warrelyke men: Also fo experte arche[r]s, that theye can mooste certenlye dyrect their venemous arrowes agaynst the dogges with fuche celeritye as if theye were thunderboltes: By reason wherof, theye sumtymes kyl many of them. Th[e]inhabytantes of these montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes: But vse onelye *Machanis*, that is certayne longe and broude fwordes made of woodde: Also flynge, longe pykes and dartes hardened at the endes with fyere. Whyle kynge *Pacra* yet lyued, noo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his houe. For owre men founde in his iewel houe fyfthe poundes weyght of golde. Beynge therefore demaunded where he had it, he answered that they whiche gathered the same in those montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all deade: And that sence he was a chylde, he neuer esteemed golde more then stoones. More then this, theye coulde not gette of hym. By this feuere punysshment executed vppon *Pacra*, *Vaschus* concyled vnto hym the myndes of all the other kynges of that prouynce. And

by this meanes it came too passe, that when he fente for the fycke men whiche he lefte behynde hym with kynge *Chiapes*, an other kynge whiche was in the mydde waye (whose name was *Bononiama*) enterteined them gentellye, and gaue them. xx. pounde weyght of pure wrought golde, besyde great plentye of vyttayles. And not this onely, but also accompanied them hym felfe vntyll he had brought them safelye frome his palaice into the domynyon of *Pacra*: Where takyng eche of them by the ryghte handes, he delyuered them to *Vaschus* hym felfe, as a faythfull pledge commytted too his charge, and therewith spake to *Vaschus* in this effecte. Mooste myghtye and valyaunte vycourer, beholde I here delyuer vnto yowe, yowre coompanions in fuche plight as I receaued them: wiffhyng that I had byn aswell able to gyue them healthe, as they were hertely welcoume to fuche pore enterteynement as I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentelnesse whiche I haue founde bothe in yowe and them, he shall rewarde yowe whiche fendeth thunderynge and lyghtelyng to the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye giueth vnto good men plentie of *Iucca* and *Maizium* in dewe seafon. As he spake these woordes, he lyfted vppe his handes and eyes towarde the soonne whome they honoure for god. Then he spake further to *Vaschus*, fayinge: In that yowe haue destroyed and flaine owre vyolent and proude enemies, yowe haue browght peace and quyetnesse to vs and owre famelyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye yowe. Yowe haue soo ouercoome and tamed wylde monsters, that wee thynke yowe to bee fente from heauen for the punyishment of euyll men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of yowre myghtye fwoorde, wee maye hereafter leade owre lyues withowte feare, and with more quietnesse gyue thanks to the giuer of all good thynges for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When th[e] interpretoure had toulde *Vaschus* that kyng *Bononiama* had sayde these woordes, and fuche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thanks for his humanitye declared towarde owre men, and rewarded hym as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentilnesse. *Vaschus* wryteth that he lerned manye thynges of this kynge as concernyng the greate rycheffe of these regions: But that he wolde at this present speake nothyng therof: And reherfethe the fame as thynges lyke to haue good succeffe. What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or aduancement meaneth, I doo not well vnderstande. But he playnely feemeth hereby to promysse many greate thynges. And surelye it is to be thought that accordyng to his hope, great riches maye bee looked for. For they came in maner into none of th[e] inhabytauntes houfes, but that they found in them, eyther bresteplates or currettes of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therefore thus by a fymilitude of owre houfes: If amonge vs any man of great poure were moued with the defyre to haue great plentye of Iron, and wolde enter into Italye with a mayne force as dyd the Gothes in tyme paste, what abundaunce of Iron shoulde he haue in their houfes: where as he shulde fynde in one place a fryngpan, in an other a chauldron, here a tryuet, and there a spytte, and these in maner in euery pore mannes house, with fuche other innumerable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iren is plentifully engendred in fuche regions where they haue soo greate vse therof. Owre men also perceaued that th[e] inhabytantes of these regions do no more esteeme golde then we do Iren: nor yet soo muche after they sawe to what vse Iren serued vs. Thus muche haue I thoughte good to write too yowre holynesse of fuche thynges as I haue gathered owte of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of mouthe of such as were his companyons in these affayres. As wee receyue them, so wee gyue them vnto yowe. Tyme which reueleth all secretes, shall hereafter mynyster larger argument of wrytyng. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate thyng in fearchyng the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundreth fourescore and tenne men whiche *Vaschus* browghte with hym from *Dariena*, there remayned onely threescore and ten, or at the most fourescore, whose ayde he nowe vsed in these daungerous aduentures, leauyng euer the crafed men behynd hym in the kynges houfes all the waye that he went. But they mooste especially fell into fundrye diseafes, whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*. For they were not able to abyde fuche calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade of those regions, and wylde herbes without falte, drinkinge none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lackinge or vnwholsome, where as before their stomakes had byn vsed to good meates. But the owlde souldiours of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all forowes, and exceedyng tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, and watchyng: In so muche that merilye they make their booste that they haue obserued a longer and sharper lent then euer yowre holynesse inioyned. For they saye that for the space of foure hole yeares, they ate none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and then perhappes fyshe, and verye feldoome fleshe: yea, and that sumtime for lacke of al these, they haue not abhorred from mangye dogges and fylthy toades as wee haue sayde before. The owlde souldiours of *Dariena*, I caule those whiche fyrste folowed the capytaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda* to inhabyte the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were lyuyng. But lette vs nowe omytte these thynges, and retourne to *Vaschus* the vycourer of the montaynes.

Kynge
Bononiama, frende
to the christians.
Wroughte golde.

The oration of
kynge Bononiama

The sparke of the
lawe of nature, is
the lawe written
in the hartes of
men.

Hiperbole.

Great plenty of
golde.

A symilitude for
the profe of
plentye of golde.

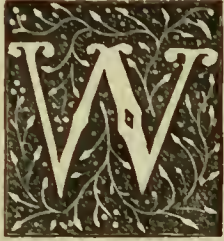
Iren more
estemed then
golde.

99
Change of dyet
is daungerous.

Owlde souldiers.

A longe lent.

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Comogrus.

Two poore kynges.

Desertes.

Kynge Buchebuea
submyteth him
selfe

Vessels of golde.

Kynge Chiorisus
sendeth Vaschus
xxx. dysshes of
pure golde.

100

Axes of Iren more
estemed then any
gold

Superfluous and
effemynate
plesures

An exemple of the
lyfe of owre fyrst
parentes.

When *Vaschus* had remained thirtye dayes in the palayce of kynge *Paera*, concilynge vnto hym the myndes of th[e]inhabitanes and prouidinge thynges necessarye for his coompanions, he departed from thense by the conducte of certayne of kynge *Traocha* his men, and came too the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king therof, are named by the fame name. He founde the fydes of these montaynes so rude and baren, that there was nothinge apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vnpleasante frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhabyted this infortunate region, whiche *Vaschus* ouerpassed with al speede for feare of hunger. One of these poore kynges was named *Cotochus*, and the other *Ciuriza*. He tooke them bothe with hym to guye hym in the waye, and dismyssed *Traocha* his men with vytayles and rewardes. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered throughe many deferte wooddes, craggye mountaynes, and muddy marysshes full of suche quamyres that men are ostentymes swalowed vp in them if they looke not the more warelye to their fiete. Also through places not frequented with reforte of men, and suche as nature had not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as th[e]inhabitanes haue feldoomer entercourse betwene them, but onely by fundrye incurtions, the one to spoyle and destroye the other: Beynge otherwise contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withowte worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures. Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territorye of another kynge whose name was *Buchebuea*, they founde all thynges voyde and in silence: For the kynge and his subiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaschus* sente messengers to fetche hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrste submytte hym selfe, but also promysse his ayde with all that he myght make: Protestyng furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that owre men wolde doo hym any iniurie, but that he hyd hym selfe for verye shame and grieffe of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honorablye accordyng vnto their dignitee, bycause his flore of vitayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and frendshyppe, he sent owre men many vesselles of golde, defying them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whose good will wanted not in greater thynges if his abilyttee were greater. By whiche wordes the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwise cruelly handled of his bortherers. By reason wherof, owre men were enforced to departe from thense more hungerly then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfore, they espyed certeine naked men coomminge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaschus* coommaunded his armye to slaye, and sente his interpretours to them to knowe what they wold haue. Then one of them to whom the other seemed to gyue reuerence, spake in this effect. Owre lorde and kinge *Chiorisus*, greeteth yowe well: Wyllyng vs to declare that he hath harde of yowre puissaunce and vertue wherby yowe haue subdued euell men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes. For the whiche yowre noble factes and iustyce, as he doothe honour yowre fame, soo wolde he thinke him selfe moste happye if he myght receiue yowe into his palaice. But, forasmuche as his fortune hath byn so euell (as he imputeth it) that beyng owte of yowre waye, yowe haue ouerpassed hym, he hath sent yowe this golde in token of his good wyll and fryndshyppe towarde yowe. And with these wordes he deliuered to *Vaschus* thirtye dysshes of pure golde. Addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shulde please him to take the paynes to coomme to their kynge, he shulde receyue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kynge whyche was their bortherer and mortall enemye, was verye ryche in golde: And that in subduyng of hym they shulde bothe obteine greate rycheffe, and also delyuer them from daylye vexations: whiche thinge myght easlye be doone by their helpe bycause they knewe the countrye. *Vaschus* put them in good coomforte, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they more esteemed then greate heapes of golde. For they haue lyttell neede of golde, hauyng not th[e]use of pestiferous money. But he that maye get but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym selfe rycher then euer was *Craffus*. For euen these naked men doo perceyue that an axe is necessarye for a thousande vses: And confesse that golde is defyred onely for certayne vaine and effeminate pleasures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withowte any inconuenience. For owre gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them: By reason wherof they take it for noo shame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pride and wantonnes of owre tyme dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignomye to bee withowte that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men may leade a free and happy life withowt tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyns, and towels, with suche other innumerable wherof they haue no vse, excepte perhappes the kynges furnishe their tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dryue awaye hunger with a pyece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broyldde fysh or

summe kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleshe but feldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any ounctuous meates, they wpe them eyther on the foules of their feete, or on their thyghes, ye and sumtymes on the skynnes of their priuye members in the steede of a nappekynne. And for this cause doo they often tymes washe them selues in the ryuers. Owre men therefore wente forwarde laden with golde, but fore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of kynge *Pocchorrofa* who fledde at their coomynge. Here for the space of thirte dayes they fylled their emp^tye bellies with breade of the rootes of *Maizium*. In the meane tyme *Vaschus* fente for *Pocchorrofa*: who beyng allured with promiffes and fayre woordes, came and submytted hym selfe brynginge with hym for a present. xv. poundes weighte of wrought golde, and a fewe flaes. *Vaschus* rewarded hym as he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart, he was aduertified that he shulde passe through the dominion of a certayne kynge whose name was *Tumanama*. This is hee whome the foonne of kynge *Comogrus* declared to bee of foo great poure and fearefull to all his bortherers, and with whom many of *Comogrus* familyers had byn captiue. But owre men nowe perceiued that they meafured his poure by their owne. For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes, in respecte to the poure and pollicye of owre men. Owre men were also enformed by fuche as dwelte neare aboute *Tumanama*, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as they supposed: Nor yet fo ryche in golde as younge *Comogrus* had declared. Yet confulted they of his subduyng: whiche they thoughte they myght th[e]aslyer bryng to passe bycause *Pocchorrofa* was his mortall enemye, who mozte gladly promysed them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaschus* therefore, leauynge his fycke men in the vyllage of *Pocchorrofa*, tooke with hym threscore of his mozte valiante souldiers, and declared vnto them howe kynge *Tumanama* had oftentimes spoken proude and threatnyng woordes ageynste them: Lykewise that it nowe stode them in hande of necessitye to passe through his dominion: And that he thought is beste to sette vpon hym vnwares. The souldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted him to gyue th[e]aduenture, promysinge that they wolde folowe hym whether fo euer he wente. They determined therefore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that *Tumanama* not knowynge of their fooden commyng, myght haue no leasure to assemble an armye. The thyng came to passe euen as they had deuyfed. For in the fyrste watche of the nyght, owre men with the *Pocchorrosians*, inuaded the vyllage and palaice of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym prisoner suspectynge nothinge lesse. He had with hym two younge men whiche he abufed vnnaturally: Also fourscore women which he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykewise a greate number of his gentelmen and subiectes were taken stragelynge in other vyllages neare aboute his palaice. For their houfes are not adherent together as owres bee, bycause they are oftentimes troubeled with vehement whirlewyndes by reason of the sudder chaunges and motions of the ayre caused by the influence of the planetes in the equalitie of the daye and nyght beyng there in maner bothe of one lengthe throughowte all the yeare, forasmuche as they are neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne as we haue fayde before. Their houfes are made of trees, couered and after their maner thetched with the stalkes of certayne towghe herbes. To the palayce of *Tumanama*, was onely one house adherent, and that euen as bygge as the palayce it selfe. Eyther of these houfes were in length a hundreth and twentie pases, and in bredth fyftie pases as owre men meafured them. In these two houfes the kynge was accustomed to muster his men as often as he prepared an armye. When *Tumanama* therefore, was thus taken captiue with all his Sardanapanicall famelye, the *Pocchorrosians* bragged and threatened hym beyng nowe bounde, that he shulde shortly bee hanged. The other kynges also his bortherers, reioysed at his myffortune. Wherby owre men perceaued that *Tumanama* was no lesse troublesome to his neighbours, then was *Pacra* to the kinges of the southe fyde of the montaynes. *Vaschus* also the better to please them, threatned hym greuoufly: But in deede entended no euell toward him. He spake therefore sharply vnto hym with these woordes: Thou shalte nowe suffer punysshment thou cruell tyranne, for thy pryde and abominations. Thou shalte knowe of what poure the christians are whom thou haste foo contemned and threate[n]d to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte ryuer and there to drowne them as thou haste often tymes made thy vaunte emonge thy naked flaes. But thou thy selfe shalte fyrste feele that whiche thou haste prepared for other: And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vppe. Neuerthelesse gyuyng a priuye token of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappye *Tumanama*, fearyng and beleuyng that *Vaschus* had mente in erneste as he commaunded, fell prostrate at his feete and with teares defyred pardon: Protefynge that he neuer spake any fuche woordes. But that perhappes his noble men in their droonkennesse had so abufed their toonges whiche he coude not rule. For their wynes although they bee not made of grapes yet are they of force to make men droonken. He declared furthermore that the other kynges his bortherers had of malice surmysed fuche lyes of hym enuyng his fortune bycause he was of greater poure then they. Mozte humbly defyryng *Vaschus* that as he tooke hym to bee a iuste vycourer, foo to gyue no credytte vnto their vniuste and malycious complaints. Addyng herevnto that if it wolde please hym to pardon hym not hauinge offended, he wolde bringe him great plentie of gold. Thus layng his ryght hande on his breaft, he swore by the sonne, that he euer loued and feared the chrystians fence he fyrste harde of their fame and vycories: Especially when he harde faye that they had *Machanas*, that is, swoordes sharper then

Plentye of gold
and scarcenesse
of meate.

King Pocchorrosa
submytteth
hymselfe.
xv. pounde
weyghte of
wroughte golde.

Kyng Tumanama
looke decad. ii.
lib. iiii.

A good pollicye.

101

Kynge Tumanama
is taken prisoner.

The cause of
vehemente wyndes
nere the
Equinoctial.

Kynge Tumanama
his palaice.

Vaschus his
woordes to kynge
Tumanama.

*Oderunt quem
metuant.*

Kyng Tumanama
his woordes.

Tumanama is
pardoned.

xxx pounde
weyghte of
wroughte golde.
lx. pounde
weyght of golde.

102

They abhorre
labour.

The coloure of the
golden earthe and
a tryall of the
same.

Tokens of great
plentie of golde.

Vaschus fauleth
sicke.
Feeblenes of
hunger and
watchinge.

Kynge Comogrus
frendely to the
Christians.

The large and
fruteful plain of
Zauana.
The ryuer
Comogrus.

103

theare, and such as cutte in pieces al thynges that coomme in their waye. Then directynge his eyes towarde *Vaschus* who had his swoorde in his hand, he spake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytte) dare lyfte vppe his hande ageynste this swoorde of yowres wherwith yowe are able with one strooke to cleaue a man from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therfore perfwade yowe (o mooste myghtye victourer) that euer suche woordes proceded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumanama* with trembeling spake these woordes, therwith swallowynge downe the knot of death, *Vaschus* seemed by his teares to bee moued to compassion: And speakyng to hym with chearefull countenance commaunded hym to bee loosed. This doone, he sente immediatly to his palaice for. xxx. pounde weyght of pure gold artificially wrought into fundry ouches whiche his wyues and concubynes vsed to weare. Also the thyrde daye folowynge, his noble men and gentylnen sent threcore pounde weight of golde for their fyne and raunsumme. *Tumanama* beyng demaunded wher they had that gold, answered that it was not gathered in his dominions But that it was brought his auncestours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the southe. But the *Pocchorrosians* and other his enemies, sayd that he lyed: Affirmynge that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. Yet denyed not but that there hath sumtimes byn found certaine smaule graines of golde, to the gatherynge wherof, he neuer had any regarde, bycause they coulde not gette it without great and longe labour. Whyle these thynges were dooinge, the fycke men whiche *Vaschus* had lefte in the village of *Pocchorrosa*, came to hym the. viii. day of the Calendes of Ianuary in the yeare of Christe. M. D. XIII. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the southe with fundrye instrumentes to dygge the grounde and gather golde. Thus passynge ouer the day of the natiuite of Christ without bodely labour, vppon sainte Steuens daye he brought certeyne myners to the fyde of a hyll not farre dystante from the palaice of *Tumanama*, where (as he faith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to brynge furthe golde. When they had dygged a pytte not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and fyfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne smaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell feedes, amountynge to the weyght of twelue graynes as they prouyd with their balances of affaye before a notarie and wytnesse that the better credytte myghte bee gyuen therto. Wherby they argued that the rychenesse of that lande was agreable to the report of the bortherers, although *Vaschus* coulde by noo meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the same. They suppose that he nothyngesteemed so smaule a portion. But other saye that he denyed his cuntry to bee frutefull of golde, leaste by reason therof the defyre of golde, myght intyse owre men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in dede the feely kynge was a prophet in soo thinkynge. For they chose that and the region of *Pocchorrosa* to inhabyte, and determyned to buylde townes in them bothe, if it shulde so please the kynge of Castyle: Aswell that they myght bee baytinge places and vytailyngge houses for suche as shulde iorney towarde the southe, as also that both the regions were frutfull and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intendynge nowe therfore to departe from thense, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the grounde with certayne shynynge stones, seemed to bee a token of golde. Where causynge a smaule pitte to bee dygged lyttell beneath th[e]upper cruste of the earthe, he founde so muche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniardes caule *Castellanum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Pefus*, but not in one grayne. Reioyfynge at these tokens in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumanama* to be of good coomforte, promyfyng hym that he wolde bee his frende and defender, soo that he troubeled not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Christians. He also perswaded hym to gather plentye of golde. Summe saye that he ledde awaye all *Tumanama* his women, and spoyled him leaste he shuld rebell. Yet he delyuered his soonne to *Vaschus* to bee broughte vppe with owre men, to learne their language and relygyon, that he myght thereafter the better vse his helpe aswell in all thynges that he shulde haue to doo with owre men, as also more polytykely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer by reason of excesse of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger: In fomuche that departynge from thense, he was fayne too bee borne uppon mennes backes in shietes of gossampyne cotton. Lykewyse also many of his souldiers whiche were soo weake that they coulde nother go nor stonde. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of th[e]inhabytantes, who shewed them selues in al thynges wyllynge and obedyente. Also summe of them whiche were sumwhat feeble and not able to trauallye, although not greuouly fycke, were ledde by the armes vntyll they came to the domynion of kynge *Comogrus* a greate frende to the Christyans, of whom wee haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* comynge thether, he founde that the owlde kynge was deade, and his soonne (whome we so prayfed for his wisedome) to raygne in his steade: And that he was baptifed by the name of Charles. The palayce of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a stiepe hyll well cultured. Hauynge towarde the southe a playne of twelue leages in breadth and veary frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyond this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde the two seas wherof we haue spoken before. Owte of the stiepe hylles, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth throwghe the fayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, receauynge into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ryuers, and so fauleth into the south sea. It is dystante from *Dariena*, aboute threcore and tenne leages

towarde the weste. As owre men therefore came to these parties, kynge *Comogrus* (otherwyse cauled Charles by his christian name) mette them ioyfully and entertayned them honorably, gyunge them their fyll of pleasaunte meates and drynkes. He gaue also to *Vaschus*, twenty pounce weyght of wrought golde. *Vaschus* recompenfed him with thinges which he esteemed muche more: As axes and fundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Also a fouldiours cloke, and a faire sherte wrought with needle worcke. By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to bee halfe a god amonge his bortherers. *Vaschus* at his departyng from hense, earnestly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to remayne faithfull and obedient to the christian king of Castile, if they defyred to lyue in peace and quietnesse: And that they shulde hereafter more diligently applye them selues to the gatheringe of golde to bee sente to the great christian *Tiba* (that is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they shuld bothe gette them and their posterity a patrone and defender ageinst their enemyes, and also obtayne great abundaunce of owre thinges. These affayres thus happely achiued, he wente forwarde on his vyage to the palaice of kyng *Poncha*, where he founde foure younge men whiche were come from *Dariena* to certifye hym that there were certayne shyppes coomme from *Hispaniola* laden wyth vyttayles and other necessaries. Wherefore takyng with him twentie of his moste lusty fouldiers, he made haste to *Dariena* with longe iorneyes: leauinge the refydue behynd him to folow at their leasure. He writeth that he came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiii. day of march. He writeth in the same letter, that he had many fore conflictes, and that he was yet neyther wounded, or loste any of his men in the battaile. And therefore in al his large letter, there is not one leafe without thankes geuyng to almyghty god for his delyuery and preferuation from so many imminent perels. He attempted no enterpryse or tooke in hande any viage without th[e]inuocation of god and his holy saintes. Thus was *Vaschus Balboa* of a vyolente Goliath, tourned into *Helifeus*: And from *Anteus* too *Hercules* the conquerour of monsters. Beyng therefore thus tourned from a raffhe royster to a polytyke and discrete capitayne, he was iudged woorthy to bee aduanced to greate honoure. By reason whereof, he was bothe receaued into the kynges fauour, and therevpon created the generall or Lieuetenaunt of the kynges army in those Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythfull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and also by woorde of mouth of fuche as came lately frome thense. If yowre holynes defyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by fuche thynges as I haue seene, I beleue these thynges to bee trewe, euen so th[e]order and agreinge of *Vaschus* and his coompanions warrelyke letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therefore shall not neede hereafter with vndermynyng the earth with intollerable laboure to breake the bones of owre mother, and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in funder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the courte of infernall *Pluto*, to bryng from thense wycked golde the feede of innumerable mischeues, withowte the whiche notwithstandinge we may nowe scarfely leade a happy lyfe fithe iniquitie hath so preuayled and made vs slaues to that wherof we are lords by nature: The Spanyarde (I say) shall not neede with fuch trauayles and difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shal fynde it plentifully in maner in the vpper cruft of the earth, or in the fandes of ryuers dried vpe by the heate of fomme, onely wasshyng the earth softely frome the same: And shall with lyke facilitate gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquitie (by al the Cosmographers assent) obteyned not soo greate a benefyte of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowlege hereof, bycause there came neuer man before owte of owre knowen worlde to these vnknown nations: At the leaste, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwyse nothyng can be gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuered defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admitte them otherwyse then by conquest: especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylde hunters of men, gyue them selues to none other kynde of exercyse but onely to manhuntynge and tyllage after their maner. At the comyng therefore of owre men into theyr regions, they loke as fuerly to haue them faule into their snares as if they were hartes or wylde bores: and with no lesse confydence licke their lippes secreately in hope of their praye. If they gette the vpper hande, they eate them greedely: If they mystruste them selues to bee the weaker parte, they truste to theyr feete, and flye fwyfter then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the matter bee tryed on the water, aswell the women as men can dyue and swimme, as though they had byn euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therefore yf the large tracte of these regions haue byn hytherto vnknown. But nowe fithe it hath pleased God to discouer the same in owre tyme, it shall becoome vs to shewe owre naturall loue to mankynde and dewtie to God, to endeuoure owre selues to bryng them to ciuilitie and trewe religion, to th[e]increase of Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuyll theyr father who delytethe in owre destruction as he hath doone frome the begynnyng. By the good successe of these fyrst frutes, owre hope is, that the Christian religion shall streache forth her armes very farre. Which thyng shulde the sooner coome to passe yf all menne to theyr poure (especially Christian Princes to whom it chiefly perteyneth) wolde put theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The haruest fuerly is greate, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we haue sayde at the begynnyng, yowre holynes shall hereafter noorys the many myriades of broodes of chekins vnder yowre wynges. But let vs nowe returne to speake of *Beragua* beinge the weste fyde

xx. pounce weyght
of wrought goldVaschus returneth
to Dariena.The good fortune
of Vaschus.Vaschus was
turned from
Goliath to Eliseus.O flaterynge
fortune, look his
death in the booke
of the Iland[s]
lately founde.The earthe is owre
general mother.The courte of
infernall Pluto.There is a better
waye then this.The Spanyardes
conquestes.

Manhunters

104

The fieresnesse of
the Canibales.Owre duty to god,
and naturall loue
to mankynde.Th[e]offyce of
Chrystian prynces
The haruest is
great. etc.*Beragua.*

Nicuesa.

of *Vraba*, and fyrst founde by *Colonus* the Admirall, then vnfortunately gouerned by *Diego Nicuesa*, and nowe lefte in maner defolate: with the other large regions of those prouinces brought from theyr wyld and beastly rudenes to ciuilitie and trewe religion.

THE FOUVRTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Was determyned (moste holy father) to haue proceded no further herein, but that one fierye sparke yet remaynyng in my mynde, wolde not suffer me to cease. Wheras I haue therefore declared howe *Beragua* was fyrste fownde by *Colonus*, my thincke I shulde commytte a heynous cryme if I shuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his trauayles, of his cares and troubles, and fynally of the daungeours and perels, whiche he susteyned in that nauigation. Therefore in the yeare of Christe. 1502. in the. vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoysed vppe his sayles and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades* with. iiii. shyppes of fyftie or.

iii. score tunne a piece, with a hundreth threscore and tenne men, and came with prosperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canarie* within fiue daies folowinge, from thense arryuinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of *Dominica* beinge the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he sayled from *Dominica* to *Hispaniola* in fyue other daies. Thus within the space of the. xxvi. daies, with prosperous wynde and by the swyfte faule of the *Ocean* from the Easte to the west, he sayled from Spaine to *Hispaniola*: Which course is counted of the mariners to bee no lesse then a thousande and two hundreth leagues. He taryed but a whyle in *Hispaniola*, whether it were wyllingly, or that he were so admonished of the viceroye. Directing therefore his vyage from thense towarde the weste, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Iamaica* on his ryght hande towarde the northe, he wryteth that he chaunfed vppon an Ilande more southwarde then *Iamaica*, whiche th[e]inhabitanes caule *Guanassa*, so florysshinge and frutefull that it myghte seeme an earthlye Paradyse. Coastynge alonge by the shores of this Ilande, he mette two of the Canoas or boates of those prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked slaues ageynst the streame. In these boates, was caryed a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chylde, all naked. The slaues seeynge owre men a lande, made signes to them with proude countenance in their maisters name, to stande owte of the waye, and threatned them if they wolde not gyue place. Their sympelnes is suche that they nother feared the multitude or poure of owre men, or the greatnes and straungenes of owre shippes. They thought that owre men wolde haue honoured their maister with like reuerence as they did. Owre men had intelligence at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunte whiche came to the marte from other coastes of the Ilande. For they exceryse byinge and fellynge by exchange with their confinies. He had also with him good floore of suche ware as they stande in neede of or take pleasure in: as laton belles, rasers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne sharpe yelowe bryght stone, with handles of a stronge kynd of woodde. Also many other necessary instrumentes with kychen stufte and vesselles for all necessary vses. Lykewise sheetes of goffampine cotton wrought of fundrye colours. Owre men tooke hym prysoner with all his famely. But *Colonus* commaunded hym to bee losed shortly after, and the greatest parte of his goodes to bee restored to wyne his fryndeshippe. Beinge here instructed of a lande lyinge further towarde the southe, he tooke his vyage thether. Therefore lytle more then tenne myles distant from hense, he founde a large lande whiche th[e]inhabitanes cauled *Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande and commaunded his chaplaine to saye masse on the sea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitantes flocked thither symplye and without feare, bringynge with them plenty of meate and freshe water, marueyllynge at owre men as they had byn summe strange miracle. When they had presented their giftes, they went sumwhat backwarde and made lowe curtesy after their maner bowinge their heades and bodyes reuerently. He recompensed their gentylnes rewardinge them with other of owre thynges, as counters, braslettes and garlandes of glasse and counterfecte floones, lookyng glasses, nedelles, and pynnes, with suche other trashe, whiche seemed vnto them precious marchandies. In this great tracte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Taia* and the other *Maia*. He writeth that all that lande is very fayre and holsome by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the ayer: And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull ground beinge partely full of montaines, and partely large playnes: Also replenyshed with many goodly trees, holsome herbes, and frutes, continuyng greene and floryshynge all the hole yeare. It beareth also verye many holy trees and pyne aple trees. Also. vii. kyndes of date trees wherof summe are frutefull and summe baren. It bringeth furth lykewyse of it selfe *Pelgoras* and wilde vynes laden with grapes euen in the wooddes emonge other trees. He saythe furthermore that there is suche abundaunce of other pleasaunte and profitable frutes, that they passe not of vynes. Of one of those kyndes of date trees, they make certeyne longe and brode

The fourth nauigation of *Colonus* the Admirall.

From Spaine to *Hispaniola* a thousande and two hundreth leagues

The florysshing Ilande of *Guanassa*.

Simple people.

A greate marchaunt.

105

The regyon of *Quiriquetana* or *Ciamba*.

Gentle people.

The regyons of *Taia* and *Maia*.

Seuen kyndes of date trees.

Wyld vines.

fwoordes and dartes. These regyons beare also goffampyne trees here and there commonly in the wooddes. Lykewife *Mirobalanes* of fundry kyndes, as those which the phisitians caule *Emblicos* and *Cebulos*, *Maizium* also, *Iucca*, *Ages*, and *Battatas*, lyke vnto those whiche we haue fayde before to bee founde in other regions in these coastes. The fame nooryssheth also lyons, Tygers, Hartes, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beastes. Lykewyfe fundry kyndes of byrdes and foules: Emonge the whiche they keepe onely them to franke and feede, whiche are in colour, bygnes, and taste, muche lyke vnto owre pehennes. He faith that th[e]inhabitanes are of high and goodly flature, well lymmed and proportioned both men and women: Couerynge their priuye partes with fyne breeches of goffampine cotton wrought with dyuers colours. And that they may seeme the more cumlye and bewtifull (as they take it) they paynte their bodyes redde and blacke with the iuce of certeyne apples whiche they plante in their gardens for the fame purpose. Summe of them paynte their hole bodies: summe but parte: and other summe drawe the portitures, of herbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as seemeth beste to his owne phantafye. Their language differeth vtterlye from theirs of the Ilandes nere aboute them. From these regions, the waters of the sea ranne with as full course towarde the weste, as if it had byn the faule of a swyfte riuer. Neuertheleffe he determined to searche the Easte partes of this lande, reuoluyng in his mynde that the regions of *Paria* and *Os Draconis* with other coastes founde before toward the Easte, shulde bee nere theraboute as in deede they were. Departyng therfore from the large region of *Quiriquetana* the. xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had sailed thirtie leaques, he founde a ryuer, without the mouth wherof he drewe freshe water in the sea. Where also the shoore was so cleane withowte rockes, that he founde grounde euery where, where he myght aptely caste anker. He writeth that the swifte course of the *Ocean* was so vehement and contrarye, that in the space of fortye dayes he coulde scarcelye fayle threscore and tenne leaques, and that with muche diffyultie with many fetches and compafynges, fyndyng him selfe to bee sumtimes repulsd and dryuen farre backe by the vyolente course of the sea when he wolde haue taken lande towarde the euenyng, leaste perhappes wanderyng in vnknown coastes in the darckeneffe of the nyght, he myghte bee in daunger of shypwracke: He writeth that in the space of eyght leaques, he found three great and fayre ryuers vppon the banckes wherof, there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thygh. In these ryuers was also greate plentye of fyfhe and great tortoyfes: Lykewife in many places, multitudes of Crocodiles lying in the fande, and yanyng to take the heate of the soonne: Befyde dyuers other kyndes of beastes whervnto he gaue no names. He fayth also that the foyle of that lande is very diuers and variable: beyng sumwhere stonye and full of rough and craggie promontories or poyntes reachyng into the sea. And in other places as frutfull as maye bee. They haue also diuers kynges and rulers. In summe places they caule a kyng *Cacicus*: in other places they caule hym *Quebi*, and sumwhere *Tiba*. Suche as haue behaued them selues valiantly in the warres ageynste their enemies, and haue their faces full of scarres, they caule *Cupras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the goddes whiche they cauled *Heroes*, supposed to bee the foules of fuche men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people, they caule *Chiui*: and a man, they caule *Homem*. When they faye in their language, take man, they say *Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apte to beare great shypptes: Before the mouthe wherof, lye foure smaule Ilandes full of floriffhing and frutfull trees. These Ilandes he named *Quatuor tempora*. From hense saylyng towarde the Easte for the space of. xiii. leaques flyll ageynste the vyolent course of the water, he founde twelue other smaule Ilandes. In the whiche bycause he founde a newe kynde of frutes muche like vnto owre lemondres, he cauled them *Limonares*. Wanderyng yet further the fame waye for the space of. xii. leaques, he founde a great hauen enteryng into the land after the maner of a goulfe the space of three leaques, and in maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was *Nicuesa* lofte afterwarde when he foughte *Beragua*: By reason wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the lofte men. Thus *Colonus* the Admirall yet further contynuyng his course ageynste the furye of the sea, founde manye hyghe montaynes and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the whiche (as he faythe) proceded sweete sauers greatly recreatyng and comfortyng nature. In so muche that in all this longe tracte there was not one of his men defeafed vntyll he came to a region whiche th[e]inhabitanes caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the hauen cauled *Cariiai*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admyrall bycause the *Mirobalane* trees are natiue in the region therabout. In this hauen of *Cariiai*, there came about two hundreth of th[e]inhabitanes to the sea fyde with euerye of them three or foure dartes in their handes: Yet of condition gentell enough, and not refusyng straungers. Their comyng was for none other purpose then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what they broughte with them. When owre men had gyuen them sygnes of peace, they came swymmyng to the shypptes and desyred to barter with them by exchange. The admyrall to allure them to frendshippe, gaue them many of owre thinges: But they refused them, suspectyng summe disceate thereby bycause he wolde not receyue theirs. They wroughte all by sygnes: for one vnderstoode not a woorde of the others language. Suche gyftes as were sente them, they lefte on the shore and wolde take no part therof. They are of fuche ciuilitye and humanitye, that they esteeme it more honorable to gyue then to take. They sente owre men two younge women beinge vyrgines, of commendable fauour and goodly flature,

Mirobalanes

Byrdes and foules.

People of goodly stature

They paynt their bodyes

The swyfte course of the sea from the East to the West.

Paria.

Freshe water in the sea.

Fetches and compasinges

106

Faire ryuers.

Great reedes

Great tortoyfes.

Dyuers languages.

Heroes.*Quatuor tempora*.Twelue Ilandes named *Limonares*.*Rio de los perdidos*.The region of *Quicuri*.The hauen of *Cariiai* or *Mirobalanus*

Ciuile and humane people

107

[Trees grow by
the sea] syde.Trees growynge
in the sea after a
straunge sort.

Plinie.

A straunge kynde
of moonkeys.A moonkeye
feyghteth with
a man.A conflict betwene
a monkey and a
wyld bore.The bodyes of
kynges dryed and
reserued

Cerabaro.

Aburema.

Cheynes of golde.

Plentie of golde.
Fiue villages ryche
in gold.Crownes of beasts
claws

108

fynnyfynge vnto them that they myghte take them away with them if it were their pleasure. These women after the maner of their countrey, were couered from their ancles sumwhat aboue their priuie partes with a certeyne clothe made of gossampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women vse to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore parte. Their longe heare, they binde vppe with fylletes, and winde it in fundry rowles as owre maydes are accustomed to do. The virgins which were sente to the Admirall he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many gyftes, and sente theym home ageyne. But lykewise all these rewardes and apparel they left vppon the shore bycause owre men had refused their gyftes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and those very wyllyngly) that by lernyng the Spanyshe tonge, he might afterwarde vse them for interpretours. He considered that the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troubeled with vehement motions or ouerflowynges of the sea, forasmuche as trees growe in the sea not farre frome the shore, euen as they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thyng also other doo affirme whiche haue latelyer searched thof coastes, declaring that the sea rifeth and fauleth but lyttle there aboute. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospecte of this lande, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes of theyr branches into the grounde: which embrasing them causeth other branches to sprynge owt of the same, and take roote in the earth, bringynge forth trees in theyr kynde successefully as dyd the fyrst roote from whence they had theyr originall, as do also the fettes of vines when onely bothe the endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his natural historie maketh mention of fuche trees, describynge them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The Admirall wryteth also that the lyke beastes are engendered in the coastes of *Cariiai*, as in other prouinces of these regions, and such as we haue spoken of before. Yet that there is one founde here in nature much differenge from the other. This beaste is of the byggenes of a greate moonkeye, but with a tayle muche longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangynge by the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, and gatheryng strength by swayinge her bodye twyse or thryse too and fro, she casteth her selfe from branche to branche and so from tree to tree as though she flewe. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who perceauinge her selfe to be wounded, leapte downe from the tree, and fiercely fet on hym which gaue her the wounde, in so muche that he was fayne to defende hym selfe with his swoorde. And thus by chaunce cuttyng of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with muche a doo brought her to the ships where within a whyle, shee waxed tame. Whyle shee was thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of our hunters hadde chased a wyld bore owt of the maryshes nere vnto the sea fyde. For hunger and desyre of fleshe, caused them to take double pleasure in huntyng. In this meane tyme other which remayned in the shippes, goinge a lande to recreate them selues, tooke this moonkey with them. Who, as soone as shee had espied the bore, set vp her brystels and made towarde her. The bore lykewyse shooke his bristels and whette his teethe. The moonkey furiously inuaded the bore, wrap-pynge her tayle about his body, and with her arme referued of her victourer, helde hym so fast aboute the throte, that he was suffocate. These people of *Cariiai*, vse to drye the deade bodyes of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and so referue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twentie leagues from *Cariiai*, he founde a goulfe of such largenes that it conteyned. xii. leagues in compasse. In the mouth of this goulfe were foure lyttle Ilandes so nere togyther, that they made a safe hauen to enter into the goulfe. This goulfe is the hauen which we sayde before to be cauled *Cerabaro* of th[e] inhabitants. But they haue nowe lerned that only the lande of the one fyde therof, lyinge on the ryght hande at the enterynge of the goulfe, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte fyde, is cauled *Aburema*. He saythe that all this goulfe is ful of fruteful Ilandes wel replenysshed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the sea to bee verie cleane without rockes, and commodious to cast anker: Lykewyse the sea of the goulfe to haue greate abundance of fyssh: and the lande of both the fydes to bee inferior to none in frutfulness. At his fyrst arryuyng, he espied two of th[e] inhabitants hauynge cheynes about theyr neckes, made of ouches (which they caule *Guanines*,) of base golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beastes and foules. Of the two *Cariiaians* whiche he brought with hym from *Cariiai*, he was enformed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were ryche in golde: And that the people of *Cariiai* haue all theyr golde frome thense for exchange of other of theyr thynges. They towdle hym also, that in the same regions there are fyue vyllages not farre from the sea fyde, whose inhabitantes apply them selues onely to the gathering of gold. The names of these vyllages are these: *Chirara*, *Puren*, *Chitaza*, *Iureche*, *Atamea*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take great pleasure in wearynge garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions and Tygers. The women couer onely theyr priuie partes with a fyllet of gossampine cotton. Departinge from hense and coastynge styll by the same shore for the space of. xviii. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he espied aboute three hundreth naked men in a company. When they sawe the shippes drawe neare the lande, they cryed owt aloude, with cruell countenaunces shakynge theyr wooden swoordes and hurlyng dartes, takynge also water in theyr mouthes and

spoutyng the fame ageynst our men: wherby they seemed to insinuate that they wolde receave no condition of peace or haue owght to doo with them. Here he commaunded certeyne pieces of ordinaunce to be shot of toward them: Yet so to ouerhute them, that none myght be hurt therby. For he euer determyned to deale quietly and peaceably with these newe nations. At the noyse therfore of the gunnes and fyght of the fyer, they fell downe to the grounde, and desyred peace. Thus enteringe into further frendshippe, they exchanged theyr cheynes and ouches of golde for glasses and haukes belles and such other marchandies. They vse drummes or tymbrels made of the shelles of certeyne sea fyffhes, wherewith they encorage theym selues in the warres. In this tract are these seven ryuers, *Acateba*, *Quareba*, *Zobroba*, *Aiaguitin*, *Vrida*, *Durriba*, *Beragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them selues ageynste rayne and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the steade of clokes. Departinge from hense, he searched the coastes of *Ebetere* and *Embigar*, into the which faule the goodly ryuers of *Zohoran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceaseth the plentie and frutesfulnes of golde, in the tracte of fiftie leagues or there about. From hense onely three leagues distant, is the rocke whiche in the vnfortunate discourse of *Niuefa* we sayde was cauled of owre men *Pignonem*. But of th[e] inhabitants the Region is cauled *Vioba*. In this tracte also aboute fyxe leagues frome thense, is the hauen which *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wherof we haue spoken before) in the region whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Xaguaguara*. This region is very peopulous: but they go all naked. The kyng is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The kyng and feuen of his noble men, had euery of them a lyttle plate of golde hangyng at theyr nosethrilles downe vnto theyr lypes. And this they take for a cumly ornamente. The menne inclose theyr priuie members in a shell: And the women couer theyrs with a fyllet of gossampine cotton tyed about theyr loynes. In theyr gardens they nooryshte a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine tree: the whiche (as we haue sayde in an other place) groweth on a shrubbe muche lyke vnto an archichoke: But the frute is muche softer, and meate for a kyng. Also certeyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue spoken before. This tree, they caule *Hibuero*. In these coastes they mette sumtymes with Crocodiles lyeinge on the sandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they lefte a very sweete fauour behynde them sweeter then muske or *Castoreum*. When I was sente ambassadour for the catholike king of Castile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayer in Egipte, th[e] inhabitants nere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* toulde me the like of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmyng furthermore that the fatte or fewette of them is equall in sweetnes with the pleasaunte gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of necessitye to departe from hense, aswell for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarye and vyolente course of the water, as also that his shyppes were daily more and more putrified and eaten through with certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmenes of the water in all those tractes nere vnto the Equinoctial line. The Venetians caule these woormes *Biffas*. The same are also engendred in two hauens of the cite of *Alexandria* in Egipt, and destroye the shyppes if they lye longe at anker. They are a cubet in length, and sumwhat more: not passyng the quantitie of a fynger in bygnesse. The Spanyshe mariner cauleth this pestilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore whom before the great monsters of the sea coulde not feare, nowe fearyng this *Broma*, beyng also soore vexed with the contrary faule of the sea, directed his course with the *Ocean* towarde the west, and came first to the ryuer *Hiebra*, distant onely two leagues from the ryuer of *Beragua*, bycause that was commodious to harborowe great shippes. This region is named after the riuier, and is called *Beragua* the lesse: Bycause bothe the ryuers are in the dominion of the kyng which inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunsed vnto hym in this vyage on the ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whyle therfore *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hiebra*, he sent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetenaunte of *Hispaniola*, with the shyppe boates and threscore and. viii. men to the ryuer of *Beragua*, where the king of the region beinge naked and painted after the maner of the countrey, came towarde them with a great multitude of men waytyng on hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyuinge also fynges of peace. When he approached nerer, and entered communication with owre men, certeyne of his gentlemen neareste aboute his person, rememberinge the maiestie of a king, and that it floode not with his honour to bargaen stondyng, tooke a greate floone owte of the ryuer, wasshyng and rubbyng it vearly decently, and so put it vnder hym with humble reuerence. The kyng thus fyttyng, seemed with fynges and tokens to insinuate that it shuld be lawful for owre men to searche and viewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherfore, the vi. day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certeyne of his company, he wente by lande a foote from the bankes of *Beragua* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, whiche he affirmeth to be richer in gold then eyther *Hiebra* or *Beragua*. For gold is engendred in al the riuers of that land. In so muche that emonge the rootes of the trees growyng by the bankes of the ryuers, and amonge the stones left of the water, and also where so euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde not paste the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde the earthe taken owte therof, myxte with golde: Where vpon he determyned to fasten his foote there and to inhabyte. Whiche thyng the people of the countrey perceauyng and smellyng what inconuenyence and myschiefe myght thereof ensewe to their countrey if they shulde permitte straungers to plante their habitation there, assembled a great army, and with horrible owte crye assayed owre

Spytefull peop'le.

Guns make peace.

Seven golden ryuers

Note, where the plentie of golde endeth

*Pignonem.**Vioba.**Portus Bellus.*

Paynted people.

A strange syght

A shel in the steede of a codpiece.

Crocodiles of sweete sauour. Alcayer or Babilon in Egipt

Shippes eaten with wormes.

Alexandria in Egipte.

*Broma.**Hiebra.**Beragua.*

109

How the king of Beragua enterteined the lyeuetenaunte.

Their reuerence to the kyng.

Golde in the ryuer Duraba.

Great plenty of golde.

men (who had nowe begoonne to buylde houfes) foo desperately that they were scarcely able to abyde the fyrste brunte. These naked barbarians at their fyrst approche, vsed onely slynges and dartes: But when they came nearer to hande strookes, they foughte with their wooden swoordes whiche they caule *Machanas*, as wee haue sayd before. A man wolde not thinke what great malice and wrath was kyndeled in their hartes ageinst owre men: And with what desperate myndes they fought for the defense of their lybertie whiche they more esteeme then lyfe or rycheffe. For they were nowe so voyde of all feare, and contemnyng deathe, that they neyther feared longe bowes or crossebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooste to be marueyled) were any thyng discouraged at the terryble noyse of the gunnes shotte of from the shyppes. They retyred once. But shortly after encreasynge their nnumber, they returned more fiercely then at the fyrst. They wolde haue byn contented to haue reccyued owre men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabitours. The more instante that owre men were to remaine, so muche the greater multitude of bortherers flocked togyther dayly, disturbyng them both nyght and daye sumtymes on the one fyde and sumtymes on the other. The shypps lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and retourne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much diffyculty and danger, they came to the Iland of *Iamaica* lyenge on the fouth fyde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, with their shyppes as full of holes as sicues, and so eaten with wormes, as though they had byn bored through with wimbles. The water entered so faste at the ryftes and holes, that if they had not with the paynefull labour of their handes emptied the same as faste, they were lyke to haue perysshed. Where as yet by this meanes they arryued at *Iamaica*, althoughe in maner halfe deade. But their calamitie ceased not here. For as fast as their shyppes leaked, their strengthe dimynished so that they were no longer able to keepe them from synkyng. By reason wherof, faulyng into the handes of the barbarians, and inclosed withowte hope of departure, they led their lyues for the space of tenne monthes emong the naked people more myserably then euer dyd *Achemenides* emonge the gyantes cauled *Ciclopes*: rather lyuing then beinge eyther contented or fatiffied with the strange meates of that Ilande: and that onely at such tymes as pleased the barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmity and malice whiche these barbarous kinges beare one ageinst an other, made greatly with owre men. For at suche tymes as they attempted warre ageinst their bortherers they woold sumtymes gyue owre men parte of theyr breade to ayde them. But howe myserable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onely with breade gotten by beggyng, yowre holyneffe maye easlye coniecture: Especially where all other accustomed foode is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, fleshe, butter, chiefe, and milke, wherwith the stomakes of ovr people of Europe haue euer byn nooriffed euen from their cradelles. Therefore as necessity is subiecte to no lawe, so doothe it enforce men to attempte desperate aduentures. And those the soner, which by a certeyne nobyltye of nature do no further esteeme lyfe then it is ioyned with summe felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* therefore, intyndynge rather to proue what god wolde do with hym and his companyons in these extremities, then any longer to abide the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his steward with two guydes of that Ilande whome he had hyred with promyffes of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter into one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hispaniola*. Beynge thus toffed on the sea two and fro from rocke too rocke by reason of the shorteneffe and narrownes of the canoa, they arryued at the length at the laste corner of *Hispaniola*, beynge distante from *Iamaica* fortie leagues. Here his guydes departynge from hym, returned ageine to *Colonus* for the rewardes which he had promysed them. But *Diegus Mendez* wente on forward a foote vntyll he came to the citie cauled *Sanctus Dominicus* beynge the chiefe and heade citye of the Ilande. The offycers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beinge enformed of the matter, appoynted hym two shyppes wherwith he returned to his maister and coompanions. As he founde them, soo came they to *Hispaniola*, verye feeble and in maner naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Lette vs nowe therefore leaue these particulers, and speake sumwhat more of generals. In al those tractes whiche we sayde here before to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the Admyrall, bothe he hym selfe writeth, and all his coompanyons of that vyage confesse, that the trees, herbes, and frutes, are floryshing and greene all the hole yeare, and the ayer so temperate and holesome, that of all his coompanye there neuer fell one man fycke, nor yet were vexed eyther with extreme coulde or heate for the space of fyftie leagues from the great hauen of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hiebra* and *Beragua*. Th[e]inhabitanes of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are betwyxte that and the sayde ryuers, applye not them selues to the gatherynge of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the yeare: And are very experte and cunnyng herein, as are owre myners of syluer and Iren. They knowe by longe experience in what places golde is mooste abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and suche as faule from the montaynes: And also by the colour of the earthe and stoness. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they neuer gather it excepte they vse certeyne relygious expiations or pourgyng, as to absteyn from women, and all kyndes of plesures and delycate meates and drinkes, during all the tyme that their golden haruest lastethe. They suppose that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beastes do, and therefore honour none other thyng as god. Yet doo they praye to the foonne, and honour it when it ryfeth. But lette vs nowe speake of the montaines and situation of these landes

Slynges and dartes.

Liberty more esteemed then ryches.

The Spanyardes are dryuen to flight.

The Ilande of Iamaica.

A myserable case.

110

Necessytie hath no lawe howe farre lyfe is to bee esteemed.

A daungerous enterpryse.

Sanctus Dominicus.

Landes found by Colonus.

Temperate regions and holsome aier

Cerabaro.
Hiebra.
Beragua.
Experte myners.

A godly nature in golde.

Golden haruest.

From all the sea bankes of these regyons, exceeding great and hyghe mountaynes are seene towarde the Southe, yet reachyng by a continuall tracte from the Easte into the weste. By reason wherof I suppose that the two greate seas (wherof I haue spoken larg[e]ly before) are devided with these montaynes as it were with bulwarkes, leaste they shoulde ioyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the sea cauled *Tirrhenum*, from the sea Adriatyke, which is nowe commonly cauled the goulfe of Venes.

For whiche waye foo euer they sayled from the poynt cauled *Promontorium, S. Augustini* (whiche perteyneth to the Portugales and prospecteth ageynste the sea Atlantike) euen vnto *Vraba* and the hauen *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes found hytherto westwarde, they had euer greate mountaynes in syghte both nere hande and farre of, in all that longe rafe. These mountaynes were in fume place, smooth, pleasaunt and frutfull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And sumwhere, hygh, rowgh, ful of rockes, and baren, as chaunfeth in the famos mountaynes of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and suche other of lyke byggenesse. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleis. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hygher then the clowdes, in so much that (as they faye) the tops of them can feldome bee seene for the multitude of thicke clowdes which are beneath the same. *Colonus* the Admirall the fyrste fynder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the montaynes of *Beragua* are more then fiftie myles in heyghth. He sayth furthermore that in the same region at the rotes of the montaynes the way is open to the south sea, and compareth it as it were betwene Venice and *Genua*, or *Ianua* as the Genues wyll haue it cauled, whiche fable that theyr citie was buylded of *Ianus*. He affirmeth also that this lande reacheth foorth towarde the south: And that from henfe it taketh the begynnyng of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owte of the narowe thygh of Italy, we see the large and mayne landes of Fraunce, Germanye, and Pannonye, to the Sarmatians and Scythians, euen vnto the mountaynes and rockes of *Riphea* and the frozen sea, and embrase therwith as with a continuall bonde, all T[h]racia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of *Malea* and *Hellepontus* southwarde, and the sea *Euxinus* and the marysshes of *Mæotis* in *Scythia* northwarde. The Admirall supposede, that on the lefte hande in saylyng towarde the weste, this lande is ioyned to *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended to the frozen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole: So that both the seas (that is to meane that south sea which we sayde to bee founde by *Vaschus*, and owre Ocean) shulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that lande: And that the waters of these seas doo not onely inclose and compasse the same without diuision as Europe is inclosed with the seas of *Hellepontus* and *Tanais*, with the frozen Ocean and owre sea of *Tyrrhenum* with the Spanyssh seas. But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the weste, doth signifie and lette that the sayde two seas shulde not so ioyne together: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme landes towarde the Northe, as we haue sayde before. It shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the length hereof. Let vs nowe therefore speake sumwhat of the breadth of the same. We haue made mention before howe the south sea is diuided by narowe lymettes from owre Ocean, as it was proued by th[e] experience of *Vaschus Nunnez* and his coompanions which fyrst made open the way thither. But as dyuerfly as the mountaynes of owre Alpes in Europe are sumwhere narowe and in fume place brode, euen so by the lyke prouidence of nature, this lande in fume parte reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narowe lymettes from sea to sea, with valleis also in fume places, wherby men maye passe from the one fyde to the other. Where we haue descrybed the regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua* to bee situate, these seas are diuided by smaule distaunce. Yet ought we to thynke the region which the great ryuer of *Maragnonus* runneth through, to bee very large if we shall graunt *Maragnonum* to bee a ryuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the same owght to persuaide vs. For in suche narowe caues of the earth, there can bee no fwalowing goulfes of such byggenesse as to receaue or nooryshe so great abundance of water. The lyke is also to bee supposed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba* which we sayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* in fume place of fortie fathomes depth, and sumwhere fiftie: Also three myles in breadth, and so to faule into the sea. We must needes graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whiche the ryuer passeth from the hyghe mountaynes of *Dabaiba* from the Easte and not from the west. They say that this ryuer consisteth and taketh his encrease of foure other ryuers faulyng from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Owre men caule this ryuer *Flumen. S. Iohannis*. They say also that from henfe it fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* by seuen mouthes as doothe the ryuer of *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte. Lykewyse that in the same region of *Vraba* there are in fume places narowe streyghtes not passyng fytene leagues: and the same to bee saluage and without any passage by reason of dyuers marysshes and desolate wayes, which the Latines caule *Lamas*: But the Spanyardes accordyng to their varietie, caule them *Tremedales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, and *Zahondaderos*. But before we passe any further, it shall not bee greatly from ovr purpose to declare from whense these mountaynes of *Dabaiba* haue theyr name accordyng vnto th[e] antiquities of th[e] inhabitantes. They faye therefore that *Dabaiba* was a woman of greate magnanimitie and wysedome emonge theyr prediceffours in owlde tyme: whom in her lyfe, all th[e] inhabitantes of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beinge deade gaue her diuine honour and

Hyghe and greate
mountaynes.

Tyrrhenum is
nowe cauled
Tuscane
Cap. S. Augustini.
Vraba.
Cerabaro.
Frutful
mountaynes.
Apennini are
mountaynes
which diuide
Italy into. ii.
partes

Beragua
The mountaynes
of *Beragua* higher
then the clowdes.

Mountaynes of
fiftie miles heyght.

111

Ianus otherwyse
cauled *Iaphet*, the
son of *Noe*.

Italy is lyke vnto
a legge in the
sea, and the
mountaynes of the
alpes, are in the
thyghe thereof

Colonus his
opinion of the
supposed
Continent.

By this coniecture,
the way shuld be
open to *Cathay* by
the hiperboreans

Looke the
nauigation of
Cabote. deca[de].
iii. lib. vi.

The breadth of
the lande

The regions of
Vraba and
Beragua.

The greate riuer
Maragnonus.

The greate riuer
Dabaiba, or sancty
Iohannis.

The ryers haue
theyr increase
from the sprynges
of the montaynes.

The ryuer of *Nilus*:
in Egypte.

Marisshes and
desolate wayes.
A superstitious
opinion of
th[e] originall of
montaines of
Dabaiba.

112

Dragons and crocodiles in the marishes

The hauen Cerabaro.

Twentie golden ryuers.

Precious stones.

A precious diemonde of excedyng bygnes.

Topases.

The Spanyardes contemne effeminate plesures

Sweete sauours.

A similitude prouing great plentie of golde and precious stones.

The hauen of Sancta Martha. *Cariai*.

The heroical factes of the Spaniardes.

named the region after her name, beleuyng that shee sendeth thunder and lyghtnyng to destroy the frutes of the earth yf shee bee angered, and to send plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hathe byn perswaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretense of religion to th[e]intent that they might enioye suche gyftes and offeringes as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore that the marysshes of the narowe lande wherof we haue spoken, bryng forth great plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, battes, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when so euer they take any iorney towarde the fouth, they go owte of the way towarde the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neare vnto those perelous fennes or marysshes. Some thinke that there is a valley lyinge that way that the ryuer runneth which owre men caule *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to *Nicuesa* and his company) and not far distant from the hauen *Cerabaro* whiche diuideth those mountaynes towarde the fouth. But let vs nowe fynishe this booke with a fewe other thynges woorthy to bee noted. They say therefore that on the ryght hande and lefte hande frome *Daricua*, there are twentie ryuers in all the whiche, greate plentie of golde is founde. Beinge demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thense, they answered that they lacked myners: And that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thyther, were not accustomed to laboure, but for the moste parte brought vp in the warres. This lande seemeth also to promesse many precious stones. For beyde those which I sayde to bee founde neare vnto *Cariai* and *Sancta Martha*, one *Andreas Moralis* a pylot (who had trauayled those coastes with *Iohannes de la Coffa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diemonde which he bought of a naked younge man in the region of *Cumana* in the prouince of *Paria*. This stone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans middell fynger, and as bygge as the fyrst ioynte of the thumme: beinge also paynted on euery syde, consistyng of eyght squares perfectly formed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anuilles and hammers, and brake the teethe of fyles, the stone remaynyng vnperysshed. The younge man of *Cumana*, wore this stone aboute his necke emonge other ouches, and sould it to *Andreas Moralis* for fyue of our counterfect stones made of glasse of dyuers colours wherwith the ignorant younge man was greatly delyted. They founde also certeyne topases on the shore. But th[e]estimation of golde was so farre entered into the heades of owre men, that they had no regarde to stones. Also the most part of the Spanyardes, do laugh them to scorne which vse to weare many stones: specially such as are common: Iudginge it to bee an effeminate thyng, and more meete for women then men. The noble men onely when they celebrate solemne mariages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheynes of gold byset with precious stones, and vse fayre apparell of fylke embrothered with golde intermixt with pearles and precious stones: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no lesse effeminate for men to smell of the sweete fauours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with fum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they smell the fauour of muske or *Castoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceyue the tree to bee frutfull, and by one fysh taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that fysh is ingendered in the same, euen so, by a lyttel gold, and by one stone, we owght to consyder that this lande bringeth forthe great plentie of golde and precious stones. What they haue found in the porte of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Cariai* when the hole nauye passed therby vnder the gouernaunce of *Petrus Arias* and his company with certeine other of the kynges offycers, I haue suffyciently declared in his place. To be shorte therefore, all thynges do so floryshe, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the laste are euer better then the fyrste. And surely to declare my opinion herin, what so euer hath heretofore byn discouered by the famous trauayles of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with such other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, seemeth but lyttell and obscure if it be compared to the Spanyardes victorious laboures. Thus I byd yowre holynes fare well, desyryng yowe to certifye me howe yowe lyke these fyrste frutes of the *Ocean*, that beyng encoraged with yowre exhortations, I maye the gladlyer and with lesse tediousnesse write suche thynges as shal chaunce hereafter.

113

THE FYFT BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



L suche lyuyng creatures as vnder the cercle of the moone bringe forthe any thyng, are accustomed by th[e]instincte of nature as soone as they are delyuered of their byrthe, eyther to close vppe the matrice, or at the leaste to bee quyete for a space. But owre mooste frutefull Ocean and newe woorld, engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wherby men of great wytte, and especially suche as are studyous of newe and meruelous thynges, may haue sumwhat at hand wherwith to feede their myndes. If yowre holynesse do aske to what purpose is al this, ye shal vnderstand, that I had scarcely fynysshed the historye of suche thynges as chaunfed to *Vaschus Nunnez* and his companye in their vyage to the fouth se, when foodenly there came

newe letters from *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour whom the kyng had appoynted the yeare before with an army of men and a nauye of shippes to fayle to these newe landes. He fygnifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and coompany, arryued all safelye. Furthermore, *Iohannes Cabedus* (whome yowre holynes at the requeste of the moste catholyke kyng had created bysshoppe of that prouynce of *Dariena*) and three other of the chiefe offycers ioined in commiffion to be his assystance, as *Alfonfus de Ponte*, *Diegus Marques*, and *Iohannes de Tauira*, conformed the same letters and subscribed them with their names. The nauyagation therfore of *Petrus Arias*, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yeare of Christe. 1514. he hoyfed vppe his fayles in the towne of faincte *Lucar de Barrameda*, fyuate in the mouthe of the ryuer *Bætis*, whiche the Spaniardes nowe caule *Guadalchebir*. The feuen Ilandes of *Canaria* are about foure hundreth myles distant from the place where this riuer fauleth into the sea. Summe thinke that these are the Ilandes which the owlde writers did caule the fortunate Ilandes. But other thynke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes, are these. The two whiche appere fyrste in fyght, are named *Lanzelota* and *Fortifuentura*. On the backehalfe of these, lyeth *Magna Canaria* or *Grancanaria*. Beyonde that is *Tenerife*: and *Gomera* sumwhat towarde the northe frome that. *Palma* and *Ferrea*, lye behynde as it were a bulwarke to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arriued at *Gomera* the eyghte daye after his departure, with a nauye of. xvii. shippes and a. M. [thousand] and fyue hundreth men, althoughe there were onely a thousand and two hundreth assygned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayde furthermore that he lefte behynd hym more then two thousande verye pensyue and fyghyng that they also myght not be receaued, proferyng them selues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xvi. dayes in *Gomera* to th[e]intente to make prouysyon of fuell and freshe water: But chiefly to repayre his shyppes beyng fore brofed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shippe whiche had loste the rudder. For these Ilandes are a commodious restyng place for all fuche as intende to attempte any nauyagations in that mayne sea. Departyng from hense in the nones of Maye, he sawe no more lande vntyll the thirde daye of Iune, at the whiche he arriued at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Canibales*, being distant from *Gomera* aboute eyght hundreth leaques. Here he remayned foure dayes, makinge newe prouision of freshe water and fuell, duryng whiche tyme he sawe no man nor yet any steppes of men: But founde plentie of sea crabbes and greate lysartes. From hense he fayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (otherwyse cauled *Madanino*) *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta* (otherwyse cauled *Galana*) of all whiche, we haue spoken in the fyrste decade. He passed also throughe the sea of herbes or weedes, continuyng a long tracte. Yet nother he, nor *Colonus* the Admyrall (who fyrste founde these Ilandes and sayled through this sea of weedes) haue declared anye reason howe these weedes shoulde coome. Summe thynke the sea too be verye muddye there, and that these weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and so beyng loofed, to ascende to the vppermoste parte of the water, as wee see oftentimes chaunce in certeyne stondyng pooles, and sumtymes also in greate ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendered there, but to bee beaten from certeyne rockes by the vyolence of the water in tempestes. And thus they leaue the matter in dowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they stycke faste and gyue place to the shyppes, or wander loose vpon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwyse they shulde bee dryuen together on heapes by th[e]ympulsyon of the shyppes euen as a beafome gathereth the swepynges of a house, and shulde also lette the course of the shyppes. The fourth day after that he departed frome *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes couered with snowe (wherof we haue spoken in the seconde decade) appered vnto hym. They fayre that there the seas runne as swyftely towarde the weste, as it were a ryuer faulyng from the toppes of hyghe montaynes: Although they fayled not directly toward the west, but inclined sumwhat to the south. From these montaynes fauleth the ryuer of *Gaira*, famous by the slaughter of owre men at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes as we haue sayde before. Lykewyse many other fayre ryuers haue their originall from the same montaynes. This prouynce (in the whiche is, also the regyon of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which owre men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof, th[e]inhabitates caule *Saturma*. The porte of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales*: for it is at the rootes of the same montaynes. But the hauen of *Carthago*, is more westewarde aboute fyftie leaques. He writeth marueylous thynges of the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thense: Of the which younge *Vesputius* is one to whom *Americus Vesputius* his vncler (being a Florentine borne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maister in the knowlege of his carde, his compasse, and the eleuation of the pole starre with all that pertaineth therto. This younge *Vesputius* was assygned by the kyng to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shyppes, bicause he was cunninge in iudgyng the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadrante. For the charge of gouernyng the rudder, was chiefly commytted to one *Iohannes Serranus* a Spaniarde, who had oftentimes ouer runne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my verye familiar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whose coompany I take great pleasure, and therefore vse hym oftentimes for my geste. He hath also made many vyages into these coastes, and

The bysshop of Dariena.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

Saint Lucar.

The Iland of Canaria.

Prouision of freshe water and fuell.

The Iland of Dominica.

Guadalupea, otherwyse cauled Carucueria, or Queraquiera.

The sea of herbes.

114

These mountaynes are cauled Montes Niuales or Serra Neuata, decade ii. liber. i. and ii.

The swyfte course of the sea towarde the west.

The ryuer Caira. Caramairi. Carthago.

Saturma.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

Americus Vesputius.

The stoutnes of
the Barbarians.

The Canibales
feyght in the
water.

The vse of gunnes.

The generacion of
thunder and
lyghtnyng.

Meteora.

Venemous arrowes

115

Plentie of fysshe.

Cunnyng
fysshers.

Theyr householde
stuffe.

Tap[e]stry.

A straunge
phantasy.

This is he whom
Cardanus praiseth.

Precious stones
The Smaragde is
the trew emeroide
Another kind of
amber is founde
in whales.
Gold and brasile.

Marchasites are
flowers of metals,
by the colours
wherof, the kyndes
of metals are
known.

These locustes
burne the corne
with toching and
deuoure the
residewe they are
in India of. iii.
foote length.

diligently noted suche thinges as he hath seene. *Petrus Arias* therefore writeth, and he confyrmeth the fame, that th[e] inhabitants of these regyons tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperate fiercenes and crueltie which they oftentimes shewed to owre men when they passed by their coastes. Suche stoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallye engendered in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not to assaile owre hole navy and to forbyd them to coome a land. They feyght with venemous arrowes as we haue fayde before. Perceauyng that owre men contempned their threatnynges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vppe to the breastes, nothyng fearinge eyther the bygnes or multitude of owre shyppes, but ceased not continually beinge thus in the water, to cast dartes and shute their venemous arrowes as thicke as hayle: In so muche that owre men had bynne in great daunger if they had not byn defended by the cages or pauiffes of the shyppes and their targettes. Yet were two of them wounded whiche died shortly after. But this conflycte continued so sharpe, that at the length owre men were enforced to shute of their byggest pieces of ordinaunce with hayleshotte: At the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof the barbarians beyng fore discomfited and shaken with feare, thynkyng the same to be thunder and lyghtnyng, tourned their backes and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thunder bycause these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghtnyng by reason of the hyghe montaynes and nearenesse of the same to the region of the ayer wherin such fierie tempestes are engendered which the philosphers caule *Meteora*. And all be it that owre men had nowe dryuen their enemyes to flyght, and sawe them disparcelled and owte of order, yet dowed they and were of dyuers opinions whether they shulde pursue them or not On the one partie, shame pricked them forward, and on the other syde feare caused them to caste many perelles, especially confyderyng the venemous arrowes whiche these barbarians canne direct so certeynely. To departe from theym with a drye foote (as faithe the prouerbe) with so great a nauye and suche an armye, they reputed it as a thyng greatly foundyng to their reproche and dishonour. At the length therefore shame ouercommynng feare, they pursued them and came to land with their shippe boates. The gouernoure of the nauie, and also *Vesputius* doo wryte, that the hauen is no lesse then three leagues in compasse, beinge also safe without rockes, and the water therof so clere, that a man may see pybble stones in the bottome twentie cubettes deape. They saye lykewyse that there fauleth twoo fayre ryuers of fresshe water into the hauen: but the same to bee meeter to beare the canoas of these prouinces then anye bygger vessels. It is a delectable thyng to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and also of the pleasaunt tast of the fysshes aswel of these riuers as of the sea there about. By reason wherof they founde here many fyssher boates and nettes woonderfully wrought of the stalkes of certeyne herbes or weedes dried and tawed and wrethed with cordes of spunne goffampine cotton. For the people of *Caramairi*, *Gaira*, and *Saturma*, are very cunnyng in fysshynge, and vse to sell fysshe to theyr bortherers for exchange of suche thynges as they lacke. When owre men had thus chased the Barbaryans from the sea coastes, and hadde nowe entered into theyr houses, they assayed them with newe skymushes, especially when they sawe them faule to fackynge and spoylyng, and theyr wyues and chyldeen taken captiue. Their householde stuffe was made of great reedes which growe on the sea bankes and the stalkes of certeyne herbes beaten and afterward made harde. The floures therof were strewed with herbes of fundry coloures; And the wauls hanged with a kynde of tap[e]stry artificially made of goffampine cotton, and wrought with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The doores of theyr houses and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of shelles hangynge loofe by smaule cordes, that beinge shaken by the wynde they myght make a certeyne rattelyng and also a whystelyng noyse by gatherynge the wynde in theyr holowe places. For herein they haue greate delyte, and impute this for a goodly ornamente. Dyuers haue shewed me many woonderfull thynges of these regions: Especially one *Gonzalus Fernandus Ouiedus* beinge one of the maistrates appointed in that office which the Spanyardes caule *Veedor*, who hath also hetherto entered further into the lande then any other. He affirmeth that he chaunced vpon the fragmente of a saphire bygger then the egge of a goose. And that in certeyne hylles where he trauallyd with thirtie men, he founde many of the precious stonnes cauled Smaragdes, calcidones, and Iaspers, besyde great pieces of amber of the montaines. He also with dyuers other do affirme that in the houses of some of the Canibales of these regions, they founde the lyke precious stonnes fet in golde and inclosed in the tap[e]stry or arras (if it may soo bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houses. The same lande bryngeth fourth also many wooddes of brasile trees and great plentie of golde: In so much that in maner in al places they founde on the sea bankes and on the shoores, certeyne marchasites in token of golde: *Fernandus Ouiedus* declareth furthermore that in a certeyne region cauled *Zenu*, lyinge foure score and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eastwarde, they exercyse a straunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houses of the inhabitantes, they founde greate chestes and baskets made of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that purpose, beinge all full of greffehoppers, grylles, crabbes, or crefysshes: Inayles also, and locustes whiche destrowe the fieldes of corne, all well dried and salted. Beinge demaunded why they referued such a multitude of these beastes, they answered that they kepte them to bee fould to theyr bortherers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the exchange of these precious byrdes and salted fysshes, they receaued of them certeyne strange thynges wherin partely they take pleasure, and partly vse them for

theyr necessary affayers. These people dwel not togyther, but scattered here and there. Th[e]inhabitan-
Caramairi, seeme to dwel in an earthly Paradise, theyr region is so fayre and frutefull, withowt owtragi-
 or sharpe coulde, with lyttle difference of the length of day and nyght throwhowt all the yeare. After that
 owre men had thus dryuen the barbarians to flyght, they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth and
 three in length, extendynge to certeyne frutful mountaynes ful of grasse, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof,
 lye twoo other valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, throwgh eyther of the which runneth a fayre ryuer,
 whereof the ryuer of *Caira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo name. In these valleys they
 founde manye fayre gardeyns and pleafaunte fyeldes watered with trenshes distrybuted in marueylous order,
 with no lesse arte then owre Insubrians and Hetrurians vse to water theyr fyeldes. Theyr common meate,
 is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with fuche other rootes and frutes of trees, and also fuche fyssh as they vse in
 the Ilandes and other regions of these prouinces. They eate mans fleshe but feldome, bycause they meete not
 oftentymes with strangiers, except they goo foorth of theyr owne dominions with a mayne armye of purpose to
 hunt for men, when theyr rauenyng appetite pricketh them forward. For they absteyne from them felues, and
 eate none but fuche as they take in the warres or otherwyse by chaunce. But fuerly it is a miserable thyng to
 heare howe many myriades of men these fylthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mans fleshe haue consumed, and
 lefte thousandes of mozte fayre and frutfull Ilandes and regions defolate withowte menne: By reason wherof
 owre men founde so many Ilandes whiche for theyr fayrenes and frutefulness myght seeme to bee certeyne earthly
 Paradyfes, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby yowre holyneffe may consider howe pernicious a kynde
 of men this is. We haue sayde before that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which th[e]inhabitan-
Burichena) is nexte to *Hispaniola*. It is sayde that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other Ilandes nere
 about this, as in the Ilande cauled *Hayhay* or *Sancta Crucis*, and in *Guadalupea* (otherwise cauled *Queraqueiera*,
 or *Carucuiera*) haue in owre tyme vyolently taken owte of the fayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then fyue
 thousande men to bee eaten. But let it suffice thus much to haue wandered by these monstrous bludfuckers.
 We wyll nowe therefore speake sumwhat of the rootes whereof they make theyr breade, forasmuch as the same
 shall hereafter bee foode to Christian men in steede of breade made of wheate, and in the steade of radyssh
 with such other rootes as they haue byn accustomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes sayde before that *Iucca*
 is a roote whereof the beste and mozte delicate breade is made bothe in the firme lande of these regions, and
 also in the Ilandes. But howe it is tyllid or husbanded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is, I
 haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knee
 deape, and rayse a heape of the earth taken owte of the same, fashionyng it lyke a square bedde of nyne foote
 breadth on euerye fyde, settyng twelue trunkes of these rootes (beinge about a foote and a halfe longe a piece)
 in euery of the fayd beddes conteynyng three rootes of a fyde, so layde a flope, that the endes of them ioyne
 in maner togyther in the center or myddest of the bedde within the grounde. Owt of the ioyntes of the rootes
 and spaces betwene the same, spryng the toppes and blades of newe rootes, which by lyttle and lyttle encrea-
 fyng, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in the brawne, and oftentymes as bygge as the thygh:
 So that by the tyme of theyr full rypenes, in maner all the earthe of the heape, is conuerted into rootes. But
 they say that these rootes are not ripe in lesse tyme then a yeare and a halfe: And that the longer they are
 suffered to growe euen vntyll twoo yeares complete, they are so muche the better and more perfecte to make
 breade therof. When they are taken foorth of the earth, they scrape them and flyse them with certeyne sharpe
 stones seruyng for the same purpose: And thus layng them betwene two great stones, or puttyng them in a
 facke made of the stalkes of certeyne towgh herbes and fmaule reedes, they presse them (as we do cheefe or
 crabbes to drawe owte the iuse thereof) and so let them drye a daye before they eate them. The iuse or
 lyquoure, they cast away: for (as we haue sayde) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. Yet is the iuse of fuche as
 growe in the firme lande, holfome if it bee fodde, as is the whey of owre mylke. They saye that there are manye
 kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof some are more pleafaunte and delycate then the other, and are therefore referued
 as it were to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the gentelmen eate of the meaner forte, and
 the common people of the basest. The fynest they caule *Cazabbi*, which they make rounde lyke cakes in
 certeyne presses before they feeth it or bake it. They saye furthermore that there are lykewyse dyuers kyndes
 of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battata*. But they vse these rather as frutes and dysshes of seruice, then to make
 breade therof, as we vse rapes, radysshes, mussheroms, nauies, perfenepes, and such lyke. In this case, they
 mooste especially esteeme the best kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleasant tast and tendernes farre exceedeth owre
 mussheromes. It shal suffice to haue sayde thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe speake therefore of an other
 kynde of theyr breade. We declared before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulse muche lyke vnto
Panicum, but with sumwhat bygger graines, which they beate into meale vppon certeyne greate hollowe stones
 with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Iucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade.
 It is fowen thrife a yeare, so that the frutefulness of the grounde may beare it by reason of the equalitie of the
 tyme, whereof wee haue spoken suffyciently before. In these regyons they founde also the graine of *Maizium*,

The fayre region
of Caramairi.Fruteful
mountaynes.Gardens.
Insubres are
nowe cauled
Lumbardes, and
hetrusci, Tuscans
116Many countreys
lefte desolate by
the fiercenes of
the Canibales.One myriade is
ten thousande.A miserable
hearyng.

Breade of rootes.

The maner of
plantinge the
roote Iucca.Earth turned into
rootes.How breade is
made of rootes.A straunge
thyng.*Cazabbi*.*Ages* and *Battata**Panicum* is a
grayne sumewhat
lyke mil The
Italians caule it
Melica.

117

He meaneth the
equall length of
day and night
which is
continually vnder
the Equinoctial
lyne.

Maizium

Earth of dyuers
colours.

Golde in ryuers.

Hartes and bores.
Foules.

Holsome ayer

Gossampine
cotton.
Fethers.

Bowes and
arrowes.
Deade bodies
reserued

Ouches of laton.
Gonzalus Quietus,
sayth that they
gilt maruelously
with the iuse of a
certeyne herbe.
Whyte marble.

The great ryuer
Maragnonus.
This ioyneth with
the myghty ryuer
cauled Flumen
Amazonum, found
of late.

Clokes of fethers.

118

The swyfte course
of the water.

xl. leaques in one
nyght.

and fundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligently planted and well husbanded. The waye betwene the regyons of *Caramairi* and *Saturma*, is fayre, brode, and ryghte foorth. They founde here also fundrye kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe fetche and keepe freshe water. Lyke-wife fundry kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drynkyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dyffhes, and platters artifycially made. When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that th[e]inhabitanes shulde eyther obey the Christian kyng and embrace owre relygion, or elles to depart owte of their countrey, they answered with venemous arrowes. In this skyrmyshe, owre men tooke summe of theym: whercof clothyng the mooste parte in faire apparell, they sente them ageyne to their owne coompany: But leadyng the refydue to the shyppes to th[e]intent to shewe them the poure and magnyfycence of the christians that they myght declare the fame to their coompanions, therby to wyne their fauour, they appareled them lykewyse and sente them after their felowes. Theye affyrme that in all the ryuers of these coastes, theye fawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houfes good store of hartes fleshe and bores fleshe wherwith they fedde them selues dilycately. They also, haue greate plentie of fundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof they bryng vpe many in their houfes, summe for necessarye foode, and other for daynty dyffhes as we do hennes and partriches. Owre men hereby coniecture that the ayer of these regions is veary holsome, for as muche as sleapyng all nyghte vnder the firmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reason of any noysome humoure or vapoure proceadyng from the earthe, ayer, or water. Owre men furthermore, founde there many great bothomes of gossampyne cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers wherof they make them selues crestes and plumes after the maner of owre men of armes: also certeine clokes whiche they esteeme as mooste cumly ornamentes. They founde lykewyse an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. Th[e]inhabitanes also of these regions, in summe places vse to burne the carkefes of their prynces when theye are deade, and to referue their bones buried with spyces in certeyne hylles. In other places, they onely drye theym and imbaume them with spyces and sweete gummes, and soo referue them in sepulchers in their owne houfes. Sunwhere also, they drye them, spyce them, adourne them with precyous iewells and ouches, and so reuerently place them in certeyne tabernacles made for the same purpose in their owne palayces. When owre men had many of their tabellets, braslettes, collers, and fuche other ouches (whiche they caule *Guanines*) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of golde: wherby they suppose that they haue vsed to exchange their ware with summe craftie straungers whiche broughte them those counterfect ouches to defraude them of their golde. For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate vntyll they came to the meltyng. Furthermore, certayne of owre buylders wanderyng a lyttell way from the sea coastes, chaunced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they thynke that in tyme paste summe straungers haue coome too those landes, whiche haue dygged marble owte of the mountaines, and lefte those fragmentes on the plaine. There owre men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descendeth from the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neuata*: And the same to bee encreafed by many other ryuers whiche faule into it throughowte all the lowe and wate[r]lye regions by the whiche it runneth with so longe a tracte from the sayde montaynes into the sea: And this to bee the cause of the greatnesse therof. These thynges beyng thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe a retraite: Wheruppon they whiche were sente to lande (beyng fyue hundreth in noubre) makynge a great shoute for ioye of their victory, sette them selues in order of battayle, and so keping their array, returned to the shippes laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shynyng in souldiers clokes of fethers, with faire plumes and crestes of variable colours. In this meane tyme hauynge repaired their shyppes and furnysshed the same with all necessaryes, they loofed anker the. xvi. daye of the Calendes of Iuly, directyng their course to the hauen of *Carthagen*, in the whiche viage they destroyed and wasted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lyeing in the waye, accordyng as they were commaunded by the kyng. But the swifte course of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes Serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours shyppes, and all the other, althoughe they made their bofte that they perfectly knewe the nature therof. For they affyrme that in one nyght they were caried forty leaques beyonde their estimation.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Ere muſte we ſumwhat digreſſe from coſmography, and make a philoſophicall diſcourſ to ſearche the ſecrete cauſes of nature. For wheras they al affyrme with one conſent, that the ſea runneth there from the Eaſte to the weſte as ſwyftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountaynes, I thoughte it not good to lette ſo great a matter flyppe vntouched. The whiche while I conſyder, I am drawn into no ſmaule ambyguitie and doute, whether thoſe waters haue their courſe whiche flowe with ſo contynuall a tracte in circuite from the Eaſte, as thowghe they fledde to the weſt neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weſte therby any whitte the more fylled, nor the Eaſte emptied. If we ſhall ſaye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuye thynges) and aſſigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as ſumme affyrme) what centre ſhall we appointe to bee able to receaue ſo great aboundaunce of water? Or what circumference ſhal be founde weate? They whiche haue ſearched thoſe coaſtes, haue yet founde no lykely reaſon to be trewe. Manye thynke that there ſhulde bee certeyne large ſtraightes or enterances in the corner of that greate lande whiche we deſcribed to bee eyght tymes bygger then Italye, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they ſuppoſe that ſumme ſtraightes ſhulde paſſe through the ſame lyinge on the weſte fyde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the ſayde ſtraightes ſhuld ſwalowe vp thoſe waters, and ſo conuey the ſame into the weſte and from thence ageyn into owre Eaſte Ocean, or north ſeas as ſumme thynke. Other wyll, that the goulfe of that great lande bee cloſed vppe: and the lande to reach farre towarde the northe on the backe fyde of *Cuba*: ſo that it embrace the northe landes whiche the froſen ſea encompaſeth vnder the northe pole: And that all the lande of thoſe coaſtes, ſhoulde ioyne togyther as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture that thoſe waters ſhulde bee turned aboute by the obiecte or reſyſtaunce of that lande ſo bendynge towarde the north, as we ſee the waters tourned aboute in the crooked bankes of certeyne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they alſo whiche haue ſearched the frozen ſea, and ſayled from thence into the weſte, do lykewyſe affyrme that thoſe northe ſeas flowe contynually towarde the weſte, although nothing ſo ſwiftly. Theſe northe ſeas haue byn ſearched by one Sebastian Cabot a Venetian borne, whom beinge yet but in maner an infante, his parentes caryed with them into Englande hauyng occaſion to reforte thether for trade of marchandies, as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the worlde vnſearched to obteyne richeſſe. He therefore furniſhed two ſhippes in England at his owne charges: And fyrſt with three hundreth men, directed his courſe ſo farre toward the northe pole, that euen in the mooneth of Iuly he founde monſtrous heapes of Iſe ſwimming on the ſea, and in maner continually day lyght. Yet ſawe he the lande in that tracte, free from Iſe, whiche had byn molten by heate of the funne. Thus ſeyng ſuche heapes of Iſe before hym he was enforced to tourne his ſayles and folowe the weſte, ſo coaſtyng ſtyll by the ſhore, that he was thereby broughte ſo farre into the ſouthe by reaſon of the lande bendynge ſo muche ſouthward that it was there almoſte equall in latitude with the ſea cauled *Fretum Herculeum*, hauyng the north pole eleuate in maner in the ſame degree. He ſayled lykewiſe in this tracte ſo farre towarde the weſte, that he had the Ilande of *Cuba* [on] his lefte hande in maner in the ſame degree of longitude. As he traueyled by the coaſtes of this greate lande (whiche he named *Baccallaos*) he ſayth that he found the like courſe of the waters toward the weſt, but the ſame to runne more ſoftely and gentelly then the ſwifte waters whiche the Spanyardes found in their nauigations ſoutheward.

Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to bee trewe, but ought alſo of neceſſitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hetherto vnknown, there ſhulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters ſhulde thus continually paſſe from the Eaſt into the weſte: which waters I ſuppoſe to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vnceſſaunt mouyng and impulſion of the heauens: and not to bee ſwalowed vp and caſt owt ageyne by the breathynge of *Demogorgon* as ſume haue imagined bycauſe they ſee the ſeas by increaſe and decreaſe, to flowe and reflowe. Sebastian Cabot him ſelfe, named thoſe landes *Baccallaos*, bycauſe that in the ſeas therabout he founde ſo great multitudes of certeyne bigge fyſhes much lyke vnto tunies (which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Baccallaos*) that they ſumtymes ſtayed his ſhippes. He founde alſo the people of thoſe regions couered with beaſtes ſkynnes: Yet not without th[e]uſe of reaſon.

He ſaythe alſo that there is greate plentie of beares in thoſe regions, whiche uſe to eate fyſhe. For plungeinge them ſelues into the water where they perceue a multitude of theſe fyſhes to lye, they faſten their claws in their ſcales, and ſo drawe them to lande and eate them. So that (as he ſayth) the beares beinge thus ſatiſfied with fyſhe, are not noyſom to men. He declareth further, that in many places of theſe regions, he

Sundry opinions why the ſea runneth with ſo ſwyft courſe from the Eaſt into the weſt.

Th[e]equinoctiall lyne.
Why all waters moue towarde the ſouthe or Equinoctiall, reade *Cardanus de ſubtili. liber. ii. de Elementis.*
Straightes.

As by the ſtraight of Magellanus.

The north landes.

The frozen ſea.

Sebastian. Cabot.

The Venetians.

The viage of Sebastian Cabot from Englande to the frozen ſea.
Froſt in the moneth of Iuly.

Fretum Herculeum, diuideth Spayne and the Moores and is nowe cauled the ſtraightes of Marrok.
Baccallaos, or *Terra Baccallarum*.

119

The mouyng of heuen cauſeth the ſea to moue.

Demogorgon is the ſprite of the earth.

People couered with beaſtes ſkins

Howe beares take and eate fyſhes of the ſea.

Perhappes this
laton is copper
which holdeth
gold. For laton
hath no myne, and
is an artificiall
metal and not
natural.

Cabot cauled owt
of Englande into
Spayne.
The Second viage
of Cabot.

The Ilandes of
the Canybales.

The Ilande Fortis.

Salte

A straunge thyng.

How Petrus Arias
with the kynges
nauy arriued at
Dariena.

Howe Vaschus
receaued the new
gouernour.

Whye these
regions are cauled
prouynces.

120

Barrelles of meale.

Habitable regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.

Where the newe
gouernour planted
his habitation

The viage of
Iohannes Aiora
The hauen of
Comogrus

Sainte Mychaelis
goulfe

The hauen [of]
Pocchorrosa.

fawe great plentie of laton amonge th[e]inhabitantes. *Cabot* is my very frende, whom I vse familyerly, and delyte to haue hym sumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne house. For beinge cauled owte of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kynge of Castile after the death of Henry kynge of Englande the feuenth of that name, he was made one of owre counsayle and assystance as touchyng the affayres of the newe Indies, lookyng dayely for shippes to bee furnysshed for hym to discouer this hyd secrete of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yeare next folowyng, beinge the yeare of Chryst M. D. XVI. What shall succeade, yowre holynes shalbe aduertised by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Sume of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrst fynder of the lande of *Baccallaos*: And affirme that he went not so farre westwarde. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of the goulfes and strayghtes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the Spanyardes. At this tyme, they let passe the hauen of *Carthago* vntouched, with all the Ilandes of the Canibales there aboute, whiche they named *Infulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leauyng also behynde theyr backes, all the region of *Caramairi*. Heare by reason of a fooden tempeste, they were caste vppon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyftie leagues distante from the enterance of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houses of th[e]inhabitantes, many baskets made of certeyne greate sea reedes, ful of falte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly falte bayes: by reason whereof they haue greate plentie of falte which they sell to other nations for such thynges as they stande in neede of. Not farre from hense, a great curlewe as bygge as a storke came flying to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to bee easely taken: which beinge caryed about amonge all the shippes of the nauie, dyed shortly after. They fawe also a great multytude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of.

The gouernour his shyppe whiche we sayde to haue loste the rudder beinge nowe fore broofed and in maner vnprofytable, they leste behynde to folowe at leasure. The nauie arriued at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernour his shippe (beinge voyde of men) was dryuen a lande in the same coastes within foure dayes after. The Spanyardes whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieuutenant *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention before) beinge certified of th[e]arryual of *Petrus Arias* and his coompanye, wente foorth the three myles to meete him, and receaued him honorably and religiously with the psalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuing thankes to god by whose safe conducte they were brought so prosperously thether to al theyr confortes. They receaued them gladly into theyr houses builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may well caule these regions, Prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) such as are ouercome farre of, forasmuch as owre men doo nowe inhabite the same all the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beinge eicted. They entertheyned them with such chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of those regions, and newe breade bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Maizium*. Other delicates to make vp the feast, were of theyr owne store whiche they brought with theym in theyr shyppes, as powdered flesshe, salted fyssh, and breade made of wheate. For they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the same purpose. Here maye yowre holynes not withowt iuste cause of admiracion beholde a kynges nauie and great multitude of Christians, inhabytinge not onely the regions situate vnder the circle of heauen cauled *Tropicus Cancrri*, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to th[e]opinion of the owlde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette togyther, let vs further declare what they determyned to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the nauie arriued, there assembled a coompany of the Spanyardes th[e]inhabitoures of *Dariena*, to the number of foure hundreth and fyftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauie and his coompany, conferred with them bothe priuilly and openlye of certeyne articles wherof it was the kynges pleasure he shulde enquire: And most especially as concernyng such thynges wherof *Vaschus* the fyrste fynder and Admirall of the Southe sea, made mention in his large letter sent from *Dariena* to Spayn. In this inquisition they founde all thynges to bee trewe, wherof *Vaschus* had certified the kynge by his letters: And therevppon concluded that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorrosa*, and *Tumanama*, at th[e]assignement of *Vaschus*, certeine fortresses shuld bee erected foorthwith to th[e]intente there to plant theyr colonie or habitacion. To the better accomplysshemente hereof, they sent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentelman of *Corduba* and vnder Lieuutenant, with foure hundreth men and foure carauelles and one other lyttle shippe. Thus departinge, he sayled fyrst directly to the hauen of *Comogrus*, dystant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they wryte in theyr last letters. Frome hense, he is appoynted to sende a hundreth and fyftie of his foure hundreth, towarde the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the which (as they say) it is not passe. xxvi. leagues from the palaice of kynge *Comogrus* to the enterance of the goulfe of *Sancti Michaelis*. The residewe of the foure hundreth, shal remayne there to bee an ayde and succour to all such as shall iorney to and fro. Those hundreth and fiftie which are assigned to go southwarde, take with them for interpretours certeine of owre men which had lerned the sootherne language of the bonde men which were gyuen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne those regions, and also certeyne of the bondemen them selues which had nowe lerned the Spanyssh tongue. They say that the hauen of *Pocchorrosa*, is onely feuen leaques distante frome the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorrosa*, he is assigned to leaue fyftie men with the lyghtest shyp which maye bee a

passinger betwene them: that lyke as we vse poste horses by lande, so may they by this currant shippe, in shorte space certifie the Lieuutenant and th[e]inhabitours of *Dariena* of fuche thynges as shall chaunce. They entende also to buylde houfes in the region of *Tumanama*. The palaice of kynge *Tumanama*, is distant from *Pocchorrofa* about twentie leaques. Of these foure hundreth men, beinge of the owlde souldiers of *Dariena* and men of good experience, fyftie weare appoynted to bee as it were Decurians to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus sette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and therewith to certifie hym that in those prouinces there is a kynge named *Dabaiba* whose dominion is very riche in golde: But the same to be yet vntouched by reason of his great power. His kingedome ioyneth to the seconde greate ryuer named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche fauleth into the sea owt of the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* as we haue largely declared before. The common reporte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palayce of kynge *Dabaiba* is fyfty leaques distante from *Dariena*. Th[e]inhabitantes faye that from the palaice, the golde mynes reache to the borthers on euery fyde. Albeit, owre men haue also golde mynes not to bee contempned, euen within three leaques of *Dariena*, in the which they gather golde in many places at this presente: Yet doo theye affyrme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the booke of owre fyrste frutes wrytten to yowre holynesse, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wherin owre men were deceaued and mystooke the matter. For where they founde the fyfsher men of kynge *Dabaiba* in the marysshes, they thought his region had byn there also. They determyned therefore to sende to kynge *Dabaiba*, three hundreth choyse younge men to be chofen owte of the hole army as mozte apte to the warres, and well furnysshed with all kyndes of armoure and artillery, to th[e]intent to go vnto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the fruition of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and dryue hym owte of his countrey. In their letters, they often tymes repete this for an argument of great rycheffe to coome, that they in maner dygged the grounde in noo place, but founde the earthe myxte with sparkes and smaule graynes of golde. They haue also aduertised the kynge that it shalbe commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Saturma*, that it maye bee a place of refuge for them that fayne from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whiche (as they faye) it is but foure or fyue dayes saylyng to that hauen of the regyon of *Saturma*: And from the hauen, but thre dayes saylyng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee vnderstode in goynge and not in returnyng. For the returnyng from thense is so laborious and difficulte by reason of the contrary course of the water, that they seme as it were to ascende hyghe montaynes and stryue ageynste the poure of *Neptunus*. This swyfte course of the sea towarde the Weste, is not so violente to theym whiche retourne to Spayne from the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*: Althoughe they also do laboure ageynste the faule of the Ocean: The cause wherof is, that the sea is here verye large, so the waters haue their full scoope. But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are constrynged together by the bendynge fydes of that great lande, and by the multytude of Ilandes lyinge ageynste it, as the lyke is seene in the straightes or narowe seas of Sicilie where the violent course of the waters cause the daungerous places of *Scylla* and *Charybdis*, by reason of those narowe seas whiche containe *Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. *Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these regyons, hath lefte in wrytynge, that saylyng from the Ilande of *Guanassa*, and the prouinces of *Iaia*, *Maia*, and *Cerabaro*, beyng regyons of the west marches of *Beragua*, he founde the course of the water so vehemente and furious ageynste the fore parte of his shippe whyle he failed from those coastes towarde the Easte, that he coulde at no tyme touche the grounde with his foundynge plummet, but that the contrary vyolence of the water wolde beare it vppe from the bottome. He affyrmeth also, that he coulde neuer in one hole daye with a meately good wynde, wyne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentimes enforced to sayle fyrste by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea toward the North when they returne to Spaine, that the Northe wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not bryng to passe by a directe course. But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffice. Let vs now therefore reherse what they write of *Dariena*, and of their habitation there, which they caule *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defense: And the ayer is more pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanyshe inhabitours, are all pale and yelowe, lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe giaundydes. Whiche neuertheless commeth not of the nature of the region as it is situate vnder the heauen. For in many regyons beyng vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the same eleuation, they fynd holfome and temperate ayer, in such places where as the earth bryngeth forth fayre sprynges of water, or where holfome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but mozte especyally where they inhabyte the fydes of the hylles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is sytuate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on euery fyde with hyghe hylles: By reason wherof, it receaueth the foonne beames at noonetyde directly perpendiculer ouer their heades, and are therefore fore vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the fydes. For it is the reflection of the foonne beames whiche causeth feruente heate, and not their acesse or nereness to the earth. Forasmuche as

A passynger
shyppe.

Kynge Tumanama.

Decurians are
officers deuised
into tennes. etc.The gold mynes
Kynge Dabaiba.The pallaice of
kynge Dabaiba.The gold mynes
of Dariena.

An erreure.

Expedition ageinst
kynge Dabaiba.

121

Great plentie of
golde.The regyon of
SaturmaThe Ilande of
Dominica.*Dariena*.Difficulte saylyng
ageynst the course
of the sea.The daungerous
straightes of Scylla
and Charybdis.*Guanassa*.*Iaia*.*Maia*.*Cerabaro*.*Beragua*.The vehement
course of the sea
from the east to
the west.

The northe wynde.

Sancta Maria
Antiqua, the fyrst
habitation of the
spaniards in the
fyrme lande.Sardus the Ilande
of Sardinia.The variety of
regyons lyinge
vnder one paralel.By what meanes
the sonne beames
are cause of
feruent heate.

they are not passyble in them felues as dothe manyfestly appeare by the snowe lyinge continually vnmolten vpon certeyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holynesse knoweth ryghte well. The soonne beames therfore faulyng on the montaynes, are reflected downewarde into the valley by reason of th[e]jobiecte of the declynge fydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde stoone rowlde frome the toppe of a montayne. The valley therfore receaueth, both those beames whiche faule directly theron, and also those whiche are reflected downwarde from euery fyde of the montaynes. Their habitation therfore in *Dariena*, is pernicious and vnhol-some onely of the particular nature of the place, and not by the fytuation of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen or nere to the soonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the foyle, by reason it is coompased aboute with muddy and slynkyng marysshes, th[e]infection wherof is not a lyttle encreased by the heate. The vyllage it selfe, is in a maryshe, and in maner a standyng puddle, where, of the droppes faulyng from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houfes, toades are engendered immediately, as I my selfe sawe in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the soomer season. Furthermore, where so euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handefull and a halfe, there springeth owte vnhol-some and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe and muddy chanel of the valley, and so fauleth into the sea. Now therfore they consulte of remouyng their habytation. Necessytie caused them fyrst to fasten their foote heare, bycause that they whiche fyrst arryued in those landes, were oppressed with fuche vrgente hunger, that they had no respecte to chaunge the place althoughe they were thus vexed by the contagion of the foyle and heate of the soonne, besyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reason of venemous vapours and exhalations ryfyng from the same. An other greate incommoditie was, that the place was destitute of a commodious hauen, beyng three leaques distante from the mouthe of the goulfe. The waye is also roughe and diffyculte to bryng vyttayles and other necessaries from the sea. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of other particular thynges whiche chaunfed. Therfore shortly after that they weare arryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phifytion of Ciuile, whome partely th[e]autorytie of the bysshoppe of *Dariena*, and partely the desyre of golde had allured to those landes, was so scarred with lyghtnyng in the nyghte season lyinge in bedde with his wyfe, that the house and all the stufte therin beyng fette on fyer and burnte, he and his wyfe bothe soore scorched, ranne foorth crying and almoste naked, hardely escapyng the daunger of deathe. At an other tyme, as certayne of them floode on the shoore, a great Crocodyle sodenly caryed awaye a masty of a yeare and a halfe owlde, as a kyte shulde haue snatched vppe a chicken: And this euen in the presence of theym all, where the myserable dogge cryed in vayne for the helpe of his mayster. In the nyghte season they were tormented with the bytyng of battes whiche are there so noysome that if they byte any man in his sleape, they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawyng of bludde: In so muche that summe haue dyed therof, faulyng as it were into a consumption through the malyciousnesse of the venemous wounde. If these battes chaunce to fynde a cocke or a henne abrode in the nyght season, they byte them by the combes and so kyll them. They also whiche wente laste into these regions, do wryte, that the lande is troubeled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that they haue nowe deuised artes and ingens howe to take them. Lykewyse that in the houfes of their felowes, they founde the hydes and cafes of fuche Lyons and Tygers as they had kylled. They wryte furthermore, that by reason of the rankenesse and frutefulnessse of the grounde, kyne, swyne, and horses, doo maruelously increase in these regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche weare of the first broode. Of the excedyng hyghnesse of the trees with their fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and feedes whiche owre men broughte from Spayne and sowed and fet the same in these regyons, lykewyse of the hertes and other foure footed beastes bothe tame and wylde, also of dyuers kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fysshes, they write euen as we haue declared in the decades before. *Careta* the kynge of the regyon of *Cioba*, was with them for the space of three dayes: whome when they had frendly enterteined and shewed hym the secrete places of their shyppes, their horses also with their trappars, bardes, and other furnimentes, besyde many other thynges whiche seemed straunge to hym, and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their musycall instrumentes, and gyuen hym many rewardes, they dysmyffed hym halfe amased with to muche admyration. He fygnified vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce, of the planckes wherof, if shyppes were made, they shoulde bee safe from the woormes of the sea whiche they caule *Bromas*. Howe these woormes knawe and corrode the shyppes, wee haue declared before. Owre shyppes are greatly troubeled with this plage if they lye longe in the hauens of these regyons. But they affyrme that the woodde of this tree is soo bytter, that the woormes wyll not taste therof. There is also an other tree peculyar to these landes: whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body, they cause greate blysters, and those soo malycious that excepte the same bee foorthwith healed with salte water or fastyng spyttle, they doo incontynently engender deadely paynes. They saye lykewyse, that the fauour of the woodde is presente poyson: And that it can noo whither bee caryed without daunger of lyfe. When th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had oftentimes attempted to shake of the yoke of feruytude, and coulde neuer bryng the same to passe neyther by open warre nor yet by priuye conspiraces,

The pernicious
ayer of Dariena.

122

Toades and flees
engendered of
droppes of water.

Necessytie hath
no lawe

A house sette on
fyer with
lyghtnyng.

A dogge deuoured
of a crocodyle,
*Tanquam canis
e Nilo.*
The bytyng of
battes.

Lyons and tygers.

Beastes wex
bygger in their
kynde.

How the
gouernour
enterteined kyng
Careta.

Note.

Broma or *Bissa*,
are wormes whiche
destroy shippes.

123

A venemous tree.

Perhappes their
venemous arrows
are made of this
woodde or. &c.

they were determynd in the nyghte seafon to haue kylled owre men in their sleepe with the fmoke of this woodde. But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse their intente, and punysshed the chiefe autours of the deuyse. They haue also a certayne herbe with the fauour wherof they are preferued from the hurte of this venemous woodde so that they maye beare it safely. Of these fmaule thynges it shall suffyce too haue sayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater thynges to certyfye vs of from the Ilandes of the fouth sea. For at fuche tyme as the meffenger whiche broughte owre letters departed from thenfe, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedition to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouthe of the goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the fouth sea, beyng also lefte vntouched of *Vaschus* by reason that the sea was at that tyme of the yeare fore troubeled with tempestes, as wee haue further declared in *Vaschus* his vyage to the fouth. Wee looke therefore dayly for greater thynges then are hetherto paste. For they haue nowe taken in hand to subdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee suppose too bee eyther verye ryche, or to brynge furthe summe straunge woorkes of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Solistus* of *Nebriffa* (of whome we haue made mention before) is sente by the frounte of the cape or poynte of *Sancti Augustini* (whiche reacheth feuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and perteyneth to the dominion of the Portugales) to th[e]intent to ouer runne the fouth syde from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Cuquibacoa*, with the hauens of *Carthago* and *Sancta Martha*, of *Dariena* also and *Beragua*, that more perfecte and certeyne knowledge may bee had of those tractes. Furthermore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was sente foorth with three shyppes to destroye the Canibales bothe in the lande and Ilandes there aboute: aswell that the nations of the more humane and innocente people maye at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secretes and rycheffe of those regions. Many other lykewise were sente dyuers and fundry wayes: as *Gasper Badaiocius* too searche West partes: *Franciscus Bezerra*, to fayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to passe by the mouthe or enteraunce therof to the Easte coastes of the goulfe to searche the secretes of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his companye had of late begonne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortresse and a vyllage. *Badaiocius* departed fyrste frome *Dariena* with foure score souldiours well appoynted: Whome *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyfthe:

To *Bezerra* were also fourescore affygnd, and three score and tenne to *Valleius*. Whether they shall arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or faule into vnfortunate flations, he onely knoweth whose prouydence ruleth all: For as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of thynges after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therefore coome to other matters.

THE SEVENTHE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Petrus Arias the gouernour of the supposed continete, was scarcely entred into the mayne sea with his nauye onwarde on his vyage to *Dariena*. But I was aduertised that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentimes ouer runne the coastes of these new seas and the Ilandes of the same, was coome to the courte to sell fuche marchaundies as he broughte with hym frome thenfe. This man had dyligently searched the tracte of the supposed continete, and especyally th[e]inner regyons of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his brother *Nicolaus Ouandus* (the gouernour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the

order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) bycause he was a wytty man and more apte to searche fuche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drewe faire cardes and tables of fuche regyons as hee discouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of fuche as haue sense had better tryall hereof, so is he in most credyt emongest the best forte. He therefore resorted to me as all they are accustomed to doo, whiche retourne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of thynges heretofore vnknownen, I wyll nowe declare. The begynnyng of this narration, shalbe the particular description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuche as it is the heade and as it weare the principall marte of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousande and againe a thousande fayre, pleasaunt, bewtifull, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboute it on euery syde, adournyng this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronyng her aboute, and attendyng vppon her as their queene and patroneffe. But of these *Nerciades* (that is to saye, the Ilandes placed aboute her) we wyll speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare sumwhat of the Ilande whiche owre men named *Margaritea Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knownen, and lyinge in the fouth sea in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) fainte Michaels goulfe. This Iland hath presently brought to owre knowledge many straunge and woonderfull thynges and promysfeth no fmaule

A preseruatiue ageynst poyson.

The Ilandes of the south sea.
The ryche Iland cauled Dites.

Cap[e], sancti Augustini.
Of the euyll successe of these viages, reade decade iii. Liber. ix.
An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Fogeda.

Looke. decad. iii. Lib. ix.

The nauigations of Andreas Moralis.

124

A particular description of the Ilande of hispaniola

Nereides are nymphes of the sea, he meaneth Ilandes.

Tethis the wyfe of *Neptunus* and goddesse of the sea.

The Ilande of *Margaritea Diues*.
Sainte Michaels goulfe

Great perles

Hispaniola lyke
vnto the earthly
paradyse.The fyrst
inhabitours of
hispaniola*Dardanus.*
Teucus.
Troianum.
Tirians, Sidonians.*Eneas.*
Latium.

Hierusalem

*Mecha.*The Ilandes of
Canarie.Betanchor, a
frenchman.

125

The fyrst names
of hispaniola.*Pan.*The roughnesse
of hispaniola.The maner of
lernynge.Ballets and
rhymes.

hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles so fayre and great, that the sumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, cheynes, and brassettes. Of the shelyfshes wherin these are engendered, wee wyll speake sumwhat more in th[e]ende of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hispaniola* moſte lyke vnto the earthly paradyse. In the description hereof, we wyll begynne of the impofytion of dyuerſe names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayer and benefyciall heauen: And fynally of the deuifyon of the regyons. Therefore for the ryghter pronunfyation of the names, yowre holyneſſe muſte vnderſtande that they are pronounced with th[e]accent, as yowe may know by the verge fette ouer the heddes of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinind*, where the accente is in the laſt vowell, and the lyke to be vnderſtoode in all other names. They faye therefore, that the fyrſte inhabitours of the Iland were transported in their *Canoas* (that is boates made of one hole pyece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banyſhed men dryuen from theſe by reaſon of certayne contrary factions and diuifyons emonge them felues, lyke as wee reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucus* from *Crete* into Asia, and that the regyon where they placed their habitacion, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*. The lyke wee reade howe the Tirians and Sidonians arryued with their nauye in *Lybia* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. Theſe *Matinians* in like maner beyng banyſhed from their owne cuntry, planted their fyrſte habytation in that parte of the Iland of *Hispaniola* whiche they caule *Cahonao*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnyng of the Romaynes that *Eneas* of Troye aryued in the region of Italy cauled *Latium* vppon the bankes of the ryuer of Tiber. Within the mouthe of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is fayde that th[e]inhabitauntes buylded their fyrſte howſe whiche they named *Camoteia*. This howſe they conſecrated ſhortely after, and honoured the ſame reuerently with continuall gyftes and monumentes, euen vntyl the commyng of owre men, lyke as the Chriſtians haue euer relygyouſly honoured Ierusalem the fountayne and oryginall of owre faythe: As alſo the Turkes attribute the lyke to the cytie of *Mecha* in Araby, and th[e]inhabytantes of the fortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of Canarie) to *Tyrma* buylded vppon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounte with ioyfull myndes and ſonges to caſt them felues downe headlonge, beyng perſuaded by their prieſtes that the ſoules of all ſuche as ſo dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, ſhulde therby enioye eternall felycity. The conquerours of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remaynyng in that ſuperſtition, euen vntyll owre tyme: Nor yet is the memory of their ſacrifyces vtterly worne awaye: The rocke alſo referueth the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue alſo learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande ſumme of the faction of *Betanchor* the Frenſhe man and fyrſte that broughte the Ilandes to good culture and ciuilitie beyng therto lycenced by the kynge of Caſtile as I haue ſayde before. Theſe doo yet (for the moſte parte) obſerue bothe the language and maners of the Frenſhemen, although the heres and ſucceſſours of *Betanchor*, had ſoulde the two ſubdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Caſtile. Yet th[e]inhabitours whiche ſucceded *Betanchor*, and buylded them houſes and encreaſed their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleaſauntly with the Spanyardes, not greued with the ſharpe coulde of Fraunce. But lette vs nowe returne to th[e]inhabitauntes of *Matinino* and *Hispaniola*. The Ilande of *Hispaniola* was fyrſte named by the fyrſte inhabitours, *Quizqueia*, and then *Haiti*. And this not by chaunce, or at the pleaſure of ſuche as diuifed theſe names, but of credulitie and belefe of ſumme great effecte. For *Quizqueia*, is as muche to faye as a great thinge: And that ſo great that none maye bee greater. They interprete alſo, that *Quizqueia* ſygnifyeth, large, vniuerſall, or al, in like ſignification as the Greekes named their god cauled *Pan*: Bycauſe that for the greatnes therof, theſe ſymple ſoules ſuppoſed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the ſonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the ſame: And thervppon thoughte it moſt woorthy to bee cauled great, as the greateſt of all other knowen to them. *Haiti* is as muche to faye by interpretation, as roughe, ſharpe, or craggie. But by a ſygnificatiue ſpeache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland *Haiti* (that is) roughe: For as muche as in many places the face of this Iland is rough by reaſon of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and diepe valleys enuyroned with great and hyghe montaynes, although it bee in manye other places exceedyng bewtiful and floryſhyng. Here muſte wee ſumwhat digreſſe from th[e]order we are entered into. Perhappes your holyneſſe wyll maruell by what meanes theſe ſymple men ſhoulde of ſoo longe contynuaunce beare in minde ſuche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beginnyng, their princes haue euer byn accuſtomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wiſe men whiche they caule *Boitios*, to bee inſtructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie ſuche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them felues chieflye to two thynges: As generally to lerne th[e]originall and ſucceſſe of thynges: And particularlye to reherſe the noble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and aunceſtours aſwell in peace as in warre. Theſe two thynges they haue of owlde tyme compoſed in certeyne meters and ballettes in their language. Theſe rhymes or ballettes, they caule *Arcitos*. And as owre mynſtrelles are accuſtomed too ſynge to the harpe or lute, ſo doo they in lyke maner ſynge theſe ſonges and daunce to the ſame, playinge on tymbrelles made of ſhels of certen

fyfshes. These tymbrels they caule *Maguei*. They haue also songes and ballettes of loue: And other of lamentations and moornyng: Summe also to encorage them to the warres, with euery of them their tewnes agreable to the matter. They exercyse theym felues muche in daunceinge, wherin they are verye actyue and of greater agilitie then owre men, by reason they gyue them felues to nothyng so muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche is also the caufe of their swiftenesse of foote. In their ballettes lefte them of their auncestours, they haue prophecies of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. These they fynge with moornyng and as it were with gronyng, bewayle the losse of their lybertie and feruitude. For these prophecies make mention that there shoulde coome into the Ilande *Maguacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with fuche swoordes as shulde cutte a man in funder at one stroke: vnder whose yoke their posteritie shulde bee subdued. And here I do not maruell that their prediceffours coulde prophecye of the feruitude and bondage of their successeyon, if it bee trewe that is sayd of the familiaritie they haue with spirites whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue largely made mention in the nynth booke of the first decade, where also wee haue entreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they saye that fence these Zemes were taken away by the Christians, the spirites haue no more appeared. Owre men ascribe this to the fygne of the croffe wherwith they defende theym felues from fuche spirites. For they are nowe all clenfed and sanctified by the water of bapti[f]me wherby they haue renounced the deuel and are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniuerfally studyous to knowe the boundes and lymettes of their regions and kingdomes: And especially their *Mitaini* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not vtterlye ignorante in the surueyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of fettyng, sowyng, and plantyng. They are mooste experte fyfshers, by reason that throughowte the hole yeare, they are accustomed daylye to plounge them felues in the ryuers, so that in maner they lyue no leffe in the water then on the lande. They are also giuen to huntynge. For (as I haue sayde before) they haue twoo kyndes of foure footed beastes, wherof the one is lyttle cunnes cauled *Vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Iuannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of mooste pleasaunte taste, and lyuyng on the lande. All the Ilandes nooryshe innumerable byrdes and foules: As stocke doues, duckes, geefe, hearons, byfyde no leffe number of poppingiais then sparowes with vs. Euery kynge hath his subiectes diuided to fundrye affaires: As summe to huntynge, other to fyfshyng, and other summe to husbandrye. But let vs now returne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that *Quizqueia* and *Haiti* were the oulde names of this Ilande. The hole Ilande was also cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundyng with golde: Lyke as owre anciente poetes cauled all Italye *Latium* of parte therof. Therefore as they cauled *Aufonia* and *Hesperia*, Italie, euen foo by the names of *Quizqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderstode the hole Ilande of *Hispaniola*. Owre men dyd fyrste name it *Ifabella* of queene Helifabeth whiche in the Spanishe tongue is cauled *Ifabella*: And so named it of the fyrst Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the Northe fyde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrste decade. But of the names, this shall suffyce. Lette vs nowe therefore speake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrste ouer ranne it, described it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a chefnutte tree, with a goulfe towarde the west fyde, lyinge open ageynst the Ilande of *Cuba*. But the experte shypppe mayster *Andreas Moralis* broughte me the forme therof sumwhat differynge from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the Easte angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eaten with many great goulfes, and the corners to reache foorth the verye farre: and placeth manye large and safe hauens in the great goulfe on the East fyde. But I trust shortely foo to trauayle further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particular description of *Hispaniola* maye bee fente vnto yowre holyneffe. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographicall description therof in cardes, euen as yowre holyneffe hath seene the forme and fytuation of Spayne and Italye with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therefore without shamfastnesse compare the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to Italie, sumtyme the heade and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee confyder the quantitie, it shalbee founde lyttle leffe, and muche more frutefull. It reacheth from the Easte into the West, fyue hundreth and fortye myles accordyng to the computation of the later searchers: Although the Admyrall sumwhat increased this number as wee haue sayde in the fyrste decade. It is in breadth summe where, almoste three hundreth myles: And in summe places narrower where the corners are extended. But it is fuerlye muche more blessed and fortunate then Italie: Beyng for the mooste parte therof so temperate and florysshynge, that it is neyther vexed with sharppe coulde, nor afflycted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the steynges and conuersyons of the soonne (cauled *Solstitia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lyttle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyghte throughout all the yeare. For on the south fyde, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboue the nyghte, or contrary wyse. But the dyfference is more on the northe fyde. Yet are there summe regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coulde is of sum force. But yowre holyneffe muste vnderstode this to bee incident by reason of the obiecte or nearnesse of the mountaines, as wee wyl more largely declare hereafter. Yet is not this coulde so pearcyng and sharpe, that th[e]inhabitanes are molested with snowe or bytyng froste. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall springe tyme, and

Singing and daunceing. Soonges of loue and moornyng.

Prophecies.

Note

Theyr familiaritie w[ith] spirites

The deuyll is dryuen awaye by baptisme

126

Surueyers.

They lyue as much in the water as on the lande

Serpentes

A Crocodile is much lyke to owr ewte or Lyserte Byrdes and foules Poppingayes

Cipanga.

Italy cauled Latium

Isabella

The forme of the Ilande of hispaniola

A particular carde of hispaniola.

Hispaniola compared to Italie.

The temperature of Hispaniola.

The equinoctiall.

Coulde accidentall, and not by the sytuation of the region. Perpetuall springe and soonier.

Maruelous frutfulness 127	<p>is fortunate with contynuall foomer and haruest. The trees floryshe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are exceadyng fortunate, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encrease, soo that within the space of fyxtene dayes after the seede is sowne, al herbes of fmaule steames, as letteffe, borage, radysh, and fuche other, coome to their full rypenesse: And also howe herbes of the bygger forte, as gourdes, melones, cucumers, pompons, citrons, and fuche other, coome to their perfection in the space of thirtie dayes, wee haue sufficiently declared elles where. Of the beastes transported out of Spaine thether, wee haue sayde howe they growe too a muche greater kynde: In so muche that when they faule into communication of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bignesse to elephantes, and swyne to mules: But this sumwhat by an exceffyue kynde of speache. We haue also made mention how their swynes flesshe is more fauourye and farre better and more pleasaunte taste and more holsome then owres, by reason they are fedde with the frutes of Myrobalane trees, and other pleasaunte and nuryffhyng frutes of that contrey, whiche growe there of them felues, as do with vs beeches, holly, and okes. Vynes wolde also prosper there with maruelous encrease, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof. The lyke encrease commeth of wheate if it be sowne vpon the mountaynes where the colde is of fume strenght: but not in the playnes, by reason of to much fatnes and rankenes of the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate shuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the brawne, and more then a spanne in length, bearynge also more then a thousande graynes as they all confesse with one voyce, and earnestly affirme the same with othes. Yet they say the bread of the Ilande (cauled) <i>Cazabbi</i> made of the roote of <i>Iucca</i>, to bee more holsome, because it is of easyer digestion, and is cultured with lesse labour and greater increase. The residue of the tyme which they spende not in fettyng and plantyng, they bestowe in gatheringe of golde. They haue nowe fuche plentie of foure footed beasts, that horses and oxen hydes with sheepe skynnes and goate skyns and such other, are brought from thense into Spayne: So that nowe the doughter in many thynges helpeth and succurreth her mother. Of the trees of brafile, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright shynge redde, mastix, goffampine cotton, the precious metall cauled <i>Electrum</i>, and such other commodities of this Ilande, we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore can chaunce more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there to lyue where he neede not to bee dryuen to close chaumbers with sharpe coulde or fayntyng heate? Nor yet in wynter eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the shinnes with continual fytyng at the fyer, which thynges make men oulde in short tyme by resoluinge the natural heate, wherof a thousande diseases infue. They also affirme the ayer to bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no lesse holsome, as they whiche haue theyr continuall course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are vtterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length coome to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed Ilande. We haue before declared howe it is in maner equally diuided with foure greate ryuers descendyng frome hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the East, is cauled <i>Iunna</i>, as that towarde the West is named <i>Attibunicus</i>: The thyrde is <i>Naiba</i> or <i>Haiba</i> which runneth Southwarde: The fourth is cauled <i>Iache</i>, and fauleth towarde the North. But this shippe maister, hath brought an other description obserued of th[e] inhabitants from the begynnyng. Let vs therefore diuide the hole Ilande into fye partes, caulynge the regions of euery prouince by theyr owlde names: and fynally make mention of fuche thynges as are woorthye memory in euery of them. The begynninge of the Ilande on the East syde, is conteyned in the prouince named <i>Caizimu</i>: so named for that in theyr language <i>Cimu</i>, signifieth the front or begynnyng of any thyng. After this, foloweth the prouince of <i>Huhabo</i>, and then <i>Caihabo</i>. The fourth is <i>Bainoa</i>. <i>Guacciarima</i> conteyneth the west corner. But the last faue one, <i>Bainoa</i> is of larger boundes then the three other. <i>Caizimu</i> reacheth from the fyrst fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer <i>Hozama</i>, whiche runneth by the cite of faynt Dominicke. But towarde the North syde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of <i>Haiti</i>. <i>Huhabo</i>, is included within the mountaynes <i>Haiti</i> and the ryuer <i>Iaciga</i>. <i>Cai[h]abo</i> the thyrde prouince, conteyneth all that lyeth betwene <i>Cuhabo</i> and <i>Dahatio</i>, euen vnto the mouth of the ryuer of <i>Iaccha</i> or <i>Iache</i> (one of the foure which diuide the Ilande equally) and ascendeth to the mountaynes of <i>Cibaua</i>, where the greateste plentie of golde is founde: Owte of the which also the ryuer <i>Demahus</i> springeth: and ioynyng with the springes of the ryuer of <i>Naiba</i>, (being an other of the foure which diuideth the Ilande towarde the fourth sea) fauleth to an other banke of the ryuer of faynt Dominicke. <i>Bainoa</i>, begynneth at the confines of <i>Caiabi</i>, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of <i>Cahini</i> which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the north syde of the Ilande where wee sayde that they erected the fyrst colonie or habitacion. The prouince of <i>Guacciarima</i>, occupieth the remanent towarde the west. This they named <i>Guacciarima</i>, bycause it is the extreme or vttermost parte of the Ilande. For <i>Iarima</i> in theyr language signifieth the taylor or ende of any thyng: And <i>Gua</i>, is an article whiche they vse often tymes in the names of thynges: And especially in the names of theyr kynges: as <i>Guarionexius</i>, and <i>Guaccanarillus</i>. In the prouince of <i>Caizimu</i>, are these regions: <i>Higui</i>, <i>Guanama</i>, <i>Reyre</i>, <i>Xagua</i>, <i>Aramana</i>, <i>Arabo</i>, <i>Hazoa</i>, <i>Macorix</i>, <i>Caiacoa</i>, <i>Guaiagua</i>, <i>Baguanimaho</i> and the rough mountaynes of <i>Haiti</i>. Here let vs speake fume what of theyr aspirations which they vse otherwyse then the Latins doo.</p>
Beastes	
Oxen and swyne of exceadyng bygnesse.	
Swyne fed with Myrobalanes	
Vines	
Wheate	
An eare of wheate as byg as a mans arme in the brawne The bread of the Ilande.	
Golde. Great plentie of cattayle. Brasile. Mastyx. Gossampine <i>Electrum</i> .	
Incommodities of intemperat regions	
Holsome ayer and water Golde euery where The description of the inner partes of the Ilande.	
The cite of s. Dominicke The mountaynes of Haiti	
The mountaynes of Cibaua 128	
The Ilande of Cahini Of prouinces diuided into regions	
Of theyr aspirations	

It is to bee noted that there is no aspiration in theyr vowels, which hath not th[e]effecte of a consonant. So that they pronounce theyr aspirations more vehemently then wee do the consonant. f. Ye, all suche woordes as in their tonge are aspirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and spirite as is. f. fauing that herein the neather lyppe is not moued to th[e]uppermost teethe. With open mouthes and shakynge theyr brestes, they breath out these aspirations, *ha, he, hi, ho, hu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theyrs. I fynde also that the Spanyardes vse the lyke vehemence in the aspirations of those woordes whiche they haue receaued of the Moores and Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in these woordes: *Almohadda*, whiche signifieth a pyllowe or bolster: Also *Almohaza*, that is, a horse combe: with dyuers such other woordes whiche they speake in maner with panting brestes and vehement spirite. I haue thought it good to reherse these thynges, bycause amonge the Latines it often tymes soo chaunceth that onely the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the worde: as *hora*, for an houre, and *ora* for the plurale number of this worde *os*, which signifieth the mouth: Also *ora*, which signifieth regions or coastes. The lyke also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as *occido* I kyll, and *occido* I faule. Euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many thynges to bee obserued. But let vs nowe returne to the description. In the prouince of *Huhabo*, are these regions: *Xamana, Canabacoa, Cuhabo*, with many other, the names wherof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Caihabo*, conteyneth these regions: *Magua*, and *Cacacubana*. Th[e]inhabitantes of this region, haue a peculyar language much differinge from the common language of the Ilande, and are cauled *Macoryxes*. There is also an other region cauled *Cubana*, whose language differeth from the other. Lykewyse the region of *Baiohaigua*, hath a dyuers toonge. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon, Cybaho*, and *Manabaho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runnethe the ryuer *Nizaus*: And the montaynes cauled *Mahaitin, Hazua*, and *Neibaymao*, confine with the same. In the prouince of *Bainoa*, are the regions of *Maguana, Iagohaiucho, Bauruco, Dabiagua*, and *Attibuni*, so named of the ryuer: Also *Caunoa, Buiatici, Dahabonici, Maiaguariti, Atiei, Maccazina, Guahabba, Anniuici, Marien, Guaricco, Amaguei, Xaragua, Yaguana, Azzuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diaguo, Camaie*, and *Neibaimao*. In *Guaccaierima* the last prouince, these regions are conteyned: *Mauicarao, Guahagua, Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Bainoa* the lesse, *Cahaymi, Iamaizi, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa*, and *Ayqueroa*. But let vs entreate sumwhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, within the great goulfe of the begynnyng; there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the sea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnlyke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnynge many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the shyp master, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to searche the caue with the smaulest vessels. He fayth that by certeyne priuie wayes, manye ryuers haue concourse to this caue as it were to a finke or chanell. After th[e]experience hereof, they ceased to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne whiche commynge fourescore and tenne myles, were swalowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the sea by any knowne wayes. Nowe therefore they suppose that ryuers swalowed vp by the holowe places of that stony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the shipmaster entered into the caue his shippe was almost swalowed. For he faith that there are many whyrlepooles and ryfinges or boylinges of the water, which make a violent conflicte and horrible rorynge one encounterynge the other. Also many huge holes and holowe places: So that what on the one fyde with the whirle pooles, and on the other fyde with the boyling of the water, his shyp was long in maner toffed vp and downe lyke a baule. It greatly repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how to come forth. He now wandered in darkenesse, aswel for the obscurenesse of the caue into the which he was farre entered, as also that in it were thicke cloudes engendered of the moist vapours proceeding of the conflicte of the waters whiche continually faule with great violence into the caue on euery fyde. He compareth the noyse of these waters, to the faule of the famous ryuer of *Nilus* from the montaines of Ethyope. They were al so deafe, that one could not here what an other said. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came forth of the caue as it had byn owte of hel. Aboute three score miles distante from the chiefe citie of saincte Dominicke, there are certeyne hyghe montaynes vppon the toppes wherof is a lake or standynge poole inaccessible, neuer yet seene of them whiche came latelye to the Ilande, bothe by reason of the roughnesse of the montaines, and also for that there is noo pathe or open waye to the toppes of the same. But at the length the shyppe master beinge conducted thether by one of kynges, ascended to the toppes of the montaines and came to the poole. Hee faith that the coulde is there of sum force. And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramblie bushes, whiche two, growe onely in coulde regions. These montaynes, they caule *Ymizui Hibahaino*. This poole is of freshe water three myles in compasse, and wel replenysshed with diuerse kindes of fysshes. Many smaule riuers or brookes faule into it. It hath no passage owte, bycause it is on euery fyde enclosed with the toppes of montaynes. But lette vs nowe speake of an other poole whiche may well bee cauled a sea in the mydlande, and bee compared to the Caspian or Hircanian sea in the fyrme lande of *Asia*: with certeyne other lakes and pooles of freshe water.

The pronouciation of the Hebrewes and Arabians

The Moores and Arabians possessed Spayne

Howe the aspiration changeth the signification of wordes

Dyuers languages in the Ilande

A greate caue in the rocke of a mountayne.

A daungerus enterprise

Riuers deuoured of caues.

129

Whirlepooles and conflicte of waters.

Clowdes in the caue.

The Cataractes of Nilus

A standynge poole in the toppe of a hygh mountayne.

Ferne and bramblie bushes, growe only in coulde regions.

The Caspian and Hircanian sea.

THE EYGHTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



The prouynce of *Bainoa* beyng thrife as bygge as the three fyrft, that is, *Caizcimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caihabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiouani*, in the whiche there is a lake of falte, foure, and bytter water, as wee reade of the fea cauled *Caspium*, lyinge in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. We haue therefore named it *Caspium*, althoughe it not bee in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye swalowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the fea springeth into it, and also fuche as faule into it from the mountaines, are fwalowed vppe.

They thyncke that the caues therof, are fo large and deepe, that great fyfhes of the fea paffe by the fame into the lake. Emonge these fyfhes, there is one cauled *Tiburonus* whiche cutteth a man in funder by the myddest at one snappe with his teethe, and deuoueth hym. In the ryuer *Hozama*, runnyng by the chiefe citie of faynete *Dominicke*, these *Tiburoni* do fuintymes coome from the fea and deuoure manye of th[e] inhabitants: Especially fuche as do dayly ploonge them felues in the water to th[e] intent to keepe their bodyes verye cleane. The ryuers whiche faule into the lake, are these. From the Northe fyde, *Guanicabon*: From the Southe, *Xaccoei*: from the Easte, *Guannabo*: And from the West, *Occoa*. They faye that these ryuers are great and continuall: And that beynde these, there are. xx. other smaule ryuers whiche faule into this *Caspium*. Also on the Northe fyde within a furlonge of the lake, there are aboue twoo hundreth springes, occupyinge lykewise aboute a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coulde in foomer, freshe also, and holsome to bee droonke. These springes make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at hande ioynng with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here muste wee staye a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde his wyfe praying in a chapel builded by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie to satiffye his fleshely luste. His wyfe reproued hym, and put hym in remembraunce to haue respecte to the holye place. The woordes whiche shee spake to hym, were these: *Teitoca*, *Teitoca*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet: *Techeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angerie. *Guamechyna*, fygnifyeth god, *Techeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie. But the husbände halyng her by the arme, sayde: *Guaibba*, that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that to me if god be angerye? And with these woordes as he profered her violence, foodenlye he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle beyng striken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a relygious lyfe: In so muche that from thense foorth hee wolde neuer suffer the chappell to bee swepte or decked with any other mannes hande. By the fame myracle, manye of th[e] inhabitants and all the Christians beyng moued, resorted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good parte that the kynge suffered the reuenge of that reproche. Lette vs nowe retourne to *Caspium*. That falte lake is tossed with stormes and tempestes: And oftentimes drowneth smaule shyppes or fyfsher boates, and fwaloweth them vppe with the maryners: In so muche that it hath not byn harde of, that any man drowned by shypwrecke, euer ploonged vppe ageyne, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the deade bodyes of fuche as are drowned in the fea. These tempestes, are the deintie banquetes of the *Tiburones*. This *Caspium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*. In the myddest hereof, lyeth an Ilande named *Guarizacca*, to the whiche they resorte when they go a fysshynge: But it is not cultured. There is in the fame playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whose water is myxte of falte and freshe: And is therefore nother apte to bee droonke, nor yet to bee refused in vrgente necessitye. This conteineth in length. xxv. miles, and in breadth eight myles: In summe places also nyne or ten. It receaueth manye ryuers whiche haue no passage owte of the fame, but are fwalowed vppe as in the other. Water springeth out of the fea into this also: but in no great quantitie, whiche is the cause that it is so commyxt. In the fame prouynce towarde the Weste fyde, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre distante from *Caspius*. This th[e] inhabitants caule *Iainagua*. The fame falte lake, hath on the North fyde therof, an other named *Guaccaa*. This is but lyttle: as not past three or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of this, maye well bee droonke. On the fouth fyde of the falte lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbareo*, of three myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is freshe as of the two other. This lake bycause it hath no passage owte nor yet anye fwalowinge goulfes, conueyeth the superfluous waters to the fea if it be encreased with the streames whiche faule fuintymes more abondantly from the montaines. This is in the region of *Xamana* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*. There is an other cauled *Guaniba*, lying betwene the East and the South nere vnto the fyde of *Caspius*. This is ten myles in length and almoste rounde. There are furthermore many other smaule standyng pooles or lakes disparfed here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyll lette passe lest I shulde bee tedious in remainyng to longe

A great lake of soure and salte water.

Swalowinge goulfes.

Sea fysshes in lakes of the midlande
The deuouryng fysshe cauled Tiburonus.

The ryuers that faule into the lake Caspium.

CC. [two hundred] springes within the space of a furlonge.

A myracle.

The Indian language.

130

A kyng stricken dumme and lame by a myracle.

Such as are drowned in the lake are not cast vp ageyne.

The Ilande Guarizacca in the myddest of the poole.
A lake of salt and freshe water.

A lake of freshe water

A lake of ten myles in length

in one thyng. I wyll therefore make an ende with this addition, that in all these, great plentie of fyshe and foule is nourysshed. All these lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the East reacheth into the West a hundreth and twentie myles: beyng of breadth. xviii. myles where it is narrowest, and. xxv. where it is largest. Lookyng toward the West, it hath collaterally on the lefte hande the montaines of *Daiguani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines of *Caigua*, so cauled of the name of the vale it felfe. At the rootes of the montaines of *Caigua* toward the North fyde, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named. For it containeth in length, almoste two hundreth myles: And in bredth. xxx. wher it is largest, and about. xx. wher it is narrowest. This vale in summe parte therof, is cauled *Maguana*: In an other place, *Iguamu*, and elles where, *Hathathiei*. And forasmuche as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Hathathiei*, wee wyll sumwhat digresse from the discourse of this description, and entreate of a thinge so straunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therefore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleafure in fysshinge. Into his nettes chanced a younge fyshe of the kynde of those huge monsters of the sea whiche th[e]inhabitours caule *Manati*, not founde I suppose in owre seas nor knowen to owre men before this tyme. This fyshe is foure footed, and in shape lyke vnto a tortoyse althoughe shee be not couered with a shel, but with scales: And those of such hardnesse and couched in suche order, that no arrowe can hurte her. Her scales are byfet and defend with a thousand knobbes. Her backe is playne, and her heade vtterly lyke the heade of an oxe. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is slowe of mouynge: of condition meeke, gentell, affocycable and louing to mankind and of a maruelous fence or memorie as are the elephant and the delphyn. The king noriffhed this fyshe certeine daies at home with the breade of the countrey, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with suche other rootes as men are accustomed to eate. For when shee was yet but younge, he cast her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake also receaueth waters and casteth not the same fourth ageine. It was in tyme paste cauled *Guaurabo*: But is nowe cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this fyshe whiche wandered safelye in the same for the space of. xxv. yeares, and grewe excedyng byg. What so euer is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are muche inferior to the dooinges of this fysh: which for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Therefore when so euer any of the kynges familyers, especially suche as are knowen to her, reforte to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum*, *Matum*, then she (as myndefull of suche benefites as she hath receaued of men) lyftethe vp her heade and commeth to the place whither she is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of suche as feede her. If any desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of theyr intente, she boweth her felfe to them, therewith as it were gentelly inuitynge them to amount vppon her, and conueyeth them safely ouer. It hath byn seene that this monstros fyssh hath at one tyme safely caryed ouer tenne men singinge and playinge. But if by chaunce when she lyfteeed vp her heade she espyed any of the Christian men, she wolde immediatly ploonge downe ageyne into the water and refuse to obey, bycause she had once receaued iniury at the handes of a certeyne wanton younge man amonge the Christians, who hadde caste a sharpe darte at her, although she were not hurte by reason of the hardenes of her skynne beinge roughe and ful of skales and knobbes as we haue sayde. Yet dyd she beare in memorie th[e]iniurie she susteyned, with so gentell a reuenge requitynge th[e]ingratitude of hym which had delte with her so vngentelly. From that day when so euer she was cauled by any of her familiers, she wolde fyrst looke circumspectly about her, least any were present appareled after the maner of the Christians. She wolde oftentimes play and wrestle vppon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And especially with a younge man whom the kyng faouored well, beinge also accustomed to feede her. Shee wolde bee sumetymes as pleafaunt and full of play as it had byn a moonkey or marmafet: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and solace to the hole Ilande. For no smaule confluence aswell of the Christians as of th[e]inhabitantes, had dayly concourse to beholde so straunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation wherof was no lesse pleafaunt then woonderfull. They say that the meate of this kynde of fyssh, is of good taste: And that many of them are engendered in the seas therabout. But at the length, this pleafaunt playfelowe was loste, and caryed into the sea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced so terrible a tempest of wind, and rayne, with such fluds enfewing that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reason of this tempest, the ryuer *Attibunicus* so ouerflowed the bankes, that it fylled the hole vale and myxt it felfe with all the other lakes. At which tyme also, this gentell *Matum* and pleafaunte companyon, folowyng the vehemente course and faule of the fluddes, was therby restored to his oulde moother and natyue waters, and fence that tyme neuer seene ageyne. Thus hauynge digressed sufficiently, let vs nowe coome to the situation of the vale. It hathe collaterally the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam* which brynge it to the South sea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* towarde the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycause that before the memorie of man, the prediceffours and auncestours of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is descended by right of inheritaunce, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of this kyng, we haue spoken largely in the fyrst narration of the Ilande in the fyrst Decade. This vale is of length from the East to the West, a hundreth and fourescore myles: And of

A playne of a hundreth and twentie miles

A playne of two hundreth myles in length.

The maruelous fysshe Manati.

131

A monster of the sea fedde with mans hande.

Matum.

A fyshe caryeth men ouer the lake

A maruelous thyng.

The ryuer *Attibunicus*.

The situation of the great vale.

The mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam*.

The greate vale of *Guarionexius*.

132

Mountaynes.
Vales.
Hylles.
Playnes.
Ryuers.
Golde in all
mountaynes, and
golde and fyssh
in all ryuers.

Salte bayes.

Howe the Ilande
is diuided with
mountaynes.

Golde.

The ryuers haue
theyr increase
from the caues of
the mountaynes
No hurtful or
raueninge beast
in the Ilande.

The autours
excuse.

By what means
the people of the
Iland are gretly
consumed.

The plesures of
Hispaniola.

The region of
Cotohi, situate in
the Clowdes.

A playne in the
toppes of
mountaynes

The hygher, the
coulde.

Moderate coulde
in the mountaynes.

Ferne of
maruelous bignes

Golde.

133

Th[e]inhabitan-
tes of Hispaniola
can abyde no labour
nor coulde.

The Iland of
Creta or Candie,
vnder the
dominion of the
Venetians.

breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher it is narowest, and fiftie where it is brodeste. It begynneth from the region *Canabocoa* by the prouinces of *Huhabo* and *Caiabo*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Mariena*. It lyeth in the myddeft betwene the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, and the mountaynes of *Cahonai* and *Cazacubuna*. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the maiestie of mountaynes, frutefulness of vales, pleasauntnesse of hylles, and delectableness of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnyng through the same. There are no fides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fyffhes, except only one ryuer which from th[e] originall therof, with the sprynges of the fame breakyng foorth of the mountaynes, commeth owt false and so contynueth vntyll it peryshe. This ryuer is cauled *Bahuan*: and runneth through the myddle of the region *Maguana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it felse away vnder the grounde by fume passages of playster or false earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable false bayes, wherof we wyl speake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers and fyue prouinces. There is also an other particion, whiche is this. The hole Ilande confysteth of the toppes of foure mountaynes which diuide it by the myddeft from the East to the weste. In all these is abundaunce of nooryshyng moysture and greate plentie of golde: of the caues also of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptie them selues) haue theyr originall and increase. There are lykewyse in them horryble dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noysome beaste founde in it: Nor yet any rauenyng foure footed beaste. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no craftie foxes, nor deuouring woolfes. All thynges are blessed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receaued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all theyr Zemes and Images of deuylles being reiected and vtterly out of memorie. If I chauce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to repeate one thyng dyuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desyre yowre holynes therewith not to bee offended. For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these thinges, mee seemeth that I am herewith so affected, that for verye ioy I feele my mynde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo as were the Sibylles, whereby I am enforced to repeate the same ageyne: Especially when I confyder howe farre the amplitude of owre religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet amonge these so many blessed and fortunate thynges, this one greueth me not a lyttle: That these simple poore men neuer brought vp in labour, do dayly peryshe with intollerable trauayle in the golde mynes: And are therby brought to fuche desperation, that many of them kyll them selues, hauyng no regarde to the procreation of chylde. In so much that women with chylde, perceauyng that they shall bryng foorth such as shalbe slaues to the Christians, vse medecines to destroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kynges letters patentes it was decreed that they shulde bee fet at lybertie, yet are they constrayned to ferue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is woonderfully extenuate. They were once rekened to bee aboute twelue hundreth thousande heades: But what they are nowe, I abhorre to rehearse. We wyl therefore let this passe: and returne to the pleasures of *Hispaniola*. In the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, which are in maner in the myddeft of the Ilande in the prouince of *Caiabo* (where we sayd to bee the greatest plentie of natyue golde) there is a region named *Cotohi*, situate in the clowdes, enuironed with the toppes of hyghe mountaynes, and well inhabited. It consisteth of a playne of. xxv. myles in length, and. xv. in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that these mountaynes, maye seeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yeare: as the Springe, Soomer, Autumne, and wynter. Here the herbes waxe wythered, the trees loofe theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche thynges (as we haue sayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The foyle of this playne bryngeth foorth ferne and bramble buffhes bearyng blacke berries or wylde raspes, which two are tokens of coulde regions. Yet is it a fayre region: for the coulde therof is not very sharpe: neyther dooth it afflicte th[e] inhabitants with froste or snowe. They argue the frutefulness of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or steames are bygger then a spere or iauelen. The fydes of those mountaynes are ryche in golde. Yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the fame, bycause it shalbe needefull to haue apparelled myners, and such as are vsed to labour. For th[e] inhabitants lyuyng contented with lyttle, are but tender: And can not therefore away with labour or abyde any coulde. There are two ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the toppes of the present mountaynes. One of these is named *Comoiaxa*, whose course is towarde the West, and fauleth into the chanell of *Naiba*. The other is cauled *Tircotus*: which runnyng towarde the East, ioyneth with the ryuer of *Iunna*. In the Ilande of *Creta* (nowe cauled Candie) as I passed by in my legacie to the Soldane of Alcayr or Babylon in Egypte, the Venetians toulde me that there laye fuche a region in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee more frutefull of wheate corne then any other region of the Iland. But forasmuch as once the Cretenses rebelled agenst the Venetians, and by reason of the streight and narowe way to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes against th[e] auctoritie of the Senate, and at the length beinge forweryed with warres, rendered the fame, the Senate commaunded that it shulde bee lefte deserte, and the streights of th[e] enter-

ances to bee flopped, leste any shulde ascende to the region without their permiffyon. Yet in the yeare of Christe M. D. ii. lycence was graunted to the husband men to tyll and manure the region, on fuche condition that no fuche as were apte to the warres, myght enter into the same. There is also an other region in *Hispaniola* named *Cotohy* after the same name. This diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of *Vhabo* and *Caiabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines. But bycause it is baren, it is not mucche inhabited. Yet is it richest in golde: For the originall of the abundaunce of gold, begiunneth here: In so mucche that it is not gathered in smaule graines and sparkes as in other places: but is founde hole, massie, and pure, emonge certaine softe stonnes and in the vaines of rockes, by breakynge the stonnes wherof, they folowe the vaynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the vayne of golde is a lyuinge tree: And that the same by all wayes that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe pores and passages of the yearth, putteth fourth branches cuen vnto the vppermost part of the earth, and ceaseth not vntyl it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time, it sheweth fourth certaine bewtiful colours in the steede of floures, rounde stonnes of golden earth in the steede of frutes, and thynne plates in steede of leaues. These are they whiche are disparcelled throughout the hole Ilande by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the springes owte of the montaines, and violent faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that such graines are not engendered where they are gathered: especially on the dry land: but otherwise in the riuers. They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth and there taketh nourishment of increase. For the deaper that they dygge, they fynd the trunckes therof to be so mucche the greater as farre as they maye folowe it for abundaunce of water springing in the montaines. Of the braunches of this tree, they fynde summe as smaule as a threde, and other as bygge as a mannes fynger accordynge to the largeness or straightness of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sumetimes chaunced vpon hole caues susteyned and borne vp as it were with golden pyllars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the branches ascende: The whiche beyng fylled with the substaunce of the truncke creapyng from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe owte. It is oftentimes diuided by encounterynge with sum kynde of harde stone. Yet is it in other clyftes noorished by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But now perchappes yowe will aske me what plentie of golde is brought from thense. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande that onely owte of *Hispaniola*, the sum of foure hundreth and sumtymes fyue hundreth thousande ducates of gold is brought yearely into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion dewe to the kynges Exchequer, which amounteth to the sum of a hundreth and fourscore, or fourescore and ten thousande Castellanes of golde, and sumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Ilande of *Cuba* and *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwise cauled *Burichena*) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue sayde thus mucche of golde, it shall suffyce. We wyll nowe therefore speake sumwhat of salte wherwith wee may season and referue fuche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of *Bainoa*, in the montaynes of *Daiagu*, about twelue myles distant from the salte lake cauled *Caspius*, there are salte bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as stonnes, also clearer and whiter then cristall. There are lykewyse fuche salte baies whiche growe woonderfully in *Laletania* (now cauled *Catalonia*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadona* the chiefe ruler in that region. But fuche as knowe theym bothe, affyrme that these of *Bainoa* are moste notable. They saye also that this can not be clefte without wedges and beatelles of Iron. But that of *Laletana*, maye easlye bee broken as I my selfe haue proued. They therefore compare this to fuche stonnes as may easlye bee broken: And the other to marble. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, in the regions of *Iguanama*, *Caiacoa*, and *Guariagua*, there are sprynges whose waters are of maruelous nature, beyng in the superfythial or vppermoste parte, freshe: In the myddeft, myxte of salte and freshe: And in the lowest parte, salte and sower. They thincke that the salte water of the sea, issheweth owte softely, and the freshe, to springe owte of the mountaines. The one fauleth downe and the other ryfeth: and are not therefore so vniuersally myxt wherby the one may vtterly corrupt th[e]other. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of these springes, he shal perceaue the ground there to bee so hollowe, that the reboundyng noyse of a horsman comminge may be harde for the space of three myles, and a foote man one myle. In the laste region towarde the southe named *Guaccaiaria*, in the lordshyp of *Zauana*, they say there are certeyne wyld men whiche lyue in the caues and dennes of the montaynes, contented onely with wilde fruites. These men neuer vsed the companye of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becoome tame. They lyue without any certaine dwellynge places, and with owte tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in ould tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are withowte any certaine language. They are sumtymes feene. But owre men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they coome to the fyght of men, and perceyue any makynge toward them, they flye swifter then a harte. Ye they affyrme them to bee swifter then grehoundes. What one of these folytarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is that owr men hauyng granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke wods, certen of them repaired thither in the mooneth of September in the yeare. M. D. xiiii. In the meane tyme, one of these wylde men came leapyng owte of the woodde. And approchyng sumwhat toward them with smyling countenaunce, soodenly snatched vppe a childe of therse beyng the soonne of the owner of the graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the

Pure and massie golde in the region of Cotoy.

The vaine of golde, is a lyuinge tree.

These colers or floures are cauled Marchasites, Pyrites.

The roote of the golden tree.

The braunches of the golden tree.

Caues susteyned with pyllers of golde.

The stonnes of the golde mynes.

What gold is brought yerely from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salte of the mountaynes, very hard and cleare.

134

Salt as hard as stonnes.

Sprynges of salt, freshe and sower water.

Hollowe caues in the grounde

Certeyne wyld men lyuing in caues and dennes

Men without a certeyne language

Men as swift as greihounds
A wyld man runneth away with a chyld

Pitche of the
rocke.

Pitche of two
kyndes of trees.
The pine tree.
The tree Copeia.

The leafe of a tree
in the steede of
paper.

They beleue that
leaues do speake.
A pretie storie.

135

Ignorance causeth
admiration.

The leafe wherin
they wryte.

A stronge colour
of the iuise of an
apple.

An Herbe whose
smoke is poyson.

Ilande. He ranne away with the childe, and made fignes to owre men to folowe hym. Many folowed afwel of owre men as of the naked inhabytantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleasaunt wanderer perceaued that the Christians ceased to pursue hym, he lefte the childe in a crosse waye by the whiche the fwyneheardes were accustomed to dryue the fwyne to their pasture. Shortly after, a fwynehearde founde the chyld and brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge hym felfe for sorowe, supposynge that wylde man to haue byn one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his soonne was nowe deuowred. In the same Ilande they gather pytche whiche sweateth owte of the rockes, beyng muche harder and fourer then the pitche of the tree: and is therfore more commodious to calke or defende shyppes ageynste the woormes cauled *Bromas*, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This Ilande also bryngeth fourth pitche in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not speake of the pyne tree, bycause it is engendered and knowen in maner euery where. Lette vs therfore speake sumwhat of the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitche is lykewyse gathered of it as of the pyne tree: althoughe summe saye that it is gathered by distylling or droppynge of the woode when it is burnt. It is a straunge thyng to here of the leafe thereof: and how necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to be thought that this is the tree in the leaues wherof the Chaldeans (beyng the fyrste fynders of letters) expressed their myndes before the vse of paper was knowen. This leafe is a spanne in breadth and almost round. Owre men write in them with pynnes or nedles or any fuche instrumentes made of metall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee lawghed at what owre men haue perswaded the people of the Ilande as towchynge this leafe. The fymple foules beleue that at the comandement of owre men, leaues do speake and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of owre men dwellynge in the cite of *Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, delyuered to his seruante (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne rosted connies, (whiche they caule *Vtias* beyng no bygger then myse) wyllynge hym to carie the same to his frende whiche dwelte further within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were that he was therto constrayned through hunger, or entysed by appetite, deuoured three of the counnies by the waye. He to whome they were fente, writ to his frynde in a leafe howe manye he receaued. When the mayster had looked a whyle on the leafe in the presence of the seruant, he sayde thus vnto hym. Ah soonne, where is thy faythe? Coulede thy gredye appetyte preuayle so muche with the as to cause the to eate the connies commytted to thy fydelytie? The poore wretche trembelynge and greatlye amafed, confessed his faute: And therwith desyred his mayster to tell hym howe he knewe the treweth therof. This leafe (quod he) whiche thou browghest me, hath toulde me all. Then hee further rehearsed vnto hym the houre of his coomynge to his frende, and lykewyse of his departynge when hee retourned. And thus they meryly deceaue these feely foules and keepe them vnder obedyence: In so muche that they take owre men for goddes, at whose coommandement leaues doo disclose fuche thynges as they thyncke mooste hyd and secrete. Bothe the fydes of the leafe receaueth the formes of letters euen as dooeth owre paper. It is thycker then double parchment, and meruelous tough. While it is yet florysshynge and newe, it sheweth the letters whyte in greene. And when it is drye, it becommeth whyte and harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters waxe yelowe. It dooeth not corrupte or putryfy: nor yet loofeth the letters though it bee wette: nor by any other meanes excepte it bee burnte. There is an other tree named *Xagua*: the iuise of whose foure apple beyng of a darke redde coloure, stayneth and coloureth what soo euer is touched therwith: And that soo firmly, that noo wasshyng canne take it awaye for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuise loofeth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of good tast. There is also an herbe whose smoke (as we haue reherfed the like before of a certen woodde) is deadly poison. On a tyme when the kynges affembled together and conspired the destruction of owre men, whereas they durste not attempte th[e]nterprise by open warre, theyr diuise was, priuilye to lay many bundels of those herbes in a certeyne house, whiche shortly after they intended to fet on fyer, to th[e]intent that owre men makynge haste to quenshe the same, myght take theyr death with the smoke therof. But theyr purposed practyse beyng bewrayed, th[e]autours of the diuise were punysshed accordyngly. Nowe (moste holy father) for as much as yowre holyneffe wryteth that what soo euer we haue written of the newe worlde, dooth please yowe ryght well, wee wyll reherse certeyne thynges owte of order, but not greatly from owre purpose. Of the fettyng the rootes of *Maizium*, *Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and such other beyng theyr common foode, and of th[e]use of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But by what meanes they were fyrste applyed to the commoditie of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to cntreate sumwhat hercof.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



THEY saye that the fyrste inhabitours lyued contented with the rootes of dates, and Magueans, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto that which is commonly cauled Sengrene or Orpin. Also the rootes of Guaiegans, whiche are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto puffes of the earth or muffheromes. They did lykewise eate *Guaieros*, lyke vnto perfeneppes: *Cibaiois* lyke nuttes, *Cabaioes* and *Macoanes*, lyke vnto onions, with dyuers other fuche rootes. They say that after many yeares, a certeyne *Boition*, that is, a wyfe oulde man, sawe vppon the bankes fyde, a bushe lyke vnto fenel: and transplantyng the roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by noorysshynge it in gardens. This was the begynnyng of *Iucca*, which at the fyrste was deadly poyson to all fuche as dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it to bee of pleasaunte taste, they determyned many wayes to proue the vse therof: And at the length founde by experience that beinge fodde or fryed, it was lesse hurtefull: by whiche meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the veneme lyinge hyd in the iuse of the roote. Thus by dryinge, faltyng, seafonyng, and otherwyse temperyng it, they brought it to theyr fine breade which they caule *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of manne then breade made of wheate, bycause it is of easyer digestion. The same is to bee vnderstoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Maizium* whiche they haue chofen for their chiefe meate amonge the feedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the doughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (with fuche other corne as are nowe most in vse amonge men) in Egypte of certeyne graynes taken owt of the mudde dryuen from the mountaynes of Ethiopia by th[e] increase of the ryuer *Nilus*, and lefte in the plaine at such tyme as *Nilus* reforted ageyne to his chanel. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrst nourished and increafed such chofen feedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is knowen by theyr leaues and floures. One kynde of these, is cauled *Guanaguax*. This is whyte boothe within and without. An other named *Guaraguei* is of vyolet colour without and white within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caule *Zazaueios*. These are redde without and whyte within. *Squiuetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunna*, is all together of vyolet coloure. *Hobos* is yelowe booth of skynne and inner substance. There is an other named *Atibunieix*: The skynne of this is of vyolet colour, and the substance whyte. *Aniguamar*, hath his skynne also of vyolet coloure, and is whyte within. *Guaccaracca*, hath a whyte skynne, and the substance of vyolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearfall of these, I shal prouoke the spurres of malicious persons ageynst me which wyll scorne these ovr doinges for that we haue wrytten of many such smaule thynges to a prince occupied in fuche weyghty affayres, as vnto yowre holynes vppon whose shulders resteth the burthen of the hole Christian worlde. But I wolde aske of these malycious enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether *Plinie* and such other famous wryters, when they dyrected and dedicated such thynges to kynges and princes, entended only to profyte them to whom they consecrated the frute of theyr knowlege. They sumtymes intermyxte famous thynges with obscure thynges, lyght with heauie, and greate with smaule, that by the foortheraunce of princes, theyr vniuersall posteritie myght enioye the fruition of the knowlege of thynges. At other tymes also, beinge intent about particular thynges, and defyrous of newe thynges, they occupied them selues iu the searching of particular tractes and coastes, with fuche thynges as nature brought forth in the same, by this meanes to coome the better to more absolute and vniuersal knowlege. Let theym therefore contemne owre doinge: And wee wyll laugh to scorne, not theyr ignoraunce and slothfulnes, but pernicious curiounes: And therewith hauynge pitie of theyr frowarde dispositions, wyll commit them to the venemous serpent of whom enuie tooke his fyrst originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly contente vs that these thynges do please yowre holynes: And that yowe doo not dispise owre simple vestures wherwith we haue only weaued togyther and not adourned, gathered and not described such maruelous thynges in the garnyshynge wherof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunnyng. Owre desyre is none other but herein for yowre sake to doo owre endeouere that these thynges maye not peryshe. Let euery man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the sheepe or bullocke foulde in the market, nothyng remayneth in the euenyng, bycause the shulder pleaseth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, fume haue most phantasie to the bowels, and fume to the feete. Thus hauynge enough wandered, lette vs returne to owre purpose and declare with what wordes they salute the kynges chylde when they are fyrst borne: or howe they apply the begynnyng of theyr lyues to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therefore when the kyng hath a sonne borne, such as dwel neare about his pallaice or vyllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where

The kyndes of frutes wherwith the[e] inhabitantes lyued fyrst.

Necessitie the mother of all artes.

136

The fine breade *Cazabbi*, made of the rootes of *Iucca*.

Howe *Ceres* fyrst founde wheate and barley in Egypte.

The rootes of ages

The autours excuse.

Plinie.

By what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

The names and tyttles of the Romane Emperours.

137

Howe they make theyr testamentes

So dyd grea[t] Alexander

The kynges wyues and concubines are buried with hym.

They burie theyr iewels with them.

A dreame of an other lyfe after this.

Where it rayneth but seldome.

Where it rayneth much.

Variable motiens of the elementes. The colonies and vyllages which the Spanyardes haue buylded

The other Ilandes about hispaniola.

The Ilande Arethusa.

A sprynge runnyng vnder the sea frome hispaniola to Arethusa.

138

The Iland of Sancti Iohannis

The Ilande of Cuba.

one saluteth the newe borne chylde with one name, and an other with an other name. God faue the thowe shyninge lampe sayth one: An other cauleth him bryght and cleare. Sume name him the victourer of his enemies: and other sume, the puiffaunt conquerour descended of bludde royall, and bryghter then gold, with dyuers other suche vayne names. Therefore lyke as euery of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus*, *Parthicus*, *Armenicus Dacicus*, *Gothicus*, and *Germanicus*, accordynge to the titles of theyr parentes and auncestours, euen so by th[e] imposition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beuchicus Anaca[u]choa* the lord of the region of *Xaragua* (of whome and of the wyfe woman *Anachaona* his syster, we haue spoken largely in the fyrste Decade) was cauled by all these names folowynge: *Tureigna Hobin*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, a kyng shynynge as bryght as laton. *Starei*, that is, bryghte: *Huiho*, hyghnesse: *Duihcynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all these names and more then fortye other suche, dooeth kyng *Beuchius* magnifye hym selfe as often as he commaundeth any thyng to bee doone or caufeth any proclamation to bee made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leaue owte any of these names, the king thynketh it to founde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is also of other. Howe fondely they vse them selues in makynge their testamentes, we wyll nowe declare. They leaue th[e] inheritaunce of their kyngedomes to th[e] eldest soones of their eldest systers. If shee fayle, to th[e] eldest of the seconde syster and so of the thirde if the second also faile. For they are owte of doubtte that those children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remayne none of their systers children, they leaue th[e] inheritaunce to their broothers. And if they faile, it descendeth to their owne soones. Laste of all, if al these faile, they assygne it to the woorthiest, as to hym that is of greatest power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their subiectes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to bee buried with hym. *Anachaona* the syster of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of suche wisedome and cunnyng that in makynge of rhymes and balettes shee was counted a prophetisse emonge the beste, commaunded, that emonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrest (whose name was *Guanahattabenechina*) shulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her waytyng maydes with her. Shee wolde also haue appointed dyuers other to that offyce, if shee had not byn otherwise perfwaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of faincte Fraunces order whiche chaunced then to bee presente. They faye that this *Guanahattabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in bewtie. She buried with her all her ieweltes and twentie of her best ornamentes. Their custome is, to place befyde euery of them in their sepultures, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Cazabbi*. In *Xaragua*, the regyon of this kyng *Beuchius*, and in *Hazua*, parte of the regyon of *Caiabo*, also in the fayre vale of salte and freshe lakes, and lykewise in the region of *Yaquino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome. In al these regyons are fosses or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conueye the waters in order to water their fyeldes, with no lesse arte then doo th[e] inhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcién* in *Spartaria* for the seldome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of *Bainoa* from *Caiabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guacciarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth. Also the confynes of the chiefe citie named faincte Dominike are moister then is necessary. In other places, it rayneth moderately. There are therefore in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, dyuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of manye other regions. Of their colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande we haue spoken suffycientelye beefore. They haue fence that tyme buylded these vyllages: *Portus Platae*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanoua*, *Azuam*, and *Saluaterra*. Hauynge fayde thus muche of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* the moother and ladye of the other Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the moste bewtifull wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the sea, let vs nowe entreate sumwhat of her Nymphes and faire *Nercides* whiche waite vpon her and adourne her on euery fyde. Wee wyll therefore begynne at the nearest cauled the newe *Arethusa*, soo named of the fontayne *Arethusa* in the Ilande of Sicilie. This is famous by reason of a sprynge: but otherwyse vnprofytable. Owre men named it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycause it hath onely twoo trees groynge in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fountaine that commeth from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* throughe the secrete passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh foorth in this Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the sea from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh foorth in the Ilande of Sicilie in the fontayne *Arethusa*. That the fontayne of this newe *Arethusa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, it is manifest hereby, that the water issheuyng owte of the fontayne, bryngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They faye that the fontayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yamiroa* in the region of *Guacciarima* confynynge with the land of *Zauana*. This Ilande is not paste a myle in circuite, and commodious for fyfsher men. Directly towarde the Easte (as it were the porter keyynge the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue spoken largely beefore. This aboundeth with golde: and in fruitfull foile, is equall with her moother *Hispaniola*. In this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, whiche applye them selues to gatheryng of golde. Towarde the west on the Northe fyde, great *Cuba* (for the longenesse therof, longe

supposed to be the continent or firme lande) wardeth owre *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And from the Easte to the Weste, is diuyded in the myddeft with the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hispaniola* and the other lyinge on the South fyde of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the fayde Tropyke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers supposed to bee vnhabitable and defert by reason of the feruent heate of the soonne in that clyme as they coniectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion. They affyrme that rytcher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hispaniola*. They saye also that euen nowe while I wryte these thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the meltyng, amountynge to the quantitie of a hundreth and fourescore thousande Castellans of gold, an argument fully of great rycheffe. *Iamaica* is more towarde the Southe then these: And is a pleasaunte and fruitefull Ilande, of foyle apte for corne, grasses, and fettes, it confysteth of onely one mountayne. Th[e] inhabitants are warrellyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to Sicilie in bygnesse. They whiche of late searched it more exactly, saye that it is sumwhat lesse: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and precious stonnes, as the like was supposed of *Cuba* at the begynnynge. The Ilande of *Guadalupea* (fyrste named *Caraqueira*) lyinge on the Southe fyde of *Hispaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as wee reade of great Britanye nowe cauled Englande, and Caledonia nowe cauled Scotlande) beinge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Anima Album*, whose fume is holsome ageynst reumes and heauynesse of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to conteyne a certayne sweete meale. As owre husbande men are accustomed to referue chestenuttes and fuche other harde frutes all the wynter, soo do they the dates of this tree, beyng muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, Pyne trees of the beste kynde, and fuche other deyntie dyffhes of nature, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. Ye, they thyncke that th[e] inhabitants of other Ilandes, had their feedes of soo many pleasaunt frutes from hense. For the Canibales beinge a wylde and wanderynge people, and ouer runnyng all the countreys aboute them to hunte for mannes fleshe, were accustomed to bryng home with them what so euer they founde straunge or profytable in any place. They are intractable, and wyll admytte no straungiers. It shall therefore bee needefull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vse to inueneme their arrowes. When the men go foorth of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coastes ageynst fuche as attempte to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym selfe perswaded me, as I haue sayde in the fyrste decade. This Ilande hath also fruitefull mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nouryssheth honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered among the briers and bramble bushes. Aboute. xviii. myles Eastward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which our men named *Desiderata*, beyng. xx. myles in circuite and verye fayre. Also aboute ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Galanta*, beyng thirtie myles in circuite and playne. It was so named for the neatnesse and bewtifulnes therof. Nyne myles distant from *Guadalupea* toward the East, there are fyxe smaule Ilandes named *Todos Sanctos* or *Barbata*. These are full of rockes and barren: Yet necessarye to bee knowen to fuche as vse to trauayle the seas of these coastes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea*. xxxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monsserratus*, conteynynge in circuite fortye myles, hauynge also in it a mountayne of notable heygth. The Ilande named *Antiqua*, distante from *Guadalupea* thirtie myles, is aboute fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonus* the soonne and heyre of *Christopher Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he lefte in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late amonge the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the lefte fyde of *Hispaniola* towarde the Southe, neare vnto the hauen *Beata*, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell maruelous thynges of the monsters of the sea aboute this Ilande, and especially of the tortoyfes. For they saye that they are bygger then greate rounde targettes. At fuche tyme as the heate of nature moueth them too generation, they coome foorth of the sea: And makynge a deepe pytte in the sande, they laye three or foure hundreth egges therein. When they haue thus emptied their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the sande ageyne into the pytte, as maye suffyce to couer the egges: And soo resorte ageyne to the sea, nothyng carefull of their successyon. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of these beastes, there creapeth owte a multitude of tortoyfes, as it were pyffemares swarmynge owte of an ante hyll: And this onely by the heate of the soonne withowte any helpe of their parentes. They saye that their egges are in maner as bygge as geese egges. They also compare the fleshe of these tortoyfes, to be equall with veale in taste. There are befylde these, innumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet searched: nor yet is it greatly necessarye to fyfte this meale so fynely. It maye suffyce to vnderstonde that there are large landes and many regyons whiche shal hereafter receaue owre nations, tounes, and maners: and therewith embrace owre relygion. The Troyans dydde not foodenly replenyfhe Asia, the Tyrians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phoenices Spayne.

Habitable regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde
mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of
Iamaica.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

England and
Scotlande.
The gumme
cauled Anime
album.
Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

Whereby it was
thought that there
were Ilandes of
women.

Hony in trees
and rockes.

The Ilande
desiderata.
The Ilande
Galanta.

The Ilandes of
Todos Sanctos or
Barbata.

The Ilande
monsserratus.

139

The Ilande
Antiqua.

The Ilande
Portus Bellus
Great Tortoyfes.
The generation of
Tortoyfes.

The egges of
Tortoyfes.

Innumerable
Ilandes.

Troians.
Tirians.
Greekes.
Phenitians

The North
Ilandes.

The Ilandes of
the south sea.
The Iland of
pearles.

Wylde beasts
must be tamed
with the rod.

As touchynge the Ilandes which lye on the north syde of *Hifpaniola*, I haue let passe to speake. For albeit they are commodious for tyllage and fysshynge, yet are they leste of the Spanyardes as poore and of smaule value. We wyll nowe therefore take owre leaue of this owlde *Tethis* with her moyft and watery Nymphes: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance the bewetifull ladye of the South sea rychely crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treasure. In my epistell booke whiche I sente vnto yowre holynes this last yeare, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche passed ouer the daungerous mountaynes towarde the South sea, learned by report that in the prospect of those coastes there laye an Ilande aboundynge with pearles of the greateft forte: And that the kynge therof was ryche and of great power, infestynge with warres the other kynges his bortherers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was leste vntouched by reason of the ragynge tempestes whiche troubled that South sea three moonethes in the yeare. But it is nowe better knowen to owre men, who haue nowe also brought that fierce kynge to humanitie: and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke sanctified with the water of baptisme with all his famelie and kyngedome. It shall not therefore bee from owre purpose to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what meanes these thynges were so happely atchyued.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.

An expedition to
the Ilande of
Dites in the south
sea



The Iland of
Margaritea.

Os Draconis.
Paria.

140

A conflict.

THE arryuall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Dariena*, he gaue commaundment that one *Gaspar Moralis* shuld take in hande th[e]xpedition to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therefore tooke his vyage fyrst to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaschus* beefore had concyled and left fryndes to the Christians. They frendely and magnifically enterteined owr men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to passe ouer into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles which in the latin tonge are cauled *Margaritæ*. For the fyrst cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paria*, in the which also is founde greate plentie of pearles. *Gaspar* brought with hym onely threescore armed men to the Ilande, for that he coulde conuey ouer no greater number by reason of the smaules and narrownes of theyr boates or barkes which they caule *Culchas*, made of one hole piece of tymber as we haue fayde before. The kynge of the Ilande came foorth ageynst them fiercely with cruell and threatenynge countenance, and with a great bande of armed men cryng in maner of a larome and in token of the battayle, *Guazzauara*, *Guazzauara*, which is as much to faye as, battayle ageynst the enemye: And is as it weare a watch worde to giue th[e]onset, wherwith also they threwe theyr dartes. For they haue not th[e]use of bowes. They were so obstinate and desperate that they assayed owre men with foure *Guazzauaras*, that is, battayles. At the length owre men with certeyne of *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* men (being eoulde enemies to this kynge of the Ilande) gotte the vpper hande by reason they assayed the kynge foodenly and vnwares. Yet was he determyned to assemble a greater power, and once ageyne to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwyse perswaded by the kynges his bortherers which counfayled him to gyue ouer and submyt hym selfe: sumtyme by th[e]example of them selues and other threatenynge the destruction of his flooryshynge kyngedome: And otherwhyles declarynge vnto hym the humanitie and gentelnes of owre men, by whose frendship he might obteyne honoure and quyetnes to hym and his: wyllyng hym furthermore to consider what chaunced vnto them which the yeare before resysted and aduentured the hafarde of the battayle as dyd these kynges, *Poncha*, *Pocchorrosa*, *Quarequa*, *Chiapes*, and *Tumaccus* with such other. By these perswasions, the king submytted hym selfe and came frendely to owre men whom he conducted to his palaice which they say to be maruelously adourned and princelyke. As soone as they entered into the pallaice, he brought foorth a basket of curious woorkemanshyp and full of pearles which he gaue them. The summe of these pearles amounted to the weyght of a hundreth and ten poundes after. viii. vneces to the pounde. Beinge ageyne rewarded of owre men with such tryfles as they brought with them of purpose, as garlandes of Christall and glasse and other counterfet stonnes of dyuers colours, with lookyng glasses also and laton belles, and especially two or three Iren hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapes of gold) he thought hym selfe abundantly recompensed. They laughe owre men to fcorne that they wyll departe with so great and necessarie a thyng for any summe of golde: affyrmyng an axe or hatchet to bee profytable for manye vses of men: and that golde serueth onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be greatly necessary. Beynge therefore ioyfull and gladde of the frendeshyppe of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand and brought

The kynge of the
Ilande of *Dites*
submitteth
himselfe.
The kynges
pallaice.

A hundreth and
ten pounde weight
of pearles.

him with certeine of his familiars to the highest towre of his palaiſe, from whence they myght proſpecte the mayne ſea. Then caſtyng his eyes about hym on euery ſide, and lookyng towards the Eaſte, he ſayde vnto them. Beholde here lyeth open before yowe the infynite ſea extended beyond the foonne beames. Then tournyng hym toward the Southe and Weſte, he ſygnified vnto them that the lande which laye before their eyes, the toppes of whoſe great montaynes they myght ſee, was exceedyng large. Then coomynge ſumwhat nearer, he ſayde: Beholde theſe Ilandes on the ryght hande and on the lefte, whiche all obeye vnto owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and bleſſed, if yowe caule thoſe landes bleſſed whiche abounde with golde and perle[s]. Wee haue in this Ilande lyttle plentie of golde: But the deepe places of all the ſeas aboute theſe Ilandes, are full of perles: wherof yowe ſhall receaue of me as many as yow wyll requyre, ſo that ye perfyſte in the bonde of frendſhyppe whiche yowe haue begunne. I greatly deſyre yowre frendſhyppe, and wolde gladlye haue the fruition of yowre thynges, whiche I fette muche more by then myllyons of perles. Yowe ſhall therefore haue no cauſe to doubte of any vnſaythfulneſſe or breache of frendſhyppe on my behalfe. Owre men gaue hym lyke frendly woordes: and encouraged hym with many fayre promyſſes to doo as he had ſayde. When owre men were nowe in a redyneſſe to departe, they couenaunted with hym to paye yearely to the greate kyng of Caſtyle a hundreth pounce weyghte of perles. He gladlye agreed to their requeſt, and tooke it for no great thyng: nor yet thought hym ſelfe any whitte the more to becoome tributarie. With this kyng they founde fuche plentie of hartes and connies, that owre men ſtondyng in their houſes myght kylle as manye as them lyfte with their arrowes. They lyue heare verye pleaſauntly, hauyng greate plentie of al thynges neceſſary. This Ilande is ſcarſely fyxe degrees diſtant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the ſame maner of breade made of rootes and the graine of *Maizium*, and wyne made of feedes and fruites, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and in other places aſwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande. This kyng is nowe baptiſed with all his familye and ſubiectes. His deſyre was at his baptiſme, to bee named *Petrus Arias* after the name of the gouernour. When owre men departed, he accompanied them to the ſea ſyde and furnyſhed them with boates to retourne to the continent. Owre men diuided the perles emonge them, referuyng the fyfte portion to be delyuered to th[e]offycers of the kynges Exchequer in thoſe partes. They ſaye that theſe perles were maruelous precious, faire, oriente, and exceedyng bygge: In ſo muche that they broughte manye with theym bygger then hafell nuttes. Of what price and value they myghte bee, I conſyder by one perle the which *Paulus* prediceffour to yowre holines, bowght at the ſecond hand of a marchant of Venyce for foure and forty thouſande ducates. Yet emonge thoſe whiche were brought from this Ilande, there was one bought euen in *Dariena* for a thouſande and two hundreth Caſtelans of golde. This was almoſt as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the gouernoure, who gaue it to that noble and faithfull woman his wyfe, of whoſe maner of departure with her husbnde, wee haue made mention before. Wee muſte then needes thinke that this was verye precious which was bowght ſo deare emonge fuche a multitude of perles where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes and at the leaſt by ounces. It is alſo to be thought that the Venecian marchaunte boughte his for no great ſum of mony in the Eaſt parts. But he ſould it the dearer for that he chaunced to lyue in thoſe laſciuous and wanton dayes when men were gyuen to fuche nyſe and ſuperfluous pleaſures, and mette with a marchaunt for his purpoſe. But lette vs nowe ſpeake ſumwhat of the ſhelfyſhes in the whiche perles are engendered. It is not vnknownen to yowre holyneſſe, that Ariſtotell, and Plinie his folower, were of dyuers opinions as concernyng the generation of perles. But theſe Indians and owre men, reſt onely in one aſſertion, not aſſentyng to them in any other: as eyther that they wander in the ſea, or that they moue at anye tyme after they are borne. They wyll therefore that there bee certayne greene places as it were medowes in the bottome of the ſea, bryngyng forth an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme that they haue ſeene the ſame: And that they are engendered, noryſhed, and growe therein, as wee ſee th[e] increaſe and ſucceſſion of oysters to growe aboute them ſelues. Alſo that theſe fyſhes delyteth not in the conuerſation or companye of the ſea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one, twoo, or three, or at the moſte foure pearles: Affyrmyng that in the fyſhyng places of the kyng of this Ilande, there was founde a hundreth pearles in one fyſhe, the whiche *Gaspar Moralis* the capitayne hym ſelfe, and his coompanions, diligently numbered. For it pleaſed the kyng at their beyng there and in their preſence, to commaund his diuers to go a fyſhyng for thoſe kynde of fyſhes. They compare the matrices of theſe fyſhes, to the places of conception in hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great multitudes and cluſters: And beleue that theſe fyſhes bryng forth their byrth in lyke maner. For the better profe wherof, they ſaye that they founde certayne pearles coomynge forth of their matreces, as beyng nowe coome to the tyme of their full rypenefſe, and moued by nature to coome owte of their mootheres wombe openyng it ſelfe in tyme conuenient. Lykewiſe that within a while after, they ſawe other ſuccede in lyke maner. So that to conclude, they ſawe ſum coomynge forth, and other ſumme yet abydinge the tyme of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they alſo became looſe and opened the matrice. They perceaued the pearles to bee incloſed in the myddeſt of their bellies, there to be noryſhed and increaſe as an infante ſuckyng his mootheres pappes within her wombe,

The kynges
woordes.

Ilandes ryche in
golde and pearles.

C. [hundred]
pounce weyght of
perles yerely for
a tribute.
Plentie of hartes
and cunnies.

141

Wyne of frutes
and ſedes
The kyng is
baptiſed.

The fyft part of
perles due to the
kyng.
Byg perles.

A perle for a pope.

An other perle of
great price.

Niſe and
ſuperfluous
pleaſures.

Dyuers opinions of
the generation of
pearles.

Herbes in the
bottome of the ſea.

A hundreth perles
in one ſhell fyſhe.

The matrice of the
perle fyſhe.

The byrth of
perles.

142

Where the
byggest, meane,
and least pearles
are engendred

Sea crabbes

The sea muscles
wherein perles are
engendred.

The regions of the
East syde of the
goulfe of Vraba.

The region of
Caribana.
The original of
the Canibales.

The vylages of
Caribana.

Manhunters.

143

Bookes.
Loke in the
begynnyng of the
booke of the landes
lately founde.

before hee moue to coome foorth of her priuie places. And if it chaunce any of these shellyfishes to be founde scattered in the sande of the sea (as I my selfe haue seene oysters disparcelled on the shores in diuers places of the Ocean) they affyrme that they haue byn violently dryuen thither from the bottome of the sea by force of tempestes, and not to haue wandered thither of them selues. But, that they becoome white by the clearenesse of the mornyng dewe, or waxe yelowe in troubled wether, or otherwyse that they seeme to reioyce in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary wyse to bee as it were astonished and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with suche other, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vlearned men whiche handell the matter but grossely, and enquire no further then occasyon ferueth. Yet do they affyrme by th[e]xperience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane forte hygher, and the least hyghest of all and nearer to the brymme of the water. And saye therfore that the greatest do not wander: but that they are created, nourished, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fewe, dyuers, and that but feeldome dare aduenture to diue so deepe to gather them, aswel for feare of the sea crabbes whiche wander emonge these perle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monsters of the sea, as also lest their brethe shuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And this they saye to bee the cause why the owldest and therfore byggest sea muscles, inhabyte the deepest places from whense they are not lightly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder these fyshes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger pearles are founde: And that for this cause, there are fewer founde of the byggest forte. They thyncke also, that when they fyrste faule from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyshes, bycause they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the smaulest differ from the byggest in a certayne swellynge or impostumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulder muscles cleaueth fast to the shel: But that it is a warte, whiche beyng rased from the shell with a fyle, is rounde and bryght but onely of one fyde, and not precious, beyng rather of the nature of the fysh it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue seene certayne of these muscles cleauynge on rockes: Yet these but fewe, and nothyng woorth. It is also to bee thought that the pearle fyshes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde sea, or Taprobana, are ruled in suche order as the afore named famous autours haue written. For their opinion herein is not vtterly to bee reiected, forasmuche as they were learned men and trauayled longe in the ferchyng of these thynges. But wee haue nowe spoken suffyciently of these sea fyshes and of their egges which the fonde nyfenes and wantonnesse of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Lette vs therfore entreate sumwhat of other particular thynges whiche are coome to owre knowledge of late. We haue elles where largely described the mouthes of the goulfe of *Vraba*, with fundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that sea. But as concernynge the West coastes in the whiche owre men haue buylded houses and planted their habitations on the bankes of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the goulfe, I haue learned as foloweth. They saye that the vnyuersal lande of the East region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachynge into the sea, and from the extreame or vtter moste mouthe of the same receauynge the waters of the sea whiche faule into it, euen vnto *Os Draconis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name cauled *Caribana*, of the *Caribes* or *Canibales* whiche are founde in euery regyon in this tracte. But from whense they had their particular originall, and howe leauynge their natiue soyle, they haue spredde their generation so farre lyke a pestiferous contagion, we wyll nowe declare. Therfore from the fyrste fronte reachynge foorth into the sea (in whose tracte we said that *Fogeda* fastened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne myles distant, there lyeth a vyllage of *Caribana* named *Futeraca*. Three myles distant from this, is the vyllage of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, bycause this vyllage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute fyxe myles from this, is *Feti*. Nyne myles from *Feti*, is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles from this, *Sorache*. Owre men founde all these vyllages full of people, all the whiche gyue them selues onely to manhuntynge. In so muche that if they lacke enemyes ageynst whom they maye keepe warre, they exerce crueltie ageynst them selues, and eyther sleye one the other, or elles dryue the vanquished to flyghte. Whereby it is apparante that by these their continuall warres, and dryuynge the one the other owte of their countreis, this infection hath gonne so farre not onely on the fyrme lande, but also into the Ilandes. I was also aduertised of an other thyng the whiche to my iudgement, seemeth woorthye to bee putte in memorye.

One *Corrales* a iudge in causes of lawe amonge the Spanyardes of *Dariena*, sayth that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugityue which had fledde from the great landes lyng farre toward the weste, and remayned here with a Kyng wyth whom he was enterteyned. When this man perceaued the lawier lookynge on his booke, marueyllynge thereat, he came runnyng vnto him, and by interpretours of the kyng whom he serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue yowe also bookes wherin yowe may referue thynges in perpetual memorye? And letters wherby yowe maye declare yowre mynde to suche as are absent? And herewith desyred that the booke might bee opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey. But when he sawe them vnlyke, he sayde further that in his

countrey there were cities fortified with waules and gouerned by lawes: and that the people also vsed apparell. But of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had owre men knowlege both by the woordes and signes of this fugitiue, that they were circumcised. What nowe thinke yowe hereby (most holy father) Or what do yowe diuine may come hereof when tyme shall subdue al these vnder yowre throne? Let vs nowe entermynge certeyne finaulé thynges amonge these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitte that which chaunced to *Iohannes Solysius*, who, to searche the South fyde of the supposed continent, departed with three shippes from porte *Ioppa* (not farre distante from the Ilandes of *Gades* or *Cales* in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September in the yeaere. M. D. xv. Or what successe *Iohannes Pontius* had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias* appoynted to vanquishe and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans fleshe. Also to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, whiche were sent foorth dyuers wayes at the same tyme: As *Gonzalus Badaicius*, *Franciscus Bezerra*, and *Valleius*. *Iohannes Solicius* tooke the matter in hande in an euyll houre. He sayled beyonde the poynt of faynt Augustine, (which they caule *Cabo. S. Augustini*) toward the South fyde of the supposed continent beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne. For (as we haue sayde before) that poynt reacheth Southwarde to the feuenth degree of the South pole cauled the Antartike. He proceeded in that viage fyxe hundreth leagues: And founde the lande from the poynte to extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctiall, that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As he sayled thus forwarde, hauynge nowe on his backe halfe the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade) and the regions of *Paria* lyinge northwarde frome hym, and prospectynge towarde the pole Artyke, he chaunced to faule into the handes of the fylthye Canibales. For these craftie foxes seemed to make signes of peace, when in their mindes they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And espying their enemies a farre of, beganne to swalowe theyr spettle as their mouthes watered for greedines of theyr pray. As vnhappye *Solysius* descended with as many of his coompanie as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shippe, foodenly a great multytude of th[e]inhabitanes burst forth vppon them, and slew them euery man with clubbes, euen in the fyght of theyr felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it al to fytters. Not one man escaped. They furre not thus satisfied, they cutte the slayne men in pieces euen vppon the shore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they being stryken with feare through this exemple, durst not coome foorth of theyr shyppes, or diuise howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coompanyons. They departed therefore from these vnfortunate coastes: And by the waye ladynge theyr shippes with brasell returned home ageyne with losse and heauie chere. Of these thynges I was aduertysed of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shal haue more particular knowlege hereafter. *Iohannes Pontius* was also repulsed by the Canibales in the Ilande of *Guadalupea* beinge one of the chiefe Ilandes of theyr habitacion. For when they sawe owre men a farre of on the sea, they ley in ambushe foodenly to inuade them when they shulde coome alande. Owre men sent foorth a fewe foote men and with them theyr laundresses to wasshe theyr shertes and sheetes. For from the Ilande of *Ferrea* beinge one of the Ilandes of Canarie (euen vnto this Ilande, for the space of foure thousande and twoo hundreth myles) they had seene no lande where they myght fynde any fresshe water: for as muche as in all this large space, the Ocean is without Ilandes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the Canibales affayled them, caried awaye the women, and put the men to fuche distresse that fewe of them escaped. By reason wherof, *Pontius* being greatly discomfited, durste not inuade the Canibales, fearynge theyr venemed arrowes which these naked manhunters can direct most certenly. Thus good *Pontius* faylyng of his purpose, was fayne to gyue ouer the Canibales, whome (beinge safe and vnder the house roufe) he threatened to vanquyshe and destroy. Whether he went from thense, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no further knowlege. By these myffortunes, *Solysius* losse his lyfe, and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeaere. *Iohannes Aiora* borne in the cite of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, sent in steade of the Lieuetenaunt (as we haue sayde) more couetous of golde then carefull of his charge or desyrous of prayse for well deseruyng, fought occasions of querelynge ageynst the kynges and spoyled many, violently extortynge golde of them ageynst ryght and equitie: And further handeled them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel enemies: In so much that they ceased not with desperat myndes by all meanes they coulde to slei owre men openly or priuilye. By reason wherof it is coome to passe, that where before they bartered quyetyly exchanginge ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayd) he fledde priuilye and tooke away a shyppes with him by stelth as the common rumoure goeth: Nor yet hetherto haue we hard whyther he went or where he is arryued. Sum suspect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour shulde consente to his departure bycause this *Iohannes Aiora* is brother to *Gonzalus Aiora* the kynges historiographer, a man booth lerned, and expert in the discipline of warre: and so much the gouernours frend, that these two amonge a fewe, may be counted exemples of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto theym bothe and haue longe enjoyed theyr frendshippe. Yet shal I desyre them bothe to pardone me in declarynge my phantasie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragicall affayres of the Ocean,

Circumcised
people.

What chaunced to
the Capitaines
whiche the
gouernour sent
dyuers wayes.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The vyage of
Iohannes Solisius.
Cap. S. Augustini

Iohn Solysius is
slaine of the
Canibales.
The fiercenes of
the Canibales.

Brasell.

Iohannes Pontius
is repulsed by the
Canibales.

144

The vyage of
Iohannes Aiora.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The lewde
behauour of Iohn
Aiora.

The variable
fortune
of Gonsalus
Badaiocius.

Cerabaro. Decade.
iii. li[b]. iii

The South sea.

A leaque
conteyneth foure
myles by sea and
but three by lande.
The golden region
of Coiba Dytes.

Sande myxte with
golde.

Howe theyr
slaues are marked
in the face.

145

Golde.

A fruteful region
left desolate by
ciuile discorde.

Kynge Periquete.

S. Michael.
Kynge Totonoga.

Six thousand
Castellans of
golde.

Kyng Taracuru.

viii. thousand
pesos of gold
Kynge Pananome

Kyng Tabor.

Kynge Cheru.
iiii. thousande
pesos of gold
Salte.

Kyng Anata.
xv. thousande
pesos of gold

Theyr maner of
warre.

nothyng hath so muche displeas'd me as the couetousnes of this man who hath so disturbed the pacified myndes of the kynges. Nowe emonge these troubelous chaunces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of *Gonsalus Badaiocius* and his felowes, whose prosperous begynnynge, ended with vnfortunate successe. *Gonsalus* therefore in the moneth of May in the yeare of Chrifte M. D. xv. departed from *Dariena* with fourescore armed men, directynge his vyage toward the Sonthe, and restynge in no place vntyll he came to the region of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, distant from *Dariena* about a hundreth and fourescore myles: for they caule it threescore leaques. He spent certeyne dayes here in Idelnesse: for he coulde neyther by fayre meanes nor by foule, allure the kynge of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye thus idelly, there came to hym other fyftie men sente frome *Dariena* vnder the gouernaunce of capytayne *Lodouicus Mercado* who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of Maye, to th[e] intent to searce th[e] inner partes of those regyons. When they mette together, they determyned after consultation, to passe ouer the montaynes lyinge toward the Southe, euen vnto the Southe sea latelye founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thyng: That in a lande of fuche maruelous longitude in other places, they founde it here to bee onely aboute fyftie myles distant to the Southe sea: for they counte it. xvii. leaques. as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not by myles. Yet saye they that a leaque consisteth of three myles by lande and foure by sea as wee haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turnynge of the waters, they founde a kynge named *Iuana*, whose kyngedome is also named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kynge *Careta*, of whome we haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the regyon of this *Iuana*, is ryche in golde, they named it *Coiba Dites*, that is, *Coiba* the ryche. For, wherfoeuer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande whiche they caste forth, myxte with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the comynge of owre men, and coulde neuer bee brought ageyne. They spoyled all the cuntrye neare aboute his palayce. Yet had they but lyttle golde: for hee had caryed all his stufte with hym. Here they founde certeyne slaues marked in the faces after a straunge sorte. For with a sharpe prycke made eyther of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in their faces: and forthwith sprinkelynge a poudre theron, they moiste the pounced place with a certeyne blacke or redde iuife, whose substauce is of fuche tenacitie and clammineffe, that it wyll neuer weare awaye. They brought these slaues away with them. They saye that this iuife is of such sharpnesse and putteth them to fuche payne, that for extreme doloure they haue no stomacke to their meate certaine dayes after. The kynges whiche take these slaues in their warres, vse their helpe in seekynge for golde and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as do owre men. From the pallaice of *Iuana*, folowynge the course of the water aboute tenne myles toward the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other kynge, whome owre men named the oulde man, bycause hee was oulde, not passynge of his other name. In the regyon of this kynge also, they founde golde in all places bothe on the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verye fayre and frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departynge from hense, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande leste defolate. They suppose that this was destroyed by ciuile discorde for as muche as it is for the mooste parte frutefull, and yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they sawe two men comynge a farre of. These were laden with breade of *Maizium*, whiche they caryed on their shulders in sackes. Owre men tooke them: and vnderflooded by them that there were twoo kynges in that tracte: The one was named *Periquete*, whoe dwelte neare vnto the sea. The others name was *Totonoga*. This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The twoo men whiche they mette, were the fysshers of *Totonoga*, whome he had sente with certayne fardelles of fysh to *Periquete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchange. For thus do they communicate their commodities one with an other by exchange, without th[e] use of wycked money. By the conductynge of these twoo men, they came to kynge *Totonoga* dwellynge on the Weste syde of fayncte Michaelles goulfe in the Southe sea. They had of this kynge, the sum of fyxe thousande Castellans of golde bothe rude and artificially wrought. Emonge those groumes of rude or natyue golde, there was one founde of the weyghte of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentifull rychenesse of the ground. Folowing the same coastes by the sea syde toward the West, they came to a kynge whose name was *Taracuru*, of whome they had golde amountynge to the weyghte of eight thousand *Pesos*. Wee haue sayde before that *Pesos* is the weyghte of a Castelane not coyned. From hense they wente to the dominion of this kynges brother named *Pananome*, who fledde at their comynge, and appered no more afterwarde. They saye that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They spoyled his pallaice in his absence. Syxe leaques from hense, they came to an other kyng named *Tabor*. From thense they came to the kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly enterteyned owre men, and gaue them foure thousande *Pesos* of golde. He hath in his dominion many goodly salte bayes: the region also aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from hense, they came to another kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had. xv. thousande *Pesos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kinges his bortherers whom he had vanquished by warre. A great part of this golde was in rude forme bycause it was molten when he set the kynges houses on fyer whom he spoyled. For they robbe and fley the one the other, sackynge and fying their villages, and wastynge their countreys. They keepe warre barbarously and to vtter destruction, executynge extreme crueltie ageynst them that haue

the ouerthrowe. *Gonfalus Badaiocius* with his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kinges. For, what in braslettes, collers, earinges, breste plates, helmettes, and certeine barres wherwith women beare vppe their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the sum of fourescore thousande Castellans, whiche they had obeyned partly by exchange for owre thinges where they founde the kinges their frendes, and otherwise by forceible meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten also forty slaues whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their vitales and bagagies in the steade of moiles or other beastes of burden, and also to relieue fuche as were fycke and forweried by reason of their longe iorneyes and hunger. After these prosperous viages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to the palaice of a kyng named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no such thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armye, and assayled them straggelyng and vnwares, in fuche forte that they had no leafure to put on their armure. He slewe and wounded about fyftie, and put the refydue to flyght. They made fuche haft, that they had no respect eyther to the gold they had gathered, or to their slaues: but lefte all behynde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyfe men as concernynge the varyable and inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane thinges, were false, if al thinges shuld haue happened vnto them prosperously. For such is the nature of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentimes delyteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted: and taketh plesure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to bee impermutable, that who soo wyll applye hym selfe to gather rootes, shall sumtymes meete with sweete lyquereffe, and other whiles with foure cockle. Yet wo vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not longe sleape in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundreth and fyftie choise souldiers to reuenge the death of ovr men: But where as he by chaunce fell fycke, his poure went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieuetenant *Gaspar Spinosa*, a Iudge in cafes of lawe in *Dariena*. At the fame time other were sent forth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What shal succede, tyme will bring to owre knowlege. The other two, attempted th[e]inhabitanes beyonde the goulfe, *Franciscus Bezerra* passyng ouer by the corner of the goulfe and the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundreth and fyftie souldiers well appointed, went to make warre vppon the Canibales euen in *Caribana* their owne chiefeft dominion, toward the vyllage of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought also with them diuers engens of warre: as three pieces of ordinaunce whose shot were bygger then egges: Likewise forty archers, and. xxv. hagbutters to th[e]intent to reache the Caniballes a farre of, and to preuent their venemed arrowes. But what became of hym and his company, or where they arriued, we haue yet no perfecte knowlege. Certaine which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they of *Dariena* stode in great feare least they also were tossed with sum misfortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obeyned the fore parte of the goulfe. But he passed ouer by an other waye then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and *Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the three score and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee lefte fortye and eyght slaine emonge the Canibales. These are the newes whiche they bringe that came laste from *Dariena*.

There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this yeare. M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made mention before) and one *Franciscus Delapuenta*. This *Franciscus*, was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whose chiefe capitaine was *Gonfalus Badaiocius* who hardly escaped the handes of kyng *Pariza*. These twoo capitaines therefore, *Rodericus* and *Franciscus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the misfortune whiche befell to *Badaiocius* and his companye, do both affirme, the one that he hath harde, the other that he hath seene, that in the Southe sea there are diuers Ilandes lying westwarde from the Iland of *Dites* and faincte Michaels goulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and nourished which bring forth the same aromaticall fruites, as doth the region of *Collocutea*. This lande of *Collocutea*, with the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marte places from whense the Portugales haue their spices. And hereby do they coniecture that the land where the frutfulnesse of spyce begynneth, shulde not be farre from thense. In so much that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne those coastes, do onely desyre that leaue may be graunted them to searche further, and that they wil of their owne charges frame and furnishe shippes and aduenture the viage to searche those Ilandes and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes shulde bee made and prepared, euen in faincte Michaels goulfe: And not to attempte this vyage by faincte Augustines point, which waye were both longe and diffyculte, and ful of a thousande daungers, and is faide to reache beyonde the forty degree of the pole Antartike. The same *Franciscus*, being partener of the trauailes and daungiers of *Gonfalus*, faithe that in ouer runninge those landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and wylde bores: and that he toke many of them by an arte which th[e]inhabitauntes taught him: whiche was to make pittes or trenches in their walks, and to couer the same with bouwes. By this meanes also they deceaue al other kindes of wild and foure footed beastes. But they take foules after the same maner that we do: As stocke doues with an other tame stocke doue brought vp in their houfes. These they tye by a stryng, and suffer them to flye a lyttle emong the trees. To

Fourescore thousand Castellans of golde.

Kyng *Scoria*.
Kyng *Pariza*.
Gonfalus Badaiocius hath the ouerthrow and is spoyled of great ryches of golde.

146

The Inconstancie of fortune.

The expedition of *Fraunces Bezerra* ageynst the Canibales.

Gunnes.

Valeius repulsed of the Canibales.

The Ilandes of the south sea.
In this sea ly[e] the Ilandes of *Molucca*, most frutefull of spices.
Collocutea.
Cochinus and *Camemorus*, from whense the Portugales haue theyr spices.

He meaneth by the streight of *Magellanus*.

Howe they take hartes and wylde bores.

Stocke doues

147

Theyr maner of
foulynge.Poppingiayes are
easely taken.A straunge kynde
of foulynge.Fysshes and
wormes
engendered of
slime
Foules.
Gourdes of the
tree.Later opinions of
the swift course
of the Ocean
towards the West.The continent or
firme land.

148

The vyages of
Diegus Colonus.The vyage from
the new landes to
Spayne.

the which as other birdes of their kind resort, they kil them with their arrowes. Otherwyse they take them with nettes in a bare place poured from trees and bushes: and scaterynge certeyne feedes rounde about that place, in the myddeste whereof they tye a tame foule or byrde of the kynde of them whiche they desyre to take. In lyke maner do they take poppingiayes and other foules. But they say that poppingiayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them wyll flye euen into the tree in whose bouwes the fouler fyteth: and swarme about the tame chatterynge poppingiaye, sufferynge them selues to bee easely taken. For they are so without feare of the fyght of the fouler, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothyng feared hereby, thoughe they see hym drawe them to him with the snare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the same purpose. There is an other kynde of foulynge, heretofore neuer harde of, and pleasaunt to confyder. We haue declared before howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and especially in *Hispaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or standynge pooles. In sume of these (beinge no deaper then men may wade ouer them) are seene great multytudes of water foules: as wel for that in the bottome of these lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the sonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by reflection and preserued by moyster, there are engendered of the flymines of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable lyttle fysshes, with a thousande fundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, flyes and such other. The foules which vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geese, swannes, seamewes, gulles, and such other. We haue sayde also that in theyr orchardes they noryshe a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of these gourdes therefore well stopped leaste any water shulde enter in at theyr ryftes and cause them to sinke, they cast many in the shalowe pooles: where, by theyr continuall wanderynge and wauerynge with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules owte of suspection and feare. The fouler in the meane tyme, disgyfyng hym selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmet, with two holes neare about his eyes, his face and hole heade besyde beinge couered therwith. And thus entereth he into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie excercised in swymmynge and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a longe space. The foules thynkyng this gourde to be one of the other that swymme vpon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place wher he seeth the greatest flocke of foules: And with waggyng his heade, counterfectinge the mouing of the wauerynge gourdes, drawethe nere to the foules: where softly puttyng foorth his ryght hande, he foodenly snatcheth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he putteth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpose. The other foules supposinge that this dyued into the water of her owne motion to seke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as before, vntyll they also faule into the same snare. I haue here for this cause entered into the declaration of theyr maner of huntyng and foulyng, that by these more pleasaunt narrations I may sumwhat mytigate and affwage the horroure conceaued in yowre stomake by the former rehearfall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therfore speake sumwhat ageyne of the newe and later opinions as concernynge the swyfte course of the sea towards the west about the coastes of *Paria*: also of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late. And with these two quiet and peaceable thynges, we wyl make an ende of the tragical affayres of the Ocean: and therwith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therefore, that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouedus* (of whom we haue made mention before) repayred to me, at my house in the towne of Matrite, As we met thus togyther, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concernynge this course of the Ocean. They both agree that these landes and regions perteynyng to the dominion of Castile, doo with one continuall tract and perpetuall bonde, embrase as one hole firme lande and continent al the mayne lande lyeinge on the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes, beinge also north west both from *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*. Yet as touchynge the course of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyll that this vyolent course of water bee receaued in the lappe of the supposed continente which bendeth so much and extendeth so farre towards the North, as we haue said: And that by the obiect or resistance of the lande so bendynge and crookyng, the water shulde as it were rebounde in compasse, and by force therof be dryuen about the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*, where the largenes of the sea maye receaue the waters faulyng frome the narowe streames, and therby represseth that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothyng more aptely then to the swyfte streame comyng foorth of a mylle and faulyng into the myl poole. For in al suche places where waters runne with a vyolent faule through narowe chanelles, and are then receaued in large pooles, they are foodenly disparced and theyr violence broken: So that wheras before they seemed of such force as to ouerthrowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, some and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these landes (who had nowe in comyng and goinge, foure tymes passed throughe these seas) beinge demaunded of me what he founde or perceaued in saylyng too and fro, answered that there was muche difficultie in returnyng the same way by the which they go. But wheras they fyrst take the waye by the mayne

sea towarde the North before they directe theyr course to Spayne, he saythe that in that tract, he felt the shippe sumtymes a lyttle dryuen backe by the contrary course of the water. Yet supposeth that this chaunceth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the sea: And the same not to be enforced by the circumflection or course of the water reboundynge in compasse as we haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or supposed continent, shulde sumwhere bee open: And that the sayde open place, shoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or streight, diuydyng the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which also, the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the hole earth. *Quiedus* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchynge the continuall adherence and closenes of the sayde continente. Yet neyther that the waters shulde so beate ageynst the bendynge backe of the West lande, or bee in suche forte repulsed and dryuen into the mayne sea. But faith that he hath diligently confydered, that the waters runne from the deepest and myddest of the maine sea, towarde the West. Also that saylinge nere vnto the shore with smaule vesselles, he founde the same waters to returne ageine towarde the East. So that in the same place, they runne together with contrary course, as we oftentimes see the lyke to chaunce in riuers wher by the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whirlepooles and turnynges aryse in the water. By reason wherof, if any chaffe, strawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght substance be caste in any suche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al such as runne with the water in the myddest of the chanell, procede well forwarde: But suche as faule into the bendynge goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are caryed ouerthwarte the chanell, and so wander about vntyll they meete with the ful and directe course of the ryuer. Thus haue we made yowe partener of suche thynges as they haue gyuen vs, and writen their dyuers opinions. We wyll then gyue more certeyne reason, when more certeyne truth shalbe knowen. We must in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntil the day coome appointed of god to reueale this secrete of nature, with the perfecte knowlege of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauyng sayd thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a brieue declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, shall close vppe owre Decades and make an ende of owre trauayles. Wee haue sayde, that nyne myles distante from *Dariena*, are the fydes of the hylles and the drye playnes in the whiche golde is gathered bothe on the drye lande, and also on the bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therefore to al such as are wyllynge to gather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appointed to euery man by the furuoiers of the mynes, a square plotte of grounde conteyning twelue pases, at the arbitrimt of the choofer, so that it bee not grounde already occupied, or lefte of other. The portion of grounde beinge thus chosfen (as it were affygnd of the augures to buylde a temple) they inclose their flaues within the same, whose helpe the Christians vse in tyllynge of their grounde and gatherynge of golde, as we haue saide. These places appointed vnto them, they keepe as longe as them lyfte. And if they perceauie tokens of lyttle golde, they requyre an other plotte of ground of twelue pases to be assigned them, leauyng the first in commen. And this is th[e] order which the Spaniardes inhabitinge *Dariena* obserue in gatheryng of golde. I suppose also that they vse the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath byn proued that these twelue pases of grounde, haue yelded to their choosers, the summe of fourescore Castellans of gold. And thus leade they theyr lyues in fulfyllynge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fyll their handes with fyndynge, the more increaseth their couetous desyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyer, the more furiously rageth the flame. Vnfacible couetousnesse is no more diminiffhed with increase of rycheffe, then is the drinesse of the dropsye fatiffyed with drinke. I lette passe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I shall in the meane season vnderstande these to be acceptable vnto yowre holynesse: my dewtie and obseruaunce to whose autoritie, hath caused me the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt yowre holynesse many prosperous yeares.

The contrary course of waters.

The poynt of the pole star.

The golde mynes of *Dariena*, and the maner of gatherynge golde.

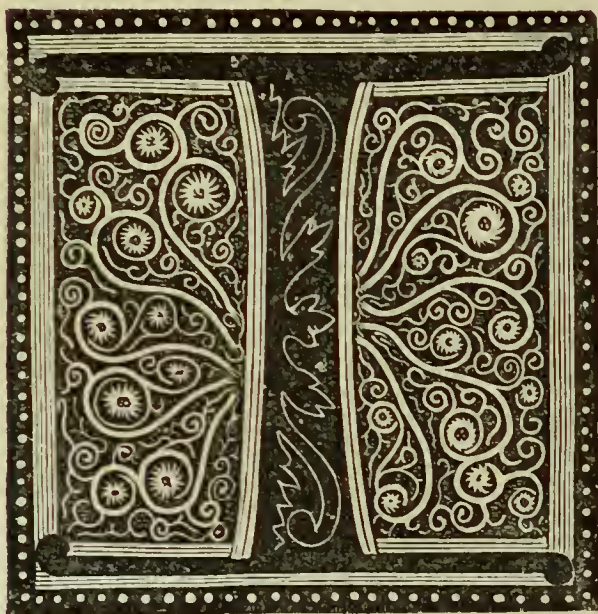
149

Owre inclosiers wolde leaue no such commens. *Aurisacra Fame*s

The dropsie of couetousnes.



THE LASTE BOOKE OF PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA,
OF THE LANDES AND ILANDES LATELY FOUNDE:
AND OF THE MANERS OF THE INHABITAVNTES OF THE SAME.



Loke Decade iii.
Liber. x

Cities fortified
with waules.

The Iland of Cuba
or Fernandina.

The Spaniards of
Cuba attempt new
vyages.

The west angle of
Cuba.

Note.

The Iland of
Iucatana.
A great citie well
buylded.
Temples.
Humane people.

150

Cunnyng
artifycers.

Appareled people.

Haue partli declared before in mi decades how certeine fugitiues which came owt of the large West landes arriued in the confynes of *Dariena*: And howe that marueylinge at the bookes of owre men, they declared that they sumtyme dwelte in regions whose inhabitautes vsed fuche instrumentes and were ruled by politike lawes. Also that they had cities fortified with waules, and faire pallaces with streates well paued, and common places whyther marchautes refort as to the burse or streate. These landes, owre men haue nowe founde. Therefore who were th[e]autours hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so defireth to know with the conditions of straunge regions and the maners of the people, let hym giue diligent attendance to such thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of *Cuba* (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, lyyng nexte vnto *Hispaniola* on the west syde, and yet sumwhat so bendyng towards the Northe that the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri* deuideth it in the myddeste, wher as *Hispaniola* is distante from the Tropike and declinyng certen degrees toward the Equi-

noctial line) we haue spoken sumwhat before. In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe fyxe townes erected. Wherof, the chiefe is named *Sanctiago* of saynt Iames the patrone of the Spanyardes. In this, there is natiue golde, found both in the mountaynes and ryuers: By reason wherof they are dayly occupied in gathering and digging the same. But shortly after that I had finished my sayde bookes, thre Spanyardes that were the most auncient citizens of *Cuba*, as *Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Ocho*, and *Christophorus Morantes*, determined to seeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spanyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enterprises. They furnyshed at their owne charges, three of those shyppes whiche they caule Carauels. And hauyng fyrste lycence of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, they departed with a hundreth and ten men from the West angle of *Cuba*. For this angle is moste commodious to relieue shyppes and to make prouision for freshe water and fuell. Thus they sayled continually fyxe dayes and a halfe, betwene the West and the South, contented onely with the syght of the heauen and the water: duryng whiche tyme, they suppose that they sayled not past threescore and fyxe myles. For they ley at anker all nyght where so euer the faulynge of the soonne tooke the day light from them, leaste by wanderyng in vnknownen seas, they myght chaunce to be cast vppon rockes or sandes. But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande named *Iucatana*, whose beginnyng th[e]inhabitautes caule *Eccampi*. Owre men went to the citie stondyng on the sea syde, the whiche for the bygnes therof, they named *Cayrus* or *Alcayr*. Th[e]inhabitautes entertained them very frendly. When they were entered into the citie, they marueyled to behold the houses buylded lyke towres, magnificall temples, streates well paued, and great exercise of bying and fellyng by exchange of ware for ware. Their houses are eyther bylte of stone, or of bricke and lyme, and artificially wrought. To the fyrste porches of their houses and fyrst habitations, they ascend by ten or twelue steares. They are couered eyther with tyles, slates, reades, or stalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue owre men many brooches and ieweltes of golde, verye fayre and of cunnyng woorkmanshyppes. Owre men recompensed them with vestures of fylke and wolle, counterfecte stones, of coloured glasse and christall, haukes belles of laton, and fuche other rewardes whiche they greatly esteemed for the straungenes of the same. They sette nowght by lookyng glasse, bycause they haue certeyne stoones muche brighter. This nation is appareled after a thousande fashyons with vestures made of goffampyne cotten or bombage of dyuers coloures. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele hauyng dyuers fashions of vayles aboute their heades and brestes, with great cautele leaft any parte of their legges or feete bee scene. They reforte muche

to their temples: vnto the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paued from their owne houfes. They are Idolatours and circumcised. They occupie their maner of exchaunginge, with mucche fydelitie. They vse to adourne the heares of their heades. Being demanded by th[e]interpretours of whom they receaued their circumcifyon, they answered that there once passed an exceedyng fayre man by their costes, who leste them that in token to remember hym. Other faye that a manne brighter then the soone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there certeyne dayes, they feemed to bee molestous to th[e]inhabitanes accordyng to the common sayinge. The longer a geste tarieth, the woorse is his enterteynement. The whiche thyng owre men perceauyng, they made the more hast awaye. Beyng therefore prouided of all thynges necessary, they tooke their vyage directly towarde the west by the prouince whiche th[e]inhabitautes caule *Comi* and *Maiam*. They ouer passed these regions takyng onely freshe water and fuel in the same. The barbarians both men, women, and children flocked to the sea fyde, astroyffhed greatly to behold the huge bygness of the shyppes. Owre men marueyled in maner no lesse to viewe their buydynges and especially their temples fytuate neare vnto the sea, and erected after the maner of towers. Thus at the length hauyng sayled about a hundreth and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anker in a prouince named *Campechium*, whose chiefe towne confysteth of three thousande houfes. Th[e]inhabitautes came swymmyng to the shyppes: marueylyng excedyngly at the maner of saylinge, and at the sayles and other tackelynges. But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, sawe the smoke, and smelte the fauour of brimstone and fyer, they supposed that thunderboultes and lyghtnynges had byn fente from god. The kynge receaued owre men honorably and broughte them into his pallayce: where he feasted them well after his maner. They are accustomed to eate fleshe, and haue great plentie of beastes and foules: as peacockes, and other whiche they francke and feede in their houfes: Also dyuers kyndes of wylde foules of the mountaines, wooddes, and waters: Likewise partriches, quailles, turtle dooues, duckes, and geefe. Of beastes, they haue connies, wcolues, lyons, tigers, foxes, wylde boores, hartes, and hares. After this banquet, the kyng with his traine and famylie brought owre men into a brode crosse way where many streates do meete. In this, they shewed them as it were a great and highe aulter buylded foure square of marble compacte together partly with the toughe cleye of Babilon cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with smaule stoones. It had on euery fyde foure steares. Vppon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and fast by it the Images of two beastes of vnknownen shape, whiche feemed as though they wolde with yanyng mouthes haue torne in funder the bealy of the mannes Image. On the other fyde stooode a great serpent compacte of the sayde toughe cleye and smaule stoones. This serpent beyng in length. xlvii. foote, and of the bygness of a large oxe, feemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by sparced with freshe bludde. Harde by the altare, were thre postes fastned in the ground, the which three other trauerfed and were susteined with stonnes. In this place offenders were put to death: In token wherof they sawe innumerable arrowes steined with bludde, sum scatered, sum lyege on heapes, and sum broken: Also a great number of mennes bones lying in a court or yarde nere vnto this funestal place. Their houses are here also builded of lime and stone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicaufe they arriued at this lande on faint *Lazarus* day. Departing from hense and directing theyr course styl toward the West for the space of. xv. myles, they came to a prouince named *Aquanil*, whose chiefe towne is cauled *Mosco*, and the kynge thereof, *Cupoton*. He behelde owre men with a frowarde countenance, and fought occasion to doo them some priuie mischiefe whyle they fought for freshe water. For he made signes vnto them that on the further fyde of the nexte hyll, they shulde fynde sprynges of water, intenyng to haue assayed them in that narowe passage. But by the colouryng of theyr forheades (as they are accustomed in theyr warres) and by the bearyng of theyr bowes and other weapons, owre men perceaued theyr wylnes, and refused to go any further. Yet a thousande of the Barbarians assayed theym vnwares and vnprepared. By reason wherof, they were put to flyght, and dyuers of them slayne in the chafe. Many that fledde towarde the shippes, were entangled in the mudde and maryshes nere vnto the shore. Twentie and two, were slayne with arrowes, and the refydewe for the most parte, wounded. *Franciscus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this conflicte three and thirtie woundes. And in maner none escaped without hurt. If they had gonne to the hylles whiche were appoynted them, they had byn slayne euery man. They therefore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* from whense they came, where they were receaued of theyr felows with heauie chere. But when *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernoure of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediatly furnyshed a newe nauie of foure Carauelles with three hundreth men. Of this nauie he appoynted Iohn Grifalua his neuie, to be the gouernour: And assigned for vnder capitaynes, Alphons[o] Auila, Frances Montegio, and Peter Aluarado. For the pylot he assigned Antonie Alamino who had the regiment of the fyrst nauie. They attempted the same vyage ageyne, but declyned sumwhat more towarde the South about threscore and tenne myles. Before they sawe any lande, they espyed a towre a farre of, by the viewe wherof, they came to an Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they smelte sweete

Circumcised
Idolaters.

Comi.
Maiam.

Campechium.
A towne of three
thousand howses.

Plentie of beastes
and foules.

Theyr Idoles and
Idolatory.

Houses of lyme
and stone.

151

The prouince
Aquinall.
Mosco.

The Spanyardes
are put to flyght
and many slayne

An other
expedition.

The Iland of
Cozumella.

[* Eden points out later on that William Powell, the printer, had wrongly carried the headline, *The thyrde Decade*, over this, a perfectly distinct book.—(See p. 342.) We have therefore also inserted the true headline within brackets.—E. A.]

Sweete sauours.
 A frutefull Ilande.
 Towres and
 temples.
 Cozumella named
 Sancta Crux.
 Idoles lyke beares.
 Idolatry.
 Gentell people.
 Iucatana but fyue
 myles from
 Cozumella.
 152
 The Barbarians
 make resistance.
 A conflicte.
 The length of
 Iucatana.
 The region of
 Caluacam, or
 Oloan.
 The ryuer
 Grisalua.
 Targets and brest
 plates of golde.

fauours proceadyng with the wynde, before they approched to the lande by the space of three myles. They founde the Ilande to be fortie and fyue myles in circuite. It is playne and of maruelous frutefull foyle. There is also golde in it, but it is not engendered there, but brought thether from other regions. It aboundeth with hony, fruites, and herbes: And hath also great plentie of foules and foure footed beastes. Theyr order and maner of luyng, is in al thynges lyke unto theirs of *Iucatana*. Lykewyse theyr howses, temples, streates, and apparell. In many of theyr houses, are great postes of marble after the maner of owre buyldyng. They founde there, the foundations of certeyne owlde towres ruinate: And one especially with. xviii. steares ascendyng to it, after the maner of solemne temples. They marueyled greatly at owre shippes and maner of faylyng. At the fyrst, they wolde admyt no straungers: but shortly after, receaued them gentelly. Theyr chiefe ruler (whom owre men supposed to bee a preefte) led them vp to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kynge of Castyle, namyng it *Sancta Crux*, bycause they entered into the fame in the nones of Maye beinge then the feaste of the holye crosse. They saye that it was cauled *Cozumella* of kynge *Cozumellaus*, whose auncestours were the fyrst that inhabited the Ilande. In the towre, they founde many chambers furnyshed with Images, made bothe of earthe and marble to the similytude of beares. These they caule vpon with a houlyng and lamentable songe, perfumyng them with sweete odours, and otherwyse honouryng them as theyr domesticall goddes. They were also circumcised. The kynge was in fayre apparel made of gossampine cotton curiously wrought. He was lame on the one foote by reason that as he once exercysed hym selfe in swymmyng, a deuouryng fysh cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the toes, of one of his feete. He entreated owre men very frendly and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre dayes, they departed. And faylyng styll towarde the Weste, they espyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drewe neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Iucatana* beinge distant from *Cozumella* onely fyue myles. Directyng therefore theyr course towarde the southe fyde of *Iucatana*, they compased it on that fyde which lyeth nearest to the supposed continent: Yet coulde they not sayle rounde about it by reason of the multitude of rockes, shalowe places, and shelves of sandes. Then Alaminus the pylot turned his failes to the North side wherof he had better knowlege. Thus at the length, they came to the towne *Campechium* and kynge *Lazarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the fyrst vyage the yeare before. At the fyrst, they were gentelly receaued, and requyred to resort to the towne. But shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to stay about a stones cast from the towne, and to proceade no further. When owre men desyred that they myght make prouision for freshe water before theyr departure, they assigned them to a certeyne well which they had lefte behynde them. Declaringe further, that it shulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Owre men rested that nyght in the fyelde adioynyng to the well. The which thyng the Barbarians suspectinge, affembled an army of three thousande men, and encamped not farre from them. Bothe partes passed awaye the nyght without sleepe. They fearyng leaste owre menne shulde breake into the towne: And owre men, leaft the Barbarians shulde inuade them foodenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other fyde with the noyse of timbrels kept them styll wakyng that were disposed to sleape. At the spryng of the day, the Barbarians approched to owre mens campe and cauled for th[e]interpretours of *Cuba*, whose language is much agreable vnto theirs. They had diuised to lyghte a torche of frankensence and to place the same betwene bothe th[e]armies to th[e]intent that if owre men dyd not depart before the torche were consumed, to stande to theyr perell. The torch was wasted and the matter came to hand strokes. They slewe onely one of owre men with an arrowe bycause his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this conflicte, owre men resorted to theyr ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had discharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne. Owre men were of fierce and greedy courage to haue purfued them, but that Grisalua the gouernour wolde not suffer them. From thense they proceaded to the last ende of *Iucatana*, which they founde to reache more then two hundreth myles frome the East to the West. Here they founde a comodious hauen and named it *Portus desideratus*. From hense they sayled to other landes, and came to the region nexte to *Iucatana* Westwarde, whiche they doubtte whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annext to the continent. In this there is a goulfe which they suppose to be incompased with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certentie. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this region *Caluacam* or otherwise *Oloan*. They founde here also a great ryuer whiche by his violente course and faule, driueth freshe water two myles into the sea. This they cauled *Grisalua* after the name of the gouernoure. The barbarians marueilyng at the huge greatnesse and mouyng of owre shyppes, came swarmyng the bankes on bothe fydes the ryuer, to the number of fyxe thousande men armed with targettes and brest plates of gold, bowes and arrowes, brode swoordes of heauy woodde, and longe iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer: Thus stondyng in battayle raye to defende their coostes, and with proude countenaunces forbyddinge owre men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched al that nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, owre men espied about a hundreth Canoas (whiche we haue saide to be their boates) full of armed men. Here also the

language of th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* agreed well enowghe with thers. When they had admitted the peace profered them by th[e]interpretours, al the Canoa staid excepte one whiche approched toward the shippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa, demaunded of owre men what they fought in other mennes landes. They answered, gold. And that, for permutation of other ware, and not of gift or vyolently. The *Canoa* returned and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladlye to the shyppes. When he had saluted the gouernour, he cauled his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundyng him to bringe his armure and other ornamentes of golde wherwith he armed *Grifalua* from the toppe of the heade to the foule of the foote: In so muche that, what so euer any man of armes armed at all partes, is emong vs accustomed to weare of Iren or steele when he commeth in to the fielde, all sliche kynde of furnitures made of golde and wrought with woonderfull arte, the kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompensed hym with vestures of fy[l]cke, clothe, lymen, and other of owre thinges. In the beginning of this *Iucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumella*, they chaunced vppon a *Canoa* of fyfther men to the number of nyne, fyfshyng with hookes of golde. They tooke them all prifoners. One of them was knowen to this kyng, who promysed the daye folowyng to fende the gouernour as muche golde for his raunfome as the man hym selfe waied. But the gouernour denyed that he could release hym withowte the consent of his felowes: And therefore kept hym styll to proue what he could further knowe of hym. Departing from hense and saylyng styll westwarde, they founde a great goulfe in the which three smaule Ilandes were fyuate. Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh most corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyshe impietie? Let euery godly man close the mouth of his stomake lest he be desturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Emonge their Idoles of marble, there standeth a lyon hauyng a hole through the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miserable sacryfyce, that it maye from thense runne downe into a syncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they sacryfyce the bludde of these pore wretches. They cutte not their throtes, but open the very brestes of these felye foules and take owte their hartes yet pantyng, with the hotte bludde wherof, they anoynte the lypes of their Idoles, and suffer the refydue to faule into the synke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, supposyng the smoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shape of a man, bowyng downe his heade and lookyng toward the synke of bludde, as it were acceptyng the offeringe of the flayne sacryfyce. They eat the fleshe of the armes, thighes, and legges, especially when they sacryfyce an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a streame of congeled blud as though it had runne from a bouchery. For this myscheuous purpose, they bringe these wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They sawe also innumerable heades, and trunkes of bodies thus manged, besyde many other yet remaining hole and couered with certeyne mattes. All the tractes of these regions aboude with golde and precious stones. One of owre men wanderyng in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water pottes of alabafter artificially wrought and full of lyttle stones of dyuers colours. They saye also that they founde a stone of the value of two thousand Castilians of gold, whiche they sent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of sacryfyce. Th[e]inhabitauntes are circumcised. There are also other Ilandes fyuate about this *Col[l]uacana* or *Caluacam*, the whiche are inhabited onely with women lyuing without the companye of men after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter more wisely, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue vowed chastitie and professed a folytarie lyfe as the nunnes doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Vestales* or *Bona Dea*, were accustomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the yeare, men of the other Ilandes reforte vnto them. But not for th[e]intent of generation, but moued with pitie to helpe them to dresse their gardens and tyll their grounde. The reporte goeth lykewise that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men reforte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children lest it shuld hinder their shootyng. Also that they kepe onely the women children and fende awaye the men children. Owr men therefore drewe nere to the shore of *Colluacana* where they quyetly exercised marchaundies with th[e]inhabitauntes. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Also braslettes, chaynes, brouches, with many other ieweltes, and al of gold. Owre men ageyne on the other parte satisfied him with slich stufte as they had done other before. Here wolde they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour wolde not permytte them, wherat they gruged not a lyttle. The houfes and other edifyes of this prouynce, are buylded like vnto towres. It hath also. xv. great townes in it. Of these they affirme that they haue seene sum consistyng of more then. xx. thousande houfes, not ioynyng together, but defeuered with courtes and gardens. They haue also certeyne large market places encompassed with waules, and streates well paved. Likewise fornaces and ouens made of lyme and bricke. Furthermore al fortes of handy craftes men and very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: and the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king kepeth his court, conteineth. xv. thousand houfes. When they receaue any straungiers and make a leage of frendshyppe with them, they are accustomed with a knife made of a sharpe stone, to let them felues bludde in the toonge, hande, arme, or sum other parte of the body: And this euen in the fyght of them whom they admitte to frendshyp, in token that they are ready to shedde

Armure of golde.

Experte artificers

Fysshe hokes of golde.
153The Ilandes of Sacrifice.
Chyldren sacrificed to Idoles.
Their Idoles of marble.

Gold and precious stones.

A stone of great price.

Ilandes of women.

Golde.

Houses lyke towres.
xv. greate townes in the prouince of Colluacana.
Townes of xx. thousande houses

The region of Palmaria.

A token of frendshyp.

Preestes.
154
Chastitie.
The punyshment
of adulterie.
Marriage is
honoured.
Fastyng.

Kynge Ouandus.

Idoles, iewels, and
ouches of gold.

Gold in
mountaynes and
ryuers
Theyr maner of
gatheryng golde.

Sweete sauours.

A stone of great
price.

155

Other viages from
Cuba or
Fernandina.

Many Ilands
betwene Cuba and
the firme lande.

their bludde in their fryndes caufes. Their priestes professe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmarried. What it is to haue to do with women, no man knoweth before he be married. Fornication and adultery (which seldome chaunce emonge them) they counte abhominacion. The women are of maruelous chastitie. Euery noble man after that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lysteth. But a married woman taken in adulterie, is foulded of her husbanded. But this onely to the prince: at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her kynsefolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for fuche as are not married, to fytt at the same table with them that are married, or to eate of the same dyshe or drinke of the same cup. In the moneth of August and September, they absteine. xxxv. dayes not onely from fleshe wherof they haue great plentie, but also from fyshe and al other thynges that lyue by bludde: And duryng these daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yere. Owre men consumed certeyne dayes here verye pleasauntly. When they departed, coastyng styll by the same shore, they came to an other kyng whom they named *Ouandus*. When he had intellygence that owre men desired golde, he brought fourth certeyne plates of molten gold. But when the gouernour signified vnto him by th[e]interpretors that he desired great plentie of that metal, the day folowing he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length: Also a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domesticall goddes of curious woorkemanshyppes. Likewyse garlandes of stonnes of fundry colours, with many breste plattes, brooches, and other kyndes of ornamentes, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore aboundaunce of delycate meates well salted and poudred with spices. When he had required owre men to coome alande, he commaunded his seruantes with all speede to prepare a great multitude of branches of trees and to waite vpon owre men to his pallyce. As they went thus in order, sum behynde and sum before on bothe fydes, they seemed so to shadowe owre men with the boues as though they had gonne in a continuall arbour. The kyng hym selfe hauyng a septer in his hand, dyd sette them in their arraye, and sumtyme strike fuche as were negligent in bearyng their boues. They shewed them selues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenaunce, humbled them selues to receaue his stripes. When he was demaunded where he had fuche plentie of golde, he pointed with his fynger to the next mountaynes, and to the ryuers descending from the same. They are so accustomed to the riuers and exercised in swimmyng, that it is al one to them to liue in the water and on the lande. When they desire to gather golde, they plunge theym selues in the ryuers and bryng from the bottome therof, bothe their handes full of sande, whiche fytyng from hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the space of twoo houres, they fyll a reede as bygge as a mannes fynger. Of the sweete fauours of these landes, many thynges myght be spoken, the whiche bycause they make rather to th[e]effeminate of the myndes of men, then for any necessarye purpose, I haue thought best to omitte them. The kyng also gaue the gouernour a younge virgine of twelue yeres of age, adourned with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the stonnes whiche he had of this kyng, one was valued at twoo thousande Castellans of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng, laden with golde and precious stonnes. *Grifalua* the gouernour, sente one of the Caruelles to his vncler *Diego Velasquen* gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba*, with messengers to delyuer hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornamentes. The resydue in the meane tyme styll folowed the tracte toward the West. One of them in the whiche *Frauncis Montegius* the vnder gouernour was caryed, sayled harde by the shore: and the other twoo kept aloofe within prospecte of the land. Th[e]inhabitauntes of these coastes also, no lesse marueyllyng at the shyppes then dyd the other, came with twelue Canoas to *Montegius*, desyryng hym by th[e]interpretours to coome alande, promysyng in the name of their kyng, that hee shoulde be honorably enterteined. But *Montegius* answered that hee coulde not assente to their request bycause his coompanions were so farre from hym. Yet dyd he gyue them certayne of owre thynges straunge vnto them, and thankes for their gentylnesse. Shortly after espyng a great towne they directed their course thither. Th[e]inhabitauntes prohibyted them to coome alande, and came fourth agaynst them with bowes and quyers full of arrowes, brode swoordes made of heauy woode, and Iauelens hardned at the ende with fier. They shotte at owre men a farre of: And owre men discharged certeyne pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them. The Barbarians astonysshed at the noyse of the gunnes, fledde amayne, and desired peace. Here owre mens vytayles began to fayle them, and theyr shyppes were broosed with longe vyages. Hauyng therefore founde and doone these thynges whereof we haue spoken, *Grifalua* returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* well contented, but so were not his coompanions. We muste nowe diuerte sumwhat from this matter, and speake of an other nauigation. And from thense wyll we returne to these landes which owre men haue founde. So it is therefore, that *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Fernandina*, about the same tyme that he had sent fourth this nauie of foure Caruelles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Caruell and one brygantyne with fortie and fyue men. These exercised vyolent handes agaynst th[e]inhabitauntes of those regions where they arryued, thynkyng that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggyng of golde bycause they were Caffranite Idolaters and circumcised. There are at the sea fyde not farre from the supposed continent, many lyttle Ilandes of moste fortunate and frutefull foyle, whereof three are thus named: *Guanapan*, *Guanguan*, and *Quitilla*. Owte of one of these (which they named *Santa Marina*) they

violently caried away three hundreth men and women which they thrust into the Carauell and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauynge the brigantine with. xxv. of theyr felowes to th[e]intent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell fyrste arryued, is cauled *Carenas*, beinge distante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe citie of *Sanctiago*, two hundreth and fyftie myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reachyng in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancrī* as we haue sayde before. Now shall you heare how fortune fought the reuenge of these pcre wretches. Therefore as theyr keepers went aland and few remained in the Carauel, they perceuing occasion ministred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, foodeynely snatched vp ovr mens weapons and flewe fyxe of them which yet remayned in the Carauel, whyle the residue lepte into the sea. And by this meanes the Barbarians possessed the Carauell which they had foone learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they sayled fyrste to the nexte Ilande where they burnt the Carauell and caried away the weapons with them. From hense they conueyed them felues to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pryuilie assayled them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and flewe many of them also. The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantine where they bewayled theyr felowes deathes and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farre from the place where they suffered this misfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they set vp a croffe, and graued this inscription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldariēci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof standeth the chiefe citie of the supposed continent. The gouernour therefore hauing intelligence herof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnyshed, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were wyse to late. Yet folowynge the viewe of the croffe, they came to the shore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durste not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie souldiers departinge from hense with despayre, they sayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they caried away by violence fyue hundreth men and women, supposynge lykewyse that they myght lawfully so doo bycause they were Icolaters and circumcised. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians espynge oportunitie, sette vppon the Spaniardes in one of the shippes with theyr owne weapons and flewe theyr keepers. The residue that escaped, castynge them selues into the sea, swamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes assayled the carauell that was taken from them. This conflicte was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte shulde obteyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verye fiercely, aswell to recouer theyr libertie, as also to holde faste the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spanyardes had the vpper hande by reason they were more experte in handelynge of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus ouercoome, lepte into the sea: but the Spanyardes tooke theym ageyne with the shippe boates. About a hundreth of the Barbarians peryshed, beinge partely drowned and partly slayne with the swoorde: And but fewe of the Spanyardes. These thynges thus pacified, the resydue of the Barbarians were caried to the towne of *Sanctiago* and condemned to laboure in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made owte a newe vyage to an other of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about so thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in owre sea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades*. Here owre men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arryued there on Easter day whiche the Spanyardes caule the floryshynge day of the resurrection. They say also that in this tracte they sawe. xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpasse: And the same so to lye aboute *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natiue golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum*. Th[e]inhabitanes also weare many iewels, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and also of woodde gylted. Francis Cheregatus brought one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thyng to see what maner of rasers they haue, made of certeyne yelowe stoness cleare and transparent lyke vnto Crystal. With these they shaue and carue as though they were made of fine steele. When the edges are blunte with longe exercise, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kindes of instrumentes or tooles and such other thynges of fyne deuise, which were to longe to rehearse. Let vs therefore returne from wherse we haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Iucatana*, *Colluacana* or *Oloa*, beinge al landes lately founde, and so rich, fruteful and pleasaunt, that they may in maner be compared to the earthly Paradyse. Therefore, after that it was knowen to owre men of howe greate momente these tractes were, the Spanyardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* Anunctus beinge the gouernour of the Ilande furnyshed a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundreth menne, with twoo smaule brigantines, as it weare in the steade of lyght horsemen or forerunners whose ayde they myght vse as scoutes to searche the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or shelves. They shipte also certeyne horses, as fyue stoned horses and. xvi. mares apte for the warres. For their generall gouernour and Admiral of the nauy, they elected *Fernando Cortesius* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of *Sanctiago*. For vnder capitaines, they appointed Alfons *Portucarerius*, Francis Montegius, Alfons

Sanctiago the chiefe citie of Cuba.

The Barbarians sley the Spaniardes with theyr owne weapons.

The chiefe citie of the supposed continent.

The Spanyardes are slayne ageyne with theyr owne weapons.

The barbarians are slaine and put to flyght.

156

Another vyage. *Archipelagus*. A multitude of Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about Hispaniola and Cuba.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and tooles.

Landes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other vyage of x. Carauels and v. hundreth men.

Horses and mares

Fernando Cortesius.

The Iland of
Cozumella.Carpets and
sheetes.
Innumerable
bokes.Circumcised
Idolaters.They Sacrifice
Chyldren

157

The Ilandes of
Distam and
Sestam.
Sacrifice of dogges.They are soone
persuaded to owre
religion.The picture of the
blessed Virgine

An other vyage

Aquillaris, vii.
yeres captiue in
the Iland of
Iucataka.

Valdiuia.

The shipwracke of
Valdiuia.

Auila, Alucrado Spatenfe, Iohn *Velasquen* and *Diegus Ordaffus*. They styll folowed the fame wynde from the last angle of *Cuba* toward the west. As foone as Frauncis Fernandes of Corduba, and then Iohn Grifalua came within prospecte of the Ilande of Sacrifyces (wherof we haue made mention before) fodenly a tempest of contrary wynde prohibited them to take lande and droue them backwarde to *Cozumella* lyinge on the East fyde of *Iucataka*. This Ilande hath onely one hauen named fainte Iohns porte. And hath in it, onely fyxe townes. Also none other water then in welles and cesterns, bycause it lacketh riuers and springes by reason it is plaine, conteynge onely. xlv. myles in circuite. At the coomynge of owre men, th[e]inhabitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, and forfoke their townes for feare. Owre men entered into their houfes where they founde plentie of vyttayles and many ornamentes perteynyng to the furnyshynge of their houfes, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes also of goffampine cotton (whiche they caule *Amaccas*) and muche apparell. They haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the whiche with many other thinges sente to owre newe Emperour, we wyll speake more largely hereafter. The fouldiers wandered about the Iland and viewe[d] al thynges diligently, keypyng them felyes styll in battell raye least they myght be fodenly inuaded. They founde but a fewe of th[e]inhabitauntes and onely one woman in their coompanie. By th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrst from *Iucataka*, they perswaded the woman to caule the kynges that were absente. They came gladly and made a leage of frendshyp with owre men, wherby they were restored to their houfes and a great parte of their stuffe. They are circumcised Idolaters, and sacriyce children of bothe kyndes to their *Zemes*, which are the Images of their familiar and domestical spirites whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus* the pilote, also of Frances Montegius and *Portucarcrius*, from whense they had the children they offered in sacriyce, they answered that they bowght them in the Ilandes thereabout by exchange for golde and other of their trafycke. For in al this so large a space of land, the deuelyshe anxietie for the desyre of wicked money, hath not yet oppressed th[e]inhabitanes. They faye the same also of the Ilandes lately founde, wherof two are named *Deslam* and *Sestam*, whose inhabitauntes go naked: and for scarcenesse of children, sacriyce dogges whiche they nourishe, aswell for that purpose as also to eate as wee do connies. These dogges are dumme and can not barke, hauynge snowtes lyke vnto foxes. Suche as they destinate to eate, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they waxe very fat in the space of foure monethes. They referue al the bytches for increase, and but fewe dogges. Owre men diswaded them from these superstitions, declaryng how they were abhominable and detested of god. They were soone perswaded and desyred a law whiche they myght folowe. Owre men therefore declared vnto them that there was onely one god which made heauen and earth, the geuer of al good thynges, beyng of one incomprehenfyble substauce vnder triplicitie of person. As foone as they harde these woordes, they broke their *Zemes*, and pared, scraped, and washed the pauementes and wauls of their temples. Owre men gaue them a painted picture of the bleffed vyrgine which they placed reuerently in their temple, and aboue it a crosse to be honored in the remembraunce of god and man and the saluation of mankynde. They erected also an other great crosse of woodde in the toppe of the temple, whyther they ostentymes reforte together to honour the Image of the vyrgine. Th[e]inhabitanes signified by th[e]interpretours that in the Iland of *Iucataka* not far from them, there were feuen Christians captiues which in tyme past were dryuen thither by tempeste. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, is onely fyue miles distant from *Iucataka*. The gouernour *Cortefius* being aduertified herof, furnyshed. ii. Carauels with fyftie men, wyllyng them incontinent to direct their viage thither and to make serch for these men. They toke with them thre interpretours of *Cozumella* (whose language agreeth with theirs) with letters to the Christians if any myght be found. He further declared vnto them howe goodly a matter they shulde bringe to passe if they coulde bringe away any of them. For he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he shuld be fully certified of the commodities of all those tractes, and the maners of th[e]inhabitanes. Thus they departed with commaundement to retourne within the space of fyxe dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and hard no worde of their *Cozumellane* interpretours whome they had sent alande with the message and letters, owre men returned to *Cozumella* without them, suspectyng that they were other flaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determyned to depart from *Cozumella* but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they fodenly espied towarde the weste a Canoa coomynge from *Iucataka*, and in it, one of the Christian captiues (named *Hieronimus Aquillaris*) who had lyued feuen yeres in that Ilande. With what ioye they embrased the one the other, the chance may declare. They were no lesse desyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myfffortune whiche befell to hym and his coompanions. And here it shal not bee greatly from my purpose breiefely to rehearse how the thyng chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named *Valdiuia*, whome the Spanyardes whiche inhabited *Dariena* in the supposed continente of the goulf of *Vraba*, sent to the Iland of *Hispaniola* to *Colonus* the Admiral and viceroy with the residue of the Senate and counfel there (to whom perteyneth the redresse and orderynge of all thinges in these newe landes) to sygnifye vnto them in what extreme necessitie and penurie they lyued. Vnhappy *Valdiuia* therefore, takynge this matter in hand in an euell houre, was with a sudder and vyolent whirlewinde

dryuen vppon certayne quickefandes in the prospecte of the Ilande of *Jamaica*, lyinge in the Southe fyde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*. These blind and fwalowyng fandes, the Spaniardes caule vipers: And that by good reafon, bycause in them many shyppes are entangled, as the lycertes are implicate in the tayles of the vipers. While the Carauell thus wresteled with the water, it was so bruste in funder, that *Valdiuia* with thirtie of his felowes, coulde scarfely with muche difficultie descende into the shyppe boate: where, without oers, and without fayles, they were caried awaye by the vyolence of the water. For (as we haue said before in owre Decades) the seas do runne there continually with a vyolent course towarde the West. They wandered thus. xiii. dayes not knowyng whyther they went nor yet fyndyng any thyng to eate. Famen confumed feuen of them whiche were caste in the sea to feede the fyshes. The resydue lykewise in maner confumed by famen and faulyng from one calamitie into an other, were driuen to *Iucatana* and fell into the handes of a cruell kynge who flewe *Valdiuia* the gouernour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had fyrst sacrfyced them to his *Zemes*, shortely after he eate them with his frindes of that conspiracie. For they eate onely their enemyes and straungiers: And doo otherwise absteyne from mannes fleshe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris* with fyxe of his felowes were referued to be sacrfyced the thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, escaped the handes of that cruell tyranne, and fledde to an other kynge beyng his enemye, who receaued them, yet onely as bondemen. It is a straunge thinge to heare of the moother of this *Aquillaris*. For as soone as she harde that her soonne was faulen into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleshe, shee fell madde incontinent: So that when so euer after, shee sawe any meate rostyng at the fyer, or onely ready spytted to laye to the fyer, shee ceafed not to crye out in this maner. O me moste wretched moother: Behold the members of my son. But to returne to owre purpose. When *Aquillaris* had now receaued the gouernours letter sente by the Cozumellane messengers, hee declared to the kynge his mayster (whose name was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfore they were sent: vsyng in the meane tyme many large discourfes in expreffyng the great poure and magnificence of their kynge who had of late arriued in those coastes. Also of their humanitie and gentilnesse toward their frindes and fuche as submytted them selues to them, and againe their rygour and fiercenesse ageynst fuche as stobornly eyther contemned them or denyed their requestes. With these woordes he broughte *Taxmarus* into fuche feare, that the maister was now fayne to desyre his seruauant so to handell the matter that they myght quyetly enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as his enemies. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe that they shuld not onely coome in peace, but also to ayde hym ageynst his enemyes if neede shulde so require. Whervppon hee dismissed *Aquillaris* and with hym three of his familiers and coompanions. Thus they sayled together from *Cozumella* to *Iucatana* to the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the fyrste vyage thither by the gouernance of Alaminus the pilot. They found the mouthe of the ryuer stopped with sande, as wee reade of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egipte when the wyndes (cauled *Etefi*) blowe in summer and especially in the canicular dayes. Therefore where as they coulde not enter into the ryuer with the biggeste vesselles (although it bee otherwise apte to receaue great shyppes) the gouernour caused two hundreth men to be fette alande with the brigantynes and shyppe boates: wyllyng *Aquillaris* to offer peace to th[e] inhabitants. They demaunded what owre men required. *Aquillaris* answered, vyttayles. There was a longe space of sande by the fyde of the towne, whither they wylled them to resorte, promyfyng to bryng them vyttayles thither the daye folowyng. Owre men wente and they came accordyng to their promisse and brought with them eyght of their hennes beyng as bygge as peacockes, of brownysh coloure, and not inferiour to peacockes in pleasaunte tast. They brought also as muche bread made of *Maizium* (whiche is a graine not muche vnylike vnto panyke) as wolde scarceiy ferue tenne hungry men: And here with desyred them to depart. But when they perceaued that owre men made no haft away, immediately there came a great coompanye of armed men towarde theym demaundyng what they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Owr men made answere by *Aquillaris*, that they desyred peace, vyttayles, and golde for exchange of other thinges. They answered ageyne, that they wolde nother peace nor warre with them. But threatned them to auoyde the lande excepte they wolde bee distroyed euery manne. Owre men fayde that they woulde not departe withowte suffyciente vyttayles to mayntayne their fouldyers.

They appoynted the day folowyng to bryng them more vttayles: but they brooke promesse. Yet perceauyng the second day that owre men were encamped on the sande and had reposed there that nyght, they brought them as much more vttayles, and commaunded them in the name of theyr kynge to departe. Owre men fayde that they were desyrous to see the towne, and to haue yet more store of vttayles. The Barbarians denyed theyr request, and therwith departed whispyng and mutteryng amonge them selues. In the meane tyme owre men were styll so oppressed with hunger that they were enforced to seeke for meate. The gouernour therefore sent his vnder capitaynes to lande with a hundreth and fyftie men. As they went disperfed in dyuers companyes about the vyllages of the countrey, the Barbarians met with one of theyr bandes, and put them to great distresse. But when theyr felowes beinge not farre from them, harde the noyse of theyr alarome,

The quickesandes
cauled vipersThe course of the
sea towarde the
west.

158

Valdiuia is
sacrificed to
Idoles.Howe Aquillaris
escaped

Kynge Taxmarus.

The mouth of a
ryuer stopped with
sande.

Turky hens

159

A conflict.

The Barbarians
are put to flyght.

The great towne of
Potanchana or
Victoria.
A towne of xxv.
thousand houses.

Gunnes and horses.

The man and the
horse, thought to
be one beast.
Centaurus.

Palaces of
maruelous bygnes
and wel buylded.

They receue owre
religion.

160

A towne of a
thousand and fyue
hundred houses.

they came with all possible haste to theyr rescue. The gouernour on the other fyde, placinge his ordinance in the brygantines and shippe boates, approched to the shore with the residue of his souldiers. The Barbarians lykewise, beinge redy furnyshed to the battayle, came runnyng to the sea fyde to disturbe theym that they shulde not coome alande: And with theyr arrowes, wounded manye a farre of vnprepared. The gouernoure discharged aboute. xx. pieces of ordinaunce ageynste them: With the slaughter and terrible thunder wherof, and with the flame of fyer and sinel of brimstone, they were so astonished and put to such feare, that they fled and disparcelled lyke wylde beastes: whom owre men persuinge, entered the towne which th[e]inhabitantes forsooke in maner for feare of theyr owne men whom they sawe so dismayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of such portentous byggenes as I dare not speake. But *Alaminus* the pylot, sayth that it conteyneth in circuite fyue hundreth myles, and that it consisteth of. xxv. thousande houses. Some make it sumwhat lesse: But they all agree that it is exceedyng great and notable. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are buylded of lyme and stone verye artificially and of cunnyng workemanshippe. To theyr haules, chambers, parlors, or other places of habitation, they ascende by tenne or twelue steares: And haue certeyne spaces betwene euery house: so that it is not lawful for any to lade his neighbours waules with rafters or beames. Theyr houses are separate one from an other by the space of three houses: And are for the more parte couered with reede and thetche: And many also with slate or other stone. The barbarians them selues confessed that they were that day fortie thousande men at the battayle, which were vanquished of a fewe by reason of the newe and vnknowne kynde of feyght with gunnes and horses. For the gouernour had vnbarcked. xvi. horses which were also at the battayle, and so fiercely assayed the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake theyr array and scattered them as it had byn flockes of sheepe, ouerthrowing, woundyng, and kyllyng them on euery fyde. Whiche thyng the feely wretches so imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie theyr wepons. For wheras before they had neuer seene any horses, they thought that the man on horsebacke and the horse, had byn all one beaste, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monster *Centaurus*. Owr men possessed the towne. xxii. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the firmament and durst not assaye owre men who had placed them selues in the strongest parte of the towne, where sume keppe continuall wathe (least the Barbarians shulde foodenly inuade them) whyle other gaue them selues to reste and sleepe. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this towne *Potanchana*: But owre men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thyng to consider the greatenes, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaces they haue in the countrey to the which they reforte sumtymes for theyr solace and pastyme. These are curiously buylded with many pleasaunt diuises, as galleries, solars, turrets, portals, gutters with chambers boorded after the maner of owre waynscotte and well flowred. Foure of owre Spanyardes went into one of them of such greatnes, that they wandered in the same for the space of foure houres before they coulde fynde the waye owt. At the length by th[e]interpretours and certeyne captiues owre men sent for the kynge and suche rulers as were nexte vnder hym in autoritie, wyllyng them to submyt them selues and to coome into the towne vnarmed. Gyuinge the messengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in their so doinge, they wolde commen with them as concernyng conditions of peace, and restore them theyr towne. They came gladly, and entered euery man into his owne house vppon condition that they shulde euer thereafter absteyne from such cerimonies and horrible sacrifices of mans fleshe to deuils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whose Images they honoured. And to directe the eyes of theyr myndes to Christe owre god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and suffered death on the crosse for the redemption of mankynde. And fynally to professe them selues subiectes to the great Christian kynge of Spayne. They promysed both, and were instructed as farre as the shortenes of tyme wolde permitte. Beinge thus restored, they recompensed owre men with many rewardes: Supposyng suche men to be sent from heauen, which being so fewe in number, durst attempte battayle ageynst so great a multitude. They gaue owre men also certeyne golde and twentie slaues. Departing therefore from hense, and coastyng styll alonge by the same shore, they came ageyne to the goulfe whiche *Alaminus* the pylot founde before vnder *Grifalua*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Iohns goulfe: For *Bian* in the Spanysh tonge signifieth a goulfe. Here th[e]inhabitantes reforted to them peaceably. Aboute a myle frome the shore, was a towne of a thousande and fyue hundreth houses situate vppon a hyll. They profered owre men halfe the towne if they wolde dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather eyther fearyng th[e]example of th[e]inhabitantes of *Potanchana*, the same wherof myght haue coome to theyr eares, or els hopynge that vnder the shadowe of suche valiant menne, they myght obteyne ayde and succour ageynst theyr enemies and bortherers. For (as I haue sayde before) they dystroye one an other with continuall warre for the desyre to enlarge theyr dominions. Owr men refused perpetuall habitation, and accepted theyr frendely profer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on euery fyde with boues in theyr handes which they helde ouer owre mens heades to defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a continual arbour. Here they encamped. And least the residue lefte in the shippes, shulde in the meane tyme waxe slothefull with Idlenes,

the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pylot and Francis Montegius to searce the west partes of that lande, whyle he relieued the weried souldiers and healed fuche as were wounded. To them that went forward on this vyage, he assigned two brigantines with fiftie men. Vnto this goulfe, the course of the water was gentyl enough and moderate. But when they had fayled a lyttle further towarde the Weste, they founde the sea runnyng with so swift a course as if it were a great ryuer faulyng from the tops of hygh mountaynes: In so much that in a shorte space of tyme it caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entered into this violent streame of the water, they sawe on their left hand a large playne sea which mette with the course of the other waters faulyng from the weste. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conflycte where they meete, so seemed the waters commyng from the Southe to refyft these waters as enemyes that had entered into the ryght or possessyon of an other. On the contrary parte, they sawe the lande reachyng farre bothe on the lefte hande and on the ryght. In this strife betwene the waters, they were so tossed on bothe fydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wrestled with owte hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turnyng the stemmes or forpartes of their shyppes ageynst the streame from whense they came, and labouryng al that they myght with their oers and sayles, they coude scarfely ouercoome the rage of the water: In so much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght fayled twoo myles, they founde that they were dryuen backe foure myles. Yet at the length with goddes helpe, they ouercame this daungerous conflycte. They spente. xxii. daies in this lyttle space of sea: And when they were nowe returned to their felowes, declared vnto them that that ende was the land of *Colluacana* whiche they adiudged to be parte of the supposed continent. The lande whiche they sawe a farre of before their safe, they supposed eyther to be annexed to owre continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Baccalaos*, wherof we haue made mention in our Decades in the vyage of Sebastian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtfull. But wee truste it shall once bee better knowen. While *Alaminus* and Montegius searched these secreates, the kynge of the prouince (whose name was *Multoxumam*) sent owre men by one of his chiefe offycers (beyng also his Lieutenant of the sayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stoones, sette and wroughte after a marueylous straunge deuysse and with no lesse cunnyng workemanshyp. Here they determined to sende messengers to owre newe Emperour to knowe his pleasure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withowte th[e] aduise of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba Fernandina*, who fyrste sente them forth with commaundement to returne ageyne after they had searched these regions and obteyned plentie of golde. While they consulted hereof, they were of dyuers opinions. But the mooste part alleaged that in this case it was not requisyte to make the gouernour of their counsaile. Forasmuche as the matter shulde be referred to a higher Iudge, as to the kyng of Spaine him selfe. When they were thus agreed, they receaued vyttayles of the gentle kyng of the prouince, and assigned the place of their colonie twelue myles from the sayde towne, in a fruteful and holsome soyle. For their generall gouernour, they elected *Cortefius* the gouernour of the nauye, against his wyll as sum faye. For other magistrates to gouerne the citie which they intended to build he choose *Portucarerius* and Montegius of whome we haue made mention before. They chose also certeyne messengers to sende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylot. Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered them selues wyllingly to go with owre men into Spaine to th[e] intent to see owre landes and that kynge whose poure is soo great and whose auctoritie reacheth so farre. They brought lykewise two women with them, which serued and obeied them in all thinges after the maner of theyr countrey. The people of this nation is of broune or yelowyshe colour. Bothe the men and the women haue pendautes of gold and precious stonnes hanginge at their eares. The men also, boore their nether lypes full of holes from the vppermoste parte of the lippe euen vnto the nethermoste parte of the gumme. At these they hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and syluer fastned to a smaule and thynne plate lyinge within betwene the lippe and the gumme. At the byggest hole in the myddest of the lip, there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer as brode as the coyne cauled a *Corolyne*, and as thicke as a mannes fynger. I do not remember that euer I sawe any thyng that seemed more fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may see howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne blyndnesse. The Ethiopian thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwise. They that are pouled, thinke that more decent then to weare a bush and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformitie to be shauen. As appetite therefore moueth, and not as reason perswadeth, men runne after vanities: And euery prouince is ruled by their owne sense, as writeth faint Ierome. From whense they haue their golde, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But as owre men marueyled where they had their syluer, they shewed them certayne hygh mountaynes whiche are continually couered with snowe fauyng that at certeyne tymes of the yeare, the onely toppes are sene bare bicause the snow is there molten by reason of the thicke and warme cloudes. The playnes therefore, or mylde, softe, and pleasaunt mountaynes seeme to bryng forth the golde: And the rough craggye mountaynes with their coude valleyes, are the places where syluer

An other vyage of two brigantines and fiftie men.

Where the sea runneth swyftly from the East to the West.
A conflict betwene the waters comming from the west and from the south.

A dangerous and painefull vyage.

The land of Colluacana.

The land of Baccalaos or Baccalarum

Rych presentes of golde and precious stonnes.

161

A newe colonie.

This Cortesius hath written a booke of these thinges

They weare rynges and plates at ther lypes.

The dyuers phantasies of men.

Syluer

Note where gold and syluer are engendered.

I thinke this laton
to be sum kynde
of pure copper, or
els copper that
holdeth golde. For
laton is an artificial
metal, and hath no
naturall myne
Theyr bokes

162

Theyr letters

What is conteyned
in theyr bookes.

Temples rychly
adorned.

Prayer.

They sacryfice
chylidren and
captiues.

A wronge way to
heauen

Bluddy gods

*Villa Ricca.**Siuilla Noua.*

The force of an
owlde errour.

Theyr priests lyue
chast.

Faggots of bones.

is engendered. They haue also laton, wherof they make such maces and hammers as are vsed in the warres. Dyggynge mattookes also, and spades: for they haue nother Iren nor fleele. But lette vs nowe speake of the presentes fente into Spayne to the kyng: and fyrste of the bokes. These procuratours therfore of the newe colonie of the prouynce of *Colluacana*, among other their presentes, brought also a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of the inner ryndes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that of the elme or of the falowe. These they smere or annoint with the pytche of molten *Bitumen*, and while they be softe, extend them to what forme them lysteth. When they be coulde and harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playster. It is to bee thoughte that they beate the playster into fine floure, and so temperynge it with sum byndynge moister, to make a cruete therwith vppon the leaues, wheron they wryte with any sharpe instrument, and blotte the same againe with a sponge or sum suche other thyng, as marchaunt men and noble mens stewardes are accustomed to do with their wrytynge tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues of their bokes are not fet in order after the maner of owres, but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whiche they wryte, are conteyned in square tables: Not loose, but so bounde together with the toughe and flexible cley cauled *Bitumen*, that they seeme lyke wooden tables whiche had byn vnder the handes of cunning bokebynders. Which way so euer the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues seene and two fydes written, with as many linge hyd vnder them, excepte the booke be vnfoulded in length. For vnder one leafe there are many leaues ioyned togyther. The formes of their letters are nothyng lyke vnto owres. But are muche more crooked and entangled, lyke vnto fyshehookes, knottes, snares, starres, dise, fyles, and suche other muche lyke vnto the Egiptian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto owres. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the shapes of men and dyuers beastes: And especially the Images of kynges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in suche bookes, the factes of their kynges are conteyned as wee see the lyke emonge vs howe owre printers expresse the summe of histories in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye suche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are also artificially wrought and paynted. When they are shutte, they seeme to differre nothyng from owres in forme. In these bookes are furthermore comprehended their lawes, rytes of ceremonies and sacryfices, annotations of Astronomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of graffynge, fowyng, and other thynges perteinyng to husbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goynge downe of the feuen starres cauled *Vergilia* or *Pleiades*: And counte theyr monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the moone. For in their language, they caule the moone *Tona*, they reken the dayes by the foonnes. Therefore as many daies as they name, they faye, so many foonnes. The foonne in their tonge, is cauled *Tonatico*. They distribute the yeare (without any reason why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges and other ornamentes of golde and syluer with precious stonnes intermixte. At the sprynge of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankensence and make their praiers before they take in hande any other busynesse. But oh horrible crueltie. For th[e] inhabitants of all these tractes also, doo sacryfice children to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue fayde before. At suche tyme as the feedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to shewe foorth the eare, they destinate to their *Zemes* suche bondmen as they haue bought, or suche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they sacryfice after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Also before they sacryfice these poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people salute them humbly and reuerently, affyrmyng that in shorte space, they shalbe receaued into the companye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other sharp kind of deuotion: For they lette them felues bludde, eyther in the tonge, lyps, eares, legges, thyghes, or brest, which they take in their handes and hurle it vppe towarde heauen, soo that with the faule therof the pauement of the temple is all sparckled with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleased. From the newe colonie (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles distante, there is a towne of. xv. thousande houfes, whiche th[e] inhabitants caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kyng of this towne had fyue men whiche he referued to be sacryficed. Whom when owre men wold haue delyuered, the kyng made humble request to them, fayinge that if they tooke awaye suche men as he had consecrated to be offered to the goddes, they shulde brynge vtter destruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre sacryfices (fayd he) do cease, owre *Zemes* wyll take suche displeasure with vs that they wyll suffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee consumed of woormes, scortched with drowth, destroyed with fluddes, or blasted with lyghtnyng. Owre men perceauynge his earnestnesse herein, thought it beste to chose the least euel, perceauynge that it was yet no tyme to disquyet their myndes, and therefore suffered them to exercise their accustomed ceremonies. And althoughe their priestes promysse theym immortall glorie, eternall felicitye, and perpetuall conuersation with the goddes after the stormye dayes of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenaunces giue eare to their promisses, and had rather be fette at lybertie. Their priestes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the fyngular. They leade a pure and chaste lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make faggots of the bones of their enemyes which they haue taken in the warres,

and hange vppe the fame at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obteyned by their fauour. To these they adde certayne titles and supercriptions as testimonies of the fame. This is straunge and woorthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeare oulde, the priestes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmuryng woordes, poure water in forme of a crosse vpon their heades with a cruet, wherby they feeme to baptise them. Neyther do they as the Iewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a straunge religion bee present at their facrifices and other solemnitie. Wee haue nowe spoken suffyciently of their bookes, temples, and superstitions. Lette vs nowe therefore coome to the other presentes which were brought to the kyng. Emonge these, there were twoo broode and rounde plates (whiche summe haue named the Images of the soone and moone) the one of siluer and the other of gold in largeness and roundnesse muche lyke to the stones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one of circumference, that is. xxviii. spannes in circuite.

That of golde is of the weyght of three thousande and. viii. hundreth Castellans, where as wee haue fayde before that a Castellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more than a Ducate by a trient, that is the thyrde parte of a pounce. In the center of this, was the Image of a kyng of halfe a cubette longe, fyttinge in a t[h]rone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumette, with such countenance as owre paynters are wonte to paynte fayries or sprites. About the Image, were the shapes of trees and floures, so that it seemed to fytt as though it had byn in a felde. The other of syluer, was made to the same similitude, beinge also in maner of the same weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyse certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, suche as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fytches or the pulfe cauled lintels in token of plentie of natie golde. Also two cheynes of golde, wherof the one conteyned. viii. lynkes in the whiche were set two hundreth threescore and twoo fayre and cleare redde stones, and yet no rubyes: furthermore, a hundreth fourescore and three greene stones, and yet no emerodes. Neuerthelesse, these are in lyke estimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange. xxvii. golden belles, hauynge betwene euery of them, foure iewels of precious stones inclosed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne spangels of golde. The other cheyne consisteth onely of foure golden lynkes, befet rounde about with a hundreth and two redde stones, and a hundreth threescore and twelue greene stones, with. xxvi. golden belles curiously wrought and placed in comely order. In the verye myddest of the cheyne, are ten great precious stones inclosed in golde, at the whiche also hange a hundreth golden pendauntes of cunnyng woorkmanship. They brought furthermore twelue paire of lether buskynnes of diuers colours, summe imbrothered with gold and summe with syluer, with plates and ieweltes of golde and precious stones inclosed, and at euery of them certayne golden belles. Also certeyne myters befette with precious stoones of dyuerse colours, emonge the whiche some are blewe like vnto saphires. Of crestes, gerdles, and fannes made of fethers, I wotte not what I shulde saye. But fuerly if euer the wyttes and inuentions of men haue deserued honoure or commendacion in suche artes, these seeme moste woorthy to bee had in admiracion. I do not maruaile at golde and precious stones. But am in maner astonysed to see the woorkmanship excell the substance. For I haue with woonderyng eyes behelde a thousande formes and similitudes, of the which I am not able to wryte. And in my iudgement, I neuer sawe any thing whose bewtie myght so allure the eyes of men. As they marueyled at the naturall bewtie of the fethers of owre peacockes and pheafantes, so dyd we no lesse maruel at the artificial bewtie of suche thinges as they make of fethers and quilles impaled with golde. For I sawe in manye of their woorkes, all maner of natie colours euen in the quilles wherof they make suche instrumentes. They brought also two helmettes garnysshed with precious stones of a whiteshe blewe colour. One of these is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder euery bell two knobbes of golde. The other, beyde the stones wherwith it is couered, is lykewyse edged with. xxv. golden belles and knobbes: and hath on the crest, a greene bird with the feete, bylle, and eyes, of golde. Also foure speares muche lyke vnto troute speares or yele speares, the woodde wherof is all couered with quilles of diuers colours marueilously wrethed with golden wyers and plates intermyxte. Euery of these speares haue three pikes, whose edges or teeth are all of precious stones made faste with wyers of golde. Of like workmanship they brought a great scepter byset with precious stoones and belles of gold, also a braslet of gold, and shoues made of a hartes skynne, fowed and imbrothered with golden wyers, with a white sole beneth. Furthermore a glasse of a bryght blewe stone, and an other of white, both enclosed in golde. Likewise a precious stone of the kynde of them that are cauled *Sphinges*, inclosed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lyfarde, two great shelles, two duckes, the shapes of diuers other byrdes, foules, and fyshes, and all of massie golde. Furthermore. xxiiii. rounde and square targettes, shieldes, and buckelers of golde, and syue of syluer. Also a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde marueylously wreathed with quilles and fethers of diuers colours, hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hange foure other plates like crosses of gold in the whiche are grauen the heades of diuers beastes, as lyons, tygers, woulues, and such other. They brought also the fymlitudes of certeyne beastes made summe of roddes or twygges, and sum of woodde with the beastes owne

163

A fygure of
baptisme.The presentes sent
into Spayne to the
kyng.Two Images of
gold and syluer.Two cheines of
gold marueilously
byset with precious
stones and iewels.

Buskyns.

Myters.

How can we then
caul them beastly
or Barbarous.If they had
changed their
gold for owre Iren,
they had not so
soone byn subdued.

Quylles.

Helmets.

A byrde.

Speares.

A scepter.

A braslet.

Shooes.

164

Glasses.

Byrdes, foules, and
fyshes of gold.Targets, etc. of
gold.

A crowne of golde

Crosses.

Images of beastes.
Shietes.

Cloth of arras.
Asouldyers clooke.

Registers of the
th[e]affayres of
India.

Th[e]autoritie of
the Lieuetenaunt.

The Spanyardes
of Dariena.

*Sancta Maria
Antiqua.*

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spanyardes name
Pedrarias.
This sea the
spanyardes caule
Mar del sur.

165

Contention
betwene Vaschus
and Petrus Arias.

Petrus Arias
commandeth that
Vaschus be put
to death.

Vaschus is
accused.

Vaschus is put to
death.

skynnes theron, and garnysshed with collers of laton belles. Lykewise diuers shietes weaued of goffampyne cotton of fundry colours, wherof two are rychely frynged with golde and precious stoncs, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyxte with goffampine cotton of fundrye colours and chekered lyke the panes of a cheste borde. Sum are on the one fyde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other fyde, plaine without any varietie. Other sum, are wrought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddeft intermyxte with shyning fethers and sparkes of golde lyke flarres. They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure of marueylous workmanshyppc. Likewise a souldiers cloke fuche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne priuye coates of fence, and fundrye tirementes perteynyng to their heades, with also many fuche other thynges more bewtiful to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to entreate particularly, it shoulde be more tedious then profytable. I lette passe here also to speake of many particular nauigations and of the trauailes and daungers whiche they susteyned in the same, with the moniters and secretes of nature they fawe: whiche are all conteyned in the registers of owre Senate of th[e]affayres of India, owte of the whiche I haue selected these fewe annotations, fuche as seemed to me mozte meete to bee publifshed. Notwithstandyng these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them; and also *Cortefus* the gouernour of the nauye and autour of erectinge their newe colonie in those remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue doen ageinst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same withowte th[e]aduice of the gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba* who fente them foorth by the kynges auctoritie, where as they dyd other thinges befylde their commyffyon, ye althoughe they wente to the kyng, not fyrst knowynge his pleafure whom the kyng had substitute his Lieuetenaunt in that Ilande. In so muche that by his procuratour, he accused them before the Senate as fugitiue theeues and traytours. They on the other parte alleaged that they had dooen the kyng better seruyce then he: And that they had shewed suffycient obedience in appealyng to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commission and the kinges letters pattentes that they myght be headed for their difobedience ageinst hym whom they knewe to be autorifed by the kyng. They ageine replied that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauails. Bothe the rewarde and punishment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe parties shoulde bee harde. Leete vs nowe therfore coome to the Spaniardes of *Dariena*, th[e]inhabitours of the goulfe of *Vra^t* in the supposed Continent. We haue sayde before that *Dariena* is a ryuer runnyng towarde the Weste fyde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted theyr fyrst colonie or halitation after they had vanquifshed kyng *Chemaccus*. This colonie they named *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, by reason of a vowe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile ageynst *Chemaccus*. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of owre decades) was *Petrus Arias* fente with a thousande and two hundreth men at the request of *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa*, who was then the gouernour of *Dariena*, and the fyrst that found and discourd the large South sea heretofore vnknown. Wee haue also declared how at the arriual of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour, he deuided his armye into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundrethes, whom hee sent foorth dyuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I wyll absolue in fewe woordes, bycause all are horrible and vnpleafaunte. For fence we fynyshe owre Decades, there hath byn none other then kyllynge, fleyng, murtheryng and accusyng. The kyng made *Vaschus* gouernoure but duryng his pleafure. His courage was fuch, and his factes so notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the hautynes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, theyr faulyng owte and discord confounded al thynges. Iohn Cacedus the pulpitte fryer of the order of saynt Frances, dyd his vttermofte endeuour to make them frendes, promyfyng vnto *Vaschus* the dowghter of *Petrus Arias* to wyfe. But no meanes coulde be founde howe these two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agreement. At the length the matter grewe to such extremitie, that *Petrus Arias* fyndyng occasion of querelyng ageynste *Vaschus*, sent proceffe to the maiestrates of the towne, wherby he commaunded them to frangle *Vaschus*, and fyue other which were chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: Alleagyng that they and their confetherates conspired to rebel in the South sea: And that *Vaschus* hym selfe for that intente, had buylded and furnished foure shippes to search the south coastes of the supposed continent: Also that to his three hundreth souldiers and companions which he had with hym, he shulde speake woordes of this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my longe peynes and trauayles: Howe longe shall we be subiecte to the commaundement of other, fythe wee haue bydden the brunt and ouercumme th[e]enterprife for the whiche this newe gouernour was sent with so great a multitude? Who can any longer abyde his pryde and insolencie? Lette vs therefore folowe these coastes whyther so euer fortune shall dryue vs: And among these so many pleafaunt and fruteful prouinces of this large lande, let us chose one in the whiche wee maye with libertie spende that portion of owre lyues which yet remayneth. Who can fynde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs vyolence? When these or the lyke woordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*, he fente to the Southe partes for *Vaschus*, wyllynge hym by the vertue of his commission to repayre to him foorthwith. *Vaschus* obeyed, and at his comynge was caste in pryson: yet constantly denyng that euer he entended any fuche thyng. Wytneffes were brought ageynst hym, and his wordes rehearsed from the begynnyng. To conclude, he was iudged woorthy death, and was put to

execution. And this is the rewarde wherwith the blynde goddeffe oftentimes recompenseth such as haue fusteyned great traunayles and daungiours to bee hyghly in her fauoure. *Petrus Arias* leauynge his wyfe in *Dariena*, embarked hym selfe in the shippes left of *Vaschus*, to th[e]intent to searche those coastes. But whether he be returned or not, we haue yet no certeyne knoweledge. He hath also his fortune. Yet is there an other gouernour assigned, whose name is *Lupus Sofa*, the viceroye of the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What stomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothyng doone vnder hym woorthy glorie. Some thynke that he was at the begynnyng so slacke and negligent in his office, and not feure in correctyng errors and misorders. But we wyll leaue him and rehearse sumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed as touchyng the great and diepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatnes and largenes therof, owre men named *Grandis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in owre Decades. This riuer fauleth into the furthest corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* by feuen portes or mowthes as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian sea, whose large description yowe may also reade in owre Decades. That the mountaynes on euery syde about this ryuer, are ryche in golde, we haue learned by th[e]information of th[e]inhabitauntes, of whom we made diligent inquisition. *Vaschus*, and befyde hym other gouernoures and Lieutenantes, haue foure tymes entered into this ryuer with their armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes fyrste for the space of fortie myles, then fyftie, and at the last fourescore, at an other tyme also ouerthwarte the ryuer. Oh shamefull chaunce and detestable couwardenes of owre men. A naked nation encounteryng with them that had apparell, the armed ageynste the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in maner in all conflictes, and were other all slayne or wounded. They vse inuenemed arrowes, and are fuche experte archers, that if they espye any place of theyr enemye bare or vnarmed, they wyll not lyghtly fayle to stryke him there. They vse also many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the sonne from theyr enemies as it were with a clowde. They haue lykewise brode and longe swoordes made of a heauie and harde kinde of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande. *Vaschus* hym selfe receaued many woundes in encounteryng with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenes of these barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet lefte vnsearched. We wil nowe speake sumwhat more of the Iland of *Hispaniola* (which the Spanyardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chiefe of al other landes or Ilandes wherof we entended to wryte. In it the Senate is now restored, and fyue Iudges assigned to giue lawes to all the inhabitauntes of those tractes. But in shorte tyme, they shall cease gatheryng of golde although there bee greate plentie: by reason they shall lacke labourers and myners, forasmuch as th[e]inhabitauntes whose helpe they vsed herein, are brought to a smaule number, consumed partly by warre, and many more by famen that yeare that they dygged vp the rootes wherof they made theyr beste breade, and lefte of sowyng theyr grayne of *Maizium* which is theyr common foode, supposyng hereby to haue dryuen owre men owte of the Ilande, who had vytayles sente them from Spayne. A great number of them also, dyed of newe and straunge diseases which in the yeare of Christe a thousande fyue hundreth and. xviii. consumed theym lyke rotton sheepe.

And (to saye the truth) owre mens vnfacible desyre of gold, so oppressed these poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and pastymes as daunsyng, fysshinge, foulyng, and huntynge of lyttle conies, that many of them perished euen for verye anguyse of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccustomed labour) are thynges of them selues suffycient to engender many newe diseases. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe determyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them selues onely to increase, and tyllage of the ground: And that onely such as are bought or taken owte of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it shall suffyce to haue sayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde. Therefore to speake of other matters: It is a marueylous thyng to confyder howe all thynges increase and prosper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii. fuger preffes wherwith great plentie of fuger is made. The canes or reedes wherin the fuger groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne, and higher then the stature of a man, by the halfe. This is more woonderfull, that where as in Valentia in Spaine (where a great quantitye of fuger is made yearely) where so euer they applye them selues to the great increase therof, yet doth euery roote bring forth the not paste fyue, or syxe, or at the moste feuen of those reedes: wheras in *Hispaniola* one roote beareth twentie, and oftentimes thirtie. Foure footed beastes and cattayle, are marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the rauenyng hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered owre men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there great plentye of wheate, whiche prospereth so wel that it yealdeth sumtyme a hundreth fould: And this especially on the hylles or rydges of the mountaynes prospectyng toward the North. Vines do also increase here with no lesse frutefulness. What shuld I speake of the trees that beare *Cassia fistula*, brought first into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the supposed Continent, as we haue noted in our decades? There is nowe fuche plentie hereof, that after a fewe yeares we shall haue a pounce of the price that wee paye nowe for an ounce. Of the bresyle and mirobalane trees, with other innumerable prerogatiues and benefites whiche nature hath plentifully giuen to this blessed Iland, we haue spoken suffyciently

*Petrus Arias.**Lupus Sosa.*The great ryuer of
Dabaiba or
*Grandis*The goulfe of
Vraba.The ryche
mountaynes of
Dabaiba.Fierce and warlyke
people.

Dartes.

Swoordes of
heauie wood.

166

Hispaniola.
Quiedus wryteth
that ther are nowe
v. monasteries.Newe and strange
diseases.The suger of
Hispaniola.

Suger of Valentia.

A token of
maruelous
frutfulness.

Cattayle.

Wheate.

Vines.

Cassia fistula.Brasyle.
Mirobalanes

in ovr decades. Yet haue I thought good to repeate part of the fame, bycause I think that the wittes of many readers haue diuerted from the weyght of great affaires, to the recordation of fuch pleafaunt thynges. And yet do not fuche thynges as are fauery, engender tedy-oufneffe, foe that a precious matter bee adourned with a precious vesture.

FINIS.



167 EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV
DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE
CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS

Alexander eius nominis sextus, con-
cessit et donavit Castellæ regibus
et suis successoribus, regiones
et Insulas noui orbis
Occidentali: Hispani-
æ in nauigationi-
bus repertas.:

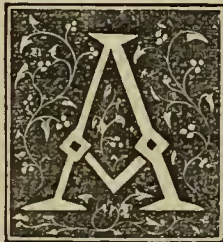


ALEXANDER EPISCOPVS, seruus
seruorum Dei, Charissimo in Christo
filio Ferdinando Regi, et Charissi-
mæ in Christo filiae Elizabeth Re-
ginæ Castellæ, Legionis, Aragonum,
Siciliæ, et Granatæ, illustribus, salu-
tem et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maiestati beneplacita opera
et cordis nostri desiderabilia, illud profecto potissimum
existit vt fides catholice et Christiana religio nostris
præfertim temporibus cultetur ac vbilibet ampliatur
ac dilatetur, animarum salus procuretur, ac barbaræ
nationes deprimantur et ad fidem ipsam reducantur.
Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Petri sedem Diuina fauente
clementia (meritis licet imparibus) euocati fueremus,
cognoscentes vos tanquam veros catholicos reges et
principes: quales semper fuisse nouimus, et a vobis
præclare gesta, toti pene orbi notissima demonstrant,
nedum id exoptare, sed omni conatu, studio, et dili-
gentia, nullis laboribus, nullis impensis, nullisque par-
cendo periculis, etiam proprium sanguinem effundendo
efficere, ac omnem animum vestrum, omnesque conatus
ad hoc iam dudum dedicasse, quemadmodum recuperato
regni Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodie-
nis temporibus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis
gloria facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito,
et debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter
concedere, per quæ huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile
ab immortalis deo acceptum propositum, indies feruen-
tiori animo ad ipsius honorem et Imperij Chris-
tiani propagationem profequi valeatis. Sane accipi-
mus quod ad hanc animam propofueratis aliquas

171 THE COPPIE OF THE BULL
OR DONATION, BY TH[E]AU-
TORITIE WHEROF, POPE

Alexander the fyxte of that name,
gaue and graunted to the kynges of
Castyle and theyr successours the
Regions and Ilandes founde in
the Weste Ocean sea by
the nauigations of the
Spanyardes.



Alexander byshoppe, the seruante of
the seruantes of God: To owre moste
deare beloued sonne in Christ Kyng
Ferdinando, An aunte the deare be-
loued daughter in lawe Elyzabeth
Queene of Castyle, Legion, Aragon,
Sicilie, and Granata, most noble

Princes, Greeting and Apostolicall benediction.

Amonge other woorthy and honorable to the diuine
maiestie and accordingly hartes desyre, this
certeinly is the chiefest the Catholyke fayth and
Christian religion, which in this owre tyme may in
all places bee exalted, and enlarged, wherby
the health of soules be hurt, and the Barbarous
nations subdued and brought to the fayth. And there-
fore wheras by the fauore of gods clemencie (although
not with equall desertes) we are cauled to this holy
seate of Peter, and vnderstandyng you to bee trewe
Catholyke Princes as we haue euer knowen you, and
as youre noble and woorthy factes haue declared in
maner to the hole worlde in that with all your studie,
diligence, and industrye, you haue spared no traуayles,
charges, or perels, aduenturyng euen the shedyng of
your owne bludde, with applyng yowre hole myndes
and endeuours here vnto, as your noble expeditions
achyued in recoueryng the kyngdome of Granata from
the tyrannie of the Sarracens in these our dayes, doo
playnely declare your factes with so great glorye of the
diuine name. For the whiche as we thinke you woorthy,
so owght we of owre owne free wyl fauorably to
graunt all thynges whereby you maye dayely with more
feruent myndes to the honoure of god and enlargyng
the Christian empire, profecute your deuoute and laud-

infulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas, ac per alios haecenus non repertas, quærere et inuenire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profitendum reduceretis, haecenus in expugnatione et recuperatione ipsius regni Granatae plurimum occupati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequiuistis: Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere, dilectum filium Christophorum Colonom virum vtique dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus ad similia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et Infulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi haecenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas infulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quæ per alios haecenus repertæ non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt afferitur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt præfati nuncij vestri possunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Infulis et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Coelis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, satis apti videntur: Spesque habetur, quod si erudirentur, nomen Saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et infulis prædictis facile induceretur. Ac præfatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Infulis prædictis, iam vnam turrim satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiam et vt alias Infulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Infulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ res præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præsertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et infulas prædictas, illarumque incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiicere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuistis.

Nos itaque huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducatur, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamur vos quamplurimum in domino, et per

able purpose most acceptable to the immortall God. We are credably informed that whereas of late you were determined to seeke and fynde certeyne Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and vnknownen (and not heretofore found by any other) to th[e]intent to bringe th[e]inhabitauntes of the same to honoure owre redemer and to professe the catholyke fayth, you haue hetherto byn much occupied in th[e]expugnation and recouerie of the kyngedome of Granata, by reason whereof yowe coulde not brynge yowre fayde laudable purpose to th[e]ende desyred. Neuerthelesse as it hath pleased almyghty god, the foresayde kyngedome beinge recovered, wylling t[o]accomplyshe your fayde desyre, you haue, not without great laboure, perelles, and charges, appoynted owre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man certes wel commended as moste worthy and apte for so great a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other necessaries, to seeke (by the sea where hetherto no manne hath fayled) suche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote and hitherto vnknownen. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligente searche in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote Ilandes and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by any other. In the which (as is fayde) many nations inhabite lyuinge peaceably and goinge naked, not accustomed to eate fleshe. And as farre as yowre messengers can coniecture, the nations inhabitynge the foresayde landes and Ilandes, beleue that there is one god creatoure in heauen: and feeme apte to be brought to th[e]imbracinge of the catholyke faythe and to be imbued with good maners: by reason whereof, we may hope that if they well be instructed, they may easely bee induced to receaue the name of owre fauour Iesu Christ. We are further aduertised that the forenamed Christopher hath nowe builded and erected a fortresse with good munition in one of the foresayde principall Ilandes in the which he hath placed a garrison of certeyne of the Christian men that wente thither with him: aswell to th[e]intent to defende the same, as also to searche other Ilandes and firme landes farreremote and yet vnknownen. We also vnderstande, that in these landes and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of fundry kyndes and qualities. Therefore al thinges diligently considered (especiallly th[e]amplifyng and enlargyng of the catholyke fayth, as it behoueth catholyke Princes folowyng th[e]examples of yowre noble progenitours of famous memorie) whereas yowe are determined by the fauour of almightie god to subdue and brynge to the catholyke fayth th[e]inhabitauntes of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable purpose in owr lorde, and desirous to haue the same brought to a dewe ende, and the name of owre fauoure to be knowen in those partes, doo exhorte yowe in owre Lorde and by the receauynge of yowre holy baptysme wherby yowe are bounde to

facri laueri fufceptionem, qua mandatis Apoftolicis obligati eftis, et per viscera mifericordiæ Domini noſtri Iefu Chriſti attente requirimus, vt cum expeditionem huiufmodi omnino profequi et affumere prona mente orthodoxæ fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiufmodi Infulis et terris degentes, ad Chriſtianam religionem fufcipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores vlllo vnquam tempore vos deterreant, firma ſpe fiduciaque conceptis quod Deus omnipotens conatus veſtros fœliciter profequetur. Et vt tanti negotij prouintiam Apoftolicæ gratiæ largitate donati, liberius et audacius affumatis, motu proprio non ad veſtram vel
 169 alterius pro vobis ſuper hoc nobis oblatæ petitionis instantiam, ſed de noſtra mera liberalitate, et ex certa ſcientia, ac de Apoftolicæ poteſtatis plenitudine, omnes Infulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et conſtruendo vnam lineam a polo Arctico, ſcilicet Septentrione, ad polum Antarticum, ſcilicet Meridiem, ſiue terræ firmæ et infulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ ſint verſus Indiam aut verſus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea diſtet a qualibet Infularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis verſus Occidentem et Meridiem.

Itaque omnes Infulæ et terræ firmæ repertæ et repertiendæ, detectæ et detegendæ a præfata linea verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, quæ per alium Regem aut Principem Chriſtianum non fuerint actualiter poſſeſſæ vſque ad diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Iefu Chriſti proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus præſens Milleſimus Quadringentefſimus Nonogefſimus tercius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos veſtros inuentæ aliquæ prædictarum Infularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro conceſſa, ac vicariatus Iefu Chriſti qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illatum dominijs, ciuitatibus, caſtris, locis, et villis, iuribusque et iuriſdictionibus ac pertinentijs vniuerſis, vobis hereditibusque et ſucceſſoribus veſtris (Caſtellæ et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præſentium donamus, concedimus, et aſſignamus: Voſque et hæredes ac ſucceſſores præfatos illarum Dominos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda poteſtate, autoritate, et iuriſdictione, facimus, conſtituimus, et deputamus. Decernentes nihilominus per huiufmodi donationem, conceſſionem, et aſſignationem noſtram, nullo Chriſtiano Principi qui actualiter præfatas Infulas et terras firmas poſſederit vſque ad prædictum diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Iefu Chriſti ius quæſitum, ſublaturum intelligi poſſe aut auferri debere.

Et inſuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ ſanctæ obedi-

Apſtolicall obedience, and ernestely require yowe by the bowels of mercy of owre Lorde Iefu Chriſt, that when yowe intende for the zeale of the Catholyke faythe to profecute the fayde expedition to reduce the people of the foreſayde landes and Ilandes to the Chriſtian religion, yowe ſhall ſpare no labours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perels, conceauynge firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde wyll gyue good ſucceſſe to yowre godly attemptes. And that beinge autoryſed by the priuilege of the Apſtolycall grace, yowe may the more freely and bouldly take vpon yowe th[e]nterpryſe of ſo greate a matter, we of owre owne motion, and not eyther at yowre request or at the inſtant petition of any other perſon, but of owre owne mere liberalitie and certeyne ſcience, and by the fulneſſe of Apſtolycall power, doo gyue, graunt, and aſſigne to yowe, yowre heyres and ſucceſſours, al the firme landes and Ilandes found or to be found, diſcouered or to be diſcouered toward the Weſt and South, drawyng a line from the pole Artike to the pole Antartike (that is) from the north to the Southe: Conteynyng in this donation, what ſo euer firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde towarde *India*, or towarde any other parte what ſo euer it bee, beinge diſtant from, or without the foreſayd lyne drawn a hundreth leaques towarde the Weſte and South from any of the Ilandes which are commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*.

All the Ilandes therfore and firme landes, founde and to be founde, diſcouered and to be diſcouered from the fayde lyne towarde the Weſt and South, ſuch as haue not actually bin heretofore poſſeſſed by any other Chriſtian kynge or prynce vntyll the daye of the natiuitie of owre Lorde Iefu Chryſte laſte paſte, from the which begynneth this preſent yeare beinge the yeare of owre Lorde. M. CCCC. lxxxiii. when ſo euer any ſuch ſhalbe founde by your meſſingers and capytaines, Wee by the autoritie of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs in ſaynt Peter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the ſteede of Iefu Chriſte, doo for euer by the tenoure of theſe preſentes, gyue, graunte, aſſigne, vnto yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſoures (the kynges of Caſtyle and Legion) all thoſe landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, caſtels, towres, places, and vyllages, with all the ryght, and iuriſdiction therunto perteynyng: conſtitutyng, aſſignyng, and deputyng, yowe, yowre heyres, and ſucceſſours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iuriſdiction. Decreeinge neuertheleſſe by this owre donation, graunt, and aſſignation, that from no Chriſtian Prince whiche actually hath poſſeſſed the foreſayde Ilandes and firme landes vnto the daye of the natiuitie of owre lorde beforeſayde theyr ryght obteyned to bee vnderſtoode hereby to be taken away, or that it owght to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde yowe in the vertue

entiæ (vt sicut pollicemini et non dubitamus pro vestra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate vos esse facturos) ad terras firmas et Insulas prædictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos, peritos, et expertos ad instruendum incolas et habitatores præfatos in fide Catholica et bonis moribus imbuendum, destinare debeatis, omnem debitam diligentiam in præmissis adhibentes.

170

A quibuscumque personis, cuiuscumque dignitatis, etiam imperialis et regalis status, gradus, ordinis vel conditionis, sub excommunicationis lætæ sententiæ pœna quam eo ipso si contra fecerint incurrant, districtius inhibemus ne ad Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, suæ terræ firmæ et Insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunque partem quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis vel quauis alia causa accedere præsumat absque vestra ac hæredum et successorum vestrorum prædictorum licentia speciali: Non obstantibus constitutionibus et ordinationibus Apostolicis, cæterisque quibuscumque, in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes quod dirigente Domino actus vestros, si huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile propositum profequamini, breui tempore cum fœlicitate et gloria totius populi Christiani, vestri labores et conatus exitum fœlicissimum consequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præsentis literas ad singula quæque loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et scientia similibus decernimus, quod illarum transumptis manu publici notarij inderogati subscriptis, et sigillo alicuius personæ in ecclesiastica dignitate constitutæ, seu curiæ ecclesiasticæ munitis, ea prorsus fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur, quæ præsentibus adhiberetur si essent adhibitæ vel ostensæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam nostræ commendationis, hortationis, requisitionis, donationis, concessionis, assignationis, constitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis infringere vel ei ausu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare præsumpserit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apostolorum eius, se nouerit incursum.

Datum Romæ apud sanctum Petrum: Anno incarnationis Dominicæ. 1493. quarto nonas Maij: Pontificatus nostri anno primo.

of holy obedience (as yowe haue promysed, and as wee doubt not you wyll doo vppon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to sende to the fayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeste, vertuous, and lerned men, suche as feare God, and are able to instructe th[e] inhabitants in the Catholyke fayth and good maners, applyinge all theyr possible diligence in the premisses.

We furthermore strenghtly inhibite all maner of persons, of what state, degree, order, or condition so euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the peyne of the sentence of excommunication whiche they shall incurre yf they doo to the contrary, that they in no case presume without speciall lycence of yowe, yowre heyres, and successours, to trauallye for marchaundies or for any other cause, to the fayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to bee found, discovered, or to bee discovered, toward the west and south, drawing a line from the pole Artyke to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands and Ilandes found and to be found, be situate toward *India* or towarde any other parte beinge distant from the lyne drawn a hundreth leagues towarde the west from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithstandyng constitutions, decrees, and Apostolycall ordinaunces what so euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Empyres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Trustyng that almyghtie god directyng yowre enterprises, yf yowe folowe yowre 173 godly and laudable attemptes, yowre laboures and trauayles herein, shall in shorte tyme obteyne a happy ende with felicitie and glorie of all Christian people. But forasmuch as it shulde bee a thyng of great difficultie these letters to bee caryed to all suche places as shuld bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowlege doo decree that whyther so euer the same shalbe sent, or wher so euer they shalbe receaued with the subscription of a common notarie therunto requyred, with the seale of any person constitute in ecclesiasticall dignitie, or suche as are autorysed by the ecclesiasticall courte, the same fayth and credite to bee gyuen thereunto in iudgement or els where, as shulde bee exhibyted to these presentes.

It shall therefore bee lawfull for no man to infringe or rashely to contrarie this letter of owre commendation, exhortacion, requeste, donation, graunt, assignation, constitution, deputation, decree, commaundement, inhibition, and determination. And yf any shall presume to attempte the same, he owght to knowe that he shall thereby incurre the indignation of almyghtie God and his holye Apostles Peter and Paule. (·) (·) (·)

¶ Gyuen at Rome at faynt Peters: In the yeare of th[e] incarnation of owre Lord M. CCCC. LXXXIII. The fourth day of the nones of Maye, the fyrste yeare of owre feate. () () ()

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION II.

Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés.

The Natural History of the West Indies.

First printed in 1526.]

TO THE READER.



Although amonge dyuers which haue wrytten of the Ocean and Weste Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declarynge by philosophicall discourses the secrete causes of naturall affectes bothe as touchyng the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge woorkes of nature, yet forasmuche as of later dayes those countreys haue byn better knowen and seached, and dyuers suche particular and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hystories of later wryters, emonge the number of whom *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus*, (whom lerned *Cardanus* compareth to the ancient writers) is doubtles the chiefe, I haue therefore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intituled the Summarie or abbrigement of his generall hystorie of the West Indies wrytten in the firme lande of the same in the cite of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena* (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to Th[e]mperou[r]s maiestie, as maye appeare by the epystell folowyng.

TO THE MOST HYGH AND MYGHTIE
PRINCE CHARLES THE FYFTE OF THAT NAME:

EMPEROUR OF ROME, KYNGE OF SPAYNE, AND OF THE TWOO SICILIES,

of bothe the fydes of the streyght of *Faro*, Kyng of Hierusalem

and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders,

Lord and inheritoure of the firme lande and Ilandes

of the Weste Ocean, etc. *Gonzalus Ferdinan-*

us Quiedus his most humble seruant

wysheth health and per-

petual felicitie.



174

He thynges whiche principally preferue and mayntayne the woorkes of nature in the memories of men, are hystories and bookes composed of the same. Amonge the whiche certes those are esteemed moſte trewe and autentike which haue byn wrytten by wyttie and expert men well trauayled in the worlde, as faythfull wytnesses of ſuche thynges as they haue partely ſeene and byn partely informed by credible perſons. Of this mynde and opinion was Plinie, who better then any other autoure hathe wrytten in xxxvii. bookes al that perteyneth to the naturall hystorie, conteyned al in one volume dedicated to Veſpaſian Th[e]mperour. Wherein, as a prudente hystoriographer, he declareth ſuche thynges as he had harde: Attributyng the ſeconde autoritie to ſuche as he had redde in autoures that wrote before hym: And thyrdely ioyned to the ſame hystorie, ſuch thynges as he hym ſelfe had ſeene as moſte certeyne teſtimonie. Whoſe exemple I folowyng, wyl in this my breefe ſummarie reduce and repreſent to yowr maieſties memorie ſuche thynges as I haue ſeene in yowre Empyre of the Weſt Indies aſwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande of the Ocean ſea, where I haue ſerued nowe more then twelue yeares in the place of ſuruoyer of the golde mynes by the commaundemente of the Catholyke kyng *Don Fernando* the fyfte of that name and graundfather vnto yowr maieſtie, to whom god gaue great fame and glorie. Senſe whoſe death alſo I haue lyke-wies ſerued and truſt whyle the reſt of my lyfe yet remayneth, to ſerue yowr maieſtie as ſhall pleaſe yowe to commaunde. As touchyng which thynges and ſuch other lyke, I haue more largely wrytten in a hystorie begunne as ſone as my age was ripe to take ſuche matters in hande. Wherein furthermore I haue made mention of ſuche thynges

as haue chaunced in Spaine, from the yeare. 1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge also thereunto suche thynges woorthy memorie as I haue obserued in other realmes and prouinces where I haue trauallyed. And haue likewise particularly wrytten the lyues and woorthy actes of the catholyke Princes of famous memorie *Don Ferdinando* and lady Elizabeth his wyfe to theyr last dayes. After whose fruition of heauenly Paradyse, I haue noted suche thynges as haue chaunced in yowre most fortunate succession. Not omittinge particularly to wryte a large booke of such thynges as haue seemed most woorthy to bee noted as touchynge yowre maiesties Indies. But forasmuche as that volume remaineth in the cite of *San. Dominico* in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* where I dwell and am placed in housholde with wyfe, chyl dren, and famelie, I haue brought no more with me of that my wrytynge then I beare in memorie. Determyninge notwithstandinge for yowre maiesties recreation to make a breefe rehearfall of certeyne notable thynges wherof I haue more largely entreated in my fayde general historie, and such as may seeme most woorthy to bee redde of yowre maiestie. Of the which, although a great parte haue byn wrytten by other who haue also seene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and particularly described as of me, forasmuche as in maner all that trauallye into these Indies haue greater respecte to luker and gaynes then diligently to searche the woorkes of nature wherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclyned, and haue therefore with all possible endeuour applyed myne eyes and intelligence to fynde the same. And this presente Summarie shall not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger historie wherein (as I haue fayde) I haue more amplye declared these thynges: but shal onely more breiefely expresse th[e] effect therof vntyl such tyme as Godde shal restore me to myne owne house, where I may accomplishe and fynishe my fayd general hystorie. Wherevnto to gyue the fyrst principle, I say that Don Christopher Colonus (as it is well knowen) beinge the fyrste Admyrall of this India, discouered the same in the dayes of the Catholyke kynge Don Ferdinando and the lady Elyzabeth his wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto yowre maiestie: In the yeare. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yeare 1492. with the fyrst Indians and other shewes and profes of the great ryches and notice of this west Empire. The whiche gyfte and benefyte was suche, that it is vnto this daye, one of the greatest that euer any subiect or seruant hath done for his prince or countrey, as is manifeste to the hole worlde. And to faye the trewth, this shall doubtlesse bee so commodious and profytable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that I repute hym no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doothe not recognise the same. And (as I haue fayde before) forasmuch as in my fayde generall historie I haue more largely intreated of these thynges, I intend at this present only briefly to rehearse certeyne especiall thynges, the whiche fuerly are verye fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght bee fayde in this behalfe. Fyrst therefore I wyl speake sumwhat of the nauigation into these parties. Then of the generation of the nations whiche are founde in the same, with their rytes, customes, and cerimonies. Also of beastes, foules, byrdes, woormes, fysshes, seas, ryuers, sprynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered boothe on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of th[e] order and company of them that are appointed to returne into these regions to serue yowre maiestie, yf therefore the thynges conteyned in this booke shall not bee distincte in such order as I promised to performe in my greater woorke, I desyre yowre maiestie to haue no respecte herevnto, but rather to confyder the noueltie of suche straunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to wryte. Protestyng that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trewth of suche thynges as coome to my remembraunce: wherof not onely I my selfe can testifye, but also diuers other woorthy and credible men which haue bin in those regions, and are nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte. And thus it shal suffyce to haue saide thus much vnto yowre maiestie in maner of a proheme vnto this present worke which I most humbly desyre yowre maiestie as thankfully t[o] accept, as I haue wrytten it faythfully.

175

¶ Of the ordinary nauyigation from Spayne to the Weste Indies.



The nauyigation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weste India, is from Siuile, where yowre maiestie haue yowre houle of contractation for those partes, with also yowre offycers thervnto perteynyng, of whom the capitaines take their passeporte and lycence. The patrones of sliche shippes as are appoynted to these vyages, imbarke them selues at *San Luca di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadalchiber* entereth into the Ocean sea. And from hense they folowe their course toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of these seuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*. And here the shippes are furnysshed with freshe water, fuell, cheese, biese, and sliche other thynges whiche may seeme requisite to be added to sliche as they brynge with them owte of Spayne. From Spayne to these Ilandes, is coomonly eyght dayes saylinge, or lyttle more or lesse. And when they are arryued there, they haue sayled two hundereth and fyftie leaques, whiche make a thousande myles, accomptyng foure myles to a leaque as is their maner to reckon by sea. Departynge

from the sayde Ilandes to folowe their course, the shippes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse, before they see the fyrste lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*. And the lande that is commonly fyrste seene, is one of these Ilandes whiche they caule *Ogni sancti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Deseada* (otherwise cauled *Desyderata*) *Matanino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Christoual*, or summe other of the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lyinge aboute these aforesaide. Yet it sumtymes so chaunceth that the shippes passe withowte the fyght of any of the sayde Ilandes, or any other that are within that course vntyll they coome to the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* or *Hispaniola*, or *Iamaica*, or *Cuba*, whiche are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouerpasse all these likewyse, vntyll they faule vpon the coastes of the fyrme lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is not well practised in this nauigation or not perfecte in the trewe carde. But makynge this viage with experte maryners (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the sayde fyrste Ilandes shall euer bee knowen. And from the Ilandes of Canarie to one of the fyrste of these, the distaunce is nyne hundreth leaques by saylinge, or more. And from hense to the cite of saynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is a hundreth and fyftie leaques: So that from Spayne hitherto, is a thousand and three hundreth leaques. Yet forasmuche as sumtymes the nauigation procedeth not so directly, but that it chaunceth to wander on the one syde or on the other, wee may well saye that they haue nowe sayled a thousande and fyue hundreth leaques and more. And if the nauigation be slowe by reason of summe hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be fynished in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And this happeneth for the moste parte, not accomptyng the extremes: that is, eyther of them that haue slowe passage, or of them that arryue in veye shorte tyme. For wee owghte to confyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne from those partes to Spayne, is not fynished without longer tyme, as in the space of. l. [fifty] dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse. 176 Neuerthelesse in this present yere of. 1525. there came foure shyps from the Iland of *San Dominico* to faint *Luca* in Spaine, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue sayd) we ought not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth seldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarily. This nauigation is very safe and much vsed, euen vnto the sayd Ilande. And from this to the firme land, the shippes trauerse diuers wayes for the space of fyue, fyxe, or seuen dayes saylynge, or more, accordyng to the partes or coastes whither they directe their vyages, forasmuche as the sayde firme lande is veye great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the same. Yet to the firme land whiche is nearest to this Iland, and lyeth directly ageynst *San Dominico*, the passage is fynished in the tyme aforesayde. But it shalbe muche better to remytte all this to the carde of these nauigations and the new Cosmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowen to Ptolomie or any other of the owlde wrytters.

¶ Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rycheffe brought from thense into Spayne.



After my vniuerfall description of the historie of the Indies, there commeth to my remembrance two thynges chiefly to be noted as touchyng the th[e] empire of this West Indies perteynyng to the dominion of yowre maiestye. And these besyde the other particulars wherof I haue suffyciently spoken, are to be confydered as thynges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the shortenesse of the way and with what expedition yowr maiesties shypes maye passe beyonde the mayne fyrme lande of these Indies into the newe Southe sea cauled *Mare del Sur* lyyng beyond the same. And this to th[e] intent to coome to the Ilandes where the spices growe, besyde the other innumerable rycheffe of the kingedomes and signiories whiche confine with the fayde sea where are so many people and nations of dyuers toonges and maners. The other thinge, is to confyder howe innumerable treasures are entered into Spayne by these Indies, aswell that whiche commeth dayly from thense as also that is continually to bee looked for, bothe of golde and perle and other marchaunties which are first brought into this yowre realme of Spaine before they are seene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly inriched, but also the benefyte therof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare thervnto. A testimonye of this, are the double ducades whiche yowre maiestie haue caused to bee coyned, and are disparfed throughowte the hole worlde. But after they are once passed owt of this yowre realme, they neuer returne agein bycause they are the best curraunt money of the world. And therefore if after they haue byn in the handes of straungers they chaunce to be returned ageyne into Spaine, they coome disguised in an other habite, and are diminiffhed of the goodnesse of their golde, with the flampe of yowre maiestye chaunged: So that if it were not for their fuche defacynges in other realmes for the cause aforesayde, there shulde not bee founde so great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any prynce in the worlde as of yowre maiesties. And the cause of all this, are yowre Indies.

¶ Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in theym.



This particular of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to bee noted: And I maye muche better speake hereof then any other man, forasmuche as there are nowe twelue yeares paste sence I serued in the place of the surueier of the meltyng shoppes perteynyng to the golde mynes of the firme lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*, after whose departure from this lyfe, I serued longe in the same roome in the name of yowr maiestie: By reason wherof, I haue had great occasion to knowe howe golde is founde and wrought owte of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that this lande is exceedyng ryche: hauyng by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and flaves, gathered and fyned a great portion of the same: and may therefore the better affyrme this by testimonie of fyght. For I am well assured that in no part of *Castilia del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwise cauled *Beragua*) no man coulde aske me of the mynes of golde, but that I durste haue bounde my selfe to haue discouered them in the space of ten leagues of the countrey where it shulde haue byn demaunded me, and the same to bee verye ryche. For I was alowed all maner of charges to make searche for the same. And although golde be founde in maner euery where in these regions of golden Castile, yet owght wee not in euery place to bestowe the trauell, and charge to get it owte, bycause it is of lesse quantitie and goodnesse in sum place then in sum. And the myne or veyne whiche owght to be folowed, ought to bee in a place whiche may stande to faue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the administration of other necessary thynges that the charges may bee recompensed with gaynes. For there is no doubt but that golde shalbe founde more or lesse in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is verye good, and of. xxii. caractes or better in fynesse. Furthermore, besyde this great quantitie of golde whiche I haue fayde to be founde in the mynes, there is also from day to day found or otherwif gotten, great treasure of fuche wrought gold as hath byn in the custodie of the subdued Indians and their kynges, aswell of fuche as they haue gyuen for their fyne and raunfome, or otherwif as frendes to the Christians, besyde that whiche hath byn vyolently taken from the rebelles. But the greateft parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is base and holdeth sumwhat of

copper. Of this they make brassettes and chaines and in the same they clofe their iewels whiche their women are accustomed to weare and esteeme more then all the richesse of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of fuche as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to saye in the plaines and riuers of the champian countrey being without trees, whether the earth be with grasse or without. Or of fuche as is sumtymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, so that to coome by the same, it shalbe requisite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of water, or elles in the earth, I wyl shewe howe it is founde in bothe these places, and howe it is seperate and poured. Therefore when the myne or veine is discovered, this chaunceth by ferchyng and proung in fuche places as by certeyne fynges and taken do appeare to skylfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue sayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrst they make the place verie cleane where they intende to dygge. Then they dygge eyght or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a spanne or two, or more as shall seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally. Then they washe all the earthe whiche they haue taken owte of the sayde place. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before. And if then also, they fynde nothyng, they continue in dyggyng and wasshyng the earth as before vntill they come to the hard rocke or stone. And if in fyne they fynd no golde there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderstode, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in digginge in the same measure in leuell and deapth vntill they haue made an ende of al the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to confyst of certen feete or pases in length or breadth accordyng to certeyne orders determined. And within that compasse of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrst founde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a staffe to assygne hym selfe a place by the fyde of the same, inclosyng it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mynes of *Zauana* (that is such as are found in the playne) owght euer to bee soughte nere to sum ryuer or brooke or springe of water, or dyke, or standyng poole, to th[e]nde that the golde maye be wasshed, for the whiche purpose they vse the laboure of certeyne Indians as they doo other in dygginge of the myne. And when they haue dygged owte the myne, they fyl certeyne traies with that earth, whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carye those trayes of earth to the water where it maye bee wasshed. Yet do not they that bryng it, washe it, but delyuer it to other, puttyng it owte of their owne trayes into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. These wasshers for the moste parte, are the Indian women, bycause this woorke is of lesse paine and traualle then any other. These women when they washe, are accustomed to fytt by the waters fyde, with their legges in the water euen vppe to the knees or lesse as the place serueth their purpose. And thus holdyng the trays with earth in their handes by the handles therof, and puttyng the same into the water, they moue them rownde aboute after the maner of fytyng, with a certeyne aptenesse in fuche sorte that there entreth no more water into the trais then serueth their turne: And with the selfe same apte mouyng of their trais in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one fyde of the vessell, and receaue in cleane water on the other side therof. So that by this meanes by little and lyttle, the water wassheth the earth as the lyghter substaunce owte of the trais, and the golde as the heauier matter resteth in the bottome of the same, beyng rounde and holowe in the myddeft lyke vnto a barbars basen. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered together in the bottome of the traye, they putte it aparte, and returne to take more earth, whiche they washe continually as before. And thus they that laboure in this woorke, do gather dayly fuche portion of golde as shal please god to graunt to the patrones of these Indians and fuche other as trauaile in the same. Furthermore, it is to bee noted that for euerly two Indians that washe, it is requisite that two other serue them to bryng earth from the myne, and other two to breake the same fmaule and fylle their trais therwith. Also besyde these labourers, it is necessarye that there bee other people in the place where they woorke and reste in the nyghte. These are fuche as make their breade, and prouyde for vyttayles and other necessaryes. So that to conclude, there are in all, fyue persons ordinarily assigned to euerly traye of wasshers.

There is an other maner of woorkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnyng waters. And this is, that in auoydyng the water of his course, after that the beddes of the ryuers are drye and vtterly emptied, they fynde golde emonge the breaches, cliftes, and ryftes of stoness, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuer runneth of greatest force. So that it chaunceth sum tyme, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of golde. And therefore your maiesie ought to vnderstande for a generail rule, as it appereth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the toppes and hyghest places of the montaines: And in continuance of time is by lyttle and lyttle brought downe to the vales and plaines by showres of rayne, and the faules of sprynges, ryuers, and brookes hauyng their originall in the mountaynes and descendyng from the same, notwithstandinge it bee oftentimes founde in the plaines farre

from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moſte parte amonge the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, more then in any other parte of the plaine. And in theſe two maners is it commonly founde moſte abundantly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is brought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great tooke therof whiche cauſeth me to beleue it for certeine. And this is to conſyder that coles neuer putrifie nor corrupt vnder the ground, if they be made of ſtrong woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the fouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the fydes, and breakyng a myne in the earthe where it had not byn broken before, and hauyng nowe dygged one or two or three poles in meaſure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the ſame leuel where they found gold. And this I ſaye in the earth whiche was taken for a vyrgine: that is to ſaye, ſuch as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the ſuperficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by ſum occaſion of fyre, and that they faſtned there in tyme, and that afterwarde in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lyttle and lyttle couered with the earth which the often ſhowers of rayne waſhed from the mountaynes, ſo that by the courſe of yeares the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the ſayde leuell and meaſure whiche had before tyme byn the ſuperficiall parte of the earthe where the coles and golde were founde togyther: whereby it maye appeare that the golde was no more engendered there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the faules of waters as we haue ſayde: forafmuch as the mountaynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and beſyde this, I ſay that in how much more the gold is gonne farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is ſo muche the more purified and fyned and of a better carracte. And the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it is ſo muche the baſer, fouler, and more crude, and of a baſer alay and caracte, and dothe waſt ſo much the more in meltyng, and remayneth more brickle. Sumetyme there are founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate weyght aboute the earth and ſuntymes alſo vnder the earth. And the greateſte of all other that was founde to this daye in the Indies, was that which was loſte in the ſea aboute the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyed three thouſande and two hundreth Caſtellans of golde, which are in value foure thouſand a hundreth, thirtie and eyght ducades of golde, which waye one *Arroua* and ſeuē pounde, or. xxxii. pounde. after. xii. ounces to the pounde, whiche make threſcore and foure markes of golde. And I ſawe in the yeare. 1515. in the handes of Mychel Paſſamonte treaſurer to yowre maieſtie, two graines of the which one wayde ſeuē poundes, which are. xiiii. markes, and are in value aboute threſcore and fyue ducades of golde euery marke. The other was of. x. markes, which are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of. xxii. caractes and better. There are alſo founde many other greate graynes, although not equall vnto theſe in byggenes. And forafmuch as I haue ſpoken of golde, I haue thought good to declare ſumewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte ſuche veſſelles of copper and baſe golde as they make. For they can gyue them ſo fayre and floryſhyng a coloure, that all the maſſe whiche they gylte, appeareth as though it were golde of. xxii. caractes and better. This colour they gyue with a certeyne herbe as though it were wrought by the arte of any goldefmyth of Spayne or Italie, and wold of them bee eſteemed as a thyng of greate ryches, and a ſecrete maner of gyldyng. And for as muche as I haue ſpoken ſufficiently of the myne of golde, I wyll nowe ſpeake ſumewhat of copper bycauſe I haue made mention thereof. This metall is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and alſo in the firme lande: And is founde dayely in greate quantitie holdyng ſumwhat of golde. But for the deſyre that owre men haue to golde, they nothyng eſteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profite be had therby, and alſo by other metals whiche they nothyng regarde excepte fyluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled newe Spayne. But of this it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche, bycauſe I haue more particularly entreated of theſe thynges in my generall hystorie of India.

179

A marke, is a
poude of viii.
ounces: ſumma.
xlii. li. [forty-two
pounds] weyght
viii. ounces, after
xii. ounces to the
li. [pound].

¶ Of the maner of fyſhyng for perles.



He Indians exerciſe this kynde of fyſhyng for the moſte parte in the coaſtes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*. And manye of theym which dwell in the houſes of certeyne particular lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, refort to the Ilande of *Cubagua* for this purpoſe. Theyr cuſtome is to go fyue, ſyxe, or ſeuē, or more in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes erly in the mornyng to ſome place in the ſea there about where it appeareth vnto them that there ſhulde bee greate plentie of thoſe ſhell fyſhes (which ſume caule muſcles and ſume oysters) wherin perles are engendered. And there they plunge

180

them felues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, fauyng one that remayneth in the Canoa or boate which he keepeth styll in one place as neare as he can, lookyng for theyr returne owte of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryfeth vp and commeth swimmyng to the boate, enterynge into the fame, and leauynge there all the oysters whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in these, are the perles founde. And when he hathe there rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten parte of the oysters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remayneth as longe as he can endure, and then ryfeth ageyne, and swimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as doo all the other in lyke maner, being all moſte experte swimmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they returne to the Ilande to theyr houſes, and presente all the oysters to the maſter or ſtewarde of the houſe of theyr lorde who hath the charge of the fayde Indians. And when he hath gyuen them ſumwhat to eate, he layeth vp the oysters in ſafe cuſtodie vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof. Then hee cauſeth the ſame fyſher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of them pearles other great or ſmaul, two or three or foure, and ſumtymes ſiue and fyxe, and many ſmaule graines accordyng to the lyberalitie of nature. They faue the pearles bothe ſmaule and great whiche they haue founde: And eyther eate the oysters if they wyl, or caſte them away, hauynge ſo great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. Theſe oysters are of hard fleſhe, and not ſo pleaſant in eatyng as are owres of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyſhing is exerciſed, is in the Northe coaſte, and is no bygger then the Iland of Zelande. Oftentymes the ſea encreaſeth greatly, and muche more then the fyſhers for pearles wold, bycauſe where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally reſt at the bottome by reaſon of the aboundaunce of aery ſubſtaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued. For althoughe he may by vyolence and force deſcende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted vp ageyne ſo that he can continue no tyme there. And therefore where the ſea is verye depe, theſe Indian fyſhers vſe to tye two great ſhoones aboute them with a corde, on euery fyde one, by the weyght wherof they deſcend to the bottome and remayne there vntyll they lyſteth to ryſe ageine: At which tyme they vnloſe the ſtones, and ryſe vppe at their pleaſure. But this their apteneſſe and agilitie in ſwimming, is not the thyng that cauſeth men moſte to maraile: But rather to conſyder how many of them can ſtande in the bottome of the water for the ſpace of one hole houre, and ſumme more or leſſe, accordyng as one is more apte hereunto then an other. An other thyng there is whiche ſeemeth to me very ſtraunge. And this is, that where as I haue oftentymes demaunded of ſumme of theſe lordes of the Indians, if the place where they accuſtomed to fyſhe for pearles beyng but lyttle and narrowe, wyll not in ſhorte tyme bee vtterly without oysters if they conſume them ſo faſte, they al answered me, that althoughe they bee conſumed in one parte, yet if they go a fyſhyng in an other parte or an other coaſte of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fyſhing there alſo vntyll the oysters be lykewyſe conſumed, and then returne ageyne to the fyrſte place, or any other place where they fyſhed before and emptied the ſame in lyke maner, they find them ageine as ful of oysters as though they had neuer bin fyſhed. Wherby we may iudge that theſe oysters eyther remoue from one place to an other as do other fyſhes, or elles that they are engendered and encreaſe in certeyne ordinarie places. This Iland of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fyſhe for theſe perles, is in the twelſe degree of the part of the ſaid coaſte which inclineth toward the North. Lykewiſe pearles are founde and gathered in the South ſea cauled *Mare del Sur*. And the pearles of this ſea are verye bygge. Yet not ſo bigge as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, whiche the Indians caule *Terarequi*, lying in the goulfe of ſaincte Michael, where greater pearles are founde and of greater price then in any other coaſte of the Northe ſea, in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I ſpeake this as a trewe teſtimonie of fyght, hauyng byn longe in that South ſea, and makynge curious inquisition to bee certenly informed of al that perteyneth to the fyſhyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Terarequi*, there was brought a pearle of the faſhyon of a peare, wayinge. xxxi. carattes, whiche *Petrus Arias* had amonge a thouſande and ſoo many poundes weight of other pearles whiche hee had when capitayne Gaſpar Morales (before *Petrus Arias*) paſſed to the faide Ilande in the yeare. 1515. whiche pearle was of great priſe. From the faide Ilande alſo, came a great and verye rounde pearle, whiche I brought owte of the ſea. This was as bygge as a ſmaule pellet of a ſtone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. carattes. I boughte it in the citie of *Panama* in the ſea of *Sur*: And paide for it fyxe hundreth and fyftie tymes the weyght therof of good gold, and had it thre yeares in my cuſtodie: and after my returne into Spaine, ſoulde it to th[e]rle of *Nanfao*, Marqueſſe of Zenete, great chamberleyne to yowre maieſtie, who gaue it to the Marqueſſe his wyfe, the ladye *Mentia* of *Mendoza*. I thyncke verely that this pearle was the greateſt, fayreſt, and roundeſt that hath byn ſeene in thoſe partes. For yowre maieſtie owght to vnderſtande that in the coaſte of the ſea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundreth great pearles rounde after the faſhyon of a peare, to one that is perfectly rounde and greate. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Chriſtians caule the Ilande of pearles, and other caule it the Ilande of floures, is founde in the eyght degree on the fouthe fyde of the firme lande in the prouynce of golden Caſtyle or *Beragua*. And theſe are the coaſtes of the firme lande where pearles are founde euen vnto this day. I vnderſtande alſo that there are perles founde in the prouynce and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And ſence yowr maieſtie appoynted me a gouernour and

Of this reade more largely in the decades.

By the computation of venice. iiii. graines make a carette.

181

capytayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertifed that pearles are founde in dyuers other places as about the Iland of *Codego* which lyeth ageynst the mouth of that porte of the Ilande of *Cartagenia* which the Indians caul *Coro*. The which Iland and porte, are on the North syde in the tenth degree of the coastes of the firme lande.

¶ *Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answere of hym of thynges to coome.*



When the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or go to any combat or attempte any other greate matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom they reuerendely esteeme and caule them *Tequinas*, whiche in theyr tonge is as muche to saye as masters. Notwithstandynge that they caule euery man that is cunnyng in any science, by the same name, as fysshers, foulers, hunters, or makers of nettes. These *Tequinas* therefore, they caule the masters of theyr aunfweres bycause they speake with *Tuyra*, that is the deuyll, and brynge them aunfwere what he saythe, eyther as touchynge suche thynges as they haue to doo or shall chaunce to them the day folowynge, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyll beinge so auncient an Astronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges and feeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And makethe theym beleue that they come so to passe by his ordynance, as though he were the lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: causeth tempest and ruleth the stacions of tymes, gyuyng lyfe or takynge awaye lyfe at his pleasure. By reason wherof, the Indians beinge deceaued of hym, and feing also such effectes to coome certeynely to passe as he hath tolde them before, beleue hym in all other thynges and honoure hym in many places with sacryfices of the bludde and liues of men and odoriferous spices. And when god disposeth the contrary to that whiche the deuell hath spoken in oracle wherby he is proued a lyer, he causeth the *Tequinas* to perswade the people that he hath chaunged his mynde and sentence for summe of their synnes, or deuifeth summe suche lye as lyketh hym beste, beyng a skylfull maister in suche subtile and craftie deuifises to deceyue the fymple and ignorant people whiche hath smaule defence against so mighty and craftie an aduerfarie. And as they caule the deuell *Tuyra*, so doo they in many places caule the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly honoure them therby, as in deede it is a name very feete and agreable to many of them, hauynge layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuynge more lyke dragons then men amonge these fymple people.

Before th[e] inhabitants of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had receaued the Christian faithe there was amonge them a secte of men whiche liued solytarily in the desertes and wooddes and ledde their lyfe in fylence and abstinence more straightly then euer dyd the phylosophers of Pythagoras secte, absteinyng in lyke maner from the eatynge of al thynges that liue by bludde contented onely with suche frutes, herbes, and rootes as the desertes and wooddes mynistred vnto them to eate. The professours of this secte were cauled *Piaces*. They gaue them selues to the knowlege of naturall thynges, and vsed certeyne secrete magicall operations and superstitions wherby they had familiaritie with spirites whiche they allured into theyr owne bodyes at suche tymes as they wolde take vppon them to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasyon to caule any of them owte of the desertes for this purpose, their custome was to sende them a portion of their fyne breade of *Cazabbi* or *Maizium*, and with humble requeste and sute to defyre them to tell them of suche thynges as they wolde demaunde. After the request graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the *Piaces* cometh with twoo of his disciples waytynge on hym, wherof the one bryngeth with hym a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a lyttle fyluer bell. When he commeth to the place, he fytteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose. Where hauynge his disciples the one standynge on the one harde and the other on the other euen in the prence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common people are not admytted to these misteries) and turnynge his face toward the deserte, he begynneth his inchauntment and cauleth the spirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which no man vnderstandeth but he and his disciples. After he hath dooen thus a while, if the spirite yet deferre his commyng, he drinketh of the sayde water, and therwith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchauntement, and letteth hym felse bludde with a thorne, marueilously turmoilyng hym felse as wee reade of the furious Sybilles not ceasyng vntyl the spirite bee coome: who at his commyng entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it weare a grehounde shulde ouerturne a squerell. Then for a space, he seemeth to lye as though he were in great payne or in a rapte, wonderfully tormentynge hym felse, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the fyluer bell

continually. Thus when the agonie is paffe and he lyeth quietly (yet withowte any fence or feelyng) the kynge or summe other in his sleade, demaundeth of hym what he defyreth to knowe, and the spirite answereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces* with a directe and perfecte anfwere to all poyntes. In so muche that on a tyme certeyne Spanyardes beyng presente at these mysteries with one of the kinges, and in the Spanyshe tounge demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shyppes whiche they looked for owte of Spayne, the spirite answered in the Indian tounge, and toulde them what daye and houre the shyppes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought without faylyng in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclypse of the foonne or moone (whiche they greatly feare and abhorre) he geueth a perfecte anfwere, and the lyke of tempestes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and fuche other thinges. When all the demaundes are fynnysshed, his disciples caule hym aloud, rynging the fyluer bell at his eare and blowyng a certeyne poudere into his nosethrilles wherby he is rayfed as it weare from a deade sleape beinge yet fumewhat heauy headed and faynt a good whyle after. Thus beinge ageyne rewarded of the kynge with more breade, he departeth ageyne to the desertes with his disciples. But fence the Christian fayth hath byn disparfed throwghe owte the Ilande, these deuylls practises haue ceafed, and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Chryste by baptisme forsakyng the deuyll and his workes, with the vaine curiositie of defyre of knowlege of thynges to coome, wherof for the most part it is better to be ignorant then with vexation to knowe that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his housholde feruauntes, aswell women as men which haue continually ferued hym, kyl them selues, beleauyng as they are taught by the deuyll *Tuyra*, that they which kyl them selues when the kynge dyeth, go with hym to heauen and ferue hym in the same place and office as they dyd before on the earth whyle he lyued. And that all that refuse so to doo, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwyse, theyr foules to dye with theyr bodyes and to bee dissolved into ayer and become nothyng as do the foules of hogges, byrdes, or fyshes or other brute beastes. And that only the other may enjoy the priuileage of immortalitie for euer to ferue the kynge in heauen. And of this false opinion commeth it that they which fowe corne or fet rootes for the kynges breade, and gather the same, are accustomed to kyl them selues that they may enjoy this priuileage in heauen. And for the same purpose, caule a portion of the graine of *Maizium* and a bundle of *Iucca* (wherof theyr breade is made) to bee buried with them in theyr graues that the same maye ferue them in heauen if perhappes there shuld lacke feedes to fowe. And therefore they take this with them to begyn with all, vntyl *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promisses) prouyde them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe fene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauyng in pryson the kynge of that prouince (who rebelled from th[e] obedience of yowre maiestie) and demaundyng of hym to whom perteyned those sepultures or graues whiche I fawe in his house, he answered that they were of certeyne Indians whiche slewe them selues at the death of his father. And bycause they are oftentimes accustomed to burye greate quantities of wrought golde with them, I caused twoo graues to bee opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the grayne of *Maizium*, and a bundell of *Iucca* as I haue sayde. And demaunding the cause hereof of the kinge and the other Indians, they answered that they that were buried there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylful in fowyng of feedes and makyng of breade, and feruauntes to the kynges father. And to th[e]ende that theyr foules shoulde not dye with theyr bodyes, they slewe them selues at the deathe of the kynge theyr master to lyue with hym in heauen. And to th[e]intent that they myght ferue him there in the same office they referued that *Maizium* and *Iucca* to fowe it in heauen. Whereunto I answered them in this maner. Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceaueth yowe? And howe all that he teacheth yow is false? Yowe see how in so long a tyme fence they are deade, they haue not yet taken awaye this *Maizium* and *Iucca* which is nowe putrified and woorth nothyng, and not lyke to bee fowen in heauen. To this the kynge replied, sayyng. In that they haue not yet taken it away nor fowen it in heauen, the cause is that they chaunced to fynde enowgh there, by reason wherof they had no neade of this. To this erreure manye thynges were sayde which seemed of lyttle force to remoue hym from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that age are occupied of the deuyll, whom they paynt of the selfe same forme and coloure as he appereth vnto theym in dyuers shapes and formes. They make also Images of golde, copper, and woodde, to the same similitudes in terrible shapes and so variable as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the feete of faynte Mychaell th[e]archangell or in anye other place where they paynt them of most horrible port[r]iture. Lykewyse when the deuyll greatly intendeth to feare theym, he threteneth to fende them great tempestes which they caule *Furacanas* or *Haurachanas*, and are so vehement that they ouerthrowe many howfes and great trees. And I haue feene in montaynes full of many and greate trees, that for the space of three quarters of a league the mountayne hadde byn subuerted and the trees ouerthrowen and plucked owte of the earthe with the rootes: a thyng doubtelesse so fearefull and terrible to behold, that it may verely appere to be doen by the hand of the deuell. And in this case the Christian men ought to confider with good reason, that in al places where the holy sacrament is referued, the fayd tempestes are no more so owtrageous, or so perelous as they were wonte to bee.

¶ Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled
Torrída zona or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons
of the yeare.



He landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowghe they bee otherwyse temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therefore fuche flesshe or fyshe as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not bee preferued from putrefaction except it be rosted, sodden, or perboylde, the same daye that it is kylde. And wheras I haue sayde that such regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is so in deede. And therefore not without cause the auncient autours were of opinion that the burnt lyne or *Torrída zona* where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shulde be vnhabitable by reason the soonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficial parte therof to the depth of a mans heygth, it is founde temperate. And within this space, the trees and plantes fasten and sprede their rootes, and no dieper. Extendynge the same as farre in breadth in the ground as do their braunches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the grounde then I haue sayde, bycause that beneth the depth of the said space of a mans heygth, the earth is verye hotte, the vpper parte beinge temperate and verye moyste aswell by reason of th[e]aboundaunce of water whiche fauleth from heauen vppon that earth at certeyne ordinarie seasons of the yeare, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brokes, sprynges and marysshes, wherby the myghtie and supreme lorde which made these landes, hath moste prudently prouyded for the perferuation of the same.

R. E. As touchynge this poynt whiche was vnknown to the owlde wryters, and without consideration wherof reason can not perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions shulde be vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, I haue thought good for the better manifestynge of this secrete woorke of nature, to note owte of Cardanus his booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue theyr course toward the South as to the lowest part of the earth. He wryteth therefore as foloweth. The water was made of lesse quantitie then the earth and only in maner in the superficial parte therof, that place might bee leste for the habitation of beastes, and that water by his couldnesse myght temperate and not destroy the lyfe of beastes. And bicause this generation of luyng creatures, was only necessary on the superficial partes of the earth in comparison to the hole, therefore was the water made to occupie onely the superficial parte, in the which, metals, plantes, beastes, and fysshes shulde bee nuryshed. And bycause there was great perell least it shulde be to much consumed by the ayer and heate of the soonne, continuall mouinge was ioyned to it, wherby it gathereth couldnes and is preferued from fodeyne resolution. For fuche waters as do not moue, doo soone putrifie, and are easely resolued into ayer. By reason wherof nature prouyded for the generation of water in coulde places, as vnder the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the Equinoctiall shulde otherwise for lacke of moyster haue bin to much burned and scorched, nature also prouyded that that parte of the earth shulde bee lowest, by reason whereof all waters haue theyr course towarde the South to mitigate with moyster th[e]extremite of heate which otherwise shulde haue byn intollerable in that clyme. And by this reason, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte. albeit it haue his originall and sprynge, owt of the mountaynes of the mone cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cyrcle of Capricorne, yet runnyng with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall cyrcle, it disparfeth through owt the burnt line of *Torrída zona*, and by the same vyolent course fauleth into owre sea nere vnto the cite of Alexandria. It was necessary therefore that the greatest parte of the coulde and moyst element shulde haue recourse thither and consyft there, whereas was the greatest necessitie therof to temper the heate of the soonne by moystynge and coolynge the earthe and the ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith also hath most prudent nature prouyded for the securitie and preferuation of the places lyinge betwene bothe th[e]extremities of heate and colde, as betwene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowynge euer one wayes and keypnge one course, no regions can be drowned by fluddes: which thynge they well obserue that delyuer fieldes from inundations or ouerflowynges, and that take in hande to drye vp marysshes. If therefore waters had not theyr course and faul towarde places lowe or declynyng, the hole earth shulde bee ouerflowne as a marrysshe. And that the most declynyng parte shulde bee towarde the South, and sumwhat hygher about the poles, the cause is aswell the consumynge heate of the soonne in the Southe partes, as the preferuyng coulde of the hygh mountaynes nere to the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate consumeth and wasteth as coulde gathereth and preferueth. And for this cause that parte of the earthe that is nearest the poles, is, was, and euer shalbe highest, and likewise lowest in the middest furthest from the poles. And therefore it was not conuenient that the sonne shuld haue his course on euery syde, neither to the poles. For if it weare caryed alyke to euery parte throughout the worlde, it is necessary that the earth bee equall: and by that reason shulde it euer bee altogether dryed, or elles all ouerflowed with water. But where as this coulde not suffyce to the free course of ryuers for the often intercourse of higher places lyinge in the waye, whereby ouerflowynges and staves of waters and their corruption myght ensue, mooste prouident nature hath gyuen this priuileage to water that it maye so muche ascende as it hath discended: that by this meanes passynge ouer mountaynes and hylles, it maye at the length bee caryed into the sea. etc. Hytherto Cardanus, lette vs nowe returne to the historie.

There are also many roughe and hyghe mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleasaunt, cleare and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient writers hauyng no certeyne knowlege, affirmed

185

the faid burnt lye or *Torrida zona*, or Equinoctial to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of fyght and feelyng as by most certeine senses, hauyng liued many yeares in these regions, by reason wherof better credit ought to be giuen to me then to suche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the fyttuation of these regyons, yowe shall vnderstande that the coaste of the Northe sea, beyng in the goulfe of *Vraba* and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the shyppes arryue whiche coome owte of Spayne, is in the fyfte degree and a halfe, and in the seuenth, and from fyxe and a halfe vnto eyght, excepte a smaule pointe which entereth into the sea toward the North. That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth moste toward the East, is the cape of saincte Augustine which is in the eight degree. So that the faid goulfe of *Vraba* is distant from the Equinoctiall lye, from a hundreth and twentie to a hundreth and thirtie leaques and three quarters of a leaque after th[e] accompte of. xvii. leaques and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lyttle more or lesse, goeth all the coaste. By reason wherof, in the cite of *Saucla Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the forfayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And if there bee any dyfference betwene them by reason of this smaule distance from the Equinoctial, it is so lyttle, that in. xxiiii. houres makynge a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men and suche as vnderstande the sphere. From hense the North starre is seene very lowe And when the starres which are cauled the wardens of the north starre, are vnder the chariotte, it can not bee seene, bycause it is vnder the horisontal. And whereas I haue sayde beefore that it rayneth in these regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deede. For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greateste coulde of froste and rayne is in December and Ianuary: And the greatest heate of sommer aboute saynt Iohannes daye at mydsommer or in the moneth of Iuly. But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the sommer and tyme of greatest drowght and withowt rayne, is at Chrystmas and a moneth before and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth most, is about midsummer and a moneth before and a moneth after. And this seafon whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any colder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Christmas then at other seasons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner, but for that that in this tyme which they caule wynter, the soonne is hyd from theyr fyghtes by reason of cloudes and rayne more then at other tymes. Yet forasmuch as for the moste parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayer, they sumwhat shrynke and feele a lyttle coulde duryng the tyme of the faid moist and cloudy ayer, althowgh it bee not coulde in deede, or at the leaste suche coulde as hath any sensible sharpenes.

¶ *Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees. etc.*



Any other thynges myght be sayde, and much differyng from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of suche thynges as coome chiefly to my remembraunce as mooste woorthy to be noted, I wyll fyrste speake of certeyne lyttle and troubelous beastes whiche maye seeme to bee engendered of nature to molest and vexe menne, to shewe them and gyue them to vnderstand howe smaule and vyle a thyng maye offende and disquiete them, to th[e]nde that they maye remember the pryncipall ende for the whiche they were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of theyr saluation by the waye whiche is open to all Christian men and all other whiche wyll open the eyes of theyr vnderstandyng. And although the thynges wherof wee entende nowe to speake maye seeme vyle and lyttle to bee esteemed, yet are they woorthy to bee noted and confydered to vnderstand the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is therfore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande by the which aswell the Christians as Indians doo trauel, there are such marysshes and waters in the way that they are fayne to go withowt breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by reason wherof, certeyne smaule beastes or woormes (which they caule *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue fast to theyr legges. These wormes are as little as the pouder of beaten salt: And cleaue so fast that they can by no meanes be taken away except the place bee noynted with oyle. And after that the legges bee noynted awchyle with oyle, or the other partes where these lyttle tykes are fastened, they scrape the place with a knyfe and so take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, smoke them and burne them with fyer, and abyde great peynes in takynge them awaye by this meanes. Of other lyttle beastes which trouble men and are

engende[red] in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, I faye that the Christian men which trauell into these partes, haue them but feldome tymes, and that not past one or two, and this also very feldome. For passyng by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse makethe difference of saylyng by the wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North East) and *Magistral*, (that is south west) which is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a lyttle way folowing owre vyage by the west, but that all the lyfe which the Christians cary with them, or are engendered in theyr heades or other places of theyr bodier, dye and vtterlye consume by lyttle and lyttle, and are not engendered in India excepte in the heades of lyttle chyldren in those partes aswel amonge the chyldren of the Christians which are borne there, as also amonge the natural Indians who haue theym commonly in theyr heades and fumetymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cueua*, which is a region conteynge more then a hundreth leaques in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynesse, they dresse and clenfe one an other. And they that exercise this, are for the moste parte women who eate all that they take: And haue herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that owre men can not lyghtly atteyne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to bee confydered. And this is how the Christian men beinge there cleane frome this fylthynes of India, aswell in theyr heades as the reste of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to arryue in that place of the Ocean sea where wee sayde before that the lyfe dyed and forfoke them, suddently in theyr repassyng by the same clyme (as thoughte the lyfe had taryed for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde theym for the sspace of certeyne dayes although they change theyr shertes two or three tymes in a day. These lyfe are at the fyrste as lyttle as nyttes, and growe by lyttle and lyttle vntyl they bee of the byggenesse that they are in Spayne. This haue I often tymes proued, hauyng nowe foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this vyage.

Besyde these woormes and vermyn wherof we haue spoken, there is another lyttle mischeuous woorme, whiche we may number amonge the kyndes of fleas. This pestilence the Indians caule *Nigua*: And is much lesse then a flea. It perfeth the fleshe of a man, and so launfeth or cutteth the same (while in the meane tyme it can nother bee seene nor taken) that from fume it hath cutte of theyr handes, and from other theyr fiete vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynte the place with oyle and scrape it with a rasoure.

In the firme lande in golden Castyle or *Beragua*, there are many vipers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They that are bytten of them, dye in short space. For fewe lyue to the fourthe daye except present remedy. Of these, fume are of a lesse kind then other: And haue theyr tayle sumwhat rounde, and leape in the ayer to assayle men. And for this cause, fume caule this kynde of vipers *Tyro*. Theyr bytyng is most venemous, and for the moste parte incurable. One of theym chaunced to byte an Indian mayde whiche serued me in my house, to whome I caused the surgians to mynister theyr ordinarye cure, but they coulde doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yelowe water, so that shee died the thyrday for lacke of remedy as the like hath chaunced to dyuers other. This mayde was of th[e]age of. xiiii. yeares and spoke the Spanysshe toonge as yf shee had byn borne in Castyle. Shee sayde that the vyper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two spannes longe or lyttle lesse. And that to byte her shee lepte in the ayer for the space of more then fyxe spaces, as I haue harde the lyke of other credible perfons.

I haue also seene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very fmaule and of feuen or eyght foote longe. These are so redde that in the nyght they appeare lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day seeme as redde as bludde. These are also venemous, but not so much as the vipers. There are other much lesse and shorter and blacker. These coome owt of the ryuers and wander fumtymes farre on the lande, and are lykwyse venemous. There are also other adders of a ruffet coloure. These are sumwhat bygger then the vipers, and are hurtful and venemous. There are lykwyse an other forte of manye coloures and very longe. Of these I sawe one in the yeare of Christ 1515. in the Iland of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the sea costes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was slayne, I measured her and founde her to be more then. xx. foote longe, and sumwhat more then a mans fyft in byggenes. And although she hadde three or foure deadely woundes with a swoorde, yet dyed shee not nor stoonke the same daye, in so much that her bludde continued warme all that tyme. There are also in the marysshes and desertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lyfertes, dragons, and other dyuers kyndes of serpentes wherof I entende not here to speake much, bycause I haue more particulerly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of the Weste Indyas.

There are also spiders of marueylous bygnesse. And I haue seene summe with the body and legges, bygger then a mannes hande extended euery waye. And I ones sawe one of fuche bygnesse, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a sparowe, and full of that laune wherof they make their webbes. This was of a darke ruffette coloure, with eyes greater then the eies of a sparow. They are venemous and of terrible shape to beholde. There are also scorpions and dyuers other fuche venemous wormes. Wherby we maye see, that where as natural causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest actiuitie, they cease not to engender and bryng forth the bothe good and badde accordyng to the dispozytion of the matter, whiche they also doo partely dispoze as the phylosophers affyrme.

186

Nigua.

Vipers.

Adders.

Dragons.

Spiders.

187

Furthermore in the fyrme lande, there are manye toades beyng very noyous and hurteful by reason of their great multitude. They are not venemous. They are seene in greate aboundance in *Dariena* where they are so bygge that when they dye in the time of drouth, the bones of sum of them (and especially the rybbes) are of suche greatnesse that they appere too bee the bones of cattes or of summe other beastes of the same byggenesse. But as the waters dyminishe and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue fayde) they also consume therewith vntyll the yeare nexte folowing when the rayne and moysture increafe, at whiche tyme they are seene ageyne. Neuerthelesse, at this present, there is no such quantitie of them as was wonte to bee, by reason that as the land is better cultured by the Christians, as well by the fellynge of wooddes and shrubbes as also by the pasture of kine, hofes, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poyson diminisheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh more holsome and pleasaunt. These toades synge after three or foure fortes. For summe of them synge pleasauntly: other, lyke owres of Spayne. Summe also whistle: and other summe make an other maner of noyse. They are lykewyse of dyuers colours: as summe greene, summe ruffette or grey, and summe almost blacke. But of all fortes, they are great, and fylthye, and noyous by reason of their great multitude: yet are they not venemous as I haue fayde.

Crabbes.

There are also a straunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome foorth of certeyne holes of the earth that they them selues make. The head and bodye of these, make one rounde thing muche lyke vnto the hoode of a fawkon: hauynge foure feete comyng owt of the one fyde and as many owt of the other. They haue also two mouthes like vnto a paire of smaule pinfers, the one bygger then the other, wherwith they byte, but do no great hurte bycause they are not venemous. Their skyn and bodye is finoothe and thynne as is the skynne of a man, fauyng that it is sumwhat harder. Their colour is ruffette or white, or blewe, and walke fydelonge. They are very good to bee eaten: In so muche that the Christians trauayling by the fyrme lande, haue byn greatly nuryshed by them bycause they are founde in maner euery where. In shape and forme, they are muche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the fynge Cancer, and like vnto those which are found in Spaine in *Andalusia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber* where it entereth into the sea, and in the sea coastes therabout, fauyng that these are of the water and the other of the lande. They are sumtymes hurtefull, so that they that eate of them dye. But this chaunceth onely when they haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibale archers poyson their arrowes wherof I wyll speake hereafter. And for this cause the Christians take hede howe they eate of these crabbes if they fynde them neare vnto the fayd apple trees.

Serpentes cauled
Iuanni.

188

Furthermore in these Indies, aswell in the fyrme lande as in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of serperentes, which they caule. Y. V. *anas*, which summe caule *Iuannas*. These are terrible and fearefull to fyght, and yet not hurtefull. They are very delicate to bee eaten, and it is not yet knowen whether they be beastes of the lande or fyshes, bycause they lyue in the water, and wander in the woddes and on the lande. They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then connies and in summe places bygger then otters, with tayles lyke lifartes or eutes. Their skynne is spotted, and of the same kynd of smothnesse or barenesse, although of dyuers colours. Vpon the ridge of their backes, they haue many long prickes. Theyr teethe are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or dogge teeth. Their throtes are longe and large, reachynge from their beardes to their brestes, of the lyke skynne to the refydewe of their bodyes. They are dumme, and haue no voyce or make any noyse or crye although they bee kept tyde to the foote of a cheste or any other thyng for the space of. xx. or. xxv. dayes without any thyng to eate or drynke, excepte they gyue them nowe and then a lyttle of the breade of *Cazabbi*, or summe such other thyng. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans fynger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and suche as can not grafple or take holde of any thyng. They are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For fewe that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of their horrible shape excepte suche as haue byn accustomed to the beastes of these regyons, whiche are more horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleshe is of much better taste then the fleshe of connyes and more holsome. For it hurteth none but onely such as haue had the frenshe poxe. In so much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmitie, although they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte and complayne of the eatynge of these *Iuannas*, as hath byn often tymes proued by experience.

Byrdes.

A very lyttle
byrde.

There are founde in the fyrme lande certeyne byrdes so lyttle that the hole body of one of theym is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest fynger of a mans hande: and yet is the bare body without the fethers not paste halfe so bygge. This byrde, besyde her lyttlenes, is of such velocitie and swyftnes in flying that who so seeth her fleing in the ayer, can not se her flap or beate her winges after any other fort then do the dorres or humble bees or betels: so that there is no man that seeth her flie, that wold think her to be any other then a dorre. They make their nestes accordyng to the proportion of their bignes. And I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her nest put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more then. ii. *Tomini*, which are in poise. 24. grains, with the fethers with out the which she shulde haue wayed sumwhat lesse. And doubt lesse when I consider the fynenesse of the clawes and feete of these birdes, I knowe not whervnto I may

better liken them then to the lyttle byrdes whiche the lymmers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the margentes of churche bookes and other bookes of deuine seruice. Their fethers are of many faire colours as golden yelowe and greene beside other variable colours. Their beake is verye longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and subtile as a fowyng nedle. They are very hardye: fo that when they see a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr nestes, they flye at hys face and stryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goynge, and retournynge with such swyftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not seene it. And certainly these byrdes are fo lyttle, that I durst not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue seene them as wel as I, can beare witnes of my saying. They make their nestes of flockes and heare of cotten wherof there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr purpose. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beastes of these Indies, bycause they are innumerable bothe lyttle and greate, I intende not to speake muche heare, bycause I haue spoken more largely hereof in my generall hystorye of the Indydes.

There is an other kynde of beastes seene in the firme land which seemed very straunge and marueilous to the Chrystian men to beholde, and muche differynge from all other beastes which haue byn seene in other partes of the worlde. These beastes are cauled *Bardati*: And are foure footed, hauing their taile and al the rest of theyr bodies couered onely with a skyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horse or the chekered skynne of a lyfarte or Crocodyle, of coloure betwene whyte and ruffet, inclynynge sumwhat more to whyte. This beast, is of forme and shape much lyke to a barbed horse with his barbes and flankettes in all poyntes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also and the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne all thynges in lyke forte as in a barbed courser. They are of the bygnes of one of these common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with there feete they make their dens very deepe and the holes therof in like maner as do connyes. They are verye excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and sum also killed with crosbowes. They are lykewise taken often tymes when the husband men burne the stubble in fowyng time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beastes. I haue often times eaten of their fleshe which semeth to me of better taft then kyddes fleshe, and holsome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer byn seene in these partes of the woorld where the first barbed horses had their original, no man wold iudge but that the forme and fasshion of the coperture of horses furnished for the warres was fyrste deuysed by the fyght of these beastes.

There is also in the firme lande an other beaste cauled *Orfo Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beaste in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner of the same makynge faue that he hath a much longer snout and is of euyll fyght. They are often tymes taken only with slaues without any other weapon, and are not hurtful. They are also taken with dogges bycause they are not naturally armed althowgh they byte sumwhat. They are founde for the moste parte about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundaunce of antes. For in these regions is engendered a certeyne kynde of antes very lyttle and blacke, in the fyeldes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by th[e] instinct of nature these antes separate them felues to engender far from the wooddes for feare of these beares: The whiche bycause they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll very famen and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to fiede of these antes, cause them to coomme owt of the wooddes to hunte for them. These antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heyght of a man, or sumwhat more or lesse, and as bygge as a great chest, and sumtymes as bygge as a butte or a hogges head, and as hard as a stone: So that they seeme as though they were stones fet vp to lymytte th[e] endes and confines of certeyne landes. Within these hyllockes made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite lyttle antes, the which may bee gathered by bushelles when the hyllocke is broken. The which when it is sumtymes moysted by rayne and then dried ageyne by the heate of the soonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne smaul ryftes as lyttle and subtile as the edge of a knyfe. And it semeth that nature hath gyuen sence to these Antes to fynde such a matter of earth wherwith they may make the sayde hyllocke of suche hardenes that it may seeme a stronge pauement made of lyme and stone. And wheras I haue proued and caused sum of them to bee broken, I haue founde them of suche hardenes as if I had not seene I coude not haue beleued: In fo muche that they coude scarcely bee broken with pykes of Iren: So stronge fortresses doo these lyttle beastes make for theyr sauegarde ageynst theyr aduersarie the beare, who is chiefly nurysshed by them, and gyuen them as an enemye, accordynge to the common prouerbe which sayth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chimanchi il suo Bargello*: That is, there is no man so free that hath not his perfecutour or pryue enemye. And here when I confyder the maruelous prouidence which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wittie sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such lyttle beastes, he sayth thus. Why doo we maruayle at the towrebearynge shoulders of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many fences and suche industry in suche lyttle boddies? where is hearynge, smellynge, seeinge, and feelynge, ye, where are the vaynes and arteries (without which no beaste can lyue or moue) in these fo lyttle boddies whereof sume are fo smaule that theyr hole boddies can scarcely be seene of our

Beastes

Bardati

189

Beares

Antes.

190

A strange beast
whiche seemeth a
kynd of
Chameleon.

eyes, what shall we then saye of the partes of the same? Yet euen amonge these are there many of such sagacitie and industrie as the lyke is not seene in beastes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, etc. But to returne to the hystorie. This enimie which nature hath giuen to these litle beastes, vseth this maner to assaile them. When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the antes lye hid as in their fortresse, he putteth his toonge to one of the ryftes wherof we haue spoken being as subtile as the edge of a swoorde, and there with continuall lyckynge, maketh the place moyst, the fume and froth of his mouth beinge of such propertie that by continual lycking the place, it enlargeth the ryfte in such fort by litle and litle, that at the length he easely putteth in his toonge whiche he hath very longe and thynne, and much disproportionate to his bodye. And when he hath thus made free passage for his toonge into the hyllocke to put it easely in and out at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it reste a good space vntyl a great quantitie of the antes (whose nature reioyseth in heate and moyster) haue laden his tonge and as many as he can conteyne in the holownesse thereof: at which tyme he suddeynly draweth it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to the same practise immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as manye as hym lysteth, or as longe as he can reache any with his tonge. The fleshe of this beaste, is fylthy and vnfaury. But by reason of th[e] extreme shyftes and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at their fyrst commynge into these partes, they were enforced to proue all thynges and so fel to th[e] eatyng of these beastes. But when they had founde more delycate meates, they fell into hatred with this. These antes haue th[e] apperaunce of the place of their enteraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde. And this at so litle a hole that it could hardely be founde yf certeyne of them were not seene to passe in and out. But by this way the beares coulde haue no such poure to hurte them as aboue at the fayde ryftes as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beaste whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiere*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the sloweste beastes in the worlde, and so heauy and dull in mouynge that it canne scarcely go fyfte pases in a hole day. These beastes are in the firme lande, and are very straunge to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes. They are abowte two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse. But when they are very younge, they are sumwhat more grosse then longe. They haue foure subtile fiete, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togyther. Yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fiete able to susteyne theyr bodyes from the grounde. By reason wherof and by the heauynesse of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellyes on the grounde. Theyr neckes are hygh and streyght and all equall lyke the pestle of a mortar, which is altogyther equall euen vnto the toppe without makynge any proportion or similitude of a headde, or any dyfference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verye rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle whiche maketh theyr faces seeme sumwhat more longe then large. They haue smaule eyes and rounde: And nostrylles lyke vnto munkeys. They haue litle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one syde to an other as though they were astonysshed. Theyr chiefe desyre and delyte is to cleaue and flycke faste vnto trees or some other thyng whereby they may clyme alofte. And therefore for the moste parte, these beastes are founde vpon trees whervnto cleauynge fast, they mounte vp by litle and litle, sleynge them selues by theyr longe clawes. The coloure of theyr heare, is betwene ruffet and whyte, and of the proper coloure of the heare of a wesele. They haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much dyfferynge frome other beastes: for they syng onely in the nyght: And that continually frome tyme to tyme syngynge euer fyxe notes one hygher then an other, so faulyng with the same that the fyrste note is the hyghest and the other in a baser tewne as yf a man shuld say *La, fol, fa, mi, re, vt*. So this beaste sayth, *Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha*. And doubtelesse, it seemeth vnto me, that as I haue sayde in the chapter of the beaste cauled *Bardati*, that those beastes might bee th[e] originall and document to imbarbe horses, euen so the fyrste inuenture of musycke myght seeme by the hearynge of this beaste to haue the fyrst principles of that scyence rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But nowe to returne to the hystorie: I say that in a shorte space after this beaste hath soonge and hath paused a whyle, she returneth ageyne to the selfe same songe, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reason wherof and also bycause of her euyl fyght, I thynke her to bee a nyght beaste and the frende of darkenesse. Sumtymes the Christian menne fynde these beastes and bryng them home to theyr houses, where also they creepe all abowte with theyr naturall slownesse, in so much that nother for threatenynge or pryckynge they wyll moue any faster then theyr natural and accustomed pace. And yf they fynde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mounte to the toppe of the hyghest braunche thereof, where they remayne continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatynge of any thinge as farre as any man can iudge. And wheras I my selfe haue kepte them in my house, I coulde neuer perceaue other but that they lyue onely of ayer. And of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, bycause they haue neuer seene them eate any thyng, but euer turne theyr heades and mouthes toward that parte where the wynde bloweth most: whereby may bee confydered that they take moste pleasure in the ayer. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauynge very litle mouthes. They are not venemous or noyous any way: but altogyther brutishe and vtterly vnprofytable and without commoditie yet knowen to

men, fauyng onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate th[e] infinite poure of god, who delyteth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the poure of his incomprehensible wifedome and maieftie so farre to exceede the capacitie of mans vnderstandyng.

In these regions there are likewise found certeyne foules or byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz*. These are much bygger then geefe. The greatest parte of theyr fethers are of ruffet coloure, and in fume partes yelow. Theyr bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length and verye large neare to the heade, and growyng fmaule towarde the poynte. They haue greate and large throtes: And are much lyke to a foule which I fawe in Flaunders in Bruffelles in yowre maiesties pallaice which the Flemynges caule Haina. And I remember that when yowr maiestie dyned one day in yowre great haule there was brought to yowre maiesties prefence a chauderne of water with certeyne fysshes alyue, which the fayde foule did eate vp hole. And I thynke verely that that foule was a foule of the sea bycause shee had fiete lyke foules of the water as haue also these *Alcatrazi*, which are likewyse foules of the sea: and of such greatnesse that I haue seene a hole cote of a man put into the throates of one of theym in *Panama* in the yeare 1521. And forasmuch as in that coaste of *Panama*, there passeth and flyeth a greate multitude of these *Alcatrazi* beinge a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Yowre maiestie shall therefore vnderstande that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur* ryfeth and fauleth two leagues and more from fyxe houres to fyxe houres: so that when it increaseth, the water of the sea arryueth so neare to the houses of *Panama* as doth owre sea (cauled *Mare Mediteraneum*) in Barzalona or in Naples. And when the sayd increasyng of the sea commeth, there commeth also therwith such a multitude of the smaule fysshes cauled fardynes, that it is so marueylous a thyng to beholde, that no man wolde beleue it that hath not seene it. In so much that the *Cacique*, (that is) the kynge of that land at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was commaunded by yowre maiesties gouernour, to bryng ordynaryly three canoas or barks full of the sayde fardynes and to vnlade the same in the markette place, whiche were afterwarde by the ruler of the citie diuyded amonge the Christian men without any coste or charge to any of them. In so much that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they were, and as many as are at this presente in *Toledo* or more, and had none other thyng to lyue by, they myght haue byn sufficiently fusteyned by these fardynes, byfyde th[e]ouerplus which shulde haue remayned. But to returne to the foules wherof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the fardynes with the same, euen so lykewyse coome the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therwith: and flye continually ouer it in suche a multytude, that they appeare to couer th[e]upper parte or floure of the water. And thus continue in mountyng and faulyng from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer duryng all the tyme of theyr fysshynge. And as soone as they haue taken any of these fardynes, they flye aboue the water and eate them incontiently, and suddeynly returne ageyne to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without ceasyng. In lyke maner when the sea fauleth, they folowe there fysshynge as I haue sayde. There goethe also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Coda inforcata*, (that is) the forked tayle, whereof I haue made mention before. And as soone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the fardynes, suddeynly this *Coda inforcaia* gyueth her so many stokes, and so persecuteth her, that shee causeth her to let faule the fardynes which shee hath in her mouth. The which as soone as they are faulne, and before they yet touch the water, the *Coda inforcaia* catcheth them euen in the faule, in suche sorte that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is such, that the Chrystian menne are accustomed to send to certeyne Ilandes and rockes which are neare abowte *Panama*, with theyr boates or barks to take these *Alcatrazzi* whyle they are yet younge and can not flye: and kyll as many of them with staues as they wyll, vntyll they haue therwith laden theyr barks or canoas. These younge ones are so fatte and wel fedde that they can not bee eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make greafe for candeis to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easely. After this maner and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kylde. And yet it seemeth that the number of them that fyfthe for fardynes doo dayly increase.

There are other foules cauled *Passere sempie*: that is, simple sparowes. These are sumwhat lesse then femewes: and haue theyr fiete lyke vnto great malardes: And stande in the water sumtymes. And when the shyppes fayle fyftie or a hundreth leaques abowte the Ilandes, these foules beholdyng the shyppes comyng towarde them, breake theyr flyght and faule downe vpon the sayle yarde, mastes, and cables therof. And are so simple and folysh that they tary vntyll they maye easely be taken with mens handes, and were therefore cauled of the maryners simple sparowes. They are blacke, and vpon their blacke, haue theyr heade and shoulders of fethers of a darke ruffet coloure. They are not good to bee eaten, although the mariners haue sumtymes bin enforced to eate them.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyrme lande, which the Christians caule *Picuti*, bycause they haue very great beakes in respecte of the lyttlenesse of theyr boddies: For theyr beakes are very heauy and waye

191

Foules, and byrdes

*Alcatraz.**Panama.**Passere sempie.*

192

Picuti.

more then theyr hole boddies byfyde. These byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater bushement of fethers, in so much that theyr fethers are more then theyr boddies. Theyr fethers are very fayre and of many variable coloures. Theyr beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendynge downe towarde the earthe, and three fyngers brode neare vnto the heade. Theyr tonges are very quilles, wherwith they make a great hyssynge. They make holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make theyr nestes. And surely these byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue seene, aswel for theyr toonges (which are quilles as I haue sayde) as also for the strangeness of theyr fyght and disproportion of their greate beakes in respect of the rest of theyr boddies. There are no byrdes founde that prouyde better for the safegarde of theyr younge in the tyme of theyr breedynge to bee withowte daunger of wylde cattes that they enter not into theyr nestes to destroye theyr egges or younge. And this aswell by the straunge maner of buyldynge theyr nestes, as also by theyr owne defence. And therefore when they perceauce that the cattes approche towarde them, they enter into theyr nestes: and holdynge theyr beakes towarde th[e]nterance of the same, stande at theyr defence, and so vexe the cattes that they cause them to leaue theyr enterpryse.

Folysse
sparowes.

There are also other byrdes or sparowes, whiche the Christians by contrary effect caule *Matti*, that is fooles. Wheras neuertheless there is no byrde that sheweth more wyt and crafte in defendynge her younge from perell. These byrdes are lyttle and in maner blacke, and sumewhat bygger then owre thrushes. They haue certeyne whyte fethers in theyr neckes, and the lyke sagacitie or sharpenes of sense as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gazzuole*. They seldome tymes light vpon the earth. They make theyr nestes in trees separated from other, bycause the wylde cattes (cauled *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape frome tree to tree, not descendynge to the grounde for feare of other beastes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrste to coome downe to drynke at suche tymes as they are sure not to bee molested. And for this cause doo not these byrdes make theyr nestes but in trees farre diuided from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lyttle sackes, large at the bottome, and growynge narrower and narrower towarde the mouth whereby they are fastened: hauynge the hole wher they enter into the sacke, of such byggenes as may onely suffice to receaue them. And to th[e]nde that the cattes maye not deuoure theyr younge yf they chauce to mounte vpon the trees where they haue theyr nestes, they vse an other crafte, which is, to make theyr nestes in thicke branches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and stronge thorns implicate and set in such order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattes can by no meanes put theyr legges into the hole of the neste to take owte younge byrdes, aswel for the sharpenes of the thornes as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the younge byrdes rest withowt daunger of theyr enemye. For sum of theyr nestes beyng three or foure spannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vse also an other pollicie: which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree. The which they doo for one of these two causes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to go in great multitudes, and reioyse in the company of theyr owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule stares, or elles to th[e]intent that yf it shoulde so chauce that the cattes shulde clyme the trees where they make theyr nestes, they might bee a greater company to refyfle and molest the cattes, at whose approach they make a feareful and terrible cry, wherby the cattes are put to flyght.

193

Gazzuole.

Furthermore, in the firme land, and in the Ilandes, there are certeyne byrdes cauled *Piche* or *Gazzuole*, sumewhat lyke vnto those which we caule woodwaules, or woodpeckes, beinge lesse then owrs of Spayne. These are altogether blacke, and go hoppyng and leapyng. Theyr beakes are also blacke and of the same fashyon as are the poppingiays beakes. They haue longe tayles, and are sumwhat bygger then stares.

Pintadelli

There are other byrdes cauled *Pintadelli*, whiche are lyke vnto certeyne greene byrdes whiche the Italyans caule *Fringuelli*: and are of feuen coloures. These byrdes for feare of the cattes, are euer woonte to make theyr nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers or the fea, where the branches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a lyttle weyght they maye bowe downe to the water. Theyr nestes are made so neare the toppes of the branches that when the cattes coome theron, the branches bende towarde the water, and the cattes turne backe ageyne for feare of faulyng. For althoughe no beaste in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the moste parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to swimme, this catte hath no maner of aptenesse thereunto, and is therefore foone drowned or strangeled in the water, and by a pryue sense of nature feareth the daunger which he can not escape. These byrdes make theyr nestes in suche forte, that althoughe they bee weete and fylled with water, yet doo they so suddenly ryse vp ageyne, that the younge byrdes are not thereby hurte or drowned.

There are also many nyghtyngales and other byrdes whiche synge maruelously with great melodie and difference in synngynge. These byrdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures the one from the other. Sum are altogether yelowe, and sum other of so excellent, delectable, and hyghe a coloure as it weare a rubye. Other are also of dyuers and variable coloures: sum of fewe coloures, and other sume all of one coloure: beinge all fo

fayre and bewtiful, that in bryghtnesse and shynynge they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy or other prouinces of Europe. Many of these are taken with nettes, lyme twygges, and sprynges of dyuers fortes.

Dyuers other fortes of greate foules lyke vnto Eagles, and fuche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of fuche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to descrybe them all particularly. And forasmuche as I haue more largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requyrite to make any further mention of the fame.

¶ Of trees, fruites, and plantes.



Here is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilandes a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynd of date trees and hauynge theyr leaues of the self same greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growynge. For the leaues of this *Cocus* grow owte of the trunckes of the tree as doo the fyngers owte of the hande, wreathyng them selues one within an other and so spreadyng abrode. These trees are hygh: and are founde in great plentie in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chimán*. These date trees brynge furth a frute after this sorte. Beinge altogyther vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And from the superficiall parte to the myddest which is the frute, it is inuolued and couered with many webbes much lyke vnto those hyrdes of towne whiche they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towne or webbe, the East Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure fortes, and cordes for the sayles of shyppes. But in these Indies of your maiestie, they passe not for these cordes or this clothe that may be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the goffampine trees. The frute which is in the myddest of the fayde towne, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans fyfte, and sumtymes twyse as bygge and more. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or sum other rounde thyng somewhat more longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thicke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleaueth faste to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of coornel, of the thyckenesse of halfe a fynger or of the least fynger of the hande: And is very whyte, lyke vnto a fayre Almonde, and of better taste and more pleasaunt. When this frute is chewed, there remayne certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. Yet if it bee swalowed downe, it is not vnpleasaunt. For althowgh that after the ieuwe or moysture bee gonne downe the throte before the fayde crummes bee swalowed, the reste whiche is eaten seeme somewhat sharpe or fower, yet doth it not so greatly offende the taste so as to bee caste away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eate of the fayde carnositie and frute: But fyrste beatynge it very much, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substaunce: The which the Christian men of those regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the grayne of *Maizium* wherof they make theyr breade, or in other breade as we put breade in porrage: So that by reason of the fayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten without offence to the stomake. They are so pleasaunte to the taste, and leaue it aswell satysfied as thowghe it had byn delyted with many delycate dyffhes. But to proceade further, your maiestie shall vnderstand, that in the place of the stone or coornell, there is in the myddest of the fayde carnositie, a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a moste cleare and excellent water, in such quantitie as maye fyll a greate egge shell, or more or lesse accordynge to the byggenesse of the *Cocus*. The which water fuerly, is the moste substantiall, excellent and precious to be droonke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In so much that in the momente when it passeth the palate of the mouth and begynneth to goo downe the throte it seemeth that frome the sole of the foote to the crowne of the headde, there is no parte of the boddye but that feelethe great comfort therby: as it is doutlesse one of the most excellent thynges that may be tasted vpon the earth, and fuche as I am not able by wrytynge or toonge to expresse. And to proceade yet further, I say that when the meate of this frute is taken from the vessell therof, the vessell remayneth as fayre and nette as though it were pullyshed: and is without, of colour inclynynge toward blacke, and shyneth or glystereth very fayre. And is within of no lesse delicatenesse. Suche as haue accustomed to drynke in these vesselles, and haue bynne trowbeled with the disease cauled the fretinge of the guttes, say that they haue by experience founde it a maruelous remedie ageynst that disease: And that it breakethe the stone and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cause, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faste to the tree, there are seene two holes, and aboue them two other naturall holes, which altogyther, doo represente the giesture and fyngure of the cattes cauled *Mammone*, that is, munkeys, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the same effecte to heale fretyng of the guttes, that Plinie descrybeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

Great foules.

Cocus.

194

I haue seene one of these fruites opened, the whiche when it was hole, yf it were shaken the water was harde shogge therein as it were in a bottle: but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled into a salte substaunce.

Great trees.

195

A maruelous tree.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of fuche byggenesse that I dare not speake therof but in place where I haue so many wytnesses which haue seene the fame as wel as I. I say therefore, that a leaque from *Dariena* or the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, there passeth a ryuer very large and deepe, which is cauled *Cuti*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a greate tree so trauerfinge the fame that it was in the steade of a brydge, the which I my selfe with dyuers other that are at this present in yowre maiesties courte, haue often tymes passed ouer. And forasmuch as the sayde tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight therof was so shronke downewarde and partely couered with water that none could passe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeare 1522. th[e] official of Iustice in that citie at yowre maiesties appoyntemente, caused an other greate tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauerfed the ryuer and reached more then fyftie foote ouer the further syde. This tree was exceedynge greate, and rested aboue the water more then two cubytes. In the faule, it cast downe all fuche other trees as were within the reache therof: And discouered certeyne vynes whiche were so laden with blacke grapes of pleasaunte taste, that they satiffyed more then fyftie persons whiche ate theyr fylle therof. This tree in the thickest parte therof, was more then fyxtene spannes thicke: And was neuerthelesse but lyttle in respect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates therof (which they caule *Canoas*,) of such byggenesse, beinge all of one hole tree, that fume conteyne a hundreth men, fume a hundreth and thirtie, and fume more, hauynge neuerthelesse fuche voyde space within the fame, that there is lefte sufficiente roome to passe to and fro through owte all the *Canoa*. Sum of these are so large bysyde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelue spannes in breadth, and sayle with twoo sayles as with the master sayle and the trinkette which they make of verye good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue seene in these partes or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kynge wherof rebellynge from th[e] obedience of yowre maiestie, was persued by me and taken prysoner: At whiche tyme I with my company, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne ful of great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche had three rootes or rather diuisions of the roote aboue the earth in forme of a tryangle or triuette: so that betwene euery foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a space of twentie foote betwene euery foote. And this of such heyght aboue the earthe, that a laden carte of those wherewith they are accustomed to brynge home corne in the tyme of haruest in the kyngedome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght easely haue passed through euery of those particions or wyndowes whiche were betwene the three feete of the sayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunke of the tree, the open places of the dyuisions betwene these three feete, were of fuche heyght from the grounde, that a footeman with a iauelyn was not able to reache to the place where the sayde feete ioyned togyther in the trunke or body of the tree which grewe of great height in one piece and one hole body, or euer it spredde in braunches, which it did not before it exceeded in heyght the towre of saynt Romane in the citie of *Toledo*: from whiche heyght and vpwarde, it sprede very greate and stronge braunches. Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I my selfe was one. And when I was ascended to the place where it begunne to sprede the branches, it was a maruelous thing to beholde a greate cuntrye of fuche trees towarde the prouince of *Abrayme*. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certeyne *Befuchi* (wherof I haue spoken before) which grewe wreathed aboute the tree in fuche forte that they seemed to make a scalyng ladder. Euery of the forefayde three feete which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentie spannes in thycknesse. And where they ioyned al togyther aboue in the trunke or boddie of the tree, the principall trunke was more then fortie and fyue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue now declared, was seene of all the companie that was there with me when (as I haue sayde before) I tooke kynge *Guaturo* prysoner in the yeare 1522. Many thynges more myght here bee spoken as touchynge this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers sortes and dyfference, as sweete Ceder trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which sum are so heauy that they can not flote aboue the water but synke immediatly to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a corke. As touchynge all whiche thynges I haue wrytten more largely in my generall hystorie of the Indies.

Kyndlyng of fyre without fyre.

And forasmuch as at this present I haue entered to intreate of trees, before I passe any further to other thynges, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde, and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a piece of woodde of two spannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leaste fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well pullysshed, and of a stronge kynde of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpose. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other pieces of woodde of the dryest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast togyther one with an other as close as two fyngers ioyned. In the myddeft or betwene these, they put the poynt of the fyrste lyttle staffe made of harde and stronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two pieces of woodde which lye bounde togyther vppon the earthe, which by that vncessant rubbyng and chafynge, are in short space kyndeled and take fyre.

I haue also thought good here to speake sumwhat of such thynges as coomme to my remembraunce of

certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and fumetyme also the lyke haue bynne seene in Spayne. These are certeyne putrified tronkes which haue lyne so longe rottyng on the earth that they are verye whyte and shyne in the nyght lyke burnynge fyre brandes. And when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende priuily in the nyght to make warre and inuade any prouince when case so requyreth that it shalbe necessary to go in the nyght in fuche places where they knowe not the way, the formost Christian man whiche guydethe the waye, associate with an Indian to directe hym therein, take^th a lyttle starre of the sayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangynge behynde on his shoulders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre behynde hym, by the shynynge whereof the thyrde foloweth the same waye, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this meanes none are losfe or stragle owte of the way. And forasmuche as this lyght is not seene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Chrystians bycause they are not thereby disclofed before they inuade theyr enemies.

Furthermore as touchynge the natures of trees, one particular thyng seemeth woorthy to bee noted, wherof Plinie maketh mention in his natural hystorye where he saythe that there are certeyne trees which contynewe euer greene and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the baye tree, the Ceder, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with such other, of the whiche in all togyther he nameth not paste fyue or fyxe. To this purpose, I faye, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the firme lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde twoo trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme. For althowgh I haue diligently searched to knowe the trewth hereof, yet haue I not seene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of theym which we haue brought owt of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Ceders, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions excepte onely *Cassia*, which loseth his leaues and hath a greater thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade theyr rootes no dieper in the earthe then the depth of a mans heyght or sumewhat more, not descendyng any further into the ground by reason of the greate heate which is found beneth that depth, yet dooth *Cassia* pearce further into the ground vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Phylosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radycall moyster to fuche thynges as drawe theyr nuryshment therof, as fat and vnctuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast and firme moysture to fuche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that fuche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the sayde thynne and waterysse moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde effecte which is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plante in all these parties.

Putrified woodde
shynynge in the
nyght.

196

Plinie.

Trees which
contynue euer
greene.

Cassia.

A secrete thyng

Radycall
moysture.

¶ Of Reedes or Canes.



Haue not thought it conuenient in the chapiture before to speake of that whereof I intende nowe to entreate of, reedes or canes, to th[e]intente that I wolde not mengle theym with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of them selues woorthy to bee particularly obserued. So it is therefore, that in the firme land there are many fortes of reedes, so that in many places they make theyr howses therof, couerynge them with the toppes of the same, and makynge their waules of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde before. And amonge these kyndes of reedes, there is one so greate, that the canes therof are as bygge as a mans legge in the knee, and three spannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or more: in so much that euery of them is of capacitie to conteyne a lyttle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde sum greater and sum lesse, of the which sum they vse to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde an other kynde which fuerly is marueylous, beyng lyttle bygger then a Iauelen, the canes whereof are longer then twoo spannes. These reedes growe one farre from an other, as sum tymes twentie or thirtie pases, and fumetymes also twoo or three leaques. They growe in maner in all prouinces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees wherunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of theyr braunches, which they imbrase and descende ageyne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of moste cleare water without any maner of tast or fauoure eyther of the canes or of any other thyng: And fuche as yf it were taken owte of the fressheste sprynge in the worlde. Nor yet is it knowen that euer it hurte any that droonke therof. For it hath oftentimes so chaunced that as the Chrysten men haue trauallyd in these regions in defolate wayes where for lacke of water they haue byn in great daunger to dye for thyrste, they haue escaped that perell by reason that they founde the sayde reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue droonke a great quantitie without any hurte thereof ensewynge. Therefore when they fynde these in any place, they make water vesselles of the canes therof, and cary as many of them ful of water as may suffice for one dayes iornay. And fumtyme they cary so many, that they take for euery man two or three quartes of water which may ferue them for many dayes bycause it doth not corrupte, but remayneth styll fresshe and good.

197

Platani.

There are also certaine plantes which the Christians call *Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as bygge in the trunke as the knee of a man or more. Frome the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then three spannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remayneth hole in the myddest. In the myddeste of this plant in the hyghest parte thereof, there groweth a cluster with fortie or fyftie Platans about it, euery of them beinge a spanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the smaule, or more or lesse accordyng to the goodnesse of the foyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thicke, and easy to bee broken: being within altogether full of a substaunce lyke vnto the marye of the bone of an oxe as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken frome the same. This cluster owght to bee taken from the plant, when any one of the Platans begynne to appere yelowe. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houfes where all the cluster waxeth ripe with his Platans. This cluster is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beyng roasted or flewed in an ouen in a close pot or sum fuche other thyng, are of pleasaunte taste muche lyke the conferue of hony. They putrifie not on the sea so foone as sume other frutes do: but continue fyfteene dayes and more yf they bee gathered sumwhat greene. They seeme more delycate on the sea then on the lande, not for that they any thinge increase in goodnesse on the sea, but bycause that whereas on the sea other thynges are lackyng wherof is plentie on the land, those meates seeme of beste taste which satiffie presente necessitie. This troonke or sprygge whiche bryngeth foorth the sayde cluster is a hole yeare in growyng and bryngyng foorth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put foorth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue sprygges as bygge as the fyrst or principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the pryncipall in bryngyng foorth of clusters with frutes lykewyse at theyr tyme, and also in bryngyng foorth other and many sprygges as is sayde beefore. From the which sprygges or trunkes, as soone as the cluster of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to drye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycause it doth none other then occupie it in vayne and without profyt. They are so many and doo so maruelously increase and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner incredible. They are exceedyng moyste. In so much that when they are plucked vp from the place wher they grow, there iss Heweth forth a great quantitie of water as well owte of the plante as owte of the place where it grewe: In such sorte that all the moysture of the earth farre abowte, myght seeme to bee gathered togyther abowte the trunke or blocke of the sayde plante: with the frutes whereof, the antes are so farre in loue, that they are seene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it sumtyme so chaunceth that men are inforced to take away the Platans frome theyr possession. These frutes are founde at all tymes of the yeare.

Figges.

Tunas.

198

There is also an other kynd of wyld plantes that groweth in the fyeldes: which I haue not seene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, althowgh they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. These they caule *Tunas*. They growe of a thistle full of thornes, and bryng foorth a frute muche lyke vnto great fygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hyghe coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a fygge. They are of good taste: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woorke a straunge effecte in fuche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or three or more, they cause his vrine to bee of the verye coloure of bludde, which thyng chaunced once to my selfe. At whiche tyme as I made water and sawe the colour of my vrine, I entered into a great suspition of my lyfe, beinge so astonysshed for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to me vpon sum other cause. In so muche that surely my imagination myght haue doone me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd comforte me immediatly, declaryng the cause therof as they knewe by experience beinge auncient inhabitours in those regions.

*Bihaos.**Hauas.*

There groweth also an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bihaos*. This putteth forth certeyne streight braunches and very brode leaues which the Indians vse for dyuers purposes. For in sum places they couer theyr houfes with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of thetche, wherunto it serueth very well. Sumtymes also when it rayneth, they cast these ouer theyr heades to defende them from the water. They make also certeyne chestes whiche they caule *Hauas*, weaved after a straunge sorte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bihaos*. These chestes are wrought in such fort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not such thynges wette as are within them. They are made of the braunches of the sayde *Bihaos* with the leaues weaved togyther therwith. In these they keepe salte and other subtyle thynges. They vse theym also for an other purpose, which is this: That findyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarfenesse of vyttayles, they dygge vp the rootes of these plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it selfe in that parte where it is moste tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulruffhe.

Dying of cotton.

And forasmuch as wee are nowe coomme to th[e]nd of this narration, it commeth to my remembraunce to make mention of an other thyng which is not farre from my purpose. And this is howe the Indians do stayne or dye cloth of bombage cotton, or any other thyng which they intende to dye of dyuers coloures: as blacke, tawny, greene, blewe, yelowe, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees,

whiche they knowe by experience to bee good for this practife. And by this arte they make colours in such perfection and excellencie that no better can bee diuysed. But this seemeth a straunge thyng, that they doo all this in one selfe same vessell; So that when they haue caused the fayde ryndes and leaues to boyle together, they make in the same vessell without any change (as I haue fayde) as many colours as them lysteth. Whiche thyng I suppose to coomme to passe by the disposition of the coloure whiche they haue fyrste gyuen to the thyng that they intende to drye or colour, whether it bee threede, webbe, or clothe, or any thyng that they intende to coloure.

A straunge thyng.

¶ Of venemous apples wherewith they poyson theyr arrowes.



He apples wherewith the Indian Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees couered with many braunches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of these euyl frutes, and haue theyr leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they are lesse and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muscadell peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggenesse: And are in sum partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweete faouure. These trees for the moste parte, growe euer by the sea coastes and neare vnto the water: And are so fayre and of pleafaunte faouur, that there is no man that feethe them but wyll desyre to eate therof.

In so much that if it may bee spoken of any frute yet growyng on the earth, I wolde faye that this was the vnhappy frute wherof owre fyrste parentes Adam and Eue tasted, wherby they both lost theyr felicitie and procured death to them and theyr posteritie. Of these frutes, and of the greates antes whose bytyng causeth swellynge (whereof I haue spoken els where) and of the eutes or lysartes, and vipers, and such other venemous thynges, the Canibales which are the chyefe archers amonge the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes wherewith they kyll all that they wounde.

Note.

These venemes they mengle together and make thereof a blacke masse or composition which appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyson I caused a great quantitie to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leaques and more within the lande, with a greates multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with also the house wherein they were referued. This was in the yere. 1514. at suche tyme as th[e] army arriued there with capitayne *Pedrarias da villa* at the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the hystory. These apples (as I haue said) growe neare vnto the sea. And wheras the Christians which serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profytable for suche as are wounded with these arrowes, as is the water of the sea if the wounde be much wasshed therewith, by which means sum haue escaped although but fewe, yet to faye the trewth, albeit the water of the sea haue a certeyne caustlike qualitie ageynst poyson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case: nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceaued that of fiftie that haue byn wounded, three haue recouered. But that your maiestie may the better consyder the force of the veneme of these trees, yowe shall further vnderstande that yf a man doo but repose hym selfe to sleepe a lytle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head and eyes so swolne when he ryseth, that the eye lyddes are ioyned with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the fayde tree to faule into the eye, it vtterly destroyeth the syght. The pestilent nature of this tree is such that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of these there groweth greates plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towarde the North coast on the Weste and Easte syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so greates a stynke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so greates a peyne in the headde.

Canibales archiers

Wherwith they inuenym the[ir] arrowes

199
Petrus Arias.

The water of the sea.

The goulfe of *Vraba*.*Xagua.*

Amonge other trees which are in these Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xagua*, wherof there is greates plentie. They are very hygh and streyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes and iauelyns of dyuers lengthes and byggenesse. They are of a fayre colour betwene ruffette and whyte. This tree bryngeth forth a greates frute as bygge as Papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is ripe. Owte of this they gette a very cleare water wherwith they wasshe theyr legges and sumetymes all theyr boddies when they feele theyr flesshe werye, faynt, or loofe. The which water, bysyde that it hath a byndyng qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that what so euer it toucheth, it steyneth it blacke by lytle and lytle vntyll it bee as blacke as giette, which coloure can not be taken away in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes. And if the nayle bee but touched therewith, it is so steyned that it can by no meanes bee taken away vntyll it eyther faule of, or growe owte and bee clypped away by lytle and lytle, as I my selfe haue oftentimes seene by experience.

There is another kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*. These are very greates and fayre, and cause holosome ayer where they growe and a pleasaunt shadow, and are founde in greates abundaunce. Theyr frute is very good,

Hobi.
Sum thynke these to be mirobalanes

and of good tast and fauoure, and much lyke vnto certeyne damsons or prunes beinge lyttle and yelow. But theyr stone is very great: by reason wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rynde boyled in water, maketh a holfome bathe for the legges, bycause it bindeth and steyeth the looseneffe of the flesshe so sencibly that it is a marueyle to confyder. It is fuerly a holfome and excellent bathe ageynst such fayntnesse: And is the beste tree that may bee founde in those parties to sleepe vnder. For it causeth no heauinesse of the headde as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thyng I speake bycause the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fyeldes. It is therefore a common practise amonge them, that where so euer they fynd these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherin they sleepe.

Date trees.

There are also a kynde of hyghe date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of these is moste excellent: beinge very blacke, and shynynge, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swymme aboue the water, but synketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Also iauelyns, speares, and pykes. And I faye pykes, bycause that in the coastes of the sea of *Sur*, beyonde *Esquegua* and *Vracha*, the Indians vse great and longe pykes made of the woodde of these date trees. Of the same lykewyse they make clubbes and swoordes and dyuers other weapons. Also vesselles and housholde stufte of dyuers fortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermore of this woodde the Christians vse to make dyuers musicall instrumentes, as clarifimbals, lutes, gyterns, and fuche other, the whiche byfyde theyr fayre shynynge coloure lyke vnto giete, are also of a good founde and very durable by reason of the hardnesse of the woodde.

Th[e]inhabitantes
of the sea of Sur.

200

An herb that
beareth cordes.

After that I haue fayde thus much of trees and plantes, I haue thought good also to speake sumwhat of herbes. You shall therefore vnderstande that in these Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yelow lyllie, abowte whose leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes or laces, as the lyke is partly seene in the herbe which we caule lased faury. But these of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer: and so stronge that they tye theyr hangynge beddes thereby whiche they caule *Hamacas* wherof we haue spoken elswhere. These cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing sauynge that *Henequen* is lesse and of a fyner substauce as it were line: And the other is grosser lyke the wycke or twyste of hempe, and is imperfecte in comparison to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yelow lyke vnto abarne, and sum also whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the moste subtyle and fyne threede, the Indians sawe in funder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to saw or cutte, drawynge the one hande after the other as doo they that sawe, puttyng euer nowe and then a portion of fyne sande vppon the threede, or on the place or parte of the Iren where they continue rubbyng the sayde threede. So that yf the threede be worne, they take an other, and continewe in theyr woorke as before vntyl they haue cutte in funder the iren although it bee neuer so bygge: and cut it as yf it were a tender thyng and easye to bee sawne.

Cabuia and
Henequen.A straung[e]
thinge.

Leaues.

And for asmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amonge herbes, I wyll here speake sumewhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plante that seemeth more wylde and deformed: so that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees or plantes. They haue certeyne braunches full of large and deformed leaues, which braunches were fyrste leaues lyke vnto the other. As the braunches made of these leaues growe fourth in length, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a dyfficult thyng to descrybe the forme of these trees except the same shulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the toonge fayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of such vertue, that beyng well beaten and spreadde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in fyftene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had neuer byn broken. Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the flesshe that it can not without much difficultie bee taken away. But as soone as it hath healed the fore and wrought his operation, it loofeth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experience.

A leafe of great
vertue.

¶ Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge.



N the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and fundry kyndes of fysshes muche differynge in shape and forme. And although it be impossible to speake of all, yet wyll I make mention of sum. And fyrst to begynne at sardynes, yowe shall vnderstande that there is founde a kynde of these fysshes very large and with redde tayles, beinge a very delicate fyssh. The beste kyndes of other fysshes are these: *Moxarre*, *Diahace*, *Brettes*, *Dahaos*, *Thornbackes*, and *Salmons*. All these and dyuers other which I do not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are lykewyse taken very good creuyffhes. There

are also founde in the sea, certeyne other fysshes: as soles, mackerelles, turbuttes, *Palamite*, *Lizze*, *Polpi*, *Chieppe*, *Xaibas*, Locustes, Oysters, exceadyng great Tortoyfes, and Tiburoni of maruelous byggenesse: Also Manates, and Murene, and manye other fysshes which haue no names in oure language. And these of such diuerfitie and quantitie as can not bee expressed without large wrytynge and longe tyme. But to let passe to intreate particulerly of the multitude of fysshes, I intende to speake chiefly and sumwhat largely of three fortes of moste notable fysshes: wherof the fyrst is, the great Tortoyfes, the seconde is cauled Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the fyrste, I faye that in the Ilande of *Cuba*, are founde great Tortoyfes (which are certeyne shell fysshes) of such byggenesse that tenne or fyfteene men are scarfely able to lyfte one of them owt of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible persons dwellynge in the same Ilande. But of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie that in the firme lande in the vyllage of Acla there are of this forte sum taken and kylled of fuche byggenesse that fixe men with much difficultie coulde scarfely drawe them owt of the water. And commonly the leaft fort of them are as much as two men may cary at a burden. That which I fawe lifted vp by fyxe men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth more then fyue yardes. The maner of takynge them, is this. It sumtymes chaunceth that in theyr greate nettes (whiche they caule shoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Tortoyfes of the common forte in great quantities. And when they coome owt of the sea and bringe foorth theyr egges and go togyther by coompanies from the sea to feade on the lande, the Christians or Indians folowe theyr steppes whiche they fynde in the sande, and soone ouertake them bycause they are very heauy and slowe in goynge, although they make all the haste they can to returne to the sea as soone as they espie any boddie. When they that pursewe them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or flaffe vnder theyr legges and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet runnyng, so that they can go no further nor yet ryfe ageyne or turne. And thus they suffer them to lye styll whyle they folowe after the reste which they ouerturne in lyke maner: And by this meanes take very manye at fuche tymes as they coome furth of the sea as I haue sayde. This fysshe is very excellent and holsome to be eaten, and of good taste. The seconde of the three fysshes wherof I haue spoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fysshe and very quicke and swifte in the water, and a cruell deuourer. These are often tymes taken, aswell when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at any other time, and especially the leaste kynd of these fysshes. When the shippes are vnder sayle, the biggest forte are taken after this maner. When the Tiburon seeth the shippe failinge he foloweth it swymmyng behynde. The which thinge the mariners seinge, caste furthe all the fylthe of the shippe into the sea for the fysshe to eate, who neuerthelesse foloweth them with equal pafe although they make neuer such haste wyth full wynd and failes, and waloweth on euery fyde and about the shyppe: And thus foloweth it sumtyme for the space of a hundreth and fytie leaques and more. And when the mariners are disposed to take them, they cast downe by the sterne of the shippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggest finger of a mans hande of three spannes in lengthe and crooked like a fysshooke with beardes accordinge to the bignesse thereof, and fastened to an iren chayne of fyue or fyxe linkes neare vnto th[e]ende, and from thense tyed with a greate rope, fastening also on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of sum fysshe, or hogges flessh, or sum other flessh, or the bouelles and intralles of an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may easely bee doone, for I haue seene nyne taken in one day. And if they wolde haue taken more, they myght also. Thus when the Tiburon hath pleafauntly folowed the ship a longe viage, at the lengthe he swaloweth the baite with the hooke. And aswell by his stryuinge to flye or escape, as also by the swifte passage of the shyppe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fysshe when it is taken, it is of fuche huge byggenesse that twelue or fyfeteene men are scarfely able to drawe it owt of the water and lifte it into the shyppe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the headde with a clubbe or beetle vntil he haue slaine it. They are sumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, fyxe, or seuen spannes in breadth where they are brodest. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the proportion of the reste of theyr boddies, and haue two rowes of teethe the one sumewhat separate from the other, of cruell shape and standing very thicke. When they haue slayne this fysshe, they cutte the boddy therof in smaule piefes, and put it to drye, hangynge it three or four dayes at the cordes of the sayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eate it. It is doubtlesse a good fysshe and of great commoditie to serue the shippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaste of these fysshes are moste holsome and tender. It hath a skinne much like to the skynne of a sole, whervnto the sayde Tuberon is lyke in shape. Which I faye bycause Plinie hath made mention of none of these three fysshes among the number of them whereof he wryteth in his natural hystorie. These Tiburons coomme furth of the sea and enter into the ryuers, where they are no lesse perelous then greate lifartes or Crocodiles wherof I haue spoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine, and horses, euen as doo the Crocodiles. They are very dangerous in certeyne wasshyng places or pooles by the ryuers sydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dyuers other fysshes both greate and smaule, of fundry fortes and kyndes are accustomed to folowe the shyppes goynge vnder sayle, of the which I wyl speake sumwhat when I haue wrytten of Manate which is the thyrde of the three whereof I haue promysed to entreate. Manate therefore, is a fysshe of the sea, of the byggest forte,

Tiburons.
Manates

Great Tortoyfes

201

Tiburons.

Plinie.

Crocodyles.

202

Manates.

and muche greater then the Tiburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyshe and vyle, so that it appeareth in forme lyke vnto one of those great vesselles made of goates skynnes wherin they vse to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Arenal*. The headde of this beast is lyke the head of an oxe, with also lyke eyes. And hath in the place of armes, two great flumpes wherwith he swymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaste: And commeth oftentimes owt of the water to the next shore: where if he find [a]ny herbes or grasse, he feedeth therof. Owre men are accustomed to kyl many of these and dyuers other good fysshes with theyr crossebowes, pursuinge them in barkes or Canoas, bycause they swymme in maner aboute the water. The whiche thyng when they see, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at a smaule corde, but sumwhat stronge. As the fyssh flyeth away, the archer letteth go and prolongeth the corde by lyttle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a piece of lyght woodde. And when the fyssh is goone a lyttle way, and hath coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym selfe to faynt and drawe towarde th[e]nde of his lyfe, he resorteth to the shore, and the archer foloweth gatherynge vp his corde: wherof whyle there yet remaine fixe or eyght fathams or sum what more or lesse, he draweth it towarde the lande, and draweth the fyssh therwith by little and lyttle as the waues of the sea helpe hym to doo it the more easely. Then with the helpe of the reste of his companie he lyfteth this greate beast owt of the water to the lande, beinge of such bygnesse that to conuey it from thense to the citie, it shalbe requisite to haue a carte with a good yoke of oxen, and sumtymes more, accordyng as these fysshes are of byggenesse, sum being much greater then other sum in the same kynde as is seene of other beastes. Sumtymes they lyft these fysshes into the Canoa or barke, without drawynge them to the lande as before. For as soone as they are slayne, they flote aboute the water. And I beleue verely that this fyssh is one of the best in the world to the taste, and the lykest vnto fleshe. Especially so lyke vnto biefe, that who so hath not seene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he seeeth it in pieces then verely biefe or veale. And is certeynly so lyke vnto fleshe, that all the men in the worlde may herin bee deceaued. The taste lykewyse, is lyke vnto the tast of very good veale, and lasteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in fine, the base of these parties, is by no meanes lyke vnto this. This Manate, hath a certeine stone or rather bone in his headde within the brayne, which is of qualitie greatly appropriate ageynste the disease of the stone, if it bee burnt and grounde into smaule powder, and taken fastynge in the mornynge when the payne is felte, in such quantitie as maye lye vpon a peny with a drawght of good whyte wyne. For beyng thus taken three or foure mornynge, it acquieteth the grefe as dyuers haue toulde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my selfe by testimonie of sight, doo wytnesse that I haue seene this stone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

The fysshe
Manate.
A remedy ageynst
the stone.

There are also dyuers other fysshes as bygge as this Manate: Emonge the which there is one cauled *Vihuella*. This fyssh beareth in the toppe of his headde, a swoorde beinge on euery syde full of many sharpe teeth. This swoorde is naturally very harde and stronge, of foure or fyue spannes in length and of proportion accordyng to the same byggenesse. And for this cause is this fyssh cauled *Spada*: that is the swoord fyssh. Of this kynde sum are found as lyttle as fardines: and other so greate, that two yokes of oxen are scarcely able to drawe them on a carte. But whereas before, I haue promysed to speake of other fysshes which are taken in these seas whyle the shyppes are vnder sayle, I wyl not forget to speake of the Tunnye which is a great and good fyssh, and is oftentimes taken and kylde with troute speares and hookes caste in the water when they play and swymme aboute the shyppes. In lyke maner also are taken many turbutts which are very good fysshes as are lyghtly in all the sea.

The swoorde
fysshe.

Tunnye.

Turbut.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean sea, there is a straunge thyng to bee considered, whiche all that haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee trewe. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are sum prouinces fertile and frutfull, and sum barren, euen so dooth the lyke chaunce in the sea: So that at sum wyndes the shyppes sayle fiftie or a hundreth, or two hundreth leaques and more, without takyng or feinge of one fyssh. And ageyne in the selfe same Ocean, in sum places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouynge of the fysshes, where they are taken abundantly.

203

Note.

It commeth further to my remembraunce to speak sumwhat of the flyng of fysshes, which is doubtlesse a straunge thyng to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shyppes sayle by the greate Ocean folowyng theyr vyage, there ryfeth sumtymes on the one syde or on the other, many coompanies of certeyne lyttle fysshes, of the which the byggest is no greater then a fardyne: and soo diminyshe lesse and lesse from that quantitie that sum of them are very lyttle. These are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyng fysshes. They ryse by great coompanies and flockes in such multitudes that it is an astonysment to beholde them. Sumtymes they ryse but lyttle from the water: and (as it chaunceth) continew one flyght for the space of a hundreth pases and sumtymes more or lesse before they faule ageyne into the sea. Sumtymes also they faule into the shyppes. And I remember that on an euenyng when all the company in the shippe were on theyr knees syngyng *Salve regina* in the highest parte of the Castel of the poope, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a flocke of these flyng fysshes: and came so neare vs that many of them fell into the shippe, amonge the which, two or three fell hard

Flyng fysshes.

by me which I tooke alyue in my hande: so that I myght well perceauē that they were as bigge as fardynes and of the same quantitie, hauynge two wynges or quylls growyng owt of theyr fynnes, lyke vnto those wherwith all the fysshes fwymme in ryuers. These wynges are as longe as the fysshes theym selues. As longe as theyr wynges are moyste, they beare them vp in the ayer. But as soone as they are drye, they can continewe theyr flyght no further then as I haue sayde before, but faule immediatly into the fea, and so ryfe ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

In the yeare. A thousand fyue hundreth fiftene. when I came fyrst to informe your maieesty of the state of the thynges in Indya, and was the yeare folowynge in Flanders in the tyme of youre moste fortunate successe in these youre kyngedomes of Aragonie and Castyle, wheras at that vyage I sayled aboute the Iland *Bermuda* otherwyse cauled *Garza*, beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at thys daye in the worlde, and arryuyng there at the deapthe of eight yeardes of water, and dystant from the land as farre as the shotte of a piece of ordynaunce, I determined to sende fume of the shyppe to lande as well to make searche of fuche thynges as were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increase. But the tyme not seruyng my purpose by reason of contrarye wynde, I could bryng my shyppes no nearer the Ilande beinge twelue leaques in lengthe and fyxe in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrtye and thre degre of the northe fyde. Whyle I remayned here, I sawe a stryfe and combatte betwene these flyyng fyshes and the fyshes named gylte heades, and the foules cauled seamewes and cormorautes, whych fuerlye seemed vnto me a thyng of as greate pleafure and solace as coulde bee deuysed, whyle the gylte heades fwamme on the brymme of the water and sumtymes lyfted theyr sholders aboue the same to rayse the fwymmyng fysshes owt of the water to dryue them to flyght, and folowe them fwymmyng to the place where they faule to take and eate them fodaynlye. Agayne on the other fyde, the seamewes and cormorantes, take manye of these flyyng fysshes: so that by thys meanes theye are nother safe in the ayre nor in the water. In the selfe same perrell and daunger doo men lyue in thys mortall lyfe wherin is no certayne securitye nether in hygh estate nor in lowe. Which thyng fuerlye ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe restyng place whych god hath prepared for such as loue hym, who shall acquyete and fynyshe the trauayles of thys troubelous worlde wherin are so manye daungyours, and bryng them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securitye and reste. But to returne to the hystorye: these byrdes and foules whych I sawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda* nere vnto the whych I sawe these flyyng fysshes. For they coulde bee of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre frome the coastes where they are bredde.

The Iland of Bermuda.

Not to hie for the pye, nor to lowe for the crowe.

204

¶ Of th[e] increase and decrease, (that is) rysyng and faullyng of our Ocean sea and Southe sea cauled the sea of Sur.



Wyll nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are seene in the Prounce, or at the leaste in the citie of golden Castyle otherwyse cauled *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea and of the South sea cauled the sea of *Sur*. Not omitting to note one synguler and meruelous thyng which I haue consydered of the Ocean sea, wherof hytherto no cosmographer, pylote or maryner or any other haue satiffyed me.

Beragua.

I say therefore as it is well knowen to your maieesty and all such as haue knowlege of the Ocean sea, that this greate Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe of the straight of *Gibilterra*: in the which the water from th[e]end and furthest parte of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the sayde straight, eyther in the East towarde the coaste commonlye cauled *Leuante*, or in any other parte of the sayde sea *Mediterraneum*, the sea doothe not so faule nor increase as reason wolde iudge for so greate a sea. But incresethe verye lyttle and a smaule space. Neuerthelesse, withoute the mouthe of the straight in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and fauleth verye muche and a great space of grounde from fyxe houres to fyxe houres, as in all the coastes of Spayne, Britannye, Flanders, Germanye, and England. The selfe same Ocean sea in the fyrme lande newlye founde, in the coastes of the same lyyng towarde the Northe, dothe neyther ryfe nor faule, nor lykewise in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other Ilandes of the same sea lyyng towarde the northe, for the space of thre thousande leaques, but onelye in lyke maner as doothe the sea *Mediterraneum* in Italye: whiche is in maner nothyng in respecte to that increase and decrease whiche the sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same Ocean in the coastes of the sayde fyrme lande lyyng towarde the Southe in the citie of *Panama*, and also in the coaste of that lande whiche lyethe towarde the Easte and Weste frome that citie, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margaritea* whiche the Indians caule *Tarrarequi*, and also in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and

The west Ocean.

The sea Mediterraneum.

Hispaniola.
Cuba.

The South sea.

The power and
wisdom of god is
sene in his
creatures.

in all other Ilandes of the fouth fea of *Sur*, the water ryfeth and fauleth fo much, that when it fauleth it go[e]th in maner owt of fyghte, which thyng I my felfe haue feene oftentymes.

And here youre maiestie may note an other thyng, that from the northe fea to the fouth fea beyng of fuche dyfference the one from the other in ryfyng and faulyng, yet is the lande that deuydeth theym not pafte eyghteene or twenty leaques in breadthe frome coafte to coafte. So that bothe the fayde feas beyng all one Ocean this ftraunge effecte is a thyng worthy greatly to bee confidered of al fuche as haue inclination and defyre to knowe the fecrete woorkes of nature wherin the infinite powre and wyfedome of god is feene to bee fuch as may allure all good natures to reuerence and loue fo diuine a maiestie. And wheras by the demonstrations of lerned men I am not fatiffyed of the natural caufe hereof, I content my felfe to knowe and beleue that he which hath made thefe thynges, dooth knowe this and many other whiche he hath not granted to the reafon of man to comprehend, much leffe to fo bafe a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderftandyng, fhall fearche the caufe hereof, for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the matter in queftion as a wytnesse that haue feene th[e] experience of the thyng.

¶ *Of the ftrayght or narowe paffage of the lande lyinge betwene the North and South fea, by the whiche fpyces may much fooner and eaflyer be brought from the Ilandes of Molucca into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales fayle into East India.*



205

Esquegua and
Vrraca.*Nomen Dei.*
*Panama.*The ryuer of
Chagre.

It hath byn an opinion amonge the Cosmographers and Pylottes of late tyme, and other which haue had practife in thynges touchyng the fea, that there fhulde bee a ftrayght of water paffyng from the North fea of the firme, into the South fea of *Sur*, whiche neuertheleffe hath not byn feene nor founde to this daye. And fuerlye yf there be any fuche ftrayght, we that inhabite thofe partes do thynke the fame fhulde bee rather of lande then of water. For the fyrme lande in fum partes therof is fo ftrayght and narrowe that the Indyns faye that frome the mountaynes of the prouynce of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca*, (whych are betwene the one fea and the other) If a man affend to the toppe of the mountaynes and looke towarde the Northe, he maye fee the water of the North fea of the Prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne lookyng the contrarye waye, may on the other fyde towarde the Southe, fee the fea of *Sur* and the prouynces whiche confyne with it, as doo the territoryes of the twoo Lordes or kynges of the fayde prouynces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I beleue that if it bee as the Indyns faye, of al that is hetherto knowen, this is the narrowest ftrayght of the fyrme lande, whiche fume affyrme to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet doo I not take it for a better waye, or fo fhorthe as is that whiche is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in the Northe fea) vnto the newe citey of *Panama* beyng in the coafte and on the banke of the fea of *Sur*. Whiche waye is likewyfe very rough ful of thicke wods, mountaines, ryuers, valleys, and verye diffyculte to paffe through, and can not bee doone without greate laboure and trauayle. Sum meafure this waye in this part, to bee from fea to fea. xviii. leaques, whych I fuppose to bee rather. xx. not for that it is any more by meafure, but bicaufe it is rough and dyffyculte as I haue fayde, and as I haue founde it by experyence hauyng nowe twyfe paffed that way by foote: countyng from the porte and vyllage of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the *Cacique* of *Iuanaga* otherwyfe cauled *Capira*. viii. leaques: And frome thense to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other. viii. leaques. So that at this ryuer beinge. xvi. leaques from the fayde porte, endeth the roughneffe of the way. Then from hense to the maruelous brydge are two leaques: And beyonde that, other twoo vnto the port of *Panama*: So that all togyther in my iudgmente, make xx. leaques. And if therfore this nauigation may bee founde in the South fea for the trade of fpyces (as we trust in God) to bee brought from thense to the fayde porte of *Panama* (as is poffible enough) they may afterwarde eafly paffe to the Northe fea notwithstandinge the difficultie of the waye of the. xx. leaques aforefayde. Whiche thyng I affirme as a man well trauayled in thefe regions, hauyng twyfe on my feate paffed ouer this ftrayght in the yeare. 1521. as I haue fayde. It is furthermore to bee vnderftode, that it is a maruelous facilitie to bryng fpyces by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leaques of good and fayre way by the which cartes may paffe at pleasure by reafon that the mountaynes are but fewe and lyttle, and that the greatefte parte of thefe foure leaques is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the cartes are coomme to the fayde ryuer, the fpyces may be caryed in barkes and pinneffes. For this ryuer entereth into the

North sea fyue or. vi leaques lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Yowr maiestie may now therefore confyder howe great a thyng and what commoditie it may bee to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauyng his originall only two leaques from the South sea, contineweth his course and emptieth it selfe into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast and is very greate, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thowght or defyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leaques beyonde the sayd ryuer, and other two leaques on this fyde the porte of *Panama*, so lyinge in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in such fort that none which passe by this viage see any such bridge or thynke that there is any such buyldyng in that place vntyll they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as soone as they are on the brydge, lookyng towards the ryght hande, they see a lyttle ryuer vnder them which hath his chanel distant from the feete of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not passyng the depth of a mans legge to the knee: and is in breadth betwene thyrtye and fortie pases: and fauleth into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand standyng on this brydge, there is nothyng feene but great trees. The largenesse of the brydge, conteyneth. xv. pases: and the length thereof about threescore or fourescore pases. The arche is so made of moste harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent creatour of all thynges. But to returne to speake sumwhat more of the conueying of spices, I say that when it shal please almyghty god that this nauigation aforefayde shal bee founde by the good fortune of yowre maiestie, and that the spices of the Ilandes of the South sea (which may also bee otherwyse cauled the Ocean of the East India in the whiche are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the sayd coaste and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thence (as we haue sayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thence into this our other sea of the North, from whence they may afterward bee brought into Spayne, I say that by this meanes the vyage shall bee shortened more then feuen thousande leaques, with muche lesse daunger then is by the vyage nowe vsed by the way of Commendator of Ayfa capitayne vnder yowre maiestie, who this present yeare attempted a vyage to the place of the sayde spycy. And not only the way is thus much shortened, but also a thyrde parte of the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therefore, if any had hetherto attempted this vyage by the sea of *Sur*, to seeke the Ilandes of spycy, I am of firme opinion that they shuld haue byn founde longe sence, as doubtelesse they maye bee by the reasons of Cosmographie.

The Ilande Bastimento.

The maruelous bridge.

206

The Ilandes of Molucca. The commoditie of this viage.

¶ *Howe thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place where they are engendred or growe. And of the beastes cauled Tygers.*



IN the firme lande are fownde many terryble beastes which sum thinke to be Tygers. Which thyng neuerthelesse, I dare not affirme, confyderinge what auctoures doo wryte of the lyghtnes and agilitie of the Tyger, whereas this beast beyng other wyse in shape very like vnto a Tyger, is notwithstandinge very slowe. Yet trewe it is, that accordyng to the maruayles of the worlde and differences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen and dyuers constellations of the same vnder the whiche they are created, wee see that sum suche plantes and herbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmelesse and holfome in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnfaery that they may not bee eaten. Men likewyse which in sum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.

Euen so may it bee that Tygers are lyght in sum region as they wryte, and maye neuerthelesse bee slowe and heauy in these Indies of yowr maiestie wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabie drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towards theyr headdes: yet are those sheepe and these bulles. Men in sum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyshe. All these thynges and many more which may bee sayde to this purpose, are easy to bee proued and woorthy to bee beleued of suche as haue redde of the lyke in autours or trauallyd the worlde, whereby theyr owne syght may teache theym th[e] experience of these thynges wherof I speake. It is also manifest, that *Iucca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is deadly poyson yf it bee eaten greene with the iuse: And yet hathe it no suche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times and found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne although they bite, yet are they not venemous.

Tigers.

Plantes and herbes. Birdes. Men.

Sheepe. Bulles.

Iucca.

Battes.

But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may fo many thynges bee fayde that tyme shall not suffice to wryte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beast may be a Tiger or of the kind of Tigers although it be not of such lyghtnesse and swiftnes as are they wherof Plinie and other autours speake, discrybynge it to bee one of the swyfteste beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swift course therof was cauled by that name. The first Spaniardes which sawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd fo name it. Of the kynde of these was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall sent yowre maiestie owte of newe Spayne to Toledo. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons or Lionesses, but greater. The reste of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one nere vnto an other and diuided with a circumference or frynge of redde colour shewing as it were a fayre woorke and correspondent picture. About theyr croopes or hynder partes, they haue these spots byggest: and lesse and lesse towarde theyr bellies, legges, and headdes. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lyttle, and by my estimation, of th[e]age of three yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie. For I haue seene sum of three spannes in heyght, and more then fyue in length. They are beastes of greate force, with stronge legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which we caule dogge teeth. They are so fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggest forte is so stronge or fierce. Of these, there are many founde in the firme lande whiche deuour many of the Indians and do much hurte otherwyse. But fynes the comming of the Christians, many haue byn kyld with Crossebowes after this maner. As soone as the archer hath knowlege of the haunt of any of these Tygers, he goeth searchoyng theyr trafe with his crossebowe and with a lyttle hounde or bewgle and not with a greehounde, bycause this beast wolde soone kyll any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayinge continually, and approacheth so neare hym snappyng and grynnyng with so quicke flyng and returnyng, that he hereby so molesteth this fierce beast that he dryueth hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remayneth styl bayng and the Tyger grynnyng and shewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or. xiiii. pases of, stryketh hym with the querel of his crossebowe in the breste, and flyeth incontinent, leauyng the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eatyng earth for fiercenesse. Then within the space of twoo or three houres or the day folowyng, the archer returneth thyther, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyethe deade.

In the yeare. 1522. I with the other rulers and magistrates of the cite of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in ovr counsaile, A rewarde of foure or fyue peces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that kylde any of these Tygers: by reason wherof many were kylde in shorte space both with crossebowes and also with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not obstynately stand in opinyon whether these beastes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other such beastes of spotted heare, or also peradventure sum other newe beast vnknown to the owlde wryters as were many other wherof I haue spoken in this booke. Of which thyng, I doo not greatly meruayle, For asmuche as vnto owre tyme thys greate parte of the worlde was vnknown to the antiquitie: In so muche that none of the wryters of that age, nor yet Ptolomie in his Cosmographie, or any other sence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the fyrst Admyrall Don Chrystopher Colonus discouered the same. A thyng doutelesse without comparyson muche greater then that whyche is sayd of Hercules, that he fyrste gaue th[e]entrance of the sea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doo before hym. And herof ryfethe the fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (which are directly one agaynst an other in the strayght of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne and the other in Affryke) were ioyned together before they were opened by Hercules, who erected those hys pylles whiche your maiestye gyue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpryses with lykewyse these hys wordes *PLVS VLTRA*: wordes doutelesse worthy for so greate an[d] vnyuerfall an Emperoure, and not conuenient for any other Prynce. Forasmuche as your holy Catholyke Maiestye haue spredde them in so straunge and remote regyons, so manye thoufande leaques further then euer dyd Hercules. And certeynlye fyr, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the prayse and fame of *Colonus*, He had as well deserued it as any of those men to whom for theyr noble enterpryse the antiquytie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But to returne to the matter whereof I began to speake: I neede say no more of the forme of thys beast, for as muche as your Maiestye haue feene that whych is yet alyue in Tolledo. And fuerly the keper of your Maiesties lyons, who hath taken vpon hym the charge to tame this beast, myght better haue bestowed his paynes in an other thyng that myght haue bynne more profitable for the safegarde of his lyfe bycause this Tyger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee stronger and fiercer and increase in malice. The Indians (and especially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kynge Don Ferdinando commaunded to bee cauled golden Castyle) caule this beast *Ochi*. This thyng is straunge that chaunced of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention before, wolde haue kylde his keeper that then kept hym in a cage, was in fewe dayes after made so tame that he ledde her tyed only with a smaule corde and playde with her so familiarly that I maruayled greatly to see it, yet not without certeyne belefe that this frendshyp wyll not laste long without daunger of lyfe to the keeper, forasmuch as fuerly these beastes are not meete to bee amonge men for theyr fiercenes and cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

Plinie.

The Tiger.

207

The huntynge of tigers.

A reward for kyllinge of tigers.

Colonus compared to Hercules.
The pillers of Hercules.The straightes of Gibilterra.
Note.

PLVS VLTRA.

Howe farre Th[e]emperours maiestie excelleth Hercules.

A tiger made tame.

208

Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande,
and of theyr women.



He maners and customes of these Indians, are dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take as many wyues as them lyst, and other lyue with one wyfe whome they forsake not without consent of both parties, which chauncethe especially when they haue no chyldren. The nobilitie aswel men as women, repute it infamous to ioyne with any of base parentage or strangers, except Christians, whom they count noble men by reason of theyr valientnes, although they put a difference betwene the common forte and the other to whom they shewe obedience, countynge it for a great matter and an honorable thyng yf they bee beloued of any of them. In so much that yf they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe theyr fayth to hym, so that he bee not longe absent farre from them. For theyr intent is not to bee widowes or to lyue chaste lyke religious women. Many of theym haue this custome, that when they perceauie that they are with chylde, they take an herbe wherwith they destroy that is conceaued. For they say that only wel aged women shulde beare chyldren, and that they wyl not forbear their pleasures and deforme theyr boddies with bearynge of chyldren, wherby theyr teates becoome loose and hangynge which thyng they greatly disprayse. When they are deliuered of theyr chyldren they go to the ryuer and washe them. Whiche doone, theyr bludde and purgation ceaseth immediatly. And when after this they haue a few days absteyned from the company of men, they becomme so strayght as they say which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not without much difficultie satisfie theyr appetite. They also whiche neuer had chyldren, are euer as vyrgins. In sum partes they weare certeyne lytle apertes rounde about them before and behynde as lowe as to theyr knees and hammes, wherwith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all theyr boddie byfyde. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a holowe pype of golde: but the common forte haue theym inclosed in the shelles of certeyne great welkes, and are byfyde vtterly naked. For they thynke it no more shame to haue theyr coddies seene then any other parte of theyr boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go vtterly naked without any such couerture at al. In the prouince of *Cueua* they caule a man *Chuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of owres.

These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his most stronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abroad for his pleasure. Two of them cary hym fytting vppon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lyght as they can fynd. The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottyng pafe with hym on theyr shulders. When the twoo that cary hym are wery, other twoo coomme in theyr places without any disturbance or fley. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the space of. xv. or. xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the moste parte slaues or *Naboriti*, that is, such as are bounde to continuall seruice.

I haue also noted that when the Indians perceauie them selues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette theym selues blud in the calves of theyr legges and brawnes of theyr armes. This doo they with a very sharpe stone, and sumtymes with the smaule toothe of a vyper, or with a sharpe reede or thorne.

All the Indians are commonly without bearded: In so much that it is in maner a maruayle to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces or other partes of theyr boddies. Albeit, I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had also his wyfe in suche places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour which neuer fadeth: And is much lyke vnto that wherwith the Moors paynt them selues in Barberie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are paynted specially on theyr vyfage and throte and certeyne other partes. Likewyse the principall Indians vse these payntynges on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr vyfages, bycause amonge them the slaues are so marked. When the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (especially the Caniball archers) they cary certeyne shelles of greate welkes of the sea which they blowe and make therwith great founde muche lyke the noyse of hornes. They carye also certeyne tymbrels which they vse in the steade of drummes. Also very fayre plumes of fethers, and certeyne armure of golde: especially great and rounde pieces on theyr brestes, and splintes on there armes. Lykewyse other pieces whiche they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodies. For they esteeme nothyng so much as to appeare galante in the war[re]s, and to go in most coomely order that they can deuyse, glysterynge with precious stones, iewelless, golde, and fethers. Of the leaste of these welkes or perewinckles, they make certeyne lytle

The Indian women.

The men of India.

The kyng is borne on mens backs.

Lettinge of bludde.

They haue no bearded.

They paynte theyr bodies.

209

The Canibates.

Armure of golde.

Their galanties in the warres.

Their Iuells

beades of diuers fortes and colours. They make also little brasselets whiche they mengle with gaudies of golde. These they rowle about there armes from the elbowe to the wreste of the hande. The lyke also doo they on theyr legges from the knee to the soles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie. Especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accustomed to weare such Iewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therewith. These beades and Iewels and such other trynkettes, they caule *Caquiras*. Bifyde these also, they weare certeyne rynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrelles which they bore ful of holes on both sides, so that the ringes hange vpon theyr lyppes. Sum of these Indians, are poulde and rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to weare longe heare, which the women weare to the myddest of theyr shulders and cut it equally, especially aboue theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne harde stones which they keepe for the same purpose. The principall women when theyr teates faule or becoome loose, beare them vp with barres of golde of the length of a spanne and a halfe, wel wrought, and of such byggenesse that sum of them way more then two hundreth Castilians or ducades of golde. These barres haue holes at both th[e]endes, whereat they tye two smaul cordes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres. One of these cordes go[e]th ouer the shulder, and the other vnder the arme holes where they tye togyther, so that by this meanes the barre beareth vp theyr teates. Sum of these chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr husbandes, or when they them selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the which they haue all thynges at commaundement and execute th[e]office of generall capitaynes, and cause them selues to bee caryed on mens backes in lyke maner as doo the Caciques of whom I haue spoken before.

Howe the women beare vp their teates, wyth barres of golde.

The stature and coloure of the Indians.

The Indians cauled Coronati. The Ilande of gigantes. *Iucatos*.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and coloure as are they of the Ilandes. They are for the most part of the colour of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is more in byggenesse then otherwyse. And especially they that are cauled *Coronati*, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Ilande of gigantes whiche are on the south fyde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the coastes of the firme lande: And lykewyse certeyne other which they caule *Yucatos* which are on the north fyde. All which chiefly, although they bee no gigantes, yet are they doubtlesse the byggeste of the Indyns that are knowen to this day, and commonly bygger then the Flemynge: and especially many of them aswell women as men, are of very hyghe stature, and are all archiers bothe men and women. These *Coronati* inhabite thirtie leaques in length by these coastes from the poynt of *Canoa* to the greate ryuer which they caule *Guadalchibir* nere vnto *Sancta Maria de gratia*. As I trauerfed by those coastes, I fylled a butte of freshe water of that ryuer syxe leaques in the sea frome the mouthe therof where it fauleth into the sea. They are cauled *Coronati* (that is crowned) bycause theyr heare is cutte round by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compase abowte the crowne much lyke the fryers of faynt Augustines order. And bycause I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here commeth to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the sculles of theyr heades foure tymes thycker and much stronger then owres. So that in comyng to hand strokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heades with swoordes. For so haue many swoordes bynne broken on theyr heades with lyttle hurt doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shal suffice for this tyme, bycause I haue more largely intreated herof in my generall hystorie of the Indies. Yet haue I nother there nor here spoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Noua Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne wherof the Ilande of *Iucata* is part) forasmuche as Ferdinando Cortese hath wrytten a large booke thereof.

The sculles of the Indians heades.

210

New Spaine.

The houses of the Christians in India

Dariena.

Gardens.

Of the houses of these Indians, I haue spoken sufficiently elsewhere. Yet haue I thought good to informe your maiestie of the buyldynge and houses which the Christians haue made in dyuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therefore with two solars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte. Also with stronge tymber and very fayre bordes. In suche forte that any noble man maye wel and pleasauntly bee lodged in sum of them. And amonge other, I my selfe caused one to bee builded in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antigua* in *Dariena* whiche coste me more then a thousande and fyue hundreth Castilians: being of such fort that I may well interteyne and commodiously lodge any Lorde or noble man, referuyng also a parte for my selfe and my famelie. For in this may many householdes bee kepte both aboue and benethe. It hath also a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe sweete and sowre: Ceders also, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houses of the Chrystians. On one fyde of the gardeyne, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The situation is very pleasaunte, with a good and holsome ayer, and a fayre prospecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, owre truste is that in fewe yeares al thynges in these regions shall growe to a better state accordynge to the holy intention of yowre maiestie.

Of the chiefe Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba.



The Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Chrystyans not so many as they ought to bee forasmuche as many of them that were in this Ilande, are gonne to other Ilandes and to the fyrme lande. For beyng for the moſte parte younge men vnmarried, and deſirous dayly to ſee newe thyngs wherin mans nature deliteth, they were not willinge to continewe longe in on[e] place: eſpecially ſeeing dailie other newe landes diſcouered where they thowght theye might ſooner fylle there purſes by beinge preſent at the firſte ſpoyle. Wherin neuertheleſſe their hope deceaued many of them, and eſpecially fuche as had houſes and habitations in thys Ilande. For I certeynly beleue, conſyrmyng my ſelfe herein with the Iudgement of many other, that if any one Prynce had no more ſigniores then only this Ilande, it ſhuld in ſhorte tyme bee fuche as not to giue place eyther to Sicilie or Englande: whereas euen at this preſent there is nothyng wherefore it ſhulde malice their proſperitie not beinge inferioure to them in any filicite that in maner the heauens can graunte to any lande: beinge furthermore fuche as maye inriche many prouinces and kyngedomes by reaſon of manye riche golde mynes that are in it of the beſte golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greateſt quantitie. In this Ilande, nature of her ſelfe bringeth furthe fuche aboundance of cotton that if it were wrought and maynteyned there ſhuld be more and better then in any parte of the world. There is ſo greate plentie of excellent *Caffia* that a greate quantitie is brought from thence into Spayne: from whence it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde. It increaſeth ſo muche that it is a meruelous thyng to conſider. In this are many ryche ſhoppes wher fucher is wrought: and that of fuch perfectenes and goodnes, and in fuche quantitie that ſhippes come laden therwith yearly into Spayne. All fuche fedes, fettes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becommе muche better, bygger, and of greater increaſe then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyſe that ſometymes they proſper not ſo well, the cauſe is that they whiche ſhulde tyll and huſband the grounde, and ſowe and plant in dewe ſeaſons, haue no reſpect hereunto, being impacient whyle the wheate and vynes waxe rype, being gyuen to wanderynge and other affayres of preſent gaynes (as I haue ſayde) as ſearchyng the gold mines, fyſſhyng for pearles, and occupyinge marchaundies, with ſuch other trades, for the greedy folowyng wherof, they neglecte and contempne both ſowyng and plantyng. Suche frutes as are brought owt of Spayne, into this Ilande, proſper maruelouſly and waxe rype all tymes of the yeare: as herbes of all fortes very good and pleaſaunt to bee eaten. Also many pomegranates of the beſt kynde, and oranges bothe ſweete and ſower. Lykewyſe many fayre Lymones and ceders: and a great quantitie of all ſuch as are of ſharpe, ſowre, and bytter taſte. There are alſo many fygge trees whiche bryng furth theyr frute all the hole yeare. Lykewyſe thoſe kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thither.

Beaſtes doo alſo increaſe in lyke abundaunce: and eſpecially the heardes of kyne are ſo augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are nowe many patrones of cattayle that haue more then two thouſand heades of neate: and ſum three or foure thouſande, and ſum more. Byſyde theſe, there are very many that haue heardes of foure or fyue hundrethe. And trewth it is, that this Iland hath better paſture for ſuch cattayle then any other cuntry in the worlde: alſo hoſome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reaſon whereof the heardes of ſuch beaſtes are much bygger, fatter, and alſo of better taſte then owres in Spayne bycauſe of the ranke paſture whoſe moyſture is better digeſted in the herbe or graſſe by the continuall and temperate heate of the ſonne, wherby being made more fatte and vnctuous, it is of better and more ſtedfaſt nuryſhement. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche moyſture owt of the earth to the nuryſhement of ſuch thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth alſo by moderation preſerue the ſame from reſolution and putrefaction, digeſtyng alſo and condenſatyng or thyckenyng the ſayde moyſte nuryſhement into a gummie and vnctuous ſubſtaunce as is ſene in all fuche thynges as growe in thoſe regions. And this is the only naturall cauſe aſwell that certeyne great beaſtes and of longe lyfe (as the Elephante and Rhinoceros with ſuch other) are engendered only in regions nere vnto the Equinoctiall, as alſo that the leaues of ſuch trees as growe there, do not wyther or faule, vntyll they bee thruſte owt by other, accordyng to the verſe of the poete which ſayth: *Et nata pira piris, et ficus in ficibus extant.* That is in effecte: peares growyng vpon peares, and fygges vpon fygges. Plinie alſo wryteth, that fuche trees are neuer infected with the diſeaſe of trees that the Latines caule *Caries*, which we may caule the worme or canker, being but a certeyne putrifaction by reaſon of a wateryſhe nuryſhement not well conſolidate. The ſame thyng hath bynne the cauſe that certeyne Phyloſophers conſideryng aſwell that man is the hotteſt and moyſteſt beaſt that is (which is the beſt complexion) as alſo that men lyue longeſte in certeyne partes of India nere the Equinoctiall (where

Men are deſirous of newe thynges.

The commodities of Hispaniola

Englande and Sicilie.

Golde mines. Cotton.

Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes

Greate thynges hindered by reſpecte of preſente gaynes.

211

Orangies. Pomegranates. Fygges al the yeare. Dates.

Beaſtes.

Greate heardes of cattail.

Good paſture.

The effecte of continual and moderate heate.

The cauſe of fatte nurriſhement.

Beaſtes of longe lyfe in regions abowte the Equinoctiall line
Trees whos leaues doo not wyther

The cancar of the tree

Longe lyuide men
in India.
Paradise neare the
equinoctial line

yet to this daye summe liue to th[e]age of a hundreth and fiftie yeares) were of opinion that yf mankynde had any begynnynge on the earthe, that place owght by good reason to be vnder or not farre from the Equinoctiall lyne for the causes aforefayde. Sum of the diuines also vppon lyke confideration haue thought it agreable that theyr Paradyse shulde bee about the same within the precincte of those ryuers which are named in the booke of Genesis. But to lette passe these thynges and to returne to the hystorie.

Shepe and hogges

In this Ilande furthermore, are many sheepe and a great number of hogges: of the which (as also of the kyne) manye are becoome wyld: And lykewyse many dogges and cattes of those which were brought owt of Spayne. These (and especially the dogges) doo much hurte amonge the cattayle by reason of the negligence of the hearde men.

Dogges and cattes
becom[e] wyld

There are also many horses, mares, and mules, and fuche other beastes as ferue th[e]use of men in Spayne, and are much greater then they of the fyrste brode brought thether owt of Spayne. Sum places of the Ilande are inhabyted, although not so many as were requisite: Of the whiche I wyll faye no more but that all the regions of the Ilande are so well situate that in the course of tyme all thynges shall coomme to greater perfection by reason of the rychnesse and pleasauntnesse of the countrey and fertilitie of the soile.

The situation of
Hispaniola.

The citie of
san Domenico

But nowe to speake sumwhat of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, which is the citie of *San Domenico*: I faye that as touchynge the buildynges, there is no citie in Spaine so muche for so muche (no not *Barfalona* whiche I haue oftentimes seene) that is to bee preferred before this generallye. For the houfes of *San Domenico*, are for the mooste parte of stone as are they of *Barfalona*: or of so stronge and well wrought earth that it maketh a singuler and stronge byndyng. The situation is muche better then that of *Barfalona* by reason that the streates are much larger and playner, and without comparyson more directe and streyght furth.

212

For beinge buylded nowe in ovr tyme, byfyde the commoditie of the place of the foundation, the streates were also directed with corde, compase and measure, wherin it excelleth al the cities that I haue sene. It hath the sea so nere, that of one fyde there is no more space betwen the sea and the citie then the waules. And this is about fyftie pases where it is furthest of. On this fyde, the waters of the sea beate vppon the naturall stones and fayre coaste. On the other parte, harde by the fyde and at the foote of the houfes, passeth the ryuer *Ozama* whiche is a marueylous porte wherin laden shyppes ryfe very nere to the lande and in maner vnder the house wyndowes, and no further from the mouth of the ryuer where it entereth into the sea, then is frome the foote of the hyll of *Monyuye* to the monastery of faynt Frances or to the lodge of *Barfalona*. In the myddeft of this space in the citie, is the fortresse and castle, vnder the which and twentie pases distant from the same, passe the shippes to aryfe sumwhat further in the same ryuer. From the enteraunce of the shyppes vntyll they cast anker, they fayle no further from the houfes of the citie then thyrtye or fortie pases, bicause of this fyde of the citie the habitacion is nere to the ryuer. The port or hauen also, is so fayre and commodious to defraight or vnlade shyppes, as the lyke is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymineis that are in this citie, are abowt fyxe hundreth in number, and such houfes as I haue spoken of before: Of the which sum are so fayre and large that they maye well receaue and lodge any lorde or noble manne of Spayne with his trayne and famelie. And especially that which Don Diego Colon viceroy vnder your maiestie hath in this citie, is fuche that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodnesse confyderynge all the commodities of the same. Lykewyse the situation thereof, as beinge aboue the fayde porte and altogyther of stone and hauynge many faire and large roomes with as goodly a prospect of the lande and sea as may be deuyfed, seemeth vnto me so magnificall and princelyke that yowr maiestie maye bee as well lodged therin as in any of the mooste exquisite builded houfes of Spayne. There is also a Cathedrall churche buylded of late where aswell the byshop accordyng to his dignitie, as also the canones are wel indued. This church is wel buylded of stone and lyme, and of good woorkemanshyppes. There are furthermore three monasteries bearyng the name of faynt Dominike, faynt Frances, and faynt Marie of Mercedes: The whiche are all well buylded although not so curiouslye as they of Spayne. But speakynge without preiudice of any other religious monasterie, yowre maiestie may bee well assured that in these three monasteries, god is as well serued as in any other religious house with men of holy lyuyng and vertuous exemple. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and succour of pore people, whiche was founde by Michaell Passament threasurer to yowr maiestie. To conclude, this citie from day to day increafeth in welth and good order, aswe! for that the fayde Admyrall and viceroy with the lorde Chaunceloure and counfayle appoynted there by yowr maiestie, haue theyr continuall abydyng here, as also that the rycheft men of the Ilande resort hyther for theyr mooste commodious habitacion and trade of such marchaundies as are eyther brought owt of Spayne or sent thyther from this Iland which nowe so abundeth in many thynges that it ferueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vfury requityng such benefites as it fyrst receaued from thenfe.

The riuer Ozama

The hauen

A cathedrall
churche and
monasteris in
Hispaniola.

An hospitale.

The people

The people of this Ilande are commonlye of sumewhat lesse stature then are the Spanyardes, and of a fhynynge or cleare browne coloure. They haue wyues of theyr owne, and absteyne from theyr dowghters, fyfters, and mothers. They haue large forheades, longe blacke heare, and no beardes or heare in any other

parts of theyr bodies aswel men as women, excepte very fewe as perhaps scarsely one amonge a thousand. They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the partes which may not with honestie bee seene, they weare a certeyne leafe as brode as a mans hande, which neuerthelesse is not kepte close with fuche diligence but that sumtymes a man may see that they thynke sufficiently hydde.

In this Iland are certeyne glo woormes that shyne in the nyght as doo owres. But are muche bygger and gyue a greater lyght: In so much that when the men of the Ilande goo any iorneyes in the nyght, they beare summe of these woormes made fast abowt theyr fiete and beade, in fuche forte that he that shulde see them a farre and ignorant of the thinge, wolde bee greatly astonysht therat. By the lyght of these also, the women woorke in theyr houfes in the night. These woormes they caule *Cicuas*. Theyr lyght lasteth for the space of three dayes, and diminissheth as they begynne to drye vp.

There is also a kynde of crows whose breath stynketh in the mornynge and is sweete at after noone. The excremente which they auoyde, is a lyuynge worme.

As touchynge other thynges of this Ilande whereof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeate the same ageyne owte of this hystorie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*: but haue here gathered only fuche thynges as eyther are not touched of Peter Martyr or not so largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owt of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

¶ Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.



Of the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *Sancti Iohannis* and *Iamaica*, the same maye be sayde in maner in all thynges as before of *Hispaniola* although not so largely. Yet in lesse quantitie doo they brynge foorth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees, plantes, fysshes, and such other of the which wee haue spoken there.

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of Partyches beinge verye little, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle dooues: but are of muche better taste to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wylde into the houfes, they becoome as tame within the space of three or foure dayes as though they had byn hatched there. They becommme exceedynge fatte in short space, and are doubtelesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght here bee sayde, and to speake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynynge twoo or three leaques in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde stoness of fuche perfecte roundenesse and lyke vnto pelletes of gunnes that no arte can make better or more exactly polysshed. Of these, sum are as smaule as pelletes for handegunnes: and other so increasyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may serue for all fortes of artyllerie although they bee of byggeneffe to receaue one or two or more quintales of pouder, euery quintale conteynynge one hundreth weyght: or of what other quantitie so euer they bee. These pelletes are founde through owte al the valley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take owte such as they neede of all fortes.

The other marueylous thinge of this Iland is this: That farre from the sea, there issheweth owt of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the cley of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and such as is very commodious for the calkyng of shyppes. This fauleth continually from the rocke and runneth into the sea in fuche abundaunce that it is seene flotyng aboute the water on euery side of the sea there abowt as it is dryuen frome place to place by the wynde or course of the water.

Quintus Cursius wryteth in his hystorie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi* where is a great caue or denne in the which is a sprynge or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in such fort that it is an easy thing to beleue that the stoness of the walles of Babilon myght bee layde therewith accordynge as the sayde auctoure wryteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Iland of Cuba, but also such an other in newe Spayne, which was found of late in the prouince of *Panuco* where it is much better then the other of Cuba, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng of shyppes.

Glo woormes

213

Crows stynkyng and sweete

Saynt Iohn his Ilande. *Iamaica*.

Partriches.

Pelletes for gunnes wrought by nature.

A fountayne of the pytche of Bitumen.

Quintus Cursius

Bitumen of Babilon.

Panuco.

¶ Of the lande of Bacoaleos cauled Terra Baccalearum, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.

Baccaleos.

214

Indians.

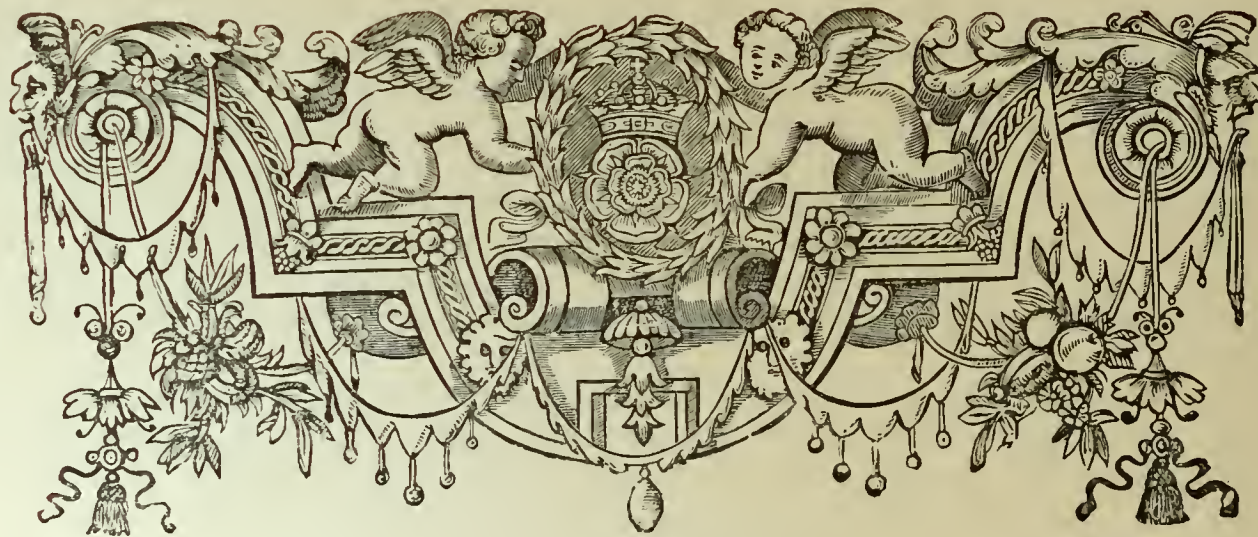
Ryche fures and syluer.

Idolaters.



Shortly after that your Maiestie came to the citie of Toledo, there arryued in the moneth of Nouember, Steuen Gomes the pylot who the yeare before of 1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie sayled to the Northe partes and founde a greate parte of lande continueate from that which is cauled *Baccaleos* discourfyng towards the West to the. xl. and. xli. degree, from whense he brought certeyne Indians (for so caule wee all the nations of the new founde landes) of the whiche he brought sum with hym from thense who are yet in Toledo at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke th[e]other of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go covered with the skinnes of dyuers beastes both wylde and tame. In this lande are many excellent fures, as marterns, fables, and such other ryche fures of the which the sayde pilote brought summe with hym into Spayne. They haue syluer and copper, and certeyne other metalles. They are Idolaters and honoure the soonne and moone, and are seduced with fuche superstitions and errors as are they of the firme.

And to haue wrytten thus muche, it maye suffice of fuche thinges as haue semed to me most woorthy to be noted in the Summarie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus* wrytten to Th[e]emperours maiestie



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION III.

Antonio Pigafetta.

*The first Circumnavigation of the Globe, by Fernam de
Magalhaens's Expedition, in 1519-22.*

First printed in 1526.]

OF OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES
GATHERED OWTE OF DYUERS AUTOURS:

AND FYRSTE OF THE VNIVERSAL CARDE AND NEWE WORLDE.



The hole globe or compase of the earth was dyuyded by the auncient wryters into three partes, as *Europa*, *Affrica*, and *Asia*: whiche partes conteyne in longitude. 180. degrees, begynnyng the fyrst degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude towarde the North. 63. degrees, begynnyng the fyrste degree frome the Equinoctiall: And. 10. degrees towarde the South. All the reste of the longitude which conteyneth other. 180. degrees, is discovered of late tyme, as the West India cauled the newe worlde, bycause none of the owlde autoures had any knowelege or made any mention therof. All that

therefore is cauled newe which is Westwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accomptyng these. 180. degrees towarde the East discovered in owlde tyme, with the other. 180. degrees discovered of late dayes, they make, 360. degrees, which is all the circle of the Equinoctiall in the spher. Also the part about the. 63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Grutlande with many other prouinces. Lykewise the part more south then. 10. degrees of latitude, was discovered of late dayes, althoughe Ariane and Plinie say that it was knowne in owlde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no suche particular description thereof as we haue in these dayes.

West India the
newe worlde.

The circumference
of the Equinoctiall
lyne.

The North
regions.

The South
regions.

¶ A DISCOVRSE OF THE VYAGE
MADE BY THE SPANYARDES
 ROVNDE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.



He vyage made by the Spanyardes rownde about the worlde is one of the greatest and moſte marueylous thynges that hath bynne knowen to owre tyme. And although in many thynges we excell owre aunciente predicessours, in this especiallye wee so farre exceade all theyr inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn knowen to this day. This viage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counfayle of Th[e]emperours Indies, to whom also was commytted the wrytyng of the hystorie and examination of al fuche as returned from thense into Spayne to the cite of Siuile, in the yeare. M. D. xxii. But fendyng it to Rome to bee prynted in that miser-

able tyme when the cite was sacked it was losse and not founde to this day or any memory remaynyng therof, sauynge fuche as sum that redde the same haue borne in mynde. And amonge other notable thynges by hym wrytten as touchyng that vyage, this is one, that the Spanyardes hauynge sayled about three yeares and one moneth, and the most of them notyng the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that sayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had losse one daye: So that at theyr arryuall at the porte of Siuile beinge the seuenth day of September, was by theyr accompt but the sixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the strange effecte of this thyng to a certeyne excellent man who for his singuler lernyng was greatly aduanced to honoure in his common welthe and made Th[e]emperours ambafadoure, this woorthy gentelman who was also a greate Philosopher and Astronomer, answered that it coulde not otherwyse chaunce vnto them hauynge sayled three yeares continually, euer folowyng the soonne towarde the West. And sayde furthermore that they of owlde tyme obserued that all fuche as sayled behinde the soonne towarde the West, dyd greatly lengthen the day. And albeit that the sayde booke of Peter Martyr is perysshed, yet hath not fortune permitted that the memorie of so woorthy and marueylous an enterpryse shulde vtterly bee extincte: forasmuch as a certeyne noble gentleman of the cytie of Vincenza in Italie, cauled master Antonie Pigafetta (who beinge one of the coompanie of that vyage and after his returne into Spayne in the shyppe Victoria, was made knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke therof which he gaue to Th[e]emperours Maiestie, and sente a coppie of the same into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent philosopher cauled master *Iacobus Faber*, hauynge longe studyed in Italy, wyllynge him to translate it

Don Peter Martyr.

Rome sacked

A day lost in three yeares and one moneth.

215

Antonie Pigafetta.

Iacobus Faber.

into the Frenche toonge. This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the frenche toonge and then in the Italien, with also an epistle to the Cardinall of Salspurge as touchynge the same viage, written by Maximiliane Transilvane secretarie to Th[e]emperours Maiestie, in the yeare. 1522. And doubtelesse amonge al the cities of Italie, the citie of Vicenza may herein much glorie, that beside the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whiche it hath brought furth aswell in learnynge as discipline of warre, it hath also had so woorthy and valiaunt a gentleman as was the fayde master Antonie Pigafetta, who hauing compased abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lykewyse described that vyage particularly. For the whiche his so noble and woonderfull an enterprise so happily atchiued, if the same had byn doone in the owlde tyme when th[e] empyre of the Grekes and Romans florysshed, he shulde doubtelesse haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erected in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a singlar exemple of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may we bouldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer such knowlege of the worlde whiche the soonne coompaseth abowte in. xxiiii. houres, as we haue at this presente by th[e]industrye of men of this owre age. But before I speake any thyng of the viage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto, the Epistle of Maximilian Transilvane which he wrote to the Cardinall of Salspurge as a preface to his fayde booke.

Maximilian
Transilvane

The rewarde of
noble enterpryses.

The antiquitie had
no suche knowlege
of the worlde as
we haue.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF MAXIMILIAN TRANSILVANE,
SECRETARIE TO THE EMPEROVRS MAIESTIE:
wrytten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lorde,
the lorde Cardinall of Salspurge, of the maruey-
lous and woonderfull nauigation made by the
Spanyardes rounde aboutt the worlde in
the yeare of Christ. M. D. xix.



IN these daies my most honorable and reuerend lorde, returned one of those fve shippes which the yeare before Th[e]emperours beinge at Saragosa in Spayne, were at his maiesties commaundement sent to the newe worlde heretofore vnknown vnto vs, to seeke the Ilandes of spices. For albeit the Portugales brynge vs great quantitie of spyces from that parte of Easte India whiche in owlde tyme was cauled *Aurea Chersonesus* (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche citie of *Malaccha*) yet in Easte India growe none of those spices excepte pepper. For other spices, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and mase, (whiche is the huske that couereth the shell of the nutte) are brought frome other farre con-

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

*Aurea
Chersonesus.
Malaccha.*

Spices.

treys and from Ilandes scarcely knowen by theyr names. From the whiche Ilandes they are brought in shyps or barkes made withowt any iren tooles, and tyed together with

cordes of date trees: with rounde sayles lykewise made of the fmaule twigges of the branches of date trees weaved togyther. These barkes they caule *Giunche*: with the whiche barkes and sayles they make theyr vyages with onely one wynde in the stearne or contrarywyfe.

Neyther yet is it a thyng greatly to bee marueyled at that these Ilandes where the spyces growe haue byn vnknownen so many worldes past vnto owre tyme, forasmuch as all such thynges as vnto this day haue byn wrytten of owld autours of the places where spices growe, are all fabulous and false: In so muche that the countreys where they affirme theym to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further frome the place where they growe in deede, then we are from them. For lettyngge passe many other thynges that are wrytten, I wyll speake only of this which *Herodotus* (otherwise a famous auctour) affirmeth that Sinamome, is founde in the toppes of the nestes of certeyne byrdes and foules that bryngge it frome farre countreys, and especially the Phenix, the which I knowe no man that euer hath seene. But Plinie who myght more certeynely affirme thynges by reason that before his tyme many thynges were knowen and discouered by the nauigations of great Alexander and other, sayth that Sinamome groweth in that parte of Ethiope whiche the people inhabite cauled *Trogloditi*. Neuerthelesse it is nowe founde that Sinamome groweth very farre from all Ethiope and muche further frome the *Trogloditi* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to owre men which are nowe returned from those partes and the Ilandes of spices, hauyng also good knowlege of Ethiope, it was necessarie to passe farre beyonde Ethiope beefore they coome to these Ilandes, and to compasse abowte the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greatest circumference of heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the most marueylous thyng that euer was doone by man vpon the earth fince the fyrst creation of the worlde, and neuer founde before, or knowen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faythfully to wryte to yowre honorable lordshippe and to declare the hole succeffe therof. As touchyng which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the trewth aswell by relation of the Capitayne of that shyppe as also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All which, gaue the self same information both to Th[e]emperours maiestie and dyuers other: And this with such faythfulnesse and sinceritie, that not only they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but haue thereby also gyuen vs certeyne knowlege that all that hath hytherto byn sayde or written of owld autours as touchyng these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyll beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with such fiete whose shadowe couereth theyr bodyes? Or men of a cubite heygth, and other such lyke, beinge rather monsters then men? Of the which, neyther the Spanyardes who in owre tyme saylyng by the Ocean sea, haue discouered al the coastes of the lande toward the West both vnder and aboue the Equinoctiall, nor the Portugales who compassyng about al Affryke haue passed by all the Easte and lykewyse discouered all those coastes vnto the great goulfe cauled *Sinus Magnus*, nor yet the Spanyardes in this theyr laste nauigation, in the which they compased about the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wryte of such monsters: which doubtlesse they wold not haue omittted if they myght haue had certeyne knowlege therof. But nowe intendyngge to speake of the whole world, I wyll not bee longe in my preface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

The Ilandes of
Spices vnknownen
in owld tyme.

216

Herodotus.
Sinamome.
The Phenix.

Plinie

The nauigations of
greate Alexander.
Ethiope.

Trogloditi.

The nauigation
abowte the worlde.

The owld
autours reposed.

Monsters.
The vyages of the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Sinus Magnus.

❧ A BRIEFE DECLARATION OF THE VYAGE
OR NAVIGATION MADE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.

GATHERED OWT OF A LARGE BOOKE WRYTTEN HEREOF BY

MASTER ANTONIE PYGAFETTA VINCENTINE, KNYGHT OF THE RHODES

and one of the coompanye of that vyage in the which,

Ferdinando Magalianes a Portugale (whom

fum caule *Magellanus*) was generall

Capitayne of the nauie.



Although Sebastian Munster in his vniuerfall Cosmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Asia (which I translated into Englyshe abowte two yeares sence) hath wrytten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declarynge therein howe the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the Easte, faylyng to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compased the hole globe of the worlde betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a breefe repeticion of thys vyage, addyng hereunto dyuers notable thynges which were not touched of Munster, as I haue gathered them owt of the bookes of Antonie Pigafetta and Transiluanus wrytten of the same vyage. For albeit in deede it was a straunge

and woonderful thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compased the hole circumference of the worlde betwene them, yet is it more marueylous that the same was doone with one shippe and one coompanye of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepynge theyr continuall course by the Weste, returned into Spayne by the Easte. A thyng doubtlesse so much more woonderfull and strange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went. In howe muche they were ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted beefore, befyde the thousande daungiours and perylles whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, aswell by wanderynge in vnknown coastes as also by faulyng into the handes of the Portugales by whose dominions in the Easte, they shulde needes passe of necessitie, not trustyng to theyr gentelnesse for the controuersie which had byn longe betwene them for the Ilandes of *Molucca*. I wyll therefore (as I haue fayde) make a breefe rehearfall of thys vyage from the begynnyng to the endyng: Omyttinge neuerthelesse many notable thynges whiche are more largely described in the bookes of *Maximilianus Transiluanus* and *Antonius Pigafetta*.

Sebastian Munster.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

217

Controuersie
betwene the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Ferdinando
Magalianes.

The Cape of saynt
Vincent

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Water engendered
of a clowde.

The Iland of saynt
Thomas.

Capo verde.

Guinea in
Ethiophe.
Serraliona.

Fysshes and
monsters of the
sea.

The fyers of saints
Helene and S.
Nicolas.
A tempest.

The naturall cause
of such fyers as
faule in the shyps.

Cardanus.

Two kyndes of
fyers engendered
of exhalations.

Trewe fyer and
false fyer.

218

Castor and Pollux.
The lyghtes of
saynt Peter and
saynte Nycolas.

They lost the
syght of the North
starre.

The lande of
Bresile.
The South pole.
Sugau.

The tenth day of August, in the yere of owre lorde M. D. xix. Ferdinando Magalianes departed from the porte of Siuile in Spayne with a nauie of fyue shyppes and two hundred thirtie and seuen men, wel furnysshed with all thynges necessarie. And faylynge fyrste downe by the ryuer of *Guadalchiber* which runneth from the fayde porte into the sea, they came fyrste to a place named *Giouan Dulfaraz* where are manye vyllages of the Moores: And from thense arryued at a castel of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, where is the porte from whiche they enter into the sea and to the cape faynte Vincent beinge distant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and from the fayde port. x. leaques, and is from thense to Siuile betwene xvii. and. xx. leaques. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe prouision of fuch thynges as they lacked.

Departynge from hense the. xx. daye of September, they arryued the. xxvi. day of the fame moneth at one of the Ilandes Canarie cauled *Tenerife*, beinge. xxv. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyde as though it descended from heauen and compaseth abowt a certeyne great tree from whose branches distilleth greate abundaunce of water, and faulethe in streames from the roote of the fame into certeyne trenches and cestarnes made and placed to receaue it. This water serueth sufficiently all th[e] inhabitants and cattayle of the Ilande. The lyke thyng is also seene in the Iland of faynt Thomas, lyinge directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The thyrde day of October abowt mydnyght, the capytayne commaunded them to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoys vp theyr fayles directynge theyr course toward the South, faylynge betwene *Capo Verde* of Affryke and the Ilandes lyinge abowt the fame, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xiiii. degrees and a halfe. They fayled thus, manye dayes in the fyght of the coaste of *Guinea*, of Ethiophe, where is the mountayne cauled *Serra Liona* beinge. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall. In this coast they had no maner of contrary wynds but a great calme and fayre wether for the space of threescore and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. In thys vyage they sawe many straunge fysshes and monsters of the sea beyde an other straunge thyng whiche appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theyr shyppes certeyne flames of fyre burnynge verie cleare, which they caul faynt Helen and faynt Nicolas. These appeared as though they had byn vpon the mast of the shyppes, in such clearnesse that they tooke away theyr fyght for the space of a quarter of an houre: by reason wherof, they so wandered owte of theyr course and were disparfed in sunder, that they in maner dispayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the sea and tempest beinge quieted, they came safely to theyr determyned course.

And before I speake any further of the vyage, I haue here thought good to saye sumwhat of these straunge fyers, which sum ignorant folkes thynke to bee spirites or fuche other phantasies wheras they are but natural thynges proceadyng of natural causes and engendered of certeyne exhalations. Of these therefore, the greate Philosopher of owre tyme *Hieronimus Cardanus* in his seconde booke *de Subtilitate*, wryteth in this maner.

There are two maner of fyers engendered of exhalations wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That which is hurtful, is fyer in deede, engendered of malicious and venemous vapours which in successe of time take fyer as apt matters to be kyndeled. The other kynd, is no trewe fyer, but lyke the matter that is in such owld putrifid wod as giueth the shynynge of fyer without the substauce or qualitie therof. Of the kynde of trewe fyer, is the fyer baule or starre commonly cauled faynt Helen which is sumtyme seene abowt the mastes of shyppes, beinge of fuche fyery nature that it sumtyme melteth brasen vesselles, and is a token of drownyng, forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dryuen togyther or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a grose vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therefore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyers cauled in owld tyme *Castor* and *Pollux* and now named the two lyghtes of faynt Peter and faynt Nycolas whiche for the most parte faule on the cables of the shyppes, leapyng from one to an other with a certeyne flutterynge noyse lyke byrdes, are a token of securitie and of the tempeste ouerpasse. For they are but vapours cleauynge to the cables: which in successe of tyme, the fyer passynge from one to an other, appere in the similitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of securitie bycause they are lyttle, nor flowe or groffe, wherby they myght haue ioyned altogyther in one, and byn thereby more malicious and lasted longer, wheras beinge many and but lyttle, they are the sooner consumed.

Hetherto *Cardanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vyage.

When they had fayled paste the Equinoctiall lyne, they lost the fyght of the north starre, and fayled by southweste vntyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Bressil* whiche sum caule *Brafilia*, beinge. xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the south pole or pole Antartyke. This lande is continuate and one firme lande with the cape of faynte Augustine whiche is. viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refresshed with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here also very good fugar canes and diuers kyndes of beastes and other thynges which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on faynt Lucies

day: where the sonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynt of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of Brasile is very large and great: and bygger then all Spayne, Portugale, Fraunce, and Italie: and is moſte abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this countrey praye to noo maner of thinge: but liue by th[e]inſtincte of nature, and to th[e]age of. C. xx. [one hundred and twenty] and. C. xl. [one hundred and forty] yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houſes. They are very docible, and foone allured to the Chryſtian fayth.

Therteene dayes after that they arryued at the fayd port, they departed from this lande and fayled to the xxxiiii. degree and a halfe toward the pole Antartike where they found a great ryuer of freſſhe water and certeyne Canibales. Of theſe they ſawe one owt of theyr ſhyppes, of ſtature as bigge as a gigante, hauynge a voyce lyke a bul. Owre men purſued them, but they were ſo fwyfte of foote that they coulde not ouertake them. About the mouth of this ryuer, are ſeuē Ilandes, in the byggeſt wherof, they founde certeyne precious ſtones, and cauled it the cape of faynt Marie. The Spanyardes thought that by this ryuer they might haue paſſed into the ſouth ſea. But they were deceaued in theyr opinion. For there was none other paſſage then by the ryuer which is. xvii. leaques large in the mouth.

Thus folowynge this coaſte by the tracte of the lande toward the pole Antartyke, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenyſhed with giefe and woolues of the ſea which ſum thynke to bee thoſe fyſſhes that wee caule pikes. Theſe were in ſuch number that in an houre all the fyue ſhippes myght haue byn lade with giefe beinge all of blacke coloure, and ſuch as can not flye. They lyue of fyſſhe and are ſo fatte that they coulde ſcarfely fle theym. They haue noo fethers but a certeyne downe: and theyr byls like rauens byls. Theſe woolues of the ſea are of dyuers coloures, and of the byggenefſe of calues, with theyr heades of golden coloure. Here were they in great daungiour by tempeſt. But as ſoone as the three fyers cauled faynte Helen, faynte Nycolas, and faynt Clare, appered vppon the cabels of the ſhyppes, fuddeynely the tempeſte and furye of the wyndes ceaſed.

Departynge frome henſe, they fayled to the. 49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole Antartyke: where beinge wyntered, they were inforced to remayne there for the ſpace of two monethes, all which tyme they ſawe no man except that one daye by chaunce they eſpyed a man of the ſtature of a gigante, who came to the hauen daunſyng and ſyngynge, and ſhortly after ſeemed to caſt duſt ouer his heade. The capitayne ſente one of his men to the ſhore with the ſhyppes boate, who made the lyke ſigne of peace. The which thyng the gigante feinge, was owt of feare and came with the capitaynes feruaunte to his preſence into a lyttle Ilande. When he ſawe the capitayne with certeyne of his company abowte hym, he was greatly amaſed and made ſignes holdynge vppe his hande to heauen, ſignifyng therby that owre men came from thenſe. This gigante was ſo bygge, that the heade of one of owr men of a meane ſtature, came but to his waſte. He was of good corporature and well made in all the partes of his bodie, with a large vyſage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the moſt parte yelow. Vppon his cheekes were paynted two hartes, and redde circles abowt his eyes. The heare of his headde was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the ſkynne of a beaſte fowde togyther. This beaſte (as ſeemed vnto them) had a large heade and great eares lyke vnto a mule, with the body of a camel and taylor of a horſe. The feete of the giant were foulded in the ſkynne after the maner of ſhoos. He had in his hande, a bygge and ſhorte bowe, the ſtrynge whereof was made of a fynewe of that beaſte. He had alſo a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes fethered after the maner of owrs, typte with ſharpe ſtones in the ſteade of iren heades. The Capitayne cauſed him to eate and drynke, and gaue him many thynges, and amonge other a greate lookynge glaſſe: In the which as ſoone as he ſawe his owne likeneſſe, was fuddeynely afrayde and ſtarted backe with ſuch violence that he ouerthrewe two that ſtoode neareſt abowte hym. When the Capitayne had thus gyuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with alſo a lookynge glaſſe, a combe, and a payre of beades of glaſſe, he ſente hym to lande with foure of his owne men well armed.

Shortely after, they ſawe an other giaunte of ſumewhat greater ſtature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande, As he drewe neare vnto owre menne, he layde his hande on his heade and poynted vp toward heauen, and owr men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne ſente his ſhyppes boate to bryng him to a lyttle Ilande beinge in the hauen. This gigante was verye tractable and pleaſaunt. He foonge and daunſed: and in his daunſynge left the printe of his feete on the grownde. He remayned longe with owre men who named hym *Iohan*. He coulde wel ſpeake and playnely pronounce theſe wordes: *Ieſus: Aue Maria, Iohannes*, euen as we doo, but with a bygger voyce. The capitayne gaue hym a ſhert of linnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Alſo a cappe, a combe, a lookynge glaſſe, with dyuers ſuche other thynges, and ſo ſente hym to his company. The day folowynge, he reforted ageyne to the ſhyppes, and brought with hym one of thoſe greate beaſtes, which he gaue the capitayne. But after that daye they neuer ſawe hym more, ſuppoſynge hym to bee flayne of his owne company for the conuerſation he had with owre men.

After other. xv. dayes were paſte, there came foure other gigantes without any weapons, but had hydde theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne buſſhes. The capitayne retheyned two of theſe whiche were youngeſt and

The greateneſſe of the land of Brasile.

Canibales.
Giantes.

Insula gemmarum.
Cap[e] S. Marie.

The pole
Antartike.
Geese.
Sea woolues

The. xlix. degree
of the ſouth pole.

Giantes

219
The bygnes of the
giants.

An other gigante.

Foure other
giantes.

Two gigantes are taken by a pollicie.

The deuyl Setebos.

Deuyls appere to the gyantes when they dye.

Patagoni.

220

The gyantes feedyng.

They conspire ageynst theyr Capitayne.

Confession.

The straight of Magellanus.
The South sea.

Mare pacificum.

The gigantes died for heat.

Capo Desiderato

Short nighte in the moneth of October.

Flying fyshes

The gyantes language.

The gyant is baptised.

Three monethes saylyng without the syght of lande.
Extreme famen.

beste made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that gyyunge them knyues, sheares, lookyng glaffes, belles, beades of crystall, and fuche other tryfels, he so fylled theyr handes that they coulde hold no more. Then caused two payre of shackels of iren to bee put on theyr legges, makyng signes that he wold also gyue them those chaynes: which they lyked very wel by cause they were made of bryght and shynyng metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycause theyr handes were full, the other gyantes wolde haue caryed them: but the Capitayne wolde not suffer them. When they felte the shakels faste abowte theyr legges, they begunne to doubt: but the Capitayne dyd put them in comferte and badde them stande styll. In fine when they sawe how they were deceaued they rored lyke bulles and cryed vpon theyr greate deuyl *Setebos* to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly seperate and put in sundry shyppes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two. Yet was one of them with much difficulte ouerthrowne by nyne of owre men, and his handes bownde: but he fuddeynely loofed hym felse and fledde, as dyd also the other that came with them. In theyr flying, they shot of theyr arrowes and slewe one of owre men. They say that when any of them dye, there appere. x. or. xii. deuyls leapyng and daunfyng about the bodye of the deade, and seeme to haue theyr boddyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one feene bygger then the residue, who maketh great mirth and reioysyng. This greate deuyl they caule *Setebos*, and caule the lesse *Cheleule*. One of these gigantes which they toke, declared by signes that he had feene deuyls with two hornes aboue theyr heades, with longe heare downe to theyr feete: And that they cast furth fyre at theyr throtes both before and behynde. The Capitayne named these people *Patagoni*. The most part of them weare the skynnes of fuche beastes wherof I haue spoken before: And haue no houses of continuance, but maketh certeyne cotages whiche they couer with the fayde skynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of raw fleshe and a certeyne sweete roote whiche they caule *Capar*. One of these which they had in theyr shippes, dyd eate at one meale a basket of byskette, and drunke a bowle of water at a draughte.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of faint Iulian, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conspyryng the death of theyr general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge whom the trefurer Luigo of Mendozza was one. Certeyne of the other conspiratours, he left in the fayd land of *Patagoni*

Departyng from hense to the. 52. degree toward the pole Antartike lackyng a thyrde parte, where they founde a ryuer of fresshe water and good fyfhe. Theyr shyppes were here in great daungiour. They remayned twoo monethes in this porte where they made newe prouision of fresshe water, fuell, and fyfhe. Here the Capitayne caused all his men to bee confessed.

Approchyng to the. 52. degrees, they founde the straight nowe cauled the straight of Magellanus, beinge in sum place. C. x. [one hundred and ten] leaques in length: and in breadth sumwhere very large and in other places lyttle more then halfe a leaque in bredth. On both the fydes of this strayght, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, beyonde the whiche is the enteraunce into the sea of *Sur*. This enteraunce the Capitayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the shyppes stole away priuile and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the gigantes who dyed as foone as he felt the heate that is abowte the Equinoctiall lyne.


When the Capitayne *Magalianes* was past the straight and sawe the way open to the other mayne sea, he was so gladde therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynt of the lande from whense he fyrst sawe that sea, *Capo Desiderato*.


Supposing that the shyp which stole away had byn loste, they erected a crosse vpon the top of a hyghe hyll to directe their course in the straight yf it were theyr chaunce to coome that way. They founde that in this strayght in the moneth of October the nyght was not past foure houres longe. They found in this strayght at euery three myles, a safe hauen and excellent water to drynke: woodde also and fyfhe, and greate plentie of good herbes. They thynke that there is not a fayrer strayght in the worlde. Here also they sawe certeyne flyinge fyfshes.

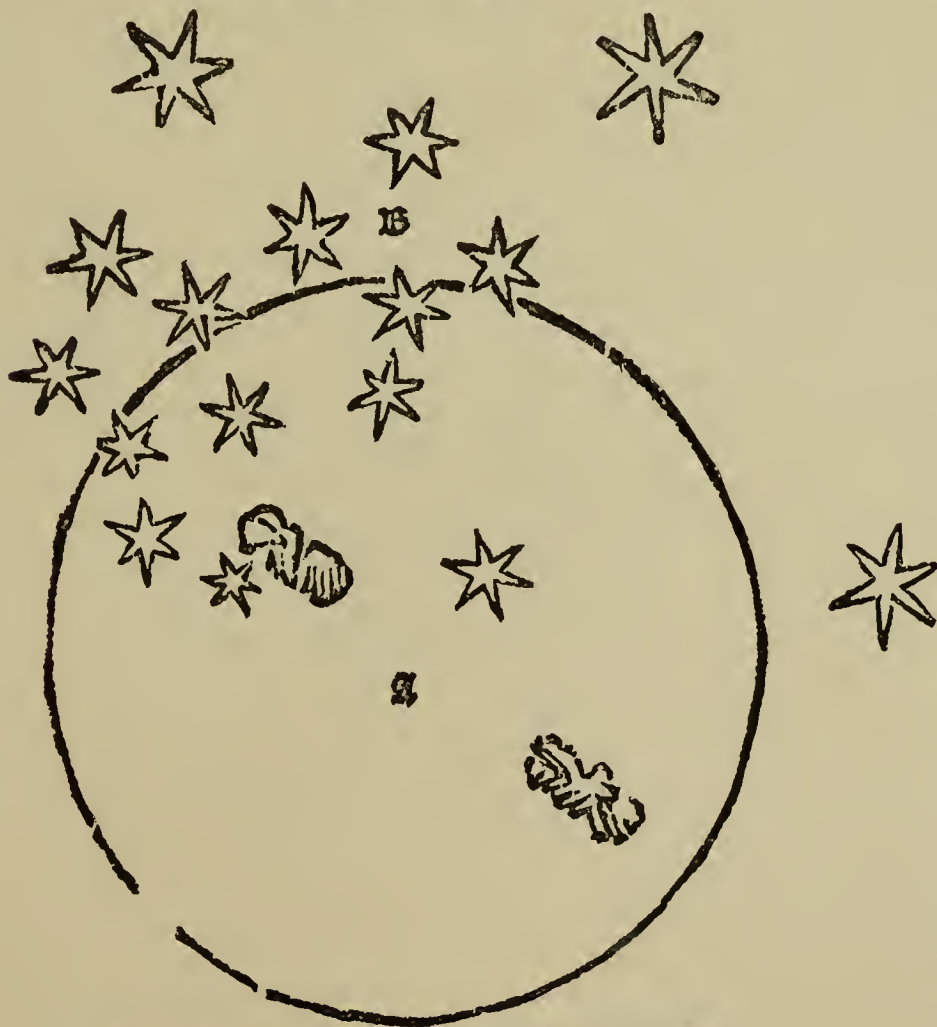
The other gigante which remayned with them in the shyp, named breade *Capar*: water, Oli: redde clothe, *Cherecai*: red colour, *Cheiche*: blacke colour, *Amel*: And spoke al his wordes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a crosse before him and kyssed it, shewyng it vnto hym, he fuddeynely cryed *Setebos*, and declared by signes that if they made any more crosses, *Setebos* wold enter into his body and make him bruff. But when in fine he sawe no hurte coome thereof, he tooke the crosse and imbrafed and kyssed it ostentymes, desyryng that he myght bee a Chrystian before his death. He was therefore baptysed and named Paule.

Departyng owt of this strayght into the sea cauled *Mare Pacificum* the. xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1520. they sayled three moonethes and. xx. dayes before they sawe any lande. And hauyng in this tyme consumed all theyr bysket and other vyttayles, they fell into fuche necessitie that they were inforced to eate the poudre that remayned therof beinge nowe full of woormes and flynkynge lyke pyffe by reason of the false water. Theyr fresshe water was also putryfied and become yelowe. They dyd eate skynnes and pieces of lether which were fouled abowt certeyne great ropes of the shyps. But these skynnes beinge made verye harde by reason of the foonne, rayne and wynde, they hunge them by a corde in the sea for the space of foure

or five dayes to mollifie them, and fodde them and eate them. By reason of this famen and vnclene feedynge, fumme of theyr gummes grewe so ouer theyr teethe, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this occasion dyed. xix. men, and also the giante with an Indian of the lande of Brasile otherwyse cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is, the lande of poppingiayes. Befyde these that dyed. xxv. or. xxx. were so sicke that they were not able to doo any feruice with theyr handes or armes for feebleness: So that there was in maner none without sum difease. In these three monethes and. xx. dayes, they sayled foure thousande leaques in one goulfe by the sayde sea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche may well bee so cauled soasmuch as in all this tyme hauyng no fyght of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempest. Duryng this tyme also, they discouered only two little Ilandes vnhabited, where they sawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named theym infortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundreth leaques distante. The fyrste of these Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antartike. xv. degrees, and the other fyue. Their failinge was in fuche forte that they failed daily betweene. l. [fifty] lx. [sixty] to. lxx. [seuenty] leaques. So that in fine, if god of his mercy had not gyuen them good wether, it was necessary that in this soo greate a sea they shuld all haue dyed for hunger. Whiche neuerthelesse they escaped soo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether euer the like viage may be attempted with so good successe.

They confydered in this nauigation that the pole Antartike hath no notable starre after the forte of the pole Artike. But they sawe many starres gathered togyther, whyche are like two clowdes one separate a little from an other, and sum what darke in the myddest. Betweene these, are two starres not very bigge, nor muche shynninge, whiche moue a little: And these two are the pole Antartike. The needell of theyr compasse varied sumwhat, and turned euer towarde the pole Artike. Neuerthelesse, had no fuche force as when it is in these partes of the pole Artike. In so muche that it was necessarie to helpe the needle with the lode stone (commonly cauled the adamant) before they could faile therwith, bycause it moued not as it doothe when it is in these owre partes. When they were in the myddest of the goulfe, they sawe a crosse of five cleare starres directly toward the Weste, and of equall distance the one from the other. 

 The order of the starres about the pole Antartike, summe haue figured in this maner.



A. The pole Antartike. B. The Crosse.

In these dayes they sayled betwene the West and South so farre that they approched to the Equinoctiall line, and were in longitude from the place from whense they fyrst departed, a hundreth and twentie degrees. In this course they sayled by two Ilandes of exceedynge height, wherof the one named *Cipanghu*, is. xx. degrees from the pole Antartike: And the other named *Sumbdit*. xv. degrees. When they were past the Equinoctiall line, they sayled betwene the West and Southwest at the quarter of the West towarde the Southwest more then a hundreth leaques, changinge theyr sayles to the quarter of the Southwest vntyll they came to the. xiii. degrees aboute the Equinoctial towarde the pole Artyke, intending as much as were possible, to approche to the cape cauled of the owldewryters *Cattigara*: The whiche is not founde as the owld Cosmographers haue descrybed it, but is towarde the north about. xii. degrees as they afterwarde vnderstode.

When they had thus sayled. lxx. [seuenty] leaques of this

Diseases of famen.

221

Vnfortunate Ilandes.

What they sayled dayly

The starres about the south pole.

The needle of the compasse.

The lode stone.

222

The Equinoctial line.

The Ilandes of Cipanghu and Sumbdit

*Insulæ Latronum*People with longe
heareThey coloure
theyr teethe.The Ilande of
Zamall.Wyne of date
trees.The maruelous
frute *Cocus*.

223

The Iland of
Zuluan.
The sea cauled
Archipelago di san
Lazaro.
Gentyles.

vyage in the. xii. degree aboute the Equinoctial, and. C.xlvi. [one hundred and forty-six] degrees of longitude (as I haue sayde) the fyfte day of March they discouered a lyttle Ilande towarde the north-west, and two other towarde the fouthwest: but the one was hygher and bygger then the two other. In the byggest of these, the generall capitayne wolde haue rested hym selfe a whyle: but he coulde not by reason the people of these Ilands reforted continually to the shippes with theyr canoas, and stole nowe one thyng and nowe an other, in such forte that our men could take no reste, and therefore demaunded of the capitayne that they myght slyke theyr sayles to brynge the shippes to land. But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande with fortie armed men, and burnt about fiftie of theyr houfes with many of theyr Canoas: And flewe also about feuen men, and recouered a shyppe boate whiche the Barbarians had stolne, and so departed folowynge his vyage. The Capitayne named these Ilands *Insulæ Latronum*, that is, the Ilands of theeues. When our men had so wounded summe of theym with arrowes that they were slyken through the bothe fydes, they pulled furth the arrowes not ceasynge to marueyle at them tyll they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other so depart, but styll folowed the shippes with more then two hundreth of theyr boates, approachynge as nere to the shippes as they coulde, and proferynge owre men certeyne fyshes. As the shippes passed with full sayle in the myddeste of theyr boates, they sawe in sum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearynge theyr heare, which owre men thought they did for the death of theyr husbendes. As farre as they could perceaue, these people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouernour. They go naked and haue blacke beardes and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr wastes. They are of the same stature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyke vnto an olyue. Their women are well faouered with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachynge to the grownde. The menne coloure theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they esteeme a comely thyng. They annoynt theyr bodies and heare with the oyle of *Cocus*. Their boates are sum all blacke, sum whyte, and sum redde, and haue sayles made of the broade leaues of date trees fowd together. In the steade of a rudder, they vse a certeyne brode boorde with a staffe in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the sterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the sterne. They sayle so swyftely that they feeme a farre of, lyke Delphyns swymmyng aboute the water.

The tenth day of March, in the yere. 1521. they wente alande vppon a lyttle Ilande named *Zamal*. xxx. leaues dystant from the Ilande of theeues. Bycause this Ilande was not inhabyted, they rested here a whyle, where the capitayne caused a paulion to bee pyched for the ficke and crafed men, and a hogge to bee kylde.

The. xviii. day of Marche, they sawe a boate with nyne men comynge towarde them shewynge them felues ioyfull and reioysynge of theyr comynge. They brought many presentes with them, and seemed to bee people of much humanitie. They gaue the capitayne a great fysh, and a great vessell of the wyne of those date trees whiche beare the frute *Cocus*. They made also signes that within the space of foure dayes, they wolde bryng ryffe and dyuers foules and beasts as they dyd in deede.

This *Cocus* is a frute of certeyne date trees whereof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineger. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, and hange therat a reede as bigge as a mans legge, into the which droppeth a sweete licour from the tree lyke vnto newe whyte wine sumwhat tart, and let the reede continewe there from mornynge tyll euenynge, and from euenynge to mornynge. The frute of this tree cauled *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man or more. The fyrste rynde of this, is greene and of the thyckenesse of two syngers, hauynge in it certeyne thredes wherof they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Vnder this rynde, there is a thicke shell whiche they burne and make poudre therof and vse it as a remedie for certeyne diseases. Vnder this shell, is a whyte substaunce lyke the carnell of a nutte being a synger in thickenesse, which they eate with fleffhe and fyfhe as wee doo breade. It hath the taste of an almonde, and is vsed in the steade of breade when it is dried. In the myddeste of this carnell, is a cleare and sweete water, beinge very holsome and cordiale. This water sumtyme congeleth and lyeth within the shell lyke an egge. When they intende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrifie in water, and boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they intende to make vineger, they suffer only the water to putrifie and then fet it to the soone where it becommeth vineger lyke vnto that which is made of whyte wyne. And when they mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddeste of the frute, and frayne it thorowe a cloth, they make a mylke therof lyke vnto goates mylke. These date trees are lyke vnto them that beare dates, but are not so full of knottes. With the iuise of two of these date trees, a hole famelie of tenne persons may bee maynteyned with wyne vsynge one. viii. dayes, and the other, other. viii. dayes: for they shulde els bee dried and wythered. These trees continue for the space of a hundreth yeres. This Ilande where they founde this humane and gentell people, is cauled *Zuluan*, and is not verye bygge. About this Ilande they founde manye other Ilandes, and therefore named this sea *Archipelago di San Lazaro*, that is, the great sea of saynte Lazarus, beinge tenne degrees aboute the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole, and. C. lxi. [one hundred and sixty-one] frome the place from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are *Caphranita* that is gentyles. They go naked fauyng that they couer theyr priuie partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a certeyne tree. The

chiefest men, haue abowte theyr heades a fylken cloth of needle woorke. They are grosse and brode fet and of the coloure of an oliue. They annoynte theyr bodies with the oyle of *Cocus* to defend them ageynst the heate of the foonne and drynesse of the wynde. The. xxv. day of Marche, they departed from hense and directed theyr course betwene the Weste and fouthwest, and sayled betwene foure Ilandes named *Cenalo*, *Huinanghan*, *Hibuffon*, and *Abarien*. etc.

The. xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of *Buthuan* where they were honorably interteyned of the Kynge and the Prince his foonne who gaue them muche golde and spices. The capitayne gaue the kynge a vesture of red clothe and an other of yelow made after the Turkysshe fasshyon, and also a red cappe. And gaue likewise to other that came with hym, certeyne knyues, glasses, and beades of cristalle: After that, the capitayne had shewed the Kynge the secretes of his shippe and fuche marchaundies as he had therin, he caused a piece of ordinaunce suddenly to bee shote of, whereat the kyng was greatly amafed vntil the capitayne comforted hym. Then the Capitaine commaunded one of his men to be armed from the heade to the foote, and caused three other to strike hym with theyr swoordes, whereat the Kynge maruayled greatly, and sayde to th[e]interpretoure (who was a flauie borne in Malacha) that one of those armed men was able to encounter with a hundreth of his men. But he maruayled muche more when the capitaine tould hym by th[e]interpretoure howe he founde the straight by the compasse and lode stone, and howe many dayes they were without fight of any lande. Then askynge licence to departe, the capitayne fente two of his men with him, of the whiche Antonie Pigafetta was one. When the kynge sawe Antonie Pigafetta write the names of many thinges, and afterwarde rehearse them ageyne, he maruayled yet more, makynge fygnes that fuche men descended from heauen. The Kynge brought them firste to his pallaice where he interteyned them honorably and gaue them manye gyftes, as dyd also the Prince in his pallaice beyng in an other Ilande named *Caleghan*.

As they fyfted a certeyne myne of earthe in the Kynges Ilande, they founde pieces of golde, sum as bigge as nuttes and other as bigge as egges. All the kynges vesselles were of golde, and his house well furnysshed. In all the hole nation there was no man of coomlier personage then the kinge. He had his heare long downe to his sholders, and very blake, with a vaile of filke rowled abowte his head, and two greate ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had abowte hys myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and filke impaled wyth golde, and reacheinge downe to his knees. On his one fyde, he had a long dager with a hafte of golde, and the shethe of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on euery finger, three ringes of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of storax and Benjamin. The natural coloure of his face was like vnto the coloure of an oliue: And all his bodye byfyde paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was Raia Colambu, and the Prince was cauled Raia Siagu.

The laste day of Marche neare vnto Easter, the capitaine caused his preefte to say masse, and fente to the kinge by th[e]interpretoure, that his commyng a lande at that tyme was not to dyne with hym, but only to heare masse. The Capitayne came alande with fyftie of his men in theyr best apparel withowte weapons or harnesse, and all the resydue well armed. Before the boates came to lande, he caused fixe pieces of ordinaunce to be shotte of in token of peace, and so came aland, where the two kinges embrased hym, and accompanied hym to the place appoynted for masse to be sayde not farre frome the sea fyde. Sumwhat before the beginnyng of masse, the Capitayne sprinkeled the Kynges with damaske water. When the preefte was at mid masse at the offitorie, the kings profered them selues to go to kyffe the crosse with the capytayne, but offered nothyng. At the tyme of facringe when the preefte lifted vppe the bodie of Christ, and the Christians kneeled downe and helde vppe their handes ioyned together, the kynges dyd the like also wyth greate reuerence. In the meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Christians were at the communion, a handegunne was shotte of to signifie vnto theym that were in the shyppes, to discharge all theyr ordinaunce. When masse was fynysshed, the Capitaine caused certeyne of his men to put on theyr harnesse and to make a combat with theyr naked swoordes, wherat the kynges tooke great pleasure. This doone, the Capitaine caused a crosse to be brought furth, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, gyuynge commaundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and signifyinge to the kynges by th[e]interpretour that that banner was gyuen hym by Th[e]emperoure his lorde and master, with commaundement to leaue the same in al places where he came to the great commoditie and profite of all such as wolde reuerendly receaue it as an assured token of frendship: And that he wold therefore leaue it there aswel to accomplyshe his lords commaundement, as also that if at any tyme any shyppes of Christians shulde chaunce to coome that way, shulde by feing that crosse perceaue that owre men had byn well enterteyned there, and wolde therefore not onely absteyne from doing them any hurte or displeasure, but also helpe to ayde them ageynste theyr enemies. And that therefore it shulde bee requisite to erecte that crosse vppon the toppe of the hygheste mountayne that myght bee seene from the sea on euery fyde. Also to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in so doinge, they shulde not bee hurte with thunder, lyghtnyng, or tempestes. When the kynges harde these woordes, they gaue the Capitayne great thanks, promysinge gladly to obserue and fulfyll all fuche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaunded whether they were Moores or gentyles. They answered that

Foure Ilands

The Iland of Buthuan.

The Iland of Caleghan.

Plentie of golde

224

The kynge of Buthuan.

Masse.

A combatte.
The Crosse and
crowne of thornes

Moores and
gentyles

they had none other kynde of religion, but that lyftyng vppon theyr handes ioyned togyther and theyr faces toward heauen, they cauled vppon theyr god *Abba*, whiche answere lyked the Capitayne very well, bycause the gentyles are fooner perswaded to owre fayth then the Moores. etc.

Many Ilands
The Iland of Messana.
Battes as bygge as Eagles.
Fowles with hornes.
225
Egges hatched in sand.
The Ilande of Zubut.
The kyng of Zubut.
A shyp laden with gold and slaues.
Calicut.
Malacha.

Departynge from hense, they came to the Ilandes of *Zcilon*, *Zubuth*, *Messana*, and *Calaghan*, by the conducte of certeyne pylottes of the fayde kynges. Of these, *Zubuth* is the beste, and hath the trade of beste trafique. In the Ilande of *Messana*, they founde dogges, cattes, hogges, hennes, goates, ryse, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panyke, barlye, fygges, oranges, waxe, and golde in greate quantitie. This Ilande is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole. ix. degrees twoo thyrd partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whense they departed. They remayned in this Iland for the space of. viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the northwest, and passed betwene these fyue Ilandes, *Zcilon*, *Bohol*, *Caughu*, *Barbai*, and *Catighan*. In this Ilande of *Catighan*, are certeyne great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to bee eaten, and of taste muche lyke a henne. There are also stocke dooues, turtle dooues, popping-iayes, and certeyne foules as bygge as hennes. These foules haue lyttle hornes, and lay great egges, which they couer a cubet depthe in the fande, by the heate whereof and vertue of the foonne, they are hatched, and the younge byrdes creepe owte of the fande by them selues. From the Ilande of *Messana* to *Catighan* are. xx. leaques faylynge towarde the West. And bycause the kyng of *Messana* coulde not folowe the shyppes, they taryed for him about the Ilandes of *Polo*, *Ticobon*, and *Pozon*, where the Capitayne tooke hym into his shippe with certeyne of his principall men, and so folowed theyr vyage towarde the Ilande of *Zubut*, whiche is abowte fiftie leaques distante from *Catighan*.

The. vii. day of Apryll abowte noone, they entered into the porte of *Zubut*: And passynge by many vyllages and habitacions in trees, they came to the citie, where the Capitayne gaue commaundement to the maryners to stryke theyr sayles and to set them selues in order in maner of battayle ray, causing all the ordinaunce to bee shotte of, wherewith all the people were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitayne sent an ambassadoure with th[e]interpretoure to the kyng of *Zubut*. When they approched nere to the citie, they founde the kyng with a great company of men fore astonysed at the noyse of the gunnes. But th[e]interpretour aduertified them that it was the custome of owre men in al suche places where they coome, to discharge theyr ordinaunce in token of frendeshyppe and to honour the lorde of the citie. With which woordes the kyng and his coompany were well quieted. After this, th[e]interpretour declared that his master was the Capitayne of the ships of the greatest Prince in the worlde, and that they wente to discouer the Ilandes of *Molucca*: And further, that hearyng of his good name and fame by the reporte of the kyng of *Messana*, they determyned to visite hym and to haue vyttayles for exchange of theyr marchaundies. The kyng answered that he was well contented therewith, and that they were hartely welcoome. Neuerthelesse, that it was a custome in that place, that all such shyppes as entered into that hauen, shuld pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes paste, fence a shyppe laden with golde and slaues dyd so paye. In token wherof, he caused to coome before hym certeyne marchauntes of that coompany whiche yet remayned with hym. To this th[e]interpretour answered, that forasmuch as his lorde was the Capitayne of so myghtie a Prince, he neuer payde tribute to any kyng in the worlde, and wolde not nowe begynne. Wyllynge hym to take this for a resolute answere, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he shulde enioy it, And if he rather desyred warre, he shoulde haue his handes full. When th[e]interpretour had sayde these woordes, one of the fayde marchauntes (who was a Moore) spake to the kyng in this maner. *CATACAIA Chita*: that is. Take hede fyr. For these men are they that haue conquered *Calicut*, *Malaca*, and all the greater *India*: and are of suche poure that yf yowe intreate them otherwyse then well, yowe may to late knowe what they are able to doo more then they haue doone at *Calicut* and *Malaca*. When th[e]interpretoure harde these woordes, he sayde that the kyng his lorde was of much greater puiffaunce and more dominions, and lorde of more shyppes then was the kyng of *Portugale*: declarynge further that he was kyng of *Spayne* and Emperour of all *Christendome*. Addynge hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter fende thyther suche a poure of armed men as shulde destroy his contrey. The Moore conferred all these woordes with the kyng, who sayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counfayle, and gyue them a full answere the daye folowynge. In the meane tyme he fente them certeyne vyttayles and wyne. When all these thynges were declared to the kyng of *Messana* who was the chiefest there abowt nexte vnto hym, and lorde of many Ilandes, he wente alande and repayed to the kyng of *Zubut* and declared vnto hym the great humanitie and curtesie of the generall Capitayne. Shortely after, the Capitayne fente certeyne of his men with th[e]interpretour to the kyng of *Zubut* to knowe his pleasure and what aunswere he wolde make them. As they wente towarde the courte, they mette the kyng commynge in the streete accompanied with many of his chiefe men. He caused ovr men to sit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one Capitayne in theyr coompany: And whether it were theyr requeste that he shulde pay tribute to Th[e]emperour. They answered that they desyred none other thyng but that they myght exercise marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kyng

made anfwere that he was well content therwith: wyllynge the Capitayne in token of frendshippe to fende him a little of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmyng that he wold do the lyke. etc.

After this the kynge of Meffana with the kynge of *Zubut* his neuie (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylnen, came to the shyppes and brought the Capitayne many goodly presentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perswaded them to the Christian fayth, which they gladly embrased, and tooke sliche pleasure in hearynge the articles of owre beliefe, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptised, and shortly after all the people of the llande. They esteeme nothyng more precious then drynkyng glaffes of Venice woorke.

When they came to the citie, they founde the kyng in his pallaice fittyng vppon a floure or fluorie made of the leaues of date trees wrought after a curious diuise lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body, none other apparell but only a cloth of bombasine cotton hangyng before his priuie partes. On his heade, he had a vayle of needle worke: and abowte his necke a chaine of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynges of golde wherein were inclosed many precious stoncs. He was but of fmaule stature, but sumewhat grosse, and had the residue of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof sum were lyke vnto flamynge fyre. Before hym, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth cauled *Porcellana*, with sodden egges. Also four vessels of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his house, where he had foure daughters verye well fauoured and whyte lyke owres. He caused them to daunce all naked, and therwith to fynge, and play on certeyne tymbrelles made of metall.

At this tyme it so chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the shyppes. And when certeyne of theyr coompanye defyred the kynge to gyue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he answered that forasmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kynge and master, how much more ought the grounde so to be.

They greatly marueyled at the cerimonies perteynyng to the maner of owre funeralles, and honoured the crosses whiche were fet at bothe th[e]endes [of] the graue.

They lyue with iustice, and vse waightes and meafures. Theyr houfes are made of Timber and fawne boordes: and are so buylded aboue the grownde vppon proppes and pyles, that they ascende to the same by certeyne stayers. Vnder theyr houfes, they keepe theyr hogges and hennes.

When they came to barteryng, they gaue golde, ryffe, hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for fume of owre tryfels of fmaule value. They gaue tenne *Pesos* of golde for. xvi. poundes weyght of iren. One *pesus* is in value a ducate and a halfe. The funday solowyng, the kynge was baptysed with great solemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne admonysshed him before not to bee afrayde at the shootyng of of the ordinaunce, bycause it was theyr custome so to doo at such solemne feastes. After this, the Capitayne caused them to breake all theyr Idoles, and to set vppe the crosse in dyuers places, prayyng to the same bothe mornyng and euenyng kneelyng on theyr knees and holdyng vp theyr handes ioyned togyther. The kinge in his baptisme, was named Charles after the Emperours name, and the Prince, Ferdinando after the name of his maiesties brother. The kynge of Meffana was named Iohn, and the Moore Christopher. To all other they gaue such names as are commonly vsed in Christendome. And thus beefore masse was begunne, were fyue hundreth men baptised. When masse was synysshed, the Capitayne inuited the kynge to dyne with him in his shyppe, and at his commyng, caused the ordinaunce to bee discharged.

The queene was also baptised with fortie of her gentlewomen, and her daughter the Princes wife. The queene was very younge and fayre, hauyng her body couered with a white cloth. Her lypes were redde, and she had on her head a hat, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes. This crowne and the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

Within the space of. viii. dayes, th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande were baptised excepte one vyllage of Idolaters who wolde not herein obey the kynges commaundement. Whervppon the Capitayne sent certeyne of his menne thyther, who burnt the towne and erected a crosse in that place bycause the people of the vyllage were gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had byn Moores (that is Machumetistes) they wold haue erected a pyller of stone, bycause the Moores are more stooberne and harder to bee conuerted then are the gentyles.

When the queene came to the place where shee shuld heare masse, shee came furth with great pompe and solemnitie, hauyng goyng before her three younge damofelles and three men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom shee folowed apparellled in whyte and blacke, with a great vayle of fylke vppon her heade fringed abowte with golde, whiche couered her hatte and hunge downe to her shoulders. Shee had also a great trayne of women folowyng her, beinge all barefooted and naked, excepte that vppon theyr heades and priuie partes, they wore certeyne vayles of silke, and hadde theyr heare spredde.

Before the kynge of *Zubut* was baptised, he was named Raia Humabuon. When the Capitayne demaunded of hym why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng to his promesse, he answered that they esteemed them no more as goddes, but only made sacrifice to them for the Princes brother who was very fycke,

Shedyng of bludde is a token of frendshyppe

226

The kynge of Zubut is baptised

The kynge of Zubut his apparell

Well fauoured women.

Barteryng Pesus what.

They breake theyr Idoles and erecte the crosse.

Fyue hundreth men baptised.

The queene of Zubut.

227

The queenes apparell.

and as noble and wyttie a man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne answered that if he wolde burne al his Idoles and beleue faythfully in Christ, and bee baptised, he shulde be immediatly restored to health, and that he wolde els gyue them leaue to stryke of his heade. By these woordes and persuasions of the Capitayne, he conceaued such hope of health, that after he was baptised he felt no more greefe of his disease. And this was a manifest myracle wrought in owre tyme wherby dyuers infidels were conuerted to owr fayth, and theyr Idoles destroyed, and also theyr altares ouerthrowen on the whiche they were accustomed to eate the sacrifyced fleshe. The people of the Ilande pay the kynge a portion of vittayles for theyr tribute by all theyr cities and vyllages.

A miracle.

The Ilande of Mathan.

The capitaine Magellanus is slayne.

The Ilande of Bohol. They burnt one of theyr shyppes. Blacke men.

The Ilande of Chippit.

The Ilande of Caghaian.

The Ilande of Pulaoan. 228

The Ilande of Burnei or Porne.

A great citie.

Elephantes

The Ilande of Cimbulon.

Leaues of trees which seeme to liue.

Not farre from this Ilande of *Zubut*, is the Ilande of *Mathan*, whose inhabitauntes vse maruelous cerimones in theyr sacrifices to the foonne and burying the deade. They were rynges of golde about theyr priuie members. The Ilande is gouerned by two Princes wherof the one is named *Zula*, and the other *Cilapulapu*. And wheras this *Cilapulapu* refused to pay tribute to the kynge of Spayne, the Capitayne went ageynst hym in his owne person with. lx. of his menne armed with coates of mayle and helmettes. *Cilapulapu* diuided his army into three battayles, hauynge in euery battaile two thousand and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, dartes and iuelins hardened at the poyntes with fyer. This continued longe and sharpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and presynge hym selfe in the brunte of the battayle, was fore wounded and slayne, forasmuch as the mooste of the Barbarians directed all theyr force ageynst hym. Befyde the Capitayne, were slayne of owre men about. viii. or. ix. Of the Barbarians, were. xv. slayne and many fore wounded. After the death of the Capitayne, they chose two other in his place, of the which one was *Odoardo Barbeffa* a Portugale, and the other *Iohn Serrano* who was shortely after betrayde by th[e] interpretour and taken prisoner with dyuers other.

Certeayne dayes before the Capitaynes death, they hadde knowleage of the Ilandes of *Molucca* whiche they chiefly fought. Departynge therefore from the Ilande of *Mathan*, they sayled farre and came to the cape of an other Iland named *Bohol*. In the mydde of this mayne sea (whiche they named *Archipelagus*) they consulted to burne the shyppes named *Conception*, bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to furnyshe the other two shyppes with th[e] artillerie therof. Thus directynge theyr course towarde Southewest, they came to an other Ilande named *Pauiloghon*, where they founde blacke men lyke vnto the *Sarafins*. Shortly after, they arriued at an other great Iland, whose kyng named *Raia Calauar*, intreated them very frendely in all thynges as dyd the kyng of *Messana*. This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of ryffe, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other thynges. It is named *Chippit*, and is. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde owr pole: And in longitude from the place from whense they first departed. 170. degrees: And about. 50. leaques from *Zubut*.

Departinge frome hense they came to an other Iland named *Caghaian* being. 40. leaques from *Chippit* as they sayled betwene the weste and Southe weste. This Ilande is very greate, and in maner vnhabited. The people are moores, and were banysshed owt of the Ilande of *Burnei* whiche sum caule *Porne*.

Frome this Ilande aboute. xxv. leaques betwene the west and northeweste, they founde a maruelous frutefull Ilande named *Pulaoan*, beinge towarde owr pole aboue the Equinoctiall. ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C.lxxix. [one hundred and seventy-nine] degrees and a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.

Frome this Ilande. x. leaques towarde the South weste, they sawe an other Ilande whiche seemed to them sumtymes to mounte as they sayled by the coastes therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there arose a boystious and darke tempeste which ceased as soone as the fiers of the three sayntes (wherof we haue spoken before) appeared vpon the cabells. Frome the beginnynge of this Ilande to the porte, are fyue leaques. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth. xxv. thousande houfes. The kynge interteyned owre men very frendlye, and sent them byfyde many other presentes, two elephantes trapped with filke to bring them to his pallaice that brought the presentes which the Capytaynes sent hym. He hath a magnyfycalle courte and a greate garde. Also a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named *Raia Siripada*. He is a kynge of greate poure, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of *Burnei* is aboue the Equinoctiall towarde owre pole fyue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departyng. C.lxxvi. [one hundred and seventy-six] degrees and two thirde partes.

Departinge frome *Burnei*, they came to an Ilande cauled *Cimbubon*, beinge. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall lyne Here they remayned. xl. days to calke theyr shyppes and furnyshe them with fresshe water and fuell whiche was to them great payne and trauayle because they were in maner all bare footed, theyr shooes and in maner theyr other apparell beinge worne by reason of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whose leaues as soone as they faule on the grounde, doo sturre and remoue frome place to place as though they were alyue. They are muche lyke the leaues of a mulbery tree: And haue on euery fyde as it were two short and blunt fiets. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde seene comie furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they suddely moue and starte away. *Antonie Pigafetta* kepte one of them in a platter for the space of. viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde about the platter. He supposeth that they liue only by ayer.

Departynge from henfe, they directed their courfe by the Weste quarter towarde the Southeaste, to fynde the Ilandes of Molucca, and fayled not farre from certeyne mountaynes where they founde the fea full of great weedes and herbes.

From henfe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zolo* and *Taghima*, in the which are founde perles of exceedyng biggenesse.

Folowyng their courfe toward the north East, they came to a great citie named *Mangdando*, lyinge aboute the Ilandes of *Buthuan* and *Calaghan*, where they tooke a canoa of certeyne of th[e] inhabitants: by whome being informed of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, they lefte their courfe towarde the north Easte, and folowed the South easte nere vnto a cape of the Iland of *Buthuan*, they were aduertised for certentie that on the bankes of a certeyne ryuer, there dwelte men ouergrowen with heare, and of high stature.

Folowyng still their courfe by the south easte, and passyng by many smaule Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of *Molucca* the fyxte daye of Nouember and the. xxvii. monethe after theyr departure owt of Spayne. Beinge therefore ioyfull and gyuyng thankes vnto god, they discharged all theyr ordynance. In the coaste of all these Ilandes, euen vnto the Ilandes of Molucca, foundyng with theyr plummet, they founde the deapthe of the fea to bee no lesse then a hundreth and two yardes, which is contrary to the saying of the Portugales who affyrme that no shyppe can passe that way without great daungioure by reason of the shalownes and rockes or shelues: and for the darkenesse which the clowdes cause in the heauen. All which thyngs they fayned to th[e] intent that none other shulde haue knoweledge of theyr vyagies.

The. viii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1521. before the ryfinge of the soonne, they entered into the porte of the Ilande of *Tidore*, being one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca, where they were honorably interteyned of the kynge who declared that he had longe before seene a fygne in heauen that certeyne shyppes shuld comme from a farre contrey to the Ilandes of Molucca: And that wheras for the better certificat therof he consydered the stations of the moone, he sawe therein the commyng of owre shyppes, and that we were the men whome he seemed to see in the same. Wherupon he profered hym selfe to enter into leaque of frendshyppe with the kynge of Spayne, and to accepte owre men as his brotherne and chyldren: wyllyng them to come alande as into theyr owne houses. Also that for theyr commyng, that Ilande shulde no more bee cauled *Tidore*, but Castile for the greate loue whiche he bore to theyr kynge whom he reputed as his lorde and master. This kynge is a Moore, and is named Raia Sultan Mauzor.

The Ilandes of Molucca are fye in number, and are thus named: *Tarenate*, *Tidore*, *Mutir*, *Macchian*, and *Bacchian*. Of these, *Tarenate* is the chiefest.

Directly ageynste the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande named *Gilolo*, inhabited of Moores and Gentyles. The Moores haue two kynges, of the which one hath fyxe hundreth chyldren, and the other fixe hundreth and fiftie. The Gentyles kepe not so many women as doo the Moores nor yet lyue in fuche superstitions. They praye to the fyrste thyng that they meete in the mornynge when they go furth of theyr houses, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kynge of the gentyles is very ryche in golde. In the fayde Ilande of *Gilolo*, are reedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holsome to bee drunke.

The. xii. daye of Nouember, the kynge of *Tidore* appoynted owre men a ware house in the citie where they might sell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this fort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one Bahar of cloues, whiche amounteth to foure Cantari and fyxe ponde weight: And one Cantar is a hundreth ponde weight. For. xv. yardes of cloth sumwhat woorse then the other, they receaued in Cambie, one Bahar. For. xxxv. drynkynge cuppes of glasse, they had one Bahar. For. xvii. Cathyls of quicke fyluer, one Bahar. They came dayly to the shyppes with many of theyr barkes full of goates, hennes, fygges of a spanne longe, also the frute cauled *Cocus*, with dyuers other kyndes of vyttayles in such quantitie that it was a marueylous thyng to beholde. They furnysshed also theyr shyppes with freshe water which is hotte as it issheweth owt of the sprynge, but is very coulde when it hath stoode a while in an other place. It spryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They sawe a cloude ryfe in maner dayly, which compaseth about the fayde mountaynes.

The kynge of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, sente the kynge of Spayne two deade byrdes of straunge forme. They were of the byggenes of turtle dooues, with lyttle heades and longe bylles: also longe and smaule legges and no wynges, but in the steade therof certeyne longe fethers of diuers colours, and tayles lyke turtle dooues. All the other fethers are of one coloure much lyke vnto tawny, except those of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. These Moores are of opinion that these byrdes comme from the heauenlye Paradye, and therefore caule them *Manuccodiata*, that is the byrdes of god.

When they were determyned to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied them with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande cauled *Mare* where they refreshed theyr shyppes with freshe water and fuell. The kynges sent Th[e]emperours maiestie many presentes: and embrafynge owre menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And owre men for theyr laste farewell, shotte

A sea full of weedes.

Perles.

Men ouergrowen with heare.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

The Portugales are reproued.

Tidore one of the Ilandes of Molucca.

A vision in the planettes

229

The fyue Ilandes of molucca.

Tarenate.

The Iland of *Gilolo*.

Moores and gentyles.

Golde.

Water in reedes.

Theyr maner of barteringe.

Water of a straunge qualitie

Byrdes of a straunge forme

They leaue one of
theyr shyppes
behynd them.

of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of theyr shyppes leaked and toke water very fore: wherby they were inforced to tary there three dayes. But feinge that they could fynde no remedie for the fame but in longe tyme, they determined to leaue it, gyuyng order that if afterwarde it coulde bee repayred, they shuld returne into Spayne as well as they coulde.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.
Hony of flyes.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloues, ginger, breade of the roote of Sagu, ryfe, goates, sheepe, hennes, fygges, almondes, sweete pomegranates and fowre, oranges, lemondess, and hony which is made of certeyne flyes lesse then antes: Also canes of fuger, oyle of Cocus, mellons, gourdes, and a marueilous coulde frute which they name Camulicai and dyuers other frutes. Furthermore whyte and redde poppingiayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paste fiftie yeares sence the moores fyrste inhabited anye of these Ilands, which were before inhabited only with gentyles.

Poppingiayes.

The Iland of
Tidore.

The Ilande of Tidore, is aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde owre pole, abowt. 27. minutes: And in longitude from the place from whense they departed. 171. degrees. And from the *Archipelagus* in the which is the Iland of *Zamal* which our men named the Iland of theues. ix. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of fouth south west, and north northeast. *Terenate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall line foure minutes vnder the pole Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line. *Macchian* is. xv. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and *Bacchian* one degree. These Ilandes are lyke foure sharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not sharpe. The byggest of all these, is *Bacchian*.

Terenate.
Mutir.
Macchian.

230

Bacchian.

Many Ilands

Departynge from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng their course towarde the south west, with onely. xlvi. men in theyr shyppe and. xiii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of Chacouan, Lagoma, Sico, Gioghi, Caphi, Sulacho, Lumatola, Tenetum, Buru, Ambon, Budia, Celaruri, Benaia, Ambalao, Bandan, Zorobua, Zolot, Noceumamor, Galian, and Mallua, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and smaule, of Moores, Gentyles, and Canibales. Owre men remayned xv. dayes in the Ilande of Mallua to repayre theyr shyppe in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the fieldes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is situate towarde the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of. 169. degrees and. 40. minutes.

The Iland of
Mallua.
Pepper.

Lyttle men with
longe eares.

The pilote which owre men brought owt of the Ilandes of Molucca, toulde them that not farre from thense, was an Iland named Arucetto in the which are men and women not past a cubite in height, hauynge eares of such byggenesse that they lye vpon one and couer them with the other. But owr men wolde not fayle thyther, bothe bycause the wynde and course of the sea was ageynste theym, and also for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

The Iland of
Timor.
Whyte sanders
and ginger.

The. xxv. day of Ianuary in the yeare. 1522. they departed from Mallua, and the day folowyng, arryued at a greate Iland named *Timor*, beinge fye leaques distante from Mallua betwene the fouth and south west. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte sanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Also fundry kyndes of beastes, and plentie of vyttayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giaua*, *Molucca*, and *Lozon*, resort to this Ilande for sanders. Th[e] inhabitants are gentyles. They say that when they go to cut the woodde of sanders, the deuyll appeareth to them in dyuers formes and asketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this vision, many of them are longe sicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the difeafe of faynt Iob (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) more then in any other place in the worlde.

The deuyll
appeareth.
Saynt Iob his
disease.

Cinamome
The Ilandes of
Giaua.
Malaccha.

Farre from this Ilande betwene the west and northwest they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe great plentie of Sinamome. In this tracte are founde manye Ilandes lying in order as it were one directly behynde an other, euen vnto the Ilande of the greater *Giaua*, named *Giaua maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malaccha*, beinge in East India. *Giaua* the lesse, is as bygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a leaque distante from *Giaua maior*. Here they were informed that aboute *Giaua maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *China*, in the which are trees of excedyng byggenesse, inhabited with foules of fuche greatenes that they cary great beastes in the ayer. The frutes of these trees are as bygge as cucummers.

The greate goulfe
of China.

The cape of
Malaccha.

The cape of *Malaccha* is one degree and a halfe aboute the Equinoctiall line towarde the pole Artike. On the East side of this cape, runneth a very longe coaste in the which are many regions and cities wherof sum are cauled by these names, *Cingaporla* which is the cape. Also *Pahan*, *Calantan*, *Patani*, *Braalin*, *Beneu*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the cite in the which dwelleth the kyng of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. Theyr cities are builded as owres are, and subiecte to the kyng of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Iamgoma* and *Campaa* where Reubarbe groweth, of the which are dyuers opinions, some supposynge it to bee a roote, and other a putrified tree, affirmyng that yf it were not putrified, it shulde not haue so great a fauour. They caule it *Calama*. Next vnto this, is found the great *China*, whose kyng is thought to bee the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kyng and these regions, they lerned by th[e] information of a Moore that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the sayde kyng hathe threescore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hathe a porte in the sea named *Canthan*: And two principal cities named *Nauchin* and *Connulaha* where he remayneth hym selfe, and hath euer foure of

The names of
many regions.

Reubarbe.

The greate kyng
of China.

his chiefe princes lying about his pallaice on euery fyde, towarde the Easte, Weste, Northe, and South giuinge dylygente attendaunce what is doone in euerye of theyr quarters. All the prynces of the greater India (cauled *India Maior*.) and of that wherof I haue spoken before, are obedient to this kynge. And in token that they are trewe subiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the middest of theyr cities, the beste cauled *Lins*, being fayrer then a lyon, And is the great kynges fignette, whiche all fuche as intende to go to *China*, beare with them fealed in waxe or on a piece of Iuerye for theyr fafe conducte, without the which they may not enter into the hauen.

When any of his kyngs rebell or are difobedient, he caufeth them to be flene, and falted and dried at the foone: Then to bee stuffed with chaffe, and fette vppe on fum hygh thyng in the myddest of the chiefe streete of the cite where al the people may see it. He neuer suffereth his owne perfon to bee openly feene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are defyrous to see hym, he commeth downe frome hys pallaice into a ryche paulyon accompanied with fyxe of hys principall concubynes appareyled with lyke vestures as is he hym selfe. All thys way he is not feene by reason of the paulyon. When he hath passed through the paulyon, he entereth into a serpent named *Nagha*, being the most marueylous and ryche woorke of the worlde, and placed in the greatest courte of the pallaice. When the kynge entereth into this with the women, to th[e] intent that he may not be knowen among them, he caufeth the fayd noble men only to looke in at a glasse which is in the breste of the serpente, where they see the kynge amonge the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioyneth in mariage with hys fyfster that the blud royall bee not myxt with any other. His pallaice is enuironed with feuen large walles, the one being farre dystante from the other. And hath in euery fuch circuite tenne thowfande men for the garryfon of hys pallaice, who haue theyr waytinge dayes appoynted them course by course with freshe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that ferue the kynge hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnyfycence. He that wolde see all the pallaice, shulde spend a hole day therin. Amonge other, there are foure principal haules where fumsymes the kynge gyueth audience to hys noble men. Of these, one is couered both aboue and beneth with metall, an other all ouer with fyluer, the thyrd with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious stones. These people of *China*, are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the croffe in fum estimation, but knowe not the cause whye. Beyond the coaste of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people as *Chenchii* where pearles and cynamon are founde. Also the people named *Lichii*, where reyneth the great kynge of Mien, hauyng vnder hym. xxii. kynges, and is subiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is also founde the great cite of CATHAY in the East, and dyuers other nations in the sayd firme land, of the which fum are brutyshe and bestiall which vse to kyll and eate theyr parentes when they are owld, thinking therby that they shall reuyue in them. All these people are gentyles.

The. xi. day of February in the yere. 1522. they departed from the Iland of *Timor* and were ingulfed by chance in the great sea cauled *Lantchidol*, and tooke theyr course betwene the weste and fouth weste, leauyng the northe coastes on theyr ryght hand, fearyng least if they shuld fayle toward the firm land, they myght bee feene of the portugales who are of great power in *Malaccha*: and therefore dyrected theyr cours without the Iland of *Sumatra* cauled in owld tyme *Taprobana*: Leauyng also on theyr ryght hand vpon the firm land, the prouinces and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calicut*, *Canonor*, *Goa*, *Cambaia*, the goulfe of the Ilande of *Ormus*, and all the coastes of the greater India. And more safely to passe the cape of *Buona Speranza* being aboue Affrike, they fayled about. xlii. degrees toward the pole Antartike, and remayned feuen weekes abowte that cape with many fetches compaffyng the wynd with theyr sayles contynually alofte, because they had a west and north weste wynd in the proos of theyr shyppe which wolde not suffer them to passe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole Antartik beneth the Equinoctiall line. xxxiiii. degrees and a halfe: and. 1600. leaques from the cape of *Malaccha*: And is the greateste and moste daungyerous cape that is founde at thys day in al the worlde.

When they had by these perels ouerpasse thys cape, certeyne of them aswell for lacke of vytayles as also by reason of fyckeness, were mynded to fayle to a hauen of the Portugales named *Mouzambique* aboue Affryke. But the other answered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to Spayne. They folowed theyr course therefore saylyng toward the Southwest two monethes continually without touchyng at any porte: In whiche tyme there dyed abowte. xxi. of theyr coompany, whom they cast into the sea. And fuerly if god of his infinite mercie had not preferued the residue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famen.

In fine, beinge inforced of necessitie, and halfe of theyr compagne deade, they fayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo verde* cauled *Insula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, faynte Iames Ilande, parteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as soone as they arryued, they sent certeyne alande in the shippe boate for vytayles, declaryng to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what necessitie they were dryuen to and what miseries and trauayles they had susteyned, informyng them further of theyr marueylous viage and fuche thynges as they

The greater India

231

The beast cauled linx.

The punishement of rebelles.

The kynge is not seene but at a glasse.

A thyng of strange workmanshype.

The kynge maryeth his systen His pallaice. A marueilous garde.

Women serue the kynge.

Foure maruelous haules

The people of China. The Crosse.

The greate kyng of mien CATHAY.

The sea of Lantchidol.

Malaccha.

The Iland of Sumetra.

Pegu.

Bengala.

Calicut.

Canonor.

Goa.

Cambaia.

Ormus.

East India.

Cap[s] de Buona Speranza.

The port of Mouzambique.

232

Famen.

Capo Verde.

S. Iames Ilande.

The ingrati[t]ude
of the Portugales.

The port of saynt
Lucar nere vnto
Siuile.

What became of
the other shyppe.

Dariena

The cape of
Cattigara.
Ptolome.

The vyage hardly
performed.

They bye slaues
for lacke of helpe

Mariners woorthy
immortal fame.

Argonauti.

The vyage of Iason
to wyn the golden
fleese.

The shyppe more
woorthy fame then
owld Argo of
Grecia.

The vyage

hadde feene in both the East and West India, with such other gentel woordes wherby they obteyned certeyne meafures of rife. But when afterwarde. xiii. of theym returned for more ryse, they were deteyned: Where-uppon the reste whiche remayned in the shippe, fearynge the lyke chaunce, departed with full fayles, and the. vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the haue of *San Lucar* nere vnto Siuile, where dischargynge all theyr ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediatly to the greate churche in theyr shertes and barefooted with a torche before them to gyue thankes to almyghtie god who had brought them safe to theyr owne countrey, and restored them to theyr wyues and chyl dren.

As touchynge th[e]nde of this viage, Transiluanus wryteth sumwhat more largely as foloweth.

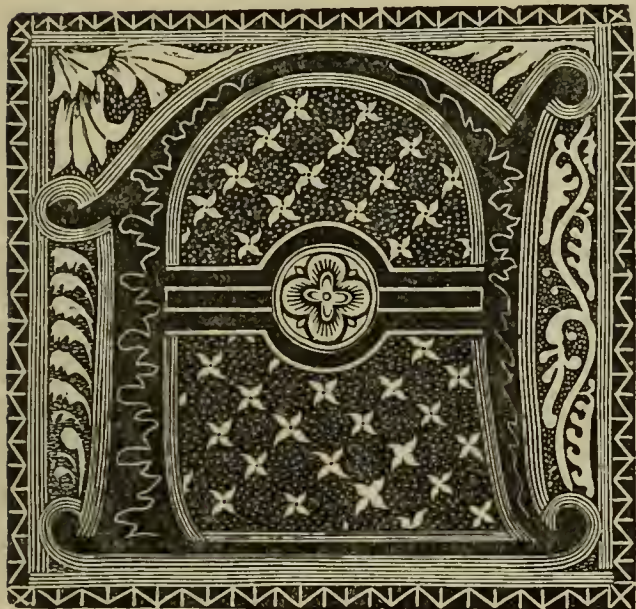
The other shyppe which they lefte behynde them to bee repayred, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforefayde and by the great sea to the coastes of the firme of the west India, and arryued at a region of the same being ageynst *Dariena*, where the South sea of *Sur* is separte but by a lyttle space of lande from the Weste Ocean in the which are the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other shyppe which returned into Spayne by compasing about the whole bowle of the worlde by the coastes of East India and Affrike, departynge from the Iland of *Tidore*, and faylynge euer on this syde the Equinoctiall, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboue Asia, and (by the description of Ptolome) rechynge many degrees beyonde the Equinoctial. But hauynge fayled many dayes by the mayne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thense to the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, where their shyppe beinge soore broofed by reason of the longe viage, leaked and tooke water, in suche forte that the mariners beinge nowe but fewe in number, and those also weake and feeble by reafon of longe sicknesse and hunger, were not able both to drye the poompe continually and otherwyse gouerne the shippe: and were therfore of necessitie inforced to goo alande at the Ilande of faynte Iames to bye theym certeyne slaues to helpe them. But beinge destitute of mony, according to the custome of the mariners, they profered them cloues for theyr slaues. The which thynge when it came to the eares of the Portugale that was Capitayne of that Ilande, he cast. xiii. of them in prifon. Wherby the residue that remayned in the shippe (beinge nowe but. xviii. in number) were put in such feare that they departed immediatly without rescuing theyr felowes, and fayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coastes of Affrike, and came in fine to Spayne the. vi. day of September in the yeare. 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto Siuile the. xvi. moneth after they departed from the Ilande of *Tidore*. Mariners doubtlesse more woorthy to bee celebrate with eternal memorie then they whiche in owld tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that fayled with Iafon to win the golden fleese in the region of *Cholchis* and the riuier of *Phafis* in the greate sea of *Pontus*. And the shyppe it selfe, more woorthye to bee placed amonge the starres then that owld Argo which departynge owt of Grecia, fayled to th[e]nde of that great sea. For this owre marueylous shyppe, takynge her vyage from the straighes of Gibilterra and faylynge by the greate Ocean towarde the South and pole Antartike, and turnynge from thense to the Weste, folowed that course so farre that passynge vnder the great circumference of the worlde, shee came into the Easte, and frome thense ageyne into the Weste, not by returnynge backwarde, but styll faylynge forwarde, so compafynge about the baule of the world vnder the hole circumference of heauen vntyll shee were myraculoufly restored to her natieue region of Spayne and house of Siuile.



**OF THE PRICES OF PRECIOUS STONES AND SPICES,
WITH THEYR WEIGHTES AND MEASVRES**

233

as they are accustomed to bee foulded bothe of the
Moores and the gentyles: And of the
places where they growe.



Orasmuch as in dyuers places of this historie, mention is made of precious stones, I haue thought good to declare sumwhat aswell of their prices as of the places of their generation, that wee may not vtterly bee ignorant of the thinges which we so gratefully esteeme and bye so deare.

Of the Rubie.



The Rubies growe in India: and are founde for the most parte in a ryuer named Pegu. These are of the beste kind and fineste, whiche they of the lande of Malabor caule Nunpucllo, and are well foulded if they bee fayre and cleane without spottes. The Indians to knowe their finenesse, put them

vppon theyr toonges, coumptynge that to bee best that is couldest and most harde. And to see theyr finenesse, they take them vp with a piece of waxe by the sharpest poynt: and lookynge ageynst the lyght, espie in them euery smaule spot or flake. They are also founde in certeyne diepe fosses or pittes which are made in moun-
taynes that are beyonde the said ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrey of Pegu. Yet can they not square and polyshe them. But for this purpose fende them to dyuers other contreys, and especially to Paleacate, Narfinga, Calicut, and the region of Malabar, where are many cunnynge Lapidaries.

And to gyue yow intelligence of the value of these stones, ye shall vnderstande that this woorde Fanan, signifieth a weight sumwhat more then two of owre carattes: And. xi. Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And. vi. Mitigales and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is also a kynde of money which is in value, one ryale of fyluer. And therefore after this accompte I say that

One caratte is liiii
graines

Eight fine rubies of the weyght of one Fanan (which are in all, abowt two carattes) are in value.	Fanan *x.	One that weyth two fanans and thre quarters	Fanan cccl.
Foure Rubies that wey one fanan, are worth	Fanan xx.	Of three fanans	Fanan cccc.
Two that wey one fanan	Fanan xl.	Of three and a quarter	Fanan D.
One that weyth three quarters of one fanan	Fanan xxx.	Of three and a halfe	Fanan D l.
One that weyth one fanan	Fanan l.	Of three and three quarters	Fanan D c.
One that weyth one fanan and a quarter.	Fanan lxv.	Of three and three quarters and a halfe	Fanan D cxxx.
One that weyth one fanan and a halfe	Fanan C.	Of foure fanans	Fanan D clx.
One that weyth one fanan and three quarters	Fanan C l.	Of foure and a quarter	Fanan D cc.
One that weyth two fanans.	Fanan CC.	Of foure and a halfe	Fanan D cccc.
One that weyth two fanans and a quarter	Fanan CC l.	Of fyue fanans	Fanan M.
One that weyth two fanans and a halfe	Fanan. ccc.	Of fyue and a halfe	Fanan M cc.
		Of fyxe fanans, which are about. xii. carattes. Fanan M D. which make. 150. crownes of golde.	

{*Which is one
crown of golde

And these are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But suche as are not perfecte, and haue any spottes in them, or are not of good coloure, are of lesse prise accordynge to the arbitrimt and estimation of the byer.

¶ *Of the Rubies which growe in the Ilande of Zeilam.*



IN the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the seconde India, are founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Manecas*, the greatest parte wherof do not arriue to the perfection of the other aforesayde in coloure, bycause they are redde as though they were waffhed, and of a fleshye colour. Yet are they very coulde and harde. The perfecteste of theym are greatly esteemed amonge the people of the Ilande, and reserued only for the kynge hym selfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When his iewelers fynde any bygge piece of this rocke of the beste kynde, they put it in fyer for the space of certeyne houres. Which if it coomme owt of the fyer vncorrupte, it becommeth of the coloure of a burnyng cole, and was therefore cauled of the Greekes, Anthrax, which signifieth a burnyng cole. The same that the Greekes caule Anthrax, the Latines caule *Carbunculus*. These they greatly esteeme. When the kyng of Narsinga can get any of theym, he causeth a fine hole to bee boored in the vndermost part of them to the myddest: And suffereth none of them to passe owt of his realme: especially if they haue byn tryed by the sayde profe. These are of greater value then the other of Pegu, if they bee in theyr naturall perfection and cleanenesse.

234

Of these, one that weith a carratte (whiche is halfe a fanan) is woorthe in Calecut.	Fanan	*xxx.	Of fixe carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dlx.
One of two carattes	Fanan	lxv.	Of feuen carattes	Fanan	Dcxxx.
Of three carattes.	Fanan	cl.	Of feuen carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dclx.
Of three carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cc.	One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne wel proued in the fier, is woorthe	Fanan	Dccc.
Of foure carattes	Fanan	ccc.	Of. viiii. carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Dcccc.
Of foure carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cccl.	One such of tenne carattes	Fanan	Mccc.
Of fyue carattes	Fanan	cccc.	One of. x. carattes and a halfe	Fanan	Mdc.
Of fyue carattes and a halfe	Fanan	cccl.	Of. xii. carattes	Fanan	MM.
Of fyxe carattes	Fanan	Dxxx.	Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan	MMM.
			Of. xvi. carattes	Fanan	6000.

*Which are iii. }
crow[n]e:of golde }

¶ *Of the kynde of Rubies cauled Spinelle.*



Here is also founde an other kynde of Rubies which wee caule Spinelle and the Indians, Caropus. They growe in the selfe same countrey of Pegu where as are the fine Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper crust or floure of the earth. These are not so fine nor of so good colour as are the trewe Rubies: But haue sumwhat the colour of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. Yet of these fuche as are perfecte in theyr coloure, are of value halfe lesse then trewe Rubies.

¶ *Of the Rubies cauled Balassi.*



Balassi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so harde. Theyr colour is sumwhat lyke a rose, and sum are in maner whyte. They growe in Balassia, whiche is a region within the firme lande aboute Pegu and Bengala: And are browght from thense by marchauntes of the Moores to Calecut where they are wrought and polysshed: And are sould of the same price that are Spinelle.

¶ *Of the Diamundes of the owlde myne.*



These Diamundes are founde in the fyrste India in a kyngdome of the Moores named Decan, from whense they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other Diamundes whiche are not so good, but sumewhat whyte, and are cauled Diamundes of the newe myne which is in the kyngedome of Narsinga. They of the owlde myne, are not polysshed in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyse in India, other false Diamundes of Rubies, Topases, and whyte Saphires, whiche appere to bee fine: and are also founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. These stones differ in none other, sauynge that they haue loste theyr

¶ Of Turqueffes.

236



Turqueffes are founde in Exer a place of Siech Ismael. Theyr mine is a drye earth that is founde vpon a black stone, which the Moores take of in smaule pieces, and carye them to the Iland of Ormus, from whence they are brought to dyuers partes of the worlde by sea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Perose*. They are soft stones, of smaule weight and not much coulde. And to knowe that they are good and trewe, in the day they shall appere of the verye colour of the Turqueffe: and in the nyght by the lyght, they shall appere greene. They that are not so perfect, do not so change their colour to the sight. If these stones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneath in the bottome, a blacke stone, vpon the which they growe. And if any lyttle vayne ryse vpon the sayde stone, it shalbe the better. And to knowe more certeynely that they are trewe Turqueffes, they put on the toppes of them a lyttle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oyntment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of value as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte, is worth in		Of. viii. carattes	Fanan	CC.
Malabar.	Fanan. xv.	Of x. carattes	Fanan	CCC.
One of two carattes	Fanan xl.	Of. xii. carattes	Fanan	CCCCI.
Of foure carattes	Fanan xc.	Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan	DI.
Of. vi. carattes	Fanan Cl.			

Of greater then these they make none accompte bycause they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. These of the byggest forte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Guzerath.

¶ Of Iacintes.



Iacintes growe in the Ilande of Zeilam. They are tender stones and yelowe. They are best that are of diepeste colour. The greatest part of these, haue in them certeine pimples or burbuls, whiche diminishe theyr fayrenesse. And they that are in theyr perfection cleane from this deformitie, are neuerthelesse of smaule value. For in Calicut where they are polyssied, they that wey one fanan are woorth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of xviii. fanans, are not worth. xvi. fanans.

There are also founde other stones lyke vnto cattes eyes, as Chrisolites, and Amethistes, whiche they doo not muche esteeme bycause they are of smaule value, as also the stones cauled *Giagonze*.

¶ Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.



Smaragdes growe in the countrey of Babilon, where the Indians caule the sea *Dieguan*. They grow also in other partes of India. They are stones of fayre greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of these stones, many are conterfecte. But looking on them curiously towarde the lyght, the conterfectes shewe certeyne burbuls, as dooth glasse. But in the trewe, there is no such seene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour shynynge lyke the beames of the foonne. And beinge rubbed vpon the touche stone, they leaue the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of this forte is the best and most trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as muche as a diamunde and sumwhat more: And this not by weyght, but by greatenesse, bycause the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. Ther is lykewyse founde an other kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are greene stones, but not so much esteemed. Neuerthelesse, the Indians referue these to set them foorth with other precious stones. They leaue not any greene coloure vpon the touche.

¶ OF DYVERS KYNDES OF SPICES, WHERE THEY GROW,
WHAT THEY ARE WOORTH IN CALICUT, AND WHITHER
THEY ARE CARIED FROM THENSE.

¶ Of Pepper.



Yrste in all the kyngedome of Malabor and Calicut pepper groweth: and is fould in Calicut by euery. CC. [two hundred] Bahars, fine, for. CCxxx. [two hundred and thirty] fanans, euery fanan (as I haue sayde) beinge in value, one ryall of plate of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of fyluer in Venice. Bahar, weith foure cantares of the owld weight of Portugale, by the whiche they sell all spices in Lisbona. Cantar, is in Venece. Cxii. [one hundred and twelue] pounce weyght of the grose pounce (beinge. xviii. vneces) and of the subtile pounce. C. lxxviii. [one hundred and feuentie-eight] So that the sayde. 712. poundes of Venece subtile, wyl cost abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two *Marchetti* (whiche make one peny) the pounce. They pay also to the kyng of Calicut for custome. xii. fanans euery Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accustomed to brynge them to Cambaia, Persia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thense to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of. 6562. Maruedies the Bahar, which are. 193. fanans. Maruedies are Spanyshe coynes wherof. vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly bycause there arryueh no more so greate diuersitie of marchantes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the sayde kyng of Portugale made with those kynges, and the Moores, and marchauntes of the countrey of Malabar.

237

Much pepper groweth lykewyse in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is sayrer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not so good and stronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and summe parte to Mecha, priuilie and by stelh, vnwares to the Portugales which wolde not otherwyse suffer them to passe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iiii. C. [four hundred] vnto. vii. C. [seuen hundred] marauedis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weight. And frome the newe to the owlde weight in Portugale, the difference is, two vneces in the pounce weight. For the owlde pounce consisteth of. xiiii. vneces, and the newe pounce of. xvi. vneces.

¶ Of Cloues.



Cloues growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whense they are brought to Malacca, and then to Calicut and the countrey of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut euery bahar (which is. 712. poundes of the subtile pound of Venece) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowte fyftie frenche crownes,) which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti the pounce weight. And beinge cleane from stalkes and huskes are in value 700 fanans. To cary theym frome thense into other regions, they paye for pasporte. xviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malacca from. x. to. xiiii. ducades accordyng to the rate and custome of the marchauntes.

¶ Of Cinamome.



Cinamome of the best sort, groweth in the Ilande of Zeilam: and in the countrey of Malabar, growethe the woorst. That of the beste kynde, is of smaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choise and freshe), it is woorth CCC. [three hundred] fanans the bahar, whiche are abowte fise marchetti the pounce.

¶ *Of Ginger cauled Beledi.*



Inger Beledi, groweth on euery fyde abowte Calicut from fyxe to nine myles : And is woorth the bahar. xl. fanans, and sumtymes fiftie, whiche is lesse then one marchetto the pounce.

They brynge it from the mountaynes and owt of the contrey to the citie, where they sell it by retayle to the Indian marchauntes, who gather it together in greate quantitie and kepe it to such tyme as the Moores shypes arryue there, to whom they sell it, by the price of. xc. [ninety] fanans, to Cx. [one hundred and ten] whiche is lesse then two marchetti the pound, bycause the weight is greater.

¶ *Of Ginger Mechino.*



Inger Mechino groweth, begynnynge from the mountayne of Deli, vnto Canonor. It is smaule, and not so whyte nor so good as the other. It is woorth the bahar in Cananor, abowt. lx. fanans whiche is abowte one marchetto the pounce. They pay for the bahar fyxe fanans in money for the custome. It is fould vnclensed or vnpurged.

¶ *Of greene Ginger in conferues.*



N Bengala is founde greate plentie of Ginger Beledi, of the whiche they make muche Ginger in conferues with fuger, and carie it in stone pots from Martabani to bee fould in the countrey of Malabar. And is woorth the farazuola (which is. xxii. poundes and fyxe vneces) after the rate of. xiiii. xv. or. xvi. fanans.

That that is freshe and made in conferues, is woorth in Calicut. xxv. fanans the farazuola, bycause fuger is dere there. Greene ginger to put in conferues, is woorth in Calicut three quarters of one fanan the farazuola, which is abowte twoo poundes for one marchetto.

¶ *Of the Apothecaries drugges: And of what price they are in Calicut and Malabar.*



Acca of Martabani, if it bee of the beste, is woorth the farazuola, which is. xxii. pounce weyght and fyxe vneces of Portugale after. xvi. vneces the pounce (whiche is abowte. xl. pounce weyght of the subtyl pounce of Venece) And is in value. xviii. fanans : whiche are. xviii. marcells of filuer. For one fanan, is in value abowte one marcell of fyluer.

Lacca of the contrey, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Borace that is good and in great pieces is woorth the farazuola.	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl. and l.
Camphire that is grosse in cakes, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	lxx. to. lxxx
Camphire to annoynt Idoles,	*	* * *
Camphire for theyr chyldren to eate, is woorth the mytial.	Fanan	iii.
Aguila is woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	ccc. to. cccc.
Lignum aloe, blacke, heauy, and fine, is woorth	Fanan.	M.
Muske of the best is woorth the vnce	Fanan	xxxvi.
Beniamin of the beste, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	lxv.
Tamarindi being newe, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan.	iiii.
Calamus aromaticus, the farazuola	Fanan	xii.
Endego to dye filke, trewe and good, the farazuola	Fanan.	xxx
Mirre, the farazuola.	Fanan	xviii. to. xx.
Frankenfence good and in graynes, is woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xv.
Frankenfence in paste of the basest forte, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	iii.
Ambracan or amber greefe that is good, is woorth the metical	Fanan	ii. to. iii.

Mirabolanes in conferue of fuger, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xvi. to. xxv
Cassia, freshe and good, the farazuola.	Fanan	one and a halfe
Redde Sanders, the farazuola	Fanan.	v. to. vi.
Whyte Sanders and citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of <i>Timor</i> , the farazuola	Fanan.	xl. to. lx
Spikenarde, freshe and good, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl.
Nutte megges, whiche coome frome the Ilande of Bandan where the bahar is woorth from. viii. to. x. fanans, (which importe. vi. poundes weight to the marchetto) are woorth in Calicut, the faraz[uola].	Fanan	x. to. xii.
Mace which is brought from the Ilande of Bandan where the Bahar is woorth fiftie fanans (which import abowt one marchetto the ponde) are woorth in Calicut the farazuola.	Fanan	xxv. to. xxx.
Turbithes, are woorth the farazuola	Fanan	xiii.
Woorme feede of the best kynde, cauled <i>Semenzina</i> , is woorth the farazuola.	Fanan	xv.
Zerumba, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.
Zedoaria, the farazuola	Fanan	i.
Gumme Serapine, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.
Aloe cicotrine, the farazuola	Fanan	xviii
Cardamome in graynes, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.
Reubarbe groweth abundantly in the coundrey of Malabar: And that which commeth from China by Malacha, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xl. to. l.
Mirabolani emblici, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.
Mirabolani belirici, the farazuola	Fanan	one and a halfe.
Mirabolani citrini and chebuli, which are al of one fort.	Fa[nan]	ii.
Mirabolani Indi, which are of the fame citrine trees	Fa[nan]	iii.
Tutia, the farazuola	Fanan	xxx.
Cububes which growe in the Ilande of Iaua or Giaua, are there of fmaule price, and fould by meafure without weight.		
Opium which is brought from the citie of Aden where it is made, is woorth in Calicut the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	cclxxx. to. cccxx
Opium of an other fort which is made in Cambaia is woorth the farazuola,	Fanan	cc. to. ccl.

Seedes that kylly lyse.

¶ *Of the weyghtes of Portugale and India: And howe they agree.*



The pound of the owld weight, conteyneth. xiiii. vneces. The pound of the newe weight conteyneth. xvi. vneces. viii. cantares of the owld weyght, make. vii. of the newe. And euery newe cantare, is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes after. xvi. vneces to the ponde

Euery owld cantare, conteyneth three quarters and a halfe of the newe cantar: And is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] poundes, after. xiiii. vneces the ponde.


One farazuola, is. xxii. poundes of. xiiii. vneces, and vi. vneces more, with two fifte partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. iiii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale. All the Spices and drugges, and all fuche other thinges as coome from India, are fould in Portugale by the owld weight and all the reste by the newe weyght.


¶ Hereby may we well confider that as we owght to reioyse and gyue god thankes for the abundaunce of al these thynges which he caufeth the earth so plentifully to brynge foorth to owre vse, io may we lament th[e] abuse of men whose couetoufnesse caufeth great dearth and scarseness in the myddest of abundance: herein no lesse offendyng the lawe of nature then doo such as by wychcrafte intermingle poyson with thynges created for the health of man, or by inchauntment corrupt the feedes in the ground: ye rather as the unnatural mother who destroyeth the chylde whom she hath longe nuryshed.

[TWO NOTES ADDED BY EDEN, APPARENTLY TO FILL UP THE LEAF.]

 *Of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera.*

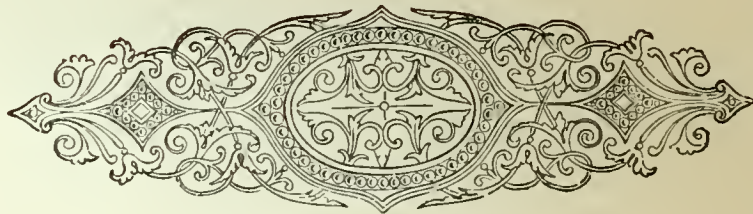


Adamustus wryteth, that before the Portugales came to this Ilande, it was ouergrown with trees and vnhabited. Yet were there many beastes, and great plentie of dooues which were vtterly without feare of men bycause they had neuer seene any men before, nor yet were accustomed to bee put in feare. In so much that they stode styl whyle snares were put abowte theyr neckes with longe rods and poles. The which thyng he sayth he hath also seene in other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande, and great abundance of fleshe, bycause the hole Ilande is in maner one gardeyne.

 *Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line*



He chiefeft occupacion and liuyng of th[e]inhabitautes of this Ilande, is the makynge of fuger, which they sell yearely to the shyppes that coomme for it owt of Spayne and Portugale laden with buttes of meale and floure, also wyne, oyle, cheefe, lether, swoordes, cuppes of glasse, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled Porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dysshes of the woorke of Maiolica. And if it were not that such vyttayles and prouisions were brought them owt of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchautes which dwell in that Ilande (perteynyng to the dominion of the kinge of Portugale) shulde not bee able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eate such meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therefore the Portugales whiche inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke slaues of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they fet to tyll and laboure the grounde and make fuger. Amonge these whyte inhabitautes, there are many ryche men which haue. 150. or. 200. and sum. 300. blacke slaues of men and women to tyll the grounde and doo other laborious woorkes. This Ilande was discouered foure score yeares sence by the nauigations of the Portugales and was vnknown to the owlde wryters. It lyeth in the greete goulfe of Affrike in the. 30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, and is in maner rounde. It is of largeness from side to syde. lx. Italian myles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, passeth by the two poles, Artike and Antartyke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyght without any sensible difference, whether the son bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Artike, is there inuisible: But the wardens are seene sumwhat to moue about: And the starres cauled the Crosse, are seene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lyinge betwene Portugale and the same, a certeyne pylotte of Portugale hath wrytten a goodly vyage to Conte Rimondo.



THE DEBATE AND STRYFE
BETWENE THE SPANYARDES AND PORTUGALES,

for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices: and

also for the Ilands of Molucca, which sum caule

Malucas. Wrytten in the Spanyshe toonge by

FRANCISCO LOPEZ DE GOMARA.



He[m]perours maiestie was verye gladde that the Malucas and Ilands of the spicery were discovered: and that he myght passe vnto them through his owne countreys withowt any preiudice or hurte to the Portugales: And bycause also that Almanzor, Luztu, and Corala which were the lordes of the spicerie, shewed them selues to bee his frendes and became tributaries to hym. He also gaue certeyne gyftes and rewardes to Iohn Sebastian for his great paynes and good seruice, forasmuch as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes of the Malucas and other Ilandes rycher and greater then they, were found to bee in his part of those countreys which perteyned vnto hym accordyng to the popes bull. And hereby it came to passe that there was great contention and strife betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowte the spicerie and the diuision of the Indies by reason of the returne of Iohn Sebastian and th[e]information whiche he gaue therof. Who also affirmed that the Portugales had neuer any enteraunce before that tyme

into those Ilandes. Here vppon, the counsayle for the Indies, aduertised Th[e]emperoure to maynteine his fletee for those partes, and to take the trade of spices into his owne hand, forasmuch as it was his owne of dewtie, aswell for that those Ilandes fell on his parte, as also that he had nowe founde passage and waye through his west Indies into those regions. And finally to confyder that he shulde thereby obteyne and gette to him selfe greate reuenues besyde th[e]inrychyng of his subiectes and realmes, and that with smaule coaste and charge. Th[e]emperoure beinge thus aduertised of the truth, tooke it for good counsayle, and commaunded all thynges hereunto apperteynyng to bee furnysshed accordyngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge Iohn of Portugale had knowlege what th[e]emperour determyned to doo, and the speedy hast his counsayle made for the performance herof, and of the comynge home of Iohn Sebastian of Cane, with th[e]information he made, what of stoutnesse of mynde and what for greefe, was puffed vp with anger as were also the reste of the Portugales, stormyng as though they wolde haue plucked downe the skye with their handes, not a lyttle fearyng leaste they shulde lose the trade of spices, if the Spanyardes shulde once put in theyr foote. Whervppon the kynge immediatly made supplication to Th[e]emperoure, not to fet forwarde any shyppes vntyll it were determyned to whether of theym those Ilandes shulde belonge: And that he wolde not so muche endamage hym as to cause him to lise the trade of spices which was so commodious and profitable to hym. And finally to auoyde th[e]occasion of murther and bludshed whiche were lyke to ensue thereof, yf the Spanyardes and Portugales shyppes shulde meete togyther. Th[e]emperoure althowghe he knewe that all this was but to make delays and prolongyng of tyme, yet was he gladde to haue it tryed by iustice for the better iustification of his cause and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt lerned men, Cosmographers and Pylots which shulde determine the controuersie betwene them: promysyng on bothe parties to abyde and stande to the sentence and determination made by those persons appoynted and sworne to iudge indifferently.

240

Iohn Sebastian.

The cause of
contencion.The trade of spice
perteyneth to
Th[e]emperoure.Iohn kynge of
Portugale.The trade of
Spices.The controuersie
determined by
Cosmographers
and Pylots.

¶ *The reparticion and diuision of the Indies and newe worlde betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales.*



This matter concernyng the trade of spices and the newe worlde of the Indies, by reason of the greate ryches therof was of greate importaunce and very difficultie to bee limited and drawn foorth by lines. By reason wherof, it was necessarie and conuenient to seeke wyse and woorshypful men expert in navigations, in Cosmographie, and the mathematicall sciences. Th[e]mp[er]our for his fyde, chose and named for iudges of the possession, the licentiate Acuna, one of the kynges confayle. Also the licentiate Barrientos of the counsayle of the orders: The licentiate Pétro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chauncerie in Valladolid. For iudges of the propertie, he chose Don Fernando Colono the foonne of Christopher Colonus: Also doctor Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryre Thomas Duran, Simon of Alcazaua, and Iohn Sebastian of Cano. His aduocate and attorney, he made the licentiate Iohn Rodriguez of Pifa: and for his fyfcal doctor Ribera, and his secretarie, Barthalome Ruiz of Castaneda. He also apoynted that Sebastian Cabote, Steuen Gomes, Nunnio Garcia, Diego Rinero, being al expert pilots and cunning in making cardes for the sea, shuld be present, and brynge foorth theyr globes and mappes with other instrumentes necessarie to declare the situation of the Ilandes of the Malucas about the which was al the contention and stryfe. But order was taken that they shulde shewe theyr myndes on neyther fyde, nor enter into the company of the other but when they were cauled. Al these and diuers other, wente togyther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they brougth with them two fiscals and two aduocates. The principall of theym, was the licentiate Antonie de Assuedo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra the clarke of the weightes and receptes, who had before byn gouernour in India. Also Peralonso of Melo, clerke: Simon of Taura, with dyuers other whose names I knowe not. Before they mette togyther, the one parte remaynyng at Badaioz and the other in Elbes, there was much a doo amonge them beefore they coulde agree vppon the place where they shulde mete and who shuld speke fyrste. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe suche circumstances. At the last, they concluded to meete togyther at Caya a lyttle ryuer which diuideth Castile from Portugale, standyng in the mydde way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And when they were assembled togyther one day at Badaioz and an other daye at Elbes and saluted the one the other, bothe parties were fworne that they shulde proceade and speake accordyng to truth, iustice, and equitie. The Portugales refused Simon de Alcazaua becaufe he was a Portugale: and fryer Thomas Duran bycaufe he had fumetyme byn preacher to theyr kyng: So that Simon was by consent put owte of the company, in whose roome was placed master Antonie of Alcaraz. Yet fell they not to reafonyng the matter vntyll the fryer was put owt. They were manye dayes in beholdyng globes, mappes, and cardes of the sea, and hearyng what myght bee sayde, both fydes alleagyng for the right which they pretended. But the Portugales standyng in vayne contention, sayde very angerly the Ilandes of Maluca whereuppon theyr meetyng and refonyng was at that presente, fell of theyr parte and was of theyr conquest. And that they both had byn there, and had them in theyr possession before Iohn Sebastian had euer seene them. Lykewyse that the line shulde bee drawn from the Ilande of Bonauista, or the Iland cauled de la Sal, which are the most Easterly Ilandes from Cabouerde, and not from the Ilande of Santanton or faynt Antonie, which lyeth towarde the West, and are. lxxxx. leaques the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend: and the other of the Malucas, is vntrewe. But they that haue a nawghtie matter must fet it foorth with woordes and brabelyng. Here they founde howe greatly they were deceaued in that they demaunded that the line shulde bee drawn three hundreth. lxx. leaques more to the West from the Ilandes of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundreth accordyng to th[e] assignement of the popes bul. The Spanyardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonstration, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Gilolo, Zubut, and Tidore, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But aswell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, shuld belonge to the Castilians: and that those countreys fell on theyr fyde and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also that Magallanes and Iohn Sebastian were the fyrste Christian men that founde them and obteyned them for Th[e]mperour, as the letters and presentes of Almanzor doo testifie. And although the Portugales had byn there fyrste, yet wente they thither after the donation of the pope: neyther got they any ryght or iuste tittle thereby. For althowgh they shulde drawe the line by Buena Vista, what inconuenience shulde folowe thereof, sith aswell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the Malucas must pertyne to the Castilians: yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of Cabo verde shulde also pertyne to the Castilians, forsomuch as drawyng the line by Buena Vista, the Ilandes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the Emperours fyde. They continued in these controuerfies for the space of two moonethes without anye resolution or ende

The arbytrers on the Emperours syde.

241

Sebastian Cabote.

Instruments of Cosmographie. The Ilandes of Maluca.

The arbiters on the Portugales syde.

The place where they mette.

Th[e] order of theyr proces.

The Portugales. Contention for drawyng the line of the diuision.

Howe the Portugales were deceaued.

The Spanyardes allegations. Samatra. Malacha. China. Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of Cabo Verde.

242

made. For the Portugales prolonged and put of the matter, flying from the sentence with cauillations and could reasons to th[e]nde that they myght diffolue that assemble without any conclusion or determination: for so it floode them vppon. The Castilians which were the Iudges of the propertie, drewe a line in the great globe three hundreth and. lxx. [seuenty] leaques from faynt Antonies Ilande, lyinge by Weste Cabo Verde accordynge to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vppon betwene the Catholike princes and the kynge of Portugale. These iudges gaue sentence vppon this matter, caulynge the contrary parte before them vpon the bridge of Caya in the yere. 1524. The Portugales coude neyther disturbe or deferre the sentence, nor yet wolde they alowe it to bee iust and accordynge to ryght: Sayinge that there was not sufficient processe made that they shulde passe to the gyuyng of sentence. And so departed threatenynge to slei the Castilians as many as they shulde fynde in the Ilandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that heyr contreyemen the Portugales had alrede taken the shyppe cauled the Trinitie and had also taken the Castilians in Tidore. Then also departed owre men, takynge theyr iorney to the courte gyuyng vp to Th[e]mperour all theyr wrytynges and declaration what they had doone. And accordynge to this declaration must bee signed and marked all globes and mappes which good Cosmographers and masters doo make. The line also of the reparticion and last diuision of the newe world of the Indies, ought to passe (lyttle more or lesse) by the poyntes of Humos and Buen Abrigo, as I haue fayde in an other place. And thus shall it appeare evidently that the Ilandes of Spices, and also the greate Ilande of Zamotra, do perteyne to Castile. But the lande of Brasile perteyneth to the kynge of Portugale where the cape of faynt Augustine is, beinge. viii. degrees beneth the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of Humos to the poynte of Buen Abrigo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundreth leaques. Beinge also sum way two hundreth leaques East and West.

And hereafter these ferious matters, wee wyll rehearse one mery thyng, which was this. It so chanced that as Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra, and other of those Portugales of this assemble, walked by the ryuer fyde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who floode kepyng his mothers clothes which she had washed, demaunded of theym whether they were those men that parted the world with Th[e]mperour. And as they answered, yea: he tooke vp his shert and shewed them his bare arse, sayinge: Coomme and drawe yowre line here throughe the myddest. Which sayinge was afterwarde in euery mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badaioz: yea euen amonge the commissioners them selues, of whom sum were angry, and summe maruayled at the sayinge of the chylde.

¶ *The cause and autoritie wherby they diuided the Indies.*



He Castilians and Portugales had longe debated and reasoned abowt the golde myne of Guinea which was found in the yere of owre lorde 1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonso Kynge of Portugale the firste of that name. This was a matter of greate importaunce. For the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue golde by hole handefuls whyche was at that tyme when the fayde Kynge of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the kingedome of Castile in the right of his wyfe Queene Iohn (cauled the excellent) ageynste the Catholike princes Isabel and Don Fernando whose it was in deede. But that stryfe was ended as sone as Don Fernando had vanquished Don Alonso at a place cauled Temulos not farre from Toro, which place* Don Fernando chose rather to make warre ageynst the Moores of Granada, then to bye and fell with the blacke Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with the conquest of Affryke from the streightes forward: whiche began where the infante of Portugale Don Henrique (sonne to kynge Iohn the bastarde and master of Auis) dyd begynne to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the. vi. (beinge a valentinian borne) had knowlege hereof, he mynded to gyue the Indies to the kinges of Castile withowt any preiudice to the Portugales who had conquered the sea coastes of Affryke. These Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withowte the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they shulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryste: And commaunded a line or meridian to bee drawen Northe and fouth from one hundreth leaques Westwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weste, bycause the Spanyardes shulde not meddle in Affryke perteynyng to the conquest of the Portugales, to th[e]auoydng of all stryfe betwene them. Kynge Iohn of Portugale, the seconde of that name, was greatly offended when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, although his owne ambaffadours had made the selfe same request vnto his holynesse. He also found hym selfe agreed with the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando, that they had shortened the course of the landes he had discouered, depriuynge hym of the rycheffe which belonged to hym. And therefore refused to stonde to the popes bull in this case: desyryng the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando to graunt him three hundreth leaques more to the Weste, besyde the one hundreth which they had graunted before: and therwith sent his shyppes to kepe the coastes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to satisfie his

The Portugales cauillations.

The line of diuision.

The sentence.

The Portugales threaten death to the Castilians.

The line of the last diuision.

The great Iland of Samotra.
The lande of Brasile, perteyneth to the Portugales.

A mery tale.

The golde myne of Guinea.
Alonso kynge of Portugale.

Gold for thynges of smaule value.
Contention for the kyngdome of Castile.

Warre agenst the Moores of Granada.

The conquestes of the Portugales in Affrike.

Pope Alexander.

243

The Pope maketh the diuision.

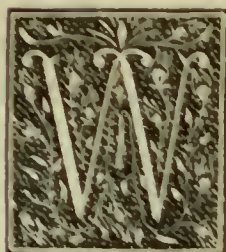
The kynge of Portugale refuseth to stand to the Popes bull.

The agreement of
the last diuision

Wherein the
Portugales were
deceaued.

mynde and to please hym accordynge to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene theym: And in fine, with the consent and agreement of the pope, graunted twoo hundreth. lxx. [seuenty] leaques more then the bull made mention of: At Tordefillas the .vii. day of Iune, in the yeare of our lord 1494. And wheras our kynges thought that they shulde haue lost grounde in grauntyng so many leaques that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kyng of Portugale also, herein deceaued him selfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in trust, hauynge no certeyne knowlege of the situation of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaundyng that which the kyng dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requested the three hundreth and. lxx. leaques rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the west. And yet for all that, I doubt whether the Malucas shulde haue faulen within his conquest accordynge to the ordinarie accoumpte and dimension which the pylotes and Cosinographers doo make. And after this maner they diuided the Indies betwene them by th[e]authoritie of the pope for the auoydlynge of further stryfe and contention.

Howe and by what occasion Th[e]emperoure layde the Ilandes of the Malucas to pledge to the kyng of Portugale.



Sebastian Cabote.

The emperour
and the kyng of
Portugale ioued
in aliance by
marriage.

The Portugales
robbe the
Castilians

The coronation of
Th[e]emperour.

244

The gageing of the
Ilands of Malucas,
Zamatra and
Malaca.

When the kyng of Portugale Don Iuan the thyrde of that name, had knowlege that the Cosinographers and pylottes of Castile hadde drawn the line from the place before named, and that he could not denye the truth, fearing also therby to lise the trade of Spices, made sute and request to Th[e]emperoure that he shulde not send furth Loais nor Sebastian Cabote to the Malucas, and that the Castilians shulde not attempte the trade of spices nor see such euyls and miseries as his capitaynes had shewed in those Ilandes to them that aduentured that viage with Magalanes. Which thyng he greatly couered, although he payde all the charges of those two fletes, and made other great bargens. In the meane tyme, Th[e]emperoure maryed the Lady Isabell syster to kyng Iohn: and kyng Iohn maryed the lady Catharine syster to Th[e]emperour: whereby this matter waxed coulede although the kyng ceased not to speake hereof, euer mouynge the particion. Th[e]emperour by the meanes of a certeine Biscaine that was with Magallanes in the gouernours shyppe, had knowlege what the Portugales had doone to the Castilians in the Iland of Tidore, wherof he took great displeasure, and brought the sayde maryner face to face before th[e]ambassadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he sayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and gouernour of India when the Portugales tooke the Castilians in Tidore and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and such other thynges as they had in the shyppe named the Trinitie. But as the kyng of Portugales trade was greate, and owre necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Th[e]emperoure (who was nowe goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1529) gaged the Malucas and the spicerie to the kyng of Portugale for three hundreth and fiftie thousande ducades withowt any tyme determyned otherwyse then the controuertie was defined vppon the brydge of the ryuer of Caya: for the which thyng, kyng Iohn punyshed the licentiate Azeuedo bycause he payde the money withowt declaration of the time. The couenaunt of the pledge was blyndely made and greatly ageynst the myndes of the Castilians, as men that wel vnderstode the profite, commoditie, and rycheffe of that trade: Affirmyng that the trade of spices myght haue byn rented for one yeare or for two, for fyxe tymes as much as the kyng gaue for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was twyse cauled to the bargeyne, as once at Granada and an other tyme at Madrid, sayde that it had byn muche better to haue pledged Estremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, rather then the Malucas, Zamatra, or Malaca, or other riche landes and ryuers in the Easte not yet well knowen: forasmuche as it maye so chaunce, that eyther by continuance of tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as though it perteyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, Th[e]emperour considered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kyng what he receaued. Th[e]emperour was often tymes counsayled to release the pledge of those Ilandes in consideration of the great vantage he myght haue therby in fewe yeares. Furthermore, in the yeare. 1548. the procuratoures of Cortes being in Valladolid, made petition to Th[e]emperour to surrender the spicerie to the kyngedome of Castile for. vi. yeares, and that they wold repay to the kyng of Portugale his. 350. thousand crownes, and after those yeares, restore the trade to the crowne, that his maiestie myght inioye the same as was agreed at the begynnyng. But Th[e]emperour beinge then in Flaunders, sente woorde to the counsayle that they shulde not assent to Cortes his request, nor speake any more hereof. Wherat, sum marueyled, other were fory, and all held theyr peace.

[Amerigo Vespucci,
and
Andreas de Corsali.]

*Of the Pole Antarctic, and the stars
about the same.]*

¶ OF THE POLE ANTARTIKE AND THE
STARRES ABOWT THE SAME AND OF THE
QUALITIE OF THE REGIONS AND DISPOSITION OF
the Elementes about the Equinoctiall line.

Also certeyne secretes touchyng
the arte of faylynge.



Mericus Vesputius in the Summarie of his vyages,
wryteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departynge from Lisbona (commonlye cauled Lusheburne)
the. viii. day of May, in the year. 1501. we sayled fyrst to the
Ilandes of Canarie and from thense to Capouerde which the
Ethiopiens or blacke Moores caule *Bisneghe*, beinge. xiiii.
degrees on this syde the Equinoctiall line. From whense
directynge owre course towarde the South pole by the South-
west, we sawe no more land for the space of three moonethes
and three dayes. Of whiche tyme duryng. xl. [forty] dayes,
we had cruell fortune: In so muche that for that space, the
heauen in maner neuer ceased thundryng, roryng, and
lyghtenyng with terrible noyse, and fearefull syghtes of fyery
exhalations flyng about in the ayer, and in maner continuall
showers of rayne with darke cloudes coueryng the heauen in such
forte that aswell in the day as in the nyght we coulde see none

otherwyse but as when the moone giueth no lyght by reason of thicke and darke cloudes. The sea was in lyke case
vnquieted with furies and monstres. After these greuous and cruel days, it pleased god to haue compassion on
owr liues. For wee suddenly espied land wherby we recouered owr spirites and strength. This land which wee
founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leaques, although I suppose that we sayled more then. 800. by reason of the
cruel tempest and ignoraunce of the Pylottes and mariners whereby wee were lyke to haue byn cast away. For
wee were in suche daungerous places wanderyng in vnknown coastes, that if I had not byn skylfull in the
science of Cosmographie we had fuerly perished, forasmuch as there was not one pilot that knewe where wee
were by the space of fiftie leaques. In so much that if I had not in tyme prouyded for the safegarde of myne
owne lyfe and them that were with me, with my quadrant and Astrolabe instrumentes of Astronomie, wee had
styl wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had perswaded the pylots by demonstrations perteynyng
to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confessed that the ordinarie pilottes and mariners ignorant in
Cosmographi, are not to bee compared to men of speculatiue knowlege. etc.

Wee sayled by the coaste of the sayde lande. 600. leaques And went oftentimes alande where wee were
frendely and honorably interteyned of th[e]inhabitauntes: In so much that confideryng their innocent nature,
we sumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth beyonde the Equinoctiall
line. viii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee sayled so farre by the sayde coaste that wee passed the
wynter Tropyke towarde the pole Antartike by xvii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line
eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynges as I sawe there, are not yet knowen to men of owre tyme: as the people,
their customes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the fauourable influence of
heauen and the planettes, and especially the order of the starres of the eyght spherie in the inferioure hemispherie
or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and about the South pole, wherof neyther the owlde or newe wryters
haue made any mention to this daye.

Cabouerde.
Besnegha.

A tempest.

The ignorance of
Pylots and
mariners.
The vse of
Cosmographie.
The vse of the
quadrant and
Astrolabe.

245

The pole
Antartike.

The starres about
the south pole.

Most pleasant and fruitful regions.

The earthlye Paradyse. Continual temperatnesse.

Moyst dewes

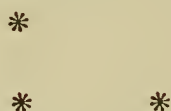
Starres vnknownen to vs

The vse of Geometri. Notable stars in the inferiour hemispherie.

To wryte particularly of the commodities and felicities of these regions, it wolde requyre rather a hole volume then a booke: And that such, as if Plinie had had knowlege of these thynges, he myght greatly haue increased his booke of naturall histories. The trees gyue from them continually such sweete fauours as can scarcely bee imagined: And on euery part put furth such gummes, liquours, and iuses, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I suppose we myght fynde in them marueylous medicins ageinst diseases and to mainteyne health. And fuerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthely Paradyse in the worlde, it can not bee farre from these regions of the south, where the heauen is so beneficiall and the elementes so temperate that they are neyther bytten with coule in wynter, nor molested with heate in summer. The ayer also and the heauen is feldome darkened with clowdes, so that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. Yet haue they sumtymes moyst dewes in the mornynge and euenyng for the space of three houres, whereby the grounde is marueylously refreshed. Lyke wyse the firmament is marueylously adourned with certeyne starres which are not knownen to vs, wherof I noted abowt. xx. to bee of suche clearenesse as are the starres of Venus and Iupiter when they are nere vnto vs. And wheras hauynge the knowlege of Geometrie, I considered theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and also measured theyr circumference and diameter, I am well assured that they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge other, I sawe three starres cauled Canopi, wherof two were exceedynge cleare, and the thyrde sumwhat darke. The pole Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lyttle as is seene abowte owre pole. But hath foure starres whiche compasse it abowt in forme of a quadrangle.



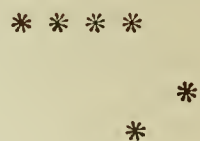
¶ When these are hydden, there is seene on the lefte syde a bryght Canopus of three starres of notable greatnesse, whiche beinge in the myddeft of heauen, representeth this figure.



Most bright and shynynge starres.

Lactea via.

After these, succede three other shynynge starres, whereof that which is in the myddeft, is of measure. xii. degrees and a halfe in circumference. And in the myddeft of these, is seene an other bryght Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other shynynge starres which in bryghtnesse passe al other that are in the eyght sphere. Of these, that that is in the middest in the superficial part of the sayde sphere, hath the measure of his circumference. xxxii. degrees. After these foloweth an other great Canopus, but sumwhat darke. All these are seene in the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye: And beinge ioyned to the meridiene line, shewe this fygure here folowynge.



246



The inferiour hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

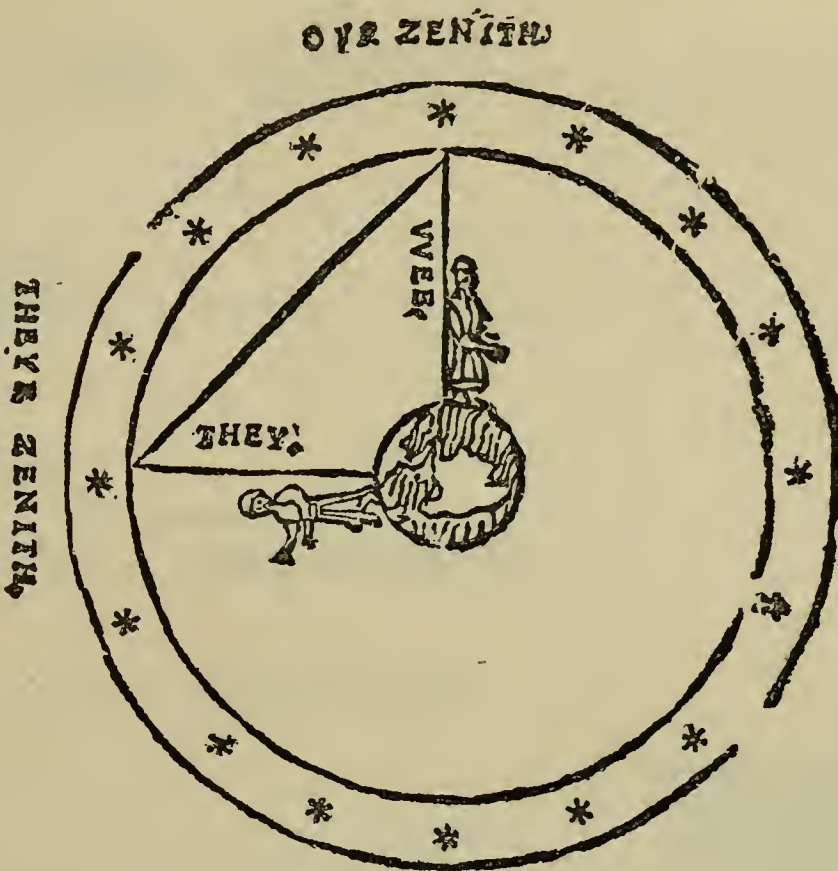
Aristotle his opinion of the raynebowe.

A strange opinion.

I sawe also there manye other starres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obserued, I made a particular boke of the same, wherin I made mention of al such notable thyngs as I sawe and had knowlege of, in this nauigation. The whiche booke I deliuered to the kynges maiestie, trustynge that he wyll shortly restore it me ageyne. In this hemispherie or halfe coompass of the heauen, I diligently considered many thynges which are contrarie to th[e] oppinions of philosophers. And amonge other thynges, I sawe a whyte raynebowe abowt mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the foure elementes, as redde of the fyer, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blewe of the water. But Aristotle in his booke intituled *Meteora*, is of an other opinion. For he sayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the soonne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynste the soonne, as the shynyng of the same on the water, is reflected on a waule: And that the fayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the soonne: and beinge resolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertile, and pourgeth the ayer. Also that is a token of abundaunt moysture. By reason wherof, sum are of opinion that it shall not appeare. xl. [forty] yeares before th[e] ende of the worlde, which shalbe a token of the drynesse of the elementes approchyng to the tyme of theyr conflagration or confumyng by fyer. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynst the soonne. It is therefore neuer seene in the South, bycause the soonne is neuer [seene?] in the North. Neuerthelesse, Plinie sayth,

that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is seene at al houres. And thus much haue I gathered owte of the commentaries of Landinus vppon the fourth boke of Virgyl his Eneades, bycause I wold defraude no man of his trauayle. I sawe the sayd raynebowe twoo or three tymes. And not I onely, but also many other which were in my company. Lykewyse wee sawe the newe moone the selfe same day that shee ioyned with the foonne. Wee sawe furthermore vapours and burnynge flames flyinge abowt heauen euey nyght. A lyttle before, I cauled this cuntry by the name of Hemispherium (that is) the halfe sphere. Which neuerthelesse can not bee so named but by spekyng improperlie in comparyson of owres. Yet forasmuche as it seemeth to represent fuche a forme, I haue improperlye so named it.

Departynge therfore from Lisbona (as I haue sayde) beinge from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North abowt. xl. [forty] degrees, wee sayled to this cuntry whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. [fifty] degrees: All which summe, maketh the number of. lxxxx. [ninety] beinge the fourth part of the greatest circle accordynge to the trewe reason of the number taught by the owlde autours. And by this demonstration it is manifest that wee measured the fourth parte of the worlde: Forasmuch as we that dwell in Lisbona on this fyde the Equinoctial line abowt. xl. [forty] degrees towarde the Northe, sayled from thense. lxxxx. [ninety] degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an ouerthwart line, to th[e]inhabitanes. l. [fifty] degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. And that the thyng may bee more playnely vnderstode, imagine a parpendicular line to faule from the poyntes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pricke ouer the head) to vs both standynge vpryght in the places of owre owne habitacions: and another ryght line to bee drawne frome owre Zenith to theyrs: Then grauntynge vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyson to them, it must of necessitie folowe that they are in the ouerthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyson to vs: In fuche forte that the figure of the sayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appeareth more playnely by the fygure here folowynge.



The newe mone.
Fyery exhalations.
Hemispherium.

Lisbona.

The fourth part of
the worlde.

247

Zenith.



As touchyng the starres and reasons of Cosmographie, I haue gathered thus much owt of the vyage of Americus Vesputius. And haue thought good to ioyne hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corsali writeth in his vyage to East India as concernynge the same matter.

After that we departed from Lisbona, wee sayled euer with prosperous wynde, not passynge owt of the Southcast and Southwest. And passynge beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heyght of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauersynge the cape of Bona Speranza a coulde and wyndy clime bycause at that tyme the foonne was in the north signes, wee founde the nyght of. xiiii. houres. Here we sawe a marueylous order of starres, so that in the parte of heauen contrary to owre northe pole, to knowe in what place and degree the south pole was, we tooke the day with the foonne, and obserued the nyght with the Astrolabie, and sawe manifestly twoo clowdes of reasonable bygnesse mouynge abowt the place of the pole continually nowe ryfynge and nowe faulynge, so keepynge their continuall course in circular mouynge, with a starre euer in the myddest which is turned abowt with them abowte. xi. degrees frome the pole. Aboue these appeareth a marueylous crosse in the myddest of fyue notable starres which compasse it abowt (as doth charles wayne the northe pole) with other starres whiche moue with them abowt. xxx. [thirty] degrees distant from the pole, and make their course in. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres. This crosse is so fayre and bewtiful, that none other heuenly gne may be compared to it as may appeare by this fygure.

The vyage of
Andreas de
Corsali.
The Equinoctial
line.
Cap. de Speranza.
The starres of the
vnder hemispherie.

Clowdes abowt the
south pole.

A crosse of fyue
starres.

248



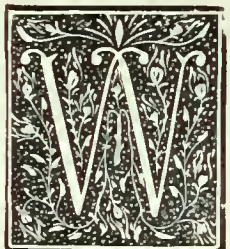
A. The pole Antartike. B. The Croffe.

Detherto Andreas de Corsali.



Of the lyke matters, and of the straunge rysynge of the soonne in the mornynge, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare and motions of the Elementes in the coaste of Ethiope abowt the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gambra where plentie of golde is founde, sumewhat beyonde Capo Verde, Aloisius Cadamustus wryteth in this effecte.

Duryng the tyme that wee remayned vpon the mouth of the ryuer, we sawe the north starre but once: which appered very lowe aboue the fea the height of a iauelen. We saw also fyxe cleare, bryght, and great starres verye lowe aboue the fea. And confideryng their stations with owre coompasse, we founde them to stande ryght fouth, figured in this maner.



We iudged them to bee the chariotte or wayne of the south: But we sawe not the principall starre, as we coulde not by good reason, except we shuld first lose the fyght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a. xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of. xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnynge of Iuly. This countrey is euer hotte al times of the yeare. Yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of Iuly to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly abowt none after this forte. There ryse continually certeyne clowdes aboue the lande betwene the northeast and the south east, or from the east and fouth east with greate thunderyng and lyghtnyng and exceedynge great showers of raine. At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to sowe their feedes. They lyue commonly with hony, herbes, rootes, flesshe, and mylke. I had also intelligence that in this region by reason of the great heate of the ayer, the water that raineth is hotte: And that the soonne rysynge in the mornynge, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the rysynge, it appeareth troubeled, dymme and smoky. The whiche thynge, I knowe not to proceade of any other cause then of the lowenesse of the grounde in this contrey beinge without mountaynes.

The coastes of Ethiope.
Golde in Ethiope.

The vyage of Aloisius Cadamustus.

The chariote of the south pole.

The wynter abowt the Equinoctiall.
Raine and clowdes.

Thunder and lyghtnyng.

Hot showres of rayne.
The day, and rysynge of the soonne.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION IV.

*Of Moscovy, Cathay, and
the North Regions.*

1500-1555.]

¶ A DISCOURSE OF DYVERS VYAGES AND WAYES BY THE WHICHE

SPICES, PRECIOUS STONES, AND GOLDE WERE BROUGHT IN OWLDE

tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.

ALSO OF THE VYAGE TO CATHAY AND EAST INDIA

by the north sea: And of certeyne secretes touchyng the same vyage, declared by the duke of Moscouie his ambassadoure to an excellent lerned gentelman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius.

Lykewyse of the vyages of that woorthy owlde man Sebastian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englande, and at this present the gouernour of the company of the marchantes of Cathay in the citie of London.



Tis doubtlesse a marueylous thyng to confyder what chaunges and alterations were caused in all the Romane Empire by the comynge of the Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by theyr inuasions were extinguyshed all artes and sciences, and all trades of Marchaundies that were vsed in dyuers partes of the worlde. The defolation and ignoraunce which infued hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpetuall darke- nesse amonge men for the space of foure hundreth yeares and more, in so much that none durst aduenture to go any whyther owt of theyr owne natiue countreys: whereas before th[e]incurfions of the sayde Barbarians when the Rōmane Empire florysshed, they might safely passe the seas to al partes of East India which was at that time as wel knownen and frequented as it is nowe by the nauigations of the Portugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifest by that which Strabo wryteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Tiberius. For speakyng of the greatnesse and ryches of the citie of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a

prouince of the Romanes) he wryteth thus. This only place of Egypte, is apte to receaue all thynges that coome by sea, by reason of the commoditie of the hauen: And lykewyse all such thynges as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of Nilus wherby they may bee easely conueyde to Alexandria, beinge by these commodities the rycheft citie of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

The reuenues of Egypt are so great, that Marcus Tullius sayth in one of his orations, that kynge Tolomeus furnamed Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thousande and fyue hundreth talentes, which are feuen millions and a halfe in golde. If therefore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of so fewe and so negligently, what myght it then bee worth to the Romanes by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of marchandies greatly increased by the traffike of Trogloditica and India? wheras in tyme paste there could hardly bee founde. xx. shyppes together that durste enter into the goulfe of

249

The romaine
empyre.

iiii. hundreth
yeares of
ignoraunce.

Easte India well
knownen in owld
time.

Strabo.
The great rychesse
of Egypte.

The citie of
Alexandria.

Marueylous
rychesse.

The gouernaunce
and reuenues of
the Romanes.

Trogloditica
and India.

The goulfe of Arabie.

Ethiope.

Rich customs

The rychesse which were brought in owlde tyme from India, and the red sea.

The commission of The[m]perours Marcus and Commodus.

Arabie, or shewe theyr proos withowt the mouth of the fame. But at this present, great nauies fayle togyther in to India and to the furthest partes of Ethiope from whense are brought many rych and precious marchandies into Egypt and are caryed from thense into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customes redoubeled aswell by suche thynges as are brought thither, as also by suche as are caryed from thense, forasmuche as greate customes arryse of thynges of great value. And that by this vyage, infinite and precious marchaundies were brought from the redde sea and India, and those of dyuers other fortes then are knowen in owre tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is described the commission of Th[e]mperours Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearfall of all suche stufte and marchandies wherof custome shuld bec payde in the redde sea by such as had the fame in fee ferme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces perteynyng to the Romane Empyre: and they are these folowyng.

Cinamome.	Mir.	Xilocinamome.	Jewels of Sardonica.	Dyed cloth and fylke
Longe pepper.	Amome.	Carpesio.	Ceraunia.	Carbasei.
Whyte pepper.	Ginger.	Sylkes of dyuers fortes.	Calamus Aromaticus.	Sylke threede.
Cloues.	Malabatum.	Linnen cloth.	Berille.	Gelded men.
250 Costus.	Ammoniac.	Skynnes and fures of Cilindro.		Popingiayes.
Cancamo.	Galbane.	Parthia and Babilon.	Slaves.	Lions of India.
Spikenarde.	Lasser.	Iuery.	Cloth of Sarmatia.	Leopardes.
Cassia.	Agarike.	Wodde of Heben.	The fylke cauled	Panthers.
Sweete perfumes.	Gumme of Arabie.	Precious stones.	Metaxa.	Purple.
Xilocassia.	Cardamome.	Perles.	Vestures of fylke.	

Also that iuise or liquour which is gathered of wolle and of the heare of the Indians.

By these woordes it dooth appeare that in owld tyme the fayde nauigation by the way of the redde sea, was wel knowen and much frequented, and perhappes more then it is at this present. In so much that the auncient kynges of Egypt confideryng the great profyte of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and wyllyng to make the same more easy and commodious, attempted to make a fosse or chanel which shulde begynne in the laste parte of the fayde sea, where was a citie named Arfinoe (which perhappes is that that is nowe cauled Sues) and shulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Pelusio, which emptieth it selfe in owre sea towarde the East abowt the citie of Damiatia. They determyned also to make three causeis or hyghe wayes by lande, which shulde passe from the fayde braunche to the citie of Arfinoe: but they founde this to difficulte to bryng to passe. In fine, kynge Tolomeus furnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to fayle vpon Nilus ageynst the course of the ryuer vnto the citie of Copto, and from thense to passe by a deferte countrey vntyll they coome aboue the redde sea to a citie named Berenice or Mioformo, where they imbarcked all theyr marchaundies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabie, as appeareth by the wrytynge fyrst of Strabo (who wryteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in the tyme of Domitian. Strabo also speaking of the fayd fosse or trench which was made toward the red sea, wryteth thus.

There is a trenche that goth towarde the red sea and the goulfe of Arabie, and to the citie of Arfinoe, which fum caul Cleopatrida: and passeth by the lakes named Amari (that is) bitter, bicause in deede they were fyrst bytter. But after that this trenche was made and the ryuer entered in, they became sweete, and are at this present full of foules of the water by reason of theyr pleasauntnesse. This trenche was fyrst begun by kynge Sefostre, before the battayle of Troy. Sum saye that it was begunne by kynge Psammiticus whyle he was a chylde: And that by reason of his death, it was lefte imperfect: Also that afterwarde, kynge Darius succeded in the same enterpryse, who wold haue finiffhed it, but yet brought it not to th[e]nde bycause he was informed that the redde sea was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuydyng bothe the seas, were opened, all Egypte shulde bec drowned thereby. Kynge Tolomeus wold in deede haue finyshed it: but yet left it shut at the hed that he myght when he wolde, fayle to the other sea and returne withowt perell. Here is the citie of Arfinoe: And nere vnto that, the citie cauled Heroum in the vttermost part of the goulfe of Arabie toward Egypt with many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewyse speakynge of this trench, sayth. In the furthest part of the goulfe of Arabie, is a porte cauled Daneo, from whense they determyned to bryng a nauigable trench vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as is the fyrst Delta. Betwene the fayde sea and Nilus, there is a streight of lande of the length of. lxii. [sixty-two] myles. The first that attempted this thyng, was Sefostre kynge of Egypte: and after hym Darius kynge of the Persians, whome Tolomeus folowed, who made a trenche a hundreth foote large, and. xxx. [thirty] foote diepe, beinge three hundreth myles in lengthe vnto the lakes named Amari, and durste proceade no further for feare of inundation, hauynge knoweledge that the redde sea was hygher by three cubites then al the countrey of Egypt. Other say that this was not the cause: but that he doubted that yf he shulde haue let the sea coome any further, all the water of Nilus shulde haue byn therby corrupted, which onely mynystreth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithstandinge all these thynges aforefayde, all this vyage is frequented by lande from Egypte to the redde sea, in which passage are three causeis or hyghe wayes. The fyrst begynneth at the

The great riches the kynges of Egypte had by customes.

The noble enterprises of the kynges of Egypte.

Arsinoe.

Damiata.

Pelusio.

Nilus.

Copto.

Berenice.

A nauigable trench made from Egypte to the red sea

Lacus Amari.

Kynge Sesostre

Kynge

Psammiticus.

Kyng Darius

Kynge Ptolomeus.

The citie Heroum.

What Plynye writeth of the nauigable trenche

The largenesse and lengthe of the trenche.

mouth of Nilus named Pelusio. All which way is by the sandes: In so much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyxt in the earth to shewe the ryght way, the causei coulde not be founde by reafon the wynde euer couereth it with sande. The fecond causei is two myles from the mountayne Cassius. And this also in th[e]-ende of. lx. [sixty] myles, commeth vppon the way or causey of Pelusius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled Antei. The thyrde begynneth at Gerro, named Adipson: and passeth by the fame Arabians, for the space of. lx. [sixty] myles sumwhat shorter, but full of rowgh mountaynes and great scarfeneffe of water. All these causeis, leade the way to the cite of Arfinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe Carandra by the red sea. This Ptolomeus was the fyrst that seached al that parte of the red sea which is cauled Trogloditica. Of this trenche described of Strabo and Plinie, there are feene certeyne tokens remaynyng at this present as they affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the cite of Alcayr otherwyse cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchauntes that of later dayes trauallye this viage by lande, ryde through the dry and baren desertes on camels both by day and by nyght: directyng the way by the starres and compase as do maryners on the sea, and caryng with them water sufficient for many dayes iorneyes. The places of Arabie and India named of Strabo and Plinie, are the felfe fame where the Portugales practise theyr trade at this daye, as the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this presente theyr women vse to burne theym selues alyue with the deade bodies of theyr husbandes. Which thyng (as wryteth Strabo in his. xv. booke) they dyd in owlde tyme by a lawe, for this consideration that sumtyme being in loue with other they forfooke or poyfoned theyr husbandes. And forasmuch as accordyng to this custome, the owlde poete Propertius (who lyued about a hundreth yeares before th[e] incarnation of Chryst) hath in his boke made mention of the contention that was amonge the Indian women which of them shuld bee burned alieue with theyr husbandes, I haue thought good to subscribe his verfes, which are these.

*Fælix Fois lex funeris vna maritis,
Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.
Mamque vbi mortifero iacta est sax vltima lecto,
Vxorum suis stat pia turba comis,
Et certamen habent lethi, quæ viua sequatur
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.
Ardent victrices, et flammæ pectora præbent,
Imponuntque suis ora perusta viris.*

As touchyng these vyages both by sea and by lande to East India and Cathay, many thynges are wrytten very largely by dyuers autours which I omitte bycause they perteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north seas and the coastes of Moscouia discouered in owre tyme by the viage of that excellent yonge man Rychard Chaunceler no lesse lerned in all mathematicall sciences then an expert pylotte, in the yeare of owre lorde. 1554.

As concernyng this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the fayde lerned man Galeatius Butrigarius, and that great philosopher and noble gentelman of Italie named Hieronimus Fracastor as I fynde wrytten in the Italian hystories of nauigations. As they were therefore conferryng in matters of learnyng, and reafonyng of the science of Cosmographi, the fayde lerned man hauyng in his hande an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynges of Portugale, rehearfyng the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discouered, and how by theyr nauigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiscouered. And fayde that of the landes of the inferior hemispherie or halfe compase of the baule towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothyng knowne but that lyttle of the coaste of Brasilia vnto the streight of Magellanus. Also a part of Peru: And a lyttle aboute Affrike towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Also that he marueyled withowte measure that this thyng was no better considered of Christian Princes to whom god had deputed this charge, hauyng euer on theyr counfail men of great lernyng which may informe them of this thing beinge so marueylous and noble whereby they maye obteyne glorie and fame by vertue, and bee imputed amonge men as goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules and great Alexander who trauallyed only into India: and that by makyng the men of this owre hemispherie knowne to theym of the other halfe compase of the baule beneth vs, they might by the tyle of this enterpryse, withowt comparyson farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Iulius Cesar or any other of the Romane Emperours. Which thyng they myght easely bryng to passe by assignyng colonies to inhabite dyuers places of that hemispherie, in lyke maner as dyd the Romanes in prouinces newly subdued. Whereby they myght not only obteyne great ryches, but also inlarge the Christian fayth and Empire to the glory of god and confusion of infidels. After this, he spake of the Ilande of faynt Laurence, cauled in owlde

The viage bi lande from Egypte to the red sea.

What kyng Ptolomeus discouered.

Alcayre. The viage to Easte Indya frequented in owlde tyme. The customes and maners of the Indyans.

The vyage to Cathay.

Rychard Chaunceler.

A lerned discourse of dyuers vyages The vigages of the Portugales. The worlde hangyng on the ayer. What is knowne of the lower hemispherie. The lande of Brasile. Peru. The charge and dewtie of Christian princes. Note.

252

Hercules and Alexander.

The colonies of the Romans in regions subdued.

The great Iland of saynt Laurence or Madagascar.

The Ilandes of Taprobana or Giaua.

Plinie.

The hystorie of Cornelius Nepos.

Shyps of India driuen into the sea of Germanie.

An enterprise wherby Princes may obteyne trewe fame and glory. Cathay discovered bi Marcus Paulus.

The citie of Lubyke.

The kyng of Polonie.

The duke of Moscouia.

An ambassadour from the duke of Moscouia.

253

The wordes of th[e] ambassadour of Moscouia.

The way from Moscouia to the north Ocean and Cathay.

Volochda.

Vstiug.

Succana.

Duina.

Colmogor.

The north Ocean.

Greate wooddes.

Gothlande.

The Moscouites haue knowledge of the greate cane Cathay.

Permia.

Plescora.

Catena mundi.

tyme Madagafcar, which is greater then the realme of Castile and Portugale, and reachethe from the. xii. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the. xxvi. degree and a halfe, lying Northeaste frome the cape of Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropicus Capricorni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with abundaunce of all thynges necessarie for the lyfe of man, and one of the most excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in the worlde: And that neuerthelesse there is nothyng knowne therof, except only a fewe smaule hauens by the sea side, as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greatest part of the Ilandes of Taprobana, Giaua the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then begynninge to speake of the partes of owre pole, he caused the bookes of plinie to bee brought him where diligently ponderynge the. lxxvii. chapiture of the seconde booke, he founde where he reherfeth the hystorie of Cornelius Nepos, by these woordes: That in his tyme, one Eudoxus escapyng the handes of kyng Lathyro, departed from the goulfe of Arabie and came by sea to the Ilande of Calese. Declaryng further, that whereas this narration was many yeares reputed for a fable, was nowe in owre tyme by the vertue of the Portugales, knowne to bee trewe: And that lykewyse the same Cornelius Nepos reciteth that at the tyme when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconsul or lieuutenant for the Romans in Fraunce, the kyng of Sueuia gaue hym certeyne Indians which saylinge owt of India for marchandies, were by tempest dryuen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these woordes, he proceeded, sayinge that the same thyng myght bee verified nowe in our tyme if the princes which confine vpon that sea wolde endeuoure theyr industry and diligence to bryng it to passe. And that there coulde not any navigation bee imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendoome as this myght bee yf by this way the vyage shulde bee founde open to India to come to the rych contrey of CATHAY which was discouered now two hundreth yeares fence by Marcus Paulus. Then taking the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this vyage shulde bee very shorte in respect of that which the Portugales nowe folowe, and also of that which the Spanyardes may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared furthermore that the citie of Lubyke beinge rych and of great poure, and situate vpon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continuall nauigations to trauallye the sea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyse the ryght noble kyng of Polonie whose dominions with his realme of Lituania, extende to the fayde sea, shulde be apte to discouer this secrete: But that aboute all other, the duke of Moscouia, shulde performe the same with greater commoditie and more facilitie then any other Prince. And here steyng a whyle, he began to speake ageyne and fayde. Nowe forasmuch as we are coome to this passe, mee thynke it shulde seeme a great discourtesie if I shuld not shewe yowe all that I knowe as touchyng this vyage, wherof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeares by occasion of the woordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Augusta, it so chaunced that in those dayes there came thither an ambassadour of the duke of Moscouia, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynges, hauing byn sent to dyuers places by the fayde Prince, and one of his counfayle. Of whose learnyng beinge aduertised, I fought his acquayntaunce. And talkyng with hym one day of these Indians dryuen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the vyage that myght bee discouered by the North sea to the Ilandes of spices, I perceaued that at the fyrste he marueyled exceedyngely, as at a thyng that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But restyng a whyle in maner astonysht in his secrete phantasie, he toke great pleasure therein, and sayde. Forasmuch as the Portugales haue nowe compased aboute all the south partes supposed in owlde tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate, why shulde wee not certeinly thynke that the lyke maye bee done aboute this parte of the north without feare of coulde, especially to men borne and brought vp in that clime? Yet procedyng further, he said, that if his Prince and master, had men that wolde animate hym to discouer this vyage, there was no Prince in Christendome that myght do it with more facilitie. Then caulynge for a mappe in which was the description of Moscouia and the prouinces subiecte to the same, he declared that from the citie of Moscouia or Mosca going towarde the northeast for the space of. lx. [sixty] myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda and afterwarde by that, and folowyng the course therof, to the citie of Vstiug, so cauled bycause the ryuer of Iug fauleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they lose theyr owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they sayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, althoughe it bee a longe tracte, as more then. 800. myles, neuerthelesse he sayde that in sommer it myght commodiously bee sayled: And that wheras it fauleth into the sea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees apte to make shyppes. And the place so conuenient for this purpose, that shipwryghtes and other skylful workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynyng, may easely coome owt of Germanie. Also that the men which are vsed to trauallye the sea of Germanie aboute the coastes of Gothlande, shulde bee best and most apte to attempte this enterpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger, and labour. He sayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue much knowlege of the great cane of Cathay, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greatest part gyue obedience to the said great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made also demonstration in the fayde carde by the northeaste, that beinge paste the prouince of Permia and the ryuer Plescora (whiche fauleth into the north sea) and certeyne mountaynes named *Catena Mundi*, there is

th[e]nterance into the prouince of obdora, whereas is Vecchiadoro and the ryuer Obo, whiche also fauleth into the fayd sea, and is the furthest borther of Th[e]mpire of the Prince of Moscouia. The fayde ryuer hath his originall in a great lake cauled Chethai, which is the fyrste habitacion of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Cane. And from this lake for the space of two monethes vyage (as they were credably informed by certeine Tartares taken in the warres) is the most noble citie of Cambalu, beinge one of the chiefest in the dominion of the greate Cane, whom sum caule the great Cham. He also affirmed, that if shippes shulde bee made on the coastes of the fayde sea, and fayle on the backe halfe of the coast therof (which he knewe by many relations made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the northeast) they shulde doubtlesse in folowynge the same, easely discouer that countrey. Vnto these woordes he added, that although there were greate difficultie in Moscouia, by reason that the waye to the fayde sea is full of thicke wooddes and waters which in the fommer make great marysshes and impossible to bee trauallyed, aswell for lacke of vyttayles whiche can not there bee founde, not for certeyne dayes, but for the space of certeyne monethes, the place beinge desolate without inhabitauntes, neuertheless he fayde that yf there were with his Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whome the charge of this vyage shulde bee commytted, he no wayes doubted but that they wolde folowe it and tynde it, forasmuch as with great ingenioufnesse and inestimable pacience, these nations haue ouercome much greater difficulties then are these which are but lyttle in comparison to those that they haue ouerpasse and doo ouerpasse in all theyr viages to India. He proceedede declarynge that not many yeares fence, there came to the courte of his Prince, an ambassadour frome pope Leo, named master Paulo Centurione a Genuese vnder dyuers pretenfes. But the principall occasion of his commynge, was, bycause he hadde conceaued greate indignation and hatred ageynst the Portugales: And therefore intended to proue yf he coulde open anye vyage by lande whereby spices myght bee brought from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the sea Caspium (otherwyfe cauled Hircanum) to Moscouia: And from thense to bee brought in shippes by the ryuer Riga, whiche runnyng by the countrey of Liuonia, fauleth into the sea of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue eare vnto hym: and caused the fayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lordo, of the Tartars confininge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greate desertes which they shulde of necessitie ouerpasse, made them leaue of theyr enterpryse: which if it had bin purposed by the coastes of this owre north sea, it myght haue byn easely fynished. The fayde Ambassadour continued his narration, sayinge that no man ought to doubt of that sea but that it may bee fayled fyxe monethes in the yeare, forasmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and hot by reason of contynuall reuerberation of the beames of the soonne and shorte nyghtes. And that this thyng were as well woorthy to bee proued, as any other nauigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknown, haue byn discouered and brought to ciuilitie. And here makynge an ende of this talke, he said: Let vs nowe omytte this parte of Moscouia with his coulde, and speake sumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and Baccalos or *Terra Baccalarum*, where in the yeare. 1534. and. 1535. Iaques Cartiar in two vyages made with three great French gallies, founde the great and large countreys named Canada, Ochelaga, and Sanguenai: which reach from the. xlv. [forty-fifth] to the. li. [fifty-first] degree, beinge well inhabited and pleasaunte countreys, and named by hym Noua Francia. And here steyng a while and lystyng vppon his handes, he fayde: Oh what doo the Christian Princes meane that in such landes discouered they do not assigne certeine colonies to inhabite the same to bringe those people (whom god hath so blessed with natural gyftes) to better ciuilitie and to embrace owre religion, then the whiche, nothyng can bee more acceptable to god? The fayd regions also, beinge so fayre and frutefull, with plentie of all fortes of corne, herbes, frutes, woodde, fysshes, bestes, metals, and ryuers of fuche greatnesse that shypes maye fayle more then. 180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe fydes infinitely inhabited: And to cause the gouernoures of the fayde colonies to searche whether that lande toward the northe named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one firme lande with Norwaye: Or whether there bee any freight or open place of sea as is moste lyke there shulde bee, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the fayde Indians dryuen by fortune abowte the coastes of Norway, came by that freight or sea, to the coastes of Germanie: And by the fayde freight to faile northwest to discouer the landes and countreys of CATHAY, and from thense to fayle to the Ilandes of Molucca. And these surely shulde be enterpryses able to make men immortal. The whiche thyng, that ryght woorthy gentleman master Antony di Mendoza confideryng by the singular vertue and magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thyng in practise. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (so named of the great citie Mexico otherwise cauled Temistitan, nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the. xx. [twentieth] degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and parte of the fayde firme lande), he sent certeyne of his capitaynes by lande, and also a nauie of shypes by sea, to search this secrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in Th[e]emperours courte, I sawe his letter wrytten in the yeare, 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherin was declared howe towarde the northwest, he had fownd the kyngedome of *Sette Citta* (that is) Seuen Cities, whereas is that cauled Cioula by the reuerend father Marco da Niza: and howe beyonde the fayde kyngedome yet further towarde the Northwest, Capitayne Francesco Vasques of Coronado, hauynge ouerpasse great desertes, came to the sea fyde where

Obdora.
Vecchiadoro.
Obo.
The lake Chethay.
The Tartars.
The citie of
Cambalu.
Note this secrete.

Difficult
trauaylynge in
Moscouia.

Commendation of
the Spaniardes
and Portugales.

The hystorie of
Paulus Centurio.
Of this reade more
at large in the
booke of Paulus
Iouius.
Malice may do
more with sum
then vertue.
The Caspian sea.
Riga.
Liuonia.

254
The Tartars of
Lordo.
Desertes.
The viage by the
north sea.

The woorthynesse
of this vyage.

The viages of the
Frenchmen to the
land of Baccalos.

Pleasaunt
countreys.
New Fraunce.
Apostrophe to the
Christian princes.

Great ryuers.
A thyng woorthy
to be searched.

The way to
Cathay and the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the northwest
A notable
enterpryse.

The noble
enterpryse of
Antoni di Mendoza,
Viceroy of Mexico.

The discoueryng
of the northwest
partes.

Shyps saylynge from Cathay by the north hyperborean sea to the coastes of the northwest part of the lande of Baccaleos. Cathay.

The sea from new Fraunce or Terra Britonum to Cathay.

A notable booke.

255

A great and glorious enterpryse.

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylot of the west Indies.

Commendation of Sebastian Cabote.

Sebastian Cabote tould me that he was borne in Brystowe, and that at .iiii. yeare owld he was caried with his father to Venice and so returned ageyne into England with his father after certeyne yeares: wherby he was thought to haue bin born in Venice.

The fyrst vyage of Sebastian Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde vyage of Cabote to the land of Brasile, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote tould me that in a region within this ryuer he sowed l. [fifty] graynes of weate in September, and gathered therof l. 256 [fifty] thousand in December as wryteth also Francisco Lopes.

he found certeyne shyppes which fayled by that sea with marchaundies, and had in theyr baner vpon the proos of theyr shyppes, certeyne foules made of golde and syluer which they of Mexico caule Alcatrazzi: And that theyr mariners shewed by signes that they were. xxx. [thirty] dayes faylynge in comynge to that hauen: wherby he vnderstode that these shippes could bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the sayde lande discovered. The sayde master Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practised, there was discovered so greate a space of that countrey vnto the sayd sea, that it passed. 950. leaques, which make. 2850. myles. And doubtlesse yf the Frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue passed by lande towarde the sayd northwest and by north, they shuld also haue founde the sea wherby they myght haue fayled to Cathay. But aboute all thynges, this seemed vnto me moste woorthy of commendation, that the sayde master Antonie wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural and marueylous thynges whiche they founde in searchoynge those countreys, with also the measures of landes and altytudes of degrees: A worke doubtlesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynde, wherby wee may conceaue that yf god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemispherie, he wolde or nowe haue made it better knowen to vs. The which thyng, I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this time: beinge neuerthelesse the greatest and most glorious enterpryse that may bee imagined.

And here makynge a certeyne pause, and turnynge hym selfe towarde vs, he sayde: Doo yow not vnderstande to this purpose howe to passe to India toward the northwest wind, as dyd of late a citizen of Venese, so valiente a man, and so well practised in all thynges perteynyng to nauigations and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present he hath not his lyke in Spayne, in so much that for his vertues he is preferred aboute all other pylottes that sayle to the west Indies, who may not passe thither without his licence, and is therefore cauled *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when wee sayde that wee knewe him not, he proceeded, sayinge, that beinge certeyne yeares in the citie of Siuile, and desyrous to haue sum knowlege of the nauigations of the Spanyardes, it was toulde hym that there was in the citie a valient man, a Venecian borne, named Sebastian Cabote, who had the charge of those thynges, being an expert man in that science, and one that coulde make cardes for the sea with his owne hande. And that by this reporte, seekynge his acquaintance, he founde hym a very gentell perfon, who enterteined hym frendly and shewed him many thynges, and amonge other a large mappe of the worlde with certeyne particular nauigations aswell of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes. And that he spake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venese many yeares fence to dwell in Englande to folowe the trade of marchaundies, he tooke me with him to the citie of London whyle I was very yonge, yet hauynge neuerthelesse sum knowlege of letters of humanitie and of the sphere. And when my father dyed in that tyme when newes were brought that Don Christopher Colonus Genuese, had discovered the coastes of India, whereof was great talke in all the courte of kynge Henry the feuenth who then reigned: In so much that all men with great admiration affirmed it to bee a thyng more diuine then humane, to sayle by the Weste into the East where spices growe, by a way that was neuer knowen before. By which fame and reporte, there increased in my harte a greate flame of desyre to attempte sum notable thyng. And vnderstandyng by reason of the sphere, that if I shulde sayle by the way of the northwest wynde, I shulde by a shorter tracte coomme to India, I thereupon caused the kynge to bee aduertised of my diuise, who immediatly commaunded two carauels to bee furnysshed with all thynges apperteynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yeare. 1496. in the begynnynge of sommer. Begynnyng therefore to faile towarde Northwest, not thynkyng to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY, and from thense to turne towarde India. But after certeyne dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the Northe, which was to me a great displeasure. Neuerthelesse, sayling alonge by the coast to see if I could fynde any goulfe that turned, I founde the lande styll continent to the. 56. degree vnder owre pole. And feinge that there the coast turned toward the East, dispaynyng to fynd the passage, I turned backe ageyne, and fayled downe by the coast of that lande towarde the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the sayde passage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe cauled FLORIDA. Where, my vyttayles sayling; I departed from thense and returned into England, where I founde great tumultes amonge the people, and preparaunce for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no more consideration had to this vyage. Wherupon I wente into Spayne to the Catholyke kynge, and queene Elizabeth: who beinge aduertised what I had doone, interteined me, and at theyr charges furnysshed certeyne shyppes wherwith they caused me to sayle to discover the coastes of Brasile, where I founde an exceedynge great and large ryuer, named at this present *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of syluer, into the which I sayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then fyxe hundrethe leaques, fyndynge it euery where verye fayre and inhabited with infinite people, which with admyration came runnyng dayly to owre shyppes. Into this ryuer, runne so many other riuers, that it is in maner incredible. After this, I made many other vyages, which I now pretermitte. And wexynge owlde, I gyue my selfe to rest from such trauayles bycause there are nowe many younge and lusty pylotes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardnesse I doo reioyse in the frutes of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as yowe see.

And this is as much as I haue vnderstoode of master Sebastian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers nauigations wrytten in the Italian toonge.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe Moscouia was in owr tyme discovered by Richard Chanceler in his viage toward Cathai by the direction and information of the fayde master Sebastian who longe before had this secrete in his mynde, I shall not neede here to describe that viage, forasmuche as the fame is largely and faythfully written in the Laten tonge by that lerned young man Clement Adams scole mayster to the Queens henchemen, as he receaued it at the mouthe of the fayde Richard Chanceler. Neuerthelesse I haue thought good here to speake sumwhat of Moscouia as I haue redde in the booke of Iohn Faber written in the Latin toonge to the ryght noble Prynce Ferdinando Archeduke of Auftria and Infant of Spaine, of the maners and religion of the Moscouites, as he was partely instructed by the ambafadours of the duke of Moscouie sent into Spayne to Th[e]emperours maiestie in the yeare. M.D.XX.V. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

I thynke it fyrste conueniente to speake sumewhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in owlde tyme. Conferrynge therefore the moste ancient of the Greeke and latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceauie it to bee a thyng which requireth no smaule iudgement of wytte and lernynge. For we see in howe shorte tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therefore that those people whom at this day wee commonly caule Moscouites, were in tyme past (as wytnesseth Plinie) cauled *Roxolani*, whom neuerthelesse by chaungynge one letter, Ptolomie in his eyght table of Europe, cauleth *Rofolanos* as dooth also Strabo. They were also many yeares cauled *Rutheni*: And are that people which sumtyme fought manfully ageynst the Capitaynes of Methridates as Strabo wryteth. They were cauled Moscouites of the chiefe citie of al the prouince named Moscouia or Mosca: or (as Volaterane faith) of the riuer Mosco. They were sumtyme gouerned by duke Iohan, whose wyfe was Helena of the lynage of Th[e]emperours of Constanstynople of the noble famelie of the Paleologi. Beyond these Roxolanos, Strabo sayth there is no lande inhabited. These Ruthenians therefore or Moscouites, are people of the northeaste parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the limettes of the great ryuer Boristhenes of Scithia, on the one syde with the Litanians and Polonians, and on the other syde with the Tartars who cease not to vexen them with continuall warres and incurfions. Especially the great Emperour Cham of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars, residente by the sea syde in Taurico Chersonefo, molesteth them with fore warres. They are towarde the north syde inclosed with the frofen sea, the lande of whose coastes beinge verye large, perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Moscouie. This sea is it which the owlde wryters caule *Lacus Cronicus*, so named of the Greeke word *Cronos*, which the Latines caule *Saturnus* whom they fayne to bee an owlde man, of complexion coulde and slowe, and thereby name all such thynges as are coulde and slowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reason they dyd this northe sea which beinge in maner euer frofen, is slowe and coulde and in maner immouable. And for lyke confideration (as faythe Plinie) Hethens nameth it in the Scythian toonge, Amaltheum, whiche woorde signifieth as muche as congeled or frofen. But that I wander not farre frome my purpose: Th[e]empire and dominion of the duke of Moscouie recheth so farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Asia and also of Europe. The citie of Moscouia or Mosca, is counted twyfe as bygge as Colonia Agrippina as they faythfully reporte which knowe bothe. Vnto this they haue also an other not vnequall in byggenesse cauled Fladimer. Also Blefcouia, Nouogradia, Smolne, and Otifer, al which, theyr ambafadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall buyldynges, and strongly defended with waules bothe of brycke and square stone. Of these, Blefcouia is strongest and enuironed with three waules. Other which they haue innumerable are not so famous as are these wherof this duke of Moscouie and Emperoure of Ruffia taketh th[e]inscription of his title. For euen at this present, when so euer eyther by his ambafadours or his letters, he dooth signifie hym selfe to bee Emperoure of Moscouie, he is accustomed to vse this title. Basilius by the grace of God Emperoure of all Ruffia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Moscouie, Nouigrade, Blefcouia, Smolne, and Otifer. etc. And this is the tittle wherby the fayde ambafadours saluted yowre maiestie in the name of great Basilius when they began theyr oration. This prince of Moscouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and those of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians sente for his ambafadoure to Th[e]emperours maiestie into Spayne, is not one of the least. For euen he when necessitie of warre requyeth, is accustomed to make for his Emperour a bande of. xxx. [thirty] thousande horsemen. But this is to theyr singular commendation that they are so obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge sommoned by hym by neuer so meane an herald, they obey incontinent as if it were to god,

The vyage to Moscouia.

The hystorye of Moscouia.

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

Roxolani.
Rosolani.
Rutheni.

The ryuer Mosco.

The ryuer Boristhenes.

Th[e]emperour of Cathay.

The frofen sea.

Lacus Cronicus.

Saturnus.

Amaltheum.

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.

The citie of Moscouia.

The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

257

The duke of Moscouia and Emperour of Ruffia.

The duke of Moscouia his tittle.

Duke Basilius.

Their poure.

Their obedience to theyr prince.

Their wars and conquestes.

Gunnes.
Only the
moscouites haue
not felt the
commodities of
peace.
Theyr language.

Dalmatia.
Pannonia.
Hungarie.
Theyr original.
The Sclauon
toonge reacheth
farre.

Great woods
white beares and
blacke woolues.

Abundance of
hony and waxe.

Rych furies.

Theyr maner of
bargenyng

Rude and wylde
people.
Tartares.

258

Ciuile people in
cities.

Theyr money

They embrace the
Christian fayth
whiche thei
receaued of the
Apostles.
The counsaile of
Nicene.

Basilus Magnus.
Chrisostomus

Theyr constancie
in theyr religion.

The bysshoppes
define
controuersies in
religion.
Theyr byssl. ops.

The
Archebysshoppe.
The patriarke of
Constantinople.
A notable exemple
of a Christian
prynce.

thynkyng nothyng more glorious then to dye in the quarell of theyr prince. By reason of which obedience, they are able in short tyme, to assemble an army of two or three hundreth thousande men ageynst theyr enemies eyther the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obteyned great victories and triumphes aowell ageynst the Turkes as the Tartars by the exceedyng multitude of theyr horsfemen and continual experience in warres. At such time as Th[e]mperour Maximilian made a league with them, they kept warre ageynst the kynge of Polonie. They vse not only bowes and dartes after the maner of the Parthians, but haue also the vse of gunnes as we haue. And to bee brieft, onely the Moscouites maye seeme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In so muche that yf theyr region were not strongly defended by the nature of the place beinge impreignable, it had or nowe byn often tymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth much with the toonge of the Bohemians, Croatians, and Sclauons: so that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderstande the Moscouite, although the Moscouian toonge be a more rude and harde phrasé of speach. The historiographers wryte that the Sclauons toonge the name of the confusion whiche was in Babell in the tyme of that flowt hunter Nemroth of whome mention is made in the Genesis. But I can not enough marueyle at this thing, that wheras betwene Dalmatia (now cauled Sclauonia) and Moscouia, both the Pannonies are situate, yet this notwithstandinge, the Hungarians toonge nothyng agreeth with the Moscouites. Wherby wee may coniecture that these nations were sumtymes diuided by legions, and that they came owt of Dalmatia thither: whiche thyng also Volateranus affirmeth, sayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Moscouites) is *Semidalmatica* (that is) halfe Sclauone. Howe so euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Moscouites, agree in language as wee perceaued by th[e]interpretours which yowre maiestie had then in yowre courte. For whereas the fayde interpretours were borne amonge the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Moscouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours woordes.

There are in Moscouia, wooddes of exceedyng byggenesse, in the which blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause wherof may bee th[e]xtreme cold of the north, which dooth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mother of whytenesse as the Philosophers affirme. They haue also great plentie of bees, wherby they haue such abundaunce of hony and waxe that it is with them of smaull price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reason of longe warres, theyr chiefe aduantage whereby they haue all thynges necessarie towarde theyr luyng, is the gaines which they haue by theyr rych furies, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, most whyte armyns, and such other which they sell to marchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and sell with simple faythe of woordes exchaungyng ware for ware without any curious bondes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and fyluer monyes, yet doo they for the most part exchange theyr furies for frutes and other thynges necessarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are also sum people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by flesshe and mylke as doo the wylde Tartars theyr bortherers which dwel in wods by the coastes of the frozen sea. These people are brutyshe, and lyue in maner lyke wylde beastes. But they of the citie of Mosca and Nouigrade, and other cities, are ciuile people: and agree with vs in eatyng of fyssh and flesshe althowgh theyr maner of coquerie is in manye thynges differyng frome owres. Volaterane wryteth that the Ruthenians vse money vncoyned. And inquiryng further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chiefly to bee consydered, that they imbrase the Christian fayth which they affirme to haue byn preached to them fyrste by saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine also as vnder Constanstine the greate, in the yere. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] was concluded in the fyrst generall counsaile holden in the citie of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determyned by. CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] bysshoppes, and also such as hath byn wrytten and taught by the Greeke doctoures Basilus Magnus and Chrisostomus, they beleue to bee so holy, firme and syncere, that they thinke it no more lawfull one heare to transgressse or go backe from the same, then from the gospell of Christ. For theyr constancie and modestie is such, that no man dare caule those thynges into question which haue once byn decyded by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They doo therefore with a more constante mynde perseuer in theyr fyrst fayth which they receaued of saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle and his successours and holy fathers, than doo manye of vs beinge diuided into scismes and sectes whiche thyng neuer chaunceth amonge them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touchyng the fayth or custome of religion, all is referred to the archbyshoppe and other bysshoppes as to bee defined by theyr spirite: not permyttinge any iudgemente to the inconstant and ignorant people. Theyr archebyshoppe is residente in the citie of Mosca, where also Th[e]emperoure keepethe his courte. They haue lykewyse dyuers other byshops: as one in Nouigradia, where also Ifodorus was bysshop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Rosciuia, an other in Sustali, an other in Otiferi: also in Smolne, in Refan, in Colmum, and in Volut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebyshop as the chiefe. Before the patriarke of Constantinople was oppressed by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this Archebysshoppe recognifed hym as his superioure. In so much that this duke of Moscouia and Emperour of Ruffia, not vnmyndefull hereof but a diligente obseruer of his accustomed religion, dooth at this daye yearly

fende a certeyne stypende in maner of almes to the patriarche of Constantinople, that he may with more quiete mynd looke for th[e]ende of this his Egiptian seruitude vntyll it shal please almyghty god to restore hym to his former church and autoritie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shulde nowe forsake hym whose prediceffoures haue ruled and gouerned so many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so many regions and prouinces haue depended.

But to speake briefly of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in sum thynges folow the Greekes. They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the cite of Mosca, they haue a great monasterie in the whiche are three hundreth munkes lyuyng vnder the rule of Basilius Magnus in the which is also the sepulcher of S. Sergius the abbot. They obserue theyr vowe of chastitie which none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue married virgins of good fame, may bee admitted to th[e]order of presthod, but may neuer bee a munke. The prestes and bysshops whiche are admitted to orders vnmarried, may neuer after bee married: nor yet such as haue wiues, mary ageine when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chastitie. Such as committe adulterie or fornication, are greeuouly punysshed by the bysshoppes and depriued of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the maner of the Greekes which differeth from owres in dyuers thynges, as in fermented breade after the maner of the Greekes. They put in the chaleffe as much water as redde wine, which water they vse to heate, bycause (not without a great mysterie) there isshewed furth of the syde of owre lorde, both blud and water, which wee ought by good reason to thynke was not without heate: for els shulde it scarfely haue byn iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr customes and rytes are accordyng to th[e]institutions of the primatyue church and the doctrine of Basilius Magnus, and Chrysofomus. In this thyng they dyffer greatly from vs, that they minister the communion to younge children of three yeares of age, which they doo with fermented breade dipte in a sponefull of wyne, and gyue it them for the bodye and bludde of Chryfte.

Theyr religion.
A monasterie of. ccc. [three hundred] monkcs
Preestes.
Masse.
A mysterie.
The primatiue church.
A straunge custome.

¶ *A briefe description of Moscouia after the later wryters, as Sebastian Munster and Iacobus Gastaldus.*

259



The prouince of Moscouia, is so named by the ryuer Mosco which passeth by the metrapolitane cite of Moscouia cauled Mosca by the name of the ryuer Mosco. This prouince was cauled of the owlde wryters, Sarmatia Asiatica. The bortherers or confines to the Moscouians on the one syde towarde the East, are the Tartars cauled Nogai, and the Scianbanians, with the Zagatians. Towarde the West, the prouinces of Liuonia and Lituania. Towarde the South, the ryuer of Tanais and the people confinyng with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the owld wryters Rha. And towarde the North, the Ocean sea cauled the Scythian sea, and the region of Lapponia. Moscouia is in maner all playne and full of marysshes, wooddes, and many very great ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul this Ledyl, as the owld autours named it Rha. It beginneth at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake and runneth into the sea of Bachau, named of the aunciente wryters, the sea Caspium or Hircanum. Vnder the dominion of Moscouia, are certeyne regions and dukedoomes: as Alba Ruffia (that is) whyte Ruffia. Also Colmogora, Plefcouia, Bafrida, Nouogardia, with also manye places of the Tartars which are subiecte to the duke of Moscouia. The chiefe cities of Moscouia, are Mosca, Plefcouia, Nouogardia, Colmogora, Otogeria, Viatra, Smolenser, Percaslauia, Cologna, Volodemaria, Rostauia, and Caffam. The people of Moscouia are Christians, and haue greate abundaunce of hony and waxe: also ryche furies, as Sabels, Marternes, Foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars which inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of Volga, haue no dwellyng places, nor yet cities or castels. But cary about with theym certeyne cartes or wagens couered with beastes hydes, vnder the whiche they reste, as wee do in owre houfes.

Sarmatia asiatica.
The Scythian Ocean.
The ryuer of Volga.
Lacus albus.
The Caspian sea.
Theyr chiefe cities
The wyld Tartars

They remoue togyther in great companies whiche they caule Hordas. They are warlike people and good horfemen, and are all Macometistes.

Hordas.

Sebastian Munster in his booke of Vniuerfall Cosmographie, wryteth that the cite of Mosca or Moscouia containeth in circuite. xiiii. [fourteen] myles, and that it is twyfe as bygge as the cite of Praga in Bohemie. Of the countrey of Moscouia, bifyde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wryteth thus. It extendeth in largeness foure hundreth myles, and is rich in syluer. It is lawfull for no man to go owt of the realme or coome in without the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and marysshes. The beastes there by reason of the coulde, are lesse then in other countreis more southwarde. In the myddest of the cite

The bygnes of the cite of Moscouia.
Syluer.
The region of Moscouia.
Beastes.

A fayre and
stronge castel in
the citie of Mosca.
The dukes
pallaice.
Theyr drynke.
They are gyuen to
drunkenesse.

Corne and grayne.

Stoues.

The famous ryuer
of Tanais.

260

The marysshes of
Meotis.
Volga.
Ocha.
The sea Euxinum.
The forest of
hircania.
Vri.
Alces.

They traually in
wynter on sleades.

Causeys of tymber.

Trees and frutes.

Corne and grayne.

Hony in wode and
trees.

Lakes or pooles of
hony.

A man almost
drowned in hony.

A marueilous
chaunce.

Beares feede of
hony and bees.

Beares inuade
bulles.

The beares byrth.

of Mosca beinge situate in a playne, there is a castell with. xvii. towres and three bulwarkes so stronge and fayre, that the lyke are scarcely seene in any other place. There are also in the castell xvi. churches, and three very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue their lodgynges. The dukes pallaice is buylded after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very fayre, but not great. Their drynke is mede and beere as is the maner of the moste parte of the people that inhabite the North partes of the woorld. They are exceedyngely gyuen to droonkennesse. Yet (as fume faye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in peine of death to absteine from such stronge drinckes as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymes when licence is graunted them, as twyse or thryse in the yere. They plowe the grownde with horses and plowes of woodde. Their corne and other grayne by reason of longe coulde, doo seldome waxe ripe on the ground by reason wherof they are sumtymes inforced to ripe and dry them in their stoues and hottes houses, and then grynd them. They lacke wyne and oyle. Moscouia is extended vnto Iurham and Corelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moscouites caule Don, hauyng his sprynges and originall in Moscouia in the dukedome of Rezenfe. It ryseth owt of a grownde that is 'playne, baren, muddy, full of marysshes and wooddes. And where it proceadeth toward the East to the mountaynes of Scithia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the south: and comyng to the marysshes of Meotis it fauleth into them. The ryuer of Volga (sumetyme cauled Rha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowyng owt of Moscouia, and then bendyng into the South and increased with many other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Asia. The woodde or forest cauled Hircania fylua, occupieth a smal portion of Moscouia. Yet is it sumwhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth toward Prussia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulles cauled Vri or Bisomes, as wryteth Paulus Iouius. There are also Alces muche lyke vnto hartes, with longe snoutes of flesshe and longe legges without any bowinge of their houx or pasternes. These beastes, the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Helenes. The iornaye that is betwene Vlva of Lituania by Smolense to Mosca, is trauallyed in wynter on sleades by the snowe congeled by longe froste, and made very flypperye and compacte lyke Ice by reason of much wearyng and treadyng, by meanes wherof this vyage is performed with incredible celeritie. But in the sommer, the playne countreys can not bee ouercome without difficulte labour. For when the snowe begynneth to bee dissolued by continuall heate, it causeth marysshes and quamyres inextricable and dangerous both for horse and man, were it not for certeyne causeys made of tymber with in maner infinite labour. The region of Moscouia (as I haue said) beareth neyther vynes nor olyue trees, nor yet any other trees that bere any apples or frutes of very plesant or fwete fauour or taste except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes and trees are burnt of the coulde blastes of the North wynde. Yet doo the fieldes bere all kyndes of corne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the fynest kynde of breade is made: also mylle and panyke, whiche the Italians caule Melica: Likewyse all kyndes of pulfe, as beanes, peafon, tares, and fuche other. But their chiefe haruest consisteth of hony and waxe, forasmuch as the hole region is replenysshed with frutefull bees which make most sweete hony, not in the husbande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to passe that both in the wooddes and shalowed launes, are seene many swarmes of bees hangyng on the bowes of trees, so that it shall not bee necessarie to caule them togyther or charme them with the sounde of bafens. There are oftentimes founde greate masses of hony combes, conferued in trees of the owlde hony forsaken of bees, forasmuch as the husband men can not seeke euery tree in so great and large wooddes: In so much that in the stockes or bodies of exceedyng great and holowe trees, are sumtymes founde great pooles or lakes of hony. Demetrius th[e] ambassadour of the duke of Moscouia whom he sent to the bysshop of Rome not many yeares fence, made relation that a husbande man of the contrey not farre from the place where he remayned, seekyng in the wooddes for hony, descended into a greate holowe tree full of hony into the which he slypte vp to the brest, and lyued there only with hony for the space of two dayes, caulynge in vayne for helpe in that deserte of wooddes. And that in fine dispayryng of helpe, he escaped by a marueilous chaunce, beinge drawen owt by a great beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downwarde after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and oportunitie ferued) perceaued the beare to bee within his reache, he suddainly clasped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to inforce her strength to leape owt of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

These regions abounde with beares whiche euery where seeke both hony and bees, not only herewith to fyl their bellies, but also to heipe their fyght. For their eyes are oftentimes dulled, and their mouthes wounded of the bees: both which greefes are eased by eatyng of hony. They haue weakest heades, as lions haue strongest. In so muche that when (beinge therto inforced) they caste their selues downe headlonge from any rockes, they couer their heades with their fiete, and lye for a tyme asfoonysshed and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sumtyme on two fiete, and spoyle trees backwarde. Sumtyme also they inuade bulles, and so hange on them with al their fiete, that they wery them with weight. The beare (as sayth Plinie)

bryngeth furth her byrth the. xxx. [thirtieth] day and oftentimes two. Their byrth is a certeyne whyte masse of flesshe without forme and little bigger then a moufe without eyes, and without heare, with onely the nayles or clawes comynge fourth. But the damme with continuall lyckynge, by lyttle and lyttle figurethe the informe byrthe. When shee entereth into the denne whiche shee hath chofen, shee creepeth thither with her belly vpwarde leste the place shulde bee founde by the steppes of her fiete. And being there deliuered of her byrthe, remaynethe in the same place for the space of. xiiii. dayes immoieable as wryteth Aristoteles. They lyue without meate fortie dayes, and for that tyme susteyne them selues only by lyckynge and suckynge theyr ryght foote. At the lengthe chaunfynge to fynde meate, they fyll theym selues so full, that they remedy that surfecte by vomyte whiche they prouoke by eatynge of antes. Their byrthe is oppressed with so heauy a sleape for the space of. xiiii. dayes, that it can not bee rayfed eyther with prickinge or woundes, and in the meane tyme growe excedynge fat. After. xiiii. dayes they wake from sleepe, and begyn to licke and sucke the soles of theyr fore fiete and lyue thereby for a space: Nor yet is it apparent that they liue by any other meate vntyll the sprynge tyme of the yeare. At whiche tyme begynnynge to runne abrode, they feede of the tender buds and younge sprigges or braunches of trees, and other herbes correspondent to theyr lypes.

Before fye hundreth yeares, the Moscouites honoured the goddes of the gentyles: And then fyrste receaued the Christian faith when the bysshoppes of Grecia began to discent from the church of the Latines: and therefore receaued the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the foules of deade menne are not helped with the suffragies of preestes, nor yet by the deuotion of theyr frendes or kinffolkes: Also that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine seruice, the hystorie of the miracles of Christe and the Epistels of faynt Paule are rehearsed owt of the pulpitte. Beyonde Moscouia, are manye people whiche they caule Scythians, and are partely subiecte to the Prince of Moscouia. These are they which duke Iuan subdued, as are the people of Perm, Baskird, Czriremiffa, Iuhra, Corela, and Permska. These people were Idolatours before the duke compelled them to baptisme, and appoynted a bysshop ouer them named Steuen, whom the Barbarians after the departure of the duke, fleyde alyue and slewe. But the duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them fore and assigned them a newe bysshoppe.

It is here also to bee noted that the owlde Cosmographers fayned that in these regions towarde the Northe pole, there shuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Ripheos and Hyperboreos, which neuerthelesse are not founde in nature. It is also a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Volham doo sprynge owt of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both these ryuers and many other, haue theyr originall in the playnes.

Nexste to Moscouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora through the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greatest that is knowen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increaseth at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, ouerfloweth the fyeldes round about, and with abundaunce of fatte moysture, resisteth the couldenesse of the ayer. Wheate sowne in the grounde, groweth abundantly without plowynge: and fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, spryngeth, groweth, and rypeth with woonderfull celeritie of haftyng nature.

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runneth the ryuer of Iuga: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marte towne named Vstiuga, beinge a hundreth and fyftie myles distant from the chiefe cite of Mosca. To this mart towne from the hygher countreys, are sent the precious fures of marternes, fables, woolues and such other whiche are exchaunged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchaundies.

Hytherto Munsterus.

And forasmuche as many doo maruaile that suche plentie of hony shuld bee in so coole a contrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therefore to be considered that lyke as spices, gums, and odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continuall heate duryng al the hole yeare without impressiō of the mortifying qualitie of could wherby al thynges are constraigned as they are dilated by heate, euen so in could and moyst regions (whose moysture is thinner and more waterysshe then in hot regions) are flowres engendered more abundantly as caused by impressiō of lesse and faynter heate woorkynge in thynne matter of waterysshe moysture lesse concocte then the matter of gummess and spices and other vnctuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For althoughe (as Munster faithe here before) the region of Moscouia beareth nother vines or oliues, or any other frutes of sweete sauoure by reason of the couldenesse therof, neuerthelesse forasmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefly gathered) may in sommer season growe abundantly in the playnes, marysshes, and wooddes, not onely on the grownde but also on trees in could regions, it is agreeable to good reason that great plentie of honye shulde bee in suche regions as abounde with floures, which are brought furthe with the fyrst degree of heate and fyrst approach of the sonne, as appeareth in the sprynge tyme not onely by the springinge of floures in fyeldes and gardeynes, but also of blossomes of trees sprynge before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrste drawne owte with the loweste and leaste degree of heate, as the

261

The beares denne.

Beares lyue without meate. xl. [forty] dayes.

The sleape of beares.

The religion of the Moscouites.

The Scythians subiecte to the duke of Moscouia.

It was then an opinion that al ryuers spronge owte of montaynes

The frutefull region of Colmogora.

The great ryuer Diuidna.

Wheate without plowing

The ryuer of Iuga.

Vstiuga.

Furres.

The naturall cause of much hony in could regions. Gummess and spices in hot countreys.

Floures in could regions

262

Floures of trees.

Blossomes of trees.

An exemple of the degrees of heate.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Longe dayes and shorte nyghtes.
Bramble and ferne.
Spices.

The sauoure of floures.

What Plinie wryteth of hony.

Serius is otherwyse cauled Canicula, this is the dogge, of whom the canicular dayes haue theyr name.

What is hony

Howe hony is corrupted.

Hony of great quantitie in North regions

263

Hot nyghtes in coude regions.
A similitude.

Natural heat dooth subtyle and digest all thynges.

Subtyle vapours digested by heate.

Coude regions

Ziglerus.

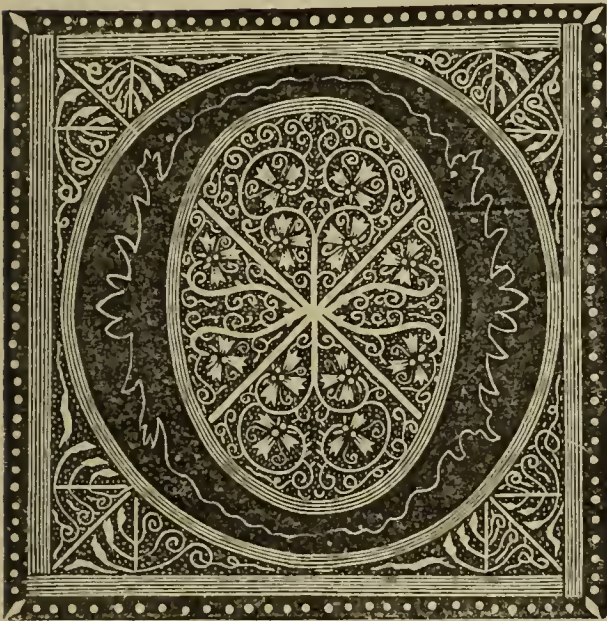
lyke is seene in the arte of styllunge wherby all thinne and lyght moystures are lyfted vp by the fyrste degree of the fyre: and the heuyest and thickest moystures are drawne owt with more vehement fyre. As we may therfore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummies to the heate of Iune and spices to the heate of Iuly. Euen so in fuche coude regions whose soomer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moysture of May then with th[e]xtreeme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to brynge forth abundance of floures as thynges caused by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by theyr tast and fauoure in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate eyther bytyng the toonge or offending the head as is in spices, gummies, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in could and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moisture, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykewyse the length of the dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in somer season in fuche coude regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wryteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bramble and ferne growe not but in could regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that spices and hotte feedes, can not growe in could regions, forasmuch as beinge of thinne substaunce, they shulde soone be mortified and extinct by excessiue could. For (as he sayth) nothing can concocte, rype, and attenuate the substance of frutes without the helpe of ayer agreeable to the natures of such thynges as are brought forth in the same, although it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of sweete fauour, forasmuch as the moysture that is in them, being thinne and but lyttle, is by meane heate soone and easely concocte or made rype. Such also as are soone rype, are soone rotten according to the prouerbe.

Plinie, although in the. xi. booke of his naturall hystorie, Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and fets of plantes, except forell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (which some caule goose foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayer: for in the. xii. chaptyure of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

This coommeth from the ayer at the ryfynge of certeyne starres, and especially at the ryfynge of *Sirius*, and not before the ryfynge of *Vergiliae* (which are the seuen starres cauled *Pleiades*) in the sprynge of the day. For then at the mornynge sprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fat dewe: In so much that such as haue bynne abrode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynted with lyquoure and the heare of theyr headde clammy. And whether this bee the swette of heauen, or as it were a certeyne spettyl of the starres, eyther the iuise of the ayer pourynge it felse, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and simple of his owne nature as it fyrste fauleth from aboue. But nowe descendyng so far, and infected not only with such vnclane vapoures and exhalations, as it meteth with by the way, but afterward also corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of fundrye tastes and qualities, and lykewyse aswel in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at theyr mouthes) as also by longe referuynge the same in hiues, it neuerthelesse reteyneth a great parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiiii. chaptyure of the same booke, he wryteth that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in sum places of Germanie, hony is found in such quantitie that there haue bynne seene hony combes of eyght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosophie, it dooth appere that abundaunce of hony shulde chiefly bee engendered in such regions where the heate of soomer is temperate and continuall aswell by nyght as by day as it is not in hotte regions where the nyghtes be longe and coude as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as fuche thynges as are syned by continuall heate, mouynge, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coude (as appereth in the art of styllunge and hatchynge of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate without interposition of contrarie and mortifyng qualitie, crude thynges are in shorte tyme made rype, fower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heaue made lyght, grosse made subtyle, harde made softe, deade made lyuyng, and in fine bodies made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous woorke of dygestion of lyuyng beastes, wherby the finest part of theyr nurishment is turned into bludde, and the finest of that bludde conuerted into spirites, as the like is also seene in the nurishment of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the grounde, all whiche are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue spoken. To conclude therfore, if hony bee eyther the swette of the starres, or the iuise of the ayer pourynge it felse (as plinie writeth) or other wyse engendered of subtyle and fine vapoures ryfynge from the earth, and concocte or digested in the ayer by the sayd continuall and moderate heate, it may seeme by good reason that the same shulde bee engendered in soomer season more abundantly in coude regions then in hot, for the causes aforefayde. And that it may by autoritie and reason more manifestly appere bothe that the heate of soomer in could regions is continual (as I haue sayd) and also that the coude in wynter is not there so intollerable to th[e]inhabitauntes of those regions as other doo thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde hereunto what I haue gathered owt of the booke of Ziglerus wrytten of the north regions.

**¶ OF THE NORTH REGIONS
AND OF THE MODERATE AND CONTINVALL HEATE**

in coulde regions atwell in the nyght as in the day in
foommer feason: Also howe those regions are
habitable to th[e]inhabitauntes of the
fame, contrary to th[e]oppinion
of the owlde wryters.



F this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the Northe regions in the description of Scondia wryteth as foloweth.

Wee wyl intreate of this matter, not as puttyng the same in question as dyd the owld wryters, nor gatheringe iudgement deducted of reasons in way of argument, forasmuch as wee are alre dy more certeyne by hystorie that these coulde regions are inhabited. Wee wyl fyrst therfore shewe by naturall reason and by consideration of the spher, declare how by the helpe of man and arte, coulde regions are inhabited withoutt damage or destruction of luyng beasts: And wyl fyrste speake of the qualitie of sommer, declarynge howe it is there augmented. Yet intende I not to comprehend all that maye bee sayde in this matter, but only rehearse such reasons and similitudes as are most apparent and easy to bee vnderstoode.

In such regions therfore, as are extended from the burnte line or Equinoctiall towarde the north, as much as the sonne ryseth hygher ouer them, so muche are they the more burnte with heate, as Affrica, bycause it ryseth hyghest ouer them as they are nearest to the Equinoctiall: and taryng with them so much the shorter time causeth shorter days, with longer and coulde nyghtes to restore the damage of the day past by reason of the moifure consumed by vapour. But in such regions ouer the which the sonne ryseth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remayneth there the longer in the day, and causeth so much the shorter and warmer nyghtes, as reteynng warme vapours of the day past, which vapours helpe the woorke of the day. I speake as I haue founde by experience, saythe Vpsalienfis. For I haue felt the sommer nyghtes scarsely tollerable for heate in Gothlande, wheras I felte them coulde in Romie. This benefite of th[e]-increase of the day, doth augment so much the more in coulde regions as they are nearer the poles: and ceaceth not vntyll it coome directly ouer the center or poynte of the axes or axeltree of the worlde, where the sonne beinge at the hyghest in sommer, is eleuate abowt. xxiiii. degrees: In which regions, one continual day consisteth of. vi. monethes from the spryng tyme by the standyng of the soonne (cauled Solstitium) in the signe of Cancer to Autumne. The soonne therfore, withoutt any offence of the night, gyueth his influence vpon those landes with heate that neuer ceaseth duryng that tyme which maketh to the great increase of foommer by reason of continuance. We haue now therfore thought good to gather by a certeyne coniecture howe greatly wee thinke the foommer to bee increased hereby.

Wee haue before declared howe hyghe the soonne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the staye of the soonne: And so manye partes is it eleuate in Rome at the staye of the soonne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the yeare. But here, in the mydde wynter, the soonne at noone tyde is beneficiall, and bryngeth forth floures, roses, and ielefloures. I haue gathered sum in wynter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growinge in open gardenes in maner in euery bedde vnder the bare heauen, brought forth only by the soonne. But this benignitie of the soonne, continueth not past fwe houres

Ziglerus.

The qualitie of
soomer in coulde
regions.The course of the
sonne.

Vapours.

Short and Warne
nyghtes.

Gothlande

264

One day of. vi.
monethes.Howe the sommer
is increased in
coulde regions.

Rome.

Could nights in
hot regions.

The Romane
wynter.

One nyght of vi.
moonethes
Obiections.

The twylyghtes.
The lyght of the
moone.

The nyght vnder
the pole.

A demonstration.

265

The Moone.

Remedies of
nature and art.

The owlde wryters
persuaded by
coniecture.

A brasen pot
broken with frost.

in the naturall day, forasmuch as th[e]operation therof is extinct by the couldneffe of the nyght folowyng. But if this benefite myght bee receaued without hinderaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it shulde fuerlye bryng forth many woonderfull thynges, if moysture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceaue that the Romane winter, althowgh it be not hotte, yet to be equal in heate to the full sprynge tyme in the same cite duryng the tyme of the fayde five houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the soonne vnder bothe places, and of the knowen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by th[e]accesse of the soonne to such places where the longest day continueth certeyne monethes, wee maye gather that soommer in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane sprynge.

But the more difficulte question, is of the tyme of the. vi. moonethes in the whiche the soonne leaueth those regions, and go[e]th by the contrarye or ouerthwarte circle towarde the south in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkeneffe and nyghtes not increased, which may be the cause that beastes can not feke their foode. And that also the coule shulde then be intollerable: by which double euyls all thynges constrained shulde dye, so that no beaste were able to abyde th[e]iniuries of wynter and famen insuinge therof: but that all beastes shulde perysshe before the sommer folowyng, when they shulde bringe furth their broode or succession: And that for these causes, the fayde coule clime shulde be perpetually defolate and vnhabitable. To al which obiections, we answere in this maner

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I saye, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the soonne fauleth, so suddely commeth the darke night but that the euenyng dooth substitute and prolonge the day longe after, as also the day sprynge or dawninge of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the ryfinge of the soonne: After the whiche, the residue of the nyght that receaueth no light by the fayde euenyng and mornyng twilightes, is accomplyshed by the lyght of the moone, so that the nyghtes are seldome vnaugmented. Let this be an exemple proued by owre temperate regions, wherby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Therefore euen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl more presently demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the soonne descendencyng from the highest halfe sphere by. xviii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twylight, so that at the lengthe the darke nyght succedeth: And that the soonne approachyng, and ryfynge aboute the the highest halfe sphere by as many paralels, dooth dimynyshe the nyght and increase the twylyght. Ageyne, by the position or placeinge of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralels therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are also paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the soonne descendencyng there vnder the horizon, dooth not bryng darke nyghtes to those regions vntyll it coomme to the paralele distant. xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

Other demonstrations hereof are made by certeyne figures of Astronomie, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I coule not gette the same grauen or cutte.

Duryng the tyme of these fayde fyxe moonethes of darkeneffe vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the soonne and the fayde twylyghtes, onely for the space of three moonethes, in the whiche the soonne goeth and returneth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of three moonethes is without remedy frome heauen. For the moone with her full globe increased in lyght, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackyng lyght, euery one by them selues, halfe the course of the moonethe: by whose benefite it coommeth to passe that the night, named as vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that continually or al at one tyme: but this also diuided into three sorts of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the space of twoo weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accordyngly. And this is the reason conceaued of the poure of the sphere wherby we testifie that the sommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to luyng beastes.

But wee wyl nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this coule so greatly feared, is more remisse and tollerable then owre opinion: so that compared to the nature of such beastes as liue there, it may be abydden. And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie then that age in the which any thyng was exactly knowen or discouered of the north regions. The owlde wryters therefore persued onely by naked coniecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of those places: Or rather by the estimation of heauen, the which, bycause they felte it to be hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men borne in the clyme of Egypte and Grecia, tooke therby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hystorie of Strabo is knowen, that a potte of brasse which was broken in funder with frosen water, was brought from Pontus and shewed in Delphis in token of a greuouse wynter. Here therefore, they that so greatly feared the winter (such as chaunceth to the earth vnder the. xlvi. [forty-eighth] paralele) and therefore consecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what coule such men trewly define vpon regions so farre without that paralele, whether they were inhabited or not? But such as folowed these, being contented with th[e]inuentions of the owlde autours,

and borne in maner vnder the fame qualitie of heauen, persisted wyllingly in the fame opinion, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof wee nowe intreate: fo lyghtly was that opinion receaued as touching the vnhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faithe (forasmuch as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to stande ageynst the sentence of the owld autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabyted with hearynges, coddess, haddockes, and brettes, tunnyes, and other great fysshes, with th[e] infinite number wherof, tables are furnysshed through a great parte of Europe: Al whiche are taken in the north sea extended beyonde our knoweledge. This sea at certeyne tymes of the yeare, poureth furth his plentifulnesse, or rather dryueth furth his increase to seke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermore also, euen the mouthes of the riuer of Tyber receaue a fysshe as a newe gest sent from the north sea. This swamme twyse through Fraunce and twise throughe Spayne: Ouerpassed the Ligurian and Tuscan sea to communicate her selfe to the cite of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those regions are replenysshed with fysshe: In so much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguysshe th[e] increase of the yeare folowinge, and the succession reparable fo many hundreth yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it shulde of necessitie folowe, that one of these two elementes, the earthe and the water, shulde be destructiue to luyng creatures, the water shulde chiefly haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde so tractable, that in the diepe wynter, both that increase is brought furth, and fysshynge is also exercised. The lande is lykewise inhabited with lyke plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre: Let the fayth hereof rest in th[e] exposition folowyng, wherin we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may coomme to passe. Therefore as touchyng nature, wee suppose that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vncommunicable, but to haue gyuen such order to all thynges wherby euery thyng maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremeties of the elementes consent with theyr next. The ayer is groffe about the earth and water: But thinne and hotte about the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the vttermoost sea is very salte. And salte (as wytnesseth Plinie) yeldeth the fatnesse of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne natiue heate, is of propertie agreable to fyre. The sea then, beinge all of such qualitie, poureth furth it selfe far vpon th[e] extreme landes, whereby by reason of the falteneffe therof, it moueth and stereth vp generatiue heate, as by fatnesse it noryssheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It gyueth this frutfulness to the earth at certeyne fluds, although the earth also it selfe, haue in his inner bowels the fame liuely and nurysshyng heate, wherby not only the dennes, caues and holowe places, but also sprynges of water are made warme: And this so much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemple, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suethlande are fruteful of metals, in the which, syluer and copper are concocte and molten into veynes, which can scarfely bee doonne in fornaces. By this reason also, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceinge the earthe and the waters, and throwghe both those natures breathyng furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualitie of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beastes, as wytnesseth the huge byggenesse of the whales in those seas, with the strength of bodye and longe lyfe of suche beastes as liue on the lande: whiche thyng coulde not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodiously nurysshed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increafe is hyndered by any iniurie, or that is euyl fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can prosper well. Neyther are such thynges as lyue there, offended with theyr naturall wynter as though an Egiptian or Ethiopian were suddeynly conueyed into those coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lyttle and lyttle browght fyrst acquaynted with the nature of that heauen, as may be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the historie of holy scripture. They that were led from Mesopotania, and that famous towre of Babilon towarde the north partes of the worlde in the fyrst dispartion of nations, dyd not immediatly passe to th[e] extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitations fyrst vnder a myddle heauen betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr posteritie was accustomed the better to susteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais, as he that commeth from winter to foommer, maye the better after abyde Ife and snowe beinge fyrst hardened therto by the frostes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortall men, accustomed to beare the hardenesse of places nexte vnto theym, were therby at the length more confirmed to susteyne the extremes. And here also, if any sharpenesse remayne that maye seeme intollerable, nature hath prouyded for the same with other remedies. For the lande and sea, hath gyuen vnto beastes, diepe and large caues, dennes, and other holowe places and secrete corners in mountaynes and rockes, bothe on the lande and by the sea bankes, in the which are euer conteyned warme vapoures so much the more intent and vehement, in howe much they are the more constraigned by extreme cold. Nature hath also gyuen valleys diuerted and defended from the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewise couered beastes with heare so much the thicker in howe muche the vehemencie of cold is greater: by reason wherof the best and rycheest furies are browght from those regions, as Sables whose price is growne to great exceffe nexte vnto gold and precious stones, and are esteemed princely ornamentes. The beastes that beare these furies, are hunted chiefly in wynter (which thyng is more straunge) bycause theyr heare is thenne thicker and cleaueth faster to the skyn. Howe greauous then shall we thinke the winter to bee there where this lyttle beaft lyueth so well, and where the hunters may search

Fysshes of the North seas.

The North sea.

The qualitie of water.

The lande

The diuine prouidence in moderatyng the elements

266

The nature of the sea.

Salte.

Generatiue beate.

Owtwarde cold is cause of inwarde heate.

Metals.

Vapours and exhalations.

Whales.

Beastes.

Hereby maye bee considered the cause of the deathe of our men that sayle directly to Guinea.

No passage from one extremitie to another but by a meane.

Caues and dennes.

Valleys.

The best furies.

Sables.

Beastes that lye
hyd in wynter.

All beastes haue
the nature of the
place where they
are engendered.

267

What exercise
may doo.

Vse maketh
masteries.

Scandia.

the dennes and hauntes of such beastes throwghe the wooddes and snowe? But suche beastes the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abyde th[e]iniurie of coulde, eyther lye hydde in wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beastes also in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie to man bothe by arte and industry to defende him selfe both abroad and at home. Abrode, with a thicke vesture, and the same well dowbeled. At home, with large fyres on harthes, chymyneys, and in flooues for the day, with clofe chambers, and couches, softe and warme beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the winters which seeme rigorous to straungers, althowghe they are to th[e]inhabitauntes more tollerable then owre opinion, as in deede by the fyrst natural mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such thinges are agreable to them as seeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike and the beare in Sarmatia, are fierce as in theyr presente strength and vigoure: but translated into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strength and courage. The foule cauled *Ciconia* (which sum thinke to bee the storke) dooth not tary the winter: yet doo the cranes coomme at that tyme. The Scythian wyll accuse the Romane heauen as induceinge feuers, wheras neuerthelesse there is none more holfoome. Such as haue byn tenderly brought vp, if they coomme suddely in to the campe, can not away with hunger, watchynge, heate, passages through ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaultes. But the owld fouldier exercised in the warres, vseth these as meditations of the felde, as hardened therto by longe experience. He that hath byn accustomed to the shadowe of the citie, and wyll attempte the fayinge of the poet Virgil, *Nudus ara, fere nudus*, that is, naked and bare without house and home, shall to his perell make an ende of the verse, *Habebis frigora febrem* (that is) he shall haue the coulde ague. Suche thynges therefore as seeme harde vnto vs, beinge accustomed by lyttle and lyttle, become more tollerable: In so much that this exercise of sufferance by such degrees, dooth oftentimes grow to prodigious effectes farre beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and arte, wherby it may appere that no part of the lande or sea is denyed to luyng creatures. The reader may also perceauie how large matter of reasons and examples may bee opened for the declarynge of owre opinion wherein wee rest. Let therefore th[e]autoritie of the ancient autours gyue place, and the consent of the newe wryters agree to this hystory, not as nowe at the length comprehended (whereas before many hundreth yeares Germanie and Scandia had entercourse of marchaundies not feuered by the large goulfe of Gothia) but as nowe by our commentaries brought to light. And hauyng sayde thus much in maner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wryte of the north regions.

¶ SCHONDIA.

Scone. is fayre in
the duch toonge.

The fertilitie of
Scandia.



Chondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to say as fayre Dania or fayre Denmarke. Plinie in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandinauia if there bee no faute in th[e]exemplers. It was named Schondia, by reason of the fayrenesse and frutfulnesse therof. And this aswell for that in beneficiall heauen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of hauens and marte townes, abundaunce of ryuers of fyfthe, plentie of beastes, great quantitie of metall, as golde, fyluer, copper, and leade, diligent culturyng the grounde, with townes and cities wel inhabited and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it gyuethe place to none other fortunate region.

He meaneth
Diodorus Siculus.

Th[e]inuasions of
the Gothes

Transiluania

268

This was in maner vnknown to the owld Greekes and Latins as may appere by this argumente that with one consente they affirmed that in these north regions the cold zone or clime, was condemned to perpetuall snowe intollerable to all luyng creatures. For few of them haue made mention hereof as to be inhabited. Amonge whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, sayth in his fourth booke, that Schondania is of vnknown byggenesse: and only that portion therof to be known which is inhabited with the nation of the Hilleuiones in fiftie vyllages. Neyther yet is Eningia lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue placed most fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whiche the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of moste innocente behauour vnder the tracte of those landes: and that there came from thence to Delphos, certeyne religious virginnes with voves and gyftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore that that nation obserued this institution vntyll the fayde virgins were violated of them of whome they were reccaued as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatnesse of Schondia, and the people that inhabite the same, althowgh they were fence vnknown, as lykewyse the Gothes departyng from these north landes althowghe they obteyned Th[e]empire of the regions abowte the marisshes of Meotis and the coastes of the sea Euxinus, with the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a portion which is nowe cauled Transiluania) and the bankes of the ryuer of Danubius, and in fine inuaded the Romane Empire, yet were not the regions wel known from whense they tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owld wryters are vnsufficient wytnesses to testifie of owre narrations as touchyng these landes vnknown to them, Euen so the other parte which excluded the same as vnhabitable, are to bee conuincd leaste theyr autoritie beinge admitted, shuld engender opinions not agreable or conuenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Moscouia, wryteth thus. Scandia or

Scandia, is no Iland (as fume haue thought) but parte of the continente or firme lande of Suetia, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Gothlande: And that nowe the kynge of Denmarke possesseth a great parte therof. But wheras the wryters of these thinges haue made Scandia greater then Suetia, and that the Gothes and Lumbardes came frome thense, they feeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngedomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scandia, forasmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the sea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frofen sea, was vnknown: And that by reason of so many mariffhes, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatnesse of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle known. Which thynge hath byn the cause that fomme iudged all that was cauled by the name of Scandia, to bee one great Ilande.

GRONLANDE.



Ronlande is interpreted greene lande: so cauled for the great increase and frutefulness of pasture. By reason wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at such tyme as shyppes may passe thither they set furth great heapes of cheese and butter to bee fould, wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rowgh with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder th[e]ordination of Nidrosia. To one of these, was of late yeares a bysshop appoynted onely by the tytyle of a suffragane in consideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place and

difficult nauigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them selfe of mouable wyttes and gyuen to magical artes. For it is sayde that they (as also the people of Laponia) doo rayse tempestes on the sea with magical inchauntmentes, and brynge such shippes into daungeour as they intende to spoile. They vse lyttle shyppes made of lether, and safe ageynste the brusynge of the sea and rockes, and with them assayle other shippes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writeth in his Decades of the Spanishe nauigations, that Sebastian Cabote sayling from Englande continually towarde the north, folowed that course so farre that he chaunfed vppon greate flakes of Ise in the mooneth of Iuly: and that diuertynge from thense, he folowed the coaste by the shore bendynge towarde the South vntyl he came to the clime of the Ilande of Hispaniola aboute Cuba, an Iland of the Canibales. Which narration hath giuen me occasion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitfarch to the continente or firme lande of Laponia aboute the castell of Wardhus: which thynge I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebysshoppe of Nidrosia, constantly affirmed that the sea bendethe there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lapones consent with them in the lyke magical practises and doo neyther imbrase the Christian religion nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykenesse of customes to bee betwene them bycause they ioyned togyther in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to disagree. For betwene both these people, the distance is not full twoo hundreth Schoeni, euery one being a space of grounde conteinyng. lx. [sixty] furlonges, which make. vii. [seven] myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabote chaunfed into such Ise. And albeit as touchynge the mooneth of Iuly, I wyll contend it is not well reherfed, no althowghe he had sayled vnder the pole, for such reasons as wee haue declared before to the contrary, neuerthelesse, that at sum tyme he sayled by Ise, this testifieth in that he sayled not by the mayne sea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehendynge and imbrasyng the sea in forme of a goulfe, wheras for the same cause, the goulfe of Gothland is frofen bycause it is streyght and narrow, in the whiche also the lyttle quantitie of salt water is ouercome by the abundance of fresshe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norwaye and Ilande, the sea is not frofen for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the poure of fresshe water is there ouercome of th[e]abundance of the salte water. There is a fame (but of vncerteyne autoritie) that the Spanyardes sayle at this presente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule *Terra viridis*, that is, the greene lande, bringynge from thense suche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Towarde the north, it reacheth to the vnknown lande vnder the pole, from whense also the theues and robbers of the Pigmei coomme into this lande. Whiche is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited and almost enuironed with the sea, as are they whiche the Cosmographers caule Cherfonnesi or Peninsulæ (that is) almost Ilandes:

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East fyde whiche lyeth towarde Norway.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]		[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
*Wardhus castell.	54 [degrees] [0']	70. 30'	The seconde extention.	28. [0']	72. [0']
Towarde the North.	53. 30'	71. 30'	Huitfarch. promont.	22. [0']	67. [0']
The fyrst extention.	40. [0']	71. 40'	The extention.	5. [0']	61. 45'
It is continued from thense by the coastes of the lande of Baccallaos.				*356. [0']	60. [0']

Towarde the west and north, it is termined with an vnknown ende of landes and seas.

[* Wardoehuus is the chief village of Wardoe, an island on the N.E. coast of Norway, beyond the North Cape and near Waranger Fiord. Its true N. Lat. is 70° 23', and E. Long. 31° 7'. Therefore Ziegler's meridian in all the following dates (being 54 degrees west of Wardoehuus) is really 23 degrees W. Long., and that therefore he places Baccallos 4 degrees still further west—fixes it in 27° W. Long., which is, in high latitudes, the longitude of a part of Greenland.—E. A.]

The Gothes and Lumbardes.

Frutefull pasture.

Religion neglected.

Inchaunters

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote to the frofen sea.

Gronlande. Wardhus.

Laponia and Gronlande.

Schoeni

Cabote tould me that this Ise is of fresshe water, and not of the sea.

A commixtion of salt water and fresshe.

The sea betwene Norway and Ilande.

Terra Viridis.

269

Pigmei.

Baccallaos.

ISLANDE.



ISLANDE is interpreted the land of Ise, and is cauled of the owlde wryters Thyle. It is extended betwene the south and the north almost two hundredth schoenes in longitude. It is for the most part full of mountaynes and vncultured. But in the playnes it hath fuche frutefull pastures, that they are fayne sumetymes to dryue the beastes from their feedynge least they shulde bee suffocate with to much fatnes. This Ilande is famous by the strange miracles of nature, of the which Saxo Grammaticus in his hystorie of Denmarke, and Olanus Gothus in his description of the north landes, doo make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are couered with perpetuall snowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyling with continuall flames of fyre and castynge furth brymstone. One of these is named Helga, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the mounte of the crosse. The thyrde is named Hecla: whose flames neyther consume flaxe or towe, matters mooste apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with lyke force as the shotte of great artillerie is driuen furth by violence of fyre, euen so by the commixtion and repugnaunce of fyre, coulde, and brymstone, greate stones are here throwne into the ayer. Nere vnto these mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earthe of houghe byggenesse and fuche depth (especiallly at the mounte Hecla) that no fyght can attayne therto. But to such as looke into them, there fyrst appeare men as though they were drowned and yet breathyng furth theyr fowles: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to reforte to theyr owne, they aunswere with moornynge voyce and greuous fyghes, that they must departe frome thense to the mount Hecla, and therewith fuddeynly varysshe owte of fyght. Ise floweth about the Ilande for the space of feuen or eyght moonethes, makyng by runnyng together a certeyne miserable waylinge and gronyng noyse not vnlyke the voyce of man. Th[e] inhabitants thynke, that in this Ise and the mounte Hecla, are the places where the euill soules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portion of this Ise, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a close vessell or cofer, the same dooth so varysshe at the tyme when the other Ise about the Ilande dissolueth, that not so much as one droppe of water or Ise can therof bee founde.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng toward the sea coastes, are foure sprynges of water of mooste diuers and contrary nature. The fyrste, by reason of his perpetuall and feruente heate, suddeynly turneth all bodies that are caste therin, into stones, referuyng neuerthelesse theyr fyrst forme and shape. The seconde, is of intollerable coulde. The thyrde is sweeter then hony, and most pleasaunte to quenche thyrst. The fourth is playne poyson, pestilent, and deadely. There is furthermore in these sprynges fuche abundaunce of brymstone, that a thousande pounce weight therof is bought for lyttle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe wares, are dried fysshe, as soles, maydens, playces, salpas, stockefysshes, and such other which they exchange for wheat and such other thynges as are browght thither from Lubeck, Hamborowe, and Amsterdam. For they haue oftentymes such scarfeneffe of corne, that they vse dried fysshe in the steade of breade, althowgh in sommer the Ilande so floryssheth with greene and frutefull medowes, that they are fayne sumetymes to dryue theyr beastes from pasture leaste they shulde suffocate for to much fatteneffe, as I haue sayde before. They make very good butter, and apte to bee vsed in matters of phisicke. There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as faulcons, gersfalcons, lanners, and sperhaukes. Also rauens, crows, beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue most swyfte horses: and such as runne. xxx. [thirty] myles continually withoutt rest or bayte. They haue many churches: and houses buylded of the bones of whales and other greate fysshes. The nauigation is not open to this Ilande but in sommer seafon: and that only for the space of foure moonethes, by reason of the coulde and Ise whereby the passage is stopped. If any stryfe or debate aryse on the sea amonge the mariners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place althowgh he haue knowlege therof, yet dooth he not punyssh them, forasmuch as it apperteyneth not to his office to decerne such thynges as are doonne on the sea, but only on the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by reason of whales and such other monsters of the sea, excepte the mariners take good heede and keepe them farre frome the shyppes with the noyse of droommes, and emptie barrells cast into the sea. There are many mynstrels and other that play on instrumentes, with the sweete noyse whereof, they vse to allure foules and fishes to theyr nettes and snares. Many also, lye lurkyng in caues and dennes to auoyde the sharpenesse of coulde, as the Affricanes doo the lyke to defend them selues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne cauled Weytzarch, (lyng betwene Ilande and Gruntland or Gronlande) is erected a shypmans quadrant of marueilous byggenesse, made by two pirates named Pinnigt and Pothorst in fauour of such as fayle by those coastes that they may therby auoyde the dangerous places lyng toward Gronland.

The myddest of the Ilande. 7 0' [Long.] 65 30.' [Lat.] The cite Harfol. etc. 7 40' [Long.] 60 42' [Lat.]

Island cauled
Thyle.
Schoeni is lx.
[sixty] furlonges.

Miracles of nature
in Islande.

Three marueylous
mountaynes.

Helgate.
Hecla.

Strange visions.

Ise.
Purgatory.

A strange thyng.

Four springs of
contrary nature.

Abundaunce of
brimstone.

Dried fysshe.

Scarsenes of corne.

270

Haukes.

White rauens.

Houses of whales
bones.

The nauigation to
Island.

Whales.

One thyng
seruyng for
contrary vses.
A shipmans
quadrant.

LAPONIA.



The region of Laponia, was so named of the people that inhabite it. For the Germayns, caule all suche Lapones, as are simple or vnapte to thynges. This people is of smaule stature, and of such agilitie of bodie, that hauynge theyr quyuers of arrowes gerte to them and theyr bowes in theyr handes, they can with a leape, caste theym selues through a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They feyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the maner of the Tartars. They are exercised in hurlyng the darte and shootynge from theyr youth: in so muche that they giue theyr chylde[n] no meate vntyll they hit the marke they shoote at, as dyd in owlde tyme th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilandes cauled Baleares. They vse to make theyr apparell streight and close to theyr boddies that it hynder not theyr woorke. Their winter vestures are made of the hole skinnes of seales or beares artificially wrought and made supple. These they tye with a knotte aboute theyr heades, leauynge onely two holes open to looke through, and haue all the residue of theyr bodies couered as though they were sowed in sackes, but that this beynge adapted to all partes of theyr bodies, is so made for commoditie and not for a punisshment as the Romans were accustomed to sowe paricides in sackes of lether with a cocke, an ape, and a serpent, and so to hurle them alyue all together into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke it came to passe that in owlde tyme it was rasshelly beleued that in these regions there were men with rowgh and hery bodies, wilde beastes, as parte made relation through ignorance, parte also takynge pleasure in rehearsall of suche thynges as are straunge to the hearers. The Lapones defended by this arte and industry, go abrode and withstande the sharpenes of wynter and the north wyndes, with all the iniuries of heauen. They haue no houses, but certeyne tabernacles like tentes or haies wherwith they passe from place to place and change theyr mansions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the people of Sarmatia cauled in owlde tyme Amaxobii, which vsed waynes in the steade of houses. They are much gyuen to huntynge: and haue such plentie of wyld beastes that they kyll them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a woman to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her husbände wente owte on huntynge the same daye: nor yet to touche with her hande any parte of the beaste that is taken vntyll her husbände reache her on the spitte suche a portion of flesshe as he thinketh good. They tyll not the grounde. The region nuryssheth no kynde of serpent: yet are there greate and noyfoome gnattes. They take fysshe in greate plentie: by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi. For as these drie theyr fysshe with feruent heate, so doo they drye them with coulde, and grynde or stampe them to pouder as smaule as meale or floure. They haue such abundaunce of these fysshes, that they hould great plentie therof in certeyne store houses to cary them vnto other landes nere about them, as Northbothnia and Whyte Ruffia. Theyr shyppes are not made with nayles, but are tide togyther and made fast with cordes and wyththes. With these they sayle by the swyft ryuers betwene the mountaines of Laponia, beynge naked in sommer that they may the better swynme in the tyme of perell, and gather together such wares as are in daunger to bee lost by shipwracke. Part of them exercise handie craftes, as imbrotherynge and weauynge of cloth interlaced with golde and syluer. Suche as haue diuised any necessary arte, or doo increase and amende th[e]inventions of other, are openlye honoured, and rewarded with a vesture, in the which is imbrothered an argument or token of the thyng they deuised. And this remayneth to the posteritie of theyr famelie in token of theyr desertes. They frame shippes, buylde houses, and make diuers fortes of housholde stufte artificially, and transporte them to other places nere abowte. They bye and sell bothe for exchange of wares and for money. - And this only by consent of both parties withoutt comunicacion: yet not for lacke of wytte or for rudenesse of maners, but bycause they haue a peculiar language vnknown to theyr bortherers. It is a valiant nation, and lyued longe free, and susteyned the warres of Norwaye and Suecia vntyll at the length they submitted them selues, and payde ryche furies for theyr tribute. They chose them selues a gouernour whom they caule a kynge: But the kyng of Suetia gyueth hym autoritie and administracion. Neuerthelesse, the people in theyr futes and doubtfull causes, reforte to Suecia to haue theyr matters decifed.

In theyr iorneyes, they go not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any house, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses: but in the steade of them, they tame certeyne wyld beastes which they caule Reen, beynge of the iuste byggeneffe of a mule, with rowgh heare lyke an Affe, clouen feete, and braunched hornes lyke a harte, but lower and with fewer antlettes. They wyll not abyde to bee rydden. But when theyr peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they so ioyned to the chariotte or sleade, they runne in the space of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] houres, a hundreth and fiftie myles, or. xxx. [thirty] schœnos: The whiche space they affirme to change the horizon thryse: that is thryse to coome to the furthest signe or marke that they see a farre of. Which doubtlesse is a token both of the marueylous swiftnesse and great strenght of these beastes beynge able to con-

People of great agilitie.

A straunge apparell.

The cause of an owlde erreure.

So doo the Tartars.

Plentie of wyld beastes.

271

No serpents.
Great gnats.

Abundaunce of fysshe.

Ships withoutt nayles.

Science honoured

Bargeinyng withoutt woordes.

No horses.

A beast of marueylous strenght and swyftnesse.

What Schoenus is. Loke in Gronland. The change of the horizon.

The owld autours
cauled all the
north people
Scythians.

Erasmus lamenteth
this in his fyrste
booke de ratine
concionandi,
where he speaketh
of the peop'e
cauled pilapii

272

Idolatrie.

A misterie of
marriage in fyre
and flint.

Experte
inchaunters.

Magical dartes.

The canker.

One nyght of
three moonethes.

Rich furies.

Plentie of sea
fyssh.

Wardhus.

tinewe runnyng for so great a space, in the meane whyle also spendyng sumtyme in feedyng. I suppose that this thyng was sumewhat knowen to the owld wyters, although receaued in manner by an obscure and doubtful fame. For they also wryte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hartes.

They neyther folowe the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it or are offended therwith as are the Iuwes: but do sumtymes receaue it fauorably to gratifie the princes to whome they obey. And that no more of theym imbrase the Christian fayth, the faute is sumwhat to bee imputed to the byffhoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure and charge of instructyng the nation, or suffered the faith of Christ to be suffocate euen in the fyrst spryng. For vnder the pretense of religion, they woulde haue aduanced their owne reuenues and ouerburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwyse here then in all Christendome, which thyng is doubtlesse the cause of mooste greuous defections. I harde Iohn a byffhoppe of Gothlande fay thus: We that gouerne the church of Vpfallia, and haue vnder owre diocesse a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynges of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen so absteynyng frome myfcheuous couetousnesse wherby religion is abufed for luker, we doo in all places owre diligent endeuour that we minister none occasion whereby this nation as offended by owre finnes, maye bee the lesse wyllyng to embrase the Christian fayth. This is the state of the religion amonge the Lapones: Althowgh of theyr owne institution and custome receaued of theyr prediceffours, they are Idolatours, honouryng that luyng thyng that they meete fyrst in the mornyng, for the god of that daye, and diuinyng thereby theyr good lucke or euyl. They also erecte images of stoness vpon the mountaines which they esteeme as goddes, attributing to them diuine honour. They solemne marriages, and begynne the same with fyre and flynte, as with a mysterie so aptely applyed to the image of stone as if it had byn receaued frome the myddeste of Grecia. For in that they adhibite a mysterie to fyre, as they doo not this alone (forasmuche as the Romanes obserued the same custome) euen so are they herein partly to be commended in that they vse the ceremonies of so noble a people. The mysterie of the flinte is no lesse to bee prayfed, both forasmuche as this is domesticall philosophie, and hath also a nere affinitie and signification to these solemnitie. For as the flynt hath in it fyre luyng hidde whiche appeareth not but by mouyng and force, so is there a secrete lyfe in both kyndes of man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction coommethe furth to a luyng byrth. They are furthermore experte inchaunters. They tye three knottes on a stryng hangyng at a whyppe. When they lose one of these, they rayse tollerable wyndes, When they lose an other, the wynde is more vehement. But by losyng the thyrde, they rayse playne tempestes as in owld tyme they were accustomed to rayse thunder and lyghtnyng. This arte doo they vse ageynst such as fayle by theyr coastes, and staye or moue the ryuers and seas more or lesse as they lyst to shewe fauoure or displeasure. They make also of leade certeyne shorte magicall dartes of the quantitie and length of a fynger. These they throwe ageynst suche of whome they desyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer so farre distant. They are sumtymes so vexed with the canker on their armes or legges that in the space of three dayes they dye through the vehemencie of the payne. The sonne fauleth very lowe in these regions: and prolongeth one continuall nyghte for the space of thre moonethes in wynter, duryng whiche tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the twylyght of euenynges and mornynges. This is very cleare, but continueth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght shynyng of the moone. Therefore that day that the sonne returneth to the hemispherie, they keepe holy day and make great myrth with solemne festiuitie. And these are the maners of this nation, not so brutyshe or saluage as woorthy therefore to bee cauled Lapones for theyr vnaptnesse or simplicitie as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empire and vsed no familiaritie or entercourse with other nations and knewe not the commoditie of theyr owne thynges, neyther the pryce and estimation of theyr furies in owre regions, by reason whereof they fould great plentie of them for sum of owre wares of smaule value.

The boundes or limittes of Laponia (beinge th[e] extreme lande of Scandia knowen towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the worlde yet vnknown to vs: And furthermore towarde the same parte of the vttermoost sea, accordyng to this description.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
The fyrst coaste,	70 [o']	72. [o']
The coaste folowyng,	80 [o']	7. [o']
That that yet foloweth,	90 [o']	70. [o']

Frome the fysshynge places and store houfes of this sea, they cary foorth to Nordbothnia and whyte Ruffia, landes confynyng to them, great plentie of fyssh. Wherby we may coniecture that this sea is extended on euery syde toward the North. Towarde the weste, it is limited with the mooste inwarde goulfe of at the Castell of Wardhus at the degree. 54 [o'] [Long.] 70 30. [Lat.]

Towarde the Southe, it is lymitted by a line drawen from thense vnto the degree. 90 [o' Long.] 69. [o' Lat.]

NORWEGIA OR NORWAY.



Ordway, is as much to say as the Northwaye. This was sumtyme a floryffhynge kyngedome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Frifelande and the Ilandes farre about, vntyll the domestical Empire was gouerned by the succession of inheritaunce. In the meane tyme while this gouernaunce ceased for lacke of dewe issue, it was instituted by consent of the nobilitie that the kynges shuld be admitted by election: supposinge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office forasmuche as they were placed in the same by such autoritie, and not by obteynynge the kyngedome by fortune and newe aduancement. But it came so to passe, that as euery of them excelled in richesie, ambition and fauour by confanginitie, so were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngedome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemptyng also occasions t[o]inuade foraigne realmes wherby they might strengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this present vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but also brynge all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, constitutyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in th[e] infirmitie and pouertie of the subiectes: which exemple, sum other princes doo folowe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forsaken suche vertues as shulde haue shyned in them, as to bee *Patres patriæ* (that is) the fathers of theyr countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proud countenaunce of dominion remayned, which opened licentioufnesse to th[e] iniurie of the subiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occasion had no further trust or ayde in the loue of the people, they prouided for th[e] indempnitie of theyr owne estate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and poure of them whom they desired to kepe in subiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edef[c]es, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repayrynge theyr state. For there are no consultations admitted for the redresse of the commonwelth: No man dare shewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vncerteyne of the myndes and consent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr poure all the nauigations of Norway, whereby it may exercise no trade by sea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may seeme most vnfortunate, as lackynge the fauoure of heauen, the sea, and the lande. From hense is brought into all Europe a fyfsh of the kindes of them whiche we caule haddockes or hakes indurate and dried with coude, and beaten with clubbes or stockes, by reason whereof the Germainys caule them stockefyssh. The takinge of these, is most commended in Ianuarie that they may bee sufficiently dried and hardened with coude. For such as are taken in the more temperate monethes, doo corrupte and putrifie: And are not meete to be caried furth.

The description of the west coaste, with the parte thereof lyinge most towarde the north.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
Wardhus (that is) the watche house, or watche towre, It is a stronge castell or fortresse appoynted to the Lapones.	54 [0']	70 30'
The coaste folowynge, Matthkur. etc.	48 50'	70. [0']

All the coast from hense, and the places neare about vnto the degree, being sumtyme lefte desolate by the seditions and destruction of Norway, the Lapones chose for theyr habitations, as comynge to a more beneficiall heauen.

From the Castel of Wardhus, vnto the degree, all the coaste in the sprynge tyme is dangerous to passe, by reason of whales of such huge byggenesse that sum of them growe to a hundreth cubites. For these fysshes at that tyme of the yeare resort togyther for generation. Such shyppes as chaunce to faule eyther vpon theyr bodies, or into suche whyrlepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great perell. The remedie to auoyde this daungiour, is to poure into the sea Castoreum (that is) oyle made of the stones of the beaste cauled the Beuer, menged with water. For with this, the hole hearde of whales vanyssheth suddely to the bottome of the sea: They make a terrible rorynge: and haue two breathynge places in the hyghest parte of theyr forheades, standynge furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, beinge couered with a skynne, through the which they blow waters lyke showers or stormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynynge three els in circuite, and euery knotte betwene theym, of one elle: They are at the least of. lx. [sixty] cubites in length: And are salted and kept in store houses. The greatest are vnprofitable to bee eaten by reason of theyr ranke and vnfaury taste which can not bee qualified.

Nidrosia standing vpon the fourth fyde of the sea banke, was the chiefe and metropolitane church through out all Norway, Ifelande, Gronlande, and the Ilandes thereabout. This cite was noble at the fyrst vnder the florysshing Empire of Norway, conteynynge in circuite. xxiiii. parysshes, but it is nowe brought in maner to a

273

Kyngdomes destroyed by factions.

The Danes.

The default of princes.

An exemple of tyranni.

The myserable state of Norway

Stockfys[h]e.

The Lapones

Shippes in daungiour by reason of whales.

Castoreum.

The rorynge of whales.

Whales salted and reserued.

The cite of Nidrosia.

274

A magnificall
churche.

village and is cauled in the Germaine toonge Trutham, as the house of the Dryides. There remaineth at this daye a Cathedrall churche in token of the ancient felicitie, beinge suche that in byggenesse and workemanship of wrought stone, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greefes or compasse abowt the altare, was destroyde by fire, and was repaired at the same tyme that wee write this historie. The charge of the reparafion, was esteemed to bee feuen thousande crownes: by which smaule portion, an estimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Churche.

Noysome beastes
of vnknown
generation.

The tracte of all the sea coastes Norway, is very quyete and meeke. The sea is not frofen. The snowes indure not longe. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence which they caule Leem or Lemmer. This is a lyttle foure footed beaste abowt the byggenesse of a ratte with a spotted skynne. These faule vppon the grounde at certeyne tempestes and fuddeyne showers, not yet knowen from whence they comme, as whyther they are browght by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwise engendered of thicke and feculent clowdes. But this is well knowen, that as soone as they faule downe, greene grasse and herbes are founde in theyr bowels not yet digested. They consume all greene thynges as doo locustes: And such as they only byte, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taste of the grasse newelye sproonge. They coome togyther by flockes as do swalowes: And at an ordinarie tyme, cyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whose corruption the ayer is made pestiferous and molesteth the Norwegians with swymmynge in the headde and the iaundies) or are consumed of other beastes named Lefrat. Towarde the East, it is included within the line that is drawen by the mountaynes whose endes or vttermost boundes they are that lye towarde the fouth aboue the mouthes of the ryuer Trolhetta. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, passeth by the castel of Wardhus, and is extended to the vnknown lande of the Lapones. [Longitude.] [Latitude.]

Wardhus.
The vnknown
lande of the
Lapones.
A serpent of
houge biggenesse.

The lake cauled Mos, and the Ilande of Hoffuen in the myddest therof, is in the degree. 45 30' 61. [o']

God warneth vs
by signes of
thynges to coome.

In this lake appeareth a straunge monster: which is, a serpent of houge byggenesse. And as to all other places of the worlde, blasfyng starres doo portende th[e] alteration and chaunge of thynges, so dooth this to Norway. It was seene of late (in the yeare of Christ. M. D. xxii.) apperynge farre aboue the water rowlyng lyke a greate pyller: And was by coniecture farre of, esteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortely after folowed the reiectyng of Christiernus kynge of Denmarke. Suche other monstrous thynges are sayde to bee seene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtlesse excepte wee shulde thinke that the diuine prouidence hauyng mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnyng them of their offences, dooth sende suche straunge thynges (as also blasfing starres and armies feyghtyng in the ayer, with suche other portentous monsters wherof no causes can bee founde by naturall thynges) we might els suspecte that such fyghtes were but imaginations of the fence of man deceaued.

On the East side, are exceeding rowgh montaynes which admit no passage to Suecia. The sea betwene Norway and the Ilandes, is cauled Tialleslund, Euripus, or the streightes.

The Ilande of Lofoth, whose myddest,

[Longitude.] [Latitude.]

42 [o'] 67 10'.

Langanas, whose myddest,

41 [o'] 67 [o']

Vastral, whose myddest.

41 34' 67 30'.

The streightes or
boyling sea.

The sea betwene these three Ilandes, is cauled Muscofstrom (that is) boyllyng. At the flowyng of the sea, it is swalowed into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the reflowyng, with no lesse violence then the streames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This sea is nauigable vntyll it bee lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of dewe tyme, are caried headlonge into whyrlepooles. The fragmentes of the lost ships, are seldome cast vp ageyne. But when they are caste vp, they are so brused and freted ageynste the rockes, that they seeme to bee ouergrowne with hore. This is the poure of nature, passyng the fabulous Simplegades and the fearefull Malea, with the daungerous places of Silla and Caribdis, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other sea hytherto knowen to man.

Dangerous
places in the sea.

Frutfull Ilandes
about Norway.

The Ilandes abowt Norway, are of such frutfull pasture, that they brynge not theyr beastes into the stables before the moneth of Nouember: And do many places winter them abrode.

SVECIA, OR SVETHLANDE.



Svecia, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, fyluer, copper, leade, Iren, fruyte, cattayle, and excedyng increase of fyssh of the ryuers, lakes, and the fea. And hath no lesse plentie of fuche wylde beastes as are taken with huntinge. Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Norway from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]end, 51 [o' Long.] 63 40' [Lat.] Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30'. 61. [o'] And from thense vnto the degrees. 61. [o'] 60. 30'. Aboue the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the fouth ende of Laponia from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]ende. 62. [o'] 70. [o'] Towarde the Easte, it is ended with the line from this ende vnto the degree. 63. [o'] 69. [o'] etc. Stockholme the chiefe citie. 64. [o'] 61. [o'] This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is strongly defended by arte and nature. It is situate in mariffhes after the maner of Venyce: and was therefore cauled Stokholme, forasmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The fea entereth into it with two armes or branches of fuch largenes and depth that ships of great burden and with mayne sayles may enter by the fame with theyr full freight. This suffered of late yeares greuous spoyle and destruction to the singular exemple of cruel hostilitie: And fuch, as the like hath not bin lightly shewed to any other citie receaued by league and composition.

In al the tract from Stokholme to the lake aboue the riuer of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30'. 63. 50'. are mountaines frutful of good filuer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the falmons and plentie of other fysshes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

The dukedome of Agermannia, occupieth the north fyde to the confines of Laponia. This tract is ful of wods in the whiche they hunt the beastes cauled Vros or Bifontes, which in theyr toonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde asses. These are of fuch height, that the highest part of their backes are equal with the measure of a man holdyng vp his armes as hyghe as he may reach. etc. Vpsalia the chiefe citie. 62. 63'. 30. [o'] here is buried the body of faynt Hericus kynge and martyr.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedome southwarde from the dukedome of Iemptia. Vnder this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Oplandia, is a dukedome and the nauil or middest of Scandia.

The citie of Pircho, on the north fyde of the lake of Meler, was once a great citie and able to arme. xiiii. thoufande men to the warres: but is nowe browght to a vyllage.

All the tracte of Oplandia, hath mynes of fyluer, copper, and steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye abowte Suecia, the myddest is. 67 30' [Long.] 61 30'. [Lat.] These were cauled of the owlde wryters Oone, the reason of which name remayneth to this day. For there are in these innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In so much that th[e]inhabitauntes of the nexte coaste, sayle thither in the mooneth of May whyle the byrdes fyt on theyr egges: which they steale and referue them in salte for a longe tyme.

BOTHNIA.



Bothnia is so named of the precious fures of all sortes that are caried from thense into foraigne regions. For by these and theyr fysshynge, they haue greate commoditie. Salmsons of the best fort are taken in these seas and are great ryches amonge these nations. Bothnia is diuided into two partes, as Nordbothnia, and South Bothnia, cauled Ostrobothnia. Nordbothnia, is terminated with the fouth ende of the Laponies vnto the ende. 78 30' [Long.] 69. [o'] [Lat.] Towarde the East, it is terminated with this end and vnto the degree. 78 30' 68 20'. Towarde the West, with the line terminyng the East fyde of Suecia: And towarde the Southe, with the residue of the goulfe of Suecia from th[e]ende that hath degrees. 63 [o'] 69. [o']

Ostrobothnia, towarde the East is terminated from the said ende of the most East coaste. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes from this ende vnto the degree. 71 [o'] 66 [o']

Towarde the north and weste, with part of the goulfe of Suecia. etc.

275

Golde and syluer.

Wardhus castell.

The goulfe of Suecia.

The citie of Stockholme.

Gold in cold regions. Fysshe.

The beaste cauled Vros or Elg.

Vpsalia.

Copperdalia.

Oplandia.

Byrdes.

Egges reserued in salte.

Precious fures.

Fysshe.

GOTHIA OR GOTHLANDE.

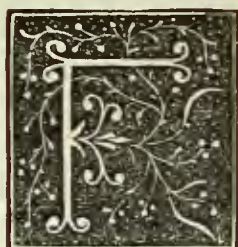


OTHIA, is by interpretacion good. For the holye name of God, is in the Germayne toonge Goth (that is) Good. At what tyme the Gothes vppon a general consent, sent furth theyr offsprung or succession to seeke newe feates or countreys to inhabite, and when they possessed the coastes of Meotis and Asia, none of the owlde wyrters haue made mention as farre as I knowe. But they haue byn knowen sence the tyme that the Romanes dilated theyr Empyre by Illirium (nowe cauled Slaunie) vnto the ryuer of Danubius. And were also famous from the tyme of Cesar Dictator and Octavianus Augustus by reason of theyr greate warres at Danubius beinge th[e]vttermoost bounde of Th[e]mpire. Neuerthelesse, in that renoume, what Gothia was, vnder what parte of heauen it was situate, or of whom the Gothes toke theyr original, it hath byn vnknown almost to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the south ende of Suecia: And towarde the weste, with the other mountaynes of Norway, which continewe from the boundes of Suecia to the mouthes of the ryuers of Trolheta. etc.

It hath many goodly townes, cities, castels, mines. etc. The citie of Visba, being in the degree. 61 30' 54 15.' was an ancient and famous marte towne as is Genua in Italie at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflicted by th[e]incursions of the pirates of the Danes and Muscouites, it was left desolate. There remayne to this day certeyne ruines whiche testifie the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the fyrste flacions of the Gothes that possessed Meotis. It is at this daye of frutfull foyle, and famous by many goodly and stronge castels and monasteries. There is amonge other, a monasterie of th[e]order of faynt Benedicte, in the which is a librarie of abowt two thousande bookes of owlde autours.

Abowt the yeare of Christ fourscore and. viii. the Gothes, vnto whom reforted a great multitude of other people of these northe partes of the worlde, as from Liuania, Prusia, Ruffia and Tartaria with diuers other countreys, makyng them dyuers Kynges and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and bryng in subiection the more parte of Europe, inuaded Italie, destroyd Rome, inhabited that part of Italia now cauled Lombardie, and lykewyfe subdued the roialmes of Castile and Aragonie. Theyr warres contynewed aboue three hundreth yeares.

FINLAND, AND ENINGIA.



Inlandia, is as much to say as a fayre lande or fine land, so named for the fertilitie of the grownde. Plinie semeth to caule it Finnonia. For he saith that abowte the coastes of Finlande, are many Ilandes without names. Of the which there lyeth one before Scithia cauled Pannonia. The goulfe cauled *Sinus Finnonicus*, is so named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confineth with Scithia, and runneth without all Tanais (that is to say) withoute the limetes of Europe to the confines or Asia. But that the name of Finlande seemeth not to agree hereunto, the cause is that this place of Plinie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Phinnonia, it was a likely erreure to caule it Pannonia forasmuch as these woordes doo not greatly differ in wrytynge and founde: so that the counterfecte name was soone put in the place of the trew name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge also ignorant of Phinnonia.

Eningia had in owlde tyme the tytyle of a kingedome, it is of fuch largeness. But hath nowe only the tytyle of an inferiour gouernoure, beinge vnder the dominion of the Slauns and vsyng the same tonge. In religion, it obserued the rites of the Greekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernaunce of the Mofcouites. But it is at this present vnder the kyng of Suecia and obserueth th[e]institutions of the Occidentall church. Spanysshe wyne are brought thyther in great plentie which the people vse merely and cherefully. It is termined on the north fyde, by the fourth line of Ostobothnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the west, it is termined with the sea of Finnonia accordyng to this description: and hath degrees. 71. [o' Long.] 66. [o' Lat.] etc.

276

Th[e]incursions of the Gothes.

The warres of the gothes ageynst the Romans.

The boundes of Gothland.

The citie of Visba.

Danes and Moscouites.

A librarie of two thousand bookes.

The Gothes inuaded Europe and destroyd Rome.

Pannonia falsely taken for Finnonia.

Eningia.

Spanyshe wyne.

OF THE DIFFERENCE OF REGIONS AND
CAUSES OF GREATE CITIES, AFTER THE DESCRIP-
TION OF HIERONIMUS CARDANUS,
LIBER. XI. *de Subtilitate.*



Here is an other difference of regions caused of coulde and heate. For suche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with to much coulde: And suche as are vnder the line where the soonne is of greateste force, are oppressed with heate. Such as are in the myddeft betwene both, are nearest vnto temperatnesse. Vnder the pole, it is imposible that there shulde bee populous cities bycause the lande is baren, and the cariage or conueyaunce of frutes, vyttayles, and other necessaries, is incommodious. By reason wherof, it is necessarie that th[e]inhabitauntes of suche regions lyue euer in continuall wanderynge from place to place, or els in smaule vyllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, aswell for that they haue more commodious conueyaunce for necessaries, as also that they may dwell better and more safely togyther then in vyllages by reason of fortifying theyr townes with walles, and exercisyng of artes and occupations whereby the one maye the better helpe the other. Yet that owlde Rome (beinge in a tem-

perate region) was of such incredible byggenesse, the cause was that it obeyned Th[e]mpire of the worlde, by reason wherof, all nations had confluence thither, and not the greatnesse of the walles. But it is necessarie that the greatest cities bee in hotte regions: fyrste, for that in such regions, parte of the foile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els most frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitye, when they fynde any place meete to susteyne a multitude, it foloweth of necessitie that greate cities bee buylded in such places by reason of great concourse of people refortyng to the same. An other greate cause is, that wheras in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to such commodious places, they passe through many deferte and perelous regions: So that it shalbe necessary for theyr better securitie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therefore wheras such a societie is once knytte togyther in a commodious place, it shulde bee great hinderance aswell to th[e]inhabitanes as to marchauntes if they shulde wander in incommodious places. And by this confluence, both of suche as dwell neare to suche places, and also of straungers and suche as dwell farre of, it is necessarie that in continuance of tyme, smaule townes becoome great cities, as are these: Quinsai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, otherwise cauled Babilon in Egipte. But if here any wyll obiecte Constantinople (in owlde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althowgh it bee not to bee compared to suche cities as are more then. lx. [sixty] myles in circuite, yet doo we aunswere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the cause of the greatnesse hereof, as wee sayde before of Rome.

277

THE HISTORIE WRITTEN IN THE LATIN
TOONGE BY PAVLVS IOVIVS BYSSSHOPPE OF NVCERIA
IN ITALIE, OF THE LEGATION OR AMBASSADE OF GREATE
Basilius Prince of Moscouia, to pope Clement the. vii. of
that name: In which is conteyned the description
of Moscouia with the regions confininge abowte
the same euen vnto the great and ryche
Empire of Cathay.



Demetrius the
ambassadour of
Moscouia.

Paulus Centurio.

Spices brought
from India to
Moscouia.
The ryuer Indus.

278

Oxus or Horina a
ryuer of Asia
runneth through
the desertes of
Sythia.

The sea Hircanum,
is now cauled
mare Abacuk or
mare de Sala.

Citrachan or
Astracan.

Sarmatia is that
greate countrey
wherein is
conteyned Russia
Liunia and
Tartaria, and the
north and East
part of Polonia.

Ageynst the
Portugales.

Intende fyrste briefly to describe the situation of the region which we plainely see to haue bin little knowen to Strabo and Ptolome, and then to procede in rehearsinge the maners, customes and religion of the people. And this in maner in the lyke simple style and phrased of speache as the same was declared vnto vs by Demetrius the ambassadoure, a man not ignoraunt in the Latin toonge, as from his youth brought vp in Liunia, where he learned the fyrst rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne to mans age, executed th[e] office of an ambassadour into dyuers Christian prouinces. For wheras by reason of his approued faithfulness and industrie, he had before byn sent as oratoure to the kynges of Suecia and Denmarke, and the great master of Prussia, he was at the last sente to Th[e]mperoure Maximilian, in whose courte (beinge replenyfshed with all sortes of menne) whyle he was conuersant, yf any thyng of barbarous maners yet remayned in so docible and quiet a nature, the same was put away by framyng

hym selfe to better ciuilitie. The cause of his legacie or ambassade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio a Genuese, who when he had receaued letters commendatori of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moscouia for the trade of marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the familiers of Duke Basilius as touchyng the conformation of the rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimitie and in maner owtrageous desire, fowght howe by a newe and incredible viage, spices myght bee brought from India. For whyle before he had exercised the trade of marchaundies in Syria, Egypte, and Pontus, he knewe by fame that spices myght bee conueighed from the further India vp the riuer Indus ageynst the course of the same, and from thence by a final vyage by lande passyng ouer the mountaynes of Paropanifus, to bee caried to the riuer Oxus in Bactria, which hauing his original almost from the same mountaynes from whence Indus dooth springe, and violently caryng with it manye other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Hircanum or Caspium at the porte cauled Straua. And he earnestly affirmed that frome Straua, is an easy and safe nauigation vnto the marte towne of Citrachan or Astrachan and the mouth of the ryuer Volga and from thence euer ageynst the course of the ryuers, as Volga, Occha, and Moscho, vnto the citie Moscha, and frome thence by lande to Riga and into the sea of Sarmatia and all the west regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accensed and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who hauyng by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and possessed all the marte townes, takyng holy into theyr handes all the trade of spices to bryng the same into Spayne, and neuerthelesse to sell them at a more greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And furthermore kepte the coastes of the Indian sea so straightly with continuall nauies, that those trades are thereby leste of, which were before exercised by the goulfe of Persia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the

freightes of the sea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre sea: by which trade all Asia and Europe was abundantly fatiffed and better cheape then hathe byn sence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with so manye incommodities of such longe viages wherby the spices are so corrupted by th[e]infection of the poompe and other fylthynesse of the shippes, that theyr naturall fauour, taste, and qualitie aswell hereby as by theyr longe referuyng in the shoppes, sellers, and warehouses in Luffsheburne, varyffheth and resolueth, so that referuyng euer the freshest and neweste, they fel only the woorst and most corrupted. But Paulus, although in all places he earnestly and vehemently argued of these thinges, and styrred great malice and hatred ageynst the Portugales, affirmynge that not only therby the customes and reuenues of princes shulde bee much greater if that vyage might bee discouered, but also that spices myght bee better cheepe bowght at the handes of the Moscouites, yet coude he nothinge auayle in this fute, forasmuche as Duke Basilius thought it not good to make open or disclose vnto a straunger and vnknowne man, those regions which giue enterance to the sea Caspium and the kyngedomes of Persia. Paulus therefore excludynge all hope of further trauayle, and become nowe of a marchaunte an Ambassadoure, brought Basilius letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his successoure, in the whiche he declared with honorable and reuerende woordes his good wyll and fauorable mynde towarde the bysshop of Rome. For a fewe years before, Basilius (then keepynge warres ageynste the Polones at suche tyme as the generall counsaile was celebrate at Laterane) requyred by Iohn, kynge of Denmarke (the father of Christierne who was of late expulsed from his kyngedome) that safe passage myght bee graunted to th[e]ambassadours of Moscouia to go to Rome. But wheras it so chaunced, that kynge Iohn and pope Iulius dyed both in one day, wherby he lacked a conuenient sequester or solicitoure, he omitted his consultation as touchynge that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot betwene him and Sigismunde the kynge of Polonie: who obtainynge the victorie ageynst the Moscouites at Boristhene, supplications were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and vanquyfyng the enemies of the Christian faithe, whiche thinge greatly alienated both kynge Basilius him selfe and all that nation from the bysshop of Rome. But when Adriane the. vi. departed from this lyfe, and lefte Paulus nowe redie to his seconde vyage, his successour Clemente the. vii. perceauynge that Paulus styll furiously reuolued and tossed in his vnquiet mynde that vyage towarde the Easte, sente hym ageyne with letters to Moscouia, by the which with propense and frendly persuasions, he exhorted Basilius to acknowledge the maiestie of the Romane church, and to make a perpetuall leage and agreement in matters of religion, which thyng shuld be not only for the health of his soule, but also greatly to th[e]increase of his honour: And further promysed, that by the holy autoritie of his office he wolde make hym a kynge and gyue hym kyngely ornamentes, if reiectyng the doctrine of the Greekes, he wolde conforme hym selfe to th[e]autoritie of the Romane church. For Basilius desyred the name and tytyle of a kynge by th[e]assignation of the bysshoppe of Rome, forasmuch as he iudged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the bysshoppes maiestie, of whome (as he knewe ryght well) euen Th[e]emperours them selues by an auncient custome haue receaued there insignes of honoure with the Diademe and scepter of the Romane Empire: althowghe it is sayde that he required the same of Th[e]emperour Maximiliane by many ambassades. Paulus therefore who with more prosperous iorneyes then great vantage, had from his youth trauayled a greate parte of the world, althowgh he were nowe aged and fore vexed with the strangurie, came with a prosperous and spedye iornay to Moscouia, where he was gently receaued of Basilius, and remayned in his courte for the space of twoo monethes. But in fine, mistrustyng his owne strength, and deterred by the difficultie of so greate a iorneye, when he had vtterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius th[e]ambassadour of Basilius, before we yet thought that he had byn in Moscouia. The bysshoppe commaunded that Demetrius shuld bee lodged in the most magnificent and princely part of the houses of Vaticane, the rouffes of whose edifices are gylted and embowed, and the chambers rychly furnysshed with fylken beddes and cloth of Arresse. Wyllynge furthermore that he shuld bee honorably receaued and vested with filke. He also assigned Franciscus Cheregatus the bysshoppe of Aprutium (a man that had often tymes byn ambassadoure to diuers regyons) to accompanie hym and shewe hym th[e]order and rites of owre religion with the monimentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes rested and recreate him selfe, wasshyng away the fylth he had gathered by reason of the longe vyage, then apparelled with a fayre vesture after the maner of his countrey, he was brought to the bysshoppes prefence, whom he honoured kneelyng with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therwith presented vnto his holynes certeyne fures of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and also delyuered the letters of Basilius, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpretoure Nicolaus Siccensis translated into the Latine toonge in this effecte as foloweth.

To pope Clemente sheparde and teacher of the Romane church, greate Basilius by the grace of God, lorde, Emperour and dominatour of al Ruffia, and great duke of Volodemaria, Moscouia, Nouogrodia, Plefcouia, Smolenia, Ifferia, Iugoria, Permnia, Vetcha, Bolgaria. etc. Dominator and great prince of Nouogrodia in the lower contrei: Also of Cernigouia, Razauia, Volotchia, Rezenia, Belchia, Rostouia, Iaroslauia, Belozeria,

The trade of spices in owld tyme.
Spices corrupted.

The Caspian sea.

Basilius wrot to Pope Adriane.

Warre betwene the Polones and Moscouites.

The seconde viage of Paulus to Moscouia.
The Pope persuadeth Basilius to acknowledge the Romane church.

279

The Emperours receaue there diademe of the bysshoppes of Rome.

Demetrius interteynment at Rome.

Demetrius is brought to the popes presence.

Basilius letters to Pope Clement.

Vdoria, Obdoria, and Condiuia. etc. Yow sent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citizen of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and counfayle with yowe and other Princes of Christendome ageynst the enemies of the christian faith: and that a free passage and redy way may bee opened for bothe yowre ambassadours and owres to coome and go to and fro, whereby by mutuall dewtie and indeuoure on both parties, we may haue knowlege of the state of thinges perteynyng to the welth of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hetherto happely by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god constantly and earnestly resisted the cruell and wycked enemies of the Christian faithe, so are we determined to doo hereafter. And are likewise redy to consente with other Christian Princes, and to graunt free passage into owre dominions. In consideration wherof, we haue sente vnto yowe owre faithfull feruaunt Demetrius Erasmus with these owre letters: and with hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: defyringe yowe also shortly to dismyse Demetrius with safegarde and indemnitie vnto the borthers of owre dominions. And we wyl likewyse doo the same if yowe sende yowre ambassadoure with Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of th[e] order and administration of such thynges as yowe require: so that beinge aduertised of the mindes and intent of al other Christian princes, we may also consult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in owr dominion in owr cite of Moscouia, in the yeare from the creation of the worlde, seuen thousande and three hundreth, the thyrde day of Aprell.

But Demetrius, as he is experte in diuine and humane thynges, and especially of holy scripture, seemed to haue secrete commaundement of greater matters whiche we thinke he wyl shortly declare to the senate in priuate consultations. For he is nowe deliuered of the feuer into the whiche he fell by chaunge of ayer, and hath so recouered his strengthe and natiue colour, that beinge a man of threescore yeares of age, he was not only presente at the popes masse celebrated with great solemnitie in the honour of faynt Cosmus and Damian but came also into the Senate at such tyme as Cardinal Campegius commynge fyrst from the legacie of Pannonia, was receaued of the pope and all the nobilitie of the courte: And furthermore also vewed the temples of the holye cite with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woonderynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges. So that we thinke that shortly after he hath declared his message, he shall returne to Moscouia with the bysshop of Scarense the popes legate, not vnrecompensed with iust rewards at the handes of his holynesse.

The name of the Moscouites is nowe newe, althowgh the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moschos confynge with the Sarmatians, and Plinie also placeth the Moschos at the sprynges of the great ryuer of Phasis in the region of Colchos aboue the sea Euxinus towarde the East. Theyr region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander abowt the springes of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the Northe starres cauled charles wayne or the greate beare, beinge for the most parte playne and of frutfull pasture, but in sommer in many places full of marisshes. For whereas all that lande is replenysshed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increased by the winter snow and ise resolued by the heate of the soonne, the playnes and fyeldes are therby ouerflowen with marisshes, and all iorneyes incumbered with continuall waters and myrie slabbyneffe vntyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and marisshes bee frosen ageyne, and giue safe passage to the sleades that are accustomed to iorney by the same. The woodde or forest of Hercynia (and not Hyrcania as is redde in sum false copies) occupieth a great parte of Moscouia, and is here and there inhabited, with houses buylded therein and so made thinner by the longe laboure of men that it dooth not nowe shewe that horroure of thicke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thinke it to haue. But beinge replenysshed with many wylde beastes, is so farre extended through Moscouia with a continual tracte betwene the East and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatnesse therof it hath deluded the hope of such as haue curiously searched th[e] ende of the same. In that parte that reacheth towarde Prussia, are founde the greate and fierce beastes cauled Vri, or Bisontes, of the kynde of bulles: Also Alces lyke vnto hartes, whiche the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germaynes Helenes. On the East syde of Moscouia, are the Scythians which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the stede of houses they vse wagons couered with beastes hydes, wherby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amaxouii. For cities and townes, they vse greate tentes and paulions, not defended with trenches or wales of tymber or stone, but inclosed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horsebacke. The Tartares are diuided by companies which they caule Hordas, which word in theyr toonge signifieth a consentynge compaigne of people gathered togyther in forme of a cite. Euery Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eyther his parentage or warlyke prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr borthers and contende ambiciously and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appeare that they consiste of innumerable Hordas, in that the Tartars possesse the most large desertes euen vnto the famous cite of Cathay in the furthest Ocean in the East. They also that are neareste to the Moscouites, are knowen by theyr trade of marchaundies and often incursions. In Europe nere vnto the place cauled Dromon Achillis in Taurica Chersoneso, are the Tartars cauled Precopites, the dowghter of whose prince,

280

Cardinall
Campegius.The ruines of
Rome.The description
of Moscouia.The altares of
great alexander.Marisshes in
sommer.The forest of
Hercynia.Wylde beastes
The Scythian
Ocean.The beastes
cauled Vri or
Bisontes.Helenes.
Of the Scythians
and Tartars.
Amaxouii.

Horda.

The large
dominion of the
Tartars.
Cathay.
The Tartars of
Europe.

Selymus Th[e]mperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the Polones, and waite the regions on euery fyde betwene the ryuers of Boristhenes and Tanais. They that in the same Taurica possesse Caffam a colonie of the Ligurians (cauled in owlde tyme Theodosia) doo bothe in religion and al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabite regions of Asia betwene Tanais and Volga, are subiecte to Basilius the kynge of the Moscouites, and chuse them a gouernour at his assignement. Amonge these, the Cremii afflicted with ciuile feditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeares loste theyr dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of Volga, do religiously obserue the frendship of the Moscouites and professe them selues to be their subiectes. Beyond the Cassanites towarde the Northe, are the Sciambani, rich in heardes of cattaille and consistyng of a great multitude of men. After these, are Nogai, whiche obteyne at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warly affayres. Theyr Horda, althowgh it bee most ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wysdome and vertue of the most ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealthe of Venyce. Beyonde the Nogais sumwhat towarde the fouth and the Caspian sea, the noblest nation of the Tartars cauled Zagathai, inhabite townes buylded of stone, and haue an exceedyng greate and fayre citie cauled Samarcanda, which Iaxartes the greate ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and passyng from thense about a hundreth myles, fauleth into the Caspian sea. With these people in owre dayes, Ismael the Sophi and kynge of Persia hathe often tymes kepte war with doubtfull successe: In so muche that fearyng the greatnesse of theyr poure which he resysted with all that he myght, he lefte Armenia and Taurisium the chiefe citie of the kyngedome, for a pray to Selimus the vycourer of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, descended Tamburlanes the myghty Emperoure of the Tartars whome sum caule Tanberlanis. But Demetrius sayth he shulde bee cauled Themircuthlu. Thys is he that abowte the yeare of Chryste. M. CCC. lxxxviii. [1398, A.D.] subdued almost all the Easte partes of the worlde: And lastly with an innumerable multytude of men inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiasetes Ottomanus their kynge, (and father to the greate grandfather of this Solyman that nowe lyueth) metinge at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bythia, gaue hym a fore battaile, in the whiche felle on the Turkes parte. 20000. men, and Baiasetes hym selfe was taken prisoner, whom Tamburlanes caused to bee locked in an iren cage and so caried hym abowte with hym through all Asia which he also conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquished in battayle the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chased beyonde Nilus, and tooke also the citie of Damascus.

Frome the region of these Tartars cauled Zagathe, is browght great plentie of silken apparel to the Moscouites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or droues of swyfte runnyng horses and clokes made of whyte feltes: also hales or tentes to withstonde th[e] iniuries of coude and rayne. These they make very artificially and apte for the purpose. They receaue agayne of the Moscouites, coates of cloth, and syluer monye, conteynyng all other bodely ornamentes, and the furnytur of superfluous housholde stuffe. For beyng defended ageynst the violence of wether and tempestes only with fuche apparell and couerture whereof wee haue spoken, they trust only to theyr arrowes which they shoote aswell backwarde flyng as when they assaile theyr enemies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuad Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmetts, coates of fense, and hooked swoordes which they bought of the Persians. Towarde the fouth, the boundes of Moscouia are termined by the same Tartars which possesse the playn regyons nere vnto the Caspian sea aboute the marysshes of Meotis in Asia, and aboute the ryuers of Borysthenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Gete, and Bastarne, inhabited these regions in oulde tyme, of whom I thynke the name of Ruffia tooke originall. For they caule parte of Lituania, Ruffia the lower, wheras Moscouia it selfe, is cauled whyte Ruffia. Lituania therefore, lyeth on the Northwest fyde of Moscouia. But towarde the full west the mayne landes of Prussia and Liuania are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moscouia, where the Sarmatian sea breakyng furth of the streights of Cimbrica Chersonesus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is bended with a crooked goulfe towarde the northe. But in the furthest bankes of that Ocean where the large kyngedomes of Norwaye and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almoste enuironed with the sea, are the people cauled Lapones, A nation exceedyng rude, fuspicyous, and fearefull, flyng and astonysed at the syght of al straungiers and shyppes. They knowe neyther frutes nor apples, nor yet any benignitie eyther of heauen or earth. They proude them meate onely with shootyng, and are appareled with the skynnes of wild beastes. They dwell in caues fylled with drye leaues, and in holow trees consumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age Suche as dwell neare the sea fyde, fysshe more luckyly then cunnyngly, and in the stead of frutes, reserue in store fysshes dryded with smoke. They are of smaule stature of body, with flatte visages, pale and wannye coloure, and very swyfte of foote. Their wittes or dispositions, are not knowen to the Moscouites theyr bortherers, who thynke it therefore a madnesse to assaile them with a smaule poure, and iudge it neyther profitable nor glorious, with greate armies to inuade a poore and beggerly nation. They exchange the most whyte fures which wee caule Armelines for other wares of dyuers fortes: Yet so, that they flie the syght and companye of all marchautes. For com-

The Tartars of Asia are subiecte to the Duke of Moscouia.

281

The Tartars beyonde the ryuer of Volga.

Nogai. Sigismundus cauleth them Nagaysri.

The noblest nation of the Tartars.

The ryuer of Iaxartes.

Ismael the Sophi, kynge of Persia.

The citie of Samarcanda.

Tamburlanes, the myghty Emperour of the Tartars.

The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasetes.

This apparel they haue of the Persians.

The Tartars trafficke with the Moscouites.

The tartars of the South syde of Moscouia.

Gete and Roxolani.

Russia. Moscouia cauled white Russia. Lituania. Prussia. Liuania. Denmarke. Norway. Suecia. The people of Laponia.

282

Armeline fures.

Bargeninge
withowt wordes.
The darke region
by this darke
region and the
Pigmei, is the way
to Cathay by the
Northe sea.

The scythian
Ocean.

The region of
colmogora.
The ryuer of
diuidna.

The ryuer of Iuga
or Iug.
Vstiuga.

The ryuer of
Diuidna or Dwina.

The ryuer
Suchana.

The frozen sea.

parynge and layinge theyr wares together, and leauynge theyr fures in a mydde place, they bargeyne with simple fayth, with abfente and vnknownen men. Sum men of great credite and autoritie, doo testifie that in a region beyond the Lappones, betwene the west and the north oppressed with perpetuall darkenes, is the nation of the people cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful grought, doo scarfely excede the stature of owre chyldren of ten yeares of age. It is a fearefull kynde of menne, and expresse theyr wordes in such chattering fort that they seeme to be fo much the more lyke vnto apes, in howe muche they dyffer in fence and stature from men of iust heyght.

Towarde the North, innumerable people are subiecte to th[e]mpire of the Moscouites. Theyr regions extende to the Scythian Ocean for the space of almoste three moonethes iorney.

Next vnto Moscouia, is the region of Colmogora, aboundyng with frutes. Through this runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge one of the greateste that is knowen in the Northe partes, and gaue the name to an other lesse ryuer which breaketh furthe into the sea Baltheum. This increafynge at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, ouerfloweth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nurishinge moysture, dooth maruelously resist the iniuries of heauen and the sharpe blastes of the North wynde. When it ryfeth by reafon of molten snowe and greate shoures of rayne, it fauleth into the Ocean by vnknownen nations, and with so large a trenche lyke vnto a greate sea, that it can not bee fayled ouer in one day with a prosperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and fruitful Ilandes. For come there cast on the grounde, groweth without any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celeritie of haftyng nature fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, dooth both sprynge and rype in short space.

Into the ryuer Diuidna, runneth the ryuer Iuga: And in the corner where they ioyne togyther, is the famous marte towne cauled Vstiuga distant from the chiefe cite Mosca. vi. hundreth myles.

Note that wheras Paulus Iouius wryteth here that the ryuer of Diuidna, otherwyse cauled Dwina, runneth through the region of Colmogor, it is to bee vnderstode that there are two ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeast fyde of Moscouia towarde the frofen sea, and the other on the fouthwest fyde faulyng into the sea Baltheum, or the goulfe of Finnonia by the cite of Riga in Liuania. And forasmuch as the trewe knowlege of these and certeyne other is very necessary for all such as shall trade into Moscouia or other regions in those coastes by the northe sea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hyftorie of Moscouia, most faythfully and largely wrytten by Sigismundus Liberus who was twyfe sent ambassadour into Moscouia, as fyrst by Maximilian Th[e]mperour, and then ageyne by Ferdinando kyng of Hungary and Boheme. This haue I doone the rather, for that in all the mappes that I haue seene of Moscouia, there is no mention made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Colmogor and by the cite of the same name, although the prouynce of Dwina bee in all cardes placed Northwarde from the ryuer of Vstiug or Succana, whiche is the same Dwina whereof we nowe speake, and wherof Paulus Iouius wryteth, although it bee not so named but from the angle or corner where ioynynge with the ryuer of Iug and Suchana, it runneth Northwarde towarde the cite of Colmogor, and from thence fauleth into the north or frofen sea, as shall hereafter more playnly appeare by the woordes of Sigismundus, that the one of these bee not taken for the other being so farre distant that great error myght ensue by mistakynge the same, especially bicause this wherof Paulus Iouius wryteth is not by name expresse in the cardes, but only the other, wherby the error myght bee the greater. Of that therefore that runneth by the confines of Liuania and the cite of Riga, Sigismundus wryteth in this maner.

The lake of Dwina, is distante from the sprynges of Boristhenes, almost tenne myles, and as many from the marysshe of Fronowo. From it, a ryuer of the same name towarde the west, distante from Vuilna. xx. [twenty] myles, runneth from thence towarde the Northe, where by Riga the chiefe cite of Liuania, it faulethe into the Germaine sea which the Moscouites caule Vuareczkote morie. It runneth by Vuitepsko, Polotzko, and Dunenburg, and not by Plefcouia as one hath wrytten. This ryuer beinge for the moste part nauigable, the Lyuons caule Duna.

Of the other Dwina wherof Paulus Iouius speaketh, he wryteth as foloweth.

The prouynce of Dwina and the ryuer of the same name, is so named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Iug meatynge togyther, make one ryuer so cauled. For Dwina in the Moscouites tounge, signifieth two. This ryuer by the course of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the fayde sea runneth by the coastes of Swecia and Norwaye, and diuidethe Engronlande from the vnknowne lande. This prouynce situate in the ful north, perteyned in tyme past to the fegniorie of Nouogorode. From Moscouia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered. CCC. [three hundred] myles: Albeit as I haue sayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the iorney can not bee well obserued by reafon of many marysshes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thinke it to bee scarfely twoo hundreth myles: forasmuch as from Moscouia to Vuolochda, from Vuolochda to Vstyug sumwhat into the Easte: and laste of all from Vstyug by the ryuer Dwina, is the ryght passage to the northe sea. This region, besyde the castel of Colmogor and cite of Dwina, situate almost in the mydde way betwene the spryngs and mouthes of the ryuer, and the castell of Pienega standynge in the very mouthes of Dwina, is vtterly without townes and castels: yet hath it many vyllages whiche are farre in sunder by reafon of the barrenesse of the foyle. etc.

In an other place he wryteth, that Suchana and Iug, after they are ioyned togyther in one, loofe theyr fyrste names and make the ryuer Dwina. etc. But lette vs nowe returne to the hyftorie of Paulus Iouius.

Vnto Vstiuga, from the Permians, Pecerrians, Inugrians, Vgolicans, and Pinnegians, people inhabytynge the north and northeast prouynces, are brought the precious fures of Marterns and Sables: Also the cafes of woulfes and foxes both whyte and blacke: And lykewyse the skynnes of the beastes cauled Ceruarii Lupi (that is) harte woolfes, beinge engendered eyther of a wolfe and a hynde, or a harte and a bytch wolfe. These fures and skyns, they exchange for dyuers other wares. The best kynde of fables and of the finest heare wherwith nowe the vestures of princes are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are couered with the

283

Dwina and
Suchana.

Gronland or
Engronland.

Vnderstand myles
of Germany, that
is leaques.

Rych fures.
Lupi Ceruarii.

Sables.

expresse similitude of the luyng beaste, are brought by the Permians and Pecerrians, whiche they them selues also receaue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare vnto the north Ocean. The Permians and Pecerrians, a lyttle before owre tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols after the maner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowledge Chryste theyr God. The passage to the Inugrians, and Vgolicans, is by certeyne rowgh mountaynes, which perhappes are they that in owlde tyme were cauled Hyperborei. In the toppes of these, are founde the beste kyndes of Falcons: whereof one kynde (cauled Herodium) is whyte with spotted fethers. There are also ierfalcons, fakers, and peregrines, whiche were vnknownen to the ancient princes in theyr exceffiue and nife pleasures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beinge all tributaries to the kinges of Moscouia) are other nations the last of men, not knowen by any viages of the Moscouites, forasmuche as none of theym haue passed to the Ocean, and are therefore knowen onely by the fabulous narrations of marchauntes. Yet is it apparente that the ryuer of Diuidna or Dwina, drawyng with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a vehement course towarde the northe: and that the sea is there exceedyng large: so that faylyng by the coast of the ryght hande, shippes may haue passage from thense to Cathay as is thought by most lykely coniecture, excepte there lye sum lande in the waye. For the region of Cathay perteyneth to th[e]xtreme and furthest partes of the Easte, situate almost in the paralell of Thracia, and knowen to the Portugales in India when they fayled neare thereunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Chersonesus, and brought from thense certeyne vestures made of Sables skynnes, by which only argument it is apparente that the citie of Cathay is not farre from the coastes of Scythia.

But when Demetrius was demaunded whether eyther by the monumentes of letters or by fame lefte theym of theyr prediceffours, they hadde any knowlege of the gothes who nowe more then a thousand yeares sence subuerted Th[e]mpire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the citie of Rome, he answered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kynge Totilas theyr chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them: And that dyuers nations of the north regions conspired to that expedition, and especiallye the Moscouites: Also that that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous Liuens and wanderynge Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes forasmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scandania and Iselande, were the auctoures of that inuasion.

And with these boundes are the Moscouites inclosed on euery side, whom we thinke to be those people that Ptolome cauled Modocas: but haue doubtlesse at this day their name of the riuer Mosco whiche runneth through the chiefe citie Mosca named also after the fame. This is the most famous citie in Moscouia, aswell for the situation thereof beinge in maner in the mydde of the region, as also for the commodious oportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houfes, and stronge fence of so fayre and goodly a castell. For the citie is extended with a longe tracte of buyldynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the space of fyue myles. The houfes are made all of tymber, and are diuided into parlors, chambers, and kichins of large roomes: yet neyther of vnseemely height or to lowe, but of decent measure and proportion. For they haue greate trees apte for the purpose brought from the foreste of Hercinia? of the which, made perfectly rounde like the mastes of shippes, and so layde one vpon an other that they ioyne at the endes in right angles, where being made very faste and sure, they frame theyr houfes thereof of maruelous strength with smaule charges and in verye short tyme. In maner all the houfes haue priuate gardens aswell for pleasure as commoditie of herbes, wherby the circuite of the disperfed citie appeareth very greate. All the wardes or quarters of the citie, haue their peculiar chappels. But in the chiefe and highest place therof, is the Church of owre lady of ample and goodly workemanshype, whiche Aristoteles of Bononie, a man of singular knowlege and experience in architecture, buylded more then lx. [sixty] yeares sence. At the very head of the citie, a little ryuer cauled Neglina which dryueth many corne mylles, entereth into the ryuer Moscus, and maketh almost an Iland, in whose end is the castell with many strong towrs and bullwarkes, buylded very fayre by the diuise of Italien architecturs that are the masters of the kinges workes. In the fieldes abowt the citie, is an incredible multitud of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chase or persue with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kinges familiars and straunge ambassadours to whom he giueth licence by speciall commaundement. Almost three partes of the citie is inuironed with two ryuers, and the refydue with a large mote that receaueth plentie of water frome the fayde ryuers. The citie is also defended on the other syde with an other ryuer named Iaufa, whiche fauleth also into Moscus a little beneath the citie. Furthermore Moscus runnyng towarde the South, fauleth into the ryuer Ocha or Occa muche greater then it felse at the towne Columna, and not very farre from thense Ocha it felse increased with other riuers, vnladeth his streames in the famous riuer Volgo, wher at the place where they ioyne, is situate the citie of Nouogrodia the lesse, so named in respecte of the greater citie of that name from whence was brought the firste colonie of the lesse citie. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Kha, hath his originall of the greate marysshes named the white lakes. These are aboue Moscouia betwene the Northe and the West, and fende furthe from them almost all the ryuers that are disperfed

The mountaines
cauled Hiperborei
Haukes of diuers
kyndes.

The passage from
Moscouia to
cathay.

Cathay.

Master Eliot
cauleth Cathay
the region of
sinarum.

The Gothes
subuerted the
Romane Empire.

The north regions
conspired ageinst
the Romans.

Moscouia

284

The citie of
Mosca.

Richard
chaunceler toulde
me that these
mastes are
sumwhat holowe
on the one syde,
and that the hole
syde of the next
entereth into the
same wherby they
lye very close.

The castel of
Mosca.

White hares and
roe buckes.

The ryuer Ocha.

Volga.

Nouogrodia.

Rha.

The whyte lakes.

The Ryphean and
hyperborean
mountaynes.
Tanais and
Boristhenes.
The sea Euxinus.

The Caspian sea.
Astrachan.
Media.
Armenia.
Persia.
Casan.

285

Sura.
Surcium.

Nouogrodia.

The temple of
Sancta Sophia.

The eleuation of
the pole at
Nouogrodia and
Moscouia.
Heate by reason
of short nyghtes.

The citie of
Volodemaria.

The citie of
Moscha.

Ottoferia.

Volga.

Riga.

The citie of
Piescouia.

The citie of
Lubeke.

From Rome to
Moscouia.

Wynter trauayle
by ise and snowe.

Marysshes in
sommer.

into dyuers regions on euery fyde, as wee see of the Alpes from whose toppes and sprynges descend the waters of whose concourse the ryuers of Rhene, Po, and Rodanum, haue theyr increase. For these marysshes in the steade of mountaynes ful of sprynges, minister abundant moysture, forasmuch as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe trauayles of men, in so much that manye that haue byn studious of the owlde Cosmographie, suppose the Ryphean and Hyperborean mountaynes so often mentioned of the ancient writers, to bee fabulous. From these marysshes therefore, the ryuers of Dwina, Ocha, Moschus, Volga, Tanais, and Borysthenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Borysthenes is at this day cauled Neper. This, a lyttle beneath Taurica, runneth into the sea Euxinus. Tanais is receaued of the marysshes of Meotis at the noble marte towne Azoum. But Volga leauynge the citie of Moscha towarde the fouth, and runnyng with a large circuite and greate wyndynges and creekes first towarde the Easte, then to the West, and lastly to the fouth, fauleth with a full streame into the Caspian or Hyrcan sea. About the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Cytrachan, which sum caule Astrachan, where martes are kepte by the marchauntes of Media, Armenia, and Persia. On the further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cauled Casan, of the which the Horda of the Casanite Tartars tooke theyr name. It is distante from the mouth of Volga and the Caspian sea fyue hundreth myles. About Casan. C1. [one hundred and fifty] myles at the enteraunce of the ryuer Sura, Basilius that now reigneth, buylded a towne cauled Surcium, to th[e]intente that in those desertes, the marchauntes and trauailers which certifie the gouernours of the marches of the doinges of the Tartars and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may haue a safe mansion amonge theyr customers.

Th[e]emperours of Moscouia at dyuers tymes, eyther moued therto by occasion of thynges presente, or for the defyre they had to nobilitate newe and obscure places, haue kepte the feate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers cities. For Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weste and the Lyuon sea, not many yeares paste, was the headde citie of Moscouia, and obteyned euer the chiefe dignitie by reason of the incredible number of houses and edifi[c]es, with the oportunitie of the large lake replenysshed with fyssh, and also for the fame of the moste auncient and venerable temple whiche more then foure hundreth yeres fence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia Chryste the foonne of God, accordynge to the custome of the Emprours of Bizantium nowe cauled Constantinople. Nouogrodia is oppressed in maner with continuall wynter and darkeneffe of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Artike eleuate above the Horizon threescore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then Moscouia by almoste. vi. degrees. By whiche dyfference of heauen, it is fayde that at the sommer steye of the foonne, it is burnte with continuall heate by reason of the shorte nyghtes.

The citie also of Volodemaria, beinge more then twoo hundreth myles distant from Mosca towarde the Easte, had the name of the chiefe citie and kynges towne, whyther the feate of Th[e]empire was tranlated by the valiant Emperours for neccessarie considerations, that such ayde, furniture, and requisites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at hande at suche tyme as they kepte continuall warre ageynste the Tartars theyr bortherers. For it is situate withowt Volga, on the bankes of the ryuer Clefma, whiche fauleth into Volga. But Moscha, aswell for those gyftes and commodities whereof we haue spoken, as also that it is situate in the myddest of the most frequented place of all the region and Empire, and defended with the ryuer and Castel, hath in comparyson to other cities byn thought moste woorthy to bee esleemed for the chiefe. Moscha is distant from Nouogrodia fyue hundreth myles: and almost in the mydde way is the citie of Ottoferia (otherwyse cauled Otwer or Tuwer) vppon the ryuer of Volga. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and springes of the fame, not yet increased by receauyng so many other ryuers, runneth but slowly and gentelly: And passeth from thense to Nouogrodia through many wooddes and desolate playnes. Furthermore from Nouogrodia to Riga the nexte porte of the Sarmatian sea, is the iornay of a thousand myles lyttle more or lesse. This tracte is thought to bee more commodious then the other, bycause it hath manye townes and the citie of Plescouia in the waye, beinge imbrafed with two ryuers. From Riga (pertenynge to the dominion of the greate master of the warres of the Liouons) to the citie of Lubecke a porte of Germanie in the goulfe of Cymbrica Chersonesus (nowe cauled Denmarke) are numbered aboute a thousande myles of daungerous faylynge.

From Rome to the citie of Moscha, the distance is knowen to bee two thousande and fyxe hundreth miles by the nearest way passynge by Rauenna, Tarnisium, the Alpes of Carnica: Also Villacum, Noricum, and Vienna of Pannonie: and from thense (passynge ouer the ryuer of Danubius) to Olmutium of the Marouians and to Cracouia the chiefe citie of Polonie, are coumpted. xi. hundreth myles. From Cracouia to Vilna the headde citie of Lithuania, are coumpted fyue hundreth myles: and as many from that citie to Smolenzko situate beyonde Borysthenes, from whense to Moscha are coumpted fyxe hundreth myles. The iorney from Vilna by Smolenzko to Moscha, is trauayled in wynter with expedite fleades and incredible celeritie vppon the snowes hardened with longe froste and compacte lyke Ise by reason of mucche wearynge. But in sommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpasse but by difficulte and laborious trauayle. For when the snowes by the continuall heate of the foonne begyn to melte and diffolue, they caufe great marysshes and quamyres able to intangle bothe horse

and man, were it not that wayes are made through the same with brydges and caufeys of wood, and almost infinite labour.

In all the region of Moscouia, there is no wayne or mine of golde or fyluer, or any other common metall excepte iren: neyther yet is there any token of precious stonnes. And therefore they bye all those thynges of fraungers. Neuerthelesse, this iniurie of nature is recompensed with abundaunce of rich furies, whose price by the wanton nicenesse of men is growne to such exceffe that the furies perteynyng to one sorte of apparell, are nowe fouldre for a thousande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that these haue byn bought better chepe when the furthest nations of the north beinge ignorant of our nyse finenesse and breathyng defyre toward effeminate and superfluous pleasures, exchanged the same with muche simplicitie often tymes for tryfles and thynges of smaule value: In so muche that commonly the Permians and Pecerrians, were accustomed to gyue so many skynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde togyther, the marchauntes of Moscouia coulde drawe through the hole where the hafte or handyll entereth into the same. But the Moscouites sende into all partes of Europe the best kynde of flaxe to make linnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Also many oxen hydes, and excedyng great masses of waxe.

They proudly denye that the Romane church obteyneth the principate and preminent autoritie of all other.

They so abhorre the nation of the Iewes, that they detest the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admitte them to dwell within theyr dominions: esteemyng them as wycked and mischeuous people that haue of late taught the Turkes to make gunnes. Befyde the bookes that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue also the commentaries and homelies of faynt Ambrose, Augustine, Ierome, and Gregorie, translated into the Illirian or Slaun tounge which agreeth with theirs. For they vse bothe the Slaun tounge and letters, as doo also the Sclauons, Dalmates, Bohemes, Pollones, and Lithuanes. This tounge is spredde further then any other at this day. For it is familiar at Constantinople in the courte of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypte amonge the Mamalukes in the courte of the Soltane of Alcayre otherwyse cauled Memphis or Babilon in Egipte. A greate number of bookes of holy scripture are translated into this tounge by th[e] industrie of faynte Ierome and Cyrillus. Furthermore, befyde the hystories of theyr owne countreys, they haue also bookes conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyse of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no maner of knowlege of philosophie, Astronomie, or speculatiue phisicke with other liberall sciences: But such are taken for phisitians as professe that they haue often times obserued the vertue and qualitie of sum vnknown herbe.

They number the yeares, not from the byrth of Chryste, but from the begynnyng of the worlde. And this they begin to accoumpte, not frome the monethe of Ianuary, but from September.

They haue fewe and simple lawes throwghe owte all the kyngedome, made by the equite and conscience of theyr princes, and approued by the consent of wyse and good men: and are therefore greatly for the welthe and quyetnesse of the people forasmuch as it is not lawfull to peruerte them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or attorneys. They punyssh theues, rouers, priuie pyckers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantitie of coulde water vpon fuche as they suspecte, whiche they say to bee an intollerable kynde of tormente. But sumtymes they manacle fuche as are sloborne, and wyll not confesse apparent crymes.

Theyr youth is exercised in dyuers kyndes of games and plays refembelyng the warres, wherby they both practyse pollicie and increase theyr strength. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and afoote. Also runnyng at the tylte, wrestelyng, and especially shootyng. For they gyue rewardes to fuche as excell therein.

The Moscouites are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square set and myghtyly brawned. They haue al grey eyes, longe beardes, shorte legges, and bygge bellies. They ryde very shorte, and shoote backwarde very cunnynghly euen as they flye. At home in theyr houses, theyr fare is rather plentiful then deyntie. For theyr tables are furnysshed for a smaule price with all fuche kyndes of meates as may bee defyred of such as are gyuen to most exceffiue gluttony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lyttle fyluer perse the piece. There is incredible plentie of beastes and cattayle bothe greate and smaule. The fleshe of biese that is kylled in the myydest of wynter, is so congeled and frozen, that it putrifiethe not for the space of two moonethes. Theyr beste and moste delicate dysshes, are gotten by huntynge and haukyng as with vs. For they take all fortes of wylde beastes with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and erens or eagles of a marueylous kynde whiche the region of Pecerra bryngeth furth vnto them, they take not onely fesantes and wylde duckes, but also cranes and wylde swannes. They take also a foule of darke coloure abowte the byggenes of a goose with redde ouerbrowes, whose fleshe in taste passeth the pleasauntesse of Pheafauntes. These in the Moscouites tounge are cauled *Tetrao*, whiche I suppose to bee the same that Plinie cauleth *Erythratao*, knowne to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the Rhetians whiche inhabite the laundes abowte the sprynges of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Volga ministreth vnto them great fysshes and of pleasaunte taste: especially sturgions or

Other wryters deny this.

286

Riche furies.

The price of furies.

How many sables skynnes for an axe.

Flax.
Oxen hydes.
Waxe.

Thei abhorre the Iewes.

Their bokes and religion.

The Sclauon tounge spred further then any other.

Saynte Ierome was borne in Dalmatia nowe cauled Sclauonia.

Howe they number the yeares.

Fewe and simple lawes

The exercise of youth.

Shootyng.

The corporature of the Moscouites.

Theyr fare.

287

Fleshe preserued longe by reason of coulde.

Haukyng and huntynge.

Plentie of fyssh.

Fyssh longe
reserued in Ise.

Wyne.

Maluasie.

All the north
parte of the firme
lande was cauled
Scythia and the
people Scythians.

Drynke cooled
with Ise.

Wyne of cherries.

Their women.

Thomas
Paleologus.
The conquest of
the turkes in
Grecia.

How the princes
chuse theyr wyues.

288

Duke Basilius.

War betwene the
Polones and
Moschouites.

War betwene the
Moschouites and
Tartars.

The Moscouites
army.
Their banner.

Their horses and
hors[e]men.

rather a kynde of fyssh lyke vnto flurgions: whiche in the wynter seafon beinge inclosed in Ise, are longe reserued freshe and vncorrupte. Of other kindes of fysshes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof wee haue spoken before. And wheras they vtterly lacke natiue wyne, they vse suche as are brought from other places. And this only in certeine feastes and holy misteries. Especially the pleasaunte Maluasies of the Iland of Creta nowe cauled Candy, are had in moste honoure: and vsed eyther as medicens or for a shewe of excessiue aboundaunce, forasmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wyne brought frome Candy by the streyghtes of Hercules pillers and the Ilandes of Gades, and tossed with such fluddes of the inclosed Ocean, shulde be droonke amonge the Scythian snowes in theyr natiue puritie and pleasauntnesse.

The common people drinke mede made of hony and hoppes foddren together, whiche they keepe longe in pytched barrells where the goodnes increaseth with age. They vse also beere and ale as doo the Germanes and Polones. They are accustomed for delycatenes in fommer to coole theyr beere and mede with puttynge Ise therin, whiche the noble men reserue in theyr sellars in great quantitie for the same purpose. Summe there are that delyte greatly in the iuse that is pressed owte of cherries before they bee full ripe: whiche they affyrme to haue the coloure of cleare and ruddy wyne with a verye pleasaunte taste.

Theyr wyues and women, are not with them in suche honoure as they are in other nations. For they vse them in maner in the place of seruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obserue theyr walkes and haue an eye to their chastitie. They are seldom bydden furth to any feastes: nether are permytted to reforte to churches farre of, or to walke abroad withoute sum greate confyderation. But the common forte of women, are easely and for a smaule price allured to lecherye euen of straungers: by reason wherof, the gentelmen doo lyttle or nothyng esteeme them.

Iohn the father of kynge Basilius dyed more then. xx. [twenty] yeares fence. He maryed Sophia the doughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Peloponnesus (now cauled Morea) and was brother to Th[e]mperoure of constantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dryuen owte of Grecia by the Turckes. Of her were fyue chylde borne, as Basilius hym selfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Basilius tooke to wyfe Salomonie the doughter of George Soborouius a man of synguler fidelitie and wysdome and one of hys counsaile. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barennesse obscured.

When the prynces of Moscouia delyberat to marie, theyr custome is to haue choise of all the vyrgynes in the realme, and to cause suche as are of most fayre and bewtyfull vyfage and personage with maners and vertues accordyng, to bee brought before them. Which afterwarde they committe to certayne saythful men and graue matrones to bee furder vewed, in so muche that they leaue no parte of them vnferched. Of these, shee whome the prynce most lyketh, is pronounced woorthy to bee hys wyfe, not withoute greate and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, lyuyng for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgynes also which stode in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often times the same day to gratyfy the prynce, maryed to hys noble men, gentelmen, and capytaynes: wherby it sumtymes commeth to passe that whyle the princes contemne the lynage of roiall descende, suche as are borne of humble parentage, are exalted to the degree of princely estate. In lyke maner as Th[e]mperours of the turckes were accustomed to bee chosen by cumlynesse of personage and warly prowes.

Basilius was vnder th[e]age of forty and feuen yeares, of cumly personage, singuler vertue, and princely qualities, by all meanes studyous for the prosperitie and commodities of hys subiectes. Furthermore in beneuolence, lyberalytie and good successe in hys doynge, to bee preferred before his progenitours. For when he hadde. vi. yeares kepte warre with the Lyuons that moued. lxxii. [seuenty-two] confederate cities to the cause of that warre, he obteyned the victorie and departed with fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted. Also at the begynnyng of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight and took prifoner Constantine the capitayne of the Ruthens whom he brought to Moscouia tyed in chaynes. But shortly after at the ryuer Boristhenes aboue the cite of Orfa, he hym selfe was ouercomne in a great battayle by the same Constantine whom he hadde dismissed: Yet so, that the towne of Smolenzko whiche the Moscouites possessed before and was now wonne by the Polons, shulde styll perteyne to the dominions of Basilius. But ageynste the Tartars, and especially the Tartars of Europe cauled the Precopites, the Moscouites haue often tymes kepte warre with good successe, in reuenge of th[e]iniuries doone to them by theyr incurfions.

Basilius is accustomed to bryng to the fielde more then a hundreth and fiftie thousande horsemen deuided into three bandes and solowyng the banners or enseignes of theyr capytaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges wyng, is figured the image of Iofue the capitayne of the Hebrewes at whose prayer the soone prolonged the daye and steyde his course as wytnesse the hystories of holye scripture. Armies of foote-men are in maner to no vse in those great wyldernes, aswel for theyr apparel beinge loose and longe, as also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres truste rather to the swyftnesse of theyr lyght horses then to trye the matter in a pyght fyelde.

Theyr horses are of lesse then meane stature: but verye stronge and swyfte. Theyr horsemen are armed

with pykes, ryettes, mafes of Iren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked fwoordes. Their bodies are defended with rounde Targets after the maner of the Turkes of Asia: or with bendyng and cornarde targettes after the maner of the Greekes: Also with coates of mayle, brygantynes, and sharpe helmettes. Basilius dyd furthermore instytute a band of hargabusiers on horfbacke: and caused many greate brafen pieces to bee made by the woorkemanshype of certeyne Italyans: and the same with theyr stockes and wheeles to bee placed in the castell of Mosca.

The kynge hym felfe with pryncely magnyfycence and finguler familiaritie (wherwith neuerthelesse no parte of the maiestie of a kyng is vyolate) is accustomed to dyne openly with hys noble men and straunge ambassadours in hys owne chamber of prence where is feene A meruelous quantitye of fyluer and gylte plate standynge vppon two great and high cubbardes in the same chamber. He hath not abowte hym any other garde for the custody of hys perfon fauyng only hys accustomed famylye. For watche and warde is dyligently kepte of the faythfull multytude of the citifens: In so muche that euery warde or quarter of the citie is inclosed with gates rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man rasshely to walke in the citie in the nyght, or withowt lyght. All the courte confysteth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyse fouldyers which are cauled owte of euery regyon by theyre townes and vyllagies, and commaunded to wayte course by course at certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre is proclaymed, all the armye is collected bothe of the owlde fouldiers and by musterynge of newe in all prouynces. For the lieuenautes and capytaynes of the armye, are accustomed in all cities to muster the youth, and to admytte to th[e]order of fouldyers such as they thynke able to serue the turne. Theyre wages is payde them of the common treasurye of euery prouynce which is gathered and partely payde also in the tyme of peace although it bee but lyttle. But such as are assigned to the warres, are free from all tributes, and inioye certein other priuilegies wherby they may the more gladly and cherfully seræ theyr kynge and defend theyr contrey. For in the tyme of warre, occacyon is mynyfired to shewe trewe vertue and manhodde, where in so greate and necessarie an institution, euery man accordynge to hys approued actiuitie and ingenyous forwardnesse, may obteyne the fortune eyther of perpetuall honoure or ignominie.

Theire armure.

Hargabusiers.
Gunnnes.

The Prince dyneth
openly.

Sigismundus sayth
that much of this
is golde.

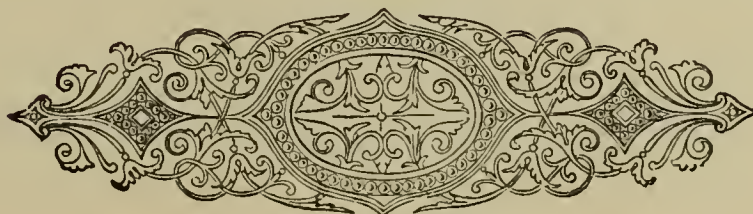
The custodie of
the citie.

The dukes courte.

Souldyers wages
of the common
treasury.

*Vix olim vlla fides referentibus horrida regna
Moschorum, et Ponti, res glacialis erat.
Nunc Iouio autore, illa oculis lustramus, et vrbet.
Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.
Moschouiam, monumenta Ioui, tua culta reuoluens.
Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.*

289



OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES
AS CONCERNYNGE MOSCOVIA: GATHERED OWT OF
THE BOOKES OF SIGISMVNDVS LIBERVS.

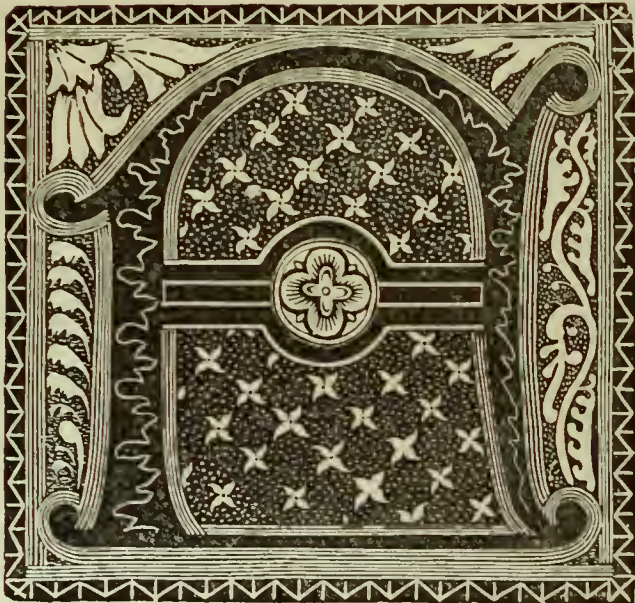
Note that when he sayth myles, he meaneth leagues.

Russia.

The browne colour
of the Russes.

Rossea.

The Slaun tounge
spreadeth farre.



From whense Russia had the name, there are dyuers opinions. Sume thynke that it was so named of one Ruffus the soonne or neie of Lech the kynge of the Polons. Other affirme that it was so cauled of a certeyne owlde towne named Ruffus not farre frome Nouogoroda or Nouogardia the more. Sum also thynke that it was so cauled of the browne coloure of the nation. But the Moscouians confute al these opinions as vntrewe: Affirmynge that this nation was in owld tyme cauled Rosseia as a nation disperfed, as the name it selfe dooth declare. For Rosseia in the Ruthens tounge, doothe signifie disperfed or scattered. The which thyng to be trew, dyuers other people commyxt with th[e]inhabitauntes, and dyuers prouinces lying here and there betwene dyuers partes of Russia doo playnely declare. But whense so euer they tooke theyr name, doubtlesse all the people that vse the Slaun tounge, and professe the fayth of Chryst after the maner of the Greekes, (cauled in theyr common language Ruffi, and in the Latin tounge Rutheni) are increased to suche

a multytude that they haue eyther expulsed all the nations that lye betwene them, or drawne them to theyr maner of luyng, insomuche that they are nowe cauled all Rutheni by one common name.

Furthermore the Slaun tounge (whiche at this daye is sumwhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceedyng far, as vsed of the Dalmates, Bosuenser, Croatians, Istrians, and by a longe tracte of the sea Adriatike vnto Forum Iulii: Of the Caruians also whome the Venetians caule Charfos: and lykewyse of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Drauus: Furthermore of the Stirians within Gretzium and by Muera vnto Danubius and from thense of the Myfians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabitynge euen vnto Constantinople: Furthermore of the Bohemians, Lufacians, Silesians, Morauians, and th[e]inhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedome of Hungarie: The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyse the Circasians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus: and is from thense vsed in the north partes of Germanie amonge the remanent of the Vandales inhabityng here and there. All whiche nations althowgh they acknowlege them selues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germayns taking the denomination only of the Vandales, caule al them that vse the Slaun tounge, Vuenden, Vuinden, or Vuindysh.

Vandales.

The Princes of
Russia.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in Russia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who possesseth the greatest part therof. The seconde is the great duke of Lithuania: and the thyrde the kynge of Polonie, who nowe obteyneth the dominion of Polonie and Lithuania.

The duke of
Moscouia.

In autoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarkes of the worlde. For he depriueth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brotherne, but oppreffeth all with lyke feruitude. In so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remayne with hym in the courte, or to goo to the warres, or sendeth on an ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, excepte the younge gentelmen the soones of the Boiarons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this autoritie aswell ouer the spiritualtie as the temporalitie: constitutyng what him lysteth of the goods and lyfe of al men. Of his counsilers there is not one that dare dissent from hym in any thyng. They openly confesse that the wyl of the prince is the wyl of god: and therefore caule hym the key bearer and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executor of gods wyl.

By reason wherof, the prince hym felfe when any petition is made to hym for the deliuerie of any captiue, is accustomed to aunfwere : When god commaundeth he shalbe deliuered. Lykewyfe when any asketh a question of an vncerteyne or doubtfull thyng, theyr custome is to anfwere thus : God knoweth and the greate prince. It is vncerteyne whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre so tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyranny of the prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruell.

Basilius the soonne of Iohn, was the fyrst that tooke vppon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner : The great lorde Basilius, by the grace of god kynge and lorde of all Ruffia and the greate duke of Vuolodimaria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, etc.

Furthermore, wheras nowe this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the tyle and cause of this errour. Note therefore that Czar in the Ruthens tounge signifieth a kynge, wheras in the language of the Slauons, Pollons, Bohemes, and other, the same woorde Czar, signifieth Cesar by whiche name Th[e]emperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slauons that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name : as sum Crall, other Kyrall, and sum Koroll : but thinke that only an Emperoure is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to passe that the Ruthene or Moscouite interpretours hearynge theyr prince to bee so cauled of straunge nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, althowgh they signifie all one thyng. But who so wyl reade all theyr hystories and bookes of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Keffar. By the lyke erreure Th[e]emperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuerthelesse of antiquitie vfed no hygher tyle then the name of a kynge, expressed by this woorde Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vse the Slauon tounge, caule the citie of Constantinople Czargrad, (that is) the kynges citie.

Sum caule the prince of Moscouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to proceade of the whyte cappes, or other tyrements they weare on theyr heades, lyke as they caule the kynge of Percia Kifilpassa (that is) redde headde. He vfeth the tyle of a kynge when he writeth or sendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Suetia and Denmarke, the greate master of Prussia and Liuania, and also to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed : but he is not cauled kynge of any of them, excepte perhappes of the Liuons. Yet by reason of his later conquestes, sum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour bycause he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

To the kynge of Polone he vfeth this tyle : The great lorde Basilius by the grace of god, lorde of all Ruffia, and greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia. etc. leauynge owt the tyle of a kyng. For none of them vouchefafeth to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe tyle, as I knewe by experience at my being in Moscouia, at which tyme Sigismundus the kynge of Polone sente hym his letters augmented with the tyle of the Duke of Masouia, wherwith he was not a litle offended.

They glorie in theyr hystories that before Vuolodimeria and Olha, the lande of Ruffia was baptised and blessed of saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle of Chryst, affirmynge that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Borysthenes : and that he sayled vppe the ryuer to the mountaynes where as is nowe Chiouia : and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his croffe, prophesyng also that the grace of god shulde bee greate there, and that there shulde bee many churches of Chrystian men : Lykewyfe that he afterwarde came to the sprynges of Borysthenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat descended into the lake Ilmer : from whense by the riuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the same lake, he came to Nouogardia : and passed frome thense by the same ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Heua, and so vnto the sea whiche they caule Vuaretzkoia, beinge the same that we caule the Germaine sea, betwene Vuinlandia or Finlandia and Liuania, by the whiche he sayled to Rome, and was at the laste crucified for Chryste his gospell in Peloponnesus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr crownacles make mention.

The prynce euery feconde or thyrde yeare, causeth a muster to bee taken of the soones of the Boiarons, and takethe an accoumpte bothe of theyr number and howe many horses and men euery of them is able to make : and then appoynteth a certeyne stypende to fuche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue feldome any rest or quyetnesse. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Liuonians, Suetians, or Tartars of Cafan. Or yf it so chaunce that the prynce keepe no warre, yet dooth he yearely appoynte garryfons of. xx. [twenty] thousande menne in places abowt Tanais and Occa to repressse the incursions and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Precopites.

As in other matters, euen so in th[e]order of warrefare ther is great diuerfitie amonge men. For the Moscouian as soone as he begynneth to flye, thinketh of none other succoure but putteth all his confidence therein. Beinge pursued or taken of his enemie, he neyther defendeth himselfe nor desirethe perdon.

The Tartar cast of from his horse, spoyled of al his armure and weapons, and also fore wounded, defendeth hym felfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his strenght and spirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he seeth hym felfe destitute of all helpe and hope to escape, doth humbly desyre pardon,

290

Why the duke of
Moscouia was
cauled an
Emperour

The greate Turke

The whyte kynge.

The duke of
Moscouia his tyle.

Russia baptised
by saynte
Andrewe the
Apostle.

The Moscouites
warres

291

Dyers maners of
dyers people in
the wars.

casting away his weapons and armure, and reching furth to the victourer his hands ioyned together to be bounde, hopynge by captiuitie to saue his lyfe.

The Moscouytes
army.

The Moscouites in placeinge theyr armye chuse them a large playne where the best of them pytch theyr tentes and the other make them certen arbours of bouwes fyxt in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes therof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende themselues, theyr bowes, arrowes, faddyles, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horses to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in sunder, which they fortifye neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impedymnt, excepte perhappes the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, ryuers and marysshes.

Howe he
maynteyneth his
army.

It may perhappes seeme straunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys so longe with so smaule an army as I haue sayde. I wyll nowe therfore brefely declare theyre sparynge and frugalitie. He that hath fyxe or sumtymes more horses, vfeth one of them as A packe horse to beare all theyr necessaries. He hath also in a bagge of two or thre spanes longe, the floure or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and. viii. or x. poundes weyghte of fwynes flesshe poudered. He hathe lykewyse A bagge of salte, myxte with pepper if he bee ryche. Furthermore euery man caryeth with hym A hatchet, A fyre boxe, and a brafen potte: so that if they chaunce to coomme to any place where they can fynde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or flesshe, they kyndle a fyre and fylle theyr pottes with water wherunto they put a spoonefull of meale with a quantitie of salte, and make pottage therof, wherwith the master and ail hys seruantes lyue contented. But if the master bee very hungary he eateth all alone, and the seruantes are sumtymes inforced to faste for the space of two or three dayes. And yf the master intende to fare sumwhat more delycately, then he addeth therto a lyttle portion of fwynes flesshe. I speake not thys of the best of them, but of suche as are of the meane forte. The gouernours and capytaynes of th[e]armye, doo sum tymes bydde the poorer forte to theyre tables: where theye feede them selues so wel, that they faste two or three dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbear all other meates. Procedyng forward to the battayle, they put more confydence in theyr multitude, and with what great armyes they assaile theyr enemyes, then eyther in the strengthe and valyantenesse of theyr fouldyers, or in well instructyng theyr armye: and fyght better afarre of, then at hande: and therefore study howe to circumuent or inclose theyr enemyes and to assaile them on the backe halfe.

Instruments of
warre.

They haue many trumpiters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous straunge noyfe. They haue also an other kynde of instrumentes which they caule Szurna. These they blowe withoute seasyng for the space of an houre together, so temperyng the same and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe more, that the noyfe seemeth continuall withoute intermyssion.

The Moscouites
and Tartars
apparell.

292

They vse all one maner of appareyle: as longe coates withoute pleyghtes and with narrowe sleaves after the maner of the Hungaryans. These the Christians vse to butten on the right fyde: and the Tartars (vfyng the lyke) butten them on the lefte fyde. They weare redde and shorte buskyns that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the foules therof defended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr shyrtes are wroughte with dyuers colours aboute the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes byfette with lyttle rounde baules lyke beades, of fyluer or gylted copper, and sumtyme perles also. They gyrde them selues beneth the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may seme more boorely which they greatly esteeme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italyans, and Almaynes.

The prouince of
Moscouia.
Extreme coulde.

The prouince of Moscouia is neyther very large nor frutfull, forasmuche as the fertylytye is hyndered with sandye grounde which eyther with to muche drynesse or moyster kylleth the corne. Furthermore the immoderate and sharpe vntemperatenesse of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommethe the heate of the foonne, sumtymes dothe not suffer the corne to rype. For the coulde is there sumtyme so extreame, that lyke as with vs in fommer by reason of heate, euen so there by extreame coulde the yearth hath many great chynkes or breaches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spettle faulyng from on[e]s mouthe, are frofen before they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came thether in the yeare 1526. sawe the braunches of frutefull trees wythyred by the coulde of the wynter before, which was so extreame that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Gonecz) were founde frofen to deathe in theyr sleades. There were sum that at the fame tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cattayle from the nexte villagies to Moscouia, dyed by the way with theyr beastes through th[e]extremitye of the coulde. Furthermore, the fame yeare many players that were accustomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunfyng beares, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wylde beares also inforced thereto by famyn, lefte the wooddes and ranne here and there into dyuers villagies and houses: At whose comyng while the men of the countrey forfooke theyr houses and fledd into the fieldes, manye of them perysshed throughe the vehemencie of the coulde. Agayne, it sumtymes so chaunceth that in fommer the heate is as extreame: as in the yeare. 1525. in the which almost all kynds of pulse and grayne were scorched and burnt: and such a derth of corne folowed that drought, that that which before was bowght for three dengas, was afterwarde foulded for. xx. [twenty] or. xxx. [thirty.] Furthermore also, manye villagies, wooddes, and flackes of corne, were fette on fyre by th[e]extreame heate: The smoke wherof so fylled the regyon, that the eyes of many were fore hurte therby.

Extreme heate in
cold regions.

There arose also as it were a darke and thycke myst without smoke which so molested the ey[e]s, that many loste theyr sight therby.

They fowe and narysse the seades of melons with greate diligence in certeyne rayfed beddes myxte with doonge: wherby they fynde a remedy both ageynst extreame cold and heat. For if the heate excede, they make certeyne ryftes in the beddes as it were breathyng places least the seades shulde be suffocate with to muche heate. And if the coulde bee extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dunge.

Theyr beastes are muche lesse then owres: yet not all without hornes as one hath written. For I haue there sene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with hornes.

Not farre from the cite of Moscha, are certeyne monasteries which a farre of, seeme lyke vnto a cite. They saye that in thys cite is an incredible number of houses: And that the sixte yeare before my commynge thither, the prince caused them to bee numbered, and founde them to bee more then one and fortye thousande and fyue hundred houses. The cite is very large and wyde: and also very flabby and myrie. By reason wherof it hath many brydges and causeys.

The ayre of the regyon is so holosome, that beyond the sprynges of Tanais, especially towarde the north and a great parte also towarde the Easte, the pestylence hath not byne harde of sence the memorye of man. Yet haue they sumtimes a disese in theyr bowells and headdes not much vnlyke the pestylence. This disese they caule a heate: wherwith suche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

Sum wryte that Iohn the duke of Moscouia and sonne of Basilius, vnder the pretence of religion sacked and spoyled, the cite of Nouogardia: and caried with hym from thense to Moscouia three hundred sledes laden with golde, syluer, and precious stones of the gooddes of the Archebysshoppe, the marchauntes, citifins, and straungiers.

Solowki is an Ilande situate in the north .viii. leaues from the continent betwene Dwina and the prouince of Corela. Howe farre it is distant from Moscouia, can not bee well knowne by reason of manye fennes, marysshes, wooddes, and defolate places lyinge in the way. Albeit, sum say that it is not three hundred leaues from Moscouia, and two hundred from Bieloiesero. In thys Ilande is made greate plenty of felle: and it hath in it a monasterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or virgyn to enter. There is also great fysshing for hearyng. They say that here the foonne at the sommer Equinoctiall, shyneth continually excepte two houres.

Demetriowe, is a cite with a castel, distante from Moscouia .xii. leaues declining from the west somewhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Lachroma that runneth in to the ryuer of Sest. Sest also receaueth the ryuer Dubna whiche vnladeth it selfe in Volga. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many riche marchaundies are brought without great laboure or difficultie from the caspian sea by the ryuer Volga to Moscouia and dyuers other prouinces and cities abowte the same.

Bieloiesero, a cite with a castell, is situat at a lake of the same name. For Bieloiesero in the Moscouites tounge, signifieth a white lake. The cite standeth not in the lake as sum haue sayd. Yet is it so enuironed with marysshes that it may seeme to bee inexpugnable: In consideration wherof, the princes of Moscouia are accustomed to keepe theyr treasure there. Bieloiesero is from Moscouia, a hundred leaues, and as muche from Nouogardia the great. The lake it selfe, is .xii. leaues in length and as much in breadth: and hath (as they say) three hundred ryuers faulynge into it. Th[e]inhabitauntes of this place, haue a peculyar language, although nowe in maner all speake the Moscouites tounge. The longest day here in the sommer Equinoctiall, is sayde to confyste of .xix. [nineteen] houres. A man of greate name and credite toulde me, that at the begynnyng of the sprynge when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he went in poste from Moscouia to Bieloiesero: And passynge ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there so couered with Ice and snow, that he was fayne to dispatch the residue of his iorney on sledes. And although the wynter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes waxe ripe and are gathered euen at the same tyme that they are in Moscouia. Within an arrowe shotte of the lake, there is an other lake that bryngeth furth brymstone: which a certen ryuer runnyng owt of the same, caryeth with it in great quantitie flotynge aboute the water lyke a scoomme. Yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditie therby.

The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre northe and east from Moscouia, exchange theyr fures for apparel, knyues, needles, spoones, hatchets, and suche other necesserye wares. For they haue not the vse of golde and syluer.

Lyttle beastes.

The cite of Moscouia or Mosca.

Holsome ayer.

A ryche spoyle.

The Iland of Solowki.

293

Bieloiesero.

The lengthe of the day.

The trade from Moscouia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloiesero or the whyte lakes.

Diuersitie of temperament in smaull dystance.

A lake of brymstone.

Exchange of fures for other ware.

¶ *The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lying North and Easte from Moscouia: As the way from Moscouia to the ryuer Petzora, and the prouince of Iugaria, or Iuhra: And frome thense to the ryuer Obi. Lykewyse the discription of other countreys and regions, euen vnto Th[e]mpire of the greate Cham of Cathay.*

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.

Vuolochda.
Werste.
Vstiug.



He dominion of the Prince of Moscouia reacheth farre towarde the Easte and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe descrybe. As concernynge whiche thynge, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the Moscouites tounge, and haue heare made a bryefe re-hearfall of the same. I wyll fyrst therefore describe the iorney from Moscouia to Petzora, and so to Iugaria and Obi.

From Moscouia to the cite of Vuolochda, are numbered fyftie Werstes, one Werst conteynynge almoste the space of an Italian myle. From Vuolochda to Vstiug towarde the right hande descendinge with the course of the ryuer of Vuolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are coumpted fyue hundreth Werstes: where within two Werstes of the towne cauled Strelze and hard by the cite of Vstiug Suchana ioyneth. Iug which runneth from the south: from whose mouth vnto the sprynges of the same, are numbered fyue hundreth Werstes.

Note that wheras here before the autour numbereth but fyftie werstes from Moscouia to Vuolochda, it semeth that the place is corrupted by the Printers mystakyng one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fyftie, for Quingenta, whiche is fyue hundreth. For the distance is no lesse from Moscouia to Vuolochda, then is from Vuolochda to Vstiug, which is fyue hundreth werstes.

294

Suchana.
Iug.
Colmogor.
Dwina.

Pienega.

Nicolai.
Kuluio.

The regions by the North sea.

Pieza.

Piescoia.

Rubicho.

Czircho.

Czilma.

Petzora.

Pustoosero.

Vssa.

Cingulus n.undi.

But Suchana and Iug after they ioyne togyther, lose theyr fyrst names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the whiche the passage to the cite of Colmogor conteyneth fyue hundreth Werstes: from whense in the space of fyxe dayes iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at. vi. mouthes, And the greateste parte of this iorney confysteth by nauigation. For by lande, from Vuolochda vnto Colmogor, passing ouer the ryuer Vuaga, are a thousande Werstes. Not farre from Colmogor, the ryuer Pienega runnyng from the Easte on the ryght hande for the space of seuen hundreth Werstes fauleth into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Pienega by the space of two hundreth Werstes, they coome to a place cauled Nicolai: from whense within halfe a werst, shyppes haue passage into the ryuer Kuluio, which hath his original from a lake of the same name towarde the north, from whose springes is. viii. dayes vyage to the mouth of the same where it entereth into the Ocean.

Saylyng by the coastes of the ryght hande the sea, they passe by the regions of Stanuwische, Calunczcho, and Apnu. And saylyng abowt the promontorie or cape of Chorogofki Nofz, Stanuwische, Camenckh, and Tolfickh, they come at the length into the ryuer Mezen, and frome thense in the space of fyxe dayes to a vyllage of the same name, standyng in the mouth of the ryuer Pieza: by the which ageine ascendyng towarde the lefte hande and foommer East, they come to the ryuer Piescoya. From whense saylyng for the space of fyue Werstes, they coomme into two lakes in the whiche are seene two wayes: wherof one on the ryght fyde, goeth to the ryuer Rubicho, by the whiche they passe to the ryuer Czircho. Other by an other and shorter way, bryng theyr shyppes frome the lake directly into Czircho: From whense, except they be hyndered by tempest, they coomme in the space of three weekes to the ryuer and mouth of Czilma, flowyng into the great ryuer Petzora, which in that place is two Werstes in breadthe. Saylyng from hense, they coomme in the space of fyxe dayes to the towne and castell of Pustoosero, neare vnto the which, Petzora entereth into the north Ocean at fyxe mouthes. The inhabitauntes of this place, are men of simple wytte. They receaued the fayth of Chryste, and were baptifed in the yeare M. D. xviii.

From the mouth of Czilma vnto the mouthe of the ryuer Vssa, goyng by Petzora, is one monethes vyage. Vssa hath his sprynges in the mountayne Poyas Semnoi, being on the lefte hande towarde the foommer East, and springeth owte of a greate stone of the same mountayne, cauled Camen Bolschoi. From the sprynges of Vssa to the mouthes of the same, are numbered more then a thousande Werstes. Furthermore Petzora runneth from this south wynter parte. from whense ascendyng from the mouthes of Vssa vnto the mouthes of the ryuer

Stzuchogora, is three weekes vyage. They that described this vyage, fayde that they rested betwene the mouthes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potzcheriema : and leste theyr vyttayles there whiche they brought with them from Ruffia. Beyond the ryuers of Petzora and Stzuchogora towarde the mountayne Camenipoias and the fea with the Ilandes there abowte and the castell of Pustoofero, are dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common name are cauled Samoged (that is) such as eat them felues. They haue great increase of foules, byrdes, and dyuers kyndes of beastes : as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermelines, Squyrels : and in the Ocean the beaste cauled Mors : Also Vefs, whyte beares, woolfes, hares, Equiwoduani, great whales, and a fyfthe cauled Semfi, with dyuers other. The people of these nations, come not to Moscouia. For they are wylde, and flye the company and societie of other men.

From the mouthes of Stzuchogora faylynge vp the ryuer vnto Poiassa, Artawische, Cameni, and Poiassa the greater, is three weekes vyage. Furthermore the ascendynge to the mounte Camen, is three dayes iorney : from the whiche, descendynge, they come to the ryuer Artawischa, and from thense to the ryuer Sibut, from whense they passe to the castell of Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Soffa. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici. Leauynge Soffa on the ryght hande, they come to the greate ryuer Oby, that spryngeth owt of the lake Kitaisko, the whiche with all the haste they coulde make, they coulde fearfully passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of such breadth that it reacheth fourescore Werstes. The people also that dwell about this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici and Vgritzchi. From the castell of Obea ascendynge by the ryuer of Oby, vnto the ryuer Irtische into the which Soffa entereth, is three moonethes iorney. In these places are two castels named Ierom and Tumen, kepte by certeyne lordes cauled Knesi Iuhorski. beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moscouia as they say. Here are dyuers kyndes of beastes and fures.

From the mouth of the ryuer Irtische to the Castell of Grustina, is two monethes iorney : from whense to the lake Kitai by the ryuer Oby (whiche I fayde to haue his sprynges in this lake) is more then three monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackynge th[e]use of common spech. They brynge with them dyuers wares, and especially pearles and precious stones, whiche they sell to the people cauled Grustintzi and Serponowtzi. These haue theyr name of the castell Serponow, situate in the mountaynes of Lucomorya beyond the ryuer Obi. They say that to the men of Lucomorya, chaunceth a marueylous thyng and incredible. For they affirme, that they dye yearely at the. xxvii. [twenty-seuenth] daye of Nouember, beinge the feast of faynt George amonge the Moscouytes : and that at the nexte sprynge abowte the. xxiiii. [twenty-fourth] daye of Apryll, theye reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

With these also, the people of Grustintzi and Serponowtzi, exercise a newe and straunge kynde of trade. For when the accustomed tyme of theyr dyinge, or rather of fleapyng, aprocheth, they leaue theyr wares in certeyne places appoynted, which the Grustintzi and Serponowtzi carye away leauynge other wares of equall valewe in theyr places : whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyuyn[g]e perceaue to bee of vnequall pryce, they requyre theyr owne ageyne : by reason wherof muche stryfe and fighting is betwene them.

From the ryuer of Obi descending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calami, which came thether from Obiowa and Pogofa. Beneth Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden owlde wyie) are the ryuers Soffa, Beres, Vua, and Danadim, al which sprynge owt of the montayne Camen, Bolschega, Potassa, and the rockes ioynynge to the same. All the nations that inhabite from these ryuers to Aurea Anus, are subiecte to the prync of Moscouia.

Aurea Anus cauled in the Moscouites toonge Slata Baba, is an Idole at the mouthes of Obi in the prouince of Obdora, standynge on the furthest banke towarde the fea. Alonge by the bankes of Obi and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many castells and fortresses, all the lordes wherof are subiecte to the prince of Moscouia, as they say. They say also, or rather fable, that the Idole cauled Aurea Anus, is an Image lyke vnto an owlde wyfe hauyng a chyld in her lappe : and that there is nowe feene an other infante which they say to bee her neuie : Also that there are certeyne instrumentes that make a continuall founde lyke the noyse of trumpettes. The which if it fo bee, I thynke it to bee by reason of the wynde blowynge continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

The ryuer Coffin, fauleth owt of the mountaynes into Lucomoria. In the mouth of thys, is a castell. Whyther from the sprynges of the great ryuer Coffin, is two moonethes vyage. Furthermore from the sprynges of the same ryuer, the ryuer Cassima hath hys original : which runnyng through Lucomoria, fauleth into the great ryuer Tachnin, beyond the which (as is fayde) dwell men of prodigious shape, of whom sum are ouer-growne with heare lyke wylde beastes : other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr brestes without neckes, and with longe handes also and withoute feete. There is lykewyse in the ryuer Tachnin, a certeyne fyfthe with headde, eys, nose, mouthe, handes, fiete, and other members vtterly of humane shape, and yet without any voyce, and pleasante to bee eaten as are other fyfthes.

All that I haue hetherto rehearsed, I haue translated out of the fayde iorney whiche was delyuered me in the Moscouites tounge. In the which perhappes sum thynges maye feeme fabulous and in maner incredible, as

Stzuchogora.
Potzcheriema.
Camenipoias.

Samoged.
Foules and
beastes.

Wylde people.

Poiassa.
Camen.
Artawischa.
Sibut.
Lepin.
Sossa.
Obi.
Kitaisko.

Vuogolici
295
Irtische.
Ieron.
Tumem.

Grustina.

Kitai.

Blacke men
without speache.
Serpenowe.
Lucomoria.

Men that yearely
dye and reuyue.

A strange trade
of marchaundies.

Obi.
Calami.
Ryuers.

Aurea Anus.
Obdora.

Cossiu.

Cassima.
Tachnin.
People of
monstrous shape
A fyfthe lyke a
man
Plinie wryteth of
the lyke fyfthe.

of the doomme men and the deade reuyuyng, the Aurea Anus also, and the monstrous shapcs of men, with the tyfthe of human forme: wherof althowgh I haue made dylygent inquificion, yet could I knowe nothyng certeyne of any that had seene the fame with theyr eys, neuertheleffe to gyue further occasion to other to searche the truth of these thynges, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

296

Noff in the Moscouites tounge signifieth a nose: and therefore they caule all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the sea, by the same name.

Mountaynes.

The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled Semnoi Poyas, or Cingulus mundi: (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the yearth.

The greate Chan of Cathay.

Kithay, is a lake of whome the greate Chan of CATHAY whom the Moscouians caule Czar Kythaiski, hath hys name. For Chan in the Tartars language signifieth a kyng.

Lucomoria.

The places of Lucomorya nere vnto the sea, are saluage, full of wooddes, and inhabited withowt any houses. And albeit that the autour of thys iorney, sayd that many nations of Lucomorya are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia, yet forasmuch as the kyngdome of Tumen is neare therunto, whose prince is a Tartar and named in theyr tounge Tumenski Czar (that is) a kyng in Tumen, and hath of late doone great damage to the prynce of Moscouia, it is mooste lyke that these nations shulde rather bee subiecte vnto hym.

Petzora.
Papin.

Neare vnto the ryuer Petzora, (wherof mention is made in thys iorney) is the citie and castell of Papin or Papinowgorod, whose inhabytauntes are named Papini, and haue a priuate language differyng from the Moscouites. Beyond thys ryuer, are exceedyng hygh mountaynes, reachyng euen vnto the bankes: whose ridgies or toppes by reason of continuall wyndes, are in maner vtterly barrayne without graff or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled Cingulus Mundi, that is the gerdle of the worlde, otherwyse cauled Catena Mundi, (that is), the chayne of the worlde. In these mountaynes doo ierfalcons breede, wherof I haue spoken before. There grow also Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the best and blackest kynde of fables. And only these mountaynes are seene in all the domynyons of the prynce of Moscouia, which perhappes are the same that the owlde writers caule Rhipheos or Hyperboreos, so named of the Greeke worde *Hiper*, (that is) vnder: and *Boreas* (that is) the north. For by reason they are couered with continuall snow and froste, they can not withowt great difficultie bee trauallyd: and reache so farre into the north, that they make the vnknowne land of Engronland. The duke of Moscouia Basilius the soonne of Iohn, sent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named Simeon Pheodorowicz Kurbski, and Knes Peter Vschatoi, to searche the places beyonde these mountaynes and to subdewe the nations therabowte. Kurbski was yet alyue at my being in Moscouia: and declared vnto me that he spent. xvii. [seuenteen] days in ascendyng the mountayn, and yet coulde not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr tounge is cauled Stolp (that is) a pyller. Thys mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of Dwina and Petzora. But nowe hauyng spoken thus muche of the fayde iorney, I wyll returne to the domynyons of Moscouia, with other regyons lyng eastwarde and fouth frome the same towarde the myghtye Empyre of CATHAY. But I wyll fyrst speake sumwhat brefely of the prouynce of Rezan and the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Engronland.

Stolp.

Cathay.

The frutfull prouynce of Rezan.
Iaroslaw.

Honny.

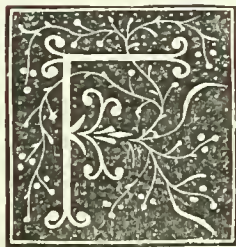
The prouynce of Rezan situate betwene the ryuers of Occa and Tanais, hath a citie buylded of woodd not farre from the banke of Occa. There was in it a castell named Iaroslaw, wherof there now remayneth nothyng but tokens of the owld ruine. Not farre from that citie, the ryuer Occa maketh an Ilande named Strub: which was sumtyme a great dukedome, whose prince was subiect to none other. Thys prouynce of Rezan is more frutfull then any other of the prouynces of Moscouia: In so muche that in thys (as they saye) euery grayne of wheate bryngethe furthe two and sumtymes more eares: whose stalkes or strawes growe so thicke that horses can scarfely go through them, or quayles flye owt of them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fysshes, foules, byrdes, and wylde bestes. The frutes also do farre exceade the frutes of Moscouia. The people are bould and warlyk men.

¶ Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Donco.
Asoph.
Capha.
Constantinople.

297

Tanais diuideth Europe from Asia.



Rome Moscouia vnto the castell of Iaroslaw, and beyonde for the space of almoste. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques, runneth the ryuer of Tanais, at a place called Donco, where the marchauntes that trade to Asoph, Capha, and Constantinople, freight theyr shyppes: and thys for the mooste parte in autumne beyng a rayney tyme of the yeare. For Tanais here at other tymes of the yeare doth not so abounde with water as to beare shyppes of any burden. Thys famous ryuer of Tanais, dyuydeth Europe from Asia: and hath hys orygnal or springes almost. viii. leaques from the citie of Tulla toward the fouth inclynyng sumwhat towarde the Easte: and not owt of the Riphean mountaynes as some haue wrytten: But owte of a great lake

named Iwanowifero (that is) the lake of Iohn: being in length and breadth abowt. 1500. Werstes in a wood whiche sum caule Okonitzkilies, and other name it Iepiphanowlies And owt of this lake, sprynge the twoo greate ryuers of Schat and Tanais. Schat towarde the Weste receaynge into it the ryuer of Vppa, runneth into the ryuer of Occa betwene the West and the north. But Tanais at the fyrste runneth directly East: and continueth his course betwene the kyngdomes of Cafan and Astrachan within fyxe or feuen leaques of Volga: And frome thense bendynge towarde the fouth, maketh the fennes or marysshes of Meotis. Furthermore, nexte vnto his sprynges, is the citie of Tulla: and vppon the banke of the ryuer almoste three leaques aboute the mouthes of the fame, is the citie of Afoph, which was fyrste cauled Tanas. Foure dayes iorney aboute this, is a towne cauled Achas, situate harde by the fame ryuer: whiche the Moscouites caule Don. I can not sufficiently prayse this ryuer for the exceedynge abundaunce of good fysshes, and fairenesse of the regions on bothe fydes the bankes, with plentie of holfoome herbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and many frutefull trees growynge in fuche coomly order as though they had byn set of purpose in gardens or archardes. There is also in maner euery where fuche plentie of wyld beasts, that they may easely be flaine with arrowes: In so much that fuche as trauayle by those regions, shal stand in neede of none other thyng to mayntayne theyr lyfe but only fyre and falte. In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes iorneyes. But as farre as I coulde coniecture, from the fountaynes or sprynges of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the fame iorneying by lande, are almost fourescore leaques. And saylynge from Donco (from whense I sayde that Tanais was fyrste nauigable) in scarfely. xx. [twenty] dayes vyage, they come to the citie of Afoph tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they say) fyue dayes iorney frome the streight of Taurica, otherwyse cauled Precop. In this citie is a famous mart towne vnto the which refort many marchauntes of dyuers nations, and from dyuers partes of the worlde. For, that all nations may the gladlyer haue recourse thyther, free lybertie of bying and sellynge is graunted vnto all: and that without the citie euery man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of lyuyng without punysshement.

Of the altares of great Alexander and Iulius Cesar whiche many wryters make mention of in this place, or of theyr ruines, I coulde haue no certeyne knowlege of th[e]inhabitauntes or any other that had oftentimes trauayled these places. Furthermore the souldyers whiche the prince of Moscouia maynteyneth there yearely to oppresse th[e]incursions of the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, answered that they neuer fawe or harde of any such thyng. Neuerthelesse, they sayde that aboute the mouthes of Tanais the lesse, foure dayes iorney from Afoph nere vnto a place cauled Scwerski, by the holy mountaynes, they fawe certeyne images of stone and marble. Tanais the lesse, hath his sprynges in the dukedome of Scwerski: whereof it is cauled Donetz Scwerski: and fauleth into Tanais three dayes iorney aboute Afoph. But fuche as iorney from Moscouia to Afoph by lande, they, passynge ouer Tanais aboute the owlde and ruinate towne of Donco, doo sumwhat turne from the south to the Easte: In the which place, if a ryght line bee drawn from the mouthes of Tanais to the springes of the fame, Moscouia shalbe found to bee in Asia and not in Europe.

¶ *More directly from Moscouia to Cathay.*



The great and large prouince of Permian, is dystante from Moscouia two hundreth and fyftie or (as sum say) three hundreth leaques directly betwene the East and North: And hath a citie of the same name by the ryuer Vischora which runneth. x. leaques beneth Kamam. The iorney by lande can scarfely bee trauayled thyther but in wynter by reason of many ryuers, marysshes, and fennes. But in sommer, this iorney is dispatched with more facilitie in boates or smaule shippes by Vuolochda, Vstiug, and the ryuer Vitzechda which runneth into Dwina. xii. leaques from Vstiug. But they that go from Permian to Vstiug, muste sayle vp the ryuer Vischora ageinst the course of the streame: and passing ouer certeyne ryuers, sumtymes also conueyinge theyr boates into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Vstiug three hundreth leaques distant frome the citie of Permian. There is smaule vse of breade in this prouince. For theyr yearely tribute, they pay to the prynce fures and horses. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, whiche one Steuen a bysshop (who confirmed them yet waueryng in the fayth) dyd inuente. For before beinge yet infantes in the fayth of Chryste, they flewe and fleyde an other bysshop that was appoynted to instructe them. This Steuen afterwarde when Demetrius the sonne of Iohn reigned, was taken for a faynte amonge the Ruthens. Of these people there yet remayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the moonkes and heremites that go thyther, doo not cease to conuert from theyr vayne error. In the wynter they iorney in Artach as they doo in many places of Ruffia. Artach, are certeyne longe patentes of woodde of almost fyxe handfuls in length,

The springes of Tanais.
A great lake.
The ryuer Schat.
Casan.
Astrachan.
Meotis.
Tulla.

Achas.
Frutefull regions about Tanais.

Plentie of wyld beasts.

Fire and salt.

Where Tanais is fyrste nauigable.
Asoph.
The marte of Asoph.
Libertie allureth strangers

The altars of Alexander and Cesar.

The holy mountaynes.
Tanais the lesse.
From Moscouia to Asoph.

Moscouia in Asia and not in Europe.

The prouince of Permian.

Marysshes in sommer.

298

Dwina.
Vstiug.

Tribute.
Fures and horses.

Monkes and heremites.

Patentes

Marcus Paulus
wryteth that these
dogges are almost
as byg as Asses:
and that they vse
syxe to one sleade.
Iugaria.
Hungaria.
Pannonia.
Attila.

The hygher or
superyor
Hungarye, is
cauled Austria.
Polonie.
Buda.

Furres.
Pearles and
precious stones.

Sibier.

Aspreolos, I
thynk to be
marterns: yet
sum think them
to be squerels
Gesnerus wryteth
that the kyngs of
the Tartars haue
theyre tentes
couered without
wyth the skynnes
of Lyons: and
within, with the
skynnes of sables
and Ermynes.

299

Czeremisse.

Habitacion
without houses.

Salte.

whiche they make faste to theyr fiets with latches, and therewith performe theyr iorneyes with great celeritie. They vse for this purpose greate dogges in the sleade of other beastes, with the which they cary theyr farthels on sleades, as other doo with hartes in other places, as we wyll further declare hereafter. They say that that prouince toward the East confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, perteynyng to the Tartars.

The situation of the prouince of Iugaria, is apparente by that which we haue sayde before. The Moscouites caule it Iuhra with an aspiration: and caule the people Iuhrici. This is that Iugaria from whence the Hungarians came in tyme paste, possessed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Attila, subdued many prouinces of Europe: wherein the Moscouites doo greatly glory, that a nation subiecte to them, inuaded and wasted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Paruus a greeke borne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of Moscouia, wyllynge to ascribe to the ryght of his prince the great dukedome of Lithuania, and the kyngedome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, toulde me that the Iuharici or Iuhgary, beinge subiectes to the great duke of Moscouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and fyrste inhabited the regions about the fennes of Meotis, and then Pannonie which was afterwarde cauled Hungarie, by the ryuer of Danubius: Also that in fine they possessed the region of Morauia so named of the ryuer: and lykewyse Pollonie, so cauled of Polle, which signifieth a playne. Furthermore that Buda was so cauled after the name of the brother of Attila. They say also that the Iuhgari vse the same tounge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trew or not, I do not knowe. For althowgh I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof, yet coulde I fynde no man of that region with whom my feruaunt beinge expert in the Hungarian tounge myght speake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the prince of Moscouia. And albeit that pearles and precious stonnes are brought from thence to Moscouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: especially about the coast of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Permia and Vuiathka: The whiche, whether it haue any castels or cities, I doo not yet certeynly knowe. In this the ryuer Iaick hathe his originall, and fauleth into the Caspian sea. They saye that this region is deserte bycause it lyeth so neare the Tartars: Or that yf it bee in any parte inhabited, the same to be possessed of the Tartar Schichmamai. Th[e] inhabitants haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaynes by the furres of marterns, which in fayrenes and greatnes, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. Yet coulde I haue no great plentie of them in Moscouia at my beinge there.

Note that longe after the wrytyng of this hystorie, at Rycharde Chaunceler his fyrst being in Moscouia, Duke Iohn Vasilivich that nowe raygneth, subdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces euen vnto the great cite and mart towne of Astrachan and the Caspian sea. At the same tyme also, there was in the dukes court an ambassadour that came frome this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had byn sent ambassadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great cite of Cambalu where the great Chan kepeth his courte in winter, was in maner destroyed by Necromancie and magicall artes wherein the Cathaynes are very expert as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus. Ther was also at the same tyme th[e] ambassadour of the kyng of Persia cauled the great Sophie. This ambassadour was appareled all in scarlet, and spake much to the duke in the behalfe of owre men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

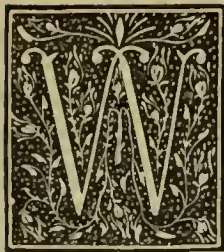
The people cauled Czeremisse, dwell in the wooddes beneth Nouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language and are of the secte of Machumet. They were sumtyme subiecte to the kyng of Casan: but the greater part of them are nowe subiecte to the prince of Moscouia. Many of them at my beinge there, were brought to Moscouia, as suspected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region without houses from Vuiathka and Vuolochda, to the ryuer of Kama. All the nation aswell women as men, are very swyft of foote, and expert archers: wherein they so delite, that theyr bowes are in maner neuer owt of theyr handes: and gyue theyr children no meate vntyl they hyt the marke they shoote at.

Two leaques distante from Nouogardia the lower, were many houses to the similitude of a cite or towne where they were accustomed to make salte. These a fewe yeares sence beinge burnt of the Tartars, were restored by the commaundement of the prince.

Mordwa, are people inhabytynge by the ryuer of Volga on the south banke beneth Nouogardia the lower: And are in al thynges like vnto the Czeremisses but that they haue more houses. And here endeth Th[e]mpire of the Moscouites.

Note here that Matthias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia Asiatica, writeth that the dominion of the duke of Moscouia recheth from the northweil to the foutheast fyue hundredth myles of Germanie, which are more then leaques. For they affirme that a Germane myle is more then three Englysh myles.

¶ *Of the Tartars.*



Ye wyll nowe adde hereunto sumwhat of the people confynge with the Moscouites towarde the East: of the which the Tartars of Casan are the first. But before wee speake of them particularly, wee wyl fyrst reherse sumwhat of theyr maners and customes in generall.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they caul Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Sawolhenfes is the chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is sayde that the other Hordas had theyr offprynge and original of this. And albeit that eury Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Sawolhenfes, Precropenfes, and Nahays with dyuers other being all Machumetans, yet doo they take it euyl and count it reproch to bee cauled Turkes: but wyll them selues to bee cauled Befermani, by the which name also the Turkes desyre to bee cauled.

And as the Tartars inhabyte many prouynces reachyng far on eury fyde, euen so in maners and order of luyng doo they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane stature, with broade and fat faces, holowe eyde, with roughe and thyck beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble men haue longe heare, and that excedyng black, which they wreath on both fydes theyr eares. They are stronge of body and stoute of mynde: prone to leacherye, and that vnnaturall. They eat the fleashe of horses, camells, and oth'er beastes excepte hogges, from which they absteyne by a lawe. They can so abyde fasting and hunger, that they sumtime forbear meate and sleepe for the space of foure dayes, occupied neuerthelesse aboute theyr necessary affayres. Ageyne when they gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them selues beyond measure: and with that surfecte in maner recompense theyr former abstynence. And beyng thus oppressed with laboure and meate, they sleepe contynually for the space of three or foure days without doyng any maner of worke or labour: duryng which tyme the Lyuons and Moscouites into whose domynions they are accustomed to make theyr incursions, assayle them vnwares thus oppressed with meate and sleepe, lunge scatered here and there owt of order withowte watch or warde. Also if when they ryde, they bee molested with hunger and thyrste, they vse to lette theyr horses blud, and with drynkyng the same, fatysse theyr present necessytye, and affyrme theyr horses to bee the better therby. And bicause they all wander in vnknownen places, they vse to dyrect theyr iorneyes by th[e]-aspecte of the starres, and especyally of the pole starre, which in theyr tounge they caule Sele'nikoll, (that is) an iren nayle. They greatly delyte in mares mylke, and beleue that it maketh men strong and fatte. They eat herbes very much: and especially such as growe about Tanais. Fewe of them vse salte. When theyr kynges dystrybute any vytayles among them, they are accustomed to gyue one horse or cowe to fortye men. Of the slayne beaste, the bowells and trypes are reserued for the chiefe men and capytaynes. These they heate at the fyre vntyll they may shake owt the doonge, and then deuoure them gredely. They sucke and lycke, not only theyr fyngers imbrued with fatte, but also theyr knyues and flyckes wherwith they scrape the doong from the guttes. The heades of horses are counted delycate dysshes with them as are bores heades with vs: and are reserued only for the chyefe men. Theyr horses (wherof they haue great aboundaunce) are but smaule, and with short neckes: but very strong and such as can wel away with labour and hunger. These they fede with the branches and barkes or ryndes of trees and the rotes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accustome them to hard feedyng, and exercyse them to contynuall laboure: by reason wherof (as say the Moscouytes) theyr horses are swyfter and more durable then any other. These kynde of horses, they caule Pachmat. They haue none other faddells and steroppes then of woodd, except fuche as they eyther bye of the Chrystians, or take from them by vyolence. Least theyr horse backes shulde bee hurte with theyr faddells, they vnderlaye them with grasse and leaues of trees. They also passe ouer ryuers on horsback. But if when they flye, they feare the pursuyng of theyr enemyes, then castyng away theyr faddells, apparelle, and all other impedymentes, referuyng only theyr armoure and weapons they flye amayne and with greate celeritie.

Theyr women vse the same kynde of apparell that doo the men withowt any dyfference except that they couer theyr heades with lynnyn vayles, and vse lynnyn hose muche lyke vnto maryners floppes. When theyr queenes coome abrod, they are accustomed to couer theyr faces. The other multytude of the common forte that lyueth here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparell made of sheepes skynnes, which they chaung[e] not vntyll they bee worne and torne to fytters. They tarye not longe in one place, iudgyng it a great mysery so to doo: In so muche that when they are angrie with theyr chyldren, the greatest curse that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetually in one place, and drawe the stynshe of theyr owne fylthynesse as doo the Chrystians. When they haue consumed the pasture in one place, they go to an other with theyr droues of cattayle and theyr wyues and chyldren whom they euer cary about with them in Wagons: albeit the Tartars that dwell in cities and townes, vse an other order of luyng. If they be inclosed with any daungerous warre,

The Tartars of Casan.

Horda.

Besermani.

The stature of the Tartars.

They absteine from hogges flesshe. Abstynence.

Voracitie.

So doo the Turkes

Iorneyng by the pole star.

Mares mylke

Horse flesshe eaten. Clenly.

300

Hors[e] heades, deintie meate The Tartars horses.

Saddells and styrrops of wodde.

The Tartars women.

The Tartars curse.

No iustice amonge
the Tartars.

The Tartars are
theeues and poore.

They reioyce in
spoylynge

The feelde
Tartars.

A mery tale.

301

Casan.

The kynge of
Casan.
Archers.
Maryners.

The towne
Tartars.

Moscouia inuaded
by the Tartars.

The prince of
Moscouia tributary
to the Tartars.

Duke Basilius
army ageynst the
Tartars.

The kyng of Casan
submitteth hym
selfe.

they place their wyues, chyldren, and owld folkes, in the fauest places. There is no iustice amonge them. For if any man stande in neade of any thyng, he may without punnysshement take it awaye from an other. If any complayne to the Iudge of the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender denyeth not the cryme, but sayth that he coulde not lacke that thyng. Then the Iudge is wonte to gyue thys sentence: If thowe also shalte haue neede of any thyng doo the lyke to other. Sum say they do not steale: But whether they steale or not, lette other iudge. They are surely a theeuysshe kynd of men and very poore, lyuynge only by robbing of other, and stealyng away other mens cattayle, and vyolently also carynge awaye the men them selues whom eyther they selle to the Turkes or proffer them to bee redemed by ransome, referuyng only the younge wenches. They feldome assaulte cities or castells, but burne and waste townes and vyllagyes: In so muche that they so please them selues herin, that they thynke they haue so muche the more enlarged their empire, in howe muche they haue wasted and made desolate manye prouynces. And although they bee moſte impacient of reste and quyetnesse, yet doo they not kyll or destroye one an other, excepte theyr kynges bee at dessention betweene them selues. If any man bee flaine in any fraye or quarel, and the autours of the myſchefe bee taken, only theyr horſſe, harnesse, weapons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they dismissed. So that the murtherer by the losse of a vyle horſe or a bowe, is dyscharged of the Iudge with these woordes: gette the hense and goo aboute thy busynesse. They haue no vse of golde and syluer, excepte only a fewe marchautes: But exerſyſe exchange of ware for ware. And if it so chaunce that by fellyng of such thynges as they haue stolne, they gette any monye of theyr bortherers, they bye therwith certeyne apparel and other necessaryes of the Moscouites. The regyons of theyr habytations (the feelde Tartars I meane) are not lymytted with any boundes or borthers. There was on a tyme a certeyne fatte Tartar taken prysoner of the Moscouites: to whom when the prynce sayd, How art thou so fatte thowe dogge, fythe thowe haste not to eate, the Tartar answered, Why shulde not I haue to eate fythe I possesse so large a land from the East to the west, wherby I may bee abundauntely nuryſhed? But thowe mayſte rather seeme to lacke, fyth thowe inhabytest so smaule a portion of the worlde, and duste daylye stryue for the fame.

Casan, is a kyngedome, also a citie, and a castell of the same name, situate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke, almost threſcore and tenne leaques beneath Nouogardia the lower. Alonge by the course of Volga towarde the East and South, it is termined with deserte fyeldes. Towarde the sonner East, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanſki, and Kofatzki. The kynge of this prouince, is able to make an army of. xxx. [thirty] thousande men, especially foote men, of the which the Czeremisse and Czubaſchi are most expert archers. The Czubaſchi are also cunnyng maryners. The citie of Casan, is threſcore leaques distant from the principal castel Vuiathka. Furthermore, Casan in the Tartars language, signifieth a braſen pottle boylynge. These Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houses, tyll the grownde, and exercise the trade of marchaundies. They were of late subdued by Basilius the greate duke of Moscouia, and had theyr kynge assigned them at his arbitrimet. But shortly after, they rebelled ageine: and associate with other Tartars, inuaded the region of Moscouia, spoyled and wasted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the citie Moscouia which they possessed for a tyme, and had vtterly destroyed the same if it had not byn for the valyantnesse of the Almayne gunners which kept the castell with great ordinaunce. They also putte duke Basilius to flyght, and caused him to make a letter of his owne hande to Machmetgirei theyr kynge to acknowledge hym selfe for a perpetuall tributarie to them, wheruppon they dissolved the siege, and gaue the Moscouites free libertie to redeeme theyr captiues and gooddes, and so departed. But Basilius not longe able to abyde this contumelie and dishonour, after that he had putte to death suche as by flyng at the fyrst encounterynge were the cause of this ouerthrowe, assembled an armye of a hundreth and fourescore thousande men shortly after in the yeare. 1523. And sent forwarde his army vnder the conducte of his Lieutenante: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydde battayle to Machmetgirei the kynge of Casan, with woordes in this effecte: The last yeare lyke a theefe and robber without bydding of battayle, thou dyddeste pryuilie oppresse me. Wherefore I nowe challenge the, once ageyne to proue the fortune of warre if thou mystruste not thyne owne poure. To this the kynge answered, that there were manye wayes open for hym to inuade Moscouia: And that the warres haue no lesse respect to the commoditie of tyme and place then of armure or strength: And that he wold take th[e]aduantage therof when and where it shulde seeme best to him and not to other. With which woordes Basilius beinge greatly accensed and burnyng with desyre of reuenge, inuaded the kyngdome of Casan: whose kynge beinge stryken with suddeyne feare at th[e]approche of so terrible an army, assigned the gouernance of his kyngdome to the younge kynge of Taurica his neuie, whyle he hym selfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of the Turkes. But in fine the kynge of Casan submytted hym selfe vppon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Moscouites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time because theyr vittayles sayled them to maynteyne so great a multitude. But wheras duke Basilius hym selfe was not present at this last expedition, he greatly suspected Palitzki the Lieutenante of th[e]army to bee corrupted with brybes to proceade no further. In this meane tyme, the kynge of Casan sent ambassadours to Basilius to

intreate of peace : whome I fawe in the dukes courte at my beyng there : but I coulde perceave no hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Basilius to endamage the Cafans, translated the marte to Nouogardia, which before was accustomed to bee kepte in the Ilande of marchautes nere vnto the citie of Casan : Commaundyng also vnder peyne of greuous punysshement that none of his subiectes shulde resort to the Ilande of marchautes : thynkyng that this translation of the marte shulde greatly haue endamaged the Cafans : and that only by takyng away their trade of falte (which they were accustomed to bye of the Moscouites at that marte) they shulde haue byn compelled to submyssion. But the Moscouites them felues felte no lesse inconuenience hereby then dyd the Cafans, by reason of the dearth and scarcenesse that folowed hereof of al such thynges as the Tartars were accustomed to bryng thyther by the ryuer of Volga from the Caspian sea, the kyngedomes of Persia and Armenia, and the marte towne of Astrachan : especially the great number of most excellent fyffhes that are taken in Volga both on the hyther and further fyde of Casan.

But hauyng sayde thus much of the warres betwene the Prince of Moscouia and the Tartars of Casan, we wyll now procede to speake sumwhat of the other Tartars inhabytyng the regions toward the southeast and the Caspian sea.

Next beyonde the Tartars of Casan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga abowt the Caspian sea at the ryuer Iaick, runnyng owt of the prouince of Sibier. These haue no kynges but dukes. In owre tyme, three bretherne diuidyng the prouinces equally betwene them, possessed those dukedomes. The fyrst of them named Schidack, possesseth the citie of Scharaitzick, beyond the ryuer of Rha or Volga toward the East, with the region confynge with the ryuer Iaick. The seconde cauled Coffum, enioyeth all the lande that lyethe betwene the ryuers of Kaman Iaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, possesseth parte of the prouince of Sibier and all the region abowt the same. Schichmamai, is as much to say by interpretacion, as holy or myghty. And in maner al these regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth toward Scharaitz, which consysteth of playnes and fyeldes.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Iaick, abowt the Caspian sea, there sumtymes inhabyted the kynges cauled Sawolhenfes. Demetrius Danielis (a man among these barbarians, of singuler fayth and grautie) toulde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is fene among these Tartars. And that his father beinge fente by the prynce of Moscouia to the kyng of Sawolhense, fawe whyle he was in that legacie, a certeyne feede in that Ilande sumwhat lesse and rounder then the feedes of Melones : Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heyght of fyue spannes : And is therefore cauled in theyr tounge Boranetz, which signifyeth a lyttle lamb. For it hath the headde, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly eyed : with also a very thynne skynne wherwith dyuers of th[e] inhabitants of those regions are accustomed to line theyr cappes and hattes and other tyrements for theyr heades. Many also confirmed in owre presence that they had seene these skynnes. He sayde furthermore that that plant (if it may bee cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no flesshe : but hath in the steade of flesshe a certeyne substance like vnto the flesshe of creuyffhes. The hooves also are not of horne as are the lambes, but couered with heare in the same forme. The roote cleaueth to the nauell or myddest of the belly. The plante or fruite lyueth vntyll all the grasse and herbes growyng abowte it beinge eaten, the roote wythereth for lacke of nurysshement. They say that it is very sweete to bee eaten, and is therefore greatly defyred and fought for of the woolues and other rauenyng beasts. And albeit I exteme all that is sayde of this plant to be fabulous, yet forasmuch as it hath byn toulde me of credible persons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Of this straunge frute, Mandeuell maketh mention, where in the. lxxxiiii. [eighty-fourth] chapiture of his booke he wryteth thus : Nowe shall I say of sum landes, countreys, and Iles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therefore who so goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he shall go through a kyngedome that men caule Cadiffen, and is a great lande. There groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is ripe, men cut it a funder : and fynd therein a beast as it were of flesshe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lyttle lambe without wolle. And men eate that beast and the frute also, which is a great maruayle. Neuerthelesse, I sayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I sayde that in my countrey are tres that beare frute that become byrdes flying which are good to bee eaten. And that that fauleth into the water lyueth : And that that fauleth on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. etc.

From the prince of Schidack, proceadyng. xx. [twenty] dayes iorney toward the East. are the people which the Moscouites caule Iurgenci, whose prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they coomme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that great Chan of Cathay.

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars, are these, Chan, signifieth a kyng, Soltan, the foonne of a kyng. Bii, a Duke. Murfa, the foonne of a duke. Olboud, a noble man or counsiler. Olboadulu, the foonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh preste. Kfi, a priuate person.

The names of offices are these : Vlan, the seconde dignitie to the kyng. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whose counsaile they vse in al theyr weyghty affayres. Of these the fyrste is cauled Schirmi : the seconde Barni : the thyrde, Gargni : The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue sayde thus muche of the Tartars, it shall suffice.

The Iland of
marchautes

The Caspian sea.
Persia.
Armenia.
Astrachan.

302

The Tartars neare
to the Caspian sea.
Nogai.
The possession of
three brytherne.

The kynges cauled
Sawolhenfes.

A maruelous frute
lyke a lambe.

Mandeuell

Barnacles of the
Orkeneyes.

Barack Soltan.
Cathay.

Names of dignities
amonge the
Tartars.

Names of offices.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that the greate Chan, is cauled Chan Cublai that is, the great kynge of kynges: as the greate turcke wryteth hym selfe in lyke maner, as I sawe in a letter wrytten by hym of late to the cite of Ragusa, in the which he vseth this subscription: Soltan Soliman de felim Cham Signore de Signori in sempiterno. As concernyng Moscouia and Cathay, I was mynded to haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne considerations I was perswaded to proceade no further. Vnto whose requeste, herein satisfiyinge rather then my selfe, wyllynge otherwyse to haue accomplyshed this booke to further perfection, I was content to agree for two causes especially mouynge me: wherof the one is, that as touchyng these trades and vyages, as in maner in all other sciences, there are certeyne seerates not to bee publyshed and made common to all men. The other cause is, that the parteners at whose charge this booke is prynted, although the cobby wherof they haue wrought a longe space haue cost them nought doo not neuerthelesse cease dayly to caule vpon me to make an end and proceade no further: asfirmynge that the booke wyll bee of to great a pryce and not euery mans money: fearyng rather theyr owne losse and hynderaunce, then carefull to bee beneficiall to other, as is nowe in maner the trade of all men, which ordinarie respecte of priuate commoditie hath at this tyme so lyttle moued me, I take god to wytnesse, that for my paynes and traуayles taken herein such as they bee, I may vpon iust occasion thynke my selfe a loofer manye wayes, except such men of good inclination as shall take pleasure and feele sum commoditie in the knowlege of these thynges, shall thynke me woorthy theyr good woorde, wherwith I shal repute my selfe and my traуayles so abundantly satisfiied, that I shall repute other mens gaynes a recompense for my losses, as they may bee in dedde, yf men bee not vnthankfull, which only vice of ingratitude hath hyndered the worlde of many benefites.

The nauigation by the frosen sea.



At my beynge in Moscouia when I was sent thither by kynge Ferdinando my lorde and master, it so chaunced that Georgius Istoma the duke of Moscouia his interpretour, a man of great experience who hadde before lerned the latin tounge in the court of Iohn kynge of Denmarke, was there present at the same tyme. He in the yeare of Chryst. 1496. beynge sente of his prince with master Daud a scotte borne and then ambassadour for the kynge of Denmarke, (whom also I knewe there at my fyrst legacie) made me a breefe information of all th[e] order of his iorney. The which, forasmuch as it may seeme difficult and laborious aswel for the distaunce as daungerous places, I haue thought good to describe the same as I receaued it at his mouth.

Fyrst he sayde that beynge sent of his prince with the sayd Daud, they came fyrst to Nouogardia the great. And wher as at that tyme the kyngedome of Suecia reuolted frome the kynge of Denmarke, and also the duke of Moscouia was at discention with the Suetians, by reason wherof they coulde not passe by the most accustomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted theyr iorney by an other way longer but safer. And came fyrst from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiwlo, by a very difficult and paynefull iorney. For he sayd that this iorney which can not bee to muche detested for fuche laboures and traуayles, continueth for the space of three hundreth leaques. In fine, takyng foure smaul shyppes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they sayled by the coaste on the ryght hande of the Ocean, where they sawe certeyne hyghe and rowgh mountaynes: and at the lengthe saylynge. xvi. [sixteen] leaques, and passynge a great goulfe, folowed the coaste on the lefte hande: And leauynge on the ryght hand the large sea which the name of the ryuer Petzora (as haue also the mountaynes adiacent to the same) they came to the people of Finlappia: who, although they dwell here and there in lowe cottages by the sea syde, and leade in maner a beastly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wylde Lappians. He sayde that these also are tributaries to the prince of Moscouia. Then leauynge the lande of the Lappians, and saylynge fourescore leaques, they came to the region of Nortpoden vnder the dominion of the kynge of Suecia. This the Moscouites caule Kaienska Semla, and the people Kayeni. Departynge from hense, and saylynge alonge by the coaste of a wyndynge and bendynge shore reachyng towarde the ryght hand, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy nose, beynge a greate stone reachyng farre into the sea to the similitude of a nose: vnder the whiche is seene a caue with a whyrlepoole which swallow[e]th the sea euery syxe houres: and castynge furth the same ageyne with terryble rorynge and violence, causeth the sayde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the sea: and other name it Charybdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this swallowynge goulfe is such, that it draweth into it, inuoluth, and swalloweth vp shyppes and al other thynges that comme neare it: and that they were neuer in greater dangioure. For the whyrlepoole so suddely and violently drewe vnto it the shyppes or barke wherin they were caryed, that with the helpe of ores and great labour they hardly escaped. When they had thus ouerpasse the holy nose, they came to a certeyne stonye mountayne which they shulde needes compasse abowte. But beynge there staid with contrary wyndes for the space of certeyne dayes, the pylotte of the shippe spake vnto them in this effecte: This stone (sayth he) that yowe see, is cauled Semes: The which excepte we please with summe gyfte, we shall not passe by withowt great daungiour. But the pylot beynge reproued of Istoma for his vayne superstition, helde his peace. And when they had byn detained ther by tempest for the space of foure days, at the length

Nouogardia.

Suecia vnder the
kynge of
Denmarke.Dwina.
Potiwlo.Hygh mountaynes
neare the north
Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wylde
Lappians.
The region of
NortpodenThe cape cauled
the holy nose.
A whyrlepoole or
swallowing goulfe.Such whyrlepooles,
are cauled vipersThe stone cauled
Semes.
Superstition.

the tempest ceased and they went forward on their voyage with a prosperous wind. Then the pilotte spake vnto them ageyne, sayinge: You despised my admonicion of pleasyng the Semes, and scorned the fame as wayne and superstitious. But if I had not priuile in the nyght ascended a rocke and pleased the Semes, wee shulde surely haue had no passage. Beinge demaunded what he offered to the Semes, he sayde that he poured butter myxt with otemele vpon the stone which wee sawe reache furth into the sea. As they sayled further, they came to an other cape named Motka, which was almost enuironed with the sea lyke an Ilande: in whose extreme poynte, is situate the castell of Barthus, which sum caule Wardhus, (that is) a house of defence or fortresse. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garryson of men to defende their marches. He sayde furthermore that that cape reacheth so farre into the sea, that they coulde scarcely compasse it in eyght dayes. By which taryng leaste they shulde bee hyndered, they caryed on their sholders with greate laboure, their barkes and fardelles ouer a streyght of lande conteynyng halfe a leaque in breadth. From hense they sayled to the region of the wyld Lappones, cauled Dikilappones to a place named Dront, beinge. CC. [two hundred] leaques distant from Dwina towarde the North. And thus farre as he sayth, doth the prince of Moscouia exacte tribute. Furthermore leauyng their barkes here, they synysshed the residue of their iorney on sleades. He further declared that there were hartes as are with vs of oxen, whiche in the Norwegians tounge are cauled Rhen, beinge sumwhat bygger then owre hartes. These the Lappones vse in this maner. They ioyne them to sleades made lyke fyfther botes, as wee put horses to the carte. The man in the sleade, is tyed fast by the feete least he fall owte by the swyfte course of the hartes. In his left hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherwith he moderateth the course of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked staffe wherwith he may susteine the sleade from faulng if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he toulde me that by this meanes he trauallyed twentie leaques in one daye, and then dismyssed the harte, who by hym selfe returned to his owne master and accustomed stable. This iorney thus synysshed, they came to Berges a citie of Norduegia or Norway, situate directly towarde the northe betwene the mountaynes: and wente from thense to Denmarke on horsebacke. At Dront and Berges, the day is sayde to bee. xxii. [twenty-two] houres longe in the fommer Equinoctiall. Blasius an other of the prynce of Moscouia his interpretours, who a fewe yeares before, was sent of his prince into Spayne to Th[e]mperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorter way of his iorney. For he sayde that when he was sent from Moscouia to Iohn the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrste on foote vnto Rostowe: And takyng shyppe there, came to Pereaflaw: and from Pereaflaw by the ryuer Volga to Castromow: and that frome thense goyng seuen Werstes by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: saylyng by the which, when fyrst he came to Vuolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the citie of Berges in Norway, ouerpassyng in this voyage all the perelles and laboures that Istoma rehearsed before, he came at the length to Hafnia the chiefe citie of Denmarke, whiche the Germaynes caule Koppenhagen. But in their returnyng home, they both confesse that they came to Moscouia by Liunia: and that they were a yeare in this voyage: Albeit Georgius Istoma, sayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempestes, and inforced to tary longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewyse constantly affirme that in this iorney eyther of them trauallyed a thousand threescore and ten Werstes (that is) three hundreth and fortie leaques. Furthermore also Demetrius who of late was sent ambassadour from the prynce of Moscouia to the bysshoppe of Rome, (by whose relation also Paulus Iouius wrote his description of Moscouia) confirmed all these thynges to bee trewe. All they being demaunded of me of the congeled or frosen sea, made none other answere but that in places nere vnto that sea, they saw many and great riuers by whose vehemente course and abundaunt flowyng, the seas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the ryuers is frosen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in Liunia and other partes of Suecia. For althowgh by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Ice is broken in the sea, yet dooth this chaunce seldome or neuer in ryuers, excepte by sum inundation or flud the Ice gathered together bee lyfted vp and broken. For the flakes or piefes of Ice caryed into the sea by force of the ryuers, doo flote aboue the water in maner all the hole yeare, and are ageyne so vehemently frosen together, that a man maye there sumtymes see great heapes of the Ice of manye yeares, as dooth appere by such piefes as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also byn credibly informed by faythfull men that the sea Baltheum (otherwyse cauled the goulfe of Liunia) is often tymes frosen in many places. They say furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabyted of the wyld Lappones, the soonne in the fommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the space of. xl. [forty] dayes: yet that that the body therof is so hydden with a darke myste or cloude three houres, that the beames doo not appere: Neuerthelesse to gyue such lyght duryng that tyme, that the darkeness hyndereth not their woorke. The Moscouites make their bofte that these wyld Lappones are tributaries to their prynce. Wherat I do not greatly maruayle, forasmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Their trybute is onely fures and fysshe, hauyng in maner none other thyng greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, salte, and other intyfements of gluttony, and lyue onely with fysshe and wyld beastes, yet are they exceedyng prone to lechery. They are such expert archers, that if in their huntynge they espye any beastes whose skynnes they desyre to faue vnperysshed, they

Sacrifice to the stone Semes

The cape Motka

The castel of Wardhus.

The region of the wyld Lappones. Dront.

Iorneyng on sleades.

Howe the hartes drawe sleades.

xx. [twenty] leaques in one day
The citie of Berges in Norway

A shorter iorney.

Rostow.
Pereaflaw.
Castromow.
Vuolochda.
Suchana.
Dwina.
Hafnia.
Koppenhagen
Liunia.
Werste, is almost an Italian myle.

305

Paulus Iouius.

Ryuers faulng into the frosen sea.

Wynde.
Ise.

Ise of many yeares.

The sea Baltheum
Where the sun fauleth not in. xl. [forty] daysThe wyld Lappones are tributaries to the Moscouites
Fures and fysshe

Experte archers

Good felowshyp.

Necessary warres.

No vse of money.

Theyr cotages.

Mountaynes
continually
burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer
Petzora.

306

The beaste cauled
Mors.The prouidence
of nature.

The frosen sea.

Engronland or
Groneland

wyll not lyghtly myffe to hytte them in the nofethrylles. When they go furth on huntynge, they are accustomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues fuche marchauntes or straungers as they haue receaued into theyr houfes. So that if at theyr returne, they perceau the straungers through the company of the strangers to be myrier and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the straungers sum present. But yf they fynd it otherwyse, they thrust them furth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the company they haue with straungers that resorte thither for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr natiue barbaroufnesse. They gladly admitte marchauntes, bycause they brynge them apparel of grose cloth: also hatchettes, needels, spones, knyues, drynkyng cuppes, earthen and brafen pottes, with such other necessarie wares: So that they vse now to eate foddren and rosted meate, and doo embrace more ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparel is made of the skynnes of dyuers beastes fowed togyther. And in this apparell they funtymes comme to Moscouia. Yet fewe of them haue cappes or hosen, which they vse to make of hartes skynnes. They haue not the vse of golde or syluer money: but vse only barteryng of ware for ware. And beinge ignorant of other languages beyde theyr owne, they seeme amonge straungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr cotages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne reftyng habitacion. But when they haue consumed the fyssh and wylde beastes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthermore also the fayde ambassadours of the prince of Moscouia, declared that in the same partes they sawe certeyne hygh mountaynes continually castyng furth flames of fyre as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Ilande of Sicilia: and that euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnte in maner to affhes with such continuall flames. Which thyng sum confyderyng, fayne the fyre of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concernyng these mountaynes of Norway, when I was sent ambassadour to Christierne kynge of Denmarke, I was informed the lyke by the gouernours of Norway who chaunced at that tyme to bee present there.

About the mouthes of the ryuer Petzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are sayd to bee dyuers and great beastes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne great beast as bygge as an oxe, which th[e] inhabitants caule Mors. This beast hath shorte feete lyke a beuer or an Otter, with a brest sumwhat hygh and brode for the proportion of the residue of his body: and two longe and greate teeth growyng owte of the vpper iawe. These beastes for rest and increase, doo funtymes leaue the Ocean, and by great hearde ascende the mountaynes: where before they gyue themselues to profoude sleepe (wherunto they are naturally inclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watchman as doo cranes for the securitie of the reste. Whiche if he chaunce to sleepe, or to bee slayne of the hunters, the residue may easely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnyng with roryng (as the maner is) immediately the hole hearde awakened thereby, suddelynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr teeth: And so faulyng from the mountayne with great celeritie as it were on a sleade, they cast them selues headlong into the Ocean: where also they rest and sleepe for a whyle vppon the heapes of Ise. The hunters pursue these beastes only for theyr teethe: Of the which the Moscouites, Tartars, and especially the Turkes, make haftes for swoordes and dagge[r]s very artificially: And vse these rather for ornamente, then to gyue the greater stroke for the weyght or heauinesse thereof as summe fable. Also amonge the Turkes, Moscouites, and Tartars, these teethe are foulded by weight, and are cauled the teethe of fysshes.

The frosen sea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina to Petzora and vnto the mouthes of the great riuer Obi: beyonde the which they say to bee the region of Engronland, vnknowen and seperate from the trade and conuersation of owre men, by reason of hygh mountaynes couered and coulde with perpetuall snowe, and the sea no lesse incumbered with contynually Ise whiche hyndereth nauigations and maketh them daungerous, as they faye.



EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV
LITERARVM MISSIVARVM
QVAS ILLVSTRISSIMVS PRINCEPS

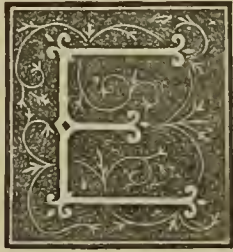
Edvvardus eius nominis Sextus, An-
gliaë, Franciaë, et Hiberniaë Rex,
mifit ad Principes Septemtrion-
alem ac Orientalem mundi
plagam inhabitantes iuxta
mare glaciale, nec non In-
diam Orientalem. Anno
Domini. 1553. Regni
fui Anno feptimo
et vltimo.



Dvvardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciaë, and
Hiberniaë Rex. etc. Omnibus,
Regibus et Principibus ac Dominis,
et cunctis Iudicibus terræ, et Ducibus
eius quibuscunque est ex-
cellens aliqua dignitas in ea

cunctis in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso cœlo: Pax,
tranquillitas, et honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris
quæ imperio vestro subiacent, cuique vestrum quemad-
modum conuenit ei. Propterea quod indidit Deus
Opt. Max. hominibus præ cunctis alijs viuentibus cor
et desiderium tale, vt appetat quisque cum alijs socie-
tatem mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere,
et mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuique pro
307 facultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem
hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in
illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a re-
motis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim
longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius
in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam
ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumque nostrorum exempla
inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime
tractauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquis
tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni
commendantes. Quod si omnibus id præstare æquum
est, certe mercatoribus imprimis præstari debet, qui
per vniuersum orbem discurrunt, mare circumlustrantes
et aridam, vt res bonas et vtilis quæ Dei beneficio in

THE COPY OF THE LETTERS
MISSIVE WHICH THE RIGHT
NOBLE PRINCE EDWARDE THE. VI.
sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other
potentates inhabytyng the Northeast
partes of the worlde towarde the
myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche
tyme as fyr Hugh Willoby knyght
and Rychard Chaunceler with
theyr company attempted theyr
vyage thither in the yeare of
Chryst. 1553. and the. vii. and
laste yeare of his reigne.



Dwarde the fyxte by the grace of God,
kyng of Englande, Fraunce, and
Ierlande. etc. To all Kynges,
Princes, Rulers, Iudges, and gouer-
nours of the earthie, and all other
hauynge any excellent dignitie on
the same in all places vnder the
vniuersall heauen: Peace, tranqui-
litie, and honoure, bee vnto yowe, and your landes
and regions which are vnder yowr dominions, and to
euery of yowe as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the greate and almyghty god hath
gyuen vnto mankynd aboue al other liuing creatours,
such a hart and desyre, that euery man desyreth to
ioyne frendeshyppe with other, to loue and bee loued,
also to gyue and receaue mutuall benefites, it is ther-
fore the dewtie of all men, accordyng to theyr poure
to maintayne and increase this desyre in euery man
with well deseruyng to all men, and especially to
shewe this good affection to such as beinge moued with
this desire, coome vnto them from farre countreys.
For in howe much the longer viage they haue attempted
for this intent, so much the more doo they therby de-
clare that this desyre hath byn ardent in them. Fur-
thermore also th[e]examples of owre fathers and predi-
cessours doo inuite vs hereunto, forasmuch as they haue
euer gentelly and louyngly intreated such as of frendely
mynde came to them aswel from countreis nere hand
as farre remote, commendynge them selues to theyr pro-
tection. And if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such
humanitie toward all men, doubtlesse the same ought
chiefely to bee shewed to marchauntes, who wander-
ynge abowt the worlde, searche both the lande and sea
to cary such good and profitable thinges as are founde
in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kyngedomes:
and ageyne to brynge from the same, suche thynges as

regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adferant, atque inde viuissim referant quod suæ regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non destituantur commodis quæ non profert illis terra eorum, et ipsi sint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cœli et terræ, humano generi maxime consulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliretur amicitia inter omnes, singulique omnibus benefacere quærent, Hoc itaque incundæ ac stabiliendæ amicitiaë desiderio moti viri quidam regni nostri, iter in remotas maritimas regiones instituerunt, vt inter nostros et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent: Nosque rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, concessimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo sunt seruis nostris fidis et charis, vt pro sua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quæsituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex nostris terris, id quo illi carent. Atque ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, sitque amicitia perpetua et fœdus indissolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus quibus superabundant in regnis suis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis nostris res, quibus destituuntur. Rogamus itaque vos Reges et Principes et omnes quibus aliqua est potestas in terra, vt viris istis nostris transitum permittatis per regiones vestras. Non enim tangent quicquam ex rebus vestris inuitis vobis. Cogitate quod homines et ipsi sunt. Et si quare caruerint, oramus pro vestra beneficentia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes vicissim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos et subditi nostri nos gereremus erga seruos vestros si quando transferint per regiones nostras. Atque promittimus vobis per Deum omnium quæ cœlo, terra et mari continentur, perque vitam nostram et tranquillitatem regnorum nostrorum, nos pari benignitate seruos vestros accepturos si ad regna nostra aliquando venerint. Atque a nobis et subditis nostris, ac si nati fuissent in regnis nostris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt rependamus vobis benignitatem quam nostris exhibueritis. Postquam vos Reges, Principes, etc. rogauimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni prosequamini seruos nostros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum nostrum, vt vobis diurnam vitam largiatur, et pacem quæ nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas est regni nostri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, mense Iar. xiiii. die mensis, anno septimo regni nostri.

303

they fynde there commodious for theyr own countreys: Bothe, aswell that the people to whom they go, may not bee destitute of such commodities as theyr countreys brynge not furth to them, as that also they may bee partetakers of suche thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth, greatly prouydyng for mankynde, wolde not that al thynges shulde bee founde in one region, to th[e]nde that one shuld haue neede of an other, that by this meanes frendshippe myght bee establysshed amonge all men, and euery one seeke to gratifie all. For th[e]stablysshynge and furtherance of which vniuersall amitie, certeyne men of owre realme moued hereunto by the sayde desyre, haue institute and 309 taken vppon theym a vyage by sea into farre countreys to th[e]intent that betwene owre people and them, a way bee opened to brynge in and cary owt marchaundies, desyryng vs to further theyr enterpryse. Who assentyng to theyr petition, haue licenced the ryght valiante and woorthy syr Hughe Wylloby knyght, and other owre trusty and faithful seruautes which are with hym according to theyr desyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknown, aswell to seeke suche thynges as we lacke, as also to cary vnto them from owre regions, suche thynges as they lacke. So that hereby not only commoditie may ensewe both to them and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetuall league of frendshippe be establysshed betwene vs bothe, whyle they permitte vs to take of theyr thynges suche whereof they haue abundaunce in theyr regions, and we ageine graunt them suche thynges of owrs wherof they are destitute. Wee therefore desyre yow kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is any poure on the earth, to permitte vnto these ovr seruautes, free passage by yowr regions and dominions. For they shall not touche any thyng of yowres vnwyllyng vnto yow. Confyder yow that they also are men. If therefore they shal stand in neede of any thyng, we desyre yowe of all humanitie, and for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to ayde and helpe theym with such thynges as they lacke, receauynge ageyne of them such thynges as they shalbe able to gyue yowe in recompense. Shewe yowre selues so towarde theym, as yowe wolde that wee and ovr subiectes shulde shewe ovr selues toward yowr seruautes, if at any tyme they shall passe by owre regions. Thus doinge, wee promesse yowe by the God of all thynges that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the lyfe and tranquillitie of owre kyngedomes, that we wyl with lyke humanitie accepte yowre seruautes if at any tyme they shal coomme to owre kyngdomes, where they shall as frendly and gently bee interteyned as if they were borne in ovr dominions, that we may hereby recompense the fauour and benignitie which yow haue shewed to ovr men. Thus after we haue desyred yow kynges and princes, etc. With all humanitie and fauour to interteyne ovr welbeloued seruautes, wee pray owre almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace which neuer shall haue ende. Wrytten in London whiche is the chiefe citie of owre kyngedome: In the yeare frome the creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Iar, the. xiiii. day of the moneth, and seuenth yeare of owre reigne.

¶ This letter was wrytten also in Greeke and dyuers other languages.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION V.

Other notable things as touching the Indies,

out of the Writings and Maps of

Francisco Lopez de Gómara,

and

Sebastian Cabot.

1552-1555.]

OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES AS TOVCHYNGE THE INDIES:

AND FYRST OF THE FOREKNOWLEAGE THAT THE POET SENECA HAD
of the fyndyng this newe worlde and other regions not then knowen.

FRANCISCO LOPES.



O speke of thynges that shalbe, longe before they are, is a kynde of diuination if the truth thereof folowe effectually. Neuerthelesse althowgh such thynges as are spoken eyther by coniecture, or by th[e]instincte of nature, or by naturall reason, doo oftentimes take place and succede accordyngely, yet are not such coniectures to bee accoumpted as certeyne as prophesies reueled by the spirite of god, which wee ought entierly to beleue: but not so the other gathered only by certeine apparences, similitudes, reasons, and demonstrations: althowghe it bee greatly to bee maruailed to confyder howe they hytte the truthe sumtyme: which perhappes they doo accordyng to the prouerbe that sayth: He that speaketh much shall sumtimes stumble on the truth. All this I speake confyderynge the sayinge of the poet Seneca in his tragedie of Medea, where his woordes feeme in all poyntes to agree with the discouerynge of the Indies founde of late by Christofer Colon and the Spanyardes. The woordes of Seneca, are these,

*Venient annis
Sæcula feris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Pateat tellus, Tiphisque nouos
Detegat orbis,
Nec fit terris ultima Thyle.*

That is to faye: There shall coomme worldes in late yeares, in the whiche the Ocean shall vnlofe the bondes of thynges, and a great lande shall appeare. Also Typhis (that is nauigation) shall discouer newe worldes: and Thyle shall not bee the furthest lande.

Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide.



The Philosopher Plato wrytethe in his Dialoges of Timeus and Cricia, that in the owlde time there was in the sea Atlantike ouer agenst Affrica, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater then Affrica and Asia: affirmyng that those landes are from thense continent and greate: And that the kynges of that Ilande gouerned a greate parte of Affrica and Europe. But that in a certeyne greate earthequake and tempest of rayne, this Ilande soonke and the people were drowned: Also that there remayned so much mudde of the drownynge or synkyng of that Ilande, that that sea Atlantike coule not bee fayled. Sum take this for a fable: and many for a trewe

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophesie.

So do the
Egiptians.

The woordes of
Seneca.

Ilande was in
owlde time cauled
Thyle as summe
thinke.

310

Plato sayth that
these kynges were
the sonnes of
Neptunus.
An earthquake.

Marcilius Ficinus.
Proclus.

Mexico or new
Spaine.

Hesperides.

Capo Verde

Ophir.

Tharsis.

Gorgonas.

Solinus.

Lands found by the

Carthaginenses.

Aristotell.

Theophrast.

Jonas fledde to
Tharsis.

The nauigations
of Salomon.

Bermeio is the
Arabian sea.

hystorie, as doothe Marcilius Ficinus inducinge Proclus alleagynge certeyne hystories of the Ethiopians wrytten by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the fame to bee trewe. But there is nowe no cause why wee shulde any longer doubtte or dispute of the Iland Atlantide, forasmuch as the discouerynge and conquest of the west Indies do plainly declare what Plato hath wrytten of the fayde landes. In Mexico also at this day they caul that water Atl. by the halfe name of Atlant, as by a woorde remaynyng of the name of the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewyse fay that the Indies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the remanent of the fame: and not the Ilandes of Hesperides or Ophir, or Tharsis, as sum haue thought of late dayes. For the Hesperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Gorgonas from whense Hanon brought apes: Albeit in conferryng it with Solinus, there is sum doubtte by reason of the nauigation of fortie dayes wherof he speaketh. Aswell maye it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the Indies, shulde bee those which the Carthaginenses founde and forbodde theyr citifens to make any vyages thyther or to inhabite the fame as Aristotle and Theophraste doo rehearse where they wryte of the marueylous and vnknownen workes of nature. As concernynge Ophir and Tharsis, it is not knowen what or where they bee, althowgh many lerned men as faynt Augustine and other haue searched what citie or lande Tharsis myght bee. Saynt Ierome who was experte in the Hebrew tounge, fayth in many places vpon the prophetes that Tharsis is as much to say as the sea: and that whereas it is wrytten that Jonas fledde to Tharsis, he wente to the sea by a longe iorney. Furthermore as concernynge the nauigations of Salomon, it is not to bee thought that his nauies sayled to the west Indies, forasmuch as to passe thyther, it was requisite for them to sayle Westwarde departynge frome the sea of Bermeio: and not Eastward as they sayled. Ageine, the west Indies haue no vnicornes, elephantes, diamonds, and such other thynges as they brought in the trade of their nauigations.

¶ Of the colour of the Indians.



Ne of the marueylous thynges that god vfeth in the composition of man, is coloure: whiche doubtlesse can not bee confydered withowte great admiration in beholding one to be white and an other blacke, beinge coloures vtterlye contrary. Sum lykewyse to be yelowe whiche is betwene blacke and white: and other of other colours as it were of dyuers liueres. And as these colours are to be marueyled at, euen so is it to be considered howe they dyffer one from an other as it were by degrees, forasmuche as sum men are whyte after dyuers fortes of whytensse: yelowe after dyuers maners of yelowe: and blacke after dyuers fortes of blackensse: and howe from whyte they go to yelowe by discolourynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by affhe colour, and murrey sumwhat lyghter then blacke: and tawnye lyke vnto the west Indians which are all together in general eyther purple, or tawny lyke vnto fodde quynses, or of the colour of chestnuttes or olyues: which colour is to them natural and not by theyr goynge naked as many haue thought: albeit theyr nakednesse haue sumwhat helped therunto. Therefore in lyke maner and with fuche diuersitie as men are commonly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with dyuers degrees diuerfly inclynynge more or lesse to blacke or whyte. No lesse maruayle is it to confyder that men are whyte in Siuile and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of chestnutte colour at the ryuer of Plata, beinge all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lykewyse that the men of Affryke and Asia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue benethe or on this fyde the same line as in Mexico, Yucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape faynt Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the same Equinoctiall. For in al the tracte of these coastes certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vaschus Nunnez of Balboa discovered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme that fuche varietie of colours proceadeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee althowgh wee bee all borne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cause why god hath so ordeyned it, otherwyse then to confyder that his diuine maiestie hath doonne this as infinite other to declare his omnipotencie and wisedome in such diuersities of colours as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke also in beastes, byrdes, and floures, where dyuers and contrary colours are seene in one lyttle fether, or the leaues growynge owt of one lyttle stalke. An other thyng is also greatly to bee noted as touchynge these Indians. And this is, that theyr heare is not curld as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same clime: neyther are they balde excepte very seldome, and that but lyttle. All whiche thynges may giue further occasion to phylosophers to search the secretes of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

How colours dyffer
by degrees.

The coloure of the
west Indians.

Dyue[r]s sortes of
whyte and blacke.

311

Fr. . . se
procea . . . the
varietie of colours.

Gods wysedome
and poure is seene
in his workes.

Curld heare and
baldnes.

¶ *Why they were cauled Indians.*



Vm thynke that the people of the newe world were cauled Indians bycause they are of the colour of the Easte Indians. And althowghe (as it semeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and fashions, yet is it trewe that of India they were cauled Indians.

India is properlie cauled that great prouince of Asia in the which great Alexander kepte his warres: and was so named of the ryuer Indus: and is diuyded into many kyngedomes confynnyng with the same. From this greate India (cauled the East India) came great compaynes of men as wryteth Herodotus: and inhabited that parte of Ethiopia that lyeth betwene the fea Bermeia (otherwyfe cauled the redde fea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: al which regions that great Christian prince Prester Iohn dooth now possesse. The sayde Indians preuayled so much, that they vtterly changed the customes and name of that lande, and cauled it India: by reason wherof, Ethiopia also hath of longe tyme byn cauled India. And hereuppon came it that Arystotell, Seneca, and certeyne other oulde autours sayd that India was not farre from Spayne. After this also, of later dayes owre West India was so cauled of the sayde India of Prester Iohn where the Portugales had theyr trade. For the pylot of the caruell that was fyrste dryuen by forcyble wynde to an vnknowne lande in the Weste Ocean, cauled the same India bycause the Portugales so cauled such landes as they had lately discouered Eastwarde. Chrystopher Colon also after the sayde pylot, cauled the west landes by the same name. Albeit, sum that take Colonus for an expert Cosmographer, thynke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the furthest and vnknowne ende therof reachynge into the Weste vnder the other hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe beneathe vs: affirmynge that when he fyrst attempted to discouer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the ryche Iland of Cipango, which fauleth on the parte of great China or Cathay as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And that he shulde fooner come thither by folowynge the course of the foonne Westwarde then ageynst the same: Albeit manye thynke that there is no suche Ilande, or at the leaste not yet knowen by that name: wheras also Marcus Paulus obserued no exacte description of the place eyther of this Ilande or of Cathay.

The colour of the East Indians.

East India.

Prester Iohn came owt of India to Ethiope.

Ethiopia cauled India.

India not far from Spayne

Prester Iohn knowne to the Portugales.

At the furthest Easte, begynneth the west.

The Iland of Cipango.

China.

Cathay.

To the East by the west.

Marcus Paulus Venetus.

¶ *The fyrste discouerynge of the Weste Indies.*



Certeyne caruell saylynge in the weste Ocean about the coastes of Spayne, had a forcyble and continuall wynde from the East wherby it was dryuen to a land vnknowne and not descrybed in any mappe or carde of the fea: and was dryuen styl alonge by the coaste of the same for the space of many dayes vntyll it came to a hauen: where in a shorte tyme the most parte of the maryners beinge longe before verye weake and feeble by reason of hunger and trauayle, dyed: So that only the pylot with thre or foure other remayned alyue. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrst discouered to theyr myffortune, but the refydue also that lyued had in maner as lyttle fruition of the same: not leauynge or at the least not openly publyshynge any memorie therof, neyther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what yeare it was founde. Albeit, the faute was not theirs, but rather the malice of other, or the enuie of that which wee caule fortune. I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hystories affirme that great thynges proceade and increafe of smaule and obscure begynnynge, fyth wee haue seene the same veriefyed in this fyndyng of the Indies beinge so notable and newe a thyng. Wee neede not bee curious to seeke the name of the pylot fyth death made a shorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the Ilands of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal nauigation chaunced vnto hym. Other say that he was a Biscayne, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other also, that he was a Portugale: and that eyther he wente or came from Mina or India: which agreeth well with the name of these newe landes as I haue sayde before. Ageyne, sum there bee that say that he browght the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilande of Madera, or to sum other of the Ilandes cauled *de los Azores*. Yet doo none of them asfirme any thyng, although they all affirme that the pylotte dyed in the house of Chrystopher Colon, with whome remayned al such wrytynge and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the sayde carauell, aswell of such thynges as he obserued both by lande and fea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those landes whiche he had discouered.

A harde begynnynge.

312

Great thynges proceadyng of smaule and obscure begynnynge. The pylote that fyrst founde the Indies.

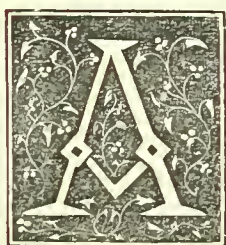
Mina.

¶ *What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrst to the knowleage of the Indies.*



Chrystopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or (as sum say) in Nerui, a village in the territorie of Genua in Italie. He descended as sum thynke, of the house of the Pelestreles of Placentia in Lumbardie. He beganne of a chylde to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exercise on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeares into Suria and other partes of the East. After this, he became a master in makynge cardes for the sea, whereby he had great vantage. He came to Portugale to knowe the reason and description of the south coastes of Affrica and the nauigations of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes more perfecte to bee folde. He maryed in Portugale as sum say: or as many say, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at fuche tyme as the sayde caruell arryued there, whose pylot fuiorned in his house, and dyed also there, bequethynge to Colon his carde of the description of fuche neue iandes as he hadde founde, wherby Colon had the fyrst knowleage of the Indydes. Sum haue thought that Colon was well lerned in the Latine tounge and the science of Cosmographie: and that he was therby fyrst moued to seeke the landes of the Antipodes and the ryche Ilande of Cipango whereof Marcus Paulus wryteth. Also that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges of Timeus and Cricias, wryteth of the greate Ilande Atlantide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndiscouered beinge bygger then Asia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowleage what Aristotell and Theophrastus saye in theyr bookes of maruayles, where they wryte that certeyne marchauntes of Carthage faylyng from the streyghtes of Gibraltar towarde the west and south, founde after many dayes a greate Ilande not inhabited: yet replenished with al thynges requisite, and hauynge many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greatly lerned: yet of good vnderstandynge. And when he had knowleage of the sayde neue landes by the information of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to certeyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchynge the lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this secrete and conferred chiefly with a fryer, named Iohn Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monastery of Rabida. So that I verely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges more that he lefte vnspoken, were wrytten by the sayde Spanyshe pylot that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science atteyned to the knowleage of the Indies, he wolde longe before haue communicate this secrete to his owne contrey men the Genueses, that trauallye all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue comme into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtelesse he neuer thought of any such thyng before he chaunced to bee acquainted with the sayd pylot who founde those landes by fortune, accordynge to the sayinge of Plinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is: That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Chrystian opinion is, to thinke that god of his singuler prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookynge downe from heauen vpon the sonnes of Adam so longe kepte vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to hym only knowen) to rayse those wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein most lyke vnto the shyppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole world was saued as by this caruel this neue worlde receaued the fyrst hope of theyr saluation) was dryuen to these landes. But wee wyll nowe declare what great thynges folowed of this smaule begynnynge, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

¶ *What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies.*



After the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanyshe caruell that discouered the Indies, Chrystopher Colon purposed to feke the fame. But in howe muche more he defyred this, the lesse was his poure to accomplishe his desire. For, besyde that of him selfe he was not able to furnyshe one shyppe, he lacked also the fauour of a kynge vnder whose protection he might so enioy the riches he hoped to fynde, that none other myght take the same from hym or defeate hym therof. And seinge the kynge of Portugale occupied in the conquest of Africa and the nauigations of the East which were then fyrst attempted, the kynge of Castyle lykewyse no lesse bufyed in the warres of Granada, he sent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was also priuie to this secrete) to practise with the kynge of Englande Henry the seuenth beinge very ryche

Thus also began Rychard chaunceler.

Colon was not much lerned.

The Ilande Atlantide. The lande found by the Carthaginenses.

313 Colon conferred with lerned men.

Chaunce and arte. A Christian opinion.

The caruel compared to the ship of Noye.

The kynge of Portugale. The kyng of Castile.

Kynge Henry the seuenth.

and without warres: promysynge to brynge hym great ryches in short time if he wolde shew him fauour and furnyshe hym with shippes to discouer the newe Indies wherof he had certeyne knowlege. But neyther here beinge able to brynge his fute to passe, he caused the matter to bee moued to the kynge of Portugale Don Alonso the fyfte of that name: at whose handes he founde neither fauour nor money, forasmuch as the licenciante Calzadilla the byshop of Vifeo, and one master Rodrigo men of credit in the science of Cosmographie, withstoode him and contended that there neither was nor coulde any golde or other ryches bee founde in the west as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very sadde and pensyue: but yet was not discouraged or despaired of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found. This done, he tooke shippinge at Lisburne, and came to Palos of Moguer where he communed with Martin Alonso Pinzon an expert pylot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this disclosynge the hole secretes of his mynde to Iohn Perez of Marchena (a fryer of th[e] order of saynt Frances in Rabida, and wel lerned in Cosmographie) and declaryng vnto hym how by folowyng the course of the son by a temperate vyage, rich and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commended his enterpryse, and gaue him counsaile to breake the matter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Eurique of Guzman a great lorde and very ryche: And also to Don Luys of Cerda the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouision of shippes well furnysed in his hauen of Santa Maria. But wheras both these dukes tooke the matter for a dreame and as a thyng diuised of an Italian deceauer who (as they thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinando and lady Ifabell princes of Castile: affirmynge that they wolde bee ioyfull of such newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to fryer Ferdinando of Talauera the queenes confessor. Chrystopher Colon therefore, repayed to the court of the Catholyke princes, in the yere. M. CCCC. lxxxvi. [1486 A.D.] and delyuered vnto theyr handes the petition of his request as concerninge the discoueryng of the newe Indies. But they beinge more carefull, and applyng all theyr mynde howe they myght dryue the Moores owt of the kyngdome of Granada, which great enterpryse they had alrede taken in hande, dyd lyttle or nothyng esteeme the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, found the meanes to declare his fute to such as had fymtymes priuate communication with the kynge. Yet bicause he was a stranger and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwyse credited then by the letter of a gray fryer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonso of Quintanilia the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meate and drynke at his owne charges, and hard gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: defyrng hym in the meane tyme to bee contente with that poore enterteynemente, and not to despayre of his enterpryse: puttyng hym also in good conforte that he shulde at one tyme or other, coome to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilia, Colon was brought to the presence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbysshop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues and autoritie with the kynge and queene, who brought hym before them after that he well perceaued and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his fute harde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the fyrst they tooke it for vayne and false that he promysed, neuerthelesse they put hym in good hope that he shulde bee well dispatched when they had fynysed the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which answere, Colon beganne to reuyue his spirites, with hope to bee better esteemed and more fauourably to bee h[e]ard amonge the gentelmen and noble men of the court, who before tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothynge difmayde or discouraged when so euer he debated the matter with them, althowghe many iudged hym phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all such as attempte any thyng beyonde theyr reach and the compasse of theyr knowlege: thinkyng the worlde to bee no bigger then the cagies wherin they are brought vp and lyue. But to returne to Colon: So hotte and vrgente was the siege of Granada, that they presently graunted hym his demaunde to seeke the newe landes, and to brynge from thense golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, spices, and fuche other rych thynges. They gaue hym also the tenth parte of all the reuenues and customes dewe vnto the kynge of al such landes as he shulde discouer, not doynge preiudice in any thyng to the kynge of Portugale. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the priuilege of the rewarde, in Granada the. xxx. [thirtieth] daye of Aprell the same yere that the citie was woonne. And wheras the sayde Catholyke princes had not mony presently to dispatch Colon, Luys of S. Angell the kynges secretary of accomptes, lente them fyxe quentes of marauedes, whiche in a grosse summe make. xvi. [sixteen] thoufande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefly to be noted: wherof the one is, that for so smaule charges they haue increafed the reuenues of the crowne of Castyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endynge the conquest of the Moores who possessed the kyngedome of Granada eyght hundreth yeres, they immediatly beganne the conquest of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were euer appoynted to feyght ageynst infidels and enemies of the fayth of Iesu Chryst.

Barnarde knewe not all thynges.

The duke of Medina Sidonia.
The duke of Medina Celi.

314

The conquest of Granada.

What men knowe not they count fantasticall.

Colon his interteynemente.

The archbysshop of Toledo.
Colon is brought to the kynges presence

The iudgement of ignorant folkes.

Colon is dispatched.

Colon his rewarde

One quent is. x [ten] hundreth thousande.

By this traualye of Colonus in so noble an enterpryse and so harde successe, dooth the fayinge of Plinie appere to be most trew, wher in the preface of his natural hystory wrytten to th[e]mprour Vespasian he writeth in this maner. *Res ardua vetustis nouitatem dare: Nouis, auct[or]itatem: absoletis, nitorem; obscuris, lucem: fastiditis, gratiam: dubiis, fidem: omnibus vero naturam, et natura sua omnia. Itaque etiam non affectis, voluisse abunde pulchrum atque magnificum est.* That is to say: It is a dyfficulte thyng to gyne newenes to owlde thynges, autoritie to newe thynges: bewtie to thynges owt of vse: fame to the obscure: faouere to the hatefull: credite to the doubtfull: nature to all, and all to nature. To such neuerthelesse as can not attayne to all these, it is greatly commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the fame.

315 In the scu[t]chen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinando and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (so cauled for theyr warres ageynst the infidels) these verfes were wrytten.

*Por Castilla y por Leon,
Nueuo mundo hallo Colon.*

That is: For Castile and for Leon,
The newe worlde founde Colon.

¶ Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico.



Ewe Spayne is that parte of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South frome the lande of Floryda. This was subdued to th[e]mprour of Castile by the ryght noble gentelman Ferdinando Cortese the marquesse of the vale of Quaxaca. In this lande are many prouinces conteynyng in them in maner innumerable cities, amonge which that is the chiefe which the Indians caule Mexico or Temixtitan, consyftyng of more then fye hundreth thousand inhabitautes. It standeth in the myddest of a lake of salte water as doth Venecy in the sea. The lake conteyneth fortie Persian myles cauled Parafange, euery one consyftyng of. xxx. [thirty] furlon[g]s, and more as sum say. In these regions is founde great plentie of golde, fyluer, and precious stones, with innumerable other thynges both necessary for the lyfe of man and pleasaunt: as fylke, bombasine cotton, alame, Safferne, Woade, with dyuers other thynges wherwith clothe and fylke is dyed. There is also such abundaunce of fuger, that certeyne Spanyshe shippes are yearely fraughted therewith and brynge the same into Siuile from whence it is caryed in maner to all partes of Chrystendome. Th[e]nhabitautes of Mexico are subtyle people, and vse much craft in theyr bargening. They haue not the vse of golde and fyluer monye: but vse in the steade therof the halfe shelles of almonds, whiche kynde of Barbarous money they caule Cacao or Cacanguate. In maner al kyndes of corne are there very good [and] cheape: especially barley and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wylde bores, Lyons, Leoparades, and Tygers, which beastes wander in maner in euery place. The region is moste commodious for haukyng and huntynge for the great abundaunce it hath of beastes and foules. But the people exercise all theyr cunnyng in makynge the images of theyr Idolatry, and in paintyng. Theyr woman are valiant: and sumptuous in theyr apparell and other tyrements. For they so rychely frynge and byset the same with perles, precious stones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of paper greatly differyng from owrs. In this they expresse theyr mindes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwise th[e] use of letters. The nation is desyrous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the condicions of peace vniuolated: But delyteth rather in ciuile and most cruell battayle amonge them selues then to lyue in peace and quietnesse. Suche as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theyr enemies, eyther by submission or otherwyse, are partely sacrificed to the Idoles, and the resydue gyuen to the souldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and haukes with parte of theyr pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which euery one maketh for his particular god after the phantasie of his own brayne, and gyueth therto diuine honour. Albeit at this day they doo by lyltle and lyltle leaue of theyr barbarous fiercenesse: and with owre religion embrace better maners. For they nowe professe the fayth of Chryst, and in his name pray vnto God the father.

Vnderstande here that as touchynge these regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entiteled of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediatly after the Decades, although the printer haue also wrytten the thyrde decade* ouer the head of that booke which intreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conquest of this Mexico, Francisco Lopez hath written a large booke in the Spanyshe tounge.

* See p. 187.—E. A.

The cite of
Mexico or
Temixtitan.

Golde and syluer.

Sylke.
Cotton.
Alam.
Woade.
Sugar.

Shelles for money.

Corne.

Beastes.

Haukyng and
huntynge.

Paintynge.

Women
sumptuously
appareled.

A warlike nation

Captiues sacrificed
to Idoles.

¶ Of Peru.



The prouince cauled Peru, was also named noua Castilia by them that fyrste founde it. This region is the west parte of America: and is situate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, proceedinge from the West to the East. And southwarde begynneth five degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the south. This is taken to bee the rycheft lande in golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, and spyces, that euer was founde yet to this day. For golde is there in such plentie that they make pyfspots therof, and other veffels applyed to fylthy vses. But this is more to bee marueyled at, that in a citie cauled Collao was founde a house all couered with maffie plates of golde. In theyr warres also theyr harnesse was of golde and syluer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, slynges, dartes, and pikes. Th[e]inhabitanes are warlyke people and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceedyng frutefull, and yeldeth come twyfe in the yeare. It is so floryfhyng with many fayre wooddes, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleasaunt and necessary commodities, that it seemeth in maner an earthly Paradyse. It hath dyuers kyndes of beastes, and yet none hurtfull or of rauenyng kynde. There are sheepe of such heygth that they vse them in the steade of horses. Some write that they are as bygge as the younge foles of camels: and that theyr woolle is very softe and fine. Also that the ewes bryng furth lambes twyfe a yeare. The people are wytty and of gentyl behauoure. Cunnyng also in artes, faythful of promes, and of maners not greatly to bee discommended, faue that they are ignorant of Chryst: who neuerthelesse is nowe knowen vnto them in many places, as our hope is he shalbe dayly more and more if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynge handes to the plowe of owre lorde, and fende labourers into his vyneyarde.

¶ Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer.



This ryuer reacheth very farre in length and bredth: and is cauled Vruai in the Indian tounge. Into this fauleth an other ryuer named Paraué. The fyrste that sayled into the ryuer of Plata, was Iohn Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kyng of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of these seas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche Iohn Dias named Martinus Gratiás bycause a pylot of his so cauled, was buried there. This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer: and is dystant from the mouth of the fame abowt fortie leaques. As the sayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was suddeynly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that priuillie assayled hym. Wherwith neuerthelesse theyr barbarous crueltie was not satiffyed vntyll they had torne him in piefes and deuoured hym. But many yeares after, Th[e]emperoures maiestie and kyng of Spayne Charles the fyfte, sente fourth Sebastian Cabot (a man of great courage and skylfull in Cosmographie, and of no lesse experience as concernyng the starres and the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the Ilandes of Tharsis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Receauyng therefore his commission and proceedinge forwarde on his vyage, he arryued by chaunce at this Ilande: The cause wherof was that the principall vessell was lost by shipwracke, and the men that faued theyr lyues by swymmyng were receaued into other shyppes. Perceauyng therefore that by reason of this chaunce he could by no meanes performe his vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the sayde Ilande, and thervppon to conueygh his vyttayles to land, to prepare his soldiers to th[e]inuasion, to plant colonyes, and to erect fortresses by the ryuers syde wherby the Spanyardes myght bee defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was riche in golde and syluer. Which thyng dyd so encorage him, that without respect of perel he thought best to expugne it by one meanes or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermore as touchyng the ryuer, Sebastian Cabote made relation that he neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in bredth and depth. For whereas it fauleth into the sea, it conteyneth. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques in breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot sayled vp the fame into the lande for the space of three hundreth and fiftie leaques as he wryteth in his owne carde. That it is of great depth, may hereby bee confydered that manye greate ryuers faule into it: so that the chanell can not bee shalowe that conteyneth such abundance of water, and suche plentie of good and great fysshes. For there is in maner no fyssh in the sea, that is not founde in this ryuer. As soone as the Spanyardes were fet alande, they made a prooffe if the foyle were frutefull to beare corne. Takyng therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commytynge the fame to the earth in the moneth of September, they gathered therof

316

Peru is the rycheft lande that is knowen.

A house couered with gold.
Harnes of golde.
A fruteful region.

Great sheepe.

The dewtie of Chrystian princes.

Paraué.

Iohn Dias Solis

The Ilande Martinus Gratiás.

The viage of Sebastian Cabote to the ryuer of Plata.

Tharsis.
Ophir.
Cipango.
Cathay.

The ryuer of Plata.

317

Marvelous
frutfulnes.
Mountaynes
conteynyng golde
and syluer.

Great sheepe.

Theyr colour.

Men with
deformed legs.

two thousande and fiftie at December nexte folowynge: wherin sume beinge deceaued and mistakynge the thyng, haue wrytten in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fystie thousande and two. The like fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulfe. Furthermore th[e]inhabitauntes declared that not farre from that place, ther are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great distance from the same, to bee other mountaynes no lesse frutefull of syluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearse. Th[e]inhabitauntes are paynefull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherin they take great pleasure: and haue therfore great plentie of breade of Maizium. There are sheepe of fuche byggenesse that they compare them to younge camels or asses as sum say. Their woolle is very fine: and nearest vnto the fynenesse of fylke. There are also beastes of dyuers kyndes. Amonge men there is this dyfference, that such as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most parte lyke vnto the men of owre regions. But they that dwell about the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr coloure therof) are blackyshe or purple of the coloure of fine Iren or steele. This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyr fiete and legges are lyke the legs and fiete of the foule cauled the oystreche.

¶ *Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.*



IN this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngedomes: as the kyngedomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Erancangui, Dausian, Capelam, and the greate kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wryters Aurea Chersonefus: whose chiefe citie is also cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Vnder this kyngedome are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, whereof the principall are these: Iaua the greater, Iaua the lesse, Polagua, Mendana, Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Anbon, and Gilolo, with infinite other. On the Southwest parte from Malacha, is the great Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme

Malacha.
Tachola.
The Ilandes of
Malucha.
The Iland of
Samotra.
Spyces.
Calocut.
Ceilam.
Cathay.
China.
Precious stones.
Sylke.
Cautan.

Taprobana, in the which are the kyngedomes of Pedir, Biraen, Pazer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and al the other cauled Maluche, brynge furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome, nuttemegges, maces, and all other kyndes of spyces excepte pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calecut and the Ilande of Ceilam. All these fortes of spices are caryed to Malacha to bee sould. But the greatest parte of them is caryed to Cathay and China: and from thense to the north partes of Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of precious stones. The people are very subtyle and ryche. They are all appareled eyther in fylke or cloth, or vestures of other woorkemanshippe: and are of good ciuilitie. They do not gladly permitte the Portugales or other straungers to trafike in theyr kyngedome: whose moste famous place vppon the sea fyde, is named Cautan, and the sea Machiam, cauled of the owlde wryters the sea of Sina.

¶ *Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyinge west and northwest from Englande, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies.*



Many haue trauallyd to searce the coast of the lande of Laborador, aswell to th[e]intente to knowe howe farre or whyther it reachethe, as also whether there bee any passage by sea through the same into the sea of Sur and the Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the Equinoctiall line: thinkynge that the waye thither shulde greatly bee shortened by this vyage. The Spanyardes as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spices perteyne, dyd fyrst seeke to fynde the same by this way. The Portugales also hauynge the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd trauallye to fynde the same: although hetherto neyther anye such passage is founde or the ende of that lande. In the yeare a thousande and fve hundreth, Gasper Cortesreales, made a vyage thither with two carauelles: but founde not the streyght or passage he fought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lye in the mouth of the goulfe Quadrado, after his name Cortesreales, lyinge in the .L. [fifty] degrees and more: and brought from that lande about three score men for slaues. He greatly maruayled to beholde the hougge quantitie of snowe and ise. For the sea is there frosen excedyngly. Th[e]inhabitauntes are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and laborious. They paynte theyr bodyes, and weare braselettes and hoopess of syluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the skynnes of marternes and

The way to the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the north sea.

The Spanyardes.

Gasper
Cortesreales.

318

Insula
Cortesreales.

Snowe and Ise.

Furres.

dyuers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inwarde in wynter, and owtwarde in foommer. This apparell they gyrde to theyr bodyes with gyrdels made of cotton or the fynewes of fysshes and beastes. They eate fyssh more then any other thyng, and especially salmons, althoughe they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houses of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the steade of tyles, couer them with the skynnes of fysshes and beastes. It is fayde also that there are grifes in this lande: and that the beares and many other beastes and foules are white. To this and the Ilandes abowt the same, the Britons are accustomed to reforte: as men of nature agreable vnto them and borne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Norways also fayled thyther with the pylot cauled Iohn Scoluo: And the Englysshe men with Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of Baccalaos, is a greate tracte: and the greatest altitude therof, is. xlviij. [forty-eight] degrees and a halfe. Sebastian Cabot was the fyrst that browght any knowlege of this lande. For beinge in Englande in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth, he furnysshed twoo shippes at his owne charges or (as sum say) at the kynges, whome he perswaded that a passage might bee founde to Cathay by the north seas, and that spices myght bee brought from thense soner by that way, then by the vyage the Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundred men, and directed his course by the tracte of Ilande vpon the cape of Laborador at. lviii. [fifty-eight] degrees: affirmynge that in the monethe of Iuly there was such cold and heapes of Ice that he durst passe no further: also that the dayes were very longe and in maner without nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certeyne it is, that at the. lx. [sixty] degrees, the longest day is of. xviii. [eighteen] houres. But confyderynge the coulde and the straungenes of the vnknown lande, he turned his course from thense to the West, folowynge the coast of the lande of Baccalaos vnto the. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] degrees, from whense he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Brytons and Danes haue fayled to the Baccalaos: and Iaques Cartier a frenche man was there twyse with three galeons: as one in the yere. xxxiiii. [thirty-four] and the other in the. xxxv. [thirty-five] and chose the lande to inhabite frome the. xlv. [forty-fifth] degrees to the. li. [fifty-first] beinge as good a lande as Fraunce, and al thynges therein commune to such as fyrst possesse the same.

Of these lands, Iacobus Gastaldus wryteth thus: The newe lande of Baccalaos, is a coulde region, whose inhabytauntes are Idolatours and praye to the foonne and moone and dyuers Idoles. They are whyte people and very rustical. For they eate fleshe and fyssh and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes also they eate mans fleshe priuilye so that theyr Caciqui haue no knowlege therof. The apparell of both the men and woman, is made of beares skynnes, althoughe they haue sables and marternes, not greatly esteemed bycause they are lyttle. Sum of them go naked in foommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Brytons and Frenche men are accustomed to take fyssh in the coaste of these landes where is founde great plentie of Tunnyes which th[e]inhabitauntes caul Baccalaos wherof the lande was so named. Northwarde from the region of Baccalaos, is the lande of Laborador, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are manye beares and wylde bores. Th[e]inhabitauntes are Idolatoures and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccalaos. In all this newe lande, is neyther citie or castell: but they lyue in companies lyke heardes of beastes.

¶ *The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda.*



He gouernour of the Ilande of Boriquna Iohn Ponce of Leon beinge discharged of his office and very ryche, furnysshed and sente fourth two caruels to seeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or springe whose water is of vertue to make owlde men younge. Whyle he trauayled fyxe monethes with owtragiuous desyre amonge many Ilandes to fynde that he sought, and coulde fynde no token of any such fountayne, he entered into Bimini and discouered the lande of Florida in the yere. 1512. on Easter day which the Spanyardes caule the florysshing day of Pascha, wherby they named that lande Florida. And supposyng that great ryches myght be browght from thense, he returned into Spayne and couenaunted with kyng Ferdinando as touchynge the trade: and by the intercession of Nicolas de Quando and Peter Nunez de Gufman, the kyng dyd not onely make hym gouernoure of Bemini and Florida, but also sente furthe with hym three shippes from Siuile toward his second vyage in the yere. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Guacana otherwyse cauled Guadalupe, and sent to lande certeyne of his men with the landresses of the shyppes: whom the Canibales lyinge in ambusshe, asslayed with theyr inuenemed arrowes: and slaying the most parte, caryed away the women. With this euyll begynnyng, Iohn Ponce departed frome hense to Boriquna and from thense to Florida wher he went alande with his fouldyers to espie a place moste commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie. But the Indians commynge furth ageynst hym to defende the enterance,

Fysshe.

Gryfes.
Beares.
The britons.

Sebastian Cabot.

The land of Baccallaos.
The vyage of Cabot in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth.

Ise in Iuly.

Baccallaos.
Brytons.
Danes.
Iacques Cartyer.

The people of Baccallaos

Fysshyng for tunnyes.
Laborador.

John Ponce.
Water of great vertue, of this reade in the Decades.

319

Bemini.

Guacana.
The Canibales.

Boriquna.

The death of
Iohn Ponce.

The land of
Floryda.

Ferdinando de
Soto.

The valient
myndes of the
Spanyarden.
The thyrd
attempte of the
conqueste of
Florida.

Certeine fryers
attempte the
conquest onely
with woordes,
but with euyl
successe.

The fryers are
slayne and eaten.

A new kynde of
disgrading

affayled the Spanyardes fiercely and flewe and wounded many of them. At which conflicte also he hym selfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of Cuba: and so endyng his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheffe he had before begotten at faynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This Iohn Ponce had before sayled with Chrystopher Colon to the Ilande of Hispaniola in the yere. 1493. He was a gentel souldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the prouince of Higuel for Nycolas de Ouando that conquested the fame. The region of Floryda is a poynt or cape of lande reachyng into the sea lyke vnto a tounge: beinge a famous and notorious place amonge the Indians by reason of many Spanyardes that haue bin slayne there. But wheras by fame this Floryda was esteemed a ryche lande, many valient and noble men desyred the conquest therof, amonge whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly inryched by th[e] imprisonment of kynge Atahaliba) attempted a vyage thither with a good bande of men, and spent fyue yere in feekyng of golde mynes, supposyng that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoing of all that went with hym without inhabityng that lande, in the which the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiente archers and stronge and hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by these myfaduents, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many woorthy gentelmen desyred this conquest in the yere. 1544. amonge whom was Iulyan Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterpryse. But neyther th[e] emprour beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Don Phylippe his sonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies wolde in any case agree to the conqueste. Neuerthelesse not vtterly contemnyng the matter which they were partly perswaded myght otherwyse bee brought to passe, they sent thither fryer Luys Cancell of Baluaastro with other fryers of the order of faynt Dominike who offered them selues to conuerte the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Chryst and obedience to Th[e]mperoure, onely with woordes. The fryer therefore goyng forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yere. 1549. went aland with foure other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne maryners without harnessse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachyng, many of the Indians of the sayd Florida reforted to the sea fyde, where without gyyng audience to his woordes, they caryed hym away with three other of his companyons and dyd eate them, whereby they suffered martyrdom for the fayth of Chryst. The resydue that escaped, made hast to the shyppe and kept them selues for confessours as sum say. Many that fauoure th[e] intente of the fryers, doo nowe confyder that by that meanes the Indians coulde not be brought to owre frendshippe and religion. Neuerthelesse, that if it coulde so haue byn brought to passe, it had byn better. There came of late from that shippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the skynnes with the heades and crownes of the sayd fryers in one of theyr temples.

320

¶ *An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations about the same.*



The ancient wryters diuided this owre worlde into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Tanais as Ifocrates declareth in his Panegyrico. Afterwarde they diuided Asia and Africa by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Nilus, thowghe the same had byn better by the sea Bermeio (that is) the redde sea, which almoste trauerfeth and passeth through the lande from the Ocean to the sea Mediterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berofus the Caldean, sayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa: and gaue them to his sonnes, Cham, Sem, and Iafet: also that he sayled by the sea Mediterraneum ten yeres. In

fine we nowe conclude that the three sayde prouinces occupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in generall say that Asia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bygge as they both. Albeit Herodotus in his Melpomeme, scorneth them that make Europe and Asia equall: affirmyng that Europe in longitude is equal to Asia and Afrike: and that it passeth them in latitude, wherin he speaketh not greatly out of square. But to speake more of this elsewhere, not perteynyng to the matter wee haue in hande, I say that Homerus one of the most ancient wryters, sayth that the world which is diuided into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as reherfeth Pomponius Mela in his thyrd booke. Strabo in the fyrst booke of his Geographie, sayth that the earth which is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Higinius also, and Solinus, confirme this sentence, Althowghe Solinus doo erre in mistakinge the names of the seas, supposyng that the Caspian sea was parte of the Ocean, beinge rather lyke vnto the sea Mediterraneum so named bycause it is in the mydlande as is the Caspian sea without participacion of the great Ocean. Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of Tolomeus Euergetes, one Eudoxus sayled three or foure tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde

Noe gaue names
to Africa, Asia,
and Europa.

Asia.

Europe.

The hole earthe
is an Ilande.

The Caspian sea.
Caliz is a ryuer.
Nauigation: from
the red sea to
East India.

sea (cauled the goulfe of Arabie or Bermeio) presented to the same kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome thense. Kynge Iuba also prooued this nauigation from Caliz to India as wryteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that the nauigation to India by the Ocean was then wel knowen and frequented, althowgh not so much as at this present, the same beinge neyther then or nowe a thyng of great difficultie or trauayle by the coastes of hotte regions. But to fayle from India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and regions of extreme coulde, shulde bee doubtlesse a difficult and daungerous thyng, wherof is no memory amonge the owlde autours sauyng onely of one shyppe as Plinie and Mela doo wryte, reherfyng the testimony of Cornelius Nepos who affirmed that the kynge of Sueuia presented to Quintus Metellus Celer Lieutenant of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dryuen by tempest into the sea of Germanie: if the same were not of the lande of Laborador or Bacallaos, and they deceaued in theyr coloure. For sum say that lykewyfe in the dayes of the Emperoure Fredericus Barbaroffa, certeyne Indians were browght in a Canoa from the cite of Lubec in Germanie. Furthermore pope Eneas Syluius wryteth that the Sarmation sea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian sea. Nowe also there is great knowlege and experience how the nauigations and passage may be attempted by Norwaye and other north regions vnder the same north, and to folow that coaste to the fouth sea of Sur and keepe that course by the tracte of China. Olanus Gothus the archbysshop of Upsalia and borne in Gothlande, hath wrytten muche of these north regions and nauigations by the north sea. In the tract of this vyage by the north sea, are the Ilandes of Islande and Gruntlande, althowgh there is doubte whether Gruntlande be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande. It is. xl. [forty] leaques, from Lapponia, and sumwhat more frome Finmarchia a lande of Scandinauia in Europe. The people of Gruntland are stronge men and of coomly stature. They fayle with smaull shippes or barkes couered close aboue with lether or beastes hydes for feare of the coulde and fysshes. Gruntlande as sum say, is fyftie leaques from the north parte of the firme lande of the West Indies by the lande of Laborador. But it is not yet knowen whether this land be continent or adherent with Gruntlande, or if there bee any streight of sea betwene them. If all bee one firme lande adioynynge by any parte, then the two great partes of the world seeme to ioyn together abowt the north pole or vnder it, or beneth it, forasmuch as it is not past fortie or fiftie leaques from Finmarche to Gruntland: wherby it may appere that althowgh there be any such straight diuidynge them, yet are they neyghbours and not farre in funder. Furthermore from the land of Laborador by th[e] accompt of the pilottes, is abowte foure hundreth leaques to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyfe cauled the Ilandes of Soria lyinge in the West Ocean ouer ageynst Spayne. Also by their accompt the lande of Laborador is abowte fiew hundreth leaques from Irland, and fixe hundreth from Spayne.

The vyage to India by the north seas.

The hystorie of Cornelius Nepos.

Note this.

Indians in Lubec

The Sarmatian sea.

Islande.
Gruntlande.
Lapponia.
Finmarchia.
Gruntlande.

The distance from Gruntlande to the lande of Laborador.

321

[Narrowness] of the streight if it be.

The Ilandes of Soria, or Azores. From laborador to Irland.

That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiere to fiere ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e] oppinion of the owlde writers.



AL the ancient philosophers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any passage from owre hemisphere or halfe compasse of the earth to the Antipodes by reason of the burnt line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean sea lyinge in the mydde way, wherby this vyage shulde be hyndered and impossible, as Macrobius wryteth at large in his commentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chrystyan phylosophers, Clemente wryteth that it is not possible for any man to passe the Ocean: and other wryters of later tyme, seeme to confirme the same. In deede I verely beleue that this way was neuer knowen to them, aswell for that euer presuppofynge the thyng to bee impossible they neuer attempted it, as also that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no shippes sufficient for so longe and difficulte a nauigation to bryng them knowlege herof, as haue the Spaniardes to passe the Ocean vnto them: In so much that at this present this vyage is by dayly experience so well knowen vnto the Spanyardes and Portugales, that they can in maner go thyther blynd-fielde, contrarye to th[e] oppinion of those phylosophers. I wyll here omytte to speake of many shippes that haue sayled ordynarly frome Spayne to India, and speake onely of the shyppe Victoria which compassed abowt the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or three Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spayne by a contrary way, wherby is declared the ignorance of the sage antiquitie. In this nauigation, they founde many secreates, amonge the which this is strange and woorthy memorie, that al such deade Christians as were cast into the sea, lay on theyr backes and turned theyr faces vpwarde: but the gentyles lay all groouelyn

Macrobius.

Clement.

The Indians are Antipodes.

The shyppe Victoria.

A straunge thinge.

Shadowes
towards the south.

The sonne rysynge
on the ryght hande.

The vyage of
Magellanus.

Antipodes
Guinea.
The north starre.
The needle and
compasse.

322

Septentriones, are
the vii. starres.
that are sene by
Charles wayne or
the great beare.
Argo of Iason.

Vlysses.
Iohn Sebastian.

on theyr bellies. They also perceaued the foonne and moone to keepe a contrary course from that they doo here, and euer to cast the shadowes of all thynges towards the fouth: whiche thyng also was knowen to sum of the owlde wryters. For this is manifeste that the sonne ryfeth on the ryght hande to theym that lyue in the thyrtye degrees on th[e]other fyde the Equinoctiall: so that lookynge towards the sonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: wherby it appeareth to bee trew that they affirme. They consumed three yeares lackynge. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes in goynge and commynge, and loste a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eate fleshe on frydayes, and celebrated the feaste of Easter on Mundayes: so that they ouerleaped a day (not faylynge in the calender) and kept no iust rekenynge of the bifextile. The cause wherof whyle some haue searched by phylosophie, they haue erred more then the maryners. They fayled. x. [ten] thousande leaques and. xiiii. [fourteen] myles by theyr accompte, albeit they shulde haue gonne lesse, if theyr way hadde line ryght forth. But as they were enforced partely of necessitie, and partely to fynde that they fowght, they made many wyndynges and turnynges. They trauesed the Equinoctiall line fyxe tymes without burnynge, contrary to th[e]oppinion of the owlde autours. They remayned fyue monethes in the Iland of Tidore, whose inhabitants are Antipodes to theym of Guinea, wherby it is apparente that wee maye communicate with them. And although they lost the fyght of the northe starre, yet dyd they euer dyrekte theyr course therby. For beinge in the. xl. [forty] degrees of the fouth, they sawe the nedle of the compasse stande as directly towards the north as it dooth in the sea Mediterraneum: although sum say that it loofeth his force sumwhat. About the poynt of the Southe or pole Antartike, they sawe a lyttle whyte cloude and foure starres lyke vnto a croffe with three other ioynynge therunto, which resemble owre Septentrion, and are iudged to bee the signes or tokens of the fouth exeltre of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the fleete of Salamon, but greater was this of Th[e]mproours maiestie Don Charles kynge of Spayne. The Argos of Iason whiche the antiquitie placed amonge the starres, fayled but a lyttle way and a shorte vyage in comparason of the shippe Victoria whiche ought woorthely to bee kepte in the Arsenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of so famous an enterpryse. The daungours, paynes, traуayles and laboures of Vlyffes were nothyng in respecte of fuche as Iohn Sebastian susteyned: whereby in the scu[t]chion of his armes in the stead of a monstrous or inuincible beast, he woorthely gaue the woorld with this circumscription: PRIMVS CIRCVMDEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrst that hath compassed me about.

As touchynge the needle of the compasse, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that faylynge as farre south as Cap. de Bona Speranza, the poynt of the needle styll respected the northe as it dyd on this fyde the Equinoctiall, fauynge that it sumwhat trembeled and declyned a lyttle, wherby the force feemed sumwhat to be diminifshed, so that they were fayne to helpe it with the lode stone.

¶ Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof.



Peakyng much of nauigations. it myght seme a thyng vndecent to omyt to say sumwhat of the needle of the compasse: without the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderyng coniectures, euen so shulde the Indies neuer haue bynne founde but by helpe of the fame, forasmuche as the shippes shulde haue byn lost in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courses were directed by the needle and compasse, which ought therefore to be compted the chiefe partes of the shyppe and principall instrumentes of faylynge. The fyrst that founde the needle and the vse therof (as Blondus and Mapheus Girardus doo wryte) was one Flaius of Malpha a citie in the kyngdome of Naples, of whome the Neopolitans glory to this day: and that by good reason, forasmuch as a citifene and neyghboures chyld of theirs, was the fyrst fynder of so commodious and profytable a thyng, to the fecreate wherof so many excellent wyttes as were before hym coulde not attayne, although they hadde both iren and the lode stone (cauled *Magnes*) whiche are the materials of the needle. Next vnto Flaius, the chiefe commendation is dew to the Spanyardes and Portugales by whose daylye experience, the fame is brought to further perfection, and the vse therof better knowen: although hytherto no man knoweth the cause why the iren touched with the lode stone, turneth euer towards the north starre, as playnely appeareth in euery common dyall. In maner all wryters attribute this to a secreate and hyd propertie, sum of the north, and other of the mixture or naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene iren and the sayde stone. If it bee the propertie of the north or north starre, then (as the pylots make theyr rekenynge) neyther shulde the needle make anye chaunge or dyffer in northe stynge, (as in faylynge northeaste without the Ilande of Tercera beinge one of the Ilandes of Azores or Soria and two hundred leaques from Spayne towards the West East-west) neyther yet shulde it lose his office (as sayth Olanus) in passynge from the Ilande of Magnete, that is, the Ilande of the lode stone, which is vnder or neare abowte the northe pole. But howe so euer it bee, or what so euer bee the cause, trewth it is that the nedle turneth euer to the north although wee sayle about the fouth.

The chiest partes
of the shyppe.

Magnes.

The Spanyardes
and Portugales.
Why the needle
turneth to the
north.

The Iland of
Tercera.

The Iland of
Magnete.

We ought therefore to vnderstande that the lode stone (whiche wec falsely caule the adamant) hath heade, fiete, and also armes as sum say. The iren that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceafeth to turne dyrectly towarde the north, as is to see in the dyals that are made to the soonne. The rubbynge of the fiete ferueth for the south: as doo lykewyse the other partes, for other quarters and poyntes of heauen.

Note the quarters of the lode stone.

Note here that yf a piece of this stone, of the byggenesse of an egge or a walnutte, or more or lesse, bee broken into manye smaule pieces as bygge as dyce or lesse, yet euery of those smaule piefes, hath headde, foote, and armes, as is sayde here before.

¶ *The Situacion and byggenes of the earth.*

323



It may to some seeme a vaine thyng to seke the situacion and byggenes of the earth, although it bee easy to knowe, forasmuche as it is situate in the myddeste of the worlde as the center of the same, beinge enuironed and as it were borne vp of the sea which compaffeth it abowt. Mela sayth that the pyllers that susteyne it, are Easte, West, North, and South: which sayinge Dauyd confirmeth in the C. vi. [106th] psalme. These foure are the most notable pyllers or sustentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordynge to the motions wherof, all vyages are ruled on the earthe, frome whense they haue theyr originall, as engendered of the dyuers qualities of vapoures and exhalations rayfed by the sonne and otherwyse. Eratosthenes put none other sustentacions then the north and south poles, and parteth the earth by the course of the soonne: which particion Marcus Varro dooth greatly commende as agreable to reason. The poles are firme and immouable as an exeltre abowt the which the heauen moueth and is therby susteyned. They furthermore declare vnto vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and which way wee go, with also the largenes of heauen and commensuration of the earth. As for exemple: the streyght of Gibraltar, (accomptynge from Spayne) is from the north, or to speake more playnely from the poynte of the earthe that is or may be directly vnder the north pole, abowt. liiii. [fifty-four] degrees which make. ix. hundreth and. lxxx. [980] leaques according to the common computacion of the Cosmographers and Astronomers: And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees: which added to the other. liiii. [fifty-four] make. [lx]xxx. [ninety] degrees, beinge the hole distance from the north poynte to the Equinoctiall line diuydlynge the earthe by the myddeste, and the quarter or fourthe parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how great it is in compasse and how many leaques or myles it conteyneth, is easy to perceauce accomptynge euery degree. lx. [sixty] myles. But that yowe may the better perceauce what degrees are, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat more hereof.

The sea.
The wyndes

The poles.

The measuryng
the circumference
of the earth

¶ *What degrees are.*



In the owlde tyme theyr maner was to measure the earth and the woorld by furlonges, pases, and fiete, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wryters. But after that Ptolome founde degrees a hundreth and fiftie yeares after the death of Chryst, that maner of accompte was receaued as the best. Ptolomie diuided all the hole body and face of the land and sea into three hundreth and fixtie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: so that the hole globe of the baule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He assigned lykewyse to euery degree three score myles, whiche make. xvii. [seuenteen] Spanyssh leaques and a halfe: In such sorte that the globe or baule of the earth measured directly by any of the foure partes of the same, conteyneth in circuite fyxe thousand and two hundreth leaques. This computacion and measuryng, is so certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde trewe by experience, so much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that th[e]inuention hereof was iudged so dyfficult by Iob and the preacher, that no man had founde the measure of limites of the same. They name those degrees of longitude, that they accompte from soonne to soonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the East to the Weste by the myddle of the globe or baule of the earth. These can not well be obserued, forasmuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no fyxt or permanent signe whereunto the pylots maye directe theyr eyes or instrumentes. For the soonne, althowghe it be a moste cleare signe, yet doothe it dayely change the place of ryfynge and faulyng, and keepeth not the same course the day folowynge as the Astronomers affirme. And althowgh there is no number of them that in trauaylyng strange landes and seas haue spent theyr gooddes and almooste theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longitude without error as are found the degrees of latitude and heght, yet is there none that hytherto hath any trewe knowlege therof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north pointe to the south, the commensuration or measuring

Ptolome founde
degrees.

Longitude and
Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of
Longitude.
The degrees of
Longitude are not
knowne.

The degrees of
latitude.

324
The north starre.The circuite of
the earth.The inferior
hemispherie.Hyperborei.
Hypernocii.

wherby, is most certeine by reason that the north starre is permane[nt] and remayneth styll in one place, or at least moueth about the pole which is theyr firme and stedfast signe wherby they accompte theyr degrees and directe theyr vyages. By the degrees therefore accompted by these most certeine signes, is vnfaylably meafured the hole circumference of the lande and sea, diuidyng the same into foure equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, are. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the south poynt, other. lxxx. [ninety.] Ageyne on the contrary side, from the south poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we coniecture by good reason aswell of th[e]inferioure hemisphery wherof a great parte is knowen vnto vs by the nauigations of such as haue passed the streyghets of Magellanus and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo such cleare and manifest relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the southe pole beinge the other exeltree of the worlde whose syght we lacke. For (as Herodotus sayth) yf there bee any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is suche as are vnder the north) ther is also of the hypernotios, that is such as are vnder the south: which perhappes are they that lyue in the lande of the streyghtes of Magellanus as nere vnto the other pole. But what these landes are, or of what greatnes we can haue no certeyne knowlege vntyl sum man shal haue compassed about the lands vnder the south pole as did Iohn Sebastian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

These last annotacions of the Indies, haue I translated owt of the bookes of Franciscus Lopes, wrytten in the Spanysshe tounge to Th[e]emperours maiestie: and partly also owt of the carde made by Sebastian Cabot.

¶ *A demonstration of the roundenesse of the Earth.*

The eye is
deceaued.

Any ignorant men thynke that the earthe is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in manye thynges not only of the woorkes of nature, but also of suche as are doonne by the flight and arte of man. For they say: Howe can it bee rounde forasmuche as though a man trauayle neuer so farre eyther by land or sea, he seemeth euer to passe as it were by a ryght line without any such circuite or compassyng, ascendyng or discendyng, as perteyneth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The which obiection, as it is grose and simple, proceadyng of the narrownesse of the vnderstandyng of such as can not conceaue the large circumference of the lande and sea, euen so may it be answered with this simple demonstration. In a rynge that ferueth for the fynger of a mans hande, the space of halfe an ynche or lyttle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a rynge or cyrcle of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an ynche appeareth in maner a ryght line, althowghe it bee not so in deede, forasmuch as it is not possible for any parte of a circle to consist of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to confyst of a cyrcle, sithe the partes must needes bee conformable to the hole, confystyng of such vniforme partes as are in mathematical. But not to wander to farre in these subtylties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, so shall a greater parte therof seeme a ryght line or playne forme: As for exemple, imaginyng a circle whose diameter (that is measure from syde to syde) confysteth of a myle: in this circle a pole length or more, may seeme a ryght line, as yowe may otherwyse multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it shal appere that the large circumference of the earth well confydered, a much greater parte of the circle therof then the eye of man conceaueth, may seeme to bee a ryght line, and he continually to walke vppon a playne forme forasmuch as euery part of a circle is lyke vnto other as I haue sayde. This may suffice for a simple and briefe demonstration and induction for suche as are desyrous to seeke furth to knowe the truth herof.

A rynge.

A circle.

¶ *What credit owght to bee gyuen to wryters as touchynge the woorkes of nature.*



He moſte auncient wryter Diodorus, Siculus, in the fourth booke of his Bibliotheca, wryteth in this maner. If any man for the maruelous ſtraungenes and noueltie of ſuche thynges as are deſcrybed in owre bookes, wyl not perhappes gyue credyt to owre hyſtorie, let hym with ryght iudgement conſider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owres, and he ſhall the eaſelyer perceau the woorkes of nature and approue owre wrytynges. For owre ayer dyffereth ſo much from theyrs, that it myght ſeeme incredible if experience were not more certeyne then doubtfull reaſon. In ſume regions the coulde is ſo extreme that greate ryuers are ſo froſen, that laden cartes and armies of men paſſe ouer the immouable iſe. Wine alſo and other moiſt thynges are ſo conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is more marueylous, that th[e]xtreme partes of ſuche apparell as menne weare, are ſo bytten with coulde that they faule of. Mens eyes are alſo dymmed: the fyre gyueth not his natural bryghtneſſe: and braſen veſſelles and images are broken. Sumtime by reaſon of thicke cloudes, thunders and lyghtnynges are neyther ſeene or harde in ſuch regions. Many other thynges more marueylous then theſe hath nature wrought, which may ſeeme incredible to the ignorant: but eaſy to ſuch as haue experience. In the furtheſt partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the ſoonne is ſo extreme abowt noone, that noo man can ſe hym that ſtandeth by hym, by reaſon of the thicke ayer cauſed by the vapoures and exhalations rayſed by the heate. None can go withowt ſhoos but haue theyr fiete ſuddeynly blyſtered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrſt, dye immediatly except they haue drynke at hande, the heate ſo faſte conſumeth the moyſture of theyr bodyes. Meate put in braſen veſſelles, is ſodde in ſhort ſpace by the heate of the ſoonne withowt other fyre. Yet they that are borne and brought vp in ſuch regions, had rather wyllyngely ſuſteyne theſe incommodities then bee inforced to liue otherwyſe: ſuch a loue of theyr natiue cuntry hath nature gyuen to all men: cuſtome of continuance from younge yeares being alſo of force to ouercomme the maliciouſneſſe of the ayer. Neuertheleſſe, theſe places of ſuch contrary natures wherby ſuche ſtrange effectes are cauſed, are not farre in ſunder or diuided by any great diſtance. For, from the maryſhes of Meotis or Meotides where certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue fayled with ſhyps of burden to Rodes in the ſpace of ten dayes: and from theſe to Alexandria in foure dayes. From whence paſſynge through Egypte by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue arryued in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the nauigation from the couldeſt partes of the worlde to the hotteſt regions, is no more then. xxiiii. [twenty-four] continuall dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is ſuch in places of ſo ſmaule diſtance, it is no marueyle that the cuſtomes and maners of lyuynge of the people of thoſe regions, with the complexions of theyr bodyes and ſuch thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owres.

325

The diuerſitie of ayer in dyuers regions.

Extreme colde.

Extreme heate.

The force of education.

Extreme heate and colde in A ſmale diſtance.

From Scythia to Ethiopia.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VI.

Vannuccio Biringuccio.

Pyrotechnia.

First printed in 1540.]



THE PREFACE TO THE BOOKE OF METALS.



O this booke of the Indies and nauigations I haue thought good to adde the booke of metals, for three causes especially me mouynge: whereof the fyrst is, that it seemeth to me a thyng vndecent to reade so much of golde and fyluer, and to knowe lyttle or nothyng of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuerthelesse thynges not onely most desyred, but also such without the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee passed ouer without many aduersities, forasmuch as pouertie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further esteemed then it is supported by ryches, fyth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is become the slaue to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, so named, not for the desyre that men had to golde, but for th[e] innocencie of lyuynge in those dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought it crueltie by breakynge the bones of owre mother the earth, to open a way to the courte of infernal Pluto from thence to get golde and fyluer the feedes of al mischies and angels of such a god, whom the antiquitie (not without good confydera-

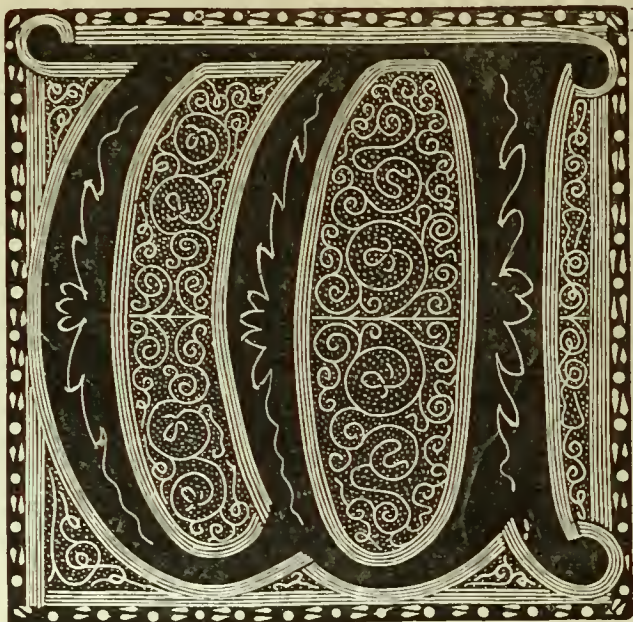
tion) paynted blynde, affirmyng also that of hym golde and fyluer haue receaued the propertie to blynde the eyes of men. But fyth it is nowe so that we shalbe inforced to feke ayde by that which was sumtymes a myschefe, it resteth to vse the matter as doo cunnyng phisitions that can mynister poyson in proportion with other thynges in such forte qualyfyinge the malicioufnesse therof, that none shall therby bee intoxicate. Forasmuch therefore as golde and fyluer haue obteyned this prerogatiue that they are suche necessarie euyls which the lyfe of man can not lacke without detriment, not only they but other metals also perhappes more necessarie althowgh not so precious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knowen then only by name, fyth they are th[e] instrumentes of all artes, the prices of all thynges, the ornamentes of al dignities, and not the least portion of nature, wherby the contemplation of them is no lesse pleasaunte then necessary. But forasmuch as it is not here my intent to intreate much of metals, I wyll speake of the seconde cause: which is, that if in trauallyng strang[e] and vnknown countreys any mans chaunce shalbe to arryue in such regions where he may knowe by th[e] information of th[e] inhabitauntes or otherwyse, that suche regions are frutefull of riche metals, he may not bee without sum iudgement to make further searche for the same. The thyrde cause is, that althowgh this owre realme of Englande be ful of metals not to bee contemned and much rycher then men suppose, yet is there fewe or none in Englande that haue any greate skyll thereof, or any thyng wrytten in owr tounge, whereby men maye bee well instructed of the generation and fyndyng of the same: as the lyke ignorance hath byn amonge vs as touchyng Cosmographie and nauigations vntyll I attempted accordinge to the portion of my talent and simple lernynge to open the fyrst dore to the enteraunce of this knoweledge into owre language, wherin I wolde wyshe that other of greater lernynge wolde take sume peynes to accomplysse and bringe to further perfection that I haue rudely begunne, not as an autour but a translatoure, leaste I bee iniurious to any man in ascrybyng to my selfe the traualles of other. And wheras as concernyng the knoweledge of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hole woorke of Pyrotechnia wherof I fynysshed. xxii. [twenty-two] chapitures nowe more then three yeares sence, and leste the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde neuer get it ageyne (omyttyng to speake of other ingratitude) I was therby discouraged to proceade any further in that woorke. Neuerthelesse, fythe this hystory of the Indies hath ministred occasion to intreate sumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne translated three of the fyrst chapitures of that booke, which seeme most necessary to bee knowen in this case. And hereof to haue fayde thus much in maner of a preface it may suffice.

326

OF THE GENERATION OF METALLES AND
THEIR MYNES WITH THE MANER OF FYNDINGE THE SAME:

WRITTEN IN THE ITALIEN TOVNGE BY *VANNVCCIUS BIRINGVCZIVS*
IN HIS BOOKE CAVLED *PYROTECHNIA*.

To his louynge frende Master Bernardino Moncellese, greeting.



Hereas I promysed yow to wrytte of the natures of metalles in particular, I am nowe inforced to declare euery thinge in generale, and especially of the places of their generation and their order, with the forme and maner of woorkynge in the same, and the instrumentes therto perteyninge. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that mynes of metalles are founde in the mooste partes of the worlde, more or lesse according to the diligence of witti searchers: and shew them selues standinge in the grounde in maner in fuche sorte as the veynes of bludde are disparfed in the bodies of luyng beastes, or like vnto the braunches of trees spredde foorth diuers wayes. Wherfor, the diligent searchers of mines, willing by a certeyne similitude declare howe the mynes are placed in the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of branches planted in the myddeste of the base of a mountayne, frome the whyche are diriued dyuers and many bouwes and branches, sum greate and sum smaule, muche like vnto veye trees that are in owlde woddes. They will also that in growynge,

they euer ingrofe them selues and reache towarde the heauen, conuertynge into theyr nature the mooste disposed and neare matter, vntil the toppes of theyr braunches extend to the highest parte of the mountayne, and there shewe furthe theyr selues with manifeste apperaunce, puttinge furthe in the steade of bouwes and floures, certeyne fumofites of blewe or greene coloure, or marchasites with smaule veynes of ponderous matter, or fuche other compositions of tinctures. And when by this means they shewe them selues vnto us, we may make firme coniecture that fuche mountaynes are minerall, and that accordinge to the demonstrations they shewe more or lesse, they are richer or porer of myne. Therefore the searchers, according to th[e] apperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto them: and with hope and securitie of profecte, apply al their possible diligence with witte and expenses to digge or gette owte fuche thynges as the signes and owtewarde apperaunces declare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn exalted to the highest degree of riches. Wheras therefore by this meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the ey[e]s of consideration and right Iudgemente, and see the places where the mineralles are ingendered and comprehende in maner theire quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or fosses accordynge therevnto, wheras they shulde otherwyse wander by chaunce, because no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer so good iudgement, and shulde make searche for the same neuer so curiously by tittle and tittle. It shal therefore in this case be necessary to folow the certificat and apperaunces of signes, and to encounter the same as nere as may be, with ey[e]s and eares euer attentiuue where they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, especially by enquiryng of shepardes and other anciente inhabitauntes of such regions in the which mineralles are engendered. And this I speake the rather for that I am perswaded that at

The mineral trees.

The mynes doo growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of metals.

327

Signes and tokens of metals.

the first sight of a mountaine, by reason of the greate barrenesse and roughnes therof, and also by reason of the great abundance of waters that are engendered in the same, a right good iudgemente shall not suffice to coomme to certayne knoweledge that metall is containd in such mountaynes, vntill the searchers haue with charges and trauail caused miners in sundry places to discouer the same. And therefore I also beleue that one man althowgh be bee neuer so stronge, wyttie, and farre castinge, shall not be able in a newe and straunge contreye, to searche by smaule portions not onely all the mountaynes of one or moo prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but shall with muche difficultie scarcely suffice to searche the secretes of only one mountayne: In so muche that sum consyderinge the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte, it shuld be requysite to worke by the arte of Negromancie, which I thynke to be a fable withowt further knoweledge. But I wolde that these necromancers shulde tell me why this their arte helpeth them no further in the woorke after that they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they say. Why (I say) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begynnyng to fynde the myne, so consequently in the myddest and the ende to bryng the same to further perfection, as to gette it owte, to bryng it to fusion or meltyng, and to purifie or poure it from drosse, which doubtlesse it shulde haue poure to doo if it may bee beleued that it can doo the other. But forasmuch as such effectes are so fearefull and terrible, that they owght not or can not be practised of al men, and also perhappes bycause such maner of woorkyng is not knowen, I thinke it not good to be vsed: but thinke rather by good reason that this arte is so much the more to be omytted and contemned, in howe much we are accustomed in the begynnyng of dyggyng of mynes, especially to caule for the grace of god that it may please hym to be presente with his ayde to owre doubtfull and traualous woorke. Lettyng passe therefore this deuylyfthe diuise of such beastly and fearefull men, I exhorte yowe to folowe the practise by the foresayde signes minystred vnto yowe by the benignitie of nature, bothe grounded vpon the foundation of truth and approued by th[e]xperience of many practicionars, not consylyng in woordes or promysse of thynges vayne and incomprehensible. With these signes therefore shall yow searche the bankes and sides of the valleys, with the clyffes and ryftes of the stons, and the backes, toppes, or ridges of the Montaynes: Also the beddes, chanelles, and courses of ryuers, lookyng diligently amonge theyr sandes, and the ruines of theyr fosses, amonge the whiche yow shall often tymes espie marchasites or smaule sparkes of mynes, or other dyuers tinctures of metals, whereby yow may be certified that certeyne mynes are in such places, which yowe shall exactly fynd by diligent and curious searchyng the clyffes of theyr ryftes and dry places. After these aduertisements, take this for a generall signe, that all suche places and mountaynes are mineral, owt of the which many springes and great abundance of crude water dooth isshewe, hauyng with theyr clearenes a certeyne minerall taste, and such as at variable seasons of the yeare chaunge theyr qualitie, beinge warme in the spryng tyme and coulde in fommer. And this thyng owght yow to beleue the more when yow shall see the aspecte of such mountaynes to be rough, sharpe, and saluage withowt earth or trees. Or so that yf there bee a lyttle earth found vpon the same with a smaule veyne of herbes or grasse yowe shall perceaue the grenenes therof to be faynt and in maner wythered and dried. And albeit that sumtymes also, mines are founde in mountaynes hauyng earth and frutefull trees in the toppes therof, yet are they for the most part found in such wherof we haue spoken. Of these other, there maye fewe signes be gyuen, except to go by lyttle and lyttle to seke the bankes of theyr sydes. But amonge all these, the best and most certeyne signe that may bee gyuen, is wheras on the superficiall parte of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the myne dooth shewe it selfe apparente to syght. Sum there are that for a good signe do greatly commende the residences which certeyne waters make wher they haue rested for a time and beinge dried vp of the heate of the sonne, do often tymes shewe in certeyne partes of theyr residencies dyuers tinctures of mynerall substaunce. Summe other are accustomed to take such waters, and in a vessell of earth or glasse or other matter, cause them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dregs or residence remayne in the bottome well dried in the likenes of a grose earth, of the which they make an assaye eyther by the ordinarie tryall of fyer, or after some other maner as lyketh them best. And by this meanes (although they attayne not to th[e]xacte knoweledge of the truth) yet do they approche to a certeyne knoweledge of the thyng wherby they haue sum intelligence of what sufficiencie and goodnesse the myne is which they seeke, before they be at any great charges in folowyng the same: Prouydyng alway that with all diligent aduertisement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine mountaynes be curiously searched, with also the bankes and sydes of the selfe same mountayne, and all such superficiall partes therof, where any stons are founde discovered eyther of theyr owne proper nature or by the course of water: presuppofyng euer that it is in maner impossible but that yf suche mountaynes containe any mynes, they muste needes shewe furth sum floures, tinctures, or colours of theyr exhalations. Yet yf it shulde so chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes of the mine may be the cause hereof forasmuche as eyther it is not of vaporable nature, or to be of smaule quantitie, or els perhappes bycause the mountayne is greate and the myne very low or so farre with in, that it is not sufficient to put furth any signes of fumositie. The cause also hereof maye bee that sum stone lyke vnto that cauled *Albafano* (which I thynke to be of that kynde which we caule the greete stone) or blacke and whyte marble of

Mountaynes in
the which metals
are engendered.

Ageynst seekyng
metals with the
rod which they
caule *Virgula
diuina*.
Negromancie.

The maner of
searchyng for
mynes.

A generall signe.

Rough and barren
mountaynes.

328

The best signe.

The residence
of waters.

Marchasites are
the tinctures
of myneral
exhalations.

Metals in fruitful
mountaynes.

Howe the signes
are to bee
consydered.

The assay of the
mines.

329

The richer myne
further within the
mountayne.

Consyderacions
how the caue
ought to bee made.

The bodie of the
myne.

Howses of office
for the myners.

Baptisinge and
dedication of the
caue.

The makinge of
the caue.

thycke and refyftyng nature, may be found to lye betwene and so to stoppe the passages, that the fayde fumosities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the vppermoste parte of the earth: by reason wherof, it is possible that suche mountaynes may brynge furth trees and herbes forasmuche as the earth therof dooth reteyne his vertue and may nurysh thei roots not beinge incinerate or burnt with hotte and venemous vapours of the mynes: so that the shoures of rayne or fluds with their courses can not cary away the earth as in such places wher the same is found fore dried. And therefore vppon such mountaynes I haue seene great wooddes of chesnutte trees, beeches also and okes, with well cultured and frutfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the signes of the rowghnesse or barrenesse of the mountayne, is not taken away but that other places may also haue plentie of mines whiche ought to be seached and folowed. But forasmuch as these signes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll speake more determinately of theym in the places where I entreate of theyr proper mynes: Not intendyng here to saye muche of these thynges in generall, but only to induce yow to sum clearnesse of the fyrst lyght. And therefore that yow may gyue the more diligent aduertisement, I saye vnto yowe that all the mynes which yow shall fynde by such signes, by what meanes so euer they shall coome to yowre handes, whether they be found in stones, earthe, or sande, after that at the fyrste syght they haue shewed them selues to bee mynes of metals, yow owght to consyder of what ponderositie of weyght they are: The which the greater that it is, so much the more dooth it shewe both the perfection and goodnesse of the substauce, and also the more quantitie of the mine. And thus presuppofyng that by the signes or other meanes yow haue founde the mine, not yet fully perceauyng of what kynde of metall it myght be, to certifie yowe hereof and also of what quantitie it is, or howe it is accompanied or myxt with other, or lykewyse of what puritie it is of it selfe, or of what euyll disposition or malice it is founde to bee, it shall herein be necessary before yow be at any further charges therwith, to proue the same by twoo or three assayes or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particular place of assayes. Beinge therefore certified of the myne, and of what metall it is, and also what quantitie it conteyneth, fyndyng it by accompte to bee so profitable as to beare the charges, I exhorte yowe bouldely to gyue the fyrste attempte to faule to mynyng, and with all possible diligence to folowe yowr enterpryse: assuryng yowre selfe, that of what so euer mynerall matter yow shall take assay accordyng to the proportion of that pi[e]ce which yow tooke of the vppermost or owtmost parte of the mine for that purpose, yow shall fynde that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within the mountayne. And thus being certified by the assay of what quantitie the thyng is that appered by the signes, and of all other reasonable consyderacions apperteynyng to the worke, yow shall with all celeritie dispose yowr selfe to faule to dyggyng, to th[e] intent that yowe may shortly eyther here enioye the frute of yowre trauell, or els where with better successe proue yowre good fortune. But in th[e] attempte of this enterpryse, yow owght principally to haue respecte to the situation of the place where yowe intende to make the begynnyng of yowr caue or fosse: Takyng good aduertisement that it be commodious for the labourers that shal worke therein: prouydyng aboue all thynges that it haue an easye enteraunce into the mountayne, with lesse charges and in shorter tyme to arryue vnder the signes which yowe haue taken: encounteryng the same as muche as is possible as it were by a ryght line, fyrst with iudgemente and then with workemanshypp, vntyll yow stryke on the grose masse or bodie of the myne, breakyng in the course of the caue al matters of hard compositions, as quarreys and stones ouerthwartyng the same: hauyng euer respecte to the owtwarde signes whiche yow folowe, forecastyng in yowre mynde how yowe may directly arryue to the same, euen as the maryners directe theyr course by theyr compasse and syght of the north starre. Also bysyde that place where yow haue determined to make the enteraunce and begynnyng of the caue, yow muste take choyse of an other place, eyther on the front of the mountayne or on the syde that it may bee neare and commodious to make one or two or mo cotages for the commoditie and necessitie of the woorkemen. One of these must bee appoynted for theyr dormitorie where sum may rest and sleepe whyle other woork, and that yow may the more commodiously be present and assystaunte to theyr doynge, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforte them in theyr laboures: also to dispence and bestowe theyr vyttayles as shall bee nedefull, and to referue the same in safe custodie, with dayly prouision of al thynges apperteynyng. The other must bee as it were a smythes forge wherin theyr worne and broken tooles must bee renewed, and other newe made, to th[e] intent that the woork be not hyndered for lacke of flore of necessarie instrumentes. When these thynges are thus fynnyshed, with good prouision of vyttayles and a sufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, causyng a presle to blesse the mountayne with all the shoppes, and to baptise the caue, dedicatyng it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to our Lady or to the name of sum other saynt which yowe haue in deuotion, with inuocation to theym to prosper yowre attemptes, yow shall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intende to folowe the same withowte ceasyng as farre as yowre abilitie shall reache, or vntyll yowe haue passed ouer the lymettes signified by the signes before named: Takyng euer diligent heade that yowe begyn yowr caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in such order that yowr myners so continue and folow the same by a right line, that they encounter the veyne of the myne by the shortest and safest way that may bee deuised. For it often times chaunceth, that although

the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners beinge withdrawen from the ryght courfe by the hope of fuche braunches of mynes as haue appered vnto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyr attempted courfe, and from the signes which they owght to haue folowed. And byfyde other preceptes, see that yow beare in memory to procure that in dyggyng, yow efchewe as muche as yowe maye, the cuttyng of fotte or brykell ftones, afwell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as alfo that it feldome chaunceth that any mynes are founde in fuch ftones. But yf yow fhall chaunce fo to fynde them that yow can by no meanes auoyde them, I confort yow that where fuche caufe of feare fheweth it felfe, both that yow lofe not the charges of the caue and for the better fafegarde of yowre woorkemen, it fhall be neceffary that yowe vse all poffible diligence in well vpholdyng and fortyfyng the caue with arches of waules trauerfed with ftronge poftes of tymber after the maner of framed beames, fufteyned with grofe and ftronge pyles made of goode and ftronge tymber of oke or other great trees. And in this maner owght yow to proceade in dyggyng yowre myne that yow may with more securitie enioy the frute of yowr trauallye. But in the owlde tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to fee in the caues lefte of them) folowed an other maner: fo that in the fteade of begynnyng the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the vpper or hygheft parte where the daye difcouered the myne, dyggyng downewarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowyng the fame fumtyme on the one fyde, and fumtyme on the other euen vnto the depth, as the veyne fhewed it felfe to theyr fyght: whereof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in th[e]oppinion of many men, this way dooth feeme much better and of more securitie to fynde that they feeke, then to dygge by the fydes: bycaufe that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes eyther more or leffe as a line to leade them to the groffe mafse. Yet who fo confydereth the thyng well, fhall vnderftande that the later myners haue better conceaued the reafon of this woork, in respecte (as is to fee) of many more commodities and securities which infue rather of this maner of woorkyng then of the other: as the difficultie to defcende and ascende the caue, and the daungour left it bee ftopped vp by many ruines, byfyde the trauallyous labour to drawe owt the mine with the rockes and fragmentes of ftones: And aboute al thynges, that they fhall not bee able to drawe owt the waters whiche are often tymes fo abundaunt that they greatly increafe the charges and trauallyes of the patrones of the mynes by reafon of the greate ayde and helpe which fhall be requifite to haue in that cafe and alfo for the makynge of wheelles, troughes, pypes, and pumpes, with fuch other instrumentes feruyng for the purpofe to drawe owt the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chaunceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet fhall they be inforced to forfake their profitable and laudable enterpryfe. So that to conclude, I faye (as yowe maye well vnderftand) that it is a much better way and of more securitie to begynne the diggyng of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne and to enter into the fame by litle and litle a flope vpwarde, then to begynne at the toppe or the hygheft backe therof. And this both for the more commodious paffinge furthe of the water, and alfo for the eafier trauallye of the labourers. Obferuyng euer diligently the change of the signes whiche appere vnto yow owtwardly, vfyng the rudder and compaffe as do they that fayle on the fea. For hereby the myners fhall be instructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by the conductinge of wytte and arte, they bee browght to the place of the groffe mafse or bodie of the tree, whyche is the caufe, fontayne, and original from whence the fayd tinctures, fumofites, and mineral signes, are diried and fente furth to the superficiall partes. And as concernyng this purpofe, I thincke it good to declare vnto yow howe in the Dukedome of *Austria*, betweene *I[n]spruc* and *Alla* where I contynued manye yeares, I fawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number of mountaynes, by the myddeft wherof a ryuer paffed through of greate aboundaunce of water: and in maner in all the montaynes that are there about, is digged great plentie of mine, wherof the moſte parte are of copper or leade, althoughe alfo in maner euery of them is founde to holde fum portion of filuer. Amonge theſe mountaynes, I fawe one in the whyche th[e]inhabitauntes of the countrey dwellyng there about allured by the fight of many signes, beganne to digge a caue after the maner wherof we haue ſpoken: In fo muche that (as it appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue, they had digged little leffe then two myles before they fawe any ſparke or ſhadowe of any myne. And beinge arruyed with the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the signes they folowed, they were encountered with a veyne of the harde ſtone cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thicke, which they paffed through with greate trauallye and longe tyme, and with the helpe of commodious instrumentes of iren hardened to woork in fuche ftones. And when they had thus paffed through this quarrey of ſtone, they chaunced vppon a verye great veyne of the myne of copper of fuch forte that when I was there, lookinge betweene the one and the other, I fawe on euery fyde as it were a waule of the hard ſtone of *Albazano*, and therein a voyde place of fuche largenes from the one fyde to the other that more then two hundreth men al at one time, had fufficiente roome to ftande labouringe frome the hygheſte parte to the loweſt, hauyng non other lyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in euery place where they faw the vre or myne ſhewe it felfe: and thus ceaſed not to woork continually both day and nyght, courfe by courfe, a thyng euerly maruelous to be holde. Without the mouth of the caue, I fawe great aboundaunce of mine partely

Causes of
hinderance.

Soft stones.

330The fortifying of
the caue.Howe the caues
were made in
olde tyme.Abundaunc[e] of
water in the
mynes.The beste maner
of makinge the
caue.The change of
the signes.
The rudder and
compasse.*Austria.*Mynes of copper
and leade holding
ſyluer.A caue of two
myles.A large caue of
the myne of
copper holdinge
ſiluer.**331**

Candle light

A greate masse
of pure myne.

Abundaunce of
water in the
mynes.

Water is the
nearest principle
of minerales.

A general rule.

Great riches
obtainned by
searchinge of
mynes.

Magnanimitie
and pacience.

The mountaynes
are the matrices
of riches.

The grace of god
is receaved by
owre endeuoure.

Monye begetteth
ryches.

332

Necessarie
aduertismentes.

Plentye of woodde.

Cotages and
edifi[c]es.
The situacion of
the place.

The vse of water.

mixt with the stone of the vre, and partely chofen and seperated. Amonge these pieces, there was one confyng of a hole masse of pure mine of such biggnes and weyght, that two good horses with a light carre coulde fearfully drawe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue fayde. But to magnifie it they cauled it fyluer, bycause it helde fuche plentie thereof that it surmounted the charges, whereas they had also the copper for aduantage. Yowe shall further vnderstand that in the mydde of the caue, there was a chanell or gutter whyche gathered together the waters that fell into it continually on euery fyde from the ruptures or broken places and cliffes. These waters ranne through the chanel with so vehemente a streame, that I fuerly beleue that it might well suffice to dryue any greate mylle. In so muche that in goynge in and comming owt of the caue, I remember that by the contynual faule and sprinkeling of the waters from aboue and beneth, I was as wet as though I had passed through a greate shoure of rayne. Wherat I maruel the lesse when I confyder that water is the fyrst and nearest principle of the whiche the substauce of minerals is engendered. By reason wherof, such men of vnderstandynge as haue searched the natures of these thynges, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule, that all those mountaynes owt of the whiche spryngeth great abundaunce of water, doo also aboude with myne. The which thyng well confydyng, and weyinge the greatnes hereof, I faule into this accompte with my selfe, that if to the patrones of the fayde caue, the charges of the same hadde byn a hynderaunce or greefe, eyther for the length therof, or for despayre that they shuld not haue found that they sought, they wolde surely haue forsaken it. And beinge nowe comme to this harde stone after they had susteyned so great charges byfyde the trauayle both of mynde and body, if they shulde then haue lefte of theyr enterpryse, they shulde not haue come to such ryches whereby they haue obteyned many commodities aswell profitable for them selues as also for theyr lordes and princes, theyr countrey, theyr kinssfolkes and famelie. Neyther yet shulde they haue byn so wel able to helpe theyr poore neyghbours as they haue doone by the meanes of the valientnesse of theyr constant myndes and persyng in so good and commendable an enterpryse. Wherfore to conclude, yow that wyll begynne to attempt any such thyng, must be of good courage and much pacience to folowe that yow haue begunne, at the least vntill yow knowe by the signes what the thyng is: hopinge euer that in goynge forwarde, the day folowynge (as it is possible) shal discouer the thyng that yowe seeke and content your desyre: Wherof yow may bee the better assured, if yow well confyder that the moother and matrices of most eslemed ryches, and the myntes of al treasures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the helpe of fortune and yowr ingenious indeuoure) yow shall open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the belly of the mountaynes where fuche thynges lye hyd, but shall also bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and dignitie as they of whome we haue made mention before: forasmuch as most benigne and liberall nature, doothe open her lappe and promesse good successe to fuche as seeke ryches by such honest meanes. The whiche way surely is muche rather to be folowed, then eyther the warre full of trowbles and miserie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wanderyng about the worlde, or fuche other fastidious cares perhappes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as fume men vse to speake) the fyndynge of mynes bee an especial grace of God, neuerthelesse, forasmuch as we are borne to laboure, it shalbe necessary that we seeke the same in fuche places where they are brought furth by the woorke of nature, and by searchoynge to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them, and by this meanes to receaue the grace of God with applyng owre owne diligence therto, with helpe of the disposition of fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet shal not this only suffice without sufficiency of money able to susteyne the charges and continue the woorke: to th[e]nde that if yow can not fynyshe it with yowr owne expenses, yow maye supplye the same by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners. But let vs nowe cease to reason any further of these thynges. Presuppofyng therefore that yow haue already passed the charges, and haue not only founde the myne yow sought, but also haue brought furth to lyght a great quantitie therof, it shal then bee needeful (as a thyng chiefly to be confydered before yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder and examen both the commodities of such thynges as shall occurre, and also of such wherof yow shall haue neede: as tymbre and woodde of all fortes, with water and vyttayles: of all the whiche, yow muste haue great plentie: and especially of woodde, whereof yowe muste haue great quantitie, aswell to serue to the proportion of the myne, as also to make coles to the vse of meltyng, fynyng, dryng, garboylng, and such other broylnges, byfyde that which must serue to fortifie the caue and to buyld shoppes and cotages with such other edifi[c]es. Diligent consideration must lykewyse be had to the situacion of the place where the buyldynges shalbe erected: as that the plotte therof bee commodious with abundaunce of water hauynge a good faule. Also not onely of plentie of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of such as may serue the turne. And of all other incommodities, yowe muste chiefly auoyde the lacke of water, as a thyng of greatest importaunce and most necessary in this effecte. For by the force and weyght of the course herof, wheelles and dyuers other ingenious instrumentes are adapted with ease to lyfte vppe greate bellowes to make fyers of great poure, to beat with hammers of great weyght, and to turne myghtie and stronge engens, by the force whereof the trauayles of men are so much furthered, that without such helpe, it were in maner impossible to ouercome fuche tedious trauayles or to arryue to the ende of the woorke, forasmuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte more, and that more safely then the

paynefull labour of a hundreth men. It shal therefore be needefull to haue great confyderation hereof, not only to make these edifi[c]es or houfes of office, but also to make them commodious for the purpose, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other necessaries. For if any of these effectes shulde be wantynge, the coste, tyme and trauallye, shulde bee cast away: forasmuch as these thynges doo so much the more relieue the one the other as they are ioyned togyther, and hinder the woorke not a lyttle yf any be separte. But bycause these commodities can not euer be hadde all togyther, yowe owght to wey with yowr selfe which of the twoo serueth for mo necessarie vses, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine most commodious to the houfes, and accordinge there vnto to place the houfes nere vnto the same if the commoditie of water wyll so permytte. Albeit, if it were possible, it shulde be much better if al these necessarie commodities were ioyned togyther, whereas otherwyse yowe muste contente yowre selfe as occasion serueth.

Nowe therefore to conclude, byfyde that whiche I haue declared vnto yow of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other confiderations, I exhorte yowe further to faule to practyse with sum myne of your owne, that yow may therby take occasion to ryse to the degree of ryches whyche yow desire. And therefore I aduertise yow that after yow haue founde the mountayne and begun to digge, yow shal euer go forwarde with a bouldre mynde and stoute corage, woorkyng with witte and Iudgement, forasmuche as in this effecte the one serueth the other in the steede of ey[e]s to enter where they can not. Gyue no credit to that whiche many ignorante folkes doo fay and beleue, affirminge that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet owght we to trust more to art and practyse then to chaunce. And when yow are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memory that yow haue presently with yow the tallie or ruler of the caue, wherby yowe may trauerse the veyne of the myne when yow are coomme to it. For if yow shulde folowe it by the course as it lyeth, it is possible that yowe might folowe it a greate way not paste the biggnesse of a mans finger and perhappes lesse: By reason wherof, it might happen that yow shuld lose it and neuer find it ageyne. The like shuld chaunce vnto yow if after that yow haue begun to digge a caue, it shulde repent yow of the charges, and that for the bafnes therof yowe shulde forsake it, as many haue doone who bycause they coude not fynde the mine at the first stroke, despayringe that they shulde neuer fynde it, haue forsaken it as a thyng vnprofitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt losse and damage: And thus furiously leaue of their enterprife, not regardinge that they may leaue the frute of theyr expensses and trauaile to an other that may folowe their begynninges, and perhappes fynde the myne within the distance of a cubet, a spanne, or a finger. We may fay therfore that suche men doo willingly forsake their good fortune as many haue doone. He therfore that hath begune to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away th[e] estimation of the bafnes therof, and not to feare the streyghtnesse of the way, but rather to applye all his possible diligence withowt remorse, hopynge thereby no lesse to obteyne honour and ryches, then to auoyde shame and infamie for omyttyng so profitable an enterprife. And that yow may the more circumspectly behaue yowr selfe in all thynges, befyde the former instructions, I further aduertise yowe to fet euer fresshe men a woorke by course in such order, that in euery sixte or eyght houres (accordynge to the number of the myners) yow appoynt such to the woorke as haue repofed or taken theyr rest, that yow may by this meanes the fooner come to th[e] ende yow desyre, whereunto (after yowe haue layde so fure a fundation) I exhorte yow to runne withowt a brydle. And wheras to these effectes it shalbe necessarie to haue many instrumentes adapted for the purpose, I can none otherwyse speake of them then in generall, confyderynge that according to the nature of the place and the myne, it shalbe necessary to vse instrumentes and iren tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be difference in such wherwith yow shall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete stone, and harde freeze stone, or such other. For the dyggyng of such as are found in deade and tender stones, as Alabaister and marle, it is requisite to haue apte and stronge instrumentes, as great beetels, mattockes and spades of iren, also great and longe crowes of iren to lyfte great burdens: lykewyse greate and finaule picke axes sum of iren and sum of steele: furthermore greate maules with handels and without handels, and such other bothe of iren and fine steele hardened, if the hardenes of stone shall so requyre. But as for such as shall serue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and softe stones, I neede make no mention of them, forasmuch as the tooles of the common sorte may suffice, and necessitie shall dayly furthe[r] instructe yow to diuise such as shall serue for yowre purpose. Albeit, for the moste parte, they are beetels, maules, mattockes, pikes, shouels, spades, and such lyke. But as well for the softe stones as for the harde, it shalbe necessarye to haue great plentie of al fortes, to th[e] ende that the myners may lose no tyme, and that the woorke may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the patrones of the mine. Byfyde these before named, it shall also be requisite to haue plentie of greate baskettes, spades, shouels, sleades, and handbarrowes, bothe with wheelles and without wheelles: also sackes made of raw or vntande hydes to carye the fragmentes owt of the caue. It shall furthermore be requisite to haue greate quantitie of vnctuous liquours to maintayne fire: as are the oiles of oliues, of nuttes, of line seede and hempe seede: Lykewise the roots of putrified trees, or talowe of beastes, or fatte and oyles of fyfshes. For without the lyght of fyre, it is not possible for the labourers

Necessarye considerations.

A false opinion.

The trauersinge of the veyne.

Continuance in the worke.

333

Fresshe men.

Instrumentes.

Fyre in the caue.

The conueyance
of eyer.

to worke: Nor yet can any fyre be mayntayned in the caue except it receaue the ayer by fum respiracle or breathynge place by the meanes of a funell or trunke of woodde or such other open instrument wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

¶ Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular.

The excellencie
of golde.



Orasmuche as golde is a compounde mynerall which of the phylosophers and all men of vnderstandynge, is founde to be of greatest perfection amonge all other myxt minerals, it is iudged by the vniuersal opinion of such men, that for the bewtie and excellent qualitie thereof, it shulde be of excessiue vertue to helpe and confort men. And therefore amonge all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte luyng creatures) it is chiefly esteemed. By reason wherof, I also the more to honour it, wyll fyrst speake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the most apparent qualities therof.

The originall and
substance of
golde.

334

The which although it be a metall most knowen, defyred also and sought for of all kyndes of men, yet are there not many that do care to knowe of what substaunce or natural mixtion it consisteth. But that yow shulde not be one of them that knowe it onely by name or superficial app[er]e[n]ce, I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter therof, is none other then elementall substaunces with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, most perfectly purified by the subtyl worke of nature. For of these beinge thus ioyned togyther (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and most perfect mixtion by the helpe of fermentacion and decoction of the minerall heate, wherby is caused such a permanent vnion betwene the sayde elementes, that they are in maner inseperable: So that by the vertue of heauenly influence or of tyme, or by th[e] order of most prudent nature, or by all these causes concurrant, such substaunce is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue sayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixtion, is condensate and made thicke, in such sorte that the elementes therof can not be vnbounde or loosed, so that it remaineth in maner incorruptible: The cause wherof is, that it eyther conteyneth in it no maner of superfluitie, or the same to be but very lytle. And hereof commeth it, that although it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with rust or canker for that neyther of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the fyre whose force dooth incinerate or brynge to ashes and resolueth in maner all creatures: And yet is the poure hereof so farre vnable to destroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Lykewyse the sayde perfecte vnion or mixtion, causeth it to be a body without fleame, and without vnctuous or fat superfluitie: which is the cause that it euer remaineth in the natieue bryghtnes and fayrenes of coloure, in so much that when it is rubbed vpon any thyng, it leaueh not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelowe colour, as doo in maner all other metals: Nor yet hath it any taste or fauour that may be perceaued to the fence. Furthermore, if it be eaten eyther wyllingly or by chaunce, it is not venemous to the lyfe of man, as are sum of the other metals: but is rather a medicine curyng dyuers diseases. In so much that nature hath gyuen vnto it of peculiar propertie, a vertue and priuilege to conforte the weakenes of the harte, and to gyue ioyfulnes and myrth to the spirites, disposynge thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attemptes of great enterpryses. Which singular qualities, sum wyse men affirme that it hath receaued by th[e] influence of the sonne, and that it is therefore of such grace and poure to helpe men: especially such as haue many great bagges and chestes full therof. To conclude therefore, this metall is a body tractable and bryght, of coloure lyke vnto the soonne: And hath in it inwardely such a naturall attractiue or alluryng vertue, that beinge seene, it greatly disposeth the myndes of men to desyre it and esteeme it as a thyng most precious: although many there are whiche crye out agaynst it and accuse it as the roote and fede of most pestiferous and monstrous couetousnesse, and the cause of many other myscheues. But whether it be the cause of more good or euyll, we entende to lette passe this disputation as a thyng vnprofitable. To proceade therefore as I haue begun I say (as before) that the woorthynesse which is founde in it, hath caused me to intreate of it before any other metall. And this the rather for that th[e] order of this presente worke [see]meth so to requyre, that I may the better descende to the degrees of other metals, to th[e] ende that in these owre partes of Italy, yow may haue sum instruction of practise, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receaue sum lyght: beinge well assured that newe informations, wilbe the feedes of other newe wittie diuises in the vnderstandynges of suche men as with these keys shall open theyr wyttes to arryue to suche places whither they can not els comme or by any meanes approche. And nowe therefore, bysyde that which I haue sayde vnto yowe in generall, I wyl further in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the same, with also the signes whiche it sheweth furth, that I do not omitte any thyng. Last of all, I wyl shewe yowe howe it owght to be poured from superfluou

Mineral heate.

The temperature
and purenesse of
golde.
Golde is
incorruptible.

The bewtie of
golde.

Golde is
medicinable.
Golde is
comfortable.

The attractiue
qualitie of golde.

earthynes of the mine, after that I shal haue expressed the maner howe it is founde. But forasmuch as I haue not with mine eyes seene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thyng is put in practyse, I wyll only shewe yow (hauynge made diligente inquisition for the same) what hathe byn toulde me of credible persons, or what I haue gathered in readyng of dyuers autoures, by whom I am certified for a truth that the greatest plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scithia*, in those prouinces which we commonly caule the East partes, where the soonne extendeth his chiefe force and vigour. Of these places India is thought to be the chiefe, and especially those Ilandes which the ships of Th[e]mperours maiestie and the kynge of Portugale haue founde of late: as the Ilandes about *Peru* and *Paria* with the firme lande of the same which extendeth it selues very farre on both fydes the Equinoctiall. In Europe also, golde is founde in many places: as in *Astesia*, and in many places in Boheme. Also in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apfa. Plinie fayth that it is lykewyse founde in *Austria* and in Portugale: and that the Romans had from thense yearely. xxiii. [twenty-four] pounds weyght. And thus speakeynge of this precious metall, I beleue certeynly, that it is and may be engendered in all fuche places wher the influence of the heuens dispofoeth the elementall causes to brynge furth an apte substaunce for this purpose. But nowe intendynge more particularly to speake of the places of the conception hereof, yowe shall vnderstande that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of stonnes in great and rowgh mountaynes, and fuche as are vtterly bare of earth, trees, grasse, or herbes. And amonge all the stonnes of this myne, that is best which is of a blewe or asurine coloure lyke vnto a saphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is not bryght and harde as is the saphire. It is also founde in orpemente cauled *Auripigmentum*: but more often in the mynes of other metals. It is lykewyse founde in many prouinces in the sandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the mountaines lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarrey and quarrey ioyned with the fayde Azurine stone and myxte therwith. They saye that this myne is so much the better in howe much it is the heuyer and of hyghe colour, shewyng in it many sparkes of gold. They say furthermore that it is engendered in an other stone lyke vnto false marble: but it is of a deade colour. And also in an other whose colour is yelowe with certeyne redde spots within it. They affirme lykewyse that it is founde in certeine blacke stonnes, whose veynes sprede dyuers wayes much like the courses of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde in a certeyne bituminous earth, of coloure lyke vnto cley and very heauy, hauynge in it a great fauour of brymstone: And that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in maner all togyther fyne, yet very harde to bee gotten owte, bycause it confysteth of so smaule sparkes lyke vnto inuisible atomes of such lytelnesse that they can hardly bee perceaued with the eye. And herein may yow not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other stonnes, or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the sands of ryuers: the which the more it is wasshed, the more it fauleth to the bottome: and in meltyng with the mother of his earthines, doth incorporat it selfe therwith in a brickle substance. But in fine, with much pacience and by one meanes or an other, or by the helpe of quickefyluer, it is drawn owt. Ageyne (as I haue sayde before) it is found in the sandes of dyuers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer *Tago*: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*: In *Asia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In Hungarie and Boheme, it is founde in *Lafesia* in dyuers ryuers: And in Italie, in the sands of *Tesino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not euery where in the beddes of theyr chanelles, but in certeyne particular places where in certeyne cloddes the sande is discouered in the tyme of the ouerflowynge of the ryuers when the water leaueth behynde it a fine sande wherwith the fayde golde is myxte in the forme of certeyne smaule scales, and shynynge graynes. Then in the sommer season, with pacience and ingenious practyse, the searchers to poure it from the grose earthinesse of the myne, and wasshe it diligently: preparynge for that effecte, certeyne tables made eyther of the tymber of plane trees, or elme, or whyte nuttes, or such other woodde apte to be sawen, hauing theyr playnes made ful of hackes, and notches, with the helpe of the sawe or such other instrumentes of iren. Vpon these tables standynge sumwhat a slope or declynynge, with a holowe shouel they cast a great quantitie of water myxt with the fayde sande, which they cast so, that the water runne downe directly alonge with the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as a matter most heuy, fauleth to the bottome of the sawne hackes, and there restynge and cleauynge fast, is so diuided from the sande. When therefore they perceaua a sufficient quantitie of golde thus remaynynge on the tables, they gather it with diligence and put it in a trey or great shallowe dyffe of wod lyke vnto those which the golde finers vse: And in these they wasshe it more exactly ageyne and ageyne from al fylth or vnclenlynesse. This doone, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it as they caule it) with Mercurie or quickfyluer, whiche afterward they seperate ageyne from the same eyther by straynyng and pressynge it through a bagge of lether, or by styllynge or euaporatynge the quickefyluer from it in a styllatory of glasse and so fynde they the golde remaynynge in the bottome of the vessell in the lykenes of fine sande, which they brynge into a metalline body by meltyng it with a lyttle borage, or salt petre or blacke sope, and so cast it eyther in the forme of a wedge or a rodde, or otherwyse as lyketh them best. And this is the exacte maner of drawynge golde owt of the sandes of riuers, which many haue vsed to theyr great commoditie: And that the rather bycause that in folowynge this order of woork in the pourynge and diuynge of golde, it shall not bee requisite as in other maner of practyses, to bee at greate charges by reason of many men which shall be needefull, with manye murals, fornaces, fiers, and dyuers artificers:

Where moste plentie of golde is found.

Cathay.

335

Golde in the Ilande[s] of the weste indies.

Golde in Europe.

The influenc[e] of heauen.

The mountaynes and stonnes in the whiche golde is engendered.

Lapis Lazuli.

Orpemente.

Golde in other metals.

Golde in the sandes of ryuers.

Gold in earth.

Golden duste.

Ryuers in the which gold is founde.

The wassing and poureinge of golde.

Howe golde is deuided frome sande.

The Spanyardes make these disshes with handels.

The draweing out of golde with quicke siluer.

336

From whence golde is deriued into the sandes of ryuers.

That golde is not engendered in the sandes of riuers.

This mater is apparent in the golde founde in the ryuers in the Indies.

The faule of waters from mountaynes.

337

Springs of water in mountaynes.

Vegetable golde growinge owt of the earthe.

Of this, reade *Alexander ab Alexandro. lib. 4. Genialium dierum. Cap. 9.*

Golde founde in A deade mans heade.

wheras in woorkyng after this forte, one man may suffice with one table and one holowe shoouell, with a lyttle quickefyluer and sufficient abundaunce of water. But lettyng passe to speake any further of these thynges: perhappes summe man wolde here demaunde from whence this golde is deriued into the sandes of the fayde ryuers, and whether it be browght thither by the water, or engendered there. As touchyng which question, I haue often tymes deliberated with my selfe not without great marueyle: and especially of that which is founde in the sandes of the ryuers of *Tifino*, *Adda*, and *Po*, bicause (wheras I haue fayde before that it is browght thither by the course of the water) I can not perceaue from whence it shuld be browght, forasmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal that is knowen, nere to any of those places. By reason wherof, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, feinge also that it is th[e]oppinion of certeyne wryters, that it is engendered euen where it is founde: The which, if it so be, it is not trewe that it is browght thither by the water. Ageyne, if it be engendered there, it seemeth to me a dyfficult thyng to comprehend whether it be browght furthe there by the vertue of the water or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermore any of these shuld be the cause of the generation hereof, it seemeth agreable to reason that it shulde bee both founde and engendered throughout all the beddes of such riuers, and at al tymes. And if the influence of heauen be the most prepotent cause of this effecte, then it seemeth to me that it shuld worke immediatly, bicause it can not otherwyse obserue th[e]order whiche nature vseth in the generation of metals: fyrst brynginge it furth to the open shewe, in the place where aboundeth the continuall isshewe of water, which owght also to be of such force as to remoue the earthy substaunce thereof from place to place, and not to intermixte such great inequalitye of coulde and moistnes. And albeit that this composition begunne in this order, shuld not be disseuered or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it appeareth to me that the showers of rayne and increase of fluddes, shulde be of sufficient poure to distemper, breake, and vtterly destroy all such compositions as shulde be engendered in such places, forasmuch al thynges are conceaued by rest and quietnesse after the commixtion of the fyrste elementes. And therefore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it is engendered only in these places and not in other: and why in lyke maner, fyluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are not also engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters of an easyer composition of nature then it is, by reason of the perfecte vnitie and concordance with puritie of substaunce and perfecte concoction which is in golde aboue all other metals: whereas also in many places in the territories of Rome, there are founde many sparkes of the mine of iren of blacke colour amonge the sandes of certeyne smaule ryuers: And yet these only in certeyne particular places of the fayde riuers: wherby it appeareth that these also, shulde not bee engendered where they are founde. By all which reasons and apparent effectes, it seemeth most agreable to truth that the golde which is found in such sandes, is rather browght thither by the water, then engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more playnely herein, I suppose that this chaunceth only in great ryuers which receaue abundaunce of waters of dyuers springes, fosses, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the meltyng of snowe and partly of great showers of rayne, whiche faulyng in certeyne chanelles from the toppes and fydes of [the] minerall mountaynes, wasshe away parte of the earth of theyr bankes and the ouerhanginge and holowe rockes which may conteyne the substaunce of golde: Or otherwyse, that in such places, there are ordinarie mines in the hyghe mountaynes or other superficiall owt places, perhappes incessable and eyther such whyther men can not come for extreme heate or cold or other hynderaunces, or els such as they haue contemned to searche: And yet the same to bee so consumed by the force of water as we haue fayde, and by the course therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may also chaunce that suche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto such ryuers: And that in the space of many yeares, the sprynges isshewyng owt of the same, may eyther bee dried vp (whiche thyng hath byn seene) or els turne theyr course an other way. So that it is no maruayle if in such a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of these thynges bee vnknowen euen vnto them that dwell nere such places. But in fine, howe so euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the sandes of many riuers: And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue maruayled at this thyng, I owght worthely to bee excused, forasmuch as where iudgement can not bee certified by reason or effectuall app[er]eance, there arise many doubtfull coniectures and newe causes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng the which I am informed to bee most trewe by the report of many credible persons: That is, that in sum places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yeare, pure golde spryngeth owte of the earthe in the lykenesse of smaule herbes, wrethed and twyned lyke smaule stalkes of hoppes, about the byggenesse of a pack threde, and foure fyngers in length or sume a handfull. As concernyng which thyng, Plinie also in the. xxxiii. [thirty-third] boke of his naturall hystorie, wryteth the lyke to haue chaunced in *Dalmatia* in his tyme. The which (if it bee trewe) fuerly the husbände men of these fieldes shall reape heauenly and not earthly frutes, sent them of god from heauen, and browght furth of nature without theyr trauayle or arte. A grace doubtlesse most especial, fyth that in so great a quantitie of earth graunted to the possession of men, in maner onely this is thought woorthy so hygh a priuileage. But what shall I say of that wherof *Albertus Magnus* wryteth in his booke of minerals, affirmyng that he hath seene golde engendered in a

deade mans heade: And that the same beinge founde by chaunce in dyggyng, and perceaued by the weyght and coloure to conteyne sum minerall substaunce, was proued by experience to holde a portion of fine golde mixte with smaule fande. And in deede his woordes seeme to found to none other fence but only that this precious metall was engender[e]d there by the great disposition of the place and stronge influence of heauen: The which fuerlie is a thyng hardely to be beleued. Yet consyderynge th[e] autoritie of so greate a clerke, with the force of the superiour causes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather gyue fayth hereto then raffhely to contemne the iudgement of so greate a clarke. And forasmuche as I haue begun to tell yow of these effectes, I wyll not omytte to shewe yowe of a straunge thyng which chaunced also in a part of Hungarie, where a myne of gold was fo found by chaunce and vnought for, that it may neuerthelesse be an aduertisement to other to searche diligently. So it is therefore, that a woman of the contrey beinge accustomed to reforte with her bucke of clothes to wasshe them in a certeyne fosse or dike where ranne a lyttle water, and vfyng to beate and rubbe them vppon a stone which seemed commodious for her purpose, chaunced at the length by her good fortune to espie on the stone, a veyne of golde trauerfing or ouertwhartinge the same abowte the byggeneffe of a grose packe threede, shewyng fayre and bright by reason of her much rubbyng. Wherat marueylyng dayly more and more, at the length opened the matter to her familiers: who conferryng with such as hadde better skylle of the thyng, founde it in fine to bee a veyne of pure golde: And that the quarrie of that stone, trauerfed the course of the water of the fosse. Remouyng therfore the water, and turning the course thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and folow the mine which hath now continued certeine. C. [hundred] yeares fence it was fyrst found: And hath not only greatly enriched that contrey, But also all Christendome hath had great commoditie by the same. This haue I rehearsed vnto yow the rather that yow shulde not bee negligent in any poynt or omitte any signe or token wherebye yowe may bee certified of greate thynges: not contemnyng the shadowe of any smaule tokens: but aswel to gyue attentyue eare and eye vnto them, as to feare and foresee all such thynges as may hynder. For (as yow may hereby well perceue) if credit had not fyrst byn gyuen to the woordes of the simple wooman, and the thyng afterwarde well folowed, perhappes they shulde neyther nor euer hereafter haue enjoyed the frute of so great a commoditie. Men therfore of good courage folowyng suche ryche signes, dyd nother feare the smauleffe of the veyne or hardnesse of the stone: presuppofyng by good reason that golde and syluer can not lightly bee founde in so smaule quantitie, but that the same shal be able to surmounte the charges. And this the more, in howe much the further yowe shal enter into the stone, as chaunceth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practised searchers, saye that the myne of golde is not founde in such great quantitie as are the mines of other metals. Wherin although perhappes they say trewly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye bee founde in greate quantitie. And fuerly it seemeth to me, that the benignitie of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amonge men, consyderyng in how many places it is dayly gathered aswel in mountaynes as in fandes of ryuers, byfyde that whiche is founde accompanied and ioyned with other metals. A further profe hereof may that bee, which is consumed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men: As that whiche the paynters bestowe in adournyng theyr woorkes: And goldefmythes both in gyltyng other metals and also in makyng dyuers woorkes of massie golde: byfyde that which the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo consume: with such as imbrotherers and fylke woomen spende abowt the vanities of men and womens apparell and tyrements. Also such as is consumed vppon trappers and furniments for horses, with gylted harnessse and such other sumptuousnesse as pertyneth to the warres and magnifical buyldinges of noble mens houses and temples: Byfyde that also whiche the couetousnesse of men hath hydde in stronge waules, and buryed in the grounde, inclosed in chayned cofers locked with triple keys: And that which serueth to the dayly vses of men and wandereth about the worlde through the handes of marchauntes. The whiche thynges well consydered, who so thinketh that nature bringeth furth but lyttle golde, shal perceue that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue so much as may satisfie the thirst of theyr couetousnesse. And to speake particularly of Italie, although there bee no myne of golde knowen in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn more ryche then many other prouinces: Notwithstandinge it hath often tymes byn spoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as nowe of late in owre tyme by the cruell handes of the Barbarians which entered into it abowt. xl. [forty] yeares paste. But who knoweth (as hath chaunced in the dayes of owre valient prediceffors) whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occasion to chastise them and so to inuade theyr regions that wee maye woonne owre owne ageyne with increase of dowble vfurie. Or if he wyll not permitte this, perhappes he wyll graunte vs to fynde sum ryche myne of golde. For, consyderyng and feyng that this owre region of Italie is replenyfshed with as many excellent thynges as in maner heauen can gyue to any habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite of golde shulde bee wantyng, wheras it bryngeth furth such plentie of al other mines except this of golde and tynne. And yet doo I verely beleue that it is not without the mynes of these also, although they be not yet discovered to the knowlege of men: As I am perswaded bothe by the golde that is founde in the sayd ryuers, and also by the dyuers and fundry

A myne of golde founde by chaunce

A vayne of golde in a stone.

No signes to be omitted.

338

Golde is not founde in like quantitie as are other metals. Argumentes of plentye of golde.

Howe diuers wayes golde is consumed.

Many haue to muche, but fewe haue enowgh. Italie wasted by the barbarians.

Commendacion of Italie

Golde and tynne

Meane minerals.

The golde of
Italie.

Golde containd
in other metals.

The maner of
pourginge of golde.

339

Lapis lazuli.

Asure.

Howe golde is
drawn frome
Lapis lazuli with
quickefyluer.

The baine or
test of leade.

The maner of
pourginge golde
with leade.

meane minerals which are founde in many places and adiudged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found, felte, or feene, we owght not therby to affirme that they are not. To conclude therefore, I thinke that in owr partes of Italie, pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that which is currant amonge the marchautes) then after twoo fortes, wherof the one is that which is founde in the sandes of ryuers: And the other, that whiche is gotten by the industrious and subtyle art of partyng gold from new fyluer, or from giltynge fyluer, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in maner but fewe which hold not sum smaull portion therof, more or lesse according to the mixtion and permanencie of theyr substances, or accordynge to the qualitie and force of the planettes which expresse theyr influence in the generation of them. And in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in owre partes of Italie. Nowe therefore to returne to the matter whereof is owre chiefe intente to intreate, hauynge before spoken sufficiently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde, I wyll further declare vnto yowe howe it owght to be poured from earthly superfluitie, and especially that whiche is founde lyinge in the forme of veynes, and although I haue not seene the edifi[c]es and engens wherwith the myners are accustomed to get it owt, yet wyll I shewe yow howe by other practises I haue learned to poure it, that yow may not bee without sum knowlege yf your fortune shalbe so good as to fynde any in Italy. When yow haue therefore dygged owt the myne and placed it in order, yow owght to consider in what kynde of stone it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muste yow so drawe owte the golde that yowe also faue the stone, bycause perfecte Asure is made therof, and such as the paynters caule *Azurro Oltramario*, that is, Asure of beyonde the sea, which they greatly esteeme and bye it deare. And to do this, it is necessary that yowe fyrst beate it into fine powder, and then put it in a trey or brode treene dyshe, and wasshe it fayre and cleane with water. This done amalgame or rubbe it well with quickefyluer vntyll it haue lycked vppe and drawne al the golde into it and left the stone pure of it selfe. Then strayne the quickefyluer from the golde through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a styllatorie of glasse: And thus shal yowe fynde the golde in the bottome of the vessell in maner pure without quickefyluer, as I haue sayde before. And if yow haue no respecte to faue the stone, it shall suffice to vse the common experience, meltyng it in a fornace in a bayne or teste of leade. But in my opinion, the best maner to bryng it to purenesse, is fyrst to burne the mine with a gentell fyre in an open fornace, and to suffer it to euaporate well if it bee not in such stone as yowe desyre to faue. Then grynde it in a mylle or beate it with pestel'es adapted with a wheele vntyll it be brought to fine powder. And when yow haue wel wasshed it and so much wasted the superfluous earthynesse therof, then put it in a teste made accordynge to the quantitie of the same, and melt it therin with leade whiche yowe shall consume partely by vapoure and partely with drawynge it owt by the fyde of the teste (as is the maner) vntyll yowe come to the pure golde whiche yowe shall in fine bryng to perfecte purenesse in vtterly consumynge the remanent of the leade with vehement fire increased by the helpe of stronge bellows. And this is the vniuersal maner which yow may vse not only in pourginge the myne of golde, but also the mynes of all other metals.

☞ Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof.

Whether syluer
haue A mine by
hit selfe or no.



Here are (as I vnderstande) diuers opinions emonge the practicionars of the mynes, whether fyluer haue a proper myne by it selfe or no. The reasons of suche as writte of the natures of mineralles, and th[e] autoritie of the most, persuaide me to assent to the affirmatiue: Not only to see the naturall matter distincte, as is to perceauie in the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in theyr mynes are found pure by them selues without mixtion, but also that I vnderstand that there hath bin found likewyse certeyne pieces aswell of this mettall of filuer, as of gold and copper, brought to his laste fynesse by th[e] only worke of nature. And

Georgius Agricola.
A table of mineral
syluer.

this dooth *Georgius Agricola* a lerned man of Germany confirme in his booke of minerals where he writteth that in Saxonie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral siluer of such bignes, that the duke the prince and patrone of that place, caused a chayre and square dyninge table after the maner of Almanye to be made therof withowte any further woorke of mans hande: Gloryng often tymes that in this thyng he surmounted the greatnesse and magnificence of the Emperoure. But in deede (excepte copper) I haue seene no metall taken owte of the caue pure withowt his vre. Yet doo I beleue it a thyng possible, consyderinge the greate force and poure of nature, th[e] ende of whose woorkynge euer intendeth to bringe all thynges to perfection as farre as it is not otherwyse hyndered. Yet (as I haue sayde) of the moste parte of those mynes whiche I haue seene, none of theym haue byn withowt mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper myne, but haue byn also myxte with other metals: And especially this of fyluer more then any other, excepte onlye that which was digged in *Schio*, in *Vicentina*. And therefore not withowt sum shadow of apparent reason, haue suche doubtis risin

The workes of
nature.

Mixte metales.

amonge the practicionars of the mynes. And yet (as I haue sayd) I beleue that siluer may haue and hath his proper mine, forasmuche as euery substance that maye be conuerted into metall, may aswell stande by it selfe pure in his owne kynde, as eyther seperate or mixte with other, as is often times seene in one masse in the whiche diuers metals are conteyned and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that speake of the mine of siluer, may with the same brethe and withowt distinction, speake also of all other metales, forasmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycause the moste noble and ryche metals haue obteyned the prerogatiue to be esteemed aboue other, therefore the name of the myne is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iren, (as doo the moste parte) yet if they holde also golde or fyluer, they are cauled gold mynes or fyluer mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of most value. But to lette passe this matter, yowe shall further vnderstande that when fuche mynes are mixte of dyuers metals, they shew furth so much the more diuers and variable fumosities of tinctures and marchasites, as signes where they bee and of what purenesse: forasmuch as euery of them according to theyr natures, exalte theyr colours which they shewe furthe to the eye, sum in the similitude of asurine or blewe stones, sum greene, sum yelowe, and sum of vndistinct colours accordyng to the compositions and mixtures of the fyrst matters of metals, which is also the cause that they are founde more or lesse in quantitie. Nowe to speake more particularly of this metall of fyluer, the philosophers speculatours of naturall thynges, saye that it is engendered of substance more watery then fyerie, of complexion feminine and flegmatike in comparison to gold: receauynge more of th[e] influence of the moone then of the son, and therefore engendered more in coude regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the soonne: consisting also of pure elementes, although sumwhat crude and vndygested in respecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plainly perceaued by theyr colours, weyght, and fixation. The practicionars affirme that it is engendered in a stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, and also in an other stone of a ruffet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other stone lyke vnto *Treuertino* or in *Treuertino* it selfe. The myne hereof, is very ponderous, and hathe in it often tymes certeyne shynynge graynes: The which howe much the lesse they are like to the poynte of a needle so muche is the myne founde to bee the perfecter, bycause this is a token of purenesse and fixation. And when it is founde in a whyte stone, or leade stone, it is so muche the better, bycause it maye be the easyer poured from the stone and earthynesse. When also it is founde lyinge as it were loose amonge certeyne scales or cloddes of earth, they saye that it is perfecte, although it haue not to the eye fuche resplendence as other are wonte to haue. They say also that it is engendered in an earth of darke ruffet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfection, and that there is great plentie therof within the mountayne: This also to be so much the better in howe much more it is shynynge of the coloure of iren or redde. And that yowe may the better comprehend the signes of the myne of the foresayde metall, yowe shall vnderstand that euen togyther with the myne, eyther where it is fyrst founde, or nere vnto the same, yowe shall see certeyne marchasites of yelowe coloure lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of fuche hyghe colour, so much the more do they shewe adust or burnt matter and heate, as thynges contrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therefore accordyng to the degrees of fuche colours, yow may in maner iudge of what fatnes or leanenesse the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchasites therefore as shewe the best signes of the goodnesse of theyr mynes, owght in coloure to approche to whytenesse as much as may bee, and to confyst of smaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchasites, that howe much the narrower and lesse they are, the more do they shewe the goodnesse of theyr myne. This myne of fyluer is also often tymes founde in a veyne of great quantitie, and yet so leane in qualitie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggyng, bicause it is founde in a harde stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, beinge verye harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes also, it is found in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyse if it do not surmount the value of the charges, it is not to bee folowed. Otherwhyles also, it so chaunceth that these thre metals are founde accompanied togyther in one myne: In whiche case it shalbe necessarie to vse aduertisement of arte. And presuppofynge that yowe desyre to separate the fyluer frome the other metall, it is necessarie that yowe increase the leade. But if yow passe not to faue neyther the fyluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it shalbe requisite to proceade with longe and great fyers vntyl the weakest matters bee consumed. But this owght to be doone especially in such mines as hold iren. Yet neyther for this or those, can there any general rule be gyuen, but that accordyng vnto theyr qualitie and nature, so owght they to be diuided: And this so much the more in that they are often tymes mixte with sum drye earthe, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arsenike, which are matters altogyther euaporable and burnt, or of harde substance to bee reduced to fusion or meltyng: In so much that the artificers sumtymes beinge ouercumme of them, leaue them as thynges vnprofitable. Wherof there can none other cause often tymes be gyuen, then theyr owne ignoraunce by reason of extraordinarie and longe fyers whiche they gyue them. And therefore they woorke inordinately in such kynd of mynes, except they accompanie them in the fusion or meltyng with such thynges as may defende them from the fyer. For wheras is fuche abun-

340

Diuers metals in one masse.

In the Indies golde founde in greate quantitie, pure and vnmixte.

The coulours of mineral fumosities.

The generacion and qualitie of siluer.

The influences of the moone.

Stones in the which syluer is engendered.

The myne of syluer.

The mountayne.

Marchasites of syluer.

What marchasites are the beste signes.

Syluer myn[e]s in harde stones.

Syluer with copper or leade.

The deuyding of siluer from other metals.

341

Iren.

Metals mixte with Antimonie or Arsenike

Howe metals are preserued in fusion.

Sulphur and mercury.

Grinding and washing of mynes.

The amalgamyng of mines with Mercury.

Mines holdyng the fourth part of siluer.

Copper holdinge syluer.

Three vnces vi. of siluer in euery hundreth of mine
War betwene Maximilian Th[e]mperour and the Venecians.

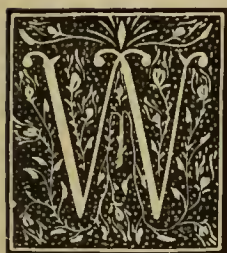
The mynes of Almanye.

The marchasite mixte with the myne.

daunce eyther of burnt matter, or of superfluous waterynesse, wherof the one is cauled *Sulphur* or brymstone, and the other Mercurie or quickfyluer not fixed, or arsenike, it is necessarie that the one burne the fyluer, and the other cary it a way, so that of the myne there resteth none other then an earthy substance infusible and not able to bee molten. To faue the fayde myne therefore it shalbe requisite to vse discretion with much pacience and conueniente meanes, fyrste after the common maner of woorkyng to euaporate the myne (as wee haue fayde) or without euaporation to grinde it smaule: then to wasshe it often, and in fine, if not by great fyers, at the leaste by great baynes or testes of leade to poure it. And to bryng this effect the more easely to passe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow ought to proue in the same grindyng or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with Mercurie which is the best maner of profe, if the myne bee of a drye nature: And I knowe that it hath bynne vfed of many to theyr greate profyte: And especially in those forte of mynes which I fayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. Proue it therfore. For all kyndes of mines do not receaue it. And of this wherof I haue spoken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdyng a fourth part of fyluer, and sum more then halfe. And this was founde lyeing in maner in the superficiall parte of the earth: and sum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath also bin founde vnder the rootes of fuche trees as haue byn ouerthrowen by tempeste: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all the mynes whiche I haue seene in the dominions of Venice, as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not saye that I haue seene any better: Although there bee many caues wherof the most parte are of copper holdinge fyluer: and emonge other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the company of certeyne other gentlemen caused a caue to bee digged. And bycause the hole charge was committed to mee, I wente by occasion twyfe into high Almanye to see the mynes of that countrey, wherby I might haue the better experience to faule to practyse at my returne. In so much that I founde the mine which we had taken in hande to folowe, to bee very good and ryche: holdyng more then three vnces and a halfe of fyluer in euery hundreth of the myne. And doubtlesse we shuld haue obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had not rayfed warre betwene Maximilian Th[e]mperoure and the signorie of Venecy: which was the cause that those places of *Frioli* and *Carnia*, coude not be quietly inhabited: whereby we were enforced to forsake owre enterpryse, and to rafe and destroy th[e] order which we had begunne. And by reason that the warres continued longe, we were constrained to diuide owr company, where I also departed an other way, hauyng euer in mynde to folowe owre attempted enterpryse when better oportunitie shulde ferue. In the meane tyme returnyng ageine into hyghe Almanie, I made more diligent fearch to knowe the mynes then before: and went to *Sbozzo*, *Plaißer*, *I[n]-spruch*, *Alla*, and *Arottinbergh*: frome whenfe I wente into dyuers places of Italy. So that to conclude, the most and best mynes whiche I haue seene to holde most of fyluer, are those that are founde in *Vicentina* in certeyne stonnes of a dark grey, or ruffet colour, as I haue fayde before. And nowe for a generall aduertisement, I wyll not omyt to tell yow, that when yow haue attempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the marchasite and the myne myxt togyther, yowe shall leaue of yowre woork, bycause it signifieth that the myne is neare to the superficiall part of the earth, and that it is of but lyttle quantitie. And thus as touchyng this myne of fyluer, I can say no more sauynge that I haue not yet shewed yowe the maner of poungyng it from earthely grofenes and to bryng it to perfect metall. But bycause I haue determyned to speake largely hereof in the proper place of the fusion or meltyng of all metals, I haue thought good to speake no further of this matter at this presente.

THE MANER OF WORKYNGE IN GOLDE
MYNES IN EGIPTTE IN OWLD TYME, AFTER THE
DESCRIPTION OF DIODORVS SICVLVS, WHO WROTTE HIS HISTORIE
cauled Bibliotheca, fumwhat before the dayes of th[e]emperoure
Octavianus Augufus, and before th[e]incarnation of
Chrift abowt. xl. [forty] yeares.

He wryteth therefore in his fourthe booke as foloweth.



They haue not thought good to pretermit howe golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonge the Egiptians. In the confines therefore of Egipte where it borthereth with Ethiopia and Arabia, there are certeyne places frutefull of metalles, owt of the whiche, golde is digged with great labour and expenfes. For a blacke earthe of minerale nature, hath certeyne vaynes of moſte white marble excedinge bright and ſhyninge. The ſurveyours of this woorke, haue affigned them a great company of men to woorke and coyne golde. For the kinges of Egipte are accuſtomed to appoynte to theſe paynefull trauailes, all ſuche as haue byn conuicte for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken priſoners in the warres, or ſuche as haue byn committed to priſon through the indignation of princes who by this meanes haue bothe great vantage by theyr labour, and punyſhe them ſufficiently for theyr offences. For barbarous and ſtrange ſouldiers of diuers languagies, bare rule ouer them and keepe them to theyr worke, in ſuche ſorte that th[e]uſe of ſpeache beinge taken from theym, they can not bee corrupted by loue or intreatie. They drawe golde owt of the hardeſt earth decocte with much fyre. The ſoſteſt ſtone which is broken with meane labour, is digged with instrumentes of iren by the trauayle of many thoufands of men. The ſcrier which decerneth the veines of the myne, go[e]th before the workemen, appoynting them the places where they ſhall digge. The marble ſtone whiche he ſheweth them, they breake and cleaue with wedgies of iren by the mere ſtrength of theyr bodies withowte arte. They make theyr ſoſſe or caue, not right furthe, but as the bright nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwyſe darke and obſcure by reaſon of theyr ſundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers caryinge lyght before theyr fore-headers, digge great ſtones owt of the myne, whyche they let faule on the ground. From this labour they neuer reſt, inforced to contynual woorke with ſtrokes and contumelious woordes. Children of th[e]age of. xii. [twelue] or. xiii. [thirteen] yeares or vppewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the ſtones into ſmaule pieces, and the other cary furth that which is broken. They that are paſt th[e]age of. xxx. [thirty] yeares, receaue the fayd broken ſtones at theyr hands and beate them in veſſels of ſtone with maules of iren, to the quantitie of tares or fytches: which afterward they caſt into many milles, whereby the labour of two or three women or owlde men to euery mylle, they are grunde as ſmaule as meale. The fylthineſſe of the bodies of theſe labourers, is apparent to all men. For not ſo muche as their priuie members are couered with any thinge: And theyr bodies byfyde ſo fylthy, that no man can beholde them without compaſſion of theyr miſerie. But no pitie, no reſte, no remiſſion is graunted them, whether they bee men or women, younge or owlde, fycke or feeble: But are all with ſtrokes inforced to continuall labour vntyl the poore wretches faynt and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In ſo much that many of them for feare of theyr lyfe to coomme (which they thynke woorſe then the preſent payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grunde the ſtones very ſmaule, they caſt that ſubſtaunce vppon brode tables inclynynge ſumwhat ſtiepe or ſtandyng a ſlope, and caſt water thereon, ſteryng continually the fayde powder of marble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is waſhed away, and the golde as the heauier matter remayneth on the tables. When they haue doone thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with theyr handes and rub it with thynne ſponges, owt of the which they preſſe a ſoſte earth, and thus continewe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden ſande. After that this preparation is fyniſhed, other woorkemen receauynge it at theyr handes by meaſure and weyght, caſt it into earthen pottes, puttyng thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with branne of barley, and weedes of the ſea cauled reites or ouſe. Theſe thynges proportioned accordingly, they cloſe the pottes diligently with cley, and ſo let them ſtand in a furneſſe with fyre for the ſpace of fyue continually dayes and nyghtes. In which ſpace, al other thinges of contrary mixture beinge confumed, only the golde is found in the veſſels, ſumwhat diminiſhed of the fyrſt weyght. And by this labour and diligence is golde poſſeſſed in the furtheſt parte of Egipt. Wherby, euen nature her ſelfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in fyndyng, tedious in purſuinge, daungerous in keepyng, and in vſe conſtitute betwene pleaſure and ſorowe.

Gold in a black earthe, and white marble

Then damned to the metales as nowe to the gallies.

The ſcrier of the vayne.

Golden marble.

The woorke of chyldren.

Mylles.

The miſery of the miners

The pouringe of the metall frome the vre.

The melting of golde.
343

Alga.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VII.

*The first two Voyages out of
England into Guinea.*

1553-1554 A.D.]

THE DISCRIPTION OF THE TWO VIAGES
MADE OWT OF ENGLAND INTO GVINEA IN AFFRIKE
AT THE CHARGES OF CERTEYNE MARCHAVNTES ADVENTVRERS
of the citie of London, in the yeare of owre Lorde.

M. D. LIII.



That these vyages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as separate from other vyages, the cause hereof is, that after I had delyuered the sayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was desyred by certeyne my frendes to make summe mention of these viages, that sum memorie myght thereof remayne to our posteritie if eyther iniquitie of tyme confumyng all thinges, or ignoraunce creepynge in by barbarousnesse and contempte of knoweledge, shulde hereafter bury in obliuion so woorthy attemptes, so much the greatlyer to bee esteemed as before neuer enterprysed by Englysshe men, or at the leaste so frequented as at this present they are and may bee to the greate commoditie of owre marchauntes, if the same be not hyndered by th[e]ambition of such as for the conquestynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectynge of certeyne fortresses or rather blockhouses amonge naked people, thinke them selues woorthy to bee lordes of ha'fe the worlde, enuyng that other shulde enjoy the commodities which they them selues can not holy possesse. And although such

as haue byn at charges in the discouerynge and conquestynge of such landes, owght by good reason to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminencies, and tributes for the same, yet (to speake vnder correction) it may seeme sumwhat rigorous and ageynst good reason and conscience, or rather ageynst the charitie that owght to bee amonge Chrysten men, that such as violently inuade the dominions of other, shuld not permit other frendely to vse the trade of marchandies in places neuer or seldome frequented of them, wherby theyr trade is not hindered in such places where they them selues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martes of theyr trafike. But forasmuche as at this presente it is not my intent to accuse or defend, approue or improue, I wil cease to speake any further hereof, and proceade to the description of the fyrst viage as briefly and faythfully as I was aduertised of the same by th[e]information of such credible persons as made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof as much as shalbe requisite, omyttinge to speake of many particular thynges not greatly necessarye to be knowen: whiche neuerthelesse with also th[e]exact course of the nauigation, shal be more fully declared in the second vyage. And if herein fauoure or frendshyppe shall perhappes cause sum to thinke that sum haue byn sharply touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendshyppe and gyue place to truth, that honest men may receaue prayse for weil doinge, and lewde persons reproche as the iust stipende of theyr euill desertes, whereby other may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honest attemptes.

But that these vyages may bee more playnely vnderstode of al men, I haue thought good for this purpose before I intreate hereof, to make a breefe description of Affrica beinge that greate parte of the worlde, on whose Weste syde begynneth the coast of Guinea at Cabo Verde abowt the. xii. [twelve] degrees in latitude on this syde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the measuryng line, so runnyng from the north to the south and by east in sum places within v. iiii. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and so furth in maner directly east and by north for the space of. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees or there abowt in longitude from the West to the East, as shall more playnely appere in the description of the seconde vyage.

Ambition.

Africa.

The coast of
Guinea.

A BREEFE DESCRIPTION OF AFFRIKE.

Tunnes.
Bugia.
Tripoli.
Numidia.

Ilandes of Tunnes.
Malta.
The disertes of
Libia.

Barbarie.
Mauritania.
The kingdomes of
Fes and marrock.
Tremesin.
Oram.
Nassaquiber
Salla.
Azamor.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Guinea.
Ethiopians.

Marrocko.
Fes.
Tremesin.
Guinea.

Africa the great.

Affrike the lesse.

Carthage.

Prester Iohn.

Cape de Buona
Speranza.
The sea of sande.
Alcair.

From whence the
queene of Saba
came.

Manicongni.

The earthly
Paradyse.
The trees of the
soonne and
moone.



IN Affrica the lesse are these kyngedomes: The kyngedome of Tunnes, and Constantina which is at this day vnder Tunnes, and also the region of Bugia, Tripoli, and Ezzab. This part of Affrike is very baren by reason of the greate desertes, as the desertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall portes of the kyngedome of Tunnes are these: Goletta, Bizerta, Portofarnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunnes, are Constantia and Boua with dyuers other. Vnder this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarea, Limoso, Beit, Gamelaro, and Malta where at this presente is the greate master of the Rodes. Vnder the southe of this kyngedome, are the great desertes of Libia. Al the nations [of] this Africa the lesse, are of the secte of Machomet and a rusticall people luyng scattered in vyllages. The beste of this parte of Affrike, is Barbaria lying on the coaste of the sea Mediterraneum.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbaria) is diuided in two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Cefariensis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Fes and the kyngedome of Marrocko. The principall citie of Fes, is cauled Feffa: and the chiefe citie of Marrocko, is named Marrocko. Mauritania Cefariensis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremisen, with also the citie cauled Temisen or Trelensin. This region is full of desertes, and reacheth to the sea Mediterraneum to the citie of Oram with the porte of Massaquiber. The kyngedome of Fes reacheth vnto the Ocean sea from the West to the citie of Argilla: and the porte of the fayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

The kyngedome of Marrocko is also extended aboue the Ocean sea vnto the citie of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboue the Ocean sea towarde the West of the fayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitanea (that is to say in the two kyngedomes of Fes and Marrocko) are in the sea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde time the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the south of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Iaioso, Gamba, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger. In the fayde regions are no cities: but only certeyne lowe cotages made of bouwes of trees plastered with chauke and couered with strawe: In these regions are also very great desertes.

The kyngedome of Marrocko hath vnder it these seuen kyngedomes: Hea, Sus, Guzula, the territorie of Marrocko, Duchala, Hazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many: as Fes, Temesne, Azgar, Elabath, Errifi, Garet, and Elcauz. The kyngedome of Tremisen hath these regions: Tremisen, Tenez, and Elgazaet, all which are Machometistes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours without profession of any religion or other knowlege of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great, is one of the three partes of the worlde knowen in owlde tyme and seuered from Asia, on the East by the ryuer Nilus: On the West, from Europe by the pillars of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Affrike the lesse is in this wyfe bounded: On the west it hath Numidia: On the east Cyrenaica: On the north, the sea cauled Mediterraneum. In this countrey was the noble citie of Carthage.

In the East syde of Affrike beneth the redde sea, dwelleth the greate and myghtye Emperour and Chrystian kynge Prester Iohan, well knowen to the Portugales in theyr vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre on euery syde: and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chrystian and hethen that pay hym trybute. This myghty prynce is cauled Dauid Th[e]mperour of Ethiopia. Sum wryte that the kynge of Portugale fendeth hym yearely. viii. [eight] shyppes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Affrike towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the cape *de Buona Speranza*: and on the other syde with the sea of sande cauled *Mare de Sabione*, a very daungerous sea, lying betwene the great citie of Alcaer or Cairo in Egypte and the countrey of Ethiopia: In the whiche way are many vnhabitable desertes continuinge for the space of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the fayde Chrystian Emperour were not hyndered by those desertes (in the which is great lacke of vittayles and especially of water) he wolde or nowe haue inuaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the citie of Alcayer. The chiefe citie of Ethiope where this great Emperour is resydent, is cauled Amacaiz beinge a fayre citie, whose inhabitauntes are of the coloure of an olyue. There are also many other cities, as the citie of Saua vpon the ryuer of Nilus where Th[e]mperoure is accustomed to remayne in the soomer season. There is lykewyse a great citie named Barbaregaf: And Ascon from whence it is sayde that the queene of Saba came to Ierusalem to heare the wysdome of Salomon. This citie is but lyttle, yet very fayre and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiope. In the fayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whose kynge is a Moore and tributarie to Th[e]mperour of Ethiope. In this prouince are many excedyng hyghe mountaynes vpon the which is sayde to be the earthly Paradyse: And sum say that there are the trees of the soonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention: yet that none can passe thither by reason of greate desertes of a hundreth dayes iorney. Also beyonde these mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza. And to haue sayde thus much of Affrike it may suffice.

THE FYRST VYAGE TO GVINEA.



N the yeare of owre Lorde. M. D. LIII. the. xii. [twelfth] day of August, sayled from Porchemouth two goodly shyppes, the Primrose and the Lion, with a pynnesse cauled the moone: beinge all well furnysshed aswell with men of the lustiest forte to the number of feuen score, as also with ordinaunce and vyttayles requisite to such a vyage: Hauynge also two capitaynes, the one a straunger cauled Antoniades Pinteado a Portugale, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyse, discrete, and sober man, who for his cunnyng in saylynge beinge aswell an expert pylot as polytyke capitayne, was sumtyme in greate fauoure with the kynge of Portugale, and to whom the coastes of Brasile and Guinea were commytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the sea in those partes: and was furthermore a gentleman of the kinge his masters house. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer promifeth but deceaueth, neuer rayfeth but casteth downe ageyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes companions emulation and enuie,

he was after many aduersites and quarels made ageynst hym, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euyll matched with an vnequall coompanion and vnlyke matche of most sundry qualities and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with vices dyuers and many fowly spotted, knowen of many without profyte, and defyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes: whose smaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and his familiar conuersation an vndoinge, that happye was the man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and she for her name. In fine, vnfortunate was the coompany that had owght to doo with hym: in so much that it was no maruayle that so goodly an enterpryse with so noble a furniture of men, shyppes, and ordinaunce of all fortes, with all kynde of vyttayles and that of so great abundaunce, had so smaule successe: which could be none otherwyse wher so foule a spotte dyd blemyshe, ye rather deface the rest. Thus departed these noble shyppes vnder fayle on theyr vyage. But first this capitayne Wyndam, puttyng furth of his shyp at Porchemouth, a kynfeman of one of the headde marchautes, and shewynge herein a muster of the tragical partes he had conceaued in his brayne, and with such smaule begynninges nurysshed so monstros a byrth, that more happy, yea and blessed was that younge man beinge leste behynde then if he had byn taken with them, as sum doo wyshe he had doonne the lyke by theirs. Thus sayled they on theyr vyage vntyl they came to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wynes for the flore of theyr shyppes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At these Ilandes they met with a great galion of the kynge of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce: yet suche as coulde not haue preuayled if it had attempted to withstande or resyst owre shyppes, for the which cause it was set furth, not only to lette and interrupte these owre shyppes of theyr purposed vyage, but all other that shulde attempte the lyke: Yet chiefly to frustrate owre vyage. For the kyng of Portugale was finisterly informed that owre shyppes were armed to his castel of Mina in these parties, wheras nothing lesse was ment.

After that owr shyppes departed from the Ilandes of Madera forward on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine Pinteados forowe as a man tormented with the company of a terrible hydra who hytherto flattered with hym and made hym a fayre countenance and shewe of loue. Then dyd he take vppon hym to commaunde all alone, settynge nowght bothe by capitayne Pinteado with the reste of the marchaunte factours: sumtymes with opprobrious woordes and sumtymes with threatenynge most shamefully abusynge them, takinge from Pinteado the seruice of the boys and certeyne mariners that were assigned hym by th[e] order and direction of the woorshypfull marchautes, and leauynge hym as a common maryner, which is the greatest despite and greefe that can be to a Portugale or Spanyarde to be diminysshte theyr honoure which they esteeme aboue all rycheffe. Thus saylyng forward on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, continuyng their course from thense vntyll they arryued at the Ilande of faynt Nicolas where they vyttayled them selues with fresshe meate of the

The Prymrose
The Lyon.
The Moone

Pinteado.

Brasile.
Guinea.

The flatterynge of
fortune.

The euell
conditions of
Wyndam.

The Ilandes of
Madera.

A galion of
the kinge of
Portugale.

The castel of
Mina.

346
Howe Wyndam
abused Pinteado.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
The Ilande of
S. Nicolas.

Guinea.

The ryuer of
Sesto.
Graynes.

The thrift of golde.

The castel of
mena.
The quantitie of
golde.

Benin.

Pepper.

Furie admitteth
no counsayle.

The Rossia.

Rottinge heate.

Scorchinge heate.

Benin.

Francisco.
Nicolas Lambert.
The kyng of
Benin his court.

347

Reuerence
toward the kyng.The
communication
betwene the kyng
of Benin and owr
men.

Pepper.

The kynges
gentlenesse
toward owr men.

fleshe of wylde goates whereof is great plentie in that Ilande and in maner of nothyng else. From hence folowynge on theyr course, and taryinge here and there at the deserte Ilandes in the waye, bycause they wolde not coome to tymely to the countrey of Guinea for the heate, and taryinge sumwhat to longe (for what can bee wel mynyfired in a common wealth where inequalitye with tyrannie wyll rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrst lande of the countrey of Guinea where they fell with the great ryuer of Sesto where they myght for theyr marchaundies haue laden theyr shyppes with the graynes of that countrey, which is a very hotte frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it groweth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of smaule feedes, so is the sayde frute ful of graynes which are lose within the codde, hauynge in the mydde of thereof a hole on euery fyde. This kynde of spice is much vsed in coulde countreys, and may there be solde for great aduantage for th[e]exchange of other wares. But our men by the perswasion or rather inforcement of this tragicall capitayne, not regardynge and setting lyght by that commoditie in comparason to the fine gold they thrifted, sayled an hundreth leaques further vntyl they came to the golden lande: where not attemptinge to come nere the castell perteynyng to the kyng of Portugale, whiche was within the ryuer of Mina, made sale of theyr ware onely on this fyde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the quantitie of an hundreth and fiftie poundes weyght, there beinge in case that they myght haue dispatched al theyr ware for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue gyuen eare to the counfayle and experience of Pinteado. For when that Wyndam not satisfied with the golde whiche he had (and more myght haue had if he had taryed about the Mina) commaundyng the sayde Pinteado (for so he toke vpon hym) to leade the shyppes to Benin beinge vnder the Equinoctial line and a hundreth and fiftie leaques beyonde the Mina where he loked to haue theyr shyppes laden with pepper: And beinge counfayled of the sayde Pinteado confyderyng the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further but to make sale of theyr wares such as they had for golde wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam not assentyng hereunto, fell into a fuddeyne rage, reuilyng the sayde Pinteado, caulynge hym Iewe with other opprobrious woordes, sayinge. This horson Iewe hath promised to bryng vs to such places as are not, or as he can not bring vs vnto. But if he doo not, I wyl cut of his eares and naile them to the mast. Pinteado gaue the forfayde counfayle to goo no further for the safeguard of the men and theyr lyues, which they shulde put in daungioure if they came to late for the roffia which is theyr wynter, not for coulde but for smotherynge heate with clofe and cloudy ayer and storminge wether of fuche putrifyinge qualitie that it rotted the cotes of theyr backes: Or els for coomynge to soonne for the scorchyng heate of the sonne which caused them to lynger in the way. But of force and not of wyll, browght he the shyppes before the ryuer of Benin: where rydyng at an anker, fente theyr pinneffe vp into the ryuer fiftie or threscore leaques, from whense certeyne of the marchauntes with capitayne Pinteado, Francisco a Portugale, Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and other marchauntes were conducted to the courte where the kyng remayned. x. [ten] leaques from the ryuer fyde: whyther when they came, they were browght with a greate company to the presence of the kyng who beinge a blacke moore (althoughe not so blacke as the rest) sat in a great houghe haule longe and wyde, the walles made of earthe withowte wyndowes, the rooffe of thynne boordes open in fundry places lyke vnto louers to lette in the ayer.

And here to speke of the great reuerence they gyue to their kyng, beinge such that if wee wolde gyue as much to our fauour Chryst, we shuld remoue from our heades many plages which wee dayly deferue for owre contempte and impietie.

So it is therefore, that when his noble men are in his presence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but fyt courynge, as wee vpon owre knees so they vpon theyr buttockes with theyr elbowes vpon theyr knees and theyr handes beefore theyr faces, not lookynge vppe vntyll the kyng commaunde them. And when they are comynge toward the kyng as farre as they do see hym, do they shewe such reuerence fytting on the grounde with theyr faces couered as before. Lykewise when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backes toward hym, but go creepynge backwarde with lyke reuerence.

And nowe to speake sumwhat of the communication that was betwene the kyng and owre men, yowe shall fyrst vnderstande that he hym selfe coulde speake the Portugale tounge which he had lerned of a chylde. Therefore after that he had commaunded owre men to stande vp, and demaunded of them the cause of theyr comynge into that countrey, they answered by Pinteado that they were marchauntes trauallyng into those parties for the commodities of his countrey for exchange of wares which they had browght from theyr countreys, beinge such as shulde bee no lesse commodious for him and his people. The kyng then hauynge of owrde lyeing in a certeyne store house thirtie or fortie kyntals of pepper (euery kyntall beinge an hundreth weyght) wyllynge them to looke vpon the same, and ageyne to bryng hym a fyght of fuche marchaundies as they had browght with them. And thervpon sent with the capitayne and the marchauntes certeyne of his men to conducte them to the waters fyde, with other to bryng the ware from the pinneffe to the courte. Who when they were returned and the wares feene, the kyng grewe to this ende with the marchauntes, to proude in thirtie dayes the ladyng of all theyr shyppes with pepper. And in case theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the value of so muche pepper, he promysed to credite them to theyr nexte returne: and thervpon fente the countrey rounde about

to gather pepper, caufynge the fame to be browght to the courte : So that within the fpace of. xxx. [thirty] days they had gathered foure fcore toonne of pepper.

In the meane feafon owre men partly hauynge no rule of them felues, but eatyng without meafure of the frutes of the cuntry, and drynkyng the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the fame, and in fuch extreeme heate runnyng continually into the water, not vfed before to fuch fuddeyne and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more daungerous) were therby browght into fwellynges and agues. In fo much that the later tyme of the yeare commyng on, caufed them to dye fumtymes. iii. [three] and fumtymes. iiii. [four] or. v. [five] in a day. Then Wyndam perceauyng the tyme of the. xxx. [thirty] dayes to be expyred, and his men dying fo faft, fente to the courte in poſte to capitayne Pinteado and the reſt to come away and to tary no longer. But Pinteado with the reſt, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifyng hym of the greate quantitie of pepper they had alre dy gathered and loked dayly for much more : Defyryng furthermore to remember the great prayfe and name they ſhulde wyne if they came home proſperouſly, and what ſhame of the contrary. With which anſwere Wyndam not ſatiffied, and many of theyr men dyinge dayly, wylled and commaunded them ageine eyther to coomme away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pinteado harde this anſwere, thynkyng to perſuade hym with reaſon, tooke his way from the court towarde the ſhyppes beinge conducted thither with men by the kynges commaundement.

In the meane feafon Windam all rageinge, brake vppe Pinteados Caben, broke open his cheſtes, ſpoyled fuche prouifyon of coulde ſtilled waters and fuckettes as he hade prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothyng neyther of his instrumentes to ſayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulinge fycke hym ſelfe, dyed alſo. Whoſe death Pinteado comming aborde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dereſt friend he had in the worlde. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd ſpette in his face, ſum caulynge hym Iewe, ſaying that he had browght them thether to kylle them : And ſum drawyng theyr ſwordes at hym makynge A ſhewe to ſley hym. Then he perceauinge that they wolde nedeſ away, defyred them to tary that he might fetch the reſte of the marchauntes that were lefte at the court. But they wolde not graunte his requere. Then defyred he them to gyue hym the ſhippe boate with as muche of an owlde ſayle as myght ſerue for the fame, promiſyng them therewith to bringe Nicolas Lamberte and the reſt into England : But all was in vayne. Then wrotte he a letter to the courte to the marchauntes informyng them of all the matter, and promyſyng them if god wolde lende hym life to returne with al haſt[e] to fetch them. And thus was Pinteado kepte a bordeshippe ageynſte his wyll, thruſt amonge the boyes of the ſhippe, not vfed like a man, nor yet like an honeſt boy : But glad to find fauoure at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one of theyr ſhippes behynde them, whiche they ſoonke for lake of men to cary her. After this within fixe or ſeuē days ſaylinge, dyed alſo Pinteado for very penſueneſſe and thought that ſtrooke hym to the harte : A man worthy to ſerue any prince and moſt vilely vfed. And of ſeuē ſcore men came home to Plymmuowth ſcarſely fortye, and of them many dyed. And that no man ſhulde ſuſpecte theſe wordes which I haue ſayd in commendation of Pinteado, to be ſpoken vpon fauour otherwyſe then truth, I haue thought good to adde herevnto the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the infant his brother wrote vnto hym to reconcytle hym at fuche tyme as vpon the kynges his maſters diſpleaſure (and not for any other cryme or offence as may appere by the ſayde letters) he was onely for pouertie inforced to coomme into Englande where he fyrſt perſuaded owre marchauntes to attempte the ſayde vyages to Guinea. But as the kyng of Portugale to late repented hym that he had ſo punyſhed Pinteado vpon malicious informations of ſuch as enuid the mans good fortune, euen ſo may it hereby appere, that in ſum caſes, euen Lyons them ſelues, may eyther bee hyndered by the contempt or ayded by the helpe of the pore myſe accordyng vnto the fable of Eſope.

¶ *The coppie of Antonianes Pinteado his letters patentes wherby the kyng of Portugale made hym knyght of his houſe after all his troubles and imprifonment, which by wronge information made to the kyng, he had ſuſteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laſte deli[u]ered, his cauſe knowen and manifeſted to the kyng by a grey fryer the kynges confeſſoure.*



The kyng do gyue yow to vnderſtande lorde Francis Deſſeofa one of my counſayle and ouerſeer of my houſe, that in conſideration of the good ſeruiſe which Antonie Anes Pinteado, the ſonne of Iohn Anes, dwellyng in the towne cauled the porte, hath doone vnto me, my wyll and pleaſure is, to make hym knyght of my houſe, alowynge to hym in penſion ſeuē hundreth reys monethly, and euery daye one alcayr of barley as longe as he kepeth a horſe, and to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of my houſe. Proudyng alwayes that he ſhal receaue but one mariage gyfte : And this alſo in ſuch condition that the tyme which is excepted in owre

The diſorder and death of owre men.

The furie of Wyndam.

The death of Wyndam.

Pinteado euil vſed of the maryners.

348

The death of Pinteado.

Seuen hundreth reys are. x. s. [ten ſhillings]. Alcayr, is halfe a buſhel.

ordinaunce forbyddyng such men to mary for gettyng such chyldren as myght succeade them in this allowance, which is fyxe yeares after the makynge of this patente, shalbe fyrste expired before he do mary. I therefore commaunde yowe to cause this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricula of owre housholde vnder the tyle of knyghtes. And when it is so entered, let the clerke of the Matricula for the certentie therof, wryte on the backe fyde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the leafe wherein this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, let hym returne this wrytynge vnto the sayd Antonie Anes Pinteado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriques haue wrytten this in Almarin the xxii. [twenty-second] day of September, in the year of owre lorde. 1551. And this beneuolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pinteado the. xxv. [twenty-fifth] day of Iuly this present year.

Rey.

349

¶ *The secretaries declaration wrytten vnder the kynges graunt.*



Owre maiestie hath vouchsafed in respect and consyderation of the good seruice of Antonie Anes Pinteado dwellynge in the porte, and foonne of Iohn Anes to make hym knyght of yowre house with ordinarie allowance of feuen hundreth reys pension byt he moneth and one Alcayr of barley by the day as long as he keepeth a horse: And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of yowr house with condition that he shall haue but one mariage gyfte: And that not within the space of. vi. [fix] yeares after the makynge of these letters patentes.

The secretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricula. Fol. 683.

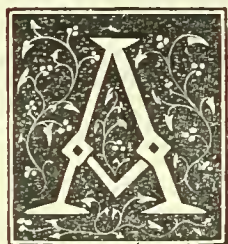
Francisco de Siquera.

¶ *The coppie of the letter of Don Lewes th[e] infant and brother to the kynge of Portugale: sent into Englande to Antonianes Pinteado.*

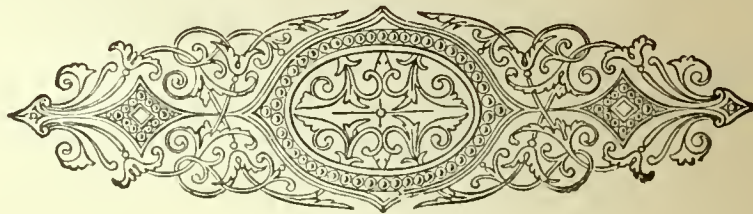


Antonie Anes Pinteado, I the infant brother to the kynge, haue me hartely commended vnto yow. Peter Gonfalues is gone to seeke yow, desyryng to brynge yowe home ageyne into yowr countrey. And for that purpose, hath with hym a safe conduct for yow, graunted by the kynge, that thereby yowe may freely and without all feare come home. And although the wether be foule and stormy, yet fayle not to come. For in the tyme that his maiestie hath gyuen yow, yow maye doo many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifying the kynge, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladd: and to brynge the same to passe wyll doo all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte. But forasmuch as Peter Gonfalues wyll make further declaration hereof vnto yow, I say no more at this present. Wrytten in Luxburne the. viii. [eighth] day of December. Anno. M. D. LII.

¶ *The Infant don Lew[e]s.*



These forsayd wrytynges I sawe vnder se[a]le in the house of my frende Nicolas Lyese with whom Pinteado left them at his vnfortunate departynge to Guinea. But notwithstanding all these frendly letters and fayre promyses, Pinteado durste not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his countrey men without the presence of other, forasmuch as he had secrete admonition that they intended to sleigh hym, if tyme and place myght haue serued their wycked intent.



☞ THE SECONDE VYAGE TO GVINEA.



S in the fyrst vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hystory then the course of the nauigation, whereof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, so in the discription of this seconde vyage my chiefe intent hath byn to shew the course of the same accordynge to the obseruation and ordinarie custome of the maryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiefe in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a brieue declaration of the same as he founde and tryed all thynges not by coniecture, but by the arte of saylynge and instrumentes perteynyng to the mariners facultie. Not therefore assuminge to my selfe the commendations dewe to other, neyther so boulde as in anye parte to chaunge or otherwise dispose the order of this vyage so wel obserued by arte and experience, I haue thought good to set furth the same in such sorte and phrased of speache as is commonly vsed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the said pylot as I haue sayde. Take it therefore as foloweth.

In the yeare of owre lorde. M. D. LIIII. the. xi. [eleuenth] day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Temmes with three goodly shyppes, th[e]one cauled the Trinitie, a shyppe of the burden of seuen score toonne: Th[e]other cauled the Barthelmewe a shyppe of the burden of. lxxx. [ninety tons]. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangelist a shyppe of seuen score toonne. With the sayde shyppes and two pynneses (wherof the one was drowned in the coast of Englande) we went forward on ovr vyage, and steyde at Douer. xiiii. [fourteen] dayes. We steyde also at Rye three or foure dayes. More ouer last of all we touched at Dearthmouth.

The fyrst day of Nouember at. ix. [nine] of the clocke at nyght departynge from the coaste of Englande, we sette of the stert bearynge southwest all that nyght in the sea, and the nexte day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the sayde mooneth abowt noone, makynge ovr way good, dyd runne. 60. leaques.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the thyrde daye tyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day of the sayde mooneth, makynge ovr way good southeast, dyd runne euery three houres twoo leaques, which amounteth to. xvi. [sixteen] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. iiii. [fourth] day to. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day, runnyng south west in the sea, dydde runne. xii. [twelve] leaques.

Item runnyng from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. v. [fifth] day vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [sixth] day runnyng southeast, dyd runne. xviii. [eighteen] leaques.

And so from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vi. [sixth] daye vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [seventh] day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre. ii. [two] leaques which amount to. xlvi. [forty-eight] leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. vii. [seventh] day tyl. iii. [three] of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, southsouthwest, runnyng in the sea, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from three of the clocke the. viii. [eighth] day, vntyll. iii. of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leaques.

Item from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. ix. [ninth] day tyll. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day, dyd southsoutheast in runnyng in the sea the sum of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leaques.

Also from. iii. [three] of the clocke the. x. [tenth] day vntyl. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the. xi. [eleventh] day,

dyd run southsouthwest the sum of. xii. [twelve] leaques, and from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke tyll. vi. [six] of the fayde day, dyd run. vi. [six] leaques.

Runnyng south and by west in the sea from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xi. [eleventh] day tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xii. [twelfth] day, dyd run. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leaques.

From. vi. [six] of the clocke at after none the. xii. [twelfth] daye tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the xiii. [thirteenth] day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. [thirteen] leaques.

Item from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiii. [thirteenth] day, tyl. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day at after none that we were becalmed that wee coude lye southwest with a fayle. And the. xv. [fifteenth] daye in the mornynge, the wynde came to the East and easte northeast. The. xvii. [seventeenth] day in the mornynge, we had fyght of the Ile of Madera which doth ryse to hym that commeth in the north northeast parte vpryght lande in the west part of it, and very hyghe: and to the south southeaste a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a fuddle through the myddeste of it, standeth in the xxxii. [thirty-two] degrees: and in the weste parte, many springes of water runnyng downe from the mountayne, and many whyte fyeldes lyke vnto corne fieldes, and sum whyte houfes to the southeast parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne sheweth very ragged if yow may se it, and in the northeast parte there is a byght or bay as though it were a harborowe. Also in the fayde part, there is a rocke a lyttle distance from the shore: and ouer the fayde byght, yow shall se a great gappe in the mountayne.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke, we had fyght of the Ile of Palmes and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The Ile of Palme ryseth rounde and lyeth southeaste and northweste, and the northwest parte is lowest. In the south, is a rounde hyll ouer the hedde lande, and an other rounde hyll aboue that in the lande.

There is betwene the southeast parte of the Ile of Madera and the northwest parte of the Ile of Palme. lvii. [fifty-seven] leaques. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. [twenty-nine] degrees. And owre course from Madera to the Ile of Palme was south and south and by west, so that we had fyght of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The southeast parte of the Ile of Palme, and the north northeast of Teneriffa, lyeth southeast and northweste. And betwene them is. xx. [twenty] leaques. Teneriffa and the greate Canarie cauled Grancanaria, and the west part of Fortifuentura standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and a halfe. Gomera is a fayre Ilande and very ragged and lyeth west southwest of Teneriffa. And who so euer wyll come betwene theym twoo Ilandes, must come south and by east, and in the south parte of Gomera, is a towne and a good rode in the fayde parte of the Ilande: and it standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and three terces. Teneriffa is a hygh lande and a greate hyghe picke lyke a fuger lose. And vpon the fayde picke is snowe throughout all the hole year. And by reason of that picke, it maye bee knowen aboue all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the. xx [twentieth] day of Nouember from. vi. [six] of the clocke in the mornynge vntyll foure of the clocke at after none.

¶ *Betwene Gomera and Capo de las Barbas.*



The. xxii. [twenty-second] day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer, the soonne goeth downe west and by south.

Vpon the coast of Barbarie. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques by north cape blanke at. iii. [three] leaques of the mayne, there is. xv. [fifteen] fadome and good shelly grounde and sande amonge, and no stremes, and two smaule Ilandes standyng in the. xxii. [twenty-two] degrees and a terce.

From Gomera to cape de las Barbas is a hundreth leaques and owr course was south and by east. The fayde cape standeth in. xxii. [twenty-two] and a halfe: and all that coast is flatte. xvi. [sixteen] or. xvii. [seventeen] fadome deepe, vii. [seven] or. viii. [eight] leaques of frome the ryuer de Oro to cape de las Barbas, there vse many Spanyardes and Portugales to trade for fysshynge duryng the mooneth of Nouember: and all that coast is verye lowe landes. Also wee went from cape de las Barbas southsouthwest and southwest and by south: tyll we brought owre selues in. xx. [twenty] degrees and a halfe, rekenyng owr selues vii. [seven] leaques of: and that was the least sholes of cape Blanke.

Then we went south vntyll we brought owre selues in. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, rekenyng owre selues. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques of. And in. xv. [fifteen] degrees, we dyde reere the crossiers: and we myght haue rered them sooner if we had loked for theym. They are not ryghte a crosse in the moonethe of Nouember by reason the nyghtes are shorte there. Neuerthelesse we had the fyght of them the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde mooneth at nyght.

The fyrst of December owte. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, we sette owre course south and by East vntyll the fourth daye of December at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the same day. Then we were in. ix. [nine] degrees and a terce, rekenyng owr selues. xxx. [thirty] leaques of the sholes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge west southweste of them: The which sholes be. xxx. [thirty] leaques longe.

The Ile of Madera.

The Ile of palmes.
Teneriffa.
The Canaries.

Frome madera to the Ile of Palmes.

Grancanaria.
Fortes Ventura.
The Iland of Gomera.

351

Teneriffa.
Snowe.

The coast of Barbarye.
Cape blanke.

The ryuer of de Oro.

The crossiers or crosse starres.

Rio Grande

The fourth of December, we beganne to fette ovr courfe fouteaste, we beinge in. vi. [fix] degrees and a halfe. The ninth day of December we set ovr courfe east fouteast.

The. xiiii. [fourteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette owre courfe east, we beinge in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe, rekenynge owre felues. xxxvi. [thirty-fix] leaques from the coast of Guinea.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette owre courfe east and by north, rekenynge owr felues. xvii. [seventeen] leaques distant from cape Mensurado, the fayde cape beinge east northeast of vs, and the ryuer of Sesto beinge east.

The. xxi. [twenty-first] day of the fayde mooneth we fel with cape Me[n]surado to the fouteast abowt two leaques of. This cape may be easely knowen, by reason the ryfyng of it is lyke a porpose hedde. Also towarde the fouteast there are three trees, wherof the eastermost tree is the hyghest, and the myddlemost is lyke a heye stacke, and the southermost lyke vnto a iebet: and vppon the mayne, are foure or fyue hygh hylles ryfyng one after an other lyke round hoommockes or hyllockes. And the fouteast of the three trees, is thre trees lyke a brandierwyfe: and all the coaste alonge is whyte sande. The fayde cape standeth within a lyttle in. vi. [fix] degrees.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] of December, we came to the ryuer of Sesto, and remayned there vntyll the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde moneth. Here we thought it best to sende before vs the pynneffe to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnyng of the market before the commynge of the Iohn.

At the ryuer of Sesto, we had a toonne of graynes. This ryuer standeth in. vi. [six] degrees lackynge a terce. From the ryuer of Sesto to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. Rio Dulce standeth in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of Sesto is easy to bee knowen by reason there is a ledge of rockes on the fouteast parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the hauen, are fyue or fyxe trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harborowe: but very narrowe at the enteraunce into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the hauen mouth right as yow enter. And all that coast betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth fouteast and by east, northwest and by weste, beinge three leaques of the shore. And yow shall haue in sum places rockes two leaques of: and that betwene the ryuer of Sesto and cape de las Palmas.

Betwene the ryuer of Sesto and the riuer Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques. And the hygh lande that is betwene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques from the ryuer of Sesto. And to the fouteastwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shawgro and an other cauled Shyawe or Shauo, where yow may get fresshe water. Of this Shyawe, lyeth a ledge of rockes: and to the Southeastwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betwene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. [nine] or. x. [ten] leaques. To the Southeastwarde of, is a harborowe cauled faynte Vincent. Ryght ouer ageynst faynt Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leaques and a halfe of the shore. To the fouteastwarde of that rocke, yow shall see an Ilande abowt three or foure leaques of. This Ilande is not paste a leaque of the shore. To the east fouteast of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth aboue the water: and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which yow shall knowe by the fayde ryuer and rocke. The northwest fyde of the hauen, is flat sande: and the fouteast fyde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plotte without any trees, and so is it not in any other place.

In the rode, yow shall ryde in. xiiii. [thirteen] or. xiiii. [fourteen] fadomes, good owes and sande, beinge the markes of the rode to bring the Ilande and the northwest lande togyther. And here wee ankered the last of December.

The thyrde day of Ianuary, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high land. But summe lowe places therof by the water fyde, looke like redde cliffes with white strakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the southermost lande in all the coast of Guinea: And standeth in foure degrees and a terce.

The coast from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes or de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke or other daungour.

xxv. [twenty-five] leaques from cape de las Palmas, the lande is higher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And abowt. x. [ten] leaques before yow comme to cape Trepoyntes, the lande ryfeth styll hygher and hygher vntyll yow come to cape Trepoyntes. Also before yowe coomme to the fayde cape after other fyue leaques to the northwest parte of it, there is certeyne broken grounde with twoo greate rockes: and within them in the byght of a bay, is a castel cauled Arra, perteyning to the kynge of Portugale. Yow shall knowe it by the fayde rockes that lye of it: For there is none such from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This coaste lyeth easte and by north, west and by south. From cape de las Palmas to the fayde castel, is foure score and. xv. [fifteen] leaques. And the coaste lyeth from the fayde castel to the Westermost poynte of the Trepoyntes, fouteast and by south, northwest and by north. Also the Westermost poyntes of the Trepoyntes, is a lowe lande lyinge halfe a myle owt in the fea: and vppon the innermoste necke to the landewarde, is a tufte of trees, and there we arruyed the. xi. [eleventh] day of Ianuary.

The. xii [twelfth] day of Ianuary, we came to a towne cauled Samma or Samua, beinge. viii. [eight] leaques

Cape Mensurado.
The riuer of Sesto.

The riuer of Sesto.
Rio Dulce.

Cape de Monte.
Cape de las Palmas.

352
The lande of
Cakeado.
Shauo.
Croke.
Saint Vincentes
harboroue.

The riuer Dulce.

Cape de las
Palmas.

The coast of
Guinea.
Cape de
tres puntas.

The castell of
Arra.

The towne of
Samma.

The ple[d]ge was
sir Iohn Yorke
his nevie.

Cape Corea.

The castel of mina
perteyninge to
the kyng of
Portugale.

Perecowe.

Perecowe grande.
Monte Rodondo.

353

The currants

Frome mina
homewarde.

Rio de los Potos.
Iverye.

Cape de las
Palmas.

Currantes.

The Ile de Flore.

The Ile of Corvo.

Where they lost
the sight of the
northe starre.
Howe the
compasse dooth
varie.

The prymrose.

from cape Trepoyntes toward east northeast. Betwene cape Trepoyntes and the towne of Samua, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the sea. Wee continued foure dayes at that towne: and the capitayne therof wolde needes haue a pledge a shore. But when they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym styll and wolde traffike no more, but shot of theyr ordinaunce at vs. They haue two or three pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

The. xvi. [sixteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we made rekenyng to come to a place cauled cape Corea where capitayne Don Iohn dwelleth, whose men interteyned vs frendly. This cape Corea is foure leaques eastwarde of the castell of Mina, otherwyse cauled *La Mina*, or *Castello de Mina*, where we arriued the. xviii. [eighteenth] day of the mooneth. Here we made sale of al ovr cloth fauyng two or three packes.

The. xxvi. [twenty-sixth] day of the fame mooneth, we weyd anker and departed from thense to the Trinitie which was. vii. [seven] leaques eastwarde of vs where she folde her wares. Then they of the Trinitie wylled vs to go eastwarde of that. viii. [eight] or. ix. [nine] leaques to fel part of their wares in a place caled Perecow, and an other named Perecowe grande, beinge the eastermost place of both these, which yow shal knowe by a great rounde hyl nere vnto it named Monte Rodondo lynge westwarde from it. And by the water syde are many hyghe palme trees. From hense dyd we set furth homewarde the. xiii. [thirteenth] day of February and plyed vppe alongest tyll we came within. vii. [seven] or. viii. [eight] leaques to cape Trepoyntes. Abowt. viii. [eight] of the clocke the. xv. [fifteenth] day at after noone, we dyd cast abowt to feawarde. And beware of the currantes, for they wyl deceaue yow fore.

Who so euer shall coomme from the coast of Mina homewarde, let hym be fuer to make his way good west vntyll he reken hym felse as farre as cape de las Palmas where the currant setteth alwayes to the eastwarde. And within. xx. [twenty] leaques eastwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled Rio de los Potos where yow may haue freshe water and balasse enowgh, and plentie of Iuery or Elephantes teethe. This ryuer standeth in foure degrees and almost two terces.

And when yow reken yowre felse as farre shotte as cape de las Palmas, beinge in a degree or a degree and a halfe, yow may go west or west and by north vntyll yowe comme in three degrees: and then yowe maye go weste northwest, and northwest and by west vntyll yow comme in fiue degrees and then northwest. And in the. vi. [six] degrees, wee mette northerly wyndes and greate roostyng of tydes. And as wee coulde iudge, the currantes went to the north northwest. Furthermore betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go great currantes which deceaue many men.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] daye of Apryll, wee were in. viii. [eight] degrees and two terces: and so we ranne to the northwest, hauyng the wynde at northeast and eastnortheast, and sumtymes at easte vntyll we were at. xviii. [eighteen] degrees and a terce, which was on May day. And so from. xviii. [eighteen] and two terces, we hadde the wynde at east and east northeast, and sumtymes at east foutheast: and then wee rekoned the Ilandes of cape Verde easte foutheast of vs, wee iudgyng owre felues to be. xlvi. [forty-eight] leaques of. And in. xx. [twenty] and. xxi. [twenty-one] degrees, wee had the wynde more easterly to the fouthwarde then before. And so we ran to the northwest and northnorthwest, and sumtymes north and by west and north vntyll wee came into. xxxi. [thirty-one] degrees, where we rekoned owre felues a hundreth and foure score leaques southwest and by fouth of the Ilande de Flore or de los Flores. And there we met with the wynde at fouthfoutheast, and fet owre course northeast.

In. xxxiii. [thirty-three] degrees, we had the wynde at the fouth and fouthwest: and then we fet our course north northeast, and so we ranne to xl. [forty] degrees: and then we fet our course northeast the wynde beinge at the southwest and hauyng the Ile de Flore east of vs, and. xvii. [seventeen] leaques of.

In. xli. [forty-one] degrees, we met with the wynd at northeast, and so we ranne northwestwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the west northwest and at the west within. vi. [six] leaques runnyng towarde the northwest: And then we cast abowt and ley northeast vntyll we came in. xlii. [forty-two] degrees, where we fette our course east northeast, iudgyng the Ile of Coruo fouth and by west of vs and. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leaques distant from vs.

A remembraunce that the. xxi. [twenty-first] day of Maye, we communed with Iohn Rafe, and he thought it best to go northeaste, and iudged hym felse. xxv. [twenty-five] leaques eastwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in. xxxix. [thirty-nine] degrees and a halfe.

Note that in the fourth day of September [December?] vnder nine degrees, we lost the fyght of the north starre.

Note also, that in the. xlv. [forty-five] degrees the compasse is varied. viii. [eight] degrees to the west.

Item, in. xl. [forty] degrees, the compasse dyd vary. xv. [fifteen] degrees in the hole.

Item, in xxx. [thirty] degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varied. v. [fiue] degrees to the west.

Be it also in memorie, that two or three dayes before we came to cape Trepoyntes, the pynneffe went alongest the shore thinkyng to sell sum of our wares. And so we came to anker three or foure leaques west and by fouth of the cape Trepoyntes where we lefte the Trinitie.

Then owre pynneffe came a boorde with all our men. The pynneffe also tooke in more wares. They toulde me more ouer that they wolde go to a place where the Primrose was and had receaued much golde at

the fyrste vyage to these parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantine that was then vppon the coast, dydde wey and folowe theym, and lefte the Trinitie abowte foure leaques of from vs. And there we rode ageynste that towne foure dayes : so that Martine by his owne desyre and assente of sum of the commissiouners that were in the pinnesse, wente a shore to the towne. And there Iohn Beryn went to trafike from vs beinge three myles of trafekynge at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyrste townes where wee did trafficke for gold, to the northeast of cape Trepoynts :

Hetherto continueth the course of the vyage as it was described by the fayde pilot. Nowe therefore to speake sumwhat of the contrey and people, and of suche thynges as are brought from thense.

They brought from thense at the last vyage, foure hundreth pounce weyght and odde of golde of. xxii. [twenty-two] carrattes and one grayne in finenesse. Also. xxxvi. [thirty-six] buttes of graynes : and abowt two hundreth and fiftie elephantes teethe of all quantities. Of these, I sawe and measured sum of. ix. [nine] spannes in length as they were croked. Sum of them were as bygge as a mans thygh aboute the knee : and weyed abowte foure score and ten pounce weyght a piece. They say that sum one hath byn seene of a hundreth and. xxv. [twenty-five] pounce weyght. Other there were which they caule the teethe of calues of one or two or three yeares, wherof sum were a foote and a halfe, summe two foote, and sum three or more accordynge to th[e]age of the beaste. These great teethe or tuskes, growe in the vpper iaw downewarde, and not in the nether iawe vppwarde, wherein the paynters and arras woorkers are deceaued. At this laste vyage was brought from Guinea the headde of an elephante of such huge byggenesse, that only the bones or crauwe therof beyde the nether iawe and greate tuskes, wayed abowte two hundreth weyght, and was as muche as I coulde well lyfte from the grounde. In so muche that confiderynge also herewith the weyght of. ii. [two] such great teethe, the nether iawes with the lesse teethe, the tounge, the greate hangynge eares, the bygge and longe snowte or tronke, with all the flesshe, braynes, and skynne, with all other partes belongynge to the hole headde, in my iudgemente it coulde wey lyttle lesse then fyue hundreth weyght. This headde dyuers haue sene in the house of the woorthy marchant fyr Andrewe Iudde, where also I sawe it, and behelde it not onely with my bodely eyes, but much more with the eyes of my mynde and spirite consydered by the woork, the cunnyng and wysedome of the woorker master : without which consyderation, the syght of such straunge and woonderfull thynges may rather seeme curiosities then profitable contemplations.

The elephante (which sum caule an oliphant) is the biggest of all foure footed beastes. His forelegges are longer then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyue toes on his fiete vndiuided. His snowte or tronke is so longe and in such forme that it is to hym in the sleede of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by bryngynge his tronke to his mouth. Therwith he helpeth vp his master or keeper : therwith he ouerthroweth trees. Byfyde his two greate tuskes, he hath on euery syde of his mouth foure teethe wherwith he eateth and gryndeth his meate. Eyther of these teethe, are almost a span in length as they growe alonge in the iawe : and are abowte two inches in height and almost as much in thicenesse. The tuskes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lyttle, and so farre in his mouth that it can not bee seene. Of all beastes they are moste gentyll and tractable. For by many fundry ways they are taught and do vnderstand : In so much that they learne to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke fence and sharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once seasoned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephante lyueth two hundreth yeares, or at the leaste one hundreth and twentie. The female almost as longe : but the floure of theyr age, is but. lx. [sixty] yeares as sum wryte. They can not suffer wynter or coulde. They loue ryuers and wyll often go into them vp to the snowte wherwith they blowe and snuffe, and play in the water : but swymme they canne not for the weyght of theyr bodies. Plinie and Soline wryte that they vse none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a manne in wyldernesse beinge owt of the way, gentyly they wyl go before hym and brynge hym into the playne waye. Ioyned in battayle, they haue no smaule respecte vnto them that be wounded. For they brynge them that are hurt or wery into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by drynkynge the iuse of barley. They haue continuail warre ageynst dragons which desyre theyr bludde bycause it is verye coulde. And therefore the dragon lyinge awayte as the Elephante passeth by, wyndeth his tayle (beinge of excedynge length) abowt the hynder legges of the elephant : and so steyng hym, thrusteth his heade into his tronke and exhausteth his breth, or els byteth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his tronke. And when the elephant waxeth faynt, he fauleth downe on the serpente beinge nowe full of bludde : and with the poysse of his body breaketh hym : so that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephant, runneth owt of hym menged togyther : whiche beinge coulde, is congeled into that substaunce which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, other-

The towne of Samma.
354
Golde.

Golde foure hundreth weyght
Graynes.
Iuery.
Elephantes teethe.

The head of an Elephant.

The contemplations of gods workes

The description and properties of the Elephante.

Debate betwene the Elephant and the dragon.

355

Sanguis Draconis.

Cinnabaris.

wyfe cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermilion which the paynters vse in certeyne coloures.

Thre kyndes of elephantes.

They are also of three kyndes, as of the marysshes, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no lesse differynge in condicions. Philostratus wryteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggenesse passeth the horse of Nyfea, so much doth the elephantes of India excede them of Lybia. For of the elephantes of India, sum haue byn seene of the heyght of. ix. [nine] cubites. The other do so greatly feare these that they dare not abyde the fyght of them. Of the Indian elephantes, only the males haue tuskes. But of them of Ethiopia and Lybia, both kyndes are tusked. They are of dyuers heyghtes, as of. xii. [twelue] xiii. [thirteen] and. xiiii. [fourteen] dodrantes, euery dodrant beinge a measure of. ix. [nine] ynches. Sum wryte that an elephant is bygger then three wylde oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the colour of a moufe. But they of Ethiopie or Guinea, are browne. The hyde or skynne of them all, is very harde and withowte heare or brytels. Their eares are two dodrantes brode, and their eyes very lyttle. Owr men sawe one drynkyng at a ryuer in Guinea as they fayled into the lande.

Workes of Iuery.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vse in the warres, of theyr generation and chastitie, when they were fyrste seene in the theatres and tryumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they cast theyr tuskes, with th[e]use of the same in medicine, who so desyreth to know, let hym rede Plinie in the. viii. [eighth] booke of his natural hystorie. He also wryteth in his. xii. [twelfth] booke, that in owlde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephantes' teeth: as tables, treffels, postes of houses, rayles, latteffes for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddes, and dyuers other thynges of Iuery both coloured and vncoloured and intermyxte with fundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and virginalles.

They had such plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Iosephus wryteth that one of the gates of Hierusalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whytenesse thereof was so muche esteemed that it was thought to represent the naturall fayrenesse of mans skynne: In so much that such as went about to set furth (or rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntynges, were reprobued by this prouerbe: *Ebur atramento candefacere*. That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poettes also describyng the fayre neckes of bewtiful virgins, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes.

The people of Africa.

And to haue sayde thus much of elephantes and Iuery, it may suffice.

Nowe therefore to speke sumwhat of the people and their maners and maner of lyuynge, with also an other brieue description of Africa.

Libia Interior.

It is to vnderstande that the people whiche nowe inhabite the regions of the coast of Guinea and the mydde partes of Affrica, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions about the same, were in oulde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moores, Moorens, or Negros, a people of beastly lyuynge, without a god, lawe, religion, or common welth, and so scorched and vexed with the heate of the soonne, that in many places they curse it when it ryseth. Of the regions and people about the inner Libia (cauled *Libia Interior*) Gemma Phrysius wryteth thus.

Getulia.

Lybia Interior, is very large and desolate, in the whiche are many horrible wyldernesfes and mountaynes replenished with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monstrous beastes and serpentes. Fyrst from Mauritania or Barberie toward the south is Getulia, a rowgh and saluage region whose inhabitantes are wylde and wanderynge people. After these folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and Pharusii whiche wander in the wyldernesse caryng with them greate gourdes of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aphrica, and are extended to the West Ocean. Southwarde also they reache to the ryuer Nigritis whose nature agreeth with the ryuer of Nilus forasmuch as it is increased and dimynished at the same tyme, and bryngeth furth the like beastes as the Crocodile. By reason wherof, I thinke this to be the same ryuer which the Portugales caule Senega. For this ryuer is also of the same nature. It is furthermore maruelous and very strange that is sayde of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one syde therof, th[e]inhabitauntes are of hyghe stature and blacke: and on the other side of browne or tawny colour and lowe stature, which thynges also owre men confirme to be trewe.

Ethiopes.
Nigrite.
The ryuer Nigritis
or Senega.

356

A strange thynges.

Garamantes.
People of Lybia.

There are also other people of Lybia cauled Garamantes, whose women are common. For they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue respect to chastitie. After these are the nations of the people cauled Pyrei, Sathiodaphnite, Odrangi, Mimaces, Lynxamate, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Xilicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Nubi. These haue the same situation in Ptolomie that they nowe giue to the kyngdome of Nubia. Here are certeyne Christians vnder the dominion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiopie cauled Prester Iohn. From these toward the west, is a great nation of people cauled Aphricerones: whose region (as farre as maye bee gathered by coniecture) is the same that is nowe cauled Regnum Orguene, confynge vpon the east partes of Guinea. From hense westwarde and sumwhat toward the north, are the kyngdomes of Gambra and Budomel not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from hense toward the inlande regions and alonge by the sea coast,

Prester Iohn.

Regnum Orguene.
Gambra.

are the regions of Ginoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Gynne. On the west side of these regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poynt cauled *Cabouerde* or *Caput viride* (that is) the greene cape, to the whiche the Portugales fyrst directe theyr course when they fayle to America or the lande of Brasile. Then departynge frome henfe, they turne to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the west and the fouth. But to speake sumwhat more of Ethiopia. Althowgh there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefly diuyded into two partes: wherof the one is cauled Ethiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this perteyneth the Ilande of Meroe, imbrased rounde abowte with the stremes of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reyned in oulde tyme. Iosephus wryteth that it was sumtyme cauled Sabea: and that the queene of Saba came from thense to Hierusalem to heare the wysedome of Salomon. From henfe towarde the East, reigneth the fayde Chrstian Emperoure Prester Iohn whom sum caule Papa Iohannes, and other say that he is cauled Pean Iuan (that is) greate Iohn, whose empyre reacheth farre beyonde Nilus, and is extended to the coastes of the redde sea and Indian sea. The myddle of the region is almost in the. 66. degrees of longitude, and. xii. [twelue] degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people cauled Clodii, Risophagi, Babilonii, Axiunite, Mofyli, and Molybe. After these is the region cauled Trogloditica, whose inhabitauntes dwell in caues and dennes. For these are theyr houses, and the flesshe of serpentes theyr meate, as wryteth Plinie and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no speache, but rather a grynnyng and chatterynge. There are also people without heades cauled Blemines, hauynge theyr eyes and mouth in theyr breste. Lykewyse Strucophagi and naked Ganphafantes. Satyrs also which haue nothyng of men but only shape. More ouer Oripei great hunters. Menones also, and the region of Smyrnophora which bryngeth furth myrre. After these is the region of Azania in the whiche manye elephantes are founde. A great parte of the other regions of Afrike that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, are nowe ascrybed to the kingedome of Melinde, whose inhabitauntes are accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr kynge is ioyned in frendship with the kyng of Portugale, and payeth tribute to Prester Iohn.

The other Ethiopie cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner Ethiopie, is not yet knowen for the greatnesse therof but only by the sea coastes. Yet is it described in this maner. Fyrste from the Equinoctiall towarde the fouth, is a greate region of Ethiopians which bryngeth furth whyte elephantes, tygers, and the beastes cauled Rhinocerontes. Also a region that bryngeth furth plentie of Cinamome, lyinge betwene the branches of Nilus. Also the kingdome of Habech or Habassia, a region of Christien men, lying both on this syde and beyonde Nilus. Here are also the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi (that is) such as lyue only by fische: and were sumtime subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the Ethiopians cauled Rhapsii, and Anthropophagi that are accustomed to eate mans flesshe, inhabite the regions nere vnto the mountaynes cauled *Montes Lunæ*, (that is) the mountaynes of the moone. Gazatia, is vnder the tropike of Capricorne. After this, foloweth the fronte of affrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bonæ Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, by the which they passe that fayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulfes are cauled, forasmuche as the same are in euery globe and carde, it were here superfluous to rehearse them.

Sum wryte that Aphrica was so named by the Grecians bycause it is without coule. For the Greeke letter Alpha or, A, signifyeth pryuation, voyde, or without: and phrice, signifieth coule. For in deede althowgh in the steede of wynter they haue a cloudye and tempestious season, yet is it not coule, but rather smoothing hot with also hot shoures of raine and sumwhere fuche scorchyng wyndes, that what by one meanes and other they seeme at certeyne tymes to liue as it were in fornaces, and in maner alreedy halfe way in Purgatorie or hel. Gemma Phrius writeth that in certeyne partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the night season is seene shyninge with many straunge fyers and flames ryfinge in maner as high as the moone: And that in the element are sumtime harde as it were the sounde of pipes, trumpettes, and droommes. Whiche noyses may perhappes be caused by the vehemente and fundry motions of such fyery exhalations in the ayer, as we se the lyke in many experiences wrought by fyre, ayer, and wynd. The holownesse also and diuers reflexions and breaking of the cloudes may be greate causes hereof, bysyde the vehement cold of the myddle region of the ayer wherby the sayd fyery exhalations ascending thether are suddenly stryken backe with greate force. For euen common and dayly experience teacheth vs by the whyssinge of a burninge forge what noyse fyre maketh in the ayer, and much more where it striueth when it is inclosed with ayer as apereth in gonns, and as the lyke is sene in only ayer inclosed, as in orgen pipes and such other instrumentes that go by winde. For wynde as say the philosophers is none other then ayer vehemently moued, as we see in a payer of belowes and fuche othei.

Sum of owre men of good credit that were in this last vyage to Guinea, affirme earnestly that in the nyght season they felt a sensible heate to coomme from the beames of the moone. The which thyng althowghe it be straunge and insensible to vs that inhabite coule regions, yet doothe it stande with good reason that it may so be, forasmuch as the nature of the starres and planets (as wryteth Plinie) consysteth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a spirite of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Dauyd seemeth to confirme in his. Cxx.

Guinea or Ginoia.
 Cap. Verde.
 The Portugales nauigations to Brasile.
 Ethiopia.
 The Ilande of Meroe.
 The queene of Saba.
 Prester Iohn emperour of Ethiopia.
 People of the east syde of Africa.
 Ophiophagi.
 People without heades.
 Myrre.
 Azania.
 Regnum Melinde.
 Ethiopia Interior
 Whyte elephantes
 Habassia.
 Ichthiophagi.
 Anthropophagi.
 Montes Luna.
 Gazatia.
 357
Cap. Bonæ Spei.
 Aphrica without coule.
 The winter of Africa.
 Flames of fire and noyse in the ayer.
 The myddell region of the ayer is coule.
 The strife of elementes.
 Wynde.
 The heate of the moone.
 The nature of the stars.

[120th] Pfalme, where speakyng of such men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he sayth thus : *Per diem sol non exuret te, nec luna per noctem.* That is to say. In the day the foonne shall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

Spoutes of water
fauling out of
the ayer.

Cataracts of
heauen.

Vehement motio^{is}
of the sea.

A straunge
thyng.

The poure of
nature.

358

They say furthermore that in certeyne places of the sea, they sawe certeyne stremes of water which they caule spoutes faulyng owt of the ayer into the sea : And that sum of these are as bygge as the greate pyllers of churches : In so muche that sumtymes they faule into shyppes and put them in greate daungiour of drownynge. Sum phantafie that these shulde bee the cat[ractes] of heauen whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be suche fluxions and eruptions as Aristotle in his boke de Mundo, faith to chaunse in the sea. For speakyng of suche thynges as are seene often tymes in the sea, he wryteth thus : Often tymes also euen in the sea are seene euaporations of fyre, and suche eruptions and breakyng furth of sprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, whyrlepooles, and fluxions are caused of such other vehement motions not only in the middest of the sea, but also in creekes and streyghtes. At certeyne tymes also, a great quantitie of water is suddeynly lyfted vp and caryed abowt with the moone. etc. By which woordes of Arystotle it dooth appere that such waters maye bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and suddeynly faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes perteyneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler toulde me that he harde Sebastian Cabot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther abowt the coastes of Brafille or Rio de Plata, his shyppes or pinnes was suddeynly lyfted from the sea and cast vpon the lande I wotte not howe farre. The which thyng and suche other lyke woonderfull and straunge woorkes of nature whyle I confyder and caule to remembraunce the narownes of mans vnderstandynge and knowleage in comparyson of her mighty poure, I can but ceafe to maruayle and confesse with Plinie that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaste parte of whose poure is not yet knowen to men.

Many thynges more owre men sawe and confydered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put sum in memory that the reader maye aswell take pleasure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hyforye.

They raise their
skynnes.

Fine iewells.

A braslet.

Shackelles.

Ringes.

Dogs chains of
golde.

A muske cat.

Their houses

Their feding

Fleing fishes

A straunge thyng

Amonge other thynges therefore touchyng the maners and nature of the people, this may seeme straunge that theyr princes and noble men vse to pounse and raise theyr skynnes with prety knottes in diuers formes as it were branched damaske, thynkyng that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and especially their women in maner laden with collars, braslettes, hoopess, and chaynes eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my selfe haue one of theyr brasettes of Iuery wayinge twoo pounde and vi. [six] ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] ounces. This, one of theyr women dyd weare vpon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggest parte of the toothe turned and sumwhat carued, with a hole in the myddest wherin they put theyr handes to weare it on theyr arme. Sum haue of euery arme one and as many on theyr legges, wherewith sum of theym are so galded that althoughe they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyll they by no meanes leaue them of. Sum weare also on theyr legges great shackels of bryght copper which they thynke to bee no lesse cumly. They weare also collars, braslets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blewe stoness lyke beades. Lykewyse sum of theyr women weare on theyr bare armes certeyne foresleeues made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyr fyngers also they weare rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wrethe lyke vnto that whiche chyldeyn make in a ryng of a ruffhe. Amonge other thinges of golde that our men bowght of them for exchange of theyr wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in theyr bargenyng, and wyl not lose one sparke of golde of any value. They vse weyghtes and measures, and are very circumspecte in occupyng the same. They that shall haue to do with them must vse them gentelly for they wyl not trafike or bryng in any wares if they be euyl vfed. At the fyrst viage that our men had into these parties, it so chaunsed that at theyr departure from the fyrste place where they dyd trafike, one of them eyther stole a muske catte or tooke her a way by force, not mystrustyng that that shulde haue hyndered theyr bargenyng in an other place whyther they intended to go. But for al the hast they could make with full sayles, the fame of theyr mysusage so preuented them that the people of that place also offended therby, wold bring in no wares : In so muche that they were inforced eyther to restore the catte or pay for her at theyr price before they could trafike there.

Theyr houses are made of foure postes or trees, and couered with bouwes.

Theyr common feedynge is of rootes and such fysshes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There are also such flyng fysshes as are seene in the sea of the Weste Indies. Owre men salted of theyr fysshes hopynge to prouyde store therof. But they wolde take no salte : And muste therefore be eaten furthwith as sum say. Howe be it, other affirme that if they be salted immediatly after they be taken, they wyl last vncorrupted. x. [ten] or. xii. [twelue] dayes. But this is more straunge, that parte of such flesshe as they caryed with them owte of Englande and putrified there, became sweete ageyne at theyr returne to the clime of temperate regions.

They vse also a straunge makyng of breade in this maner. They grynde betwene two stones with theyr handes as much corne as they thynke maye suffice theyr famelic. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitie of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they stycke vpon fum post of theyr houfes, where it is baked by the heate of the sonne: So that when the master of the house or any of his famely wyll eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it.

They haue very fayre wheate, the ere whereof is twoo handfulles in length and as bygge as a great bulruffhe, and almost foure ynches abowt where it is byggest. The steme or strawe, semeth to be almost as bygge as the lyttle fynger of a mans hande, or lyttle lesse. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as owr peason: rounde also, and verye whyte and sumwhat shynynge lyke perles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substauce of theym turneth into floure, and maketh lyttle branne or none. I toulde in one ere twoo hundreth and three score graynes. The ere is inclosed in thre blades longer then it felse, and of two ynches brode a piece. And by this frutefulnessse the sonne seemeth partly to recompence such greefes and molestations as they otherwyse receaue by the feruent heate thereof. It is doubtlesse a woorthy contemplation to consider the contrary effectes of the sonne: or rather the contrary passions of suche thynges as receaue th[e] influence of his beames eyther to theyr hurte or benefite.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the iuse that droppeth from the cut braunches of the barren date trees cauled Palmites. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the fayde branches euery euenynge and let them so hange all nyght, or els they fet them on the ground vnder the trees that the droppes may faule therin. They say that this kynde of drynke is in tast much lyke vnto whey, but sumwhat sweeter and more pleasaunt. They cutte the branches euery euenynge bycause they are fered vp in the day by the heate of the sonne. They haue also great beanes as bygge as chestenuttes, and verye harde with a shell in the stede of a huske.

Many thynges more myght be sayd of the maners of the people and of the woonders and monstrosus thynges that are engendered in Afrike. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of such thynges as owre men partely sawe and partely browght with them.

And wheras before speakyng of the frute of graynes, I descrybed the fame to haue holes by the fyde (as in deede it is as it is browght hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that those holes were made to put strynges or twygges throughe the frute therby to hange them vp to drye at the sonne. They growe not paste a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes them selues, are cauled of the physicians, Grana Paradyfi.

At theyr comminge home, the keles of theyr shyppes were maruelously ouergrown with certen shels of. ii. [two] ynches length and more as thicke as they coulde stande, and of such byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of them. They certeynly affirme that in these there groweth a certeyne flymy substauce which at the length flypping owt of the shel and fauling in the sea, becometh those foules which we cal barnacles. The lyke shelles haue byn seene in shyppes returning from Ilande. But these shelles were not past halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guinea, I sawe the Prymrose lyinge in the docke, and in maner couered with the fayd shelles, which in my iudgemente shulde greatly hynder her faylyng. Theyr shyppes were also in many places eaten with the woormes cauled Bromas or Biffas whereof mention is made in the Decades. These creepe betwene the planks whiche they eate through in many places.

Amonge other thynges that chaunced to them in this vyage, this is woorthy to be noted, that whereas they fayled thether in feuen weekes, they coulde returne in no lesse space then. xx. [twenty] weekes. The cause wherof they say to be this: That abowt the coast of Cabo Verde, the wynde is euer at the East by reason whereof they were inforced to fayle farre owte of theyr course into the mayne Ocean to fynde the wynde at the west to brynge them home. There dyed of owre men at this last vyage abowt. xxiiii. [twenty-four] whereof many dyed at theyr returne into the clime of the coulde regions, as betwene the Ilandes of Soria and Englande. They browght with them certeyne blacke slaues, wherof sum were taule and stronge men, and coulde well agree with owr meates and drynkes. The coulde and moyst ayer dooth sumwhat offende them. Yet doubtlesse men that are borne in hotte regions may better abyde coulde, then men that are borne in coulde regions may abyde heate, forasmuch as vehement heate resolueth the radicall moisture of mens bodies, as could constreyneth and preferueth the same.

This is also to bee considered as a secreate worke of nature, that throughout all Afryke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare abowt the same on bothe sydes, the regions are extreme hotte and the people very blacke. Whereas contraryly such regions of the West Indies as are vnder the same line, are very temperate and the people neyther blacke nor with curlde and short woolle on theyr heades as haue they of Afryke, but of the

Their bread.

Their wheate.

359

The soonne.

Their drinke.

Graynes.

Shelles that cleaue to shyppes.

Barnacles.

Bromas.

A secreate.

The death of owr men.

Could may be better abiden then heate.

The West Indies.

coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades : the cause of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

360 It is also woorthy to bee noted that summe of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is, that they ouertooke the course of the foonne, so that they had it north from them at noone the. xiiii. [fourteenth] day of Marche.

And to haue sayde thus much of these vyages it may suffice. For (as I haue fayd before) Wheras the parteners at whose charges this booke is prynted, wolde longe fence haue me proceeded no further, I had not thought to haue wrytten any thyng of these vyages but that the liberalitie of master Toy encoraged me to attempt the same. Whiche I speake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wólde be to chargeable.

THE MANER OF FYNDYNGE THE LONGITVDE OF
REGIONS BY DYVERS WAYES AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF
GEMMA PHRYSIUS.



Perceauynge what contention is and longe hath byn not only amonge the pylottes that by trauaylynge the sea haue obserued the starres, but also amonge sum men that are skylfull in mathematicall sciense, wherof many affirme that the longitude (that is to meane, the course from the East to the Weste) can not be perfectly knowen, I haue thowght good for the better satiffying of such as desire to haue sum knowlege hereof, to interprete such demonstrations as I haue redde of the declarynge of the same in Gemma Phrysius, who as touchynge this matter hath added th[e]inuentions of other, a more certeyne way of his own diuise wherby (as he sayth) he can fynde the longitude of regions although he were dryuen owt of the way a thousande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye vnknown and of vnknowne distance. He wryteth therefore as foloweth.

When yow haue founde the place of the mone, yow ought to confyder the houre when she occupied that place. Then eyther by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonfus yowe owght to knowe in what houre the moone entereth into the same signe of the Zodiacke in an other region or towne whose longitude is well knowen. Then reducyng the houres to. xxiiii. [twenty-four] the lesse number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres and mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xv. [fifteen] and diuide the minutes of the houres by foure: so shall appere the degrees of the Equinoctiall conteyned betwene two meridians. And if after this diuision there remayne any minutes, multiplie them also by. xv. [fifteen] and therby shalbe knowen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knowen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take away from the same longitude if they be lesse: So shall yowe in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknown from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the same is more easely and redely found geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whose longitude is knowen in the globe. Then directe the poynte or stile that moueth about the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupyeth the place assigned in that region. Then turne the globe vntyll the stile that sheweth the houre, be comme to the houre in the whiche yowe sowght the vnknown place of the moone. And so shall the degrees of the Equinoctiall distaunte or diuyded from the moueable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which yow seeke. Neuerthelesse, the more certeyne way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by sum one thyng that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclipfes of the moone. For the dyuers houres beinge knowen in the whiche the sayd eclipfes chaunce in dyuers regions, the longitude maye thus aswell be knowen by geometrie and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But forasmuch as this doth neyther appere at al tymes nor to all men, and the other way is sumwhat difficult, neyther at al tymes redy by reason of the coniunctions of the mone and furthermore also sumtymes vncerteyne and varying sumwhat from the truth for the dyuers

By the mone.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Howe to fynd
the longitude by
the globe

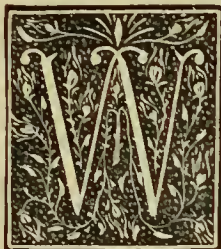
The Eclipfes of
the moone.

aspectes and latitudes of the mone, it fo chaunceth hereby that wee haue eyther no longitudes or the fame very vncerteyne of many regions, and especially of those which the Spanyardes haue of late discouered. For no certentie doubtlesse can be knowen by fuch commensurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of fuch vyages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the first booke of his Cofmographie. I wyll therefore adde herevnto sum thyng of myne owne inuention whereby by an eafy way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may bee founde in all vyages and nauigations.

361

¶ *A newe maner of fyndyng the Longitudes of regions.*

Little clockes



¶ See that in these owre dayes certeyne lyttle clockes are very artificially made the whiche for theyr smaule quantitie are not comberous to be caryed about in all vyages. These often tymes moue continually for the space. of. xxiiii [twenty-four] houres: and may with helpe continewe theyr mouyng in maner perpetually. By the helpe therefore of these the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Before wee enter into any vyage, wee muste fyrste foresee that the fayde clocke exactly obserue the houres of the place from whense we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer cease. Accomplyffhyng therefore. xv. [fifteen] or. xx. [twenty] myles of the vyage, if wee desyre to knowe howe much in longitude we are dystant from the place of owre departure, we must tary vntyll the poynt or stile of the clocke do exactly come to the poynt of sum houre: and at the same moment by our Astrolabie or globe, owght wee to seeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which yf it agree in minute with the houres which the Horoscopium or ascendent dooth shewe, then is it certeyne that wee are yet vnder the same Meridian or the same Longitude: and that owre course hath byn towarde the south or north. But if it dyffer one hour or any mynute, then are the same to bee reduced to degrees or minutes as we haue tought in the chapiture here before. And so shall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can I fynde the longitude of regions althowgh I were a thousand myles owt of my attempted course and in an vnknownen distance, but the latitude must fyrste bee perfectly knowen.

By the Astrolabie
and globe.
Horoscopus or
the Ascendent.

The latitude.

F I N I S.

¶ *A bryefe rehersal of the contentes of the bookes of the fyrst Decade, and so folowyng of all the other Decades. Folio. i. [p. 65.]*



IN the fyrst booke is declared howe Christophorus Colonus otherwyfe cauled Columbus, persuaded Fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of Spayne, to foorthier his attempte in searching newe and vnknown landes in the West Ocean. Also of the. vii. Ilandes of Canarie, by whom they were founde and conquered.

Howe Colonus founde the Ilandes of Hispaniola, and Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales or Caribes, which are accustomed to eate mans flesshe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maizium, wherof the people of the Ilandes make theyr breade.

Of the golde found in the sandes of ryuers, and of the serpentes which are without hurte. Also of turtle doues, duckes, and popyngiayes.

Of Mastix, and Aloe, with dyuers frutes and trees vnknownen to vs: and of the frutesfulnes of the Iland of Hispaniola which the Spanyardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the seconde vyage of Colonus into these regions, and howe he was furnysshed with. xvii. shyppes and a thousande and two hundredth souldyers, with all kynde of artiliarye, artificers, and grayne to sowe. And of the tree frome the which water droppeth continually into a trenche made by mans hande.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 4 [p. 68.]*

¶ Howe Colonus departyng from the Ilandes of Canarie, sayled. viii. hundredth and. xx. leaques in. xxi. dayes, and came to Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant fauour of spices which proceded from the Ilandes.

Of the Ilandes of Galanta or Galana and Guadalupea, and of the trees which beare that kynde of cotton whiche the Italians caule Bombasine, and the Spanyardes Algodon.

Of dyuers kyndes of poppingiayes: And of the Iland of Matinino or Madinino, being inhabited only with women: Also of dyuers other frutesfull Ilandes: And of a conflicte which the Spanyardes had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are feene the mynes of metals and precious stones: and of the frutesfull and peopulous Ilande cauled Buri-chena or Boriquen. or *Insula S. Iohannis*.

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrst vyage he lefte in Hispaniola, were slayne in his absence by the rebellion of Guaccanarillus, kynge of the Region of Xamana: and of the free kynde of lyfe which they leade that haue not the vse of money.

Of the. vii. maydens which swamme. iii. myles in the sea: And of the maner of gatheryng of gold in the sands of ryuers.

¶ *The Contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 10. [p. 73.]*

¶ A particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, whiche Colonus thynketh to be Ophir, from whence kynge Salomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the maruelous frutesfulnes of Hispaniola, and of the sugar canes growyng there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibaua, and of the ryuers in whose sandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of exceedyng great quantitie.

Of wyld vines of pleafaunt taste, and of grasse which in foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of the East and the West: And of the frutesfull and peopulous Ilande of Iamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had sayled abowte the lowest hemispherie or halfe circle of the earth, and of a secrete of Astronomie touchyng the same matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundredth Ilandes, and passed by three thousande vnnamed.

Of certeyne serpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote longe, whose flesshe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whose water is very hotte: and of the huntynge fysshes which taketh other fysshes.

Of great abundaunce of Tortoyfes as bygge as targets, and of a frutesfull mountayne well inhabited.

Of dogges of deformed shape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water.

Of wooddes of date trees and pynepaple trees, and of certeyne people appareled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare spices, and of cranes of exceedyng bignes.

Of stocke doues of more pleafaunte taste then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous gouernoure as touchyng the immortalitie of the fowle: Also of the rewarde of vertue and punysshmente of vice.

A similitude of the golden worlde, and of prouision withowte care.

Howe the admirall fell sicke by reason of to much watchyng: And of a fedition which rose among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hispaniola.

¶ *The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 18. [p. 79.]*

Howe the Kynges of the Ilande of Hispaniola, were by the Spaniardes mysbehauoure prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall sent for them.

Howe kinge Caunaboa the Lorde of the house of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, conspired the Admirals death, and how he with his familie were taken prifoners.

Of a greate famine that chaunced in the Iland of Hispaniola: and howe the Admirall builded certeyne fortresses.

Of a piece of rude golde waighyng. xx. vnces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde greate plentye of Amber and orpemente: And of the wooddes of brasile trees.

Howe th[e] inhabitants are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region disposethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Caunaboa came ageynste the Admirall with an army of fye thousand naked men: and how he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the frutesfull vale Magona, in the sandes of whose ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certeyne whirlwyndes and tempestes.

Howe the Admirall sente foorth his brother Bartholoneus Colonus with an army of men to search the gold mines and of the fosses which he found to haue bin digged in old tyme

¶ *The Contentes of the v. booke.* Fol. 22. [*p.* 82.]

Howe the Lieuetenaunt builded a fortresse in the golde mynes: And prepared instrumentes for the pouring and fyninge of the golde.

Howe certeyne shyppes laden with vyttayles, came frome Spayne: And howe the Lieuetenaunt sent the kynges which rebelled, with three hundred captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Liefetenaunte remoued his habytacion: And buylded a fortresse which he cauled faynt Dominickes towre Also howe he passed ouer the ryuer Naiba, and entered into the wooddes of brasyle trees.

Howe the great kyng Beuchius Anacaucha, frendely enterteined the Lieuetenaunt, and browght hym to his pallyce, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaued him honorably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the fortresses which were erected in Hispaniola: And howe the Lieuetenaunt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche rebelled ageyne.

Howe the Lieuetenaunt sette vppon the kynges vnwares in the nyght feason, and tooke. xiiii. of them prysoners.

Howe kyng Guarionexius, capitayne of the conspiracie was pardoned, and howe he perswaded the people to obedience.

Howe kyng Beuchius Anacaucha, sente messengers to the Lieuetenaunt to repayre to his pallyce where he founde xxxii. kynges redy with theyr tributes: And howe the queene Anacaona entyfed hym to eate of the serpentes fleshe.

Howe the serpentes fleshe is prepared to be eaten: And how delicate meate theyr egges are yf they be fodden.

Howe queene Anacaona, fyfter to kyng Beuchius Anacaucha, enterteined the Liefetenaunt, and gaue hym muche housholde stuffe and many vessels of Hebene woodde artificially wrought and carued.

Howe kyng Anacaucha and the queene his fyfter went aboorde the Liefetenaunt his shyppes, and howe greatly they were amased to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Roldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the Lieuetenautes absence: by whose myfdeamour also kyng Guarionexius was prouoked to a newe conspiracie, and with hym Maiobanexius the kyng of the mountaynes.

¶ *The contentes of the syxte booke.* Foli. 28. [*p.* 87.]

¶ The thyrde vyage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from his accustomed rafe by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande of Madera for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rowers.

Of the. xiiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Hesperides, and are nowe cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or Cabouerde. Also of the Tortoyfes of the Ilande of Bonauista, wherewith the leaper is healed.

Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme heate nere the Equinoctial where the north pole was eleuate onely fyue degrees: And how failyng from thence westward, he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea ryfyng as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admyrall faylyng westwarde, and neuer passyng owte of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a temperate Region and people of goodly corporature: And what difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita: and of the swift course or faule of the Ocean from the East to the weste.

Of the gulfes cauled Os Draconis: And of the conflicte betwene the freshe water and the salte.

Of a fea of freshe water: And a mountayne inhabited onely with monkeys and marmafettes.

Of the fayre, riche, and large region of Paria: And howe frendly th[e]inhabitantes entreated the Admyrall and his men. Also of pleasaunte wyne made of dyuerse fruites: And of greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

Of the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, and Curiana, beyng regions of the large prouynce of Paria: And of the fea of herbes or weedes.

A certeyn fecreate as touchyng the pole starre and the eleuation of the same: Also of the roundnesse of the earth.

Of the mountaynes of Paria in the toppes wherof Colonus earnestly affirmeth the earthly Paradise to be situate: And whether Paria be part of the firme land or continent of India.

¶ *The contentes of the vii. booke.* Fol. 33. [*p.* 90.]

¶ Howe Roldanus Xeminus with his confetherates, accused the Admirall to the kyng: And howe he poured hym felse and accused them

Howe kyng Guarionexius rebelled ageyne: And with him kyng Maiobanexius: Also howe they with other kynges came ageynst the Lieuetenaunte with an armye of. viii. thousande naked and paynted Ciguauians. Also twoo rare exemples of frendshyppe and faythfulnes in barbarous princes.

Howe Colonus the Admirall and the Lieuetenaunte hys brother, were sent bounde into Spayne: And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the viii. booke. Fol. 37. [*p.* 94.]

¶ The nauigation of *Petrus Alphonsus* frome Spayne to Paria, where in the region of Curiana, he had in shorte space. xv. vnces of pearles and greate plenty of vytailes for haukes bellees, pynnes, lokinge glaffes, and fuche other tryfelles.

Of certeyn coniectures wherby Paria is thought to bee parte of the firme lande: And of the golden region of *Cauchieta*, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayre is temperate and not coulde.

Howe Alphonsus had a conflicte with the Canibals: and howe they are acustomed to inuade other contreys.

Of greate abundaunce of falte in the region of Haraia: and howe the dead bodyes of theyr prynces are dryed, referued, and relygiouly honoured.

Howe Alphonsus at his returne to Spayne frome Curiana, brought with hym threescore and. xvi. pounce weight of pearles which he bought for owre tryfells amountinge only to the value of fyue shillyngs.

The contentes of the ix. booke. Fol. 40. [*p.* 96.]

¶ The Nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonus and Aries Pinzonus, and howe they fayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, loste the fyght of the northe starre, and founde the starres in other order.

Howe Vincentius passyng the equinoctiall towarde the fouth pole, founde fierce and warlike people of great stature: And of the fea of freshe water.

Howe Vincentius directing his course towarde the north weste from the equinoctiall, recouered the fyght of the northe pole, and by the regions of Mariatamball, Camomorus, and Pericora, came to the fayre and ryche prouynce of Paria, and to the regyons of Os Draconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana. &c.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is ment that mayne land now cauled America) shulde be parte of the fyrme lande or continent of India, beyonde the ryuer of Ganges and no ilande: And of the excedyng great riuer Maragnonus replenished with Ilandes.

Of Boriofomea and Spiriofomea, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Ister: And of the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria. Also of the woodes of brasyle trees.

Of many trutfull Ilandes wasted and lefte desolate by reason of the Caniballes crueltie: And of the trees of Cassia Fistula. Also of other trees of excedyng bygnesse.

The description of a certayne monstrous beaste, And how Vincentius loste two of his shyppes by tempestes.

Howe Vincentius at his returne to Spayne, brought with hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious stoones cauled Topafes. And of the nauigations of certayne other inhabitantes of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the diuerse superstitions of the inhabitantes of Hispaniola. Also of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of deuylls, whiche they caule Zemes.

¶ *The Contentes of the x. booke.* Fol. 48. [p. 103.]

Of great plentie of golde, perles, and frankensence found in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beastes in shape dyfferynge from owres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them selues to conquere the newe founde landes, beyng in largeness thryse as great as Europe besyde the southe landes parteynyng to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Iland of Sancti

Iohannis, otherwise cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Also of the ryche golde mynes of Hispaniola, and of the order of workyng in the same.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of Hispaniola. And of a pece of golde weyinge thre thousande thre hundred and tenne pounde weyght.

Howe the golde is synd and distrybuted: And howe that only in the meltyng shops of the two golden mynes of Hispaniola, is molten yearlye aboue thre hundred thousande pounde weyght of golde.

Howe th[e]nterpryses of the Spaniardes are not inferior to th[e]actes of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admyrall discovered the lande ouer ageynst the west corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanassa.

¶ *The Contentes of the bookes of the seconde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrst booke.* Fol. 51. [p. 106.]

¶ Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kynge gaue free lycence to all fuche as wolde attempte any vyages: And of the nauigations of Diego Nicuefa, and Alphonfus Fogeda

Of the Ilande Codego and the region of Caramairi: And of certeyne sweete apples whiche turne into woormes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

Howe Alfonso Fogeda, the Lieutenannt of Vraba, encounteryng with the barbarians had the ouerthrowe. And howe in this conflicte, fyftie of his men were slayne with Iohannes de la Coffa theyr capytayne.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicuefa the Lieutenannte of Beragua, reuenged the death of theyr coompanyons: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulsd from the golde mynes by the fiercenesse of the barbarians vfyng arrowes infected with poyson.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thygh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almost confumed with famyn.

Howe a brigantine was drowned with the stroke of a fyfthe: And of the nauigation of Ancifus from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the Lamentable shypwrecke of Ancifus: And of the date trees and wylde bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owlde frutes and newe all the yeare.

Howe onely three of the Canibales with theyr bowes and inuenemed arrowes aslayed Ancifus with a hundred of his men: In which conflicte they wounded and slewe many. Also of theyr fwyftnesse of foote.

Of the great ryuer of Dariena: And howe Ancifus encountered with fyue hundred of th[e]inhabitauntes of the goulfe of Vraba and put them to flyght. Also howe he founde greate plentie of wrought golde and houfholde stufte in a thycket of reedes.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke.* Fol. 58. [p. 111.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa loste his felowes in the darke nyght and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he fought: And howe the capitaynes of the other shyppes consulted how to synde hym. Also of the ryuer Lagartos in the which great Lyfartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forsooke theyr shyppes that the fouldyers myght bee without hope of departure: And of the miserable chaunce of Petrus de Vmbria and his felowes.

By what chaunce Nicuefa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his coompany fusteyned. Also of the region of Gracia Dei or Cera-baro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Matthei.

Howe Nicuefa caused them to remoue theyr habitacion from Beragua to poynte Marmor where he bylded a fortresse. And howe his men by warre and famyn, were confumed from feuen hundred and odde, to scarfely one hundred.

Howe one Vafchus Nunnez vsurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieutenannteshyppe of Vraba in th[e]absence of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the ryuer Gaira descendyng from the toppe of a hygh mountayne couered with snowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a conflicte ageynst the barbarians, loste. xlviij. of his men by reason of theyr inuenemed arrowes.

Of the force of the poyson wherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the same. Also howe Colmenaris by gunneshot and kyndelyng fyers on the hygh toppes of the rockes, came to the Spaniardes lefte desolate in Dariena.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 61. [p. 114.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa was fought forth to acquiete the contentions of Vraba: And howe he was ageyne reiected.

Howe Vafchus Nunnez inuaded, tooke pryfoners, and spoyled the kynges bortheryng abowt the region of Vraba: And howe Ancifus Lieutenannt for Fogeda was cast in pryson, and afterwarde fet at libertie.

Howe Ancifus tooke his vyage from Vraba to Spayne to accuse Vafchus: who also at the same tyme sent Valdiuia afwell to speake in his defence, as also to certifie the kynge of theyr doynge.

Howe kynge Careta conspired with the Spaniardes ageynst kynge Poncha whom they put to flyght and spoyled his vyllage.

Howe kynge Comogrus frendely enterteined the Spaniardes and brought them to his pallaice where he shewed them the dried Carkases of his auncestours referued and sumptuously apparelled: And howe the kynges elder sonne gaue Vafchus and Colmenaris foure thousand vnces of wrought gold and fiftie slaues. Also a wyttie oration which he made to the Spaniardes, wherein he certified theym of a countrey exceedyng ryche in golde, &c.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 66. [p. 118.]

¶ Of horryble thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, and of grayne which waxeth rype thryse a yeare. Also how digestion is strenghtened by owtwarde coule.

Howe Valdiuia is sent ageyne into Hispaniola to moue the gouernour and counfayle there to sende into Spayne to the kynge for a supplie of a thousand fouldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe

he caryed with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfte parte of golde and other thynges.

Howe Vafchus inuaded the kynges inhabytyng the regions about the goulfe of Vraba, and howe he put kyng Dabaiba to flyght, in whose vyllage he founde wrought golde amountynge to the weyght of feuen thousande Castellans.

Of battes as bygge as turtle doones which sumtyme byte men in the nyght in their sleepe, whose bytyng is also venomous : but is healed with water of the sea or by cauterization as are also the woundes of venomous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafistula, and a towne of fyue hundreth houses, whose kyng Abenamachei was taken and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceedynge bygnesse and heyght : And howe kyng Abibeiba had his pallaice in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was inforced to descende and entreate of peace.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 69. [*p.* 120.]

¶ Howe kyng Abraiba slewe a capitayne of the Spanyards and caused the kynges to rebell. Also howe they were put to flyght and many of theyr men slayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe conspiracie with a hundreth great Canoas and fyue thousand men : And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and preuented. Also howe Rodericus Colmenaris sacked the vyllage of Tichiri and honged the kyng therof with foure of his chiefe rulers, and commaunded them to be shotte through with arrowes.

¶ *The contentes of the sixte booke.* Fol. 72. [*p.* 122.]

¶ Howe Vafchus with his confetherates, sente Iohannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hispaniola and from thense to Spayne to the kyng for a thousand men to passe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions : And what miseris they fusteyned in that vyage. Also of the death of Val[di]uia, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the prosperous vyage of Ancifus. And howe godde wrought miracles by the simple fayth of a mariner. Also how god respecteth th[e]infancie of fayth for zeles fake : And howe one religion turned into another, holdeth styll many thinges of the fyrste.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptised by reason of the miracles : And howe they rewarded the prestes by whome they were baptised.

Howe Ancifus shortly after his arryuall in Spayne, reforted to the courte and made his complaynt to the kyng of th[e]infolencie of Vafchus, wherupon the kyng gaue sentence agynst hym : And howe apte the barbarous nations are to embrace the Christian fayth.

¶ *The contentes of the seuenth booke.* Fol. 79. [*p.* 126.]

¶ Howe Quicedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena, were honorably enterteined at the courte and brought to the kynges pefence : And howe theyr complexion was chaunged by alteration of the ayer.

Howe Petrus Arias a noble man, was elected gouernour and Lieuテナunt of Dariena : And howe other of the court laboured for the same office. Also howe the bysshop of Burges spake to the kyng in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thousande and two hundreth fouldyers appoynted hym at the kynges charges : And of the kynges custome house in the cite of Ciuile, cauled the house of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered themselues to go at theyr owne charges : And of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kynges licence. Also howe the autour reproueth Aloisius Cadamustus a wryter of the Portugales vyages.

Howe Petrus Arias shortly after his departure frome Ciuile, lost two of his shyppes and was dryuen backe ageyne by tempest : And howe beinge newly furnysshed, hee passed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrde vyage of Vincentius Pinzonus, and howe he came to the

regions of Paria where encounterynge with th[e]inhabitauntes he put them fyrst to flyght : but after faulyng to entreatie of peace, they gaue hym greate plentie of golde and abundaunce of masculine frankensence with dyuers other princely presentes.

Of the greate multitude of poppingiayes which are in the region of Paria, and howe th[e]inhabitours are apparelled. Also of the fyue kynges that made a league of frendshyppe with Vincentius.

Howe Vincentius sayled Eastwarde by the tracte of the regions of Paria vntyll he came to the poynte [*Cap. S. Augustini*] of that longe lande which the autour supposeth to be the greate Ilande Atlantike wherof the owlde wryters make mention.

¶ *The contentes of the viii. booke.* Fol. 80. [*p.* 129.]

¶ A contention betwene the Castilians and Portugales as concernynge the diuision of the newe founde landes : And howe the controuerisie was fynnysshed by the bysshop of Rome.

Howe Don Chrystopher the gouernour of the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, was slayne by the Canibales and the bysshop put to flyght. Also of the other bysshops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux, flew and eate a kyng with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to the Chrystians and made faggottes of theyr bones : And how quereynge with owre men, they put them to silence.

¶ *The contentes of the ix. booke.* Fol. 81. [*p.* 130.]

¶ Of the maruelous frutes of the regions of Beragua, Vraba, and Dariena : And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and frutes. Also of the pleafant taste of swynes fleshe beinge fedde with the frutes of Mirobalane trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wylde beastes : And of a beaste of straunge forme.

Of the ryuers of the goulfe of Vraba, as the ryuer of Dariena and Rio Grandis : And howe the great serpentes cauled Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers byfyde Nilus in Egypte. Also howe th[e]autour of this booke was sent Ambassadour to the Soldane of Alcayr in Egypte.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer Senega founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Also of the multitude of byrdes and foules beinge in the marysshes of Dariena.

A phylosophicall discourse of th[e]original and generation of sprynges and ryuers : And of the breadth of the lande diuidyng the north and south Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradyse : And howe sprynges are engendered by conuersion of ayer into water.

Of the often faule of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the sea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the owlde wryters : And howe certeyne ryuers runnyng through the caues of the earthe, breake furth into sprynges afarre of.

¶ *The contentes of the x. booke.* Fol. 86. [*p.* 134.]

¶ Howe the newe founde landes discovered by the Spanyardes in the West Ocean, are eyght tymes bygger then Italie beyde that which the Portugales possesse : And of the cartes of the sea drawn by Colonus and Americus Vesputius.

The order of meafuryng the lande : And howe a league conteyneth foure myles by sea and but three by lande.

The Nauigation of Iohannes Dias, and of the fundrye eleuations of the pole starre.

Of the Ilande of Boiuca or Agnaneo, and of the springe whose water beinge dronke, causeth owld men to loke yonge.

Howe Nicuefa and his fouldiers were so oppressed with famin, that they were dryuen to eate mangie dogges, toades, and deade men : And howe a brothe made of a dogges skinne, was foulded for many peeces of golde.

¶ *The contentes of the bookes of the thyrde Decade.*

¶ *The contentes of the fyrst booke.* Fol. 88. [p. 137.]

¶ Of the desperate aduenture and good fortune of Vafchus: And how with a hundreth fourscore and ten men, he brought that to passe for the which Petrus Arias was fente with a thousande and two hundreth fresshe fouldyers.

Howe iren ferueth for more necessary vses then gold, and howe superfluities hynder libertie.

Howe Vafchus in one conflicte, slewe fyxe hundreth barbaryans with theyr kynges: And howe he founde the house of kyng Quarequa infected with vnnatural lechery, commaundyng that the kyng and fortie fuche as he kepte for that purpose, shulde be gyuen for a pray to his dogges whiche he vsed to serue in the warres ageynst these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores: And howe Vafchus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuyng thanks to god, he behelde the newe fourth Ocean neuer before fene nor knowen to men of owre worlde.

Howe Vafchus put kyng Chiapes to flyght, and after made a league of frendeshyppe with hym: And howe the king gaue hym. iiii. hundreth poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng Coquera was putte to flyght, who also beinge receaued to frendeshyppe, gaue Vafchus fyxe hundreth and fittie poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfe cauled Sinus. S. Michaelis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes: And of the manly corage and godly zeale of Vafchus. Also of the rysyng and faulng of the fourth sea.

Howe kyng Tumaccus beinge dryuen to flyght and afterwarde reconciled, gaue Vafchus. vi. hundreth and. xiiii. pefos of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the greatest and fayrest pearles: And howe the kyng cauled his men to fyshe for pearles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues: And of the abundaunce of fayre and great pearles founde therein.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line: And of the Portugales nauigations to the Antipodes inhabytyng the fyue and fittie degree of the fourth pole. Also a declaration of Antipodes, and of the starres about the fourth pole.

¶ *The contentes of the seconde booke.* Fol. 95. [p. 142]

¶ Of the maner of fysshynge for pearles and of the three kyndes therof. Also dyuers other questions concernyng perles.

Of the multitude of the shell fysshes wherin perles are engendered and founde in maner in all places in the fourth sea: And of abundaunce of golde founde almoste in euery house. Also howe the treasurie of nature is in those coastes: And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kyng Teaocha gaue Vafchus. xx. poundes weight of wrought golde and two hundreth perles. Also of desertes full of wylde beastes, and howe Vafchus was troubled with greate heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in pieces: Also howe Vafchus gaue. iiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vse of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fiercenesse of the Canibales.

Howe kyng Bononiana fauoured the Chrystians and gaue Vafchus. xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde. Also his oration to Vafchus.

A similitude prouyng greate plentie of golde in the regions of the fourth sea, and of the trauayles which owlde fouldyers are able to fusteyne.

¶ *The contentes of the thyrde booke.* Fol. 99. [p. 146.]

¶ Howe kyng Buchibuea submytted hym selfe to Vafchus, and sent hym certeyne vesselles of golde. Also howe kyng Chiorifus fente hym. xxx. dysshes of pure golde.

Howe iren ferueth for more necessary vses then gold. Also an exemple of the lyfe of owr fyrste parentes.

Howe kyng Pocchorrofa submytted hym selfe, and gaue Vafchus. xv. pounde weyght of wrought golde. Also howe Tumanama the great kyng of the golden regions towarde the fourth sea, is taken prisoner. Lykewyse howe he gaue Vafchus. xxx. pounde weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. lx. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the cause of vehement wyndes nere vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zauana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Also howe kyng Comogrus baptised by the name of Charles, gaue Vafchus. xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Vafchus, and howe he was turned from Goliath to Elifeus, and from Anteus to Hercules: And with what facilitie the Spanyardes shall hereafter obteyre greate plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conquestes, and fiercenesse of the Canibales. Also an exhortacion to Chrystian princes to fette forwarde Chrystes religion.

¶ *The contentes of the fourth booke.* Fol. 104. [p. 150.]

¶ The fourth vyage of Colonus the Admirall frome Spayne to Hifpaniola, and to the other Ilandes and coastes of the firme lande: Also of the florysshynge Ilande Guanassa.

Of feuen kyndes of date trees, wylde vynes, and Myrobalanes: Also of byrdes and foules.

Of people of goodly stature which vse to paynt theyr bodyes: And of the swyfte course of the sea from the east to the west. Also of fresshe water in the sea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana: And of greate Tortoyfes and reedes. Also of the foure frutefull Ilandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Ilandes cauled Limonares.

Of sweete fauours and holsome ayer: And of the region Quicuri, and the hauen Cariari or Myrobalanus: Also of certeyne ciuyle people.

Of trees groynge in the sea after a straunge sorte, and of a straunge kynde of Moonkeys which innade men and feight with wylde bores.

Of the greate goulfe of Cerabaro replenished with many frutefull Ilandes, and of the people which weare cheynes of golde made of ouches wrought to the similitude of dyuers wylde beastes and foules.

Of fyue vyllages whose inhabitauntes gyue them felucs onely to gather-ynge of golde, and are paynted, vsynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Also of feuen ryuers in all the which is founde greate plentie of golde: And where the plentie of golde ceafeth.

Of certeyne people which paynt theyr bodyes, and couer theyr priue members with shelles, hauynge also plates of golde hangynge at theyr noses thrylles.

Of certeyne woormes which beinge engendered in the seas nere about the Equinoctiall, eate holes in shypes: And how the Admirals shypes were destroyde by them.

Howe the kynge of Beragua enterteyned the Lieuetenant and of the great plentie of gold in the ryuer of Duraba and in al the regions there aboute: Also in rootes of trees and stones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieuetenant and his coompany wold haue erected a colonie besyde the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulsd by th[e]inhabitauntes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Ilande of Iamaica where he lyued miserably the space of tenne mooncthes: And by what chaunce he was faued and came to the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Of holfome regions, temperate ayer, and continual spring al the hole year: Also of certeyne people which honour golde religiously duryng theyr golden haruest.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heyght and hygher then the clowdes: Also the descripcion of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparynge the same to Italy.

Colonus his opinion as touchynge the supposed continente, and ioynynge of the north and fouth Ocean. Also of the breadth of the fayde continente or firme lande.

Of the regions of Vraba and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnonus and the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis. Also of certeyne marysshes and desolate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the same.

Of xx. golden ryuers about Dariena and of certeyne precious stones, especially a diamunde of marueilous byggenesse bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroical factes of the Spanyardes and howe they contemne effeminate pleasures. Also a similitude prouynge greate plentie of golde and precious stones.

¶ *The contentes of the fyfth booke.* Fol. 113. [p. 156.]

¶ The nauigation of Petrus Arias from Spayne to Hispaniola and Dariena, and of the Ilandes of Canarie. Also of the Ilandes of Madanino, Guadalupea, and Galanta.

Of the sea of herbes and mountaynes couered with snow: Also of the swyfte course of the sea towarde the west.

Of the ryuer Gaira, the region Caramairi, and the porte Carthago and Sancta Martha: Also of Americus Vesputius and his expert cunnyng in the knowledge of the carde, compasse and quadrant.

Howe the Canibales affayled Petrus Arias with his hole nauie, and shot of theyr venemous arrowes euen in the sea. Also of theyr houses and housholde stuffe.

Howe Gonzalus Ouiedus founde a saphire bygger then a goose egge: Also emerodes, calcidones, iaspers, and amber of the mountaynes.

Of woddes of brasile trees, plentie of golde, and marchasites of metals founde in the regions of Caramairi, Gaira, and Saturma. Also of a straunge kynde of marchaundies exercised amonge the people of Zunu.

That the region of Caramairi is lyke to an earthly Paradise: And of the frutefull mountaynes, and pleasaunte gardeynes of the same.

Of many goodly countreys made desolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales, and of dyuers kyndes of breade made of rootes. Also of the maner of plantynge the roote of Iucca, whose iuife is deadely poyson in the Ilandes, and without hurte in the continent or firme lande.

Of certeyne golden ryuers, hartes, wylde bores, foules, gossampine, whyte marble, and holfome ayer. Also of the greate ryuer Maragnonus descendynge from the mountaines couered with snowe, cauled Serra Nevata.

Howe Petrus Arias wasted certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales: And howe by the swyfte course of the sea, his shypes were caried in one nyght fortie leagues beyond th[e] estimation of the beste pylottes.

¶ *The contentes of the fyxte booke.* Fol. 118. [p. 161.]

¶ Of fundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyft a course from the Easte to the west: and of the greate goulfe of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote from Englande to the frofen sea, and howe being repulsd with Ice in the mooncthe of Iuly, he sayled farre westwarde.

Of people apparelled with beastes skynnes: And howe beares take fysshes in the sea and eate them.

Howe Sebastian Cabote after that he had discouered the lande of Baccalaos or Baccalleorum, was cauled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of th[e] assistance of the counfayle of th[e] affayres of India, and of his second viage.

Of the Ilande Fortis: And howe a great foule as bygge as a storke lyghted in the gouernours shyppe. Also howe he arryued at Dariena with the kynges nauie.

Howe Vafchus receaued the newe gouernour: And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial.

Howe Petrus Arias the newe gouernour distributed his army to conquere the fouth regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the same.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of th[e] expedition ageynst the kynge of that region.

Of the Violent course of the sea from the east to the west: And of the difficulte saylynge ageynst the same.

Of the pettiuerous and vnwholfome ayer of Sancta Maria Antigua in Dariena: and howe the Spanyardes were of necessitie inforced to plant theyr fyrst colonie and habitation there.

The cause of the varietie of regions lyng all vnder one degree or parallelle, and by what meanes the sonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendered of droppes of water, and of a house set on fyre with lyghtnyng.

Of a dogge deuoured of a Crocodile [*Tanquam canis e Nilo*], and of the venemus bytynge of great battes. Also of Lions and Tygers and other wylde beastes.

Howe in these regions all foure footed beastes growe to a bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrste broode. Also of certeyne trees of whose planckes if ships be made, they are safe frome the woormes cauled Broma or Byffas.

Of a tre whose wod is present poyson yf it be only borne about: And of an herbe that is a preferuatiue ageynst the same.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the fouth sea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynst the Canibales.

¶ *The contentes of the vii. booke.* Fol. 124. [p. 165.]

¶ The particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, and of the ryche Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues lyng in the South sea. Also of the greate abundaunce of bigge pearles founde in the same.

Howe the autoure compareth Hispaniola to the earthely Paradyse: And howe it farre exceleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrste inhabitours of Hispaniola and of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitauntes of Hispaniola in theyr songes and rhymes had certeyne prophesies that appared men shulde coome to theyr contrey and bryng them into feruitude: And of theyr familiaritie with spirites. Also howe those spirites haue no more appered to them sence they were baptifed.

Of theyr expertenesse in swymmyng: And of theyr delycate serpentes, byrdes, foules, and poppingais.

Of the forme and situation of Hispaniola nere the Equinoctiall: And howe could be in sum place thereof accidentall and not by the situation of the region.

Of oxen and fwyne of exceadinge bygnesse: And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the braun. Also howe the fwyne are fedde with myrobalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, brafyle, mastix, gossampyne, Electrum &c.: And of th[e]incommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande: And howe the prouinces are devided into regions.

Howe Andreas Moralis fayled into a daungerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne: And of hole ryuers denoured of such caues. Also of the conflycte of the waters.

Of a standyng pole in the tope of an hygh mountayne: And howe ferne and bramble busshes growe only in coulde regyons.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke. Fol. 130. [p. 170.]*

¶ Of a greate lake or standyng poole of fowre and falte water, and of the sea fysshes in the same in the myddelande of the Ilande. Also of deuouryng fysshes cauled Tiburoni.

Of the ryuers fauling into the lakes, and of. CC. [200] springes in the space of a furlonge.

A meruelous hystory of a kynge stryken dumme and lame by a miracle: And of the Indian language.

Howe suche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer caste vp ageyne: And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddeste of the standyng lake. Also of a lake of fresshe water, and an other of falte and fresshe water.

Of a large playne of two hundreth myles in length: And an other of a hundrethe and twentie.

Of the meruelous fyfthe or monster of the sea, cauled Manati or Matum, fedde with mans hande: and howe she caryeth men ouer the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of Hispaniola: And howe golde is founde in all mountaines and golde and fysshes in all ryuers.

Of falte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increase from the caues of the mountaynes. Also howe there is no hurtefulle beaste in the Ilande.

Of the pleasures of Hispaniola: And of the region of Cotohi well inhabited and situate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachyng to the clowdes.

Of moderate coulde in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygnesse.

Howe pure and masse golde is founde in the region of Cotoy or Cotohy: And that the veyne of golde is a luyng tree. Also of the rootes, branches, and floures of the same, and howe certeyne caues are susteyned with pyllers of golde.

What golde is broughte yearly from Hispaniola into Spayne: And of the falte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as stones and cleare as crystall. Also springes of falte, fresh and fower water.

Of certeyne wylde men luyng in caues and dennes without any certeyne language: And of theyr merueylous swiftnesse a foote.

Of pytche of the rocke and two kyndes of trees: And of the leafe of a tree vsed in the steede of paper. Also howe th[e]inhabitantes thinke that the Christians can make those leaues speake and disclose all secretes.

Of a stronge coloure made of the iufe of a certeyn apple: And of the herbe whose smoke is poyson.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 136. [p. 175.]

Of the kyndes of frutes wherwith th[e]inhabitauntes of Hispaniola lyued fyrste, and howe they came to the knowelege of Iucca. Also howe Ceres fyrst found wheate and barley in Egypte.

Wly theyr kinges are cauled by dyuers names, and by what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

Howe they make theyr testamentes, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buryed with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hispaniola: And where it rayneth but lyttle, and where much.

Of the colonies and vyllages that the Spanyardes haue buylded in Hispaniola: and of the other Ilands about the same

Of a springe which runnyng vnder the sea from Hispaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arethusa: Also of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Animæ Album*: And of the Canibale[s]. Also whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes: And of the generation of greate Tortoyfes and of theyr egges.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke. Fol. 140. [p. 178.]*

¶ Of the expedition ageynste the kynge of the Ilande Dites in the fourth sea: And howe after foure conflictes, submyttinge hym selfe, he gaue our men a hundreth and ten pounce weyght of greate pearles. Also howe he agreed to pay yearly a hundreth pounce weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe axes and hatchettes are more esteemed then golde, or perles: And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnyses. Also howe the kynge of Dites and his famelie were baptised.

Of perles of great pryce: And howe Paule the bysshop of Rome bowght a perle for four and fortie thousand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles: And of a hundreth pearles founde in one shel fyfthe. Also of the byrth of pearles.

Of the regions of the Easte fyde of the goulfe of Vraba: And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumcised people which haue the knowledge of letters and vse bookes: And what chaunced of the capitaynes which Petrus Arias sente furth dyuers wayes. Also howe Iohn Solysius was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fiercenesse.

Howe Iohn Pontius was repulsd of the Canibales, and of the lewde behaour of Iohn Aiora.

Of the variable fortuné of Gonfalus Badaocius: And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was spoyled of all. Of the golden region of Coiba Dites: And howe theyr flaures are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the fourth sea: And of the regions frome whense the Portugales fetche their spices.

Of a straunge kynde of fowlyng: and of the trees that beare gourdes.

Of the later opinions as touchyng the fwyfte course of the Ocean towarde the weste: and of the continente or firme lande. Also of the vyage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena: and the maner of gatheryng of golde in the same: Also of the dropse of couetousnes which is not satisfied with ryches.

¶ *For the contentes of the booke of the Ilands lately found reade the margente notes of the same.*

THE INTERPRETOURS EXCVSE.

I haue not in wrytynge byn very curious
To auoyde the scornes of Rhinoceros nose,
Or the fyled iudgement of fenere Aristarchus
Not fearynge thereby any thyng to lose,
But haue thought it sufficient to be open and playne
Not lookynge for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well.
If I be not barbarous I desyre no more,
I haue not for euery woorde asked counsell
Of eloquent Eliot or fyr Thomas Moore.
Take it therefore as I haue intended,
The fautes with fauour may soone be amended.

The poct Homere for all his eloquence,
Lacked not Zoilus to be his fo[e]:
Wherfore I conclude this for a trewe sentence.
That no man lacketh suo bargello:
For as no beaste lyueth without woorme or flye,
So no man lacketh his priuieemie.

Rumpatur Zoilus.

¶ *Fautes escaped in the pryntyng. F. the leafe. L. the line. B. the backe fyde of the leafe.*

[These corrections have all been embodied in the Text.]

Imprynted at London in Paules Church-
yarde at the signe of the Wyble
by Rycharde Jug.

[In other copies.]

yarde at the signe of the Bell by
Roberte Coy.

Anno. Domini. M. D. LV.

Index

of

Personal names, and names of places, chiefly outside Europe.

∴ The Contents Pages at vii.-x., 12, 45, and 391-398 have not been indexed.

- Abarien island, 255
 Abdua river, 315
 Abenainachie, King, 119, 120, 121
 Abibeiba, King, 120, 121
 Abila mountaynes, 236
 Abraham, 51, 52
 Abraiba, 120, 121
 Abrayme Prouince, 226
 Aburema river, 135, 152
 Acatan, 34
 Acateba, 153
 Achaia, 176
 Achas town, 325
 Achemenides, 135, 154
 Achilles, 5
 Achor, Vale of, 50
 Acla village, 231
 Acuna, The Licentate, 272
 Adam, 229, 338, 340
 Adams, Clement, xxxviii., 289
 Adda river, 363, 364
 Aden, 13, 24, 267, 269
 Aden, King of, 13
 Adialbenicus, Emperor, 176
 Adipson, 285
 Adriane, Pope, 309
 Adriatique sea, 133, 155, 318
 Æneas Siluius, 8, 41, 50, 347
 Africa, xix., xxi., xxix., 9, 13, 35, 52, 56, 126, 129, 139, 236, 245, 248, 250, 261, 262, 273, 285, 295, 298, 337, 338, 340, 346, 373, 384, 385, 387.
 Africa, Gulf of, 270, 374.
 Afrijken, xxxi.
 Agathyrsi, 91
 Agermannia, Dukedome of, 305
 Agisimba, Region of, 41
 Agnaneo island, 135
 Agnes, Vincentius, 105, 128, 129
 Agricola, Georgius, xli., xlv., 7, 366
 Agrippa, Cornelius, xlv.
 Agus, Antipater, 319
 Ahumada, Peter de, 346
 Aiagutin river, 153
 Ajora, Gonsalus, 181
 Ajora, Johannes, 162, 181
 Alamino Antonie, 187, 188
 Alaminus, 192, 193, 194, 195
 Alba Russia, 291
 Albertus, Magnus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Alcalá, 63
 Alcantara, 165
 Alcaraz, Antonie of, 272
 Alcayr [*Cairo*], City of, 13, 14, 63, 131, 153, 172, 186, 267, 285, 307, 315, 374
 Alcazaa, Simon of, 272
 Alday, James, xix., xx.
 Alexander, xxix., xxxiii., xlv., 5, 32, 50, 74, 129, 176, 201, 241, 248, 273, 274, 285, 310, 315, 325, 339, 385
 Alexandria, City of, 110, 153, 217, 267, 283, 351
 Alexandryne, Patriarch of, xxx.
 Alfonsus de Ponte, 157
 Alla, 359, 368
 Allago, xxviii.
 Allen, Richard, xiii.
 Almanzor, 271, 272
 Almayne [*Germany*], Emperour of xxx.
 Almaynes, 56, 97, 116, 292, 320, 328
 Alonso, 341
 Alonso, Don, 273, 341
 Alonsus, Petrus, 36
 Alpha, Poynt, 75, 76
 Alpheus river, 134, 176
 Alphonsus, 40, 389
 Alphonsus, Petrus, 94, 96
 Alvarado, Peter, 187
 Alverado, Spatense, 192
 Amacaiz, City of, 374
 Amaiauna, Cave of, 99
 Amaltheum sea, 289
 Amaquei, Region of, 169
 Amari, Lake of, 284
 Amaxobii, 301
 Ambalao island, 260
 Ambon island, 260
 America, xi., xiii., xviii., xxi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., xl., 3, 8, 32, 35, 43, 61, 205, 243, 281, 335, 343, 353, 371, 385
 Americus, xxi.
 Amerigo Vesprucci, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 275, 277, 279
 Anacaona, Queen, 85, 176
 Anacaucha, Beuchius, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
 Anata, King, 182, 183
 Anbon island, 344
 Ancisus, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 123, 124, 125, 126, 137
 Ancyra, 311
 Andalusia, xiii., 130, 220, 225, 339
 Andalusia, Noua, 130
 Andreas, Moralis, 134
 Andrewe, Lawrence, xxvi.
 Andronicus, xlviii.
 Anes, John, 377, 378
 Angleria, 43, 63, 65, 185, 207, 246, 299
 Anghiera, xxxvii.
 Annez, Vincentius, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Anniuici, Region of, 169
 Antei, 285
 Anteus, 149
 Anthiochyen, xxxi.
 Anthiocus, 8
 Anthropophagi, 23, 29, 41, 65, 385
 Antiglia island, 38
 Antilia island, 66
 Antiqua, Island of, 177
 Antonie, Master, 288
 Antony di Mendoza, 287
 Anunctus, 191
 Apianus, 10
 Apollo, 10, 102, 172, 295, 298
 Apnu, Region of, 322
 Apsa, 363
 Aprutium, Bishop of, 309
 Aquanil, Province of, 187
 Aquillaris, Hieronimus, 192, 193
 Arabia, xxviii., xxxi., 8, 9, 13, 14, 20, 56, 129, 153, 156, 163, 180, 235, 284, 285, 286, 309, 385
 Arabia, Gulf of, 284, 286, 339, 347
 Arabia, Sea of, 309
 Arabo, 168
 Aragon, King of, xxx. 51
 Aragonie, Cardinal of, 64, 73, 79, 82, 87, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Aramana, Region of, 168
 Arambec, xiv.
 Arbolantius, 141
 Archimedes, xlvii., xlviii.
 Arciboldus, 127
 Ardagni, Kingdom of, 314
 Arethusa, 134, 176
 Arenalis, 88
 Areuado, 232
 Argilla, City of, 374
 Ariane, 245
 Arias, Helizabetha Boadilla, 127
 Arias, Petrus, 61, 126, 127, 135, 137, 142, 156, 157, 158, 162, 165, 178, 179, 181, 198, 199, 214
 Arimathia, Joseph of, 56
 Arion, 171
 Aristarchus, 398
 Aristocleon, 41
 Aristotle, xliii., xlv., 9, 10, 67, 142, 179, 278, 293, 313, 333, 339, 340, 386
 Arkey, Laurence, xii.
 Armenes, xxx.
 Armeneten, xxxi.
 Armenia, xxvii., xxviii., xxx., xxxii., xxxiv., 176, 311, 314, 329
 Armenicus, Emperour, 176
 Armennyten, xxxi.
 Arnold, R., xxv., xxvi.
 Arnheim, xxv.
 Arotinbergh, 368
 Arra, Castle, 381
 Arsina, xxix.
 Arsinoe, City of, 284, 285
 Artawische river, 323
 Artawische, 323
 Artemisia, 49, 128
 Arucetto island, 260
 Arzina Ford, xxxix.
 Asasi, xx.
 Ascanius, 63, 64
 Ascanius Sphorca [*i.e.*, Sforza], 65, 68, 103, 127
 Ascham, Roger, xl.
 Ascon City, 374
 Asia, the less, 7
 Asoph, 324, 325
 Asopus, 142
 Asseuedo, Antonie de, 272
 Assyryen, xxxi.
 Astesia, 363
 Astrachan, 308, 314, 325, 326, 329
 Astur, Ouetenses, 135
 Asturia, 54, 116
 Asyen, xxx.
 Atahaliba, King, 346
 Atamea village, 152
 Ath, xliii.
 Atiei, Region of, 169

- Atlantike island, 129, 337, 338, 340
Atlas mountains, 129
Atlas, the greater, 385
Attabeira, 99
Attibuni, Region of, 169
Attibunicus river, 73, 168, 171
Attila, 326
Ananzo mountains, 368
Augusta, City of, 286
Augustinus de Ceratta, 54
Augustus, Emperour, 8, 283, 306, 369
Auila Alphons[o], 187, 192
Auis, 273
Auleta, King, 283
Aurea Anus, 323, 324
Aurea Chersonesus, 32, 40, 75, 247, 313, 344
Ausonia, 167
Austria, Archduke of, 289
Auxendia, xxviii.
Auxerre, xlv.
Ay Ay islands, 69, 130
Ayqueroa, Region of, 169
Azamor, City of, 374
Azania, Region of, 385
Azafi, 374
Azeuedo, 274
Azgar, 374
Azion Gaber, 7
Azores, Islands of, 203, 204, 219, 339, 347, 348
Azotus, 57
Azoum river, 314
Azuum village, 176
Azzuei, Region of, 169
- Babbareo lake, 170
Babel, Tower of, xxxii.
Babell, 290
Babilon, 14, 56, 57, 63, 172, 187, 241, 266, 284, 285, 297, 307, 315
Babilon, Soltane of, 153, 172
Babilonii, The, 385
Babilonyon, xxxii.
Bacanor, 265
Baccallaos, Land of, xix., 55, 161, 162, 195, 242, 287, 288, 299, 344, 345, 347
Bacchian island, 259, 260
Baccia, 126
Bachau sea, 291
Bacon, Lord, xxii.
Bacon, Roger, xlv., xlvii., xlviii.
Bactria, 308
Badaiocius, Gasper, 165
Badaiocius, Gonzalus, 181, 182, 183
Badaioz, 272, 273
Badajos, xiii.
Bafrida, 291
Baguanimaho, Region of, 168
Bahaboni, 166
Bahuan river, 172
Baian, 171
Baia Natiuitatis, 129
Bainoa, 168, 169, 170, 172, 173, 176
Baiohaigua, Region of, 169
Bajasetes, Ottomanus, 6, 311
Balassia, Region of, 264
Balboa, Vaschus, 149, 162, 178, 338
Balears islands, 301
Ballard, William, xiii.
Balthem sea, 299, 312, 331
Baluaastro, 346
Banda island, 22
Bandan, xxix., 260, 269
Banderana, xxix.
Bangalla, King, 21
Bangella, City of, 21
Baptiste, Elisius, 85, 99
Baptiste, Master, xliii.
- Barack, Soltan, 329
Barbai island, 256
Barbaregaf, City of, 374
Barbarossa, Emperour, 347
Barbata island, 177
Barbary, xix., xx., xxviii., xxxviii., 237, 374, 380, 384
Barbessa, Adoardo, 258
Barcha, 374
Barnarde of Mesa, 130
Barramedabas, 87
Barrientos, 272
Barthema [*i.e.*, *Varthema*], Ludivico, xlviii.
Bartholomeus Colonus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
Barthus castle, 331
Barutti, xii.
Basilides, 41
Basilius, 289, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
Basilius, Andreas, 316
Basilius, Demetrius, 316
Basilius, George, 316
Basilius, John, 316, 319
Basilius, Magnus, 290, 291
Basilius, Symeon, 316
Basing, xxxix.
Baskird, 293
Basle, xxxvii.
Bastard, Count L. de, xlv.
Bastarne, 311
Bastimento island, 235
Bath, Earl of, xix.
Bauruco, Region of, 169
Bazantium, Emperours of, 314
Beata port, 107, 113, 177, 213
Beaton, Cardinal, xxxviii.
Bebeid, Chan, 329
Beda island, 35
Beit island, 374
Belchia, 309
Belozeria, 309
Benaia island, 260
Beneu island, 260
Bengala, Province of, 261, 264, 267, 268, 344
Benin, 270, 376
Beragua, Region of, 107, 108, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 128, 130, 132, 134, 135, 136, 149, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 163, 165, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 234
Berenice, City of, 284
Beres river, 323
Berges, City of, 331
Beringocius, Vannucius, xlv.
Berma, 344
Bermeio, Sea of, 338, 339, 346, 347
Bermuda island, 233
Berosus, xlviii., 346
Beryn, John, 383
Beselchel, 49
Besermani, The, 327
Besson, xlvii.
Betanchor, 65, 166
Betis river, 127, 157
Beuchius Anacauchoa, King, 83, 84, 85, 86, 176
Beyrout, xii.
Bezerra, Franciscus, 165, 181, 183
Bian, Sancti, Johannis gulf, 194
Biddle, Mr, xv.
Bieloiefero, 321
Bimini, 345
Binthaitel, 100
Bion, 41
Biraen, 344
Biringuccio Vannuccio, xxxvii., 353, 356
Biron, Master, xviii.
- Biscaine, 274
Bisinagar, City of, 15
Bisineghe, 277
Bithynia, 290, 311
Bitsagitsch, xxviii.
Bizantium, 307
Bizantium, Emperour of, 314
Bizerta port, 374
Blasius, 331
Blemines, The, 385
Blesconia, City of, 289
Blondus, 348
Boadilla, Governour of, 105, 127
Boadilla, Helisabetha, 127
Bodenham, Roger, xviii.
Boheme, King of, xxx., 312
Bohol island, 256, 258
Boilus, 79
Boiuca island, 135
Boium, gatti river, 109, 132
Bolgaria, 309
Bolshega mountains, 323
Bombassa, xxviii.
Bonauentura, 105
Bonauista island, 87, 272
Bonanum, City of, 84
Boneface, 56
Bonham, W., xxxvii.
Bononiam, King, 145
Bononie, Aristotles of, 313
Bononie, Galeatius Butrigarius of, 106, 127, 283, 285
Boriostomea river, 98
Boriquena island, 45, 345, 346
Boristhene river, 289, 309, 311, 312, 314, 316, 319
Bornei islands, 22, 23
Bosphorus, The, 59
Boua port, 374
Boubige, xlv.
Bourne, Mr H. R. Fox, xvi.
Bowyer, Sir William, xiii.
Boyuca island, 345
Braalin island, 260
Brabant, xliii.
Brasil, xv., xvi., xvii., 250, 251, 253, 273, 285, 288, 375, 385, 386
Brewer, Rev. J. S., M. A., xiii.
Bridger, Mr C., xlviii.
Brocardus, xlv.
Brooke, John, xviii.
Bryaces, 49
Buchebeua, King, 146
Buchema island, 30
Buda, 326
Budia island, 260
Budomel, 384
Buen Abrigo Point, 273
Buena Vista, 272
Bugia, Region of, 374
Buaici, Region of, 169
Bullen, 9
Buona Speranza, 261, 262, 338, 374, 385
Bur island, 344
Borges, Bishop of, 126, 127, 134
Burgonie, Duke of, 208
Burichena island, 45, 70, 104, 130, 159, 173, 176
Burleigh, Lord, xxxvii.
Burnei island, 258
Burney island, 272
Burrough, Stephen, xxxviii.
Buru island, 260
Buthuan island, 255, 259
Buthuan, King, 255
Butler, John, xlv.
Butricarius Galeatius, 106, 127, 283, 285
Buts, Sir William, xviii., xix.
- Butts, Thomas, xviii., xix.
Byzantium, xi.
- Cabedus, Johannes, 130, 157
Cabot, Loaisa, 274
Cabot, Sebastian, xiii., xv., xix., xxxviii., xxxix, xl., xlv., xlvii., 6, 55, 61, 161, 162, 195, 272, 274, 283, 288, 289, 299, 335, 343, 345, 348, 350, 386
Cabouerde [*i.e.*, *Cape-Verde*], 74, 87, 97, 129, 134, 272, 277, 385
Cacacubana, Region of, 169
Cacausu, City of, 24
Cacedus, John, 198
Caccicus, 72, 89, 128, 223
Caccicus Caunaboa, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
Cacique Chimán, 225
Cadamustus, Aloisius, 127, 270, 280
Cades, 86
Cadissen, 329
Cadona, Duke of, 173
Caghaian island, 258
Cahaymi, Region of, 169
Cahini island, 168
Cahonas island, 166, 172
Caiabi, Province of, 168, 172, 173, 176
Caiacoa, Province of, 168, 173
Caiguam mountain, 171
Caigui, City of, 26, 171
Caihabo, Province of, 168, 169, 170
Cailon island, 344
Caiouana, Valley of, 170
Cairo, 374
Cairus, 307
Caizcimu, Province of, 168, 169, 170, 173
Cakeado, 381
Calaghan island, 255, 256, 259
Calantan, 260
Calauera, Barnardino de, 108
Cales, 86, 87, 93, 94, 97, 181
Caleso island, 286
Calicium, 38
Calicut, 7, 8, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 24, 32, 39, 256, 261, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 344, 374, 385
Calicut, King of, 14, 17, 18, 19, 21
Calidonia, 143, 177
Caliz, 346, 347
Callienten, xxix.
Calligula, 59
Calpe mountains, 236
Cals, 68, 73
Caluacam, Region of, 188, 189
Calunezfcho, Region of, 322
Calzadilla, 341
Camaie, Region of, 169
Cambaia, 8, 13, 14, 20, 261, 267, 269
Cambaia, King of, 40
Cambalu [*i.e.*, *Pekin*], City of, 24, 25, 287, 307, 326
Cambie, 259
Camemorus, Region of, 183
Camen mountains, 323
Camen Bolschoi mountains, 322, 323
Camenekh, 322
Cameni, 323
Camenipoias mountains, 323
Camigna, Don Christopher of, 130
Camomorus, Region of, 98, 132
Camoteia island, 166
Campaa, Region of, 260
Campbell, Dr M. F. A. G., xxv., xxvi.
Campechium, Province of, 187, 188

- Campegius, Cardinal, 310
 Campion, Gasper, xvii., xviii.
 Camul, Province of, 27
 Canabocoa, Region of, 169, 172
 Canada, 287
 Canary islands, xiii., xxviii., 28, 30, 32, 36, 38, 40, 41, 65, 66, 68, 87, 97, 150, 157, 166, 177, 181, 199, 210, 245, 250, 277, 339, 374, 375, 380, 389
 Cananor, xxviii.
 Cananor, King of, 15
 Cancell, Luys, 346
 Canchietans, The, 95
 Canchietas, Region of, 36, 95
 Cane, 271
 Canghu island, 256
 Canglu, City of, 24
 Canibals, Islands of the, 30, 66, 68, 78, 160, 162, 177, 180
 Cannafistula island, 119
 Cano, 272
 Canonor, Kingdom of, 14, 15, 20, 261, 268
 Canthan, City of, 260
 Cape Blanke, 380
 Cape Bona Speranza, 129, 279, 285, 286, 348, 350
 Cape Breton, xiv., xviii.
 Cape Cattigara, 253
 Cape Corea, 382
 Cape de Bas, xiv.
 Cape de Buona Speranza, 374
 Cape de Monte, 381
 Cape de las Palmas, 381, 382
 Cape de tres Puntas, 381
 Cape de Sper, xiv.
 Cape Trepoyntes, 381, 382, 383
 Cape of Good Hope, 129, 385
 Capelan, City of, 21, 344
 Capha, 324
 Caphi island, 260
 Capiira, Region of, 234
 Capling, William, xii.
 Capo Desiderato, 252
 Capo Verde Islands, 32, 35, 36, 65, 74, 87, 129, 203, 204, 250, 261, 262, 272, 273, 274, 277, 280, 338, 373, 382, 385, 387
 Capronus, 86, 91, 92
 Capucar, 265
 Caput Bonæ Sperantiae, 129, 385
 Caput Sancti Augustini, 129, 134, 181, 183
 Caput Veride islands, 32, 35, 36, 74, 87, 129, 385
 Caracaracoles, 100
 Caramairi, Region of, 106, 107, 109, 134, 144, 157, 158, 159, 160, 162
 Caramatexius, King, 171
 Carandra, Gulf of, 285
 Caraqueira island, 177
 Carcham, Province of, 26
 Cardano, Girolamo, xxxviii., 158, 161, 207, 217, 250, 294, 307
 Carenas, 191,
 Careta, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
 Caria, King of, 49, 128
 Caria, Queen of, 49, 128
 Cariari, Region of, 151, 152, 156
 Caribana, 107, 119, 180, 183
 Caribdis, 304
 Caribes islands, 68
 Carles, Captain, xlvi.
 Carnica, 314, 368
 Caromoram, 25
 Carter, Master, xviii.
 Carthage, 176, 340, 374
 Carthage, Hannibal of, 139
 Carthagena, 134, 157, 160, 214, 215, 226
 Carthaginis Portus, 106
 Carthago, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113, 134, 157, 162, 165
 Cartier, Jaques, 287, 345
 Carucueria, 69, 157, 159
 Casa Francisus, xvii.
 Casan, King of, 326, 328
 Caspia, 8, 169, 170, 173
 Caspian sea, 170, 287, 291, 308, 309, 311, 314, 321, 326, 329, 346
 Cassam, City of, 291, 311, 314, 319, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329
 Cassima river, 323
 Cassius mountain, 285
 Castaglione, Baltassar, 9
 Castaneda, 272
 Castella, Aurea, 130
 Castella de Mina, 382
 Castella Vetus, 68
 Castile, King of, xxx., 37, 201, 203, 340
 Castile, Queen of, 201
 Castile, Isabel of, 273, 274, 341
 Castile, Ferdinando of, 51, 52, 65, 73, 127, 131, 201, 208, 209, 211, 229, 236, 273, 341, 342, 343, 345
 Castlen, Edward, xli.
 Castor, 250
 Castoreum sea, 303
 Castromow, 331
 Catalonia, 173
 Catarapa, 237
 Catena Mundi mountains, 286, 324
 Cathay [*i.e.*, *China*], xiii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., 8, 22, 24, 25, 26, 59, 98, 261, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 308, 310, 312, 313, 321, 322, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 333, 339, 344, 345, 363
 Cathay Cham [*i.e.*, *Khav*], of, xxi., 21, 24, 25, 26, 27, 60, 286, 287, 289, 322, 324, 326, 329, 330
 Cathay, Emperour of, 25, 60
 Catighan island, 256
 Catherine, Queen, 51, 71, 274
 Catherine, Saint, 84
 Cato, 122
 Cattigara, 262
 Cattigara, Cape, 253
 Caucasus mountains, 18
 Cauchieta, 95, 98
 Caunaboa, Cacicus, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85
 Caunana, 99
 Caunoa, Region of, 169
 Cauta, 99
 Cautan, City of, 344
 Caya river, 272, 273, 274
 Caya bridge, 273, 274
 Cayrus [*i.e.*, *Cairo*], City of, 14, 186
 Cazacubuna mountains, 172
 Cazibaxagua, 99
 Cecil, Sir W., xxii., xxxviii., xliii.
 Ceden, xxx.
 Ceilam island, 344
 Celaruri island, 260
 Celer, Quintus Metellus, 347
 Cemaccus, King, 110, 119, 121, 122, 198
 Cemobal, 196
 Cenalo island, 255.
 Cenegales, 155
 Central America, xi.
 Centurione, Paulo, 287, 308, 309, 310
 Cerabaro, Region of, 112, 135, 152, 154, 155, 156, 163, 182
 Ceratta [*i.e.*, *Zaratte*] Augustinus de, 54
 Cerda, 341
 Ceres, 175
 Cernigonia, 309
 Cesar, 59, 305
 Cesariensis, 374
 Chabot, C., xlv.
 Chacouam island, 260
 Chagre river, 234, 235
 Cham, 346
 Chamailaba, Prince, 129
 Chan Cublai, 330
 Charles V., xiii., xlv.
 Charles, King, 63
 Charles IX., xlv., xlvii.
 Charybdis, 163, 330
 Chaucer, xxxvii.
 Chaunceler, Richard, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., 59, 285, 289, 326, 333, 386
 Chedsey, Dr, xxxix.
 Cheke, Sir John, xliii., xlv.
 Cheregatus, Francis, 191, 309
 Chethai lake, 287
 Cheru, King, 182
 Chiacones, King, 128
 Chiapes, King, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 145, 178
 Chiauaccha, Prince, 129
 Chimán, Cacique, 225
 China, 20, 260, 261, 267, 269, 272, 339, 344, 347
 China, Gulf of, 260
 Chionsus, King, 146
 Chiouia mountain, 319
 Chirara, 152
 Chippit island, 258
 Chitaza, 152
 Chorogoski Nosz, 322
 Chrisostomus, 290, 291
 Christiernus, 304, 309
 Christophori Sancti, 105
 Ciamba, 130, 150
 Cibana, Region of, 73, 74, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 105, 168, 171, 172
 Cicero, Marcus Tullus, xlv., 49, 132, 283, 284
 Ciclopes, 154
 Cicylian, King, xxx.
 Ciguaios, 86, 91
 Ciguana, 91
 Cilapulapu, Prince, 285
 Cilicia, 7, 8
 Cimbrica Chersonesus, 311, 314
 Cimbulon, King, 258
 Cinchital, 27
 Cingaporla, 260
 Cingulus Mundi mountain, 324
 Ciniana, Region of, 36
 Cipanga, Region of, 73, 80, 81, 82, 167, 253, 339, 340, 343
 Citrachan, 308, 314
 Ciuola, 287
 Claudius, 54
 Clement VI., Pope, 308, 309, 347
 Cleodii, The, 385
 Cleopatra, 141, 142, 166, 283, 315
 Cleopatrida, City of, 284
 Clesma river, 314
 Cloelia, 71
 Cochín, King of, xxix.
 Cochinus, 183
 Cockeram, Martin, xvii.
 Codigo island, 106, 215
 Coi Cathay island, 343
 Coiba Dites, 182
 Coiba, Gulf of, 108, 115, 116, 164, 182
 Coiba, King of, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121, 137, 164, 182
 Colchis, Region of, 51, 135, 262, 310
 Cole, Master, xix.
 Colen, xxix.
 Coligny, Admiral, xlv.
 Collao, City of, 343
 Collocutea, Region of, 183
 Colluacana island, 189, 191, 195, 196
 Colmenaris, Rodericus, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123, 126, 157, 183
 Colmogora, Region of, 291, 293, 312
 Colmogor, City of, 286, 322.
 Colmum, City of, 290
 Cologna, 291
 Colonia Agrippina, City of, 289
 Colum, xxix
 Columbus (or Colonus), Bartholomeus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 340
 Columbus (or Colonus), Christophorus, 28, 29, 35, 38, 41, 65, 66, 67, 69, 79, 80, 87, 94, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113, 115, 118, 127, 128, 129, 132, 134, 135, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 157, 163, 177, 184, 191, 192, 202, 209, 236, 272, 288, 337, 339, 340, 341, 342, 346
 Columbus (or Colonus), Diegus, 115, 118, 122, 127, 177, 184, 240
 Columbus (or Colonus), Fernando, 272
 Columna, 313
 Commendator, King, 123, 124, 125
 Comi, 187
 Comogra, 116, 162, 179
 Comogrus, King, 116, 117, 118, 120, 122, 137, 146, 147, 148, 162
 Commodus, Emperour, 284
 Comoiaxsa, 172
 Compostele, 100
 Conception, Tower of, 80, 82, 84, 86, 92, 93, 105, 130
 Condé, Prince de, xlv., xlv.
 Condiuia, 310
 Conigangui, 26
 Connulaha, City of, 260
 Constantina, 374
 Constantine, 290, 316
 Constantinople, Bishop of, xxxi.
 Constantinople, Emperour of, 316
 Constantinople, Patriarche of, xxx., 290, 291
 Conte Rimondo, 270
 Cooper, xxxvii.
 Coperdalia, 305
 Copto, 284
 Coquera, King, 140
 Corala, 271
 Corales, 180
 Corduba 162, 181, 186, 192
 Corea, 382
 Corelia, 292, 321
 Corichotum, 102
 Corimucol, 20
 Corinthus, City of, 80, 100
 Coro island, 215
 Coronado, 287
 Coronati, 238
 Cortes, xiii., xl., xlv., xlvi., 274
 Cortesreales, Gasper, 344
 Cortesreales islands, 344
 Cortesius Fernando, 191, 192, 195, 198, 238, 342
 Corsali, Andreas de, 275, 279
 Corus, 382

- Corytho, 166
 Cossa, Johannes De la, 126, 134, 156
 Cossa, 107
 Cossin river, 323
 Cossun, 329
 Cotam, 26
 Cotochus, King, 146.
 Cotohi, 172, 173
 Cotoy, 169
 Cozumella island, 40, 187, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193
 Cozumellaus, King, 188
 Cracouia, 314
 Crayford, 7
 Creta, 166, 172, 316
 Cretenses, xlvi., 172
 Cresus, 42, 146
 Croke, 381
 Crystente, xxxiv.
 Cuadalchiber, 210.
 Cuba island, 6, 31, 40, 66, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 90, 104, 105, 123, 125, 128, 130, 150, 154, 161, 163, 167, 173, 176, 177, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 195, 198, 210, 231, 233, 239, 241, 262, 299, 338, 344, 346
 Cuba, Governour of, 191
 Cubagua island, 213, 214
 Cubana, 169
 Cubigar river, 153
 Cuchibachoa, Region of, 98, 108, 113, 128, 134
 Cuella de Segovia, xv.
 Cueua, 219, 237
 Cuguibacoa, 165
 Cugureo, 340
 Cuhabo, 168, 169
 Cuiriza, 146
 Culchas, 141
 Culata point, 119, 121, 122
 Cumana, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128, 156, 165, 213, 214
 Cupoton King, 187
 Curiana, 89, 94, 95, 96, 98, 128
 Cursius Quintus, 241
 Curtana, 36, 95
 Cuti river, 226
 Cuzibet island, 23
 Cybaho, 169
 Cyrenaua, 374
 Cyrtha, 100
 Czar Kythaiski, 324
 Czilma river, 322
 Czircho river, 322
 Czriremissa, 293

 Dabaiba, King, 119, 121, 122, 163
 Dabaiba river, 132, 155, 183, 199
 Dabiague, 169
 Dacicus, 176
 Dahabon, 169
 Dahabonici, Region of, 169
 Dahatio, 168
 Daiaguio mountains, 173
 Daiguani mountains, 171
 Dalekarle river, 305
 Dalion, 41
 Dalmacyen King, xxx.
 Dalmatia, 290, 364
 Damascus, 56, 311
 Damian, 310
 Damianus a Goes, 51, 58
 Damiata, City of, 284
 Danadim river, 323
 Danowe river, 131
 Danaus, xlvi.
 Daneo port, 284
 Dardanus, 166
 Dariena, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 121, 123, 125, 126, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 143, 145, 148, 149, 156, 157, 158, 162, 163, 164, 165, 178, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 192, 198, 199, 207, 218, 220, 226, 236, 238, 262
 Darien river, 110, 132, 191
 Darius, King, 59, 284
 Darnasseri, 20
 Darthmouth, 379
 Daubeny, Oliver, xviii.
 Daud, xlvi., 51, 349, 385
 Daud, Master, 330
 Dausian, 344
 Davis, xlvi.
 Decan, 264
 Dechan, 14
 Dedalus, 55
 Deerfeorth, Cornelius, xxxviii.
 De las Perlas island, 54
 De la Sal island, 272
 De la Flore island, 382
 Delagartos river, 132
 Delapuenta, Franciscus, 183
 Deli mountains, 268
 De los Azores, 203, 204, 339
 Delphis, 296, 298
 Demahus river, 168
 Demetriowe, City of, 321
 Demetrius, 59, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 325, 329, 331
 Demogorgon, xlvi., 161
 Denham, Henry, xiii
 Denmark, King of, xxx., 299, 304, 308, 309, 319, 331, 332
 Deptford, xxxviii.
 Desborch, John of, xxv., xxvi.
 Desiderata island, 177, 210
 Desideratus, Portus, 188.
 Destam island, 192
 Desseosa, Francis, 377
 Deza, 130
 Diaguio, Region of, 169
 Diaz, Johannes, 105, 135, 165
 Didacus, 75, 77, 78, 79
 Dido, 166
 Diego, Henriques, 378
 Diego, Nicuesa, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Dieguan sea, 266
 Diegus Marques, 157
 Diegus Mendez, 154
 Diegus Ordassus, 192
 Diegus Valasquen, 186
 Dikilappones, Region of, 331
 Diodorus, xlvi., 351
 Diodorus *Siculus*, 55, 369
 Dites, 165, 178, 183
 Dium, City of, 13
 Doesborch or Doesburg, xxv.
 Doesburgh, Jan Van, xxv., xxvi.
 Dolateranus, 10
 Dominica island, 30, 68, 70, 105, 130, 150, 157, 163, 174, 210
 Dominikes, Tower, Seynt, 82, 84
 Domitian, 284
 Don Alonso, 341
 Don Enrique, 341
 Don, John Captain, 382
 Don, John, of Austria, xii.
 Don Lewes, 378
 Don Luys, 341
 Don Paseval de Gayangos, xiv.
 Don Phylippe, 346
 Donco, 324, 325
 Donetz Sewerski, 325
 Doria, Juanette, xvii.
 Doria, Pedro, xvii.
 Dorpe, Roeland van der, xxv., xxvi.
 Douer, 379
 Dragonis, Os, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108
 Drainus river, 318
 Drauer, Master, xviii.
 Dromon, Achillis, 310
 Dront, 331
 Dryades, 83, 101
 Duas Arbores, 176
 Dubna River, 321
 Duchala, 374
 Dudley, John, xxxix.
 Duna River, 312
 Dunenburg, 312
 Duraba, 135, 153
 Duran, Thomas, 272
 Durriba, 153
 Dyonisius, King, xliv.

 East India, xii., 8, 9, 32, 79, 103, 133, 234, 235, 247, 262, 279, 283, 285, 339, 344
 East Indian Sea, 8
 Easte Sea, 8, 9, 24, 161
 Ebro river, 363
 Ebetere, 153
 Eccampi island, 186
 Edel river, 292, 314
 Eden, Alban, xlvi.
 Eden, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xx., xxii., xxxvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., xlii., xliii., xliv., xlv., xlvi., xlvi., xlvi., 1, 3, 6, 7, 13, 43, 49, 270
 Edward VI., xii., xix., xxxviii, 1, 333
 Egypt, xi., xxx., xlvi., 8, 41, 51, 75, 110, 131, 132, 141, 153, 155, 172, 175, 193, 217, 283, 284, 293, 296, 307, 308, 315, 351, 369, 374
 Egypt, King of, 284
 Egypt, Pyramides of, 49
 Egypt, Soltane of, 311, 369
 Egyptian sea, 199
 Elabath, 374
 Elbes, 272
 Elcauz, 374
 Elder, John, xxxix.
 Elgazaet, Region of, 374
 Elias, xlvi.
 Elide, City of, 176
 Eliot, 398
 Eliot, Hugh, xvi., xxi.
 Eliot, Master, xiv.
 Elis, City of, 134
 Elizabeth, Queen, xii., xvii., xl., xliv., xlv., xlvi., 65, 201, 209, 288, 342
 Elzaba, 8
 Emanuel, King, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., 37, 39, 40
 Embigar, 153
 Eneas, 135, 166
 England, King of, xxx., xxxvi.
 Engronlande, Region of, 312, 324, 332
 Eningia, 298, 306
 Ephesyn, xxxi.
 Epileguanita, 102
 Erancanqui, 344
 Erasmus, 57, 58
 Eratosthenes, 41, 349
 Eridanus, 133
 Errifi, 374
 Erythra, King, xlvi.
 Esaras, 49
 Eson, Colchis of, 135
 Esope, 377
 Esquegua, 230, 234
 Estremadura, 274
 Ethiopia, xxx., 8, 13, 14, 39, 41, 51, 88, 132, 139, 169, 175, 248, 250, 284, 339, 351, 369, 374, 384, 385
 Ethiopia, King of, 374
 Euangelista island, 77
 Eude island, 260
 Eudoxus, 286, 346
 Eue, 229, 338
 Euergetes, Tomoleus, 346
 Eugenius, Pope, 290
 Euphrates river, 41, 51, 308
 Eurique, Don, 341
 Euripus sea, 304
 Eusebius, xlvi.
 Euxinus sea, 155, 292, 298, 310, 314
 Exer, 266
 Ezzab, 374

 Faber, Jacobus, 246
 Faber, John, 289
 Facies, Combusta King, 135
 Faial island, 347
 Faro, Strait of, 208
 Fartalio, xlvi.
 Faubourg, xlv.
 Feminie the Great, xxxiii.
 Ferdinando Cortese, 238, 342
 Ferdinando de Soto, 346
 Fernandina islands, 186, 187, 190, 191, 195
 Fernando de Vega, 96
 Fernandes Franciscus, 186, 187, 192
 Fernandus, Gonzalus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241
 Fernelius, Johannes, xvii.
 Ferraria, xlvi.
 Ferrea island, 65, 66, 68, 157, 181
 Ferrières, Francois de, xliv.
 Ferrières, Jean de, xliv.
 Ferrum island, 41
 Fes, 374
 Fessa, City of, 374
 Feti, 180
 Ficinus, Marcilius, xlii., 338
 Fin, Jean de la, xlv.
 Finland, 229, 306, 312, 319
 Finlappia, 330
 Finmarchia, 8, 347
 Fiorauanti, Leonardo, xlvi.
 Fladimer, City of, 289
 Flavius, 348
 Flaunders, Earl of, 208
 Fletcher, John, xix.
 Florida, 32, 55, 191, 288, 342, 345, 346
 Floures [*i.e.*, *Flores*] island, 214
 Flumen Amazonum, 160
 Flumen, S. Johannis, 155
 Fogeda, Alphonsus, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 115, 123, 126, 128, 134, 145, 165, 180, 183
 Fonseca, Johannes, 126
 Forrest, George, xvii.
 Fortis island, 107, 108, 109, 134, 162
 Fortisuentura, xx., 65, 157, 380
 Fortunate islands, 28, 37, 40, 166, 374
 Forum Julii, 318
 Foxe, John, xxxix.
 Fracta laucea island, 41
 France, King of, xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 France, Lieutenaunt of, 347
 Francis, St., 130
 Francisco, 376
 Francisco de Siquera, 378
 Francisco, Lopez de Gomara, xxxviii, 271, 337
 Frederike, King, 73, 102, 103
 Fretum Herculeum sea, 161
 Fretum trium fratrum, 9
 Friseland, 303
 Friole, 368
 Frobisher, Sir Martin, xiii.

- Fronowo, 312
 Fryer, Ferdinando, 341
 Fugui, 26
 Fulua, 122
 Furatado, Captain, 121
 Futeraca, 180
- Gades islands, 28, 30, 34, 65, 68, 73, 75, 94, 97, 150, 181, 316
 Gaira river, 113, 132, 157, 158, 159
 Galana island, 68, 157
 Galanta island, 68, 157, 177, 210
 Galeatius, Butrigarius, 106, 127, 285
 Galian island, 260
 Galitia, 10, 96, 311
 Gamba, 280, 374, 384
 Gamelaro island, 374
 Ganges river, 9, 32, 75, 98, 133, 155, 363
 Gangeticus, Gulf of, 39
 Ganphasantes, 385
 Garcia Nunnio, 272
 Gardiner, Bishop, xl., xlv.
 Garet, 374
 Garsia de Padilla, 130
 Gasper, Cortesreales, 344
 Gastaldus, Jacobus, 291, 345
 Gates, Sir T., xxxix.
 Gaza, 57
 Gazatia, 385
 Gedion, 51
 Gelders, Land of, xxvi.
 Geminus, Thomas, xxxvii., xxxviii., xl.
 Gemma Phrysius, 55, 384, 385, 389
 Geneen, xxviii.
 Genua, City of, 28, 65, 155, 206, 310, 340
 Genoa, xvii., xxx.
 Georgianes, xxx., xxxi.
 Germanicus, Emperour, 176
 Ger[r]ard, Sir William, xix., xl., xli.
 Gesnerus, 326
 Getulia, 384
 Giaua island, 23, 260, 269, 286
 Giautes island, 38
 Gibeth island, 34
 Gibilterra, 233, 236, 262
 Gilolo island, 259, 272, 344
 Gilona island, 34
 Gintera island, 41
 Gines Navarro, xv.
 Gioghi island, 260
 Giouan Dulsaraz, 250
 Girardus Mapheus, 348
 Giunti, L. A., xiv.
 Goa, City of, 40, 261
 Godfrey, John, xvii.
 Golden Castile, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 236
 Goleta, Port, 374
 Goliath, xvii., 149
 Gomera, Francisco Lopez de, xxxvii., xxxix., 271, 335, 337, 342, 350
 Gomera island, xiii., 65, 66, 157, 210, 380
 Gomes, Steuen, 242, 272
 Gonsalues, Peter, 378
 Gonson, Richard, xvii.
 Gonson, William, xvii.
 Gonzales, Don Pero, 341
 Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdes, xiv., xv., 158, 205, 241, 242
 Gonzalus Badaocius, 181, 182, 183
 Gorecius, Leonhardus, xxxix.
 Gorgodes, Meducias island, 97
 Gorgonas island, 338
 Gorualanus, 72
 Gothia, 298, 306
 Gothicus, Emperour, 176
 Gothland, 9, 286, 295, 299, 306, 347
 Gothland, Bishop of, 302
 Gothus Olanus, 347
 Graesse, xliii.
 Grafton, xii.
 Grafton, Richard, xiii.
 Granada, 36, 52, 63, 67, 73, 103, 110, 133, 191, 201, 202, 273, 274, 340, 341
 Gran Canaria islands [*the Canaries*], 41, 65, 157, 210, 380
 Grandis river, 131, 132, 199
 Gratia Dei, 112, 182
 Gray, Richard, xvii.
 Great John, 385
 Great Khan, xv.
 Great Sophie, 326
 Grecia, 54, 56, 155, 262, 296, 302, 319
 Greenland, 299
 Gregorie, 112
 Gregorie I., 56
 Gresham, John, xiii.
 Gresham, William, xii.
 Gretziun, 318
 Grisolva, John, 187, 188, 189, 190, 192, 194
 Gronland, 299, 300, 303
 Grosapha, King of, 40
 Groueland, 8
 Grounzwyk, xxxii.
 Grubes, Master, xiv.
 Grustina, Castle of, 323
 Grustintzi, 323
 Grutland, 245, 300, 347
 Guacana island, 345
 Guacarapita, 99
 Guaccaa lake, 170
 Guaccaiarima, 168, 169, 173, 176
 Guaccanarillus, King, 66, 70, 71, 72, 168
 Guadalupea island, 68, 69, 157, 159, 177, 181, 210, 345
 Guadalqueuir river, 127, 157, 210, 220, 238, 250
 Guadiana river, 273
 Guahabba, 169
 Guahague, Region of, 169
 Guaiagua, Region of, 168
 Guamaonocon, 99
 Guamaretus, King, 102
 Guanabba island, 85
 Guanahaini island, 75
 Guanahattabenechina, 176
 Guanama, Region of, 168
 Guanapan island, 190
 Guanassa island, 105, 150, 163
 Guanguan island, 190
 Guaniba, Region of, 170
 Guaninicabo river, 170
 Guannabo, Region of, 170
 Guariagua, Region of, 173
 Guaricco, Region of, 169
 Guarionexius, King, 79, 80, 82, 84, 86, 87, 91, 92, 93, 102, 168, 171
 Guarionexius, Vale of, 171
 Guarizacca island, 170
 Guaturo, 216, 226
 Guaturo, King, 226
 Guaurabo, Lake, 171
 Guinea, xii., xvi., xix., xxviii., xxxix., xl., 250, 270, 273, 297, 348, 371, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388
 Guise, Duke of, xliii., xlv.
 Gunson, William, xii.
 Guserath, 266
 Gutschyn, King of, xxix.
 Guzerat, Gulf of, 14
 Guzman, Enrique of, 341
 Guzman, Peter Nunez de, 345
 Guzula, 374
- Habacoa, 169
 Habacucke, 57
 Habersia, Region of, 385
 Habech, Region of, 385
 Hafnia, City of, 331
 Hagueigabon sea, 170
 Haiba river, 168
 Haina, 223
 Haitho, 24, 60
 Haiti island, 166, 167, 168, 338
 Hakluyt, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxxviii., xl., xlviii.
 Halicarnassea, 128
 Halle, R., xii., xiii.
 Ham, Kingdom of, 344
 Hamadriades, 74, 101
 Hamburg, 300
 Hannibal, 139
 Hanon, 338
 Haraia, Region of, 96
 Hardie, Master, xviii.
 Harsol, City of, 300
 Hathathiei, 171
 Hawkins, Sir John, xvi., xvii., xlviii.
 Hawkins, William, xvi., xvii.
 Hayhay island, 159
 Hazchora, 374
 Hazlitt, W. C., xxvi.
 Hazoa, Region of, 168
 Hazua mountains, 169, 176
 Hea, Kingdom of, 374
 Heben, 284
 Hebrewes, Captain of the, 316
 Helga mountain, 300
 Helisabeth, 73, 127, 129, 167
 Helisabeth a Boadilla, 127
 Heliseus, 149
 Hellespontus sea, xlviii., 59, 155
 Hely, John, xii.
 Henrique, Don, 273
 Henriques, Diego, 378
 Henry, King, 127, 162, 340, 345
 Henry IV., xxxix.
 Henry V., xxxix.
 Henry VII., xxi., 288
 Henry VIII., xii., xiii., xiv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxi., xxxvii., xlv., 6
 Henry, King of France, xlvii.
 Herbert, W., xxxvii., xxxix.
 Hercinia, 313
 Hercules, 50, 105, 138, 149, 156, 236, 285
 Hercules Pillars, 86, 135, 236, 316, 374
 Hercyitua, 310
 Herodotus, 248, 339, 346, 350
 Heroum, City of, 284
 Hesiod, xxxviii., xli.
 Hesperides islands, 32, 74, 87, 97, 167, 338
 Heua river, 319
 Hibusson island, 255
 Hiebra, 135, 153, 154
 Hieron, King, xlvii.
 Hieronimus Aquillararis, 192, 193
 Hieronimus Cardanus, 307
 Hieronimus Fracastor, 285
 Hierusalem, 7, 8, 49, 51, 56, 57, 82, 100, 384, 385
 Hierusalem, King of, 82, 208
 Hierusalem, Temple of, xlvii.
 Higinus, 346
 Higuei, 168
 Higuei, 346
 Hierusalem Sylua, 292
- Hircanian sea, 169, 170, 287, 291, 308, 310, 314
 Hispana island, 6, 28, 29, 30, 31, 35, 36, 40
 Hispaniola island, xv., 6, 35, 40, 45, 54, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 73, 74, 75, 78, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 87, 89, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140, 144, 145, 149, 150, 153, 154, 159, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 172, 173, 176, 177, 178, 184, 186, 191, 192, 193, 199, 209, 210, 215, 219, 228, 230, 233, 235, 238, 239, 241, 262, 299, 346
 Hojedus, 72, 79, 81
 Holstrocke, William, xvii.
 Holtrop, Mr, xxv.
 Holy Nose, 330
 Homer, 5, 41, 346, 398
 Honoruccio, 169
 Horace, 58
 Hore, Master, xviii.
 Hossuen island, 304
 Hozama, 168, 170
 Huban island, 344
 Hungary, King of, 208, 312
 Huhabo, 168, 169, 172
 Huinaghan island, 255
 Huitsarch, 299
 Humos point, 273
 Humphrey, Laurence, xl.
 Hyperborean sea, 288
 Hyperboreos mountains, xli., 293, 313, 314, 324
 Hyperbories, 142, 155, 350
 Hiram, 49
- Iberia, 53, 54
 Icthiophagi, 301, 385
 Ida mountains, 172
 Iguamu, 171
 Iguanama, 173
 Illirium, 306
 Ilmer Lake, 319
 Inacus, Jopez Mendocius, 103
 India, xxi., xxix., xxx., xxxii., 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 18, 19, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 32, 40, 50, 52, 65, 67, 75, 79, 90, 98, 103, 120, 127, 155, 180, 198, 203, 204, 209, 216, 219, 227, 233, 239, 261, 263, 264, 266, 269, 272, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 308, 309, 313, 329, 339, 346, 347, 363, 384
 India, Governour of, 274
 India *major*, xxi., xxviii., xxxi., xxxii., 261
 India *minor*, xxi.
 Indian sea, 9, 39, 308, 347, 385
 Indies, 52, 53, 54, 162, 213, 220, 221, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 232, 235, 238, 246, 271, 272, 273, 274, 337, 338, 340, 341, 345, 348, 350, 355
 Indus river, 13, 308, 309
 Infortunate islands, 28, 33, 37, 41, 253
 Innocentus, Pope, xxxi.
 Inspruck, 359, 368
 Insula cruisis, 30, 69
 Insula, S. Johannis, 70
 Insulae Latronum, 254
 Insulae verides, 39
 Insulas Sancti Barnardi, 162
 Inuagana island, 34
 Ionicum sea, 191
 Ionium, 163
 Ipsicratea, 128

- Irtische river, 323
 Irus, 42
 Isabella, City of, 74, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 86
 Isabella island, 73, 167
 Isabella, Lady, 341
 Isaias, 52, 56, 57
 Ismael the Sophi, 311
 Isocrates, 346
 Isidorus, Bishop, 290
 Isopes, 53
 Israell, 51, 52, 56
 Israell, King of, xxxiv.
 Isseria, 309
 Ister river, 98, 131
 Istoma Georgius, 330, 331
 Ity island, 38
- Jaccha, 168
 Jacchi, Region of, 169
 Jache river, 168
 Jachem river, 73
 Jaciga river, 168
 Jacob, xxx.
 Jacobi, Sancti, 97
 Jacobus Gastaldus, 345
 Jafet, 346
 Jagohaincho, Region of, 169
 Jaia, 100, 163
 Jaick river, 326, 329
 Jainagua, Lake, 170
 Jaios, Region of, 374
 Jamaica island, 31, 75, 78, 150, 154, 177, 193, 210, 241
 Jamaizi, Region of, 169
 James, St., Island of, 97
 James, St., Tower of, 84
 James the elder, 10
 Jamgoma, Region of, 260
 Janua, 155
 Janus, 155
 Japhet, 155
 Jaques Cartier, 345
 Jaroslavia, 309
 Jaroslaw, Castle of, 324
 Jason, 51, 262
 Jausa river, 313
 Java island, 23, 269, 344
 Jaxartes river, 311
 Jean de Ferrieres, xlv.
 Jemptia, 305
 Jenkenson, Anthony, xviii.
 Jenkynson, Master, xliii.
 Jenuen, xxx.
 Jerieho, Priests of, xlvii.
 Jerom, Castle of, 323
 Jerusalem, xxi., xxxi., 7, 8, 49, 51, 56-7, 82, 100, 166, 374, 384-5
 Jerusalem, Patriarche of, xxxv.
 Job, 11, 349
 Joga, 14
 Johan, Duke, 289, 293
 Johanna island, 28, 29, 66, 70, 74, 75, 104, 241
 Johannes, Cursius, 106
 Johannes, Diaz, 105
 John, King, 65, 129, 273, 274
 John, Lake of, 325
 John of Desborough, xxv., xxxvi.
 John, Pope, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 John, Queen, 273
 John the Evangelist, 10
 Jonas, xxv., 338
 Joppa, 181
 Joseph of Arimathea, 56
 Josephus, xlvi., 8, 384, 385
 Josuah, 316
 Jouanaboina, 100
 Joubert, Francoise, xlv.
 Jovius, Paulus, 292, 331
- Joy, Master, xviii.
 Juan, 182
 Juanaga, Region of, 234
 Juba, King, 347
 Jucataka island [i.e., the peninsula of Yucatan], 40, 186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193, 238
 Juda, Princes of, 56
 Judde, Sir Andrew, 383
 Judea, 7, 18, 57
 Jug river, 286, 312, 322
 Juga river, 293, 312
 Jugaria, 322, 326
 Jugge, John, xlvi.
 Jugge, Richard, xxxix., xlvi., 398
 Jugoria, 309
 Juharici, 326
 Juhgary, The, 326
 Juhra, 293, 322, 326
 Julius, Pope, 309
 Julyan Samano, 346
 Junna river, 73, 168, 172
 Jura, 116
 Jureche, 152
 Jurham, 292
 Jwanowosero, Lake of, 325
- Kaienska Semla, Region of, 330
 Kama, Region of, 326
 Kaman river, 325, 329
 Katharine, Queen, 65
 Kele river, xxxvii.
 Kerry, John, xix.
 Khan, Great, xv.
 Kingsley, Rev. Canon, xvi.
 Kitai, Lake, 323
 Kitaisko, Lake, 323
 Kithay, Lake, 324
 Kohl, Mr J. G., xv.
 Kuliwo river, 322
 Kurbski, Simeon Pheodorowice, 324
 Kyui, 20
- La Desseada island, 210
 La Ferté, xlv.
 La Mina, 382
 La Spagnuola, 210
 Labrador, xiii., xv., 287, 344, 345, 347
 Lachroma river, 321
 Lacossa, Johannes de, 107
 Lactantius, 10, 11, 142
 Lacus, Albus, 291
 Lacus, Cronicus, 289
 Ladoga, Lake, 319
 Lagartos river, 111
 Lagoma island, 260
 Laletania, 173
 Lamas, 155
 Lambert, Francis, xviii., xix.
 Lambert, Nicolas, 376, 377
 Lamer, xlv.
 Lampaloda island, 374
 Lancelotus island, 65, 157
 Lancerota, xx.
 Landinus, 279
 Landman, David, xix.
 Langanas, 304
 Lantchidol sea, 261
 Laon, xlv.
 Lapponia, Region of, 8, 291, 299, 301, 302, 305, 347
 Lares, 176
 Lasiesia, 363
 Laterane, 309
 Latium, 66, 166, 167
 Lathyro King, 286
 Laurence, xlvii., xlviii.
 Lazaro, Archipelago di San, 254
 Lazarus, King, 187, 188
 Lech, King of the Polons, 318
- Ledisma, Johannes, 144
 Ledyl river, 291
 Legion, 201
 Legion, King of, 203
 Leigh, Doctor, xvi.
 Lemures, 85
 Leo, Bishop of Rome, 64, 106, 137, 287, 308, 309
 Leochares, 49
 Leon, 342
 Leon, John Ponce of, 345, 346
 Leonhardus Gorecius, xxxix.
 Lepanto, xii.
 Lepin Castle, 323
 Lesbos, 69
 Levante, The, xii., xiii., xvii., xviii., xix., 233
 Leviathan sea, 50
 Lewes, Don, 378
 Libane, 110
 Liberus, Sigismundus, 298, 312, 318
 Libia, 8, 54, 56, 70, 81, 166, 177, 374, 384
 Libicum, 163
 Libra, xlii.
 Ligurian sea, 297
 Lima, 338
 Limonares island, 151
 Limoso island, 374
 Lincoln, Bishop of, xl., xlv.
 Lisbon, City of, 16, 39, 267, 277, 279, 341
 Lithuania, Duke of, 318
 Lituania, Realm of, 286, 291, 292, 311, 314, 318, 326
 Liuie, 132
 Liunia, 287, 291, 306, 308, 311, 312, 319, 331
 Lock, Sir William, xiii.
 Locke, Michael, xix.
 Lodge, Thomas, xl.
 Lodovike, 73, 79, 82, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Longon, 260
 Lop, City of, 26
 Lopes, Diego, 272, 273
 Lopez Francisco, 288, 335, 342, 350
 Lordo, 287
 Losoth island, 304
 Louat river, 319
 Lozon island, 260
 Lucane, 310
 Lucomorya mountains, 323, 324
 Ludovico Bartheima (i.e., *Varthema*), xlviii.
 Luft, Hans, xxv.
 Lugo, Alphonsus, 66
 Luigo, 252
 Lumatola island, 260
 Lombardie, 306, 340
 Lupus Sosa, 199
 Lusheburne [i.e., *Lisbon*], xxvii., xxviii., xxix., 277, 309
 Luther, xxvi.
 Luttrell, Sir John, xix.
 Luxanus, 74
 Luys of S. Angell, 341
 Luys, Cancell, 346
 Luys, Don, 341
 Lutz, 271
 Lybien, xxxi.
 Lyese Nicolas, 378
 Lyuon sea, 314
- Maccazina, Region of, 169
 Macchian island, 259, 260
 Macedonia, xxxiii., 14
 Machiam sea, 344
 Machinnech, King, 100
- Machmetgirei, King, 328
 Machochael, 99
 Macorix, Region of, 168
 Macrobius, 41, 298, 347
 Madagascar, 7, 23, 285, 286
 Madanino, 69, 157
 Madera islands, 35, 40, 41, 87, 260, 270, 339, 340, 375, 380
 Magellanus Ferdinando [i.e., *Fernuam de Magelhaens*], 9, 32, 33, 34, 35, 243, 249, 250, 252, 258, 272, 274
 Magellanus, Straits of, 8, 33, 35, 161, 183, 252, 285, 350
 Magna Canaria, 157
 Magna fors island, 41
 Magnete island, 348
 Magnus, Albertus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Magona, 81
 Magua, Region of, 169
 Maguacochios, 167
 Maguana, Region of, 169, 171, 172, 176
 Mahaitin mountain, 169
 Mahumet, 14, 23, 25, 27, 40, 57, 326, 374
 Maia, Region of, 150, 163
 Maiaguariti, Region of, 169
 Maia, 187
 Maiobanexius, King, 86, 91, 92, 93
 Maiolica, 270
 Malabar, 263, 266, 267, 268, 269
 Malacca, 21, 32, 34, 40, 75, 247, 255, 256, 260, 261, 267, 269, 271, 274, 313, 344
 Malea, 155, 304
 Maligny, Seigneur de, xlv.
 Mallua island, 260
 Malpha, Flauius of, 348
 Manbrone, xxx.
 Manabaho, Region of, 169
 Manabaxao, Region of, 169
 Manacapana, Region of, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128
 Manache, Sibill, xx.
 Manati, Lake, 171
 Mandeuell, 329
 Mangalor, 265
 Mangdando, City of, 259
 Mangi, 25, 26
 Manicautixius, King, 82
 Manicheus, 10
 Manicongo, 270, 374
 Manilius, Marcus, xlv.
 Mans, xlv.
 Mansus, Alfonsus, 130
 Manuel, Petro, 272
 Maragnonum river, 98, 132, 134, 155, 160
 Marburg, xxv.
 Marchautes island, 329
 Marchena, 340, 341
 Marcilius Ficinus, 338
 Marco da Niza, 287
 Marcus Antonius, 315
 Marcus, Emperour, 284
 Marcus Paulus, 55, 286
 Marcus Paulus Venetus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
 Mare island, 35, 259, 260
 Mare Congelatum, 8
 Mare de Sabione, 374
 Mare del Sur [i.e., *the Pacific Ocean*], 54, 211, 214, 223, 225, 230, 233, 234, 235, 252, 262, 338, 344, 345, 347
 Mare Pacificum, 252, 253
 Margarita island, 54, 88, 96, 141, 165, 178, 214, 233

- Margarita, Peter, 79
 Mariatambal, Region of, 98, 132
 Marien, Region of, 169, 172
 Mary, Virgin, xxvi., 69, 124, 192, 198
 Marmarica, 8
 Marmor, 112, 114, 135
 Marobu, 100
 Marocco, xix., xx.
 Marques, Diegus, 157
 Marris, 122
 Marrocko, 374
 Marrok, 161
 Martabani, 268
 Martine, 383
 Martinus Gratiis island, 343
 Martire, Pietro, or Martyr, Peter, xiii., xxxvii., 43, 61, 63, 64, 65, 102, 186, 207, 241, 246, 299
 Mary, Queen, xii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 1.
 Mary of Nemegen, xxvi.
 Massana island, 34
 Massaquiber port, 374
 Mathan island, 258
 Mathien island, 35
 Mathinino island, 100
 Matinino island, 30, 69, 157, 166, 210
 Matritis, 123, 184
 Matthkur, 303
 Mauicarao, 169
 Maurevert, xlv.
 Mauritania, 8, 374, 384
 Mauritania Cesariensis, 374
 Mauritania Tingitania, 374
 Mausolus, King, 49, 128
 Maximilian, Emperour, 290, 308, 309, 312, 368
 Mecca, 166, 267
 Medecis, Catherine de, xlv.
 Media, 314
 Medina Celi, Duke of, 341
 Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 250, 341
 Medina de Campo, xxxix., 232
 Medon, xxxi.
 Meersch, P. C. van der, xxv.
 Megha, xxviii.
 Mela, Pomponius, 346, 347
 Melaqua, City of, xxix., 21
 Melcha island, 39
 Melchoir, 71, 72
 Meler, Lake, 305
 Melinda, xxviii., 132, 385
 Melo, Frances de, 273
 Meluza, 20
 Memi, City of, 241
 Memphis, City of, 307, 315
 Mendala, 344
 Mendez, Diegus, 154
 Mendocius, Inacus Jopez, 101
 Mendoza, Anthony di, 287
 Mendoza, Cardinall Pero Gonzales of, 341
 Mendoza, Luigo of, 252
 Mendoza, Mentia of, 214
 Mennonnes, 385
 Mense, 56
 Mensurado, Cape, 381
 Meotis, 155, 292, 298, 306, 311, 314, 325, 326, 351
 Mercado, Lodouicus, 165, 182
 Mercedis, Saynte Mary of, 77
 Mericke, William, xli.
 Meroe island, 8, 385
 Meroæ, 41
 Mesa, Barnarde of, 130
 Messana island, xvii., 256
 Messana, King of, 256, 257, 258
 Mesopotania, 297
 Meta Incognita, xiii.
 Metellus Celer, 9
 Methymna Campi, City of, 68, 70, 72, 80
 Methyna, Duke of, 96
 Mexico, Viceroy of, 287
 Mexico, City of, xiii., 55, 61, 287, 288, 338, 342
 Mezen river, 322
 Mezentium, 66
 Michael Passamonte, 213
 Midnall, Thomas, xiii.
 Mien, 24, 261
 Milan, City of, 63, 67, 103, 131, 141
 Milenoes, 65
 Mina, 339, 375, 382
 Mina, Castle of, 382
 Mina river, 376
 Minera, xviii.
 Minos, xviii.
 Mioformo, City of, 284
 Mirobalanus, Region of, 151
 Mitaini, 167
 Mithridates, 128, 129
 Moguer, 341
 Mogunce, Bishop of, 56
 Molucca islands, 8, 9, 20, 32, 33, 34, 35, 54, 183, 234, 235, 247, 249, 256, 258, 259, 260, 271, 272, 273, 274, 286, 287, 344
 Molybe, 385
 Momsabith, xxviii.
 Moncellese, Master Bernardino, 356
 Monoch island, 22
 Mons Crucis, 300
 Mons Farratus island, 30
 Mons Serratus island, 69, 177
 Monte Rodondo, 382
 Montegio Francis, 187, 190, 191, 192, 195
 Montes Luna, 41, 132, 217, 385
 Montes Niuales, 157, 160
 Monyuye, 240
 Moore, Sir Thomas, 398
 Morales, Andreas, 134, 156, 165, 167, 169, 184, 185
 Morales, Gasper, 178, 179, 214
 Morantes, Christophorus, 186
 Morauia, Region of, 326
 Morca, The, 316
 Moren, xxxi.
 Morgan, Sylvanus, xlvi.
 Morley, Professor H., xxxviii.
 Moronites, xxx., xxxi.
 Morrarabes, xxx., xxxi.
 Mos, Lake, 304
 Moscow, 187, 286, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 308, 312, 313, 314, 317, 321
 Moscovia, xxxix., 285, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
 Moscovia, Andreas of, 316
 Moscovia, George of, 316
 Moscovia, Helena of, 289
 Moscovia, John of, 289, 316, 319, 321, 324, 325, 326
 Moscovia, Sophia of, 326
 Moscovia, Simeon of, 316
 Moscovia, Demetrius Ambassadour of, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 316, 325, 329, 331
 Moscovia, Dukes of, 283, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 314, 318, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332
 Moscovites, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 306, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 331, 332
 Moses, xxi., xlvii., 11, 49, 50, 51, 57, 110
 Mosyli, The, 385
 Motka, Cape, 331
 Mouy, Count de, xlv.
 Moxica, Michael of, 65
 Moxus river, 313, 314
 Mozambique, 261
 Muera, 318
 Müller, Mr Frederick, xxv., xxvi.
 Multoxuman, King, 195
 Mumu, 112
 Münster, Sebastian, 3, 13, 42, 249, 291, 293
 Murcien, 176
 Muscostrom sea, 304
 Muthil island, 34
 Mutir island, 259, 260
 Mysians, xviii., 318
 Naeldwyck, Jan van, xxvi.
 Nagai, 329
 Nagaria, xxix.
 Naiba, 83
 Naiba river, 73, 83, 168, 172
 Nansao, Earl of, 214
 Naples, King of, xxx.
 Narmaria, xxix.
 Narsinga, 14, 15, 20, 263, 264, 265
 Narsinga, King of, 14, 40, 264
 Nativitatis, Baia, 129
 Nauaryen, King of, xxx., xviii.
 Nauchin, City of, 260
 Navarre, King of, xxx., xviii.
 Nebrissa, 135, 165
 Neglina river, 313
 Negro river, 374
 Nehemiah, 56
 Neibaymao, Region of, 169
 Neibaymas mountain, 169
 Nemea, 143
 Nemroth, 53, 290
 Neper river, 314
 Nepos, Cornelius, 9, 286, 347
 Neptunus, xviii., 55, 163, 165, 176
 Nereiades, 74, 101, 127, 165, 176
 Nero, 41
 Nerui, 340
 Nestorius, xxx., 27
 New Andalusia, 130
 New Franunce, 287, 288
 New India, 3, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41
 New Spayne, 236, 238, 241, 287, 342
 New World, 68, 127, 137, 156, 174, 245, 247, 272, 273, 337, 338, 339, 342
 Newfoundland, xiii., xiv., xv., xviii., xxi.
 Nicaragua, 338
 Nicene, 290
 Nicolai, 322
 Nicuesa, Diego, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Nidrosia, 299, 303
 Nidrosia, Archbishop of, 299
 Nignus, 94, 126
 Nigritis, 132, 384
 Nile river, 8, 41, 110, 111, 131, 132, 153, 155, 169, 175, 193, 199, 217, 283, 284, 285, 293, 309, 311, 312, 339, 346, 351, 374, 384, 385
 Nimaca, 169
 Nizaus, 169
 Noah, xviii., 51, 155, 340, 346, 386
 Noceumamor island, 260
 Nogais, 311, 329
 Nomen Dei, 113, 234, 235
 Norduegia, 331
 Noricum, 314
 Northumberland, Duke of, xxxviii., xxxix., 5
 Nortpoden, 330
 Norumbega, xiv.
 Norway, Governours of, 332
 Norway, King of, 331
 Norwegia, King of, xxx.
 Nova Castilia, 343
 Nova Hispania, 55, 213, 238, 241, 287, 342
 Novegradia [i.e., *Novgorod*], City of, 289, 290, 291, 309, 312, 313, 314, 318, 319, 321, 326, 328, 329, 330
 Nova Scotia, xv.
 Nubia, 384
 Nuceria, Paulus Jouius, Bishop of, 308, 312, 331
 Numidia, 374
 Nunnez, Alphonsus, 123
 Nunnez de Gusman, Peter, 345
 Nycolas, Saynt, 75, 78
 Nysa, 100
 Nysea, 384
 O [*i.e.*, *Omega*] point, 75, 76
 Obdoria, 287, 310, 323
 Obea, Castle of, 323
 Obi river, xli., 287, 322, 323, 332
 Obiowa, 323.
 Occoa river, 170, 292
 Ocha river, 292, 308, 313, 314, 319, 324, 325
 Ochelaga, 287
 Ocho Lupus, 186
 Odia, 260
 Odoardo Barbessa, 258
 Ogni Sancti Marigalante island, 210
 Olanus, Gothus, 300, 347, 348
 Olanus, Lupus, 111, 112
 Olha, 319
 Olmutium, 314
 Oloan, 188, 191
 Ooliab, 49
 Oone, 305
 Ophir, 7, 51, 66, 73, 82, 338, 343
 Oplandia, 305
 Oram, City of, 374
 Ordassus, Diegus, 192
 Oripei, The, 385
 Ormuz island, 13, 20, 261, 266
 Oro river, 380
 Orsa, 316
 Orynten, xxx., xxxi.
 Os Dragonis, Straits of, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108, 128, 132, 134, 151, 178, 180
 Ostrich, Henry, xix.
 Ostrobethnia, 305, 306
 Osep, Gregorevitch Napea, xl.
 Otho, 9
 Otifer, 289, 290
 Otogeria, City of, 291
 Otoque island, 233
 Otto Brumfelsius, xliii.
 Ottomanus, Bajasetes, 60, 311
 Ottoseria, City of, 314.
 Otwer, City of, 314
 Ouandus, King, 190
 Ouandus, Nicolaus, 165
 Ouetenses, Astur, 135
 Ouiedus, Gonzalus Fernandus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241, Oxford, Earl of, xxxvii.

- Oxus river, 308
 Ozama, 240
- Pacra, King, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147
 Padilla, Garsia de, 130
 Padus, 133
 Pahan, 260
 Paleacate, 263
 Paleologus, Sophia, 316
 Paleologus, Thomas, 316
 Palitzki, Lieuetenaunte, 328
 Palma island, 41, 66, 157, 177, 380
 Palmaria, Region of, 189
 Palmas, Cape de las, 381, 382
 Palmer, Sir T., xxxix.
 Palos, 96, 97, 99, 341
 Pan, 166
 Panama, City of, 214, 223, 233, 234, 235, 338
 Panchi, City of, 26
 Panes, 101
 Pannonie, 133, 155, 290, 306, 310, 314
 Panonome, King, 182
 Pantalarea island, 374
 Panuco, 241
 Papa, Johannes, 385
 Papin, City of, 324
 Papinowgorod, City of, 324
 Paracelsus, xlv.
 Paraue river, 343
 Paria, 36, 38, 89, 90, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 113, 128, 129, 130, 132, 135, 151, 156, 165, 178, 180, 181, 184, 338, 363
 Paria, Gulf of, 130
 Paricora, 98, 132
 Pariza, 183
 Paropanisus mountain, 308
 Parthenopea, Queen, 103
 Parthia, 284
 Parthicus, Emperour, 176
 Paruaim, 7
 Paruus, Georgius, 326
 Passamonte, Mychel, 213, 240
 Patani, 260
 Patagoni, 252
 Patalo river, 363
 Paulilghon island, 258
 Paul, 51, 58
 Paulus, 179, 309
 Paulus, Jovius, 60, 287, 308, 312
 Pazer, 344
 Pean, John, 385
 Pecerra, Region of, 315
 Pedernales mountains, 219
 Pedir, 344
 Pedrarias da Villa, 229
 Pedro Doria, xvii.
 Pegu, 20, 21, 261, 263, 264, 344
 Peim, 26
 Pellegrine de Maricourt, xliii.
 Peloponeso, 134, 316, 319
 Pelusio river, 284, 285
 Pelusius, 285
 Penguin island, xviii.
 Peralonso of Melo, 272
 Peraria, F., 65
 Percaslavia, City of, 291, 331
 Pereco, 382
 Perez, John, 340, 341
 Perillus, 49
 Periquete, King, 182
 Perm, 293
 Permia, 286, 309, 325, 326
 Permska, 293
 Persia, xxviii., 15, 26, 267, 309, 314
 Persia, Gulf of, 82, 308
 Persia, King of, 284, 311, 319, 326
 Persides, 75
- Pert, Sir Thomas, xiii., 6
 Peru, xiii., xxxix., 6, 54, 130, 285, 338, 343, 346, 363
 Pescora River, 286
 Peter, 125
 Petit, F., xxxviii.
 Petrus Alphonsus, 94, 96
 Petrus Arias, 126, 127, 142, 214, 229
 Pettislego, xl.
 Petzora River, 322, 323, 324, 330, 332
 Phacton, 73
 Pharis River, 262, 310
 Phenicen, xxxi.
 Phidias, 74
 Philadelphus, King, 284, 285
 Philip, King, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 52.
 Philistines, xlvii., 51
 Philo, xlv.
 Philostratus, 384
 Phoenicia, xi.
 Phrysius, Gemma, 384
 Phylippe, the Apostle, 57
 Pichet, John, xvii.
 Piedmont, xlv.
 Pienega, 312, 322
 Piescoya River, 322
 Pieza River, 322
 Pigafetta, Antonio, 243, 246, 247, 249, 255, 258
 Pignonem, 153
 Pinnigt, 300
 Pinsteado, Antoniades, 375, 376, 377
 Pinsteado, Antonie Anes, 378
 Pinsteado, John Anes, 377, 378
 Pintiguanus, Chiaconus, 129
 Pinzon, Martin Alonso, 341
 Pinzonus, Aries, 96, 98
 Pinzonus, Vincentius Annez, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Pireho, City of, 305
 Pisa, John Rodriguez of, 272
 Pius Secundus, 8, 9, 41
 Pizarro, Francisco, xiii., 108, 110
 Placentia, 340
 Plata river, 338, 343
 Plato, xl., xlii., xliii., xlv., 10, 337, 338, 340
 Plaiper, 368
 Plescouia, 291, 309, 312, 314
 Pliny, xliii., xlviii., 8, 9, 10, 14, 16, 18, 41, 53, 67, 75, 120, 133, 142, 152, 175, 179, 208, 221, 225, 227, 231, 236, 245, 248, 278, 284, 285, 286, 289, 292, 294, 297, 298, 306, 310, 315, 340, 342, 347, 349, 363, 364, 383, 384, 385, 386
 Plummer, Thomas, xvii.
 Pluto, xlv., 149, 355
 Po river, 133, 314, 363, 364
 Pocchorrosa, King, 147, 148, 162, 163, 178
 Pocchlorosa, Region of, 162, 163
 Pogosa, 323
 Poiassa river, 323
 Polagua island, 344
 Polen, King of, xxx., 318
 Politianus, Angelus, xlv., xlvii., xlviii.
 Polo island, 256
 Polomus Chiaconus, 129
 Polonie, 314, 318, 326
 Polonie, King, 286, 290, 318, 319
 Polonie, Russus of, 318
 Polonie, Sigismunde of, 309, 319
 Polotzko, 312
 Polybius, 41
 Pomponius Mela, 346, 347, 349
 Ponce, John, 165, 181, 345, 346
- Poncha, King, 115, 116, 121, 137, 138, 139, 140, 149, 178
 Poncius Johannes, 165, 181, 345, 346
 Ponet, John, xxxvii.
 Ponte, Alfonsus de, 157
 Pontike sea, 131, 262, 296
 Pontus, 297, 308, 318
 Porcena, 71
 Porne, King of, 34
 Porne island, 22, 34, 258
 Porte Joppa, 181
 Portofarnia, 374
 Porto Rigo, xv.
 Portucarerius Alsons, 191, 192, 195
 Portugal, Alonzo of, 273, 341
 Portugal, Emanuel of, 16, 37, 39, 40
 Portugal, Henricue of, 273
 Portugal, Johan of, 129, 271, 273, 274
 Portugal, Lewes of, 378
 Portugal, Kings of, xvi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxvii., xxix., xxx., 13, 40, 41, 54, 74, 129, 256, 261, 267, 270, 271, 273, 274, 340, 341, 363, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 381, 382, 385
 Portus Bellus, 112, 135, 153, 177
 Portus Cathaginis, 106
 Portus Desideratus, 188
 Portus Platae, 176
 Portus Regalis, 71, 105, 176
 Potanchanus, King, 189, 194
 Potassa, 323
 Potiwlo, 330
 Pothorst, 300
 Potto, Chiaconus, 129
 Potzcheriema river, 323
 Powell, William, xxxix., 43
 Poyas Semnoi mountains, 322, 323
 Poynings, Sir Adrian, xlv.
 Pozon island, 256
 Praga, City of, 291
 Prato, Albertus de, xiv.
 Preciosus, Johannis, 51
 Precop, 325
 Prester, John, xxi., xxxii., xxxiii., xxxv., 51, 339, 374, 384, 385
 Proclus, 338
 Prometheus, 57
 Propertius, 285
 Prussia, Master of, 308, 319
 Psammiticus, King, 284
 Ptolomeus, 8, 41, 210, 236, 262, 284, 285, 289, 308, 313, 349, 384, 390
 Pulaoan island, 258
 Pulisahnites river, 25
 Purchas, Samuel, xii., xiv.
 Puren, 152
 Pustoofero, 322, 323
 Puta, 88
 Pyconye river, xxxiii.
 Pyne, H., xv.
 Pynson, Richard, xxv.
 Pyrinei mountain, 53
 Pythagoras, xlvii., 215
 Pythis, 49
- Quadrado Gulf, 344
 Quando, Nicolas de, 345, 346
 Quareba, 153
 Quarequa, King, 138, 178
 Quarequa, Region of, 138, 139, 338
 Quatour Tempora island, 151
 Quauhtema, 338
 Quaxaca, 342
 Quenquinasu, City of, 24, 25
 Queraquiera island, 69, 157, 159
 Quicedus, John, 123, 126
- Quicuri Region of, 151
 Quinsai, 26, 55, 307
 Quiola, xxviii.
 Quintanilla, 341
 Quintilian, xlviii.
 Quiriquetana, 150, 151
 Quitilla island, 190
 Quito, 338
 Quizqueia island, 166, 167
- Rabida, 340, 341
 Ragusa, City of, 330
 Raja, Calauar, King, 258
 Raja, Capitayne, 120
 Raja Colambu, King, 255
 Raja Humabuon, King, 257
 Raja Santa, King, 260
 Raja Siagu, Prince, 255
 Raja Siripada, King, 258
 Raja Sultan Manzor, 259
 Ramonus, 99
 Ramusio, J. B., xiv., xv., xxxviii
 Rase, John, 382
 Rastall, John, xx.
 Rastall, Master, xviii., xix.
 Rastall Sarieant, xviii.
 Rateliff, xxxviii.
 Ravenna, 314
 Razauia, 309
 Red sea, xxix., xlviii., 7, 13, 51, 143, 180, 284, 285, 339, 346, 374, 385
 Regio Baeclearum, 32, 55
 Regnum Orguene, 384
 Resan, City of, 290
 Reyre, Region of, 168
 Rezan, 324
 Rezenze, 292, 309
 Rha river, 291, 292, 313, 329
 Rhapsii, 385
 Rhene river, 56, 314, 363
 Rhodes, xii.
 Ribera, Doctor, 272
 Richard I., King, xxvi.
 Richard II., King, xxxix.
 Rico Porto, xv.
 Ridley, Master, xviii.
 Riga river, 287, 308, 312, 314
 Rio Dulce river, 381
 Rio Grande river, 380
 Rio de Chicora river, xv.
 Rio de los Perdidos river, 151, 156
 Rio de la Plata river, xxxix., 54, 288, 338, 343, 386
 Rio de los Potos river, 382
 Riphea, 155
 Ripheos mountains, 293, 324
 Risophagi, The, 385
 Riuo Nigro, 120, 121
 Riuum Nigrum, 191
 Rivero Diego, 272
 Robbyn Hood, 53
 Rocumdulfe, Earl of, xlvii.
 Rodanum, 314
 Rodericus Colmenaris, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123
 Rodes, 351
 Rodes, Grand Master of the, 374
 Rodrigo, 341
 Rodriguez, John, 272
 Rogers, John, xxxix.
 Roldanus, Ximenus, 86, 87, 90
 Rome, Adrian, Pope of, 309
 Rome, Pope Alexander VI. of, 37, 74, 129, 201, 273, 274, 315
 Rome, Pope Clement VII., 308, 309, 347
 Rome, Cloelia of, 71
 Rome, Consul of, xlv.
 Rome, Emperour of, xxxii.
 Rome, Gregory, Bishop of, 56

- Rome, Julius of, 309
 Rome, Leo X. of, 64, 106, 109, 111, 113, 114, 123, 125, 126, 127, 130, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 145, 149, 150, 154, 156, 157, 159, 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 170, 172, 174, 175, 178, 181, 184, 185, 287, 308, 309
 Rome, Paul III. of, 51, 58, 179
 Rome, Pius II. of, 8, 9, 41
 Rosciua, City of, 290, 291, 309
 Rosolanos, 289
 Rostowe, 331
 Rotunda, Sancta Maria, 69
 Rubicho river, 322
 Ruiz, Bartholome, 272
 Ruiz, Peter, 272, 274
 Rummie, James, xvii.
 Russia, Basilius of, 289, 290, 308, 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
 Russia, Emperour of, 290
 Russus, Town of, 318
 Rut, John, xiv., xv., xvi.
 Ruthens; Constantine, Captain of the, 316
 Ruthens, Czar of the, 319

 Saba, 8, 385
 Saba, Queen of, 8, 374, 385
 Sabea, 129, 385
 Sachion, City of, 27
 Sacrificios; Sacrifice, Island of, 189, 192
 Safale, xxviii., 36
 St Ambrose, 10, 315
 St Andrew, 290, 319
 St Angell, Luys of, 341
 St Antonie islands, 272, 273
 St Aubin, Sieurde, xliv.
 St Augustine, 10, 142, 165, 218, 238, 315, 318, 338
 St Augustine, Cape of, 129, 155, 165, 181, 183, 218, 250, 273, 338
 St Benedict, 306
 St Bernardi islands, 161
 St Catharine, Castle of, 84
 St Christopher, Gold mine of, 105
 St Christoval, Island of, 210
 St Clare [*electrical fire on masts*], 251
 St Cosmus, 310
 St Cruz islands, 30, 130, 159, 188
 St Cyrillus, 315
 St Domingo, xv., 45, 82, 84, 130, 154, 168, 169, 170, 176, 209, 210, 213, 240, 338, 346
 St Dunstan's parish, xlvi.
 St Francis, 130, 176, 198, 240, 341
 St George, xxxi., 39, 323
 St Germain, Town of, xlv.
 St Germain, Bay of, xv.
 St Gregory, 315
 St Helen [*electrical fire on masts*], 251
 St Hericus, 305
 St James, xxviii., 10, 186
 St James island, xxviii., 97, 186, 261, 262
 St James, Castle of, 36, 84
 St Jerome, 195, 338
 St John, Gulf of, 194
 St John, Port, 192
 St John's island, xv., 45, 104, 130, 155, 159, 173, 176, 210, 213, 241
 St John's harbour, xiii., xiv., xv., 192
 St John of Jerusalem, Knights of, xii.
 St Julian, Port, 252
 St Lazaro, Archepelago di, 254
 St Lazarus, 187
 St Laurence [*i.e., Madagascar*], Island of, 285
 St Leger, xlv.
 St Luca, or Lucar. de Barrameda, 157, 210, 262
 St Lucas Guild at Antwerp, xxv.
 St Maria Antigua, Island of, 30, 69, 110, 134, 163, 198, 207, 218, 226, 229, 236, 238
 St Maria Rotund, Island of, 30, 69
 St Maria de Gratia, Island of, 238
 St Marina, 190
 St Martha, 156, 157
 St Martinus, Island of, 30, 69
 St Marye of Mercedis, 77, 240
 St Matthei, Region of, 112, 132, 135
 St Michael's Gulf, 54, 140, 162, 165, 182, 183, 214
 St Nicolas [*electrical fire on masts*], 250
 St Nicolas island, 375, 376
 St Nicolas, Port of, 75, 78
 St Paul, 7, 11, 55, 56, 204, 293
 St Peter, 130, 203, 204, 250, 290
 St Romayne, Tower of, 226
 St Sergius, 291
 St Sophia, 314
 St Steven, 148
 St Thomas, xxix, xxx., xxxiv.-vi., 74, 79, 80, 250
 St Thomas, Island of, 250, 270
 St Thomas Tower, 31, 74, 79, 80
 St Vincent, Cape, 250
 St Vincent, Harbour of, 381
 Salaye, Dr Sancho, 272
 Saleno, Monsieur de, xlvi.
 Salla, Port, 374
 Salsburg, Cardinal of, 24, 247, 248
 Salvaterra, 176
 Samano, Julyan, 346
 Samarcandia, 311
 Samson, xlvi.
 Samma, Town of, 381, 383
 Sammaterra, Town of, 383
 Samogeds, The, 323
 Samotor, 20
 Samotra [*i.e., Sumatra*], 7, 21, 22, 32, 344
 Samua, Town of, 381, 383
 Sananton island, 272
 Sancta Cruce, xiii., xx., 30, 40, 130, 188
 Sancta Fee, 341
 Sanders, Blaise, xli.
 Sanguenai, 287
 San Juan island, xv.
 Saragossa, xxxviii.-ix., 247
 Sardinia, 56
 Sardonica, Bay of, xv.
 Sardus, 163
 Sarmatia, 170, 284, 291, 295, 298, 308, 311, 314, 326, 347
 Sarmatians, 155, 301, 310
 Saturma, Region of, 157, 158, 160, 163
 Saunders, Laurence, xxxix.
 Sava, City of, 374
 Savoy, The Master of the, xliii.
 Sawolhenses, The, 327, 329
 Saxogrammaticus, 300
 Saxony, Duke of, 366
 Sbozzo, 368
 Scandia, 298
 Scandinavia, 298, 347
 Scarense, Bishop of, 310
 Scharutzick, City of, 329
 Scharaitz, 329
 Schat river, 325
 Schavo, 381
 Schichmamai, 329
 Schidack, 329
 Schio, 366, 368
 Schondania, Region of, 298
 Schondenmarchia, Region, 298
 Sclavonia, 290, 306
 Sclavons, 290, 306, 315, 318, 319
 Scolus, John, 345
 Scombria Islands, 106, 107
 Scondia, Region of, 295, 298, 299, 302, 305, 313
 Scopa, 51
 Scoria, King, 183
 Scutum Cateba island, 135
 Scwerski, 325
 Scythia, 155, 289, 291, 292, 297, 306, 310, 312, 313, 316, 347, 363
 Sea, Admiral of the great Ocean, 29, 35, 67, 79, 94
 Sebastian, John, 271, 272
 Segovia, 126, 127
 Seina, Capreans de, 137
 Selani Island, 34
 Seleucus Nicanor, 8, 61
 Selle, xiv.
 Selymus, Prince, 311
 Sem, 346
 Semnoi Poyas mountains, 324
 Seneca, 48, 67, 337, 339
 Senega river, 280
 Senegal river, 132, 374, 384
 Sequeryra, Dieogo Lopez of, 272, 273
 Serrannus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160
 Serena, 274
 Seres, 67
 Serponowtzi, 323
 Serra Nevata mountains, 108, 160
 Serranus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160, 258
 Serrationa [*Sierra Leone*], 39, 250
 Sesostris, 284
 Sesostris, King, 284
 Sesponow castle, 323
 Sest river, 321
 Sestau island, 192
 Sesto river, xvi., 376, 381
 Setebos, 252
 Sette Citta, Kingdom, 287
 Seville, xiv., xvi., xl., 50, 62, 210, 246, 250, 262, 288, 338, 342, 345, 348
 Sforza Ascanius, 65, 68, 103, 127
 Shava, 381
 Shawgro, 381
 Shyawe, 381
 Sian, Zacabedera King of, 260
 Sianfu, City of, 26
 Siber, Prouince of, 326, 329
 Sibut river, 323
 Sibylla Erythrea, 135
 Siccensis, Nicolaus, 309
 Sico island, 260
 Siech, Ismael, 266
 Sigismundus Liberius, 298, 312, 318
 Siguera, Francisco de, 378
 Siloli island, 34
 Silver of Rever, 288, 343
 Silvius Pandonus, 133
 Simonides, 41
 Sina, Kindgom of, 32, 313, 344
 Sinum Perditorum, Point, 155
 Sinus Arabicus, 13
 Sinus Finnicus, 306
 Sinus Magnus, 248
 Sinus Persicus, 20, 32, 41, 82
 Smith, Sir T., xxxvii., xlii., xlv.
 Smolense, 290, 291
 Smyrnophora, 385
 Soborovius, George, 316
 Sofa, Lupus, 199
 Solinus Julius, 16, 56, 338, 346, 347, 383
 Solo island, 34
 Solowki island, 321
 Solysius, Johannes, 181
 Sorachi village, 180
 Soria islands, 347, 348, 387
 Sossa river, 323
 Soto, Ferdinand de, 346
 Spacheford, Thomas, xiii.
 Spaengian, 39
 Spagnuola island, 199, 210
 Spain, Emperor Charles V., 32, 47, 63, 208-14, 216, 223, 225, 226, 229, 233-6, 238, 240, 246-8, 255, 257, 259, 271-4, 278, 287, 343, 343, 350, 363
 Spain, Emperor Phillip, 54, 59, 346
 Spartaria, 176
 Spatense Alverado, 192
 Sperantia castle, 84
 Spirostomea, 98
 Spice islands, 235, 247, 271, 273, 274, 286, 344
 Spinosa, Gasper, 183
 Stanmoische, Region of, 322
 Steven, Bysshop, 293, 325
 Stoidum, 143
 Stora, 374
 Strabo, 10, 56, 283, 284, 285, 289, 296, 308, 346, 349
 Strava, 308
 Strelze, 322
 Strub island, 324
 Strucophagi, 385
 Stzuchogora river, 323
 Subuth, King of, 34
 Succana river, 286, 312, 322, 331
 Suchana river, 322
 Suchur, Province, 27
 Suetia, 299, 301, 304-6, 311, 312, 319, 330, 331
 Suevia, King of, 9, 286, 301, 306, 308, 347
 Suez, 13, 284, 285
 Sulacho island, 260
 Sumatra, 7, 12, 20, 21, 22, 32, 261, 267, 272-4, 344
 Sumatra, Kings of, 22
 Sumbit island, 253
 Sumideros, 155
 Sura river, 314
 Surcium river, 314
 Sus, 374
 Sussex, Earl of, xxxix.
 Sustali, 290
 Sutton, Edward, 42

 Taboga island, 233
 Tabor, King, 182
 Tacarequi Margarita island, 56, 233
 Tachola, 344
 Tachola, City of, 344
 Tachnin ryver, 323
 Tadinu, City of, 24
 Taghima island, 259
 Taia, Region of, 150
 Tainsu, Kingdom of, 25
 Taismer, John, xliii.-vi.
 Talvera, Ferdinand of, 341
 Tamburlane, 311
 Tanagora, xxix.
 Tanais, 133, 155, 291-3, 297, 306, 310, 311, 314, 319, 321, 324, 325, 327, 346
 Tangut, Region of, 12, 26, 27
 Tapia, Francisco de, xv.
 Tapobana [*Ceylon*], 12, 21, 22, 32, 41, 143, 180, 261, 286, 344
 Taquenazabo, Region of, 169, 1

- Taracuru, King, 182
 Tararequi, 214, 233
 Tarchontan, King, 66
 Tarenate island, 259, 260
 Tarnasserie, 12, 20, 21, 22
 Tartary, 12, 24, 26, 39, 286, 287, 289, 290, 292, 306, 344, 387
 Tartary, Machmetgirei, King of, 328
 Taurisium, City of, 311, 314
 Tartars, 286, 287, 289, 290-2, 301, 310-14, 316, 319, 320, 324-9, 332
 Tauria, Johannes de, 157
 Tauria, Simon de, 272
 Taxmarus, King, 193
 Teaocha, King, 143, 146
 Telde, 374
 Temesne, 374
 Tenado island, 344
 Tendilla, Count of, 103
 Teneriffe islands, 41, 66, 157, 250, 280
 Tenerissa, xiii., 41, 380
 Tenetum island, 260
 Tenez, 374
 Tenixtetan, City of, 57, 287, 342
 Temulos, 273
 Tequinas, 215
 Terasequi island, 214
 Terceira, 344, 348
 Terra Baccalearum, 242, 287
 Terra Britonum, 287, 288
 Terra de Laborador, 287
 Terra Viridis, 299
 Terra Florida, 32, 55, 57
 Terra de Papagalli, 253
 Tesino river, 363, 364
 Tharant island, 35
 Themiscuthlu, 311
 Theodori island, 35
 Theodosia, Colony of, 311
 Theophrastus, 8, 338, 340
 Thomas, J., xix.
 Thorne, iv., xiii., xiv., xxi.
 Thorne, R., xvi.
 Thoms, Mr, xxvi.
 Thyle, Land of, 300, 337
 Tialleslund sea, 304
 Tiba, King, 149, 151
 Tichin village, 122
 Ticobon island, 256
 Tidore islands, 259, 260, 262, 272-4, 348
 Tierra frome, xv.
 Tighe, xlvi.
 Timor island, 260, 261, 269
 Tingin, City of, 24
 Tirecotus river, 172
 Tiusi village, 107
 Tison, Thomas, xiii.
 Todos Sanctos islands, 177
 Tolstickh, 322
 Toro, 273
 Totonogo, King, 182
 Totilas, King, 313
 Toy, R., xii., xxxvii., xxxix., 388, 398
 Transylvanus, Maximilian, 247, 249, 262
 Trelensin, City of, 374
 Tremisen, 374
 Trepoientes Cape, 381-3
- Tripoli, 374
 Trollhetta river, 304, 306
 Trutham village, 304
 Tucke, Master, xviii.
 Tuckfield, Master, xviii.
 Tulla, City of, 324
 Tumaccus, King of, 140-2, 178
 Tumaccus, Region of, 140
 Tumanama, King of, 117, 147, 148, 162, 163
 Tumanama, Region of, 162, 163
 Tumen, Castle of, 323, 324, 326
 Tumenski, King of Tumen, 324
 Tumum, King, 66
 Turni, King, 119
 Turufy village, 183
 Tuver, City of, 314
 Tyrma, 166
- Udall, Nicholas, xxxviii.
 Udoria, 310
 Uhabo, 170, 173
 Ulna, 292
 Ulysses, 135, 348
 Umbria, Petrus de, 111, 112
 Unefride, 56
 Ungerien, King of, xxx.
 United States, xv.
 Uppa river, 325
 Upsala, Archbishop of, 300, 347
 Upsoliensis, 295
 Uraba, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 118, 119, 123, 128, 130, 131, 132, 134, 143, 150, 155, 162, 163, 180, 192, 198, 199, 218, 229
 Uracha, 230, 234
 Urse, M. de, xliv.
 Ushatio, Peter Knes, 324
 Ussa river, 322
 Usting, City of, 286, 312, 322, 325
 Ustiuga, Town of, 293, 312
 Ustyug, 312
 Utterson, Mr, xxvi.
- Vadianus, 56
 Vagoniona, 99, 100
 Vagus river, 318
 Valdés, Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo, xxxvii.
 Valdiuia, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 192, 193
 Valentia, 199
 Vallacum, 314
 Valladoletto, xiv., 125, 127, 133, 274
 Valleius, 165, 181, 183
 Vannuccio, Biringuccio, xxxvii., xlvi., 353, 356
 Varro, Marcus, 349
 Vascho Nunnez de Balboa, 61, 113, 114, 115, 119, 120, 121, 122, 125, 131, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 155, 156, 162, 165, 178, 198, 199, 338
 Vasilivich, John Duke of, 326
 Vasques, Captain Francesco, 287
 Vassy, xliii.
 Vastral, 304
 Vaticane, The, 100, 309
 Vecchiadoro, 287
 Vega, Fernando de, 96
 Velasquen, Diegus, 186, 187, 190, 195
- Valasquen, John, 192
 Vendôme, Francois de, xliv.
 Venetus, Marcus Paulus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
 Vera, Petrus de, 65
 Verazzano, xv.
 Vere, Edward, xxxvii.
 Vesalius, A., xxxvii.
 Vespasian, Emperour, 208, 342
 Vespucci, Amerigo, xxv., 37, 38, 39, 127, 134, 157, 158, 275, 277
 Vespucius, Johannes, 127, 157
 Vetcha, 309
 Viatra, City of, 291
 Vibba, 153
 Vicenza, 247
 Victoria, Town of, 194
 Vidame de Chartres, xliv., xlv., xlvi., xlvi.
 Vigentina, 368
 Vilna, City of, 314
 Villanoua, 176
 Villa Ricca, 196
 Villegas, Peter Ruiz of, 272, 274
 Vincentina river, 366, 388
 Vincentius, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Vincentius, Agnes, 105, 128, 129
 Vincentius, Annez, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Vincenza, City of, 246
 Virgil, 11, 50, 91, 135, 279, 298
 Visba, City of, 306
 Vischora river, 325
 Visco, Bishop of, 341
 Vitry, xlv.
 Vitzechda river, 325
 Volaterane, 289, 290
 Volga river, 291, 292, 293, 308, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 321, 325, 326, 328, 329, 331
 Volham river, 293
 Volochda river, 286
 Volodemaria, City of, 291, 309, 314
 Volotchia, 309
 Volut, City of, 290
 Vrida river, 135, 153
 Vua river, 323
 Vuaga river, 322
 Vuarectzkoai sea, 319
 Vuareczkote Morie sea, 312
 Vuiathka, 326, 328
 Vuilna, 312
 Vuinlandia, 319
 Vuitepsko, 312
 Vuolochda, 312, 322, 325, 326, 331
 Vuolocon river, 319
 Vuolodimaria, 319
 Vuolok, Lake, 319
- Wade, Armigil, xviii.
 Wade, William, xviii.
 Waranger fiord, 299
 Wardhus, Castle of, 299, 302, 303, 304, 305, 331
 Wardoe, 299
 Wardoehuus, 299
 Warwick, Earl of, xxxviii.
 Watson, Thomas, xl., xlv.
 Weyszarch mountain, 300
 Whalley, Richard, xliv.
- Whally, Thomas, xliv.
 Whitcome, Roger, xii.
 White Russia, 301, 302, 311
 Wickes, Master, xviii.
 Willes, Richard, xii., xlvi.
 Williamson, John, xvii.
 Willoughby, Sir Hugh, xxxviii., xxxix., 59, 333, 334
 Winchester, Bishop of, xxxvii., xl., xlv.
 Winter, Sir W., xlvi., xlvi.
 Wolsey, Cardinal, xiv.
 Wright, Master, xviii.
 Wroth, Sir Thomas, xix.
 Wyndam, Captain, xix., xxxviii., 375, 376, 377
 Wynterton Ness, xli.
- Xaccoci river, 170
 Xagua, Region of, 168
 Xaguaguara, Region of, 153
 Xamana, Region of, 70, 169, 170
 Xaragua, Region of, 83, 84, 85, 86, 169, 176
 Xericium, City of, 65
 Xerses, 59
 Ximenus Roldanus, 86, 87, 90
 Xuarez, Petrus, 130
- Yaguana, Region of, 169
 Yaguino, Region of, 176
 Yamiroa river, 176
 Ymizui Hibahaino mountain, 169
 Yorke, Sir John, xix., 382
 Yucatan, 61, 338
 Yucatos, 238
- Zacabedera, 260
 Zagathe, 311
 Zahondaderos, 155
 Zamal island, 254, 260.
 Zamara island, 32
 Zamatra, 274
 Zamotra island, 273
 Zamudius, 115, 116, 122, 126
 Zanzibar island, 23
 Zanzibar, King of, 23
 Zarate, Augustin de, xxxix.
 Zasia, xx.
 Zauana, Region of, 148, 169, 173, 176, 212
 Zaylon island, 20
 Zebedus, 10
 Zeilam island, 264, 265, 266, 267
 Zeilon island, 256
 Zelande island, 214
 Zenete, Marquese of, 214
 Zenu, Region of, 158
 Zerbi island, 374
 Zerema, 180
 Ziglerus, 294, 295, 299
 Zobroba river, 135
 Zobra, 153
 Zohoran river, 153
 Zolo island, 259
 Zolot island, 260
 Zorobua island, 260
 Zubut island, 256, 257, 258, 272
 Zubut, King of, 256, 257
 Zula, Prince, 258
 Zulan island, 254





UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
LIBRARY

Do not
remove
the card
from this
Pocket.

Acme Library Card Pocket
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File."
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU

